

JOURNAL  
OF THE  
AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY

EDITOR  
W. NORMAN BROWN  
*University of Pennsylvania*

ASSOCIATE EDITOR  
JOHN K. SHRYOCK  
*Philadelphia, Pa.*

H. A. SPEISER  
*University of Pennsylvania*

---

VOLUME 36

---

PUBLISHED BY THE AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY  
JOURNAL CASE OF  
YALE UNIVERSITY PRESS  
NEW HAVEN, CONNECTICUT, U. S. A.  
1958

## American Oriental Series

- Volume 1. *A Grammar of the Tagalog Language.* By Frank R. Hulse. Price (bound), \$6.00.
- Volumes 2 and 3. *The Pāṇinīya Reconstructed.* An attempt to establish the lost original Sanskrit text of the most famous of Indian story-collections on the basis of the principal extant versions. Text, (Critical Apparatus, Introduction, Translation. By Franklin Edgerton. 1924. Price (bound), \$12.00 for the two volumes; not sold separately.
- Volume 4. *Jambhadrak's version of the Vetalapanchāśikā, Introduction, Text (with critical apparatus), and Translation (with commentary).* By Murray S. Emmons. 1934. Price, \$3.00.
- Volume 5. *The Vocalization of the Egyptian Syllabic Orthography.* By W. F. Albright. 1934. Price \$1.25.
- Volume 6. *State Letters of Assyria.* By Robert H. Pfeiffer. 1935. Price, \$4.50.
- Volume 7. *A Union List of Printed Indic Material in American Libraries.* By Murray S. Emmons. 1935. Price, \$2.00.
- Volume 8. *A Grammar of Phoenician.* By Zellig S. Harris. 1936. Price, \$3.50.
- Volume 9. *The Keshavarian Atharva Veda, Books 16 and 17.* By LeRoy C. Barrett. 1936. Price, \$3.50.
- Volume 10. *Movable Property in the Nuz Documents.* By Dorothy Cross. 1937. Price, \$1.25.
- Volume 11. *The Study of Human Abilities: The Jen-wu-chih of Liu Shao.* By John K. Shryock. 1937. Price, \$1.50.
- Volume 12. *Consus of Indic Manuscripts in the United States and Canada.* By Horace L. Polunin. In process of publication.

## Library of Ancient Semitic Inscriptions

- Volume 1. *The Royal Inscriptions of Sumer and Akkad.* By George A. Barton. Price (bound), \$3.00.

## SEPARATE PRINTS FROM THE JOURNAL

Dwight, H. G. O., <i>Catalogue of works in the Armenian language prior to the seventeenth century</i> . . . . .	\$2.50
Khamkhoff, N., <i>Book of the Balance of Wisdom</i> . . . . .	2.50
Paspoti, <i>Memoir on the languages of the Gypsies in the Turkish Empire</i> . . . . .	2.50
Gulick, L. H., <i>Pennapa Dialect</i> . . . . .	2.50
Whitney's <i>Tāttirīya-Prākīrkhya</i> . . . . .	6.00
Avery's <i>Sanskrit Veda-Inflections</i> . . . . .	3.00
Whitney's <i>Index Verborum to the Atharva-Veda</i> . . . . .	6.00
The same on large paper . . . . .	8.00
Dertel's <i>Jāminīya-Upaniṣad-Brahmana</i> . . . . .	2.50
Arnold's <i>Historical Vedic Grammar</i> . . . . .	2.50
Bloomfield's <i>Kāṇḍika-Sūtra of the Atharva-Veda</i> . . . . .	8.00
Hopkins, <i>Social and Military Position of the Ruling Caste in Ancient India</i> . . . . .	3.00
The Whitney Memorial Volume (vol. 19, part 1), with portrait and bibliography, buckram . . . . .	3.00
Index to Volumes 21-40 . . . . .	1.00

## AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY OFFPRINT SERIES

1. J. A. Montgomery, *Notes on the Mythological Epic Texts from Ras Shamra, I-II* . . . . . (out of print)
2. A. S. Holkin, *The Hachwiyya* . . . . . 40 cents
3. C. A. Owen, *Arabian Wit and Wisdom from Abu Sa'īd al-Ahī's Kitāb Naṭh al-Durār* . . . . . 50 cents
4. E. H. Sturtevant, *A Hittite Text on the Duties of Priests and Temple Servants* . . . . . 60 cents
5. H. Y. Feng and J. K. Shryock, *The Black Magic in China Known as Ku* . . . . . 40 cents
6. J. Oßermann, *Political Theology in Early Islam* . . . . . 40 cents
7. Roland G. Kent, *The Present Status of Old Persian Studies* . . . . . 40 cents

# JOURNAL OF THE AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY

EDITOR

W. NORMAN BROWN  
University of Pennsylvania

ASSOCIATE EDITORS

JOHN K. SHRYÖCK  
Philadelphia, Pa.

E. A. SPEISER  
University of Pennsylvania

VOLUME 58

NUMBER 1

MARCH, 1938

Published March 31, 1938

## The Oriental Club of Philadelphia Fiftieth Anniversary

### CONTENTS

EDITORIAL FOREWORD . . . . .	1
THE ORIENTAL CLUB OF PHILADELPHIA . . . . .	2
BROWN, W. N.: An Old Gujarati Text of the <i>Kalaka Story</i> . . . . .	5
COMFORT, H.: Supplementary Sigillata Signatures in the Near East . . . . .	30
DAVIDSON, D. S.: Northwestern Australia and the Question of Influences from the Near East . . . . .	61
ENSLIN, M. S.: "Luke" and Paul . . . . .	81
GERMAN, H. S.: The Relations between the Hebrew Text of Ezekiel and that of the John H. Scheide Papyrus . . . . .	92
HARRIS, Z. S.: Expression of the Causative in Ugaritic . . . . .	103
KENT, R. G.: The Restoration of Order by Darius . . . . .	112
MEKE, T. J.: Lapses of Old Testament Translators . . . . .	122
MONTGOMERY, J. A.: Hebrew . . . . .	130
MÜLLER, V.: The Origin of the Early Dynastic Style . . . . .	140
POZZINI, A.: Another Case of the Predicative Use of the Genitive in Sumerian . . . . .	148
REICH, N. J.: Coptic Ostrakon Morton I . . . . .	151
REINER, J.: The Name Ashur in the Initials of a Difficult Phrase in the Bible . . . . .	153
SHRYÖCK, J. K.: The Use of the Word <i>As</i> . . . . .	159
SKOBS, S. L.: A Study of the Uses of Letter "Yod" by David ben Abraham al-Fih . . . . .	167
SPEISER, E. A.: Notes on Hurrian Phonology . . . . .	173
WISCHNIOFF, H.: Concepts of Right and Left in African Cultures . . . . .	202
NOTES OF THE SOCIETY . . . . .	218
NOTES OF OTHER SOCIETIES . . . . .	218

PUBLISHED BY THE AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY  
25 Hopkins Place, Baltimore, Maryland

*Annual subscriptions and orders should be sent to the American Oriental Society, 25 Hopkins Place, Baltimore, Md., or Yale University Press, New Haven, Conn., U. S. A. (See last page of entry.)*  
*Books for review should be sent to one of the Editors (addresses on the inside of this cover).*

Entered as second-class matter March 1, 1937, at the post office at Baltimore, Maryland.

# American Oriental Society

FOUNDED 1842

## OFFICERS FOR 1937-38

- President*—Professor LEROY WATERMAN  
(Address: University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich.)
- Vice-President*—Professor LEROY BARRETT  
(Address: Trinity College, Hartford, Conn.)
- Secretary-Treasurer*—Professor CARL H. KRAELING  
(Address: 409 Prospect St., New Haven, Conn.)
- Editor*—Professor W. NORMAN BROWN  
(Address: Box 17, Bennett Hall, University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa.)
- Associate Editors*—Dr. JOHN K. SHRYOCK  
(Address: 4509 Regent St., Philadelphia, Pa.)  
Professor ECHRAIM A. SZKISZ  
(Address: Bennett Hall, University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa.)
- Librarian*—Professor ANDREW KEOGH  
(Address: Sterling Memorial Library, Yale University, New Haven, Conn.)
- Executive Committee*—Professors WATERMAN, BARRETT, KRAELING, BROWN, and BLANK *ex officio*, Mr. M. GRAVER (term expires 1938), Professor A. H. LYBES (term expires 1939), Dr. C. J. OGDEN (term expires 1940)
- Committee for Promotion of Oriental Research*—Professors H. H. BENDER, Chairman (term expires 1938), J. A. MONTGOMERY (term expires 1939), Dr. A. W. HUMMEL (term expires 1940), Address of the chairman, Princeton University, Princeton, N. J.
- Delegates to the American Council of Learned Societies*—Dr. J. K. SHRYOCK (term expires 1938), Professor F. EDGERTON (term expires 1940)
- Representative on Corporation of American Schools of Oriental Research*—Professor N. SCHMIDT
- Committee on Nominations for 1938*—Dr. A. W. HUMMEL, Chairman (term expires 1938), Professors S. BLANK (term expires 1938), R. G. KENT (term expires 1938), H. J. CADBURY (term expires 1939), C. H. FRANK (term expires 1939), E. H. STURTEVANT (term expires 1939)

The next meeting of the Society will be held in Philadelphia, Pa., April 19-21, 1938.

## MIDDLE WEST BRANCH

Established 1917

### OFFICERS FOR 1937-38

- President*—Professor SHELDON S. BLANK  
(Address: Hebrew Union College, Cincinnati, Ohio)
- Vice-President*—Dr. GEORGE G. CAMERON  
(Address: Oriental Institute, Chicago, Ill.)
- Secretary-Treasurer*—Dr. ALLEN D. ALBERT, Jr.  
(Address: Seabury-Western Theological Seminary, Evanston, Ill.)
- Executive Committee*—Professors W. M. MCGOVERN and O. R. SKILLER

The next meeting of the Middle West Branch will be held at the Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, April 1-2.

Books for review should be sent to the Editor, Journal of the American Oriental Society, Box 17, Bennett Hall, University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa., U. S. A.

The Editors cannot guarantee to publish reviews in the case of books sent unsolicited, or to return those books to the publishers.



JOURNAL  
OF THE  
AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY

EDITOR  
W. NORMAN BROWN  
*University of Pennsylvania*

ASSOCIATE EDITORS  
JOHN K. SHRYOCK  
*Philadelphia, Pa.*

E. A. SPEISER  
*University of Pennsylvania*



PUBLISHED BY THE AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY  
ADDRESS, CARE OF  
YALE UNIVERSITY PRESS  
NEW HAVEN, CONNECTICUT, U. S. A.  
1938

A copy of this volume, postage paid, may be obtained anywhere within the limits of the Universal Postal Union, by sending a Postal Money Order for six dollars, or its equivalent, to the YALE UNIVERSITY PRESS, New Haven, Connecticut, United States of America.

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA  
BY J. H. FURST COMPANY, BALTIMORE, MARYLAND

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
ADINSKY, B. W.: Review of Han Yi Feng's <i>The Chinese Kinship System</i> . . . . .	492
AIYAR, L. V. R.: The History of the Tamil . . . . .	684
ATKINS, S. D.: A Vedic Hymn to the Sun-God Sūrya . . . . .	419
BARNETT, L. C.: The Kashmirian Atharva Veda. Book Eighteen edited with Critical Notes . . . . .	671
BROWN, W. N.: An Old Gujarātī Text of the Kalaka Story . . . . .	5
—— (with M. A. SIMSAR): Late Mughul Illustrations to the Iqbāl-nāmah'i Jahāngiri (with four Illustrations) . . . . .	354
—— Review of Rowland's <i>The Wall-Paintings of India, Central Asia, and Ceylon</i> . . . . .	484
BULL, L. and W. F. EDMERTON: Adolf Erman, 1854-1937 (with an Illustration) . . . . .	413
CARR, D.: Review of Vaccari and Vaccari's <i>Complete Course of Japanese Conversation-Grammar: A New and Practical Method of Learning the Japanese Language</i> . . . . .	497
CHUNG: see KIM WON CHUNG.	
COMFORT, H.: Supplementary Sigillata Signatures in the Near East . . . . .	30
COOMARASWAMY, A. K.: Review of Mrs. Rhys David's <i>What was the Original Gospel of Buddhism?</i> . . . . .	679
DAVIDSON, D. S.: Northwestern Australia and the Question of Influences from the Near East . . . . .	61
DIMAND, M. S.: Samanid Stucco Decoration from Nishapur (with one Illustration) . . . . .	256
DUBS, H. H.: The Victory of Han Confucianism . . . . .	435
EDMERTON, F.: Rome and (?) Antioch in the Mahābhārata . . . . .	262
EDMERTON, W. F. (with L. BULL): Adolf Erman, 1854-1937 (with an Illustration) . . . . .	413
EDITORIAL FOREWORD . . . . .	1
EMENEAU, M. R.: An Echo-Word Motif in Dravidian Folk-Tales . . . . .	553
ENSLIN, M. S.: "Luke" and Paul . . . . .	81
GEHMAN, H. S.: The Relations between the Hebrew Text of Ezekiel and that of the John H. Scheide Papyrus . . . . .	92
GOSTZE, A.: The Tensas of Ugaritic . . . . .	266
—— Review of Furlani's <i>La Religione degli Etruschi</i> . . . . .	475
GOODRICH, L. C.: Early Prohibitions of Tobacco in China and Manchuria . . . . .	648
GRAY, L. H.: YASNA LVII: An Essay in Text Reconstruction . . . . .	310
GRAYZEL, S.: Review of Baron's <i>A Social and Religious History of the Jews</i> . . . . .	482
HAAS, G. C. O.: Bibliography of A. V. Williams Jackson . . . . .	241
—— Addenda to the Bibliography of A. V. Williams Jackson . . . . .	473
HARRIS, Z. S.: Expression of the Causative in Ugaritic . . . . .	103
HOURANI, G. F. (with KIM WON CHUNG): Arab Geographers on Korea . . . . .	658
JACKSON, A. V. W.: The Doctrine of the Bolos in Manichaean Eschatology . . . . .	226

	PAGE
JACKSON, A. V. W.: The Personality of Māni, the Founder of Manichaeism . . . . .	235
JOHNSON, H. M.: Conversion of Vikrama Samvat Dates . . . . .	608
KAI WON CHUNG and G. F. HOÜNANI: Arab Geographers on Korea . . . . .	658
KENT, R. G. and I. G. MATTHEWS: The Oriental Club of Philadelphia . . . . .	2
KENT, R. G.: The Restoration of Order by Darius . . . . .	112
—— Old Persian Jottings . . . . .	324
—— Review of König's <i>Relief und Inschrift des Königs Darius I am Felsen von Bagistan</i> . . . . .	675
LATOUKETT, E. S.: Review of La Fargue's <i>China and the World War</i> . . . . .	499
LEWY, J.: Notes on Pre-Bucian Texts from Nuzi . . . . .	450
MATTHEWS, C. D.: The Kitab Aiman al-arab wa-Talāqihā fī-Jahilyā of an-Najjārami . . . . .	615
MATTHEWS, I. G. (with R. G. Kent): The Oriental Club of Philadelphia . . . . .	2
MEDARD, M.: Note on the review of <i>A propos des voyages aventureux de Fernand Mendez Pinto</i> . . . . .	473
MEEK, T. J.: Lapses of Old Testament Translators . . . . .	122
MOGHADAM, M. E.: A Note on the Etymology of the Word <i>chokmate</i> . . . . .	602
MONTGOMERY, J. A.: Hebrews . . . . .	130
MÜLLER, U.: The Origin of the Early Dynastic Style . . . . .	140
NIMS, C. F.: Some Notes on the Family of Mereruka . . . . .	638
ODSEN, C. J.: Three Turfan Pahlavi Etymologies: <i>hpyrd</i> , <i>škrwst</i> , <i>mačhagd</i> . . . . .	331
PERRY, R. D.: Abraham Valentine Williams Jackson (with frontispiece) . . . . .	221
POSSER, A.: Another Case of the Predicative Use of the Genitive in Sumerian . . . . .	148
PURVES, P. M.: Nuzi Names . . . . .	462
REICH, N. J.: Coptic Ostrakon Métron 1 . . . . .	151
REIMER, J.: The Name Ashur in the Initials of a Difficult Phrase in the Bible . . . . .	153
SAKANISHI, S.: Review of <i>Monumenta Nipponica: Studies on Japanese Culture, Past and Present</i> , Vol. I, no. 1 . . . . .	425
SCHWARTZ, R.: The Hittite and Luwian Ritual of Zarpiya of Kezzuwina . . . . .	334
SHRYOCK, J. K.: The Use of the Word <i>An</i> . . . . .	156
—— Review of Dubs' <i>The History of the Former Han Dynasty: Translation</i> , Vol. I . . . . .	486
—— Review of Bodde's translation of Fung Ya-lan's <i>A History of Chinese Philosophy</i> . . . . .	488
—— Review of Bodde's <i>China's First Unifier: A Study of the Ch'in Dynasty as seen in the Life of Li Ssu</i> . . . . .	488
—— Review of Edwards' <i>Chinese Prose Literature of the Tang Period</i> . . . . .	687
—— Review of Crool's <i>Studies in Early Chinese Culture</i> . . . . .	688
—— Review of Hart's <i>Seven Hundred Chinese Proverbs</i> . . . . .	690
—— Review of Hommel's <i>China at Work</i> . . . . .	690
—— Review of Ayscough's <i>Chinese Women Yesterday and To-day</i> . . . . .	691
—— Review of Ware's <i>Vocabularies to the Intermediate Chinese Texts used at Harvard University</i> . . . . .	692

	PAGE
SHRYOCK, J. K.: Review of Hospitalier's <i>Grammaire Latine</i> . . .	692
——— Review of Fuchs' <i>Beiträge zur Mandjurischen Bibliographie und Literatur</i> . . . . .	693
——— Review of Soothill's <i>A Dictionary of Chinese Buddhist Terms</i> . . . . .	694
——— Review of Clark's <i>Two Lamestatic Pantheons</i> . . . . .	695
——— Review of Muller's <i>Apostle of China: Samuel Isaac Joseph Schereschewsky</i> . . . . .	696
SIMSON, M. A. and W. N. BROWN: Late Minghui Illustrations to the <i>iqbalnāmah</i> (' <i>Jahāngiri</i> ') (with four illustrations) . . . . .	354
SKOBA, S. L.: A Study of the Uses of Letter "Yōi" by David ben Abraham al-Fāsi . . . . .	107
SPOEL, H. H.: Arabic Magic Bowls II: An Astrological Bowl (with three illustrations) . . . . .	366
SPEISER, E. A.: Notes on Hurrian Phonology . . . . .	173
——— Review of Grant's (ed.) <i>The Haverford Symposium on Archaeology and the Bible</i> . . . . .	670
——— Review of Wright's <i>The Pottery of Palestine from the Earliest Times to the End of the Early Bronze Age</i> . . . . .	671
STEPHENS, F. J.: Review of Lautner's <i>Altbabylonische Personennamen und Berufsbezeichnungen</i> . . . . .	470
SUTER, R.: The Words <i>san i fen shen</i> in the Inscription on the Nestorian Monument at Hsiao-fu . . . . .	384
TORREY, C. C.: Notes on the Aramaic Contract published by Bauer and Meisner . . . . .	394
TUTTLE, E. H.: Dravidian "bone" . . . . .	472
WATERMAN, L.: Oriental Studies in the Present World Picture . . .	403
WELCKER, M.: Review of Mallowan's <i>The Excavations at Tell Chagar Bazar, and an Archaeological Survey of the Habur Region, 1934-35</i> . . . . .	673
WIESCHMÖR, H.: Concepts of Right and Left in African Cultures .	202

# BRIEF COMMUNICATIONS:

Tuttle, E. H. . . . .	472
Haas, G. C. O. . . . .	473
Medard, M. . . . .	473
Moghadam, M. E. . . . .	662
Algar, L. V. R. . . . .	664
Johnson, H. M. . . . .	668
NOTES OF THE SOCIETY . . . . .	218, 399, 697
NOTES OF OTHER SOCIETIES . . . . .	218, 400, 501, 698
PROCEEDINGS OF THE SOCIETY AT PHILADELPHIA . . . . .	502
PROCEEDINGS OF THE MIDDLE WEST BRANCH OF THE SOCIETY AT CHICAGO . . . . .	543
LIST OF MEMBERS . . . . .	699

## LIST OF BOOKS REVIEWED

	PAGE
AYSCOUGH, F.: Chinese Women Yesterday and To-day (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	691
BARON, S. W.: A Social and Religious History of the Jews (S. Grayzel) . . . . .	482
BODDE, D. (trad.): Fung Yu-lan's A History of Chinese Philosophy (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	488
— China's First Unifier: A Study of the Ch'in Dynasty as seen in the Life of Li Shih (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	488
CLARK, W. E.: Two Lamaistic Pantheons (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	695
CREEL, H. G.: Studies in Early Chinese Culture (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	688
DUBS, H. H.: The History of the Former Han Dynasty: Translation, Vol. I (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	485
EDWARDS, E. D.: Chinese Prose Literature of the T'ang Period (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	687
FUCHS, W.: Beiträge zur mandjurischen Bibliographie und Literatur (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	693
FURLANI, G.: La Religione degli Etruschi (A. Goette) . . . . .	475
GRANT, E. (ed.): The Haverford Symposium on Archaeology and the Bible (E. A. Speiser) . . . . .	670
HAN YI FENG: The Chinese Kinship System (B. W. Aginsky) . . . . .	492
HART, H. H.: Seven Hundred Chinese Proverbs (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	690
HOMMEL, R. P.: China at Work (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	690
HOSPITALIER, J. J.: Grammaire Laotienne (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	692
KÖNIG, F. W.: Relief und Inschrift des Königs Darius I am Felsen von Bagistan (R. G. Kent) . . . . .	675
KRACH, J. B. (ed.): Monumenta Nipponica: Studies on Japanese Culture, Past and Present, Vol. I, no. 1 (S. Sakanishi) . . . . .	495
LA FABOUR, T. E.: China and the World War (K. S. Latourette) . . . . .	499
LAUTNER, J. G.: Altbabylonische Personenurkunden und Erntearbeiterverträge (F. J. Stephens) . . . . .	476
MALLOWAN, M. E. L.: The Excavations at Tell Chagar Bazar, and an Archaeological Survey of the Habur Region, 1934-35 (M. Welker) . . . . .	673
MONUMENTA NIPPONICA: Studies on Japanese Culture, Past and Present, Vol. I, no. 1 (S. Sakanishi) . . . . .	495
MULLER, J. A.: Apostle of China: Samuel Isaac Joseph Schereschewsky (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	696
RYNIA DAVIDA, Mrs. C. A. F.: What was the Original Gospel of Buddhism? (A. K. Coomaraswamy) . . . . .	484
ROWLAND, B., JR.: The Wall-Paintings of India, Central Asia, and Ceylon (W. N. Brown) . . . . .	484
SCOTCHILL, W. E.: A Dictionary of Chinese Buddhist Terms (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	694
VACCARI, O. and E. E. VACCARI: Complete Course of Japanese Conversation-Grammar: A New and Practical Method of Learning the Japanese Language (D. Carr) . . . . .	497
WARR, J. R.: Vocabularies to the Intermediate Chinese Texts used at Harvard University (J. K. Shryock) . . . . .	692
WRIGHT, G. E.: The Pottery of Palestine from the Earliest Times to the End of the Early Bronze Age (E. A. Speiser) . . . . .	671

## EDITORIAL FOREWORD

This issue of the *JOURNAL* is the joint publication of the American Oriental Society and the Oriental Club of Philadelphia, in honor of the Club's fiftieth anniversary. It is offered as part of the joint celebration of that event to be held in Philadelphia, on April 19-21, in connection with the 1938 meeting of the Society. Oriental studies in America owe much to the membership of this Club for work carried on both in Philadelphia and in other American cities, in Europe, and in the Orient itself. The *JOURNAL* has a very special relationship to the Club. From the time (Volume 17, 1896) when the Society ceased publishing the *JOURNAL* through a Committee of Publication and elected instead one or more editors, the total number of editors has been thirteen, and of that number seven are or once were members of the Club. The present editors, therefore, have great satisfaction in presenting an issue consisting solely of articles by members of that Club, and only regret that the *JOURNAL* and the Club together could not have provided pages enough to solicit a contribution from every productive scholar whose name is on the Club's membership list. The range of interests of the present articles indicates, but does not exhaust, the range of the Club's interests. We offer the Club our congratulations, and add our wish that it may continue for many more half-centuries to promote the scientific study of the Orient in Philadelphia and throughout the world.

THE EDITORS.

## THE ORIENTAL CLUB OF PHILADELPHIA

The Oriental Club of Philadelphia was founded on April 30, 1888, with twenty-three original members, of whom twenty were present at the foundation meeting. In the fifty years of its existence, it has elected 121 other members, making a total membership over these years of 144. The present active membership is limited to fifty. During its entire career about six meetings have been held annually for the presentation of scientific papers by members or by visiting scholars. Former members who have removed from Philadelphia have been active in establishing similar organizations in several other cities.

### SPECIAL MEETINGS AND CELEBRATIONS

- The completion of five years of the Club, marked by the publication of a volume (see Bibliography).
- The twenty-fifth anniversary of the foundation, March 28, 1913, when the Club entertained the American Oriental Society.
- The meeting in honor of the Hon. Mayer Sulzberger, a founder of the Club, on his retirement from the Bench; January 13, 1916.
- The two-hundredth meeting of the Club, November 8, 1917.
- The thirtieth anniversary of the foundation, April 30, 1918.
- The thirty-fifth anniversary of the foundation, May 10, 1923, marked by the publication of a volume of studies (see Bibliography).
- The fortieth anniversary of the foundation, May 10, 1928.
- The forty-fifth anniversary of the foundation, dinner as guests of Dr. Adler, February 18, 1933.
- The fiftieth anniversary of the foundation, April 19-21, 1938, when the Club invited the American Oriental Society to meet at Philadelphia.

### BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Oriental Studies: a selection of the papers read before the Oriental Club of Philadelphia, 1888-1894.* Pp. 270. Boston: GINN AND CO., 1894.
- The Oriental Club of Philadelphia: Record of 25 Years.* Pp. 34. March 28, 1913; privately printed.
- Volume of Addresses in 16 Oriental Languages, by Members of the Club, presented to the Hon. Mayer Sulzberger, January 13, 1916.*
- "Oriental Club Meeting: Presentation of Testimonial Volume to Judge Sulzberger on his retirement from the bench," in *Old Penn* 14, 560-563 (January 22, 1916).



- "Oriental Club Honors Judge Sulzberger: presentation of testimonial volume to distinguished jurist on his retirement from the bench," in *The Jewish Exponent*, Vol. 62, No. 16 (Whole No. 1562), page 9 (January 21, 1916).
- "200th Meeting of the Oriental Club," in *Old Penn* 10: 169-171 (November 16, 1917).
- Thirty Years of Oriental Studies, issued in commemoration of thirty years of activity of the Oriental Club of Philadelphia*, Edited by ROLAND G. KENT, Secretary of the Club. Pp. 84. Philadelphia, 1918.
- The Song of Songs, a Symposium by members of the Oriental Club of Philadelphia*, Edited by WILLIAM H. SCHOTT. Pp. 120. Philadelphia, published by THE COMMERCIAL MUSEUM, 1924.

## MEMBERS

Arranged in the order of election. † deceased, \* resident active members.

- |   |                                  |
|---|----------------------------------|
| *Cyrus Adler, Founder                   | †Sarah Yorke Stevenson, 1891     |
| †Tatsui Baba, Founder                   | George A. Barton, 1891           |
| †George Dana Boardman, Founder          | Loring Woart Batten, 1895        |
| †Stewart Cullie, Founder                | †Paul Elmer More, 1895           |
| †Morton W. Easton, Founder              | †Williams C. Thayer, 1896        |
| †Joseph F. Garrison, Founder            | †Charles P. G. Scott, 1897       |
| †William Goodell, Founder               | †William Henry Furness, 3d, 1899 |
| J. Rendel Harris, Founder               | *William N. Bates, 1900          |
| †Paul Haupt, Founder                    | *James Alan Montgomery, 1900     |
| †Herman V. Hilprecht, Founder           | †Elwood Worcester, 1900          |
| †Edward Washburn Hopkins, Founder       | †Dana C. Munro, 1901             |
| †Marcus Jastrow, Founder                | Engo Littmann, 1903              |
| †Morris Jastrow, Jr., Founder           | *Solomon Salis-Cohen, 1904       |
| †Philip Howard Law, Founder             | Albert J. Edmunds, 1904          |
| †Benjamin Smith Lyman, Founder          | †George Byron Gordon, 1904       |
| †Edward Yorke McCauley, Founder         | John Carew Rolfe, 1904           |
| †Isaac Myer, Founder                    | Hermann Ranke, 1904              |
| †John P. Peters, Founder                | †Albert T. Clay, 1904            |
| †Robert W. Rogers, Founder              | Henry S. Drinker, 1906           |
| †John Stenbach, Founder                 | †William M. Groton, 1907         |
| †Mayer Sulzberger, Founder              | *Roland G. Kent, 1907            |
| †Henry Clay Trumbull, Founder           | Walton Brooks McDaniel, 1907     |
| †Talbot Williams, Founder               | David Randall MacIver, 1907      |
| †J. Peter Lesley, 1888                  | David McC. Steele, 1907          |
| †Daniel G. Brinton, 1888                | †Max L. Margolis, 1909           |
| †Hermann Collitz, 1888                  | †William Romaine Newbold, 1909   |
| †William J. Mann, 1888                  | Albert Ten Eyck Olmstead, 1909   |
| †Swamee Bhaskara Nanda Saraswatee, 1890 | Caroline L. Ransom, 1910         |
| †W. Max Mueller, 1890                   | Edward Sapir, 1910               |
|   | *Frank Gouldsmith Speck, 1910    |
|   | C. Leonard Woolley, 1910         |

- †Eugene Watson Burlingame, 1910  
 †Benson Brush Charles, 1910  
 †Eckley B. Cox, 1911  
 †Wilfred H. Schöff, 1911  
 †Henry Malter, 1912  
   George Dupue Hadassia, 1912  
   Robert Pierpont Blake, 1913  
   Franklin Edgerton, 1913  
   Arthur Ungnad, 1913  
 \*W. W. Hyde, 1914  
   H. J. Cadbury, 1915  
 †A. D. Hefferu, 1915  
   S. B. Luce, Jr., 1916  
   J. J. Van Nostrand, 1916  
 \*Isaac Hisk, 1916  
   A. J. Carnoy, 1916  
 \*W. Norman Brown, 1916  
 †Edward Chiera, 1916  
   C. W. Bishop, 1916  
   H. F. Lotz, 1916  
   R. E. Yerkes, 1916  
 †C. T. Benze, 1917  
   Ellis Grant, 1918  
   Robert M. Larabee, 1918  
   Langdon Warner, 1918  
   W. C. Farabee, 1919  
 \*Rhys Carpenter, 1919  
 †A. L. Frothingham, 1920  
 \*Harold H. Bender, 1920  
 †Howard Crosby Butler, 1920  
   Elbert Russell, 1920  
   Clarence L. Fisher, 1920  
   H. Lamar Crosby, 1920  
 \*David Magie, 1921  
 \*W. K. Prentiss, 1921  
 \*Joseph Collen Ayer, 1921  
   David W. Antram, 1921  
 \*L. G. Matthews, 1921  
 \*Henry S. Gehman, 1922  
   T. J. Meek, 1922  
   Edward Capps, 1922  
 \*G. W. Rowley, 1923  
   J. A. Maynard, 1923  
   ZeBarney T. Phillips, 1923  
 †Benzion Halper, 1923  
 \*E. A. Speiser, 1924  
   Carl H. Kradling, 1924  
 \*Charles W. David, 1925  
 \*Nathaniel J. Reich, 1925  
 \*Solomon L. Skoss, 1925  
 \*Morton S. Enslin, 1926  
 \*Charles D. Benjamin, 1926  
   Philip K. Hitti, 1926  
   Milton G. Evans, 1926  
 \*Solomon Zeitlin, 1926  
   Jacob Grape, 1926  
   W. F. Albright, 1929  
 \*J. W. Flight, 1929  
 \*John K. Shryock, 1929  
 \*Joseph Reider, 1929  
   Cyrus Gordon, 1931  
 \*A. Irving Hallowell, 1931  
 \*Valentin Müller, 1931  
 †G. Battiscombe Gress, 1932  
 \*R. R. Hauptert, 1932  
   Samuel M. Zwemer, 1932  
 †A. S. Woodburne, 1932  
 \*Alan A. Mollae, 1932  
 \*H. H. Comfort, 1933  
 \*Richard Bernheimer, 1933  
 \*Ernst Dietz, 1933  
 \*H. H. F. Jayne, 1934  
 \*D. S. Davidson, 1935  
   L. C. Moon, 1935  
 \*Zellig S. Harris, 1935  
   H. L. Poteman, 1935  
 \*M. A. Simsar, 1936  
 \*John Mosher, 1936  
 \*John F. Lewis, Jr., 1936  
   Samuel J. Mills, 1936  
 \*Karl Reuning, 1936  
 \*Heinz Wieschhoff, 1936  
 \*Charles M. Cooper, 1937  
 \*Vincent F. Potlle, 1937

R. G. KENT,  
 I. G. MATTHEWS.

## AN OLD GUJARĀTĪ TEXT OF THE KĀLAKA STORY

W. NORMAN BROWN  
UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA

AN OLD GUJARĀTĪ text of the well known Kālaśa story appears in a manuscript entitled *Kālaśavikathā*, which is No. 2008 of the Harvard University collection of Indic manuscripts.<sup>1</sup> The manuscript itself was written in the year Vikrama Samvat 1479 (A. D. 1422) and on being published in this article is apparently one of the older continuous texts in Old Gujarātī which has been put in print for scholars,<sup>2</sup> and is almost as old as the earliest Jaina manuscripts in Old Gujarātī listed in the Lippel catalogue,<sup>3</sup> where some of the earliest are those indicated by entry No. 770, with a composition date of Samvat 1412, and entry No. 2661, with a composition date of Samvat 1411 and copying date of Samvat 1419. It has, therefore, seemed to me worth while to publish this manuscript with translation and notes, partly because of its relative antiquity and partly because of the comparative scarcity of printed Old Gujarātī works and still greater scarcity of translations from such works.

The chief aids for handling Old Gujarātī materials are those published by Tessitori in 1914-16 and Dave in 1935 (see my BIBLIOGRAPHY below).<sup>4</sup> Of these Tessitori's is by far the more extensive; Dave's, being confined to the exploitation of a single manuscript (dated Vikrama Samvat 1543 — A. D. 1486), contains only a skeleton grammar, but in compiling his notes he had the

<sup>1</sup> This manuscript was pointed out to me by Dr. Horace L. Poleman, who had seen it while preparing his *Census of Indic Manuscripts in the United States and Canada* (now in process of publication by the American Oriental Society).

<sup>2</sup> Earlier are the grammatical notes of the *Mugdhaśvabodhamauktika* (A. D. 1394); see Grierson in LSI, vol. 9, part ii, pp. 353-364. There are still earlier works in Old Gujarātī reported, as from the late 12th century on. For some examples, see C. D. Dalal, *Prākṛita Gurjara-Kāvyaśaṅgraha* (GOS, vol. 13), 1929.

<sup>3</sup> *Lippel's Jaina Jñānaśāstrānta Hastalikhita prasthāna Śālipatra*, Bombay, Agamedaya Samiti, 1928.

<sup>4</sup> Before this time the materials were chiefly those of the *Mugdhaśvabodhamauktika*, published by H. H. Dhruva in the *Transactions of the Ninth International Congress of Orientalists* (London, 1893), vol. I, pp. 315-320, and by Grierson in LSI, vol. 9, part ii, 353-364.

advantage of recent work done by Chatterji, Geiger, Bloch, and Turner (see his Bibliography, p. ix), and in the limited ground that his grammar covers it clearly supersedes Tessitori's, although the very limitation of scope prevents it from eliminating the latter. In addition to a skeleton grammar Dave furnishes with his text an etymological word list, a most valuable feature of his book, but marred by a number of incorrect references to the text and misspellings of Old Gujarātī forms cited.<sup>5</sup> The etymologies are carefully considered and are a marked advance over Tessitori.

The manuscript here presented is of only six paper folios, with a panel illustration on the first folio done in current Western Indian style of the 15th century,<sup>6</sup> but in this case of decided inferiority in execution. The text does not add to our knowledge of the Kālaka story—it contains several departures from the older versions—and its interest is primarily as a specimen of Old Gujarātī. It is possible that this manuscript is an original, made by a monk for his own use at the time of the Paryuṣaṇā festival, when the monks read or recite to the lay folk the stories of the Tīrthaṅkaras in the Kālpasūtra and the list of the pontiffs following, with frequent anecdotal commentary attached from other sources, and relate the story of Kālaka, who changed the date of the Paryuṣaṇā festival in the manner narrated in the texts. The Sanskrit and Jaina Māhārāṣṭri verses inserted in the text are badly treated by our manuscript and are copiously commented upon, as though the user were very uncertain of those languages. We cannot be sure of the author or the place of composition (or of copying, whichever is the case), because the sections of the text offering statements on those points are in writing superimposed upon the original writing, and it is quite likely that some other person whose name has been covered over by the second writing was actually the author.<sup>7</sup> On the theory that manuscripts are less likely to travel than to stay still, we might suppose that the work was written on Mount Śatruñjaya, as the later superimposed writing of the manuscript indicates, but to put any reliance on the statement would be unjustified. Jain monks carry manuscripts around with them, and especially might they take them to Mount Śatruñjaya, which

<sup>5</sup> A needed work is a word list of all the Old Gujarātī texts so far in print.

<sup>6</sup> See Brown, *Kālaka*, p. 20 ff.

<sup>7</sup> See Text, note 38.



## Text

§ 1. arham. tñaiṃ bhāratākṣetri pñivirūpīṇī stri pratiṃ tila-  
kaprīya dhārāvāsu isūṃ nāmīṃ nagara pravartitaṃ. tihāṃ siphā  
tañi pariṃ parākramavanta tñitasipha isūṃ nāmī rājā rājya tañi  
pratipāṇā nīpajāvai. teha rāya tañai gñhāṃgañi rūpasvappadāṃ  
jīśi hui sari isī sarasvadarī rājā. tatakuleśi sambhūta kālīka  
isūṃ<sup>1</sup> nāmīṃ kumāra, rūpi karī nījīta māra, kalāy anaṃ  
yāuvani karī sampūrṇa.

§ 2. ekavāra tañai prastāvi turuṃgama tañi vāhā lūṃ. gyāṃ  
hūtāṃ vana māhi śrīguṇākaraśūri vyākhyāna karatā sām̐bhalyāṃ.  
takkāla saṃsāra tañai viṣi anityatā āpatī. mātāpitā mokalāvi  
pūṇca saṃ kṣītrīc anai sarasvatī<sup>2</sup> bahūna sahita dīkṣā līdā.  
kramahīṃ samgra siddhāpta joyā gurujegya jāñi pātābhīṣeka  
nīpajāvai. śrīkālīkācārya isūṃ nāmā<sup>3</sup> hūṃ. sarasvatī pratiṃ  
śrīmahattarāpada didhaṃ. tivāra ta anaṃtara śrīguṇākaraśūri  
svarggabhājīyā hūyā. śrīkālīkāśūri pñivirūpavitra nīpajāvātā ājeñ  
nagarīṃ pāudhāyā. śrīsaṃgha sahirṣita hūṃ.

§ 3. ekavāra tañai prastāvi mahattarā sarasvatī bālyabhūmīkā  
puhatāṃ hūtāṃ anai garūdhabhīla rājā tañi dñjīṃ padyāṃ. rājā  
sarasvatī tañi rūparekhā deśi amāṃsakara hūṃ. āpañā allam̐tha  
vañṭha mokai bhūtakāriṃ sukhūsañi baśāvi<sup>4</sup> anṭeuri lei rāṣi.  
tivāraṃ hīji mahasatī pātāra karatī guru pratiṃ jāñāvaiṃ.  
bhāṭṭarīka śrīsaṃghasahita hūṃtā rājasabhāṃ jāi, rāi prati upadeśa  
taṃsuṃ pradāna nīpajāvaiṃ, śrīsaṃghī pūṇa kahūṃ. rājāṃ te  
vāta manī nāñi, isūṃ kahūṃ chai:

na<sup>5</sup> paśyati yathā cāndhañ<sup>6</sup> kāmāndho<sup>7</sup> pi na paśyati

na paśyati madonmatto deṣam arthī<sup>8</sup> na paśyati. 1.

[*Commentary*] jīma jācāṃdha na deṣaiṃ, jīma madonmatto<sup>9</sup> na  
deṣaiṃ,<sup>10</sup> jīma arthī deṣa na deṣaiṃ, tīma kāmāṃdha na deṣaiṃ.  
eka vārtā kīma-i<sup>11</sup> asatyā na āpajaiṃ.

<sup>1</sup> MS īṇai

<sup>2</sup> MS sarasvatī

<sup>3</sup> MS nāma was erased by later hand.

<sup>4</sup> MS baśāri

<sup>5</sup> MS nañi

<sup>6</sup> MS cāṃdha. Perhaps reading should be na paśyati hī jātyāndhañ (see commentary below, and Brown, *Kāśika*, p. 72, no. 14, where that is the reading.

<sup>7</sup> MS arthī deṣa

<sup>8</sup> MS na deṣai

<sup>9</sup> MS madonmata

<sup>10</sup> MS kīmañi

§ 4. śrīkālikācārya ubhyasthāna karī upāśriya āvyā śrīsaṃgha teḍī kaḥiṃṃ :

je saṃghapaccanīyā pavayanaṣvaghāyagū narā je ya<sup>11</sup>  
teṣiṃ vaccāmi<sup>12</sup> gayam eyam pannaṃ bhaṇai sūri.<sup>13</sup> 1.

[*Commentary*] je manakṣa saṃgha pratīṃṃ pratyānīka huiṃ anaiṃ pravacana bhaṇī siddhānta teha pratīṃṃ je upaghāta nīpajāvaiṃ teha<sup>14</sup> pratīṃṃ jai sīśāmaṇa dījai nahi, tu doṣa tapī prāpti hui anai śāsana pratīṃṃ māna na<sup>15</sup> ūpajai.

§ 5. isiṃṃ kaḥī, āpaṇapaṇiṃ gaccha siṃṃ vimāsi, sīśāmaṇa deī, gaccha anyatra vibhāra karāvīu, āpaṇapaṇiṃ unamatīa tapau veṣa ādāriṃ, nagara māhi ekāki hūtaṃ trigi catuki cacarī gr̥thalatā karatā hīdaiṃ. isiṃṃ kaḥai : yadi garddabbhilo rājā tataḥ kim atah paraṃ : [*Commentary*] jai garddabbhilo rājā tu kisiṃṃ, yadi pracuram antahpuram tataḥ kim atah paraṃ : [*Commentary*] jai pracara ghaṇauṃ amteura tu kisiṃṃ, yady aham arāṇye vasāmi tataḥ kim atah paraṃ : [*Commentary*] jai huṃ arāṇya vasam tu kisiṃṃ. .<sup>16</sup> [*Commentary*] jai pracara rājys tu kisiṃṃ. isiṃṃ bolatā hīdaiṃ.

§ 6. te svarūpa deṣī caurāsīe sāmāṇti mahāsāmāṇti rāu vīnavīu : mahārājā o mahāsati māṃkūṃ, eha tapai dukhiṃṃ eha tapau bāṃdhava gahilaṃ thīu, etalā hūtau pāpa tapaiṃ pramāṇi ghaṇā anartha tapī prāpti huṣiṃṃ, rājā sām̐bhali valatam kaḥaiṃ : jai tahme isyā dāhā chau tu āpaṇai paṇe ghari jai sīkṣāpanā dīu, jai ā vāra<sup>17</sup> pūthiṃṃ majha āgali kaḥisiṃ tu cora tapaiṃ aparādhi sīśāmaṇa lahisaṃ.

§ 7. te svarūpa śrīkālikācārya sām̐bhali, catuṣpathi āvī, isi pratamjñā nīpajāvai :

śrūyantāṃ lokapālā digadhipatiyutā grāmayakṣādayasā ca sāmāntā mantriṇo 'mī sphatasubhataḥghaṭṣāśreṣṭhināḥ sārthavāhāḥ lāṅgūleneva vepyā<sup>18</sup> kṣpīm iva kuṣṇam rājyato garddabbhilaṃ mūlāu nonmūlaye 'haṃ yadi na ca na tadā kālikācārya eṣṣ.<sup>19</sup> 1.

<sup>11</sup> MS jeṣa

<sup>12</sup> MS eyam pannaṃ sūri

<sup>13</sup> MS vaccāmi

<sup>14</sup> MS te

<sup>15</sup> mā, followed by an erased akṣara which is corrected in margin to na; then comes nya ūpajai.

<sup>16</sup> MS clearly has lacuna.

<sup>17</sup> MS jaiṃavāra

<sup>18</sup> MS lāṅgūleneveṣyā

<sup>19</sup> MS ca nara tadā kālikācārya eṣṣ

[*Commentary*] nagaranāgariku samukṣa isiṃ kaheṃ: śrūyantāṃ lokapālā digadhipatīyutā grāmayakṣādayas ca: [*Commentary*] pāṃca lokapāla dasa digapāla anai grāma taṇa attīṣṭā yaku sām̐bbhalau. sāmānta mantriṃo 'mī sphaṭasubhṭaghaṭāśreṣṭhiṃvoh sārthavāhāḥ: <sup>24</sup> [*Commentary*] anai sāmānta maṃpāḷika maṃp-  
tri śreṣṭhi sārthavāha sām̐bbhalau. lāḡgūleneva veṇṇā kapim iva kuṇṇpaṃ rājyato garddabhillam mūlān noṃmūlaye 'ham yadi na ca na <sup>25</sup> tadā kālīkācārya eṣaḥ: [*Commentary*] tu haṃ kālīkārya jaḥ e kuṇṇpa garddabhillā samūlōrṃmūla anumūli nāṣuṃ jima vānaraḍau pūṃchi sāhi mātā pāṣati pheravi lāṃṣṭi.

§ 8. isiṃ loka samukṣya kaḥi nagara hūṃta nīkuliu. avadhūta taṇu veṣa ādariu. maṇi cūṃtavīṃ: dhūrīvāsa nagari jāuṃ. valī <sup>26</sup> vīmāsiṃ: tevaḍa tevaḍā mitra isiṃ kaḥisiṃ: kālīka mitra sam-  
jama lei gyu hūṃtau anai subhṭa mahāmantri sarasvatī bahini melhi āvyā. eha kāraṇa janmāsthānaki parābhavyāṃ jāvā jogya nahī. anyatra jāsi.

§ 9. isiṃ vīmāsi cālyā, kramahi mugāsthānaki puḥatā ava-  
dhūta taṇaiṃ veṣiṃ. ekū syāṣi taṇai nagari kumāra geḍḍade  
ramatāṃ daḍaṇ kūpa madhi paḍiṃ nīkulai nahī. tisi kālīkācārya  
avadhūta taṇai veṣiṃ tihāṃ āvyā. te svarūpa deṣi dhanuḥi anai  
hāṇu lei, ākarnpānta pūri, ratnagaṃcita daḍaṇ vedhiu. bīṇu hāṇu  
teha bāna taṇi pūṃṇai sām̐dhān. īṇaiṃ pariṃ kūpākūṃṭhai ūbhā  
rahyāṃ daḍaṇ kāḍhiu. āpaṇi dhanureddharavidyā prakāṣi, tīṇai  
kalāṃ save rājakumāra raṃjyā. tehe śāki pratīṃ kuhīṃ, tihāṃ  
je sāmānta te saghalā-i śāki kaḥiṃ. tihāṃ eka śāṣi kanhai raḥyā  
āpaṇi kalā vidyā vinoda ācārya karī atī-hi rāya siṃ prīti ūpārjī.

§ 10. isiṃ prastāvi vaḍā rāya taṇu dūta churi kacolūṃ lei āviu.  
te deṣi rāya kālamahu hūu. tivāraiṃ rājā kanhai bhāṭṭāruke  
pūchiṃ: kaḥu rājana taḥme kāḥmuhā kisyā kāraṇa. tivāraiṃ  
rājāṃ kaḥiṃ: ahmārai vaḍaṇ rājā tīṇaiṃ e āḍesa mokaliu: isiṃ  
kuhāviṃ, kaḥi mastaka mokaliṃyo kaḥi amṭapāna karīṃyo. ja e vūta  
pramāṇi na kījaiṃ tu rājya kuṭaraba teha taṇu kṣu nīpajāvai.  
bhāṭṭāruke pūchiṃ: valī kaḥu kaḥi taṇau kāṃṇi anyāyu. rāya  
kaḥi: e āḍesa chanū rāya pratīṃ āviu ehai. avasara jāṇi bhāṭṭā-  
rika kaḥaiṃ: rājana e unamatta ahme diṃ nahī. pādharāṃ  
manakṣa māgyā hūṃtāṃ haṭhiyāra nāpaiṃ, tu mastaka māgyāṃ

<sup>24</sup> MS \*eṭhiṃ \*vāhā

<sup>25</sup> MS nara

<sup>26</sup> MS va, 11



kimāpī. e vasta nahi yogya. tahme cāleu jīstūṃ navaṃ nālāvā  
tanum rāṇi sūśvaum.

811. tivārai dhanā rāya ekatra hūi cālyā, kramihiṃp simpdha  
ūtarī sūrasūtramandali āvyā. isi varṣakāla āviu. pāṇiya karī  
mārgga viṣṇava thiyā; kaṭaka esumāsūp tihām rahiṃp. vijaya-  
daśamī tu anantara kaṭaka cālii nahī. tivāraṃp bhāṭṭārake kahiṃp  
śāki rāya prathīp; kabu kisiṃp kāraṇa. rāya kabii: svāmī sambala  
sūtam.

§ 12. tivrārai tu anantara bhāṭṭāraka trini upavēsa karaiṃ. āśanadevatā pratyakṣā thāi. tivrāraiṃ pahiṃ āśanadevatā karaiṃ bahina sarasvatī taṇi śudhī pūchai. valataṃ isuṃ kabī; sarasvatī aṣaṃdāṣā hūṇṭi; biḥuṃ upavēsa taṇai pāraṇi āmbila karaiṃ, anai taḥmaruṃ nāma hiyai dharai. e svarūpa sām̐bhāi val̐ scharṣita hūtaiṃ kahium; māta maiṃ evaṇ upakrama kidhau, puṇa dravya pāṣi saghala-i nirarthaka<sup>29</sup> husi. tīpāi prastāvi āśanadevatāṃ rūpa āpiṃ, anai isuṃ kahium; pūrvadiṣiṃ prabhāta taṇai prastāvi tivrāha bala tu deṣai. tihāṃ e rūpa melhe jisiṃ te svaruṇa rūpa thāi, anai savihum pratiṃ āpe. isuṃ kaḥi āśanadevatā adṛṣṭa hu. prabhāti bhāṭṭārake te svarūpa satvāpi tihāṃ śāki pratiṃ svaruṇa āpiṃ.

§ 13. te saharṣita hūṭā cālyā, kramahi ūḡayanī taṇni parisari  
āryā. garḍdabhilla sāmuhu āryu. rīṇasetri rapatūrya vājivā taṇni  
kāraṇi lāgūṇi kāhala; ruḍra saṇḡrāma hoivā lāgūṇi; puṇṭāra puṇ-  
ṭāri syaṇi asavāra asavāri syaṇi ratha rathi syaṇi pāyaka pāyaki  
syaṇi yuddha nīpajāvai. garḍdabhilla bhāgu nāsi kari nagara  
māhi gvu.

§ 14. bhūai dīni samgrāma ko na karaim. tivāraim bhāṭṭārika  
 prāṭim janāvium. tivāraim bhāṭṭārike aṭhottara sau vira vīpī,  
 jibām aṭṭalai dhāma nīsaratu hūmtan deṣi teba dḥūkaḍā rahiā.  
 jivāraim aṭamī taṇai dīni garḍabhiḷla kumbha.. tapī āgi<sup>24</sup>  
 pūji, vinatī kiḍhi, garḍabhiḷm mukha pasāraum, tetaḷi dūrāpātī  
 laḡhasumptāni dṛḍhaprahāṭi śabdavedhi taṇā bāpasamūba vichūtām  
 mukha tina bharium ūma bhāṭhaṇ bharūm. tivāraim vidvā kupi.

# MS nirtbuka

\* MS kumbha tati gñi. A marginal note, now cut off, apparently in the handwriting of the original copyist, shows a loop as of v, ð, or k. For emendation of gñi to kñi (fem., Dava, p. 16) note paintings in Brown, *Kālaka*, figures 16 and 30, where Gāṛḍhāhita performs the magic rite before a pot from which fire is issuing.

garddabhillā pratiṃṣ mastaki prabhāro deḥ viṣṭā karī, anai āpanai  
sthānaki gaḥ. tivāra tu anapṭāra garddabhillā jivatu sāhin, nagarī  
pāṣaṭi pheravī desa bāhīri kūḍhin.

§ 15. sarasvatī aṣaṃjāsila mūkhāvī, dīkṣā lidhī. śākī rājā jina-  
śāsana taṇai viṣai niścalacitta nīpajāvya, rājyapaḍa sthāpyā, deśa-  
grāma vihinai, marjyādā karī āpi, āpaṇapairi gaccha teḍāvī, āloyana  
lidhī. śrīsaṃgha nai muni pramoda ūpanau. śrīkālikācārya sadguru  
taṇi pratijāna sāci nīpajāvī.

§ 16. tivāra tu anapṭāra vihāraakraṃa nīpajāvātāṃ bhārūyacchī  
pāudbhāpyā. bhāṇusirī bahina balamitra bhāṇamitra ruli yāyatu  
ūpanāṃ. atīāḍara nīpajāvya. balamitra dīkṣā lidhī. parobita te  
svarūpa deṣi, macchārī karī rāya pratiṃṣ kahinṃ : mahārāja jihāṃp  
mahātmā eulā tinaī mārgi je āpaṇi eulā paḍa cāppāin<sup>25</sup> te dūsava  
lāgaī. abhakti ūpajāin anyatra vihāraakraṃa karāvīnṃ. rāi vārtiā  
māni. tivāraṃ sarasvatī aśuddhamāna āhāra karāvya, te svarūpa  
jāni śrīkālikācārya vihāra kūḍhan. vārsūritu māhi saṇarivāra  
paithāṇapari nagarī āvyā. rājā śālavāhana pramoda modara hūu.  
bhalā uttsava nīpajāvya.

§ 17. ekaiṃ prastāyī guru vīnaryā, īsyam kahinṃ : svāmi hūṃ  
pāṇcami taṇai dīssai īṇḍamabotsavī jūssu;<sup>26</sup> marahaḷha deṣi  
īṇḍamabotsava taṇi rīti chait; taruḥa prasāda<sup>27</sup> karī ṣoṭhī taṇai  
dini paryuṣaṇāparva nīpajāvan. ūpai velāṃ bhajjārika īsinṃ  
kahaṃ :

merū vi calae sūro paścimāe vi uggaī  
pājūsaravapavvaṃ tu n'ūkkamai pāṇcamin.<sup>28</sup> 1.

merū<sup>29</sup> vi calae sūro. [*Commentary*] jai kivāraṃ merā parratu  
cālinṃ. jai kivāra[ṃ] dūsthānaka hūṃtu talai, jai samudra  
marjyādā melhai, jai cīntāmaṇi taṇuṃ pramāṇa kūka ravelai, jai  
sūrya pūrva hūṃṭu paścimāin āgaī, tathāpi paryuṣaṇāparva pāṇ-  
cami kadācana-i ullāṃghai nahi. śrīśiddhānta māhi īsinṃ kahinṃ  
chait; sa-ṣisai-tūe māae [vaikkante] vāsāvāsaṃ pājūsavai. amṭarā-

<sup>25</sup> MS āpaṇi . . . cāppāin

<sup>26</sup> MS jūssu

<sup>27</sup> MS prāda, corrected in margin by later hand to prasāda

<sup>28</sup> MS gives this stanza very corruptly: mero . . . uggaṃmai . . . pavaṃ  
. . . "maiṃ" ml. For correct version, as printed in text, see Brown, *Kāḷaka*,  
p. 91; see also for quotation from *Sāṃśāra* (*Kāḷpasūtra*) below.

<sup>29</sup> MS mero

vāse kappai. no se kappai taṃ rayahiṃ uvāṣaṇāvittae.<sup>26</sup> [Commentary] saṃvṛṣaṭika māsa paṇcāsa dīhāde etalai paryuṣaṇāparva kījai. amṭarāli kalpai. puṇa te rātri atikramivā na kalpaim.

§ 18. tīṇai velāṃ śālavāhani<sup>27</sup> rājāṃ kahiuṃ: jai amṭarāli kalpai, tu caturthīṃ paryuṣaṇāparva nīpajāvau. tīnai prastāvi rūya taṇa āgraha jāyī anai ghaṇa lābha deṣī cauthīṃ paryuṣaṇākalpa nīpajāvyan. teha velā tu bhādrapada taṇī śuklaśjūḍāli cauthīṃ paryuṣaṇāparva nīpajāvaim.

§ 19. hīvāṃ ketalai ekaiṃ prastāvi śrīkālīkācārya taṇā śyīṣya dūrvīṇṭa hūyā sāsāmaṇa mānāṃ nahī. tīvāraiṃ śyīyātura śrāvaka pratiṃ kahī, śīṣya nidrā bhari melhī, ekāki hūṭā cālyā. śrīkālīkācārya<sup>28</sup> taṇai pūṭṭī ścārya śrīśāgaracandrasūri kanakhali rūya pratibodhī<sup>29</sup> tihūṃ entaṃmāsāki<sup>30</sup> rabyā ehaṃ. tihā[ṃ] kramihī śrīkālīkācārya āvyūṇi. kuṇahi olaṣyā nahūṃ poṣāṭa taṇai ekaiṃ sūpaiṃ baṣiṭ rabyā. śrīśāgaracandrasūri āpanā jānivā taṇai garvī bhāṭṭārīka prati kahiuṃ: māharaṃ kiśāṃṇṇ vyākhyāna. bhāṭṭārīke kahiuṃ: atibhaṭṭam.

§ 20. tīvāra tu anantara te saṣya sajyātura śrāvaka pūchī āvyā, gura taṇe poge lāḡā gura kṣamāvyā. te svarūpa deṣī śāgaracandrasūri lājyā, manī apdoba āpivā lāḡā. vāḷukā tanaī dṛṣṭāṃtī prīchavyā kahiuṃ: vaccha eha velūṃ<sup>31</sup> taṇī pariṃ samayī samayī ananta guṇihāṇī husī. tamhāruṃ dūṣaṇa kāl nahī. tīvāra tu anantara śāṣyādika bhaktivaṇṭa hūyā.

§ 21. isī mahāvidehi kṣetri śrīśīmaṇḍharasvāmī kanhai īṇḍri mahārājī nigodavicāra sāṃbhālī pūchīṃ: kahaṇ isī vicāra bharatākṣetri koṃ jāṇai. tīvārai śrīśīmaṇḍharasvāmī kahiuṃ: hū śrīkālīkācārya jāṇaim. tīvāraiṃ īṇḍra rūpa-parāvarita kari bhara-tākṣetri āvī vicāra pūchīu. bhāṭṭārīke kahiuṃ:

golā ya asaṃsijjā asaṃkha-niggoṣṭha haviḡaṇi golo  
ikkikkāṇṇi nigoe ananta-jīvā muṇeyavvā.<sup>32</sup> 1.

<sup>26</sup> MS sa-vīśa-rāṇe māse vāṣā" pājūṣavāṃtī. amṭarāvīśa ka" no se kappai taṇi "paṇi uvā"

<sup>27</sup> MS śālavāhani corrected by copyist himself to śāla"

<sup>28</sup> MS kālīkā ścārya

<sup>29</sup> MS pratibodhī

<sup>30</sup> MS entaṃmāsāki

<sup>31</sup> MS writes confusedly: after i come the vowel signs for both ā and ā, topped by anuvāra

<sup>32</sup> MS golā i asaṃsijjā a"-ggaṇ ha" go" ikkakkā" nigoe aṇ"-jī" maṇe"

[*Commentary*] jetañ bhūmikā sūci nai aggi sūksma ananta kām tañā bheda etalāṇaṃ ussāṇikāṭṭā golā, assaṇṇikhyāte nigodā eka golāṇa anai ekai nigodā ananta jīvā, e vicāra sūṇṇhālā ruti yāyita hūa. āḥṣaṇa pūchāṇa, tvaṇāṇaṃ śrutajjānā jōi tō sāgaropama āḥṣaṇa<sup>47</sup> kaḥāṇa. iṇḍri prabhāvaṇā nipaḥāvī, svasāḥāṇi puhutu.

evaṇṇavidha yugapradhāna śrīkālīkūcārya hūyā.

§ 22. tehe eutthāi paryuṣaṇāparva āṇiṇaṃ, te āja paryuṣaṇāparva jāṇivaṇaṃ, tōṇi paryuṣaṇāparva śrāvaka śrāvikā māsaṣamaṇa pāṣaṣamaṇa aṣṭāṇṇikā trelāyita tapāyāṇa taṇā prabhāva tu śrīkalpa anai kothā saṃpūrṇa vācyamāna nipaḥāvī.

§ 23. hiva kaḥi pratīṭṭa dharmalābhu na hui kaḥi, te dharmalābha kaḥi chāi anai ekārthi saṇa tapa pūchū chāi. hiva pūjya bhāṭṭāraka śrī\*guṇākarasūri śrīpadmaṇḍaprabhasūri tatpatte guṇasamudrasūri tatpatte śrīśāntīsūri tatpatte śrīmuniśekharasūri śrīvācānūcārya bhāvaśekharah<sup>48</sup> teha taṇā prasāda tu kalpa saṃpūrṇa hūa.

§ 24. hiva evaṇṇavidha puṇyodyama sācavatāṇi śrīsaṃgha prati evaṇṇavidha āṇvata varādhāṇṇikā hu, te kisiṇaṃ:

nakṣatrakṣetapūritāṇaṃ marakatasthāḥāṇaṃ viśālāṇaṃ nakhāṇa  
pīṇṇadyutinālakerakalitaṇaṃ candraprabhūcandanaṇaṃ  
yāvaṇaṃ merukare gabhastikāṭṭake dhatte dharitī vadhū  
tāvaṇaṃ nandatu dharmakarmmanirataṇaṃ śrīsaṃghaṇaṃ  
bhāṭṭārakah.<sup>49</sup>

1.

[*Commentary*] śrīsaṃghaṇaṃ bhāṭṭārakas tūvaṇaṃ nandatu.<sup>50</sup> tāṇi kām nai eṭṭurvidha śrīśrāmaṇasaṃgha nāṇḍaṇa jāṇi kāmī e tsiṇaṃ vārū vadhāmaṇaṇaṃ hui, kisiṇaṃ vadhāmaṇaṇaṃ, aneraṇi vadhāmaṇaṇi thāla jōi, coṣā jōi, nālakera jōiṇa, candana jōiṇa, strī ahiva sūhaviṇaṇaṃ bāṭha sakāṇṇakāṇa tīpaṇi strī vadhāviṇaṇaṃ tau jōi, tau śrīsaṃgha taṇai vadhāvaṇaṇi kehaṇi sthāla: ākāśarūpīṇaṃ marakataṇaṇaṇi vipala vistiraṇaṇaṇi moṭaṇaṇi sthāla jāṇivaṇaṇaṃ, anai nakṣatraji bhāṇṇatāṇi coṣā jāṇivā, anai pīṇṇadyutinālakerakalitaṇaṃ, pīṇṇadyuti bhāṇṇi candramā tehaṇi nālakera jāṇivaṇaṇaṃ,<sup>51</sup> candraprabhūcandanaṇaṇi anai

<sup>47</sup> MS śrutajjānā . . . āḥṣaṇa

<sup>48</sup> The part of the text within asterisks was written by a later hand over the original text, which had been erased.

<sup>49</sup> MS has a number of minor corruptions in this stanza: . . . marakataḥ . . . yavaṇa . . . gabhasthi . . . vidhū tāva nīṇḍatu \*nirataḥ \*saṃgha bhāṭṭa\*

<sup>50</sup> MS śrīsaṃgha . . . nīṇḍatu

<sup>51</sup> MS jāṇivaṇaṇaṃ

cāndramā taṇuṃ cāndrīṇaṃuṃ tehaḥi cāndana śriṣaṇḍa jāṇivaṃuṃ,  
 prithvirūpiṇī ahiva sūhavi<sup>42</sup> śrī jāṇivī, meraparyatarūṇa hātha  
 jāṇivaṃ, śrīśūryarūṇa kaṇikaṇi kari sakarṇkaṇa—jāṇ kārī e isūṃ  
 sthīrarūpa vadhūmaṃu vartīai, tāṅ kārī nai dharmmadhyānaparū-  
 yaṇa catuṣvidha śrīśramapasaṃgha nāṇḍau. dharmmadhyāna taṇai  
 pramāṇi uttarottara riddhi vṛddhi māṃgalya parāṇiparā vīstāraṃ.

§ 25. cha. śrīkālīkasūrikathā. cha. saṃ<sup>43</sup> 1479 varṣe āso va di  
 13 bhūme \*tāladhyajādurge, pīppalagaecchi bhāṣṭāraka śrīgūṇa-  
 samudrasūri, śrīśaṇṭisūri, śrīmuniśekharasūri, vāṇ.<sup>44</sup> bhāṇśe-  
 khara.<sup>45</sup> tatśiṣya munisūgaracandra kalpapastikā.

## TRANSLATION

§ 1. Honor! Here in Bharata-kṣtra there was a city by the name  
 Dhārāvāsa, as though the forehead ornament on the earth in  
 woman's form. There a king named Vairasinha, courageous as a  
 lion, protected the kingdom. In that king's houseyard was queen  
 Surasundarī, through her endowment of beauty like a goddess.  
 In her womb was conceived a prince named Kālīka; by his beauty  
 Kūma was excelled; in accomplishments and youth he was perfect.

§ 2. It happened that one time he took out a string of horses.  
 As he was passing through a grove he heard the reverend sūri  
 Guṇākara preaching. At that time he acquired a sense of imperma-  
 nence in regard to the saṃsāra. Having got his father and mother  
 to let him go, accompanied by five hundred ksatriyas and his sister  
 Sarasvatī he took initiation. When he had duly seen (mastered)  
 all the canon and learned what befits a master, his consecration as  
 a pontiff was performed. His name was the reverend Kālīkacārya.  
 The rank of śrīmahattarā (chief nun) was given to Sarasvatī. Just  
 after that the reverend sūri Guṇākara died. The reverend sūri  
 Kālīka, while purifying the earth, arrived at Ujjayinī. The holy  
 congregation was delighted.

§ 3. Once upon a time the abbess Sarasvatī went to the latrine,<sup>1</sup>

<sup>42</sup> MS sūvi

<sup>43</sup> One illegible akṣara

<sup>44</sup> For matter within asterisks see note 28. The words following the asterisks appear at the bottom of the last page of the MS. They are in the same handwriting as the words between the asterisks, and are evidently a later addition, but do not cover any earlier writing.

<sup>45</sup> For this meaning of bāhyabhūmikā see Brown, *Kālaka*, p. 108.

and fell into the sight of king Gardabhilla. When the king saw the sum of Sarasvatī's beauties, he went out of his mind. He sent his rough servants, who violently put her in a palanquin and carried her to the harem, where she was kept. Then again the Great Virtuous (nun) made an outcry and informed the master. The lord, with the reverend congregation, went to the king's court, gave an admonition to the king, and the reverend congregation reiterated it. The king did not take the matter to heart—as it is said:

As the blind man does not see,<sup>2</sup> so too he who is blinded by lust does not see, he who is maddened with infatuation does not see, he who pursues an object (*or*, who is a suitor) sees no fault. 1.

[*Commentary*] As one blind from birth does not see, as one maddened with infatuation does not see, as one who pursues an object does not see, so one blinded with lust does not see. Altogether, how does evil not arise?

§ 4. The reverend Kālikācārya, making resistance, went to the upāśraya (preaching hall and monks' rest house), called the reverend congregation, and said:

"Those men who are enemies of the congregation, who violate the Scripture, may I fare like them?" This oath the sūri took.<sup>3</sup> 1.

[*Commentary*] "Those men who are hostile to the congregation, violate the Scripture, that is, the canon, if I do not give instruction (punishment) to them, then fault is mine and no heed pertains to my instruction."

§ 5. When he had said this, he took counsel with the gaccha, gave instructions, and sent the gaccha away on tour. He dressed himself as a madman. Throughout the city he wandered alone to road forks, cross-roads, market places, acting the madman. He would say: "If Gardabhilla is king, then what? [*Commentary*] If Gardabhilla is king, then what? If the harem is numerous, then what? [*Commentary*] If the harem is very numerous, then what? If I dwell in a forest, then what? [*Commentary*] If I dwell in a

<sup>2</sup> The intention of the text may be, "The one blind from birth does not see, the one blind by lust does not see . . ." Cf. note 6 to Text.

<sup>3</sup> Fuller text, corresponding to commentary, in Brown, *Kāśika*, p. 39.

forest, then what? . . .<sup>4</sup> [Commentary] If the kingdom is large, then what?" Speaking thus he wandered about.

§ 6. The eighty-four ministers and chief ministers, on seeing this state of affairs, advised the king: "Your majesty, this nun should be released. Because of grief for her her brother has gone mad. In consequence of such a sin there will be [for you] the acquisition of many misfortunes." On hearing this the king said in reply: "If you are so wise, then go home and teach your elders.<sup>5</sup> If after this time you speak [of this] before me, then you will receive instruction (punishment) for a thief's crime."

§ 7. When the reverend Kālikācārya heard this, he went to a cross-roads and took this oath:

"Let the world protectors with the direction guardians hear, and the village divinities, the feudatory chiefs, the ministers, these captains of . . .<sup>6</sup> warriors and elephant troops, leaders of caravans—if I do not tear out (*literally*, uproot) this wicked king Gardabhilla by the hair braid<sup>7</sup> from his kingdom, as one would a monkey by the tail, if I do not, then I am not this Kālikācārya." 1.

[Commentary] Before the city folk he said this "Let the world protectors with the guardians of the directions hear, and the village divinities. [Commentary] You five world guardians and ten direction guardians and . . .<sup>8</sup> village divinities, hear. The feudatory chiefs, the ministers, these captains of . . .<sup>9</sup> warriors and elephant troops, leaders of caravans. [Commentary] And you feudatory chiefs of the circle of border states, ministers, captains, and leaders of caravans, hear. If I do not tear out this wicked king Gardabhilla by the hair braid from his kingdom, as one would a monkey by the tail, if I do not, then I am not this Kālikācārya. [Commentary] Then [only] am I Kālikārya if I uproot this wicked king Gardabhilla, who should be torn up roots and all, and drive

<sup>4</sup> Obvious lacuna in this text; a Sanskrit clause has been omitted. Cf. Brown, *Kāṭaka*, p. 39.

<sup>5</sup> Meaning of page uncertain. Translation uncertain, based upon instructions of king in various versions to "go teach your fathers," "go teach your mothers, brothers, and wives."

<sup>6</sup> No meaning for *sphaṭa*.

<sup>7</sup> See illustration in Brown, *Kāṭaka*, figure 17.

<sup>8</sup> No translation for *affiṭa*.



him out, just as one catches a monkey by the tail, whirls him around the head, and throws him away."

§ 8. When he had said this before the people, he left the city. He donned the clothes of a religious mendicant. He thought, "I shall go to the city of Dhārāvāsa." He reconsidered, "Such and such friends will say, 'Friend Kālīka took the vows and went away; now he has come [back] after leaving (losing) his soldiers, ministers, and sister Sarasvatī.' Therefore it is not fitting to go in defeat to my birthplace. It is better to go elsewhere."

§ 9. After reflecting so he went away, and in time reached the land of the Mughals, wearing the dress of a religious mendicant. At the city of a sālī, while some princes were playing at ball and stick, the ball fell into a well; it could not be got out. Just at this time Kālīkacārya came there in the dress of a religious mendicant. When he saw the state of affairs, he took bow and arrow, stretched [the bow] to the ear, and pierced the jewel-studded ball. He fired a second arrow in the feathered end of that arrow. In this manner, remaining at the mouth of the well, he drew out the ball. When he showed his skill in archery, all the princes were delighted with that skill. They told [about it] to the sākī.<sup>9</sup> There the feudatory kings were all called sākī. As he stayed with a sākhi<sup>10</sup> and exhibited his accomplishments, magic arts, diversions, and wonders, the king developed great affection for him.

§ 10. At this juncture a messenger came from the great king bearing a knife and a bowl. When the king saw him, his face went black. Then the master asked the king, "Tell me, your majesty, why are you black in the face?" The king said, "Our great king has sent this command by him: this is what is communicated, 'Either your head must be sent or you must drink poison.' If this affair is not done as indicated, then his destruction will fall upon [my] kingdom and family." The master asked, "Say further, to whom [is] this unjust command?" The king said, "This command has come to ninety-six kings." The master, who recognized an opportunity, said, "O king, I shall not permit this madness. When men are besought for waste land,<sup>11</sup> they do not give up their weapons. When they are asked for their heads, how can there be

<sup>9</sup> Confusion between *saka* and *sāhi* of the Sanskrit and Prakrit texts.

<sup>11</sup> Conjectural translation for *pādārṇava*.



a giving? This thing is not fitting. Do you go that you may acquire Mālavā as a new kingdom."

§ 11. Then the ninety-six kings marched together and in due time crossed the Indus and came to the land of Saurāstra. There the rainy season came upon them. The roads became impassable because of water; the army remained there for the four months (of the rains). Right after the day Vijayadaśamī<sup>11</sup> the army did not advance. Then the master said to the śākī king, "Tell me what the reason is." The king said, "Master, supplies are exhausted."

§ 12. Thereupon the master at once performed a three days fast. His śāsana-devatā (tutelary deity) appeared to him. Then first he asked the śāsana-devatā about the chastity of his sister Sarasvatī. She replied as follows: "Sarasvatī has unimpaired virtue. On breaking a two days fast she observes ācāmla<sup>12</sup> and holds your name in her heart." When he heard that this was the condition, he became cheerful again, and said, "Mother, I have undertaken such and such an enterprise, but the whole thing will fail without resources." Then the śāsana-devatā gave him a powder and instructed him, "In the east, at the time of dawn, there will appear through the power of your three days fast<sup>13</sup> a pile of bricks. Then whatever this powder is scattered over, that will turn to gold, and it is to be given to all [the kings]." After saying this the śāsana-devatā disappeared. At dawn the master made this affair come true, and then gave the gold to the śākīs.

§ 13. Enheartened they marched on and in due time arrived at the borders of Ujjayinī. Gardabhilla came against them. On the field of battle a tumultuous noise arose from the sounding of the war drums; a fearful conflict begun; elephant<sup>14</sup> engaged battle with elephant,<sup>14</sup> cavalry with cavalry, chariot with chariot, infantry with infantry. Gardabhilla was defeated, fled, and entered his city.

<sup>11</sup> Tenth day of the light half of the month Āśvina, that is Dasra, the day of celebrating Rāma's victory over Rāvaṇa. This day comes at the end of the rains and is the traditional date for Indian troops to begin the season's wars (cf. H. G. Rawlinson, *India*, 1938, p. 8, footnote).

<sup>12</sup> A practice of confining the diet to dry food and water, in barely enough quantity to sustain life; see H. M. Johnson, *Triśaṣṭīśāśana-paripācitra*: vol. I, *Adhivācitra* (GOS, vol. 51), 1931, p. 264, footnote.

<sup>13</sup> For *baḥa* — a three days fast, see PSM a. v.

<sup>14</sup> A guess at the meaning of *paṇḍāra*.

§ 14. On the second day no one [inside the city] engaged in battle. Then information was given the master. Then the master instructed a hundred and eight heroes; where they saw smoke rising on a tower they took their stand near it. When on the day of the eighth Gardabhilla, after worshipping a fire in a pot,<sup>13</sup> brought to his presence [the She-Ass Magic], and the She-Ass opened her mouth, immediately the far-shooting, quick-drawing, hard-hitting expert marksmen (*literally*, aiming by sound) dispatching a flight of arrows, its mouth was filled as full as a quiver. Then the Magic, enraged, kicked Gardabhilla and dangled upon his head and went to its own place. Right after that Gardabhilla was captured alive, sent around in the city, and driven outside his country.

§ 15. Sarasvatī was released with chastity unimpaired and took [re-]initiation. He (Kālikācārya) caused the śākī kings to fix their hearts on the Jain doctrine and established their sovereignty, and having divided the country and villages, marked the boundaries, and given [the land] to them, he summoned his gaeccha and got absolution. Joy arose in the mind of the holy congregation. The oath of the reverend Kālikācārya, the true master, was made true.

§ 16. Just after this while on religious tour he came to Bhṛgu-kaccha. His sister Bhāṇuārī, Balamitra, and Bhāṇumitra fell at his feet and experienced great joy.<sup>14</sup> Extreme respect was shown [him]. Balamitra took initiation. When the purohita (chaplain) saw what had happened, out of jealousy he said to the king, "Your majesty, wherever this great saint walks, on that road whoever, with their own footsteps, tread upon his footprints experience suffering."<sup>15</sup> If irreverence (toward Kālikācārya) arises, he will be led to go on religious tour elsewhere. The king heeded this. Then everywhere ceremonially improper food was offered him. When the reverend Kālikācārya comprehended the state of affairs, he set out on tour. During the rainy season he arrived with his entourage at the city of Pratiṣṭhānapura. King Śālavāhana experienced unrestrained joy; elaborate festivals were inaugurated.

<sup>13</sup> Translation based upon an emendation; see Text, note 24.

<sup>14</sup> Doubtful rendering, based upon possibility that *yāyatu* (cf. *yāyita* in section 21) is derived from an intensive stem of *pā*; syntax of the word is uncertain.

<sup>15</sup> Cf. Brown, *Kālika*, pp. 46, 62.

§ 17. At one time the master was informed as follows: "Lord, I shall go to the festival of Indra on the day of the fifth—in the land of Mahārāṣṭra there is a custom of observing a festival to Indra—will you be kind enough to let the paryuṣaṇā festival be celebrated on the day of the sixth." At that time the master spoke thus:

"Though Meru should move, though the sun should rise in the west, the paryuṣaṇā festival may not come later than the fifth." 1.

"Though Meru should move. [Commentary] Even though somehow mount Meru should move, even if somehow because of being out of equilibrium it should oscillate, if the ocean should forsake its boundaries, if a crow should be as beautiful as the wishing jewel, if the sun instead of in the east should rise in the west, nevertheless the paryuṣaṇā festival may in no case at all be made to pass beyond the fifth. It has been said in the holy Scripture: 'When a month and twenty nights of the rains has passed . . . observed the paryuṣaṇā . . . on a night of the rains he observed . . . one does not observe it after the passing of that night.'<sup>18</sup> [Commentary] 'After a month and twenty days—fifty days—the paryuṣaṇā festival is to be celebrated. It is observed within [that time]. But it is not observed after that night has passed.'"

§ 18. At that time king Śālavāhana said: "If it is observed within [that time], then let the paryuṣaṇā festival take place on the fourth." Thereupon, recognizing the king's stubbornness and perceiving the great gain [that would follow], the paryuṣaṇā rite was put [by Kālikācārya] on the fourth. From that time the paryuṣaṇā festival has been set on Monks-festival<sup>19</sup> fourth of the light half of the month Bhādrapada.

§ 19. Now it happened once that the reverend Kālikācārya's disciples became disobedient and did not heed his instructions. Then after telling the lay caretaker of the monks' resthouse, he left his disciples under the burden of sleep and went away alone. A

<sup>18</sup> In various versions of the Kāḷaka legends this passage from the Sāmācāri is quoted in greater or less length.

<sup>19</sup> Rendering of *śāḍāḥ* (fem. adj. *śāḍa-pūjālaya*). In versions of the Kāḷaka legends the festival is variously called *śaṃṣa-pūjālaya*, *śāḍu-pūjālaya*, *śāḍu-pūjā*, *śaṃṣa-śaḍa*: see Brown, *Kāḷaka*, pp. 47, 84, 91, 96, 104.

master in the spiritual line of the reverend Kālikācārya, the reverend sūri Sāgaracandra, after having converted king Kanakhalin, was spending the four months of residence during the rainy season there. In due time the reverend Kālikācārya arrived there. No one recognized him and he sat in a corner of the courtyard. The reverend sūri Sāgaracandra, through pride in his own exposition [of the Scripture] asked the master, "How is my preaching?" The master said, "Very good!"

§ 20. Just after that the disciples, having asked of the lay keeper of the rethouse, arrived, and falling at the master's feet they asked forgiveness. When the sūri Sāgaracandra saw the state of affairs he was ashamed and suffered grief in his mind. Enlightening him with the sand illustration,<sup>20</sup> he (Kālikācārya) said, "Child, just as in the case of this sand in period after period there will be infinite diminution [in the number of] the virtuous. There is no fault [implicit] in you." From that very time the disciples and others became full of devotion.

§ 21. In the Mahāvideha world king Indra, hearing the nigoda doctrine from the reverend lord Simandhara, asked, "Tell me, who in the land of Bhārata [India] knows this doctrine?" Then the reverend lord Simandhara said, "Ah, the reverend Kālikācārya knows it." Then Indra, disguising himself with a false form, went to the land of Bhārata and asked for the doctrine. The master said:

"The golas are innumerable; a gola contains innumerable nigodas; in each nigoda infinite creatures are to be considered [present]." 1.

[*Commentary*] "Those regions where subtle and infinite creatures are pierced with the tips of needles are the innumerable golas; each gola has innumerable nigodas;<sup>21</sup> and in each nigoda there are infinite souls." When he (Indra) heard this doctrine, he fell [at his feet] and became devoted.<sup>22</sup> He asked about the length of

<sup>20</sup> This parable showed the gradual diminution in the volume of a measure of sand, as it was poured out in a heap, then put back in a vessel, poured out again, again put back in the vessel and poured out, with the process repeated many times. See Brown, *Kāśaka*, pp. 50, 68.

<sup>21</sup> The syntax of the Old Gujarati seems faulty here; the sense is probably meant to be that of the Prakrit stanza.

<sup>22</sup> See Translation, note 16, above.

his life. Then perceiving through his knowledge of the Scripture, he (Kālaka) told him that his length of life was two sāgaropamas.<sup>22</sup> His (Kālaka's) fame<sup>24</sup> was celebrated by Indra. He (Indra) went to his place.

Such was the age-renowned reverend Kālākācārya.

§ 22. He set the paryuṣaṇā festival on the fourth. That is to-day to be considered [the day of] the paryuṣaṇā festival. At the paryuṣaṇā festival through the power of the laymen's and laywomen's triply<sup>23</sup> observed month-long fasts, fortnight-long fasts, and eight-day long fasts, the holy Kalpa and the Story [of Kālākācārya, who set the current date of the paryuṣaṇā festival] are recited in full.

§ 23. Now on whom has benediction not been pronounced?<sup>25</sup> The benediction is going to be pronounced and easy penance for the same purpose is going to be asked. Now the worshipful master the reverend \*sūri Guṇākara, the reverend sūri Padmāprabha, in his (spiritual) lineage the sūri Guṇasamudra, in his lineage the reverend sūri Sānti, in his lineage the reverend sūri Munīśekhara, the reverend master of exposition Bhāvaśekhara\*<sup>26</sup> — through their favor the Kalpa has been completed.

§ 24. Now as such exercise of merit is being brought to fulfillment let there be for the reverend congregation such an eternal offering of felicitation as this:

While the earth like a bride, in her hand consisting of mount Meru with the sun as a bracelet carries the wide sky as a dish of emerald filled with the stars as grains of rice and holding the moon as a coconut and the moonlight as sandal powder, let the master delight the holy congregation, which is devoted to religion and the law of karma. 1.

<sup>22</sup> A sāgaropama is an incredibly large number, beyond ordinary imagination.

<sup>23</sup> The translation follows the meanings for *pratyābandh* in PSM "mahātmya, gaurava, prasiddhi, prakāśaṭi," which seem more applicable here than the technical meaning of "promulgation (of the Jain doctrine)" indicated in Johnson, *op. cit.*, pp. 80, 84 (footnotes 120, 124).

<sup>24</sup> Conjecture of the meaning intended by *śreṣṭhata*.

<sup>25</sup> Translation conjectural.

<sup>26</sup> The part between asterisks is clearly not original; see Text, note 38.

[*Commentary*] So long let the master delight the reverend congregation. So long let him delight the fourfold reverend congregation of monks [etc.] as there is this splendid gift of felicitation. What sort of gift of felicitation? In this particular gift of felicitation there is seen a dish, grains of rice, a coconut, sandal, the hand with bracelet of a very fortunate (i. e., married) woman, who is a woman offering a dish of felicitation. Then what kind of dish for the congratulatory offering of the reverend congregation? A dish is indicated consisting of the sky, made of emerald, wide, broad, large, and grains of rice are indicated in mentioning the stars; and adorned with the moon as a coconut—*pñyūṣadyuti* means moon, coconut is indicated by it; the moonlight as sandal—and the flakes of light of the moon, by them sandal, the holy sandal powder, is indicated; the earth is metaphorically indicated as a very lucky woman; mount Meru is metaphorically indicated as a hand; with bracelet [means] with a bracelet, metaphor for the sun. As long as there exists this sort of eternal gift of felicitation, so long let the reverend fourfold congregation of monks [etc.] rejoice, devoted to meditation on the law. According to meditation on religion higher and higher let welfare and increase, bringing happiness, mutually spread.

§ 25. cha. The story of the reverend sūri Kālika. cha. In the year 1479 of the samvat era, the month of Āśvina, the thirteenth day of the dark fortnight, the civil day—\*in the fortress of Tāladhvaja (Śatruñjaya), in the Pippala gaṇḍha the reverend master the sūri Gupāsamudra, the reverend sūri Śānti, the reverend sūri Munīśekhara, [the master of] exposition(?) Bhāvaśekhara, his pupil the monk Sāgaracandra—his Kalpa[sūtra] book.\*<sup>28</sup>

#### GRAMMATICAL AND LEXICAL NOTES

(Supplementary to material in Tessitori and Dave)

- α (OG) for *ī* (Skt., Pkt., Apbh.); cf. Tessitori IA 43.55: *ūjayantī* (§ 13) < *ujjayintī* (other form of this name in the text is *ūjenti* [§ 2]); *pratamjñā* (§ 7) < *pratijñā* (*pratijñā/a* occurs in § 15); *saṣya* (§ 20) < *śiṣya* (cf. *śaṣyādika* [§ 20]; other forms are *śiṣya* [§ 19, 20] and *śyīṣya* [§ 19]).

<sup>28</sup> The part within asterisks is not original; see Text, note 44.

- a* for *u*; cf. Tessitori IA 43. 58: *ullanṭha* (§ 3) < *ulluṇṭha* (revised statement in Brown, *Kāḷaka*, p. 109: Pkt. forms probably borrowed from OG); *kālamahu* (§ 10) < *kālamukha*; *kālamuhā* occurs later in the same section; *parohita* (§ 16) < *purohita*; *paryasaṇḍ* (§ 17) < *paryuṣaṇḍ* (elsewhere in text the word is <sup>o</sup>*usand*); *pracara* (§ 5) < *prapura*; *bhānamitra* (§ 16) < *bhānumitra*; *manakṣa* (§ 10) < *manuṣṣa* (*manuṣya*); *medara* (§ 16) < *medura*; *vipala* (§ 24) < *vipula*; *sadgaru* (§ 15) < *sadguru* (this derivation probably better than *sat* + *garu*); *savarṇa* (§ 11), *stavarṇa* (§ 11) < *suvarṇa*.
- u* (OG) inserted between dissimilar adjacent consonantal conjuncts at the seam of Sanskrit compounds: cf. Tessitori IA 43. 56: *unamatta* (§ 5) < *unmatta*; *tatakukṣi* (§ 1) < *talku*<sup>o</sup>; *digapala* (§ 7) < *dikpala* (note presence of *g* for *k*); *balātakāriṇi* (§ 3) < *balātka*<sup>o</sup>.
- a* inserted as above, with metathesis of vowels *a* and *u* in consecutive syllables: for metathesis cf. Tessitori IA 53. 90-91: *anumālī* (abs.) (§ 7) < *\*unamālī* (OG) < *unmālaya* (perhaps OG by false etymology regarded the *anu* in this word as the Skt. preposition *anu*).
- i* for *a*; cf. Tessitori IA 43. 55: *upāriya* (§ 4) < *upāraya*; *bhaṭṭāraka* (§ 3, 14, 23) < *bhaṭṭāraka* (text has *bhaṭṭāraka* also [§ 14]); *riṇa* (§ 13) < *raṇa*; *sahirṣita* (§ 2) < *saharṣita*.
- u* for *a*; cf. Tessitori IA 43. 56: *turungama* (§ 2) < *turamgama*; *śayyātura* (§ 16), *sajyātura* (§ 17) < *śayyātara*.
- o* for *upa*; cf. Pischel § 154: *olasyā* (§ 19) from *upa* + *lakṣ*.  
initial vowel lost, with modification of vowel in following syllable;  
cf. Tessitori IA 43. 58, Pischel § 141: *posala* (§ 19) < *upaśāla*  
“court in front of house” (Monier-Williams Dictionary).
- vowel-lengthening: *pūṇṣai* (§ 9) < *puṇṅka* “feathered shaft of an arrow.”
- m* inserted; i. e., nasalization of unnasalized Skt. vowel: *saṃcita* (*khaṃ*<sup>o</sup>) in *ratnaṣaṃcita* (§ 9) < Skt. *khaṇḍita*; *pratamjā* (§ 7) < *pratiṇā*.
- n* for *m*; cf. Dave, p. 15: *dhāma* (§ 14) < *dhāma*.
- k* < *kkh* < *kṣ*: *yaku* (§ 7) < *yakṣa*; *catuki* (§ 5) < *catuṣka*.
- kṣ* < *ṣy* (*kkh* < *ṣy*): *manukṣa* (§ 4) < *manuṣya*.
- ḍ* < *d*: *dūṣṭhānaka* (§ 17) < *dūṣṭha*<sup>o</sup>.
- nḥ* < *ṇṣ*: *trinḥi* (§ 11) variant of OG *triṇḥi* and *triṇṣi*, which appear in Tessitori IA 44. 7.



y euphonicly inserted; cf. Tessitori IA 43. 85: *syāsi* (§ 9), double of *śāsi* (§ 9), the Pkt. is *sāhi*, the Skt. *sāhi* or *sākhī* (Samayasundra's unpublished text of the Kāṇaka stories), from the Persian *sāh*; *śiṣya* (§ 19) < *śiṣya*, which latter appears in the text (§ 19).

single consonant for double after a short vowel (no compensatory lengthening); cf. Tessitori IA 43. 56: *ajādhi* (§ 18) < *ajjā*<sup>o</sup>, ultimately fem. of Skt. *ārgyapūjālaya*; *cacari* (§ 5) < *caccara* < *catvara*; *catuki* (§ 5) < *catukka* < *catukkhā* < *catuṣka*, *nipajārai* (§ 1 et passim) < \**niṣpadgāpayati*; *yaku* (§ 7) < *yakka* < *yakkha* < *yakṣa*.

samdhī contraction of -a and ā- to ā; cf. Tessitori IA 44. 54, where he notes cases of the negative *nā* so treated: in this text there appear *nāpi* (§ 3) from *nā āpi*; *nāpaim* (§ 10) from *nā āpaim*; *kimāpi* (§ 10) from *kima* and *āpi*.

samdhī elision of -i following another vowel before ā-; *ja e vāta* for *jai e vāta*.

-e/i after a long vowel changed to ya; cf. Tessitori IA 43. 58: *pūliya kart* (§ 11) for *pānti kart*.

Pro nouns: the MS unequivocally writes *aḥme* "we" (§ 10), *aḥmārai* "our" (§ 10), *taḥme* "you" (§ 6, § 10 [twice]), *taḥmāraṃ* "your" (§§ 12, 20). These forms are not given by Tessitori and Dave, who list only the forms with -mh- (only one such form occurs in this MS, namely *taṃhe* § 17).

*kaṃ* "who" (§ 21), usually *ko* (*kaṃ* not given by Tessitori or Dave); *kaṃahi* "by anyone" (§ 19), not given by Tessitori or Dave.

Anusvāra is loosely used throughout the MS, sometimes being omitted where we would normally expect it (as *kisārai* beside *kisāraim*, both in § 17), and sometimes appearing where not expected (*nagara pravartaim*, § 1). Many such cases appear, and it would seem that there was considerable variation in pronunciation in OG.

Case-usage is loose. For example, the oblique form is sometimes used where we would expect an instrumental: *balamitra dikkā* *iddhi* (§ 16) "initiation was taken by Balamitra"; *śrīkālikā-cārya vāḥara kiddhau* (§ 16) "tour was made by the reverend Kālikācārya"; *indra . . . viddra pāchiu* (§ 21) "the doctrine was asked for by Indra."



- ajṣāṭ* (§ 18), f. adj., probably from Skt. *arjya* + *pājā-ālaya* > *arjāśālaya* > *arj'āśāṭ* > *arjāśāṭ*, fem. °ṭ, adj. "of the festival in honor of the monks." Cf. Translation, note 19.
- arjṣṭa* (§ 7),<sup>2</sup>
- amṭarāṭī* (§ 17), adv., from Skt. *antara*, with OG suffix -*āṭī*, "within." Cf. OG *vicāṭī*, *āgāṭī*, *pāchāṭī*, etc., Tessitori IA 44. 4, 53.
- amṭāḥa* (§ 20), m., Persian l. w. *andok* "grief."
- anyāya* (§ 10), m., Skt. l. w., "injustice, unjust command."
- amṭapāna* (§ 10), n., Skt. l. w., "drinking drink of immortality, i. e., the drink that sends to immortality (heaven, death), poison."
- aṣṭāṇika* (§ 22), n., Skt. l. w. *aṣṭāṇika* (note -*ān*- > -*an*-) "eight-day religious fast."
- ādarī* (§§ 5, 8), past pepl., as though from a vb. *ādarai*. The usage is *veṣa ādarī*, which echoes Skt. *veṣam dhar* "put on a dress." This would mean that Skt. *dhar* has given OG *ādarai*, with loss of aspiration; cf. Pischel § 213.
- ubhagasthāna kart* (§ 4), abs. phrase, from Skt. *ubhagasthānam kṛ*, but meaning "having taken an upright stance (against), determined to resist." Cf. Guj. *ubhagasthānam* (Belsare, 168).
- eka vārtā* (§ 3), adv. phrase, *eka* + Skt. *vārtā*, "in a single matter, altogether."
- gāi* (§ 14),<sup>2</sup> See Text, note 24.
- grthālāṭ* (§ 5), f., hyper-Sanskritism from *gāhila*; cf. Skt. *grāhila*, *grāhila*, "demented."
- cāmpaiṃ* (§ 16), vb., cf. Guj. *cāmpavum*, Hindi *cāpnā*, *cāpnā*; Guj. *page cāmpavum* "trample on." Skt. root *cap* in Dhātup.
- cāṃdrīnamum* (§ 24), n., cf. Pkt. *candīya* "moonlight." The nature of the connection with Skt. *candra* is not clear.
- cālī* (§ 16), f., from OG *cālai* (for which see Dave, p. 137, and Turner, *Nepālī Dict.*, pp. 172, 173). The word means "row of footsteps"; cf. meaning of Guj. *cāla* (f.), *cālavum*, *cāḷo* (Belsare, pp. 431, 432, 433).
- jāva* (§ 8), pot. pepl., from *jāi* "goes," see Dave, pp. 54-55, Tessitori IA 44. 120-121. The form would normally be *jāiva*; for reduction of *ai* to *ā* cf. Tessitori IA 43. 62.
- tu*, postposition, same as *tau* (cf. Tessitori IA 43. 245, Dave, p. 145; Dave's derivation from *tatas* > *tas* preferable to Tessitori's

from *kāmtau* [pres. pepl. of *kui*, from Skt. *bhā*]). This MS shows an idiomatic use of *tu* with expressions of time: *tivāra tu* (§§ 14, 16, 20), *tivārai tu* (§ 12) "from then"; *teha veld tu* (§ 12) "from that time."

*irelāyita* (§ 22), ?

*dkandī* (§ 9), f., l. w. from Apbh., from Skt. *dhanus* "bow."

*nipajārai* (§ 1 et passim), vb. This verb in its many forms occurs oftener than any other verb in the MS except *kui*. It is derived from *nispadyate* with the OG caus. suffix *-āva*.

*pape* (§ 6), ? Cf. Translation, note 5.

*pādāhāsyā* (§§ 2, 16), past pepl., from vb. *pādāhāsi* (not recorded) meaning "arrive at"; perhaps denom. from Skt. *pādādhāsa*.

*pādāhara* (§ 10), n., cf. Guj. *pādāhara* defined in Belsare as "uncultivated land beside village," and connected by him with Jain Skt. *padra* "village."

*pāyū* (§§ 7, 14), postposition, meaning "around," in both occurrences used with *pāraṣi*. Cf. OG *pāsi* "without" and Guj. *pāṭki* "without," derived from *pāsa*.

*pūṣṭāra* (§ 13), m. ? "elephant."

*bhātāu* (§ 6), n., from Pkt. *bhātā* "quiver," Skt. *bhastrā*.

*medara* (§ 16), adj., meaning "great," from Skt. *medura* "fat."

*pāyāta* (§ 16), *pāyita* (§ 21), adj. or past pepl., meaning ?; from Skt. root *yā*? Cf. Translation, note 16.

*rājana* (§ 19, twice), m. pl. voc., made with usual pl. termination on basis of Skt. voc. sg. *rājan*.

*rulī* (§§ 16, 21), abs., from *rulai* "fall at the feet, roll," from Skt. *lulh*.

*rūvelai* (§ 17), denom. vb. "have the beauty of," from *rūvela* (*rāpa* + *ila/ela*).

*vadhāmapaṇam* (§ 24, twice), n., "gift of felicitation," from Skt. *\*vadhāpāṇaka* (for change of *p* to *m* see Dave, p. 15).

*vāhū* (§ 2), f., "string, herd"; cf. Skt. *vāhū*.

*vicchūtāya* (§ 14), pres. pepl. "shooting," from OG *vicchūi* (which I have not seen), derived from Skt. *vī kṣubh*, through Pkt. *vicchūḍha* (see Pischel, § 66). This pepl. was treated by OG on analogy of *lūḍau*, *kūḍau*, *ḍiḍau*, etc., which are from roots ending in vowels.

*vīkīṃci* (§ 15), abs., from *vīkīṃci* (not recorded), which seems to be for *\*vīkīccai*, a pres. made on basis of Skt. grd. *vīkītya* (cf. Pischel, § 587, *āicāṣṣam*).

*eiṇi* (§ 14), abs. *eiṇei/eiṇi* (not recorded), "lead away, instruct," probably from Skt. *ei nī*.

*eiṇati* (§ 14), past ppl., from *eiṇai* "become visible"; cf. in PSM Pkt. *eiṇa* and *eiṇaga* "making visible." These OG and Pkt. words seem to be from Skt. *ey āṇj*, giving Pkt. base *eiṇa/eiṇ* (cf. treatment of Skt. *ei jāṇ* in Pkt. and OG).

*eiṇa* (§ 20), l., from Skt. *ēluka*; see Brown, *Kālaka*, p. 110, s. v. *elupa*.

*khāṇa* (§ 19), m., cf. Guj. *khāṇa/khāṇo*; evidently from Skt. *kona* "corner." The aspiration of Skt. *k* in Pkt. is treated by Pischel, § 206; perhaps in this case the frequent compound *ratuṣkona* > *caukkhona* is responsible for *khona*, *khāṇa*, *khāṇa*.

*khāṇa* (§ 11), past ppl., quasi-ndj., from Skt. *\*kṣaṇṭa* (for *kṣaṇṭa*), giving Pkt. *khāṇṭa* (see Pischel, §§ 564, 568). From this comes OG *khāṇa*.

*satyāpī* (§ 11), abs., from l. w. *\*satyāpaya* "make come true." Cf. *sāci* in § 15.

*sisūmana* (§ 5), n., from Skt. *\*śikṣāpāna* "instruction" (for *p* > *m* see Dave, p. 15).

*sphāṇa* (§ 7), m., Skt. *sphāṇa*, but meaning not clear.

*svarāpa* (§ 6 et passim), n., Skt. l. w., meaning "state of affairs."

## SUPPLEMENTARY SIGILLATA SIGNATURES IN THE NEAR EAST

HOWARD COMFORT  
HAYWARD COLLEGE

THE PRESENT occasion offers to a Latinist an opportunity to claim an equity in the archaeology of the Near East. This has, of course, been previously done often enough by others, but most recently and with great effect by Mr. J. H. Diffe, Keeper of the Palestine Museum,<sup>1</sup> a contribution which stimulates this supplementary word and which, it is to be hoped, will stimulate much more.

On a topic as unexplored and as controversial as the sigillata of Near Eastern manufacture, which claims much of Mr. Diffe's attention in his article,<sup>2</sup> one can hardly expect general agreement as yet, and in any case it would be an impertinence on the present writer's part to debate the fabrics of eastern origin and their connections. The terms "Pergamene" and "Samian" are therefore used below only in their conventional sense, without any commitment as to local origins.

An extraordinarily valuable part of Mr. Diffe's article is his list comprising Hellenistic signatures (mostly in Greek letters) wherever found, and Latin signatures found east of Brindisi. For this he has used the resources of several lists previously published, enriched by his own observations in Near Eastern museums and on Near Eastern sites. However, it lacks something of being complete, and although I make no claim to have exhausted the literature, the subjoined supplement attempts to unite some of the lacunae into one compilation. Except as noted, it is my intent to include only signatures which Diffe omits, but circumstances may have led to a few duplications. Further, some of Diffe's readings are subject to revision, and while it would be presumptuous at this distance to

<sup>1</sup> "Sigillata Wares in the Near East," *QDAP* VI (1936), pp. 4-53, hereafter referred to by the author's name only. Important reviews of the article have appeared in *Germania* XXI (1937), pp. 120 f. (Oxé) and *Antiquaries Journal* XVII (1937), pp. 327-331 (T. D. Pryce).

<sup>2</sup> To his bibliography may now be added Wasef, *Antiquity* XI (1937), pp. 46-50, and Glueck, *BAO* No. 65 (1937), pp. 10 f. and No. 68 (1937), pp. 13 f.

reread his findings sight unseen, I venture to suggest a few emendations prompted by analogies in the Near East and elsewhere.

Only a few Gaulish signatures from the Near East are recorded below. While one must reiterate with Iliffe that Gaulish ware was imported into the eastern Mediterranean, as is shown by the finds at Antioch, Delphi and elsewhere (Iliffe, pp. 22-3; see also below), it is also true that the signatures in QDAP VI have been overstrained to prove it. In his review Oxé remarks that all western stamps, "auch sämtliche von Iliffe für 'gallisch' ausgegebenen," are Italian.<sup>3</sup> CARBON\* and perhaps one or two others are possible Gaulish names, but the names of many well-known exporters are strikingly absent.<sup>2</sup>

To evaluate the evidence provided by the combined two lists lies aside from the present purpose, but a number of problems immediately project themselves forward. One of the most puzzling is the relationship of homonymous Greek and Latin signatures. In such instances Iliffe often implies a belief that the same man is signing in both alphabets for the benefit of Greek-speaking or Latin-speaking consumers respectively. Here again the data seem to have been occasionally overdone, though there is evidence that the same man sometimes used both languages\* or that Latin and Greek were used in the East and West respectively. For instance, Zahn notes that *Demetrius* (found at Pozzuoli) and *C. Sen(t)* (found at Priene) correspond in every apparent way with the clay and glaze of the Greek-signed "Samian" sherds of Priene, and whatever its meaning may be, the signature PLV|SIV (Priene) is additional evidence of the complication of the problem.<sup>7</sup> Doubtless many of these difficulties of interrelationship will be solved by the

\* For instance, on p. 44 VERN is interpreted as *Vernus*(?), a late Antonine potter of Offemont and Heiligenberg, although the real parallels are certainly to *Verna* of Pozzuoli (X 8036, 371).

\* Even CARBO, or better *Carbo N*(*novi*), is a slave name from the shop of Naevius of Pozzuoli (Löschcke, *Halters*, p. 178; Oxé, *ibid.*).

\* I have touched upon this phase of Mr. Iliffe's article in more detail in *AJA* XLI (1937), p. 409.

\* A particularly interesting example is a glass vase signed ARTAS SIDON and APTAC CEIAO on opposite sides (Kaibel, 2410, 1).

<sup>7</sup> *Priene*, pp. 443-5.

application of technological analysis,<sup>8</sup> and in the prospect of this objective approach it would be premature to indulge in conjectures.

Problems raised by the areas of distribution are entirely too complicated to be discussed here, but a word should be said of their existence. Dura-on-the-Euphrates has produced significant "Pergamene," but nothing else.<sup>9</sup> Some of the names which are commonest in the East are entirely lacking in the West, e.g. ΔΩΡΟΝ, ΕΡΜΗC (as distinguished from ΕΡΜΟΥ, which appears at Pozzuoli), ΧΑΡΙC, *Plyrame* and its Greek form ΠΥΡΑΜΟΥ, ΛΟΝΕΙ (at Olbia only), *Patr|octi* and probably some others. Contrariwise, ΝΙΚΟCΤΡ(ΑΤΟΥ) had no Greek distribution, and ΔΙΟΝΥ|ΞΙΟΥ, which was western-made<sup>10</sup> and which is the commonest Greek signature in the West, occurs only once in the East (Alexandria, of which the significance is less than any other Greek site). One would have expected a more even proportion of frequency. Nor are peculiarities of distribution limited to Greek signatures: the signatures DERASTICANIS (?) at Corinth and Delphi are the only occurrences of the stamp outside of Italy, while the products of C. Clodius Sabinus, which are not uncommon in Italy and elsewhere,<sup>11</sup> seem not to have penetrated eastward at all. Again, in comparison with their north European distribution, there is a notably low proportion of the wares of M. Perennius Tigranus or Bargathes, or of Cn. Ateius and his circle. At a later date there was a little eastward export for the vases of L. Rasinius Pisanus but none for those of *Sex. M( ) Pes( )* or *Sex. Mu( ) Pi( )*, or *C. P. P.*, although these signatures are found with some frequency outside of Italy, especially at Carthage. It is interesting to note that cir. A. D. 10-20 at least one signature passed beyond the eastern boundaries of the Empire altogether (*Januarius feci*, below), but on the other hand, there is no Augustan ware from Delphi whatever.

<sup>8</sup> For the summary of a demonstration of this technique applied to terra sigillata by Riesch and Horton, see *AJA* XLII (1937), pp. 112-3. See also below, n. v, *Nixosydrom*.

<sup>9</sup> "... harring two 'herboline' bowls found in tomba. This is the more interesting in view of the fact that the Gallic fibulae were being imported in the first century after Christ. We have to date a dozen or more of Auciassa." (Letter from Dr. Frank E. Brown). For a similar fibula from Jerusalem, see Hiffe, pp. 21-2.

<sup>10</sup> Priene, p. 444, n. \*; see also below.

<sup>11</sup> For references to *CIL* see *Memoirs*, p. 192.

Finally, with special reference to Palestine and in comparison with the Latin signatures, Greek names are not very plentiful. Most of Iliffe's Palestinian evidence comes from Samaria, and most of the new names from Palestine herewith come from Beisan; perhaps further evidence and excavations will modify this observation, which in any event leaves out of consideration the large quantities of anepigraphic Hellenistic sigillata from Palestine.<sup>12</sup> However, the high proportion of Italian-made sigillata at both Beisan and Samaria is in striking contrast to the lone Arretine signature reported from Priene (*M. Ps[re]n(ni) [Bargathes]*),—which may, however, be attributable to the accidents of excavation (Dr. Zahn, orally).<sup>13</sup> We are warned that in our period the Near East is not necessarily a unit.

In connection with distribution mention should also be made of the chronology of both eastern and western fabrics. Unfortunately both of these chronologies are still somewhat obscure, but the heyday of ceramic interchange from West to East seems to have been the principates of Augustus and Tiberius, extending on into that of Claudius and later. The latest Italian signatures from the Near East are the three of L. Rasinius Pisanus below, if they really belong to the Neronian-Flavian potter whose decorated work is discussed in *AJA* XL (1936), pp. 437-51, and whose products were exported in quantity to North Africa, and who sent an occasional dish northward.<sup>14</sup> On the other hand, some of the Gaulish ware from Antioch<sup>15</sup> and Delphi<sup>16</sup> is even later than Pisanus.

<sup>12</sup> Now comes the interesting and complicating suggestion of Glueck that the "Pergamene" type of ware found on Nabataean sites is of Nabataean manufacture (*HASOR* 65, Feb. 1937, p. 10).

<sup>13</sup> The statement by Comfort-Waagé, *Beisan*, p. 223, regarding sites productive of both "Samian" and Italian sigillata (for which I must admit responsibility) is true as far as it goes, but the unproven proportions imply a slight difference in either the date or some other significant factor, and in any case usually omit from consideration the unsigned wares. None of the "Samian" at Beisan is signed, and "Pergamene" is also frequently not stamped.

<sup>14</sup> VII 1339, 894 and Oswald and Fryce, pp. 5, 6 [Cambridge Museum]; Durando, *Bull. de la Soc. normande d'Et. préh.* XXV (1922-24) (1926), p. 66 [Vieux-Pécamp Museum].

<sup>15</sup> Unpublished, but see the brief notice by Schaeffer in *Rev. Arch.* V (1935), pp. 269-70.

<sup>16</sup> *Fouilles* V, p. 180 (Figs. 767-771).



In Italy the chronology is also difficult: Prof. Waagé has noted some little cups, apparently "Pergamene," in the museum at Pompeii,<sup>17</sup> and he tells me of "Samian" ware from the same site and Herculaneum, all of which furnishes merely a *terminus ante quem* several decades later than might be wished. The signature DIONYCIOC (*sic*, in two lines) from Boscoreale was found in the same *capanne* as two examples each of *Fortu*( ) and *L. R. P.*, and again if the latter is L. Rasinius Pisannus, we have a probable correspondence in date. But unfortunately he is not the only potter of these initials, and a comparison of the shape and technique of the Columbia University signature of Dionysios from Rome (see below) implies a pre-Flavian date. Another half-dated Greek signature from the West is MAP|KOY from London.<sup>18</sup> Statistical probability suggests that this postdates the conquest of A. D. 43, but Mortimer-Wheeler seems to favor an earlier date.

We should also be glad to know more of the local origins of Italian signatures presented here and by Mr. Hiffe. Most of them fall in the genuine "Arretine" group, and others are of Puteolan manufacture.<sup>19</sup> But there is still a residuum of stamps for which no sure origin has been determined,—such names as *Ianuarinus*, *Cresti*, *Makes*, *C. Titius Nepos* and others below are examples.

The Greek signatures drawn from Kaibel form a special group which has few parallels and in some cases is probably not sigillata at all.

When the problems already mentioned, and many others, are adequately answered by the specialist in ceramics, the data must be correlated with much other material of an industrial and commercial nature. Unquestionably the combined lists of Hiffe and the present article hold within themselves much evidence which would illuminate and be illuminated by a wider inquiry, but such an inquiry must be left to another time.

While I have listed such new signatures as I could, there is also a very great amount of unsigned but equally relevant other material already published. Simply as examples I would refer to Behn, Neugebauer, Walters, and others who include much more than

<sup>17</sup> Antioch I, p. 89, n. 15.

<sup>18</sup> Hiffe, p. 39, from *London Museum Catalogues* No. 3, p. 126 and Fig. 43, 4.

<sup>19</sup> The principal evidence for the latter appears in X 8056, drawn from Bruz.



merely signatures from Near Eastern and Greek sites; Kumanudes (Athens) and Botti (Alexandria) also describe decorated fragments which of course drop from sight when their articles are absorbed into the *corpora* of inscriptions; and there are such hints as Hogarth's that "black and red 'Samian'" was found at Knossos,<sup>20</sup> or that the University of Michigan excavators "found quite a number of pieces of Arretine ware at Sepphoris in Palestine in 1931."<sup>21</sup> I have made no special attempt to include such allusions, for the results would certainly be futile and probably misleading. Nor have I attempted to give all the Latin signatures which involve a name or a word or a letter of Greek. A few have been assembled as they came to hand, more to draw attention to their existence as a class than for any other reason, but they have no connection with the present principal purpose.

That I am reaping where I have not sown is evident many times on each page. Others will share my very sincere thanks to Messrs. Broughton (Bryn Mawr), Brown (Yale), Chase (Harvard), Hopkins and the editors of the *Humanistic Series* (Michigan), Horton (University Museum, Philadelphia), Marinatos (Candia), Neugebauer (Berlin), Moore (Columbia), Pauli (Wesleyan), Roeder (Hildesheim), Shear (Princeton), and M. P. Snyder for permission to include material observed by them or in their custody, much of which was unknown to me. Drs. Marinatos, Neugebauer, and Roeder have been especially kind in sending photographs. But it is to Drs. Waagé and Zahn that this study owes most; the traces of conversation and correspondence with the former are visible *passim*, and the latter has temporarily put at my disposal his notebooks and drawings dealing with Near Eastern wares. Without the generosity of these two friends and the others, my efforts would have lacked most of whatever usefulness they may possess. Finally, the present *opusculum* was originally designed primarily to emend omissions and, occasionally, errors in Mr. Iliffe's article. The nature of the case, I suppose, explains any intermittent polemic, but with all allowances for differences of opinion I gladly reiterate the importance and indispensability of his contribution, and the appreciation which his pains, scholarship, and interest in bringing

<sup>20</sup> *BSA* VI (1900), pp. 80-2.

<sup>21</sup> Professor Leroy Waterman, by letter; see also *Prelim. Rep. of the Univ. of Michigan Excav. at Sepphoris*, pp. 26-7, 29.

order into an important but chaotic field bespeak from widely differing groups of archaeologists.

In addition to the standard abbreviations, note the following:

- AT: Gregorutti, "Antichi Vasi Fittili di Aquileia" in *Archaeografo Triestino* n. s. VI (1879-80), pp. 292-311; VII (1880-81), pp. 115-136, 221-234.
- Antioch: Waagé, "Lamps, Pottery, Metal and Glass Ware" in *Antioch-on-the-Orontes I, The Excavations of 1932*.
- Arret.: Oxé, *Arretinische Reliefgefäße vom Rhein* (Materialien zur römisch-germanischen Keramik 5), 1933.
- Behn: Behn, *Römische Keramik* (Kataloge des römisch-germanischen Central-Museums 2), 1910.
- Bericht: Oxé, "Bericht über Vorarbeiten zum Katalog der Italienischen Terra Sigillata" in *Bericht der römisch-germanischen Kommission VII/1912* (1914), pp. 6-15.
- Botti: Botti, "Fouilles dans la Céramique d'Alexandrie en 1898" in *Bull. de la Société archéologique d'Alexandrie I* (1898), pp. 5-24.
- Bronzeor Corinth: Bronzeor, "Excavations in the Odeum at Corinth in 1928" in *AJA XXXII* (1928), pp. 447-473.
- Bruzza: Brussa, "Scoperta di Figuline in Pozzuoli" in *Bull. dell'Istituto di Corrispondenza Archeologica*, 1875, pp. 242-256.
- Cavedoni: Cavedoni, "Frammenti di antichi Vasi fittili modenesi" in *Bull. dell'Istituto di Corrispondenza Archeologica*, 1837, pp. 10-15.
- Comfort Corinth: Comfort, "Arretine Signatures found in the Excavations in the Theatre District of Corinth" in *AJA XXXIII* (1929), pp. 484-501.
- Comfort-Waagé: Comfort and Waagé, "Selected Pottery from Beth Shan (Roman Date)" in *Palestine Exploration Fund Quarterly Statement LXVIII* (1936), pp. 221-224.
- Conze: Conze, *Allerthümer von Pergamon I*, 2 (1913).
- Demangel-Laumonier: Demangel and Laumonier, "Fouilles de Notion (1921)" in *Bull. de Corr. A.G.H.* XLIX (1925), pp. 341-342.
- Dumont: Dumont, *Inscriptions céramiques de la Grèce*, 1872.
- Eph. Epig. V: Mommsen, in *Ephemeris Epigraphica V* (1884), p. 66.
- Erg. v. Sieglin: Pagenstecher, *Expedition Ernst v. Sieglin II 3*, pp. 110-118.
- Form numbers, unless otherwise indented, are those of Dragendorff in *Bonner Jahrbücher* XCVI (1895), Pla. I-III.
- Fouilles V: Fodrizet in *Fouilles de Delphes V* (1908), pp. 178-180.
- Geisener: Geisener, *Die im Mainzer Museum befindlichen feineren Gefäße der augusteischen Zeit und ihre Stempel*, 1902.
- Gnomon V: Oxé's review of Kalpovitch in *Gnomon V* (1929), pp. 542-545.
- Halters (Hähle): Hähle, "Reliefkelche aus Halters" in *Mitt. der Altertumskommission f. Westfalen VI* (1912), pp. 69-100.

- Haltern (Lüschke): Lüschke, *Keramische Funde in Haltern V* (1909), pp. 103-100.
- Heberdey: *Forachungen in Ephesos I*, 1906.
- Hillier v. Gärtringen: *Inschriften von Priene*, 1906.
- Hille: Hille, "Sigillata Wares in the Near East" in *Quarterly of the Department of Antiquities of Palestine VI* (1936), pp. 4-53.
- Index: Oswald, *Index of Pottery Stamps on Terra Sigillata*, 1931.
- Kalbel: Kalbel, *Inscriptiones Graecae XIV (Italia et Sicilia)*, 1910.
- Keramikos: Oxl, "Terra Sigillata aus dem Kerameikos" in *Athen. Mitt.* LII (1927), pp. 213-224.
- Knipowitsch: Knipowitsch, *Untersuchungen zur Keramik römischer Zeit aus den Griechenstädten der Nordküste des Schwarzen Meeres: I. Die Keramik römischer Zeit aus Olbia in der Sammlung der Eremitage (Materialien zur römisch-germanischen Keramik 4)*, 1929.
- Kumardes: "Λαυρεντ' Εμπυραει" in *Archaislogike Ephemeris*, 1892, vols. 10-14, Pl. E'.
- Memoirs: Comfort, "De Collectione praecipue epigraphica Vasculorum Arretinorum apud Academiam Americanam conservata" in *Memoirs of the American Academy in Rome VII* (1929), pp. 177-219.
- Myres and Ohnefalsch-Richter: Myres and Ohnefalsch-Richter, *A Catalogue of the Cyprus Museum*, 1909.
- NdS: *Notizie degli Scavi*.
- Neugebauer: Neugebauer, *Führer durch das Antiquarium: II. Vasen*, 1932.
- Oswald and Pryce: Oswald and Pryce, *Terra Sigillata*, 1920.
- Oxl Rev.: Oxl's review of Hille, *Germania XXI* (1937), pp. 136-7.
- Priene: Zahn in Wiegand-Schrader, *Priene*, 1904.
- Riccio: Riccio, *Notizie degli Scavamenti del Suolo dell' antica Capua*, 1855.
- Riese: Riese, "Sigillatastempel aus Rom" in *Westdeutsche Zeitschrift XXI* (1902), pp. 235-254.
- Samarra I: Reissner, Fisher and Lyon, *The Harvard Excavations at Samarra I*, 1924.
- Technau: Technau, "Griechische Keramik im Samischen Herson" in *Athen. Mitt.* LIV (1929), especially pp. 48-53.
- Tschandarli: Lüschke, "Sigillata-Töpferien in Tschandarli" in *Athen. Mitt.* XXXVII (1912), pp. 344-407.
- Toronto: Comfort, "Nine Terra Sigillata Bowls from Egypt" in *AJA XLI* (1937), pp. 406-410.
- Vindonissa: Oxl, "Wann wurde das Legionslager Vindonissa angelegt?" in *Germania XI* (1928), pp. 127-132.
- Walters: Walters, *Catalogue of the Roman Pottery in the British Museum*, 1908.
- Watzinger: Watzinger, "Vasenfunde aus Athen" in *Athen. Mitt.* XXVI (1901), p. 58.
- XI, XV and other references commencing with Roman numerals indicate volumes of the *Corpus Inscriptionum Latinarum*.

## I. HELLENISTIC AND ROMAN GREEK INSCRIPTIONS

ΑΓΑΘΙΝΟΞ. Metaponto. Kaibel, 2406, 7, from NdS 1887, p. 331, "bello rettangolare, a lettere rilevate," not necessarily sigillata.

ΑΓΑΘΟΠΟΔΟC.<sup>22</sup> Olbia [Berlin]. Neugebauer, p. 200 and Zahn's ms. notes. Form Dragendorff *Bonn. Jahrb.* CI, p. 143, Fig. 3.

ΑΙΔΟΥΧΟΥ. South Russia [Bonn]. Zahn, p. 36, reading Αἰδοῦχου, emended by Oxé, *Gnomon* V (1929), p. 544.

Olbia [Hermitage Mus.] Knipowitsch, p. 32.

Olbia [Berlin]. Zahn's ms. notes. "Nicht samische Ware."

[Mainz]. *Mainzer Zeits.* XXXI (1934), p. 69, ΑΙΔΟΥΧΟΥ.

[Köln]. Zahn's ms. notes. Shape something like Knipowitsch Type 5, but shallower.


ΑΙΝΕΟΥ. Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 169.

ΑΛΕΞΑΝΔΡΟΥ. Torre Annunziata [Brit. Mus.] Walters, p. 38, reading ΑΛΕΞΑΝΔΡΟΥ.<sup>23</sup>

Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 485.

ΑΛΥΠ. See ΠΥΛΑ[ΔΗΞ].

ΑΝΔΡΕΟΥ in planta pedis.<sup>24</sup> Smyrna "[Privatsammlung]. Abgeschrieben von Anthes,"—Zahn's ms. notes.

A N in  Dura-on-the-Euphrates. "Pergumene" ware. Communicated by Dr. Frank E.

Brown. For parallels to the shape of the stamp, see at the end of this list.

ΑΝΕΝΚΑΗΤΟΥ. Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 170.

ΑΠΟΛΑ[Λ]ΩΝΟC. Miletropolis [Berlin]. Neugebauer, p. 200 and Zahn's ms. notes.

ΑΠΟΛΛΟΝΟΤΟΥ ΑΙΘ(ΟΥΡΟΥ?) *circulo scr.* Avignon. XII 5686, 61. I have reproduced this inscription as it stands with the editorial expansion. Nothing is said to imply that the object is not sigillata, but I do not know any other instances of the signature.

ΑΠΙC, i. e. 'Απειν. Samos. Technan, p. 63, whose interpretation I follow. Hiffe suggests X]ΑΠΙC (p. 53). Technan notes

<sup>22</sup> Also at Tschandari ΑΓΑΘΟΠΟΔΟC *retro* in *tabella ansata* (Löschke, p. 374 and Hiffe, p. 20).

<sup>23</sup> Presumably the same as Oxé, *Bericht*, p. 14, reading 'Αλεξ[άνδρου].

<sup>24</sup> For other occurrences, see Hiffe, p. 27.

that the vase is of a different ware from  $\Delta\acute{\alpha}\rho\epsilon\nu$ ,  $\chi\acute{\alpha}\rho\epsilon\nu$  and  $\tau\acute{\omicron}\chi\chi\upsilon$  found at the same site.

$\Gamma\text{AIOY}$ . Smyrna. "[Privatsammlung]. Abgeschreiben von Anthes,"—Zahn's ms. notes.

South Russia [Bonn]. Zahn's ms. notes.

$\Gamma\text{AVI}$ , i. e. *Gavi* in Greek letters (?). Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 498.

$\Delta\text{AMA}$ . Antioch (2 examples). Iliffe, p. 31, reading  $\Delta\text{AMI}$  and  $\Delta\text{AMA}$  respectively; reread by Waagé.

$\Delta\text{AMATPIO}\Sigma$  with P reversed. Metaponto. NdS 1887, p. 331, "sopra un pezzo di un vaso." Not necessarily sigillata.

$\Delta\text{EI|OY}$ . Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 170.

Kertch. Zahn's ms. notes,  $\Delta\text{EI|O}\Sigma$ .

$\Delta\text{H|NIOI}$ . Notion. Demangel-Laumonier, p. 385.

$\Delta\text{IDY|MOY}$ .<sup>25</sup> Rome (2 examples). Oxé, *Bericht*, p. 14.<sup>26</sup>

Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 170.

$\Delta\text{IONY|}\Sigma\text{IOY}$ .<sup>27</sup> Rome. XV 5815, 2 examples in a rectangle, as transcribed, and one in a rectangle with rounded ends,  $\Delta\text{ION|Y}\Sigma\text{IOY}$ .<sup>28</sup>

Rome [Mainz]. Riese, p. 236.

Rome [Columbia University].

Pozzuoli [Berlin]. Bruzza, p. 364,  $\Delta\text{ION|Y}\Sigma\text{ION}$ .<sup>29</sup>

Boacoreale. NdS 1921, p. 421 (Della Corte); transcribed  $\text{DIONYCIOC}$  in *due linee*. Found in the same *capannone* as two each of  $\text{PORTV a d. ad. sin.}$  and  $\text{L. R. P.}$

Lyon. Oxé, *Bericht*, p. 14.

Ampurias [Gerons]. Cazurro, *Anuari Inst. Estud. Catalans*, 1909/10, p. 313, Fig. 8, presumably the same as Oxé, *Bericht*, p. 14, from Ampurias.

This potter was recognized as Puteolan by Zahn, and recent petrographic comparison confirms this observation by showing that his ware is much like that of Q. Pompeius Serenus, a recognized

<sup>25</sup> For  $\Delta\text{IDY|MON}$  at Priene, see Priene, p. 436 and Iliffe, p. 31.

<sup>26</sup> One of these examples is from XV 5814, from NdS 1877, p. 8,  $\Delta\text{ISP|MOY}$ .

<sup>27</sup> Also at Alexandria (Iliffe, p. 32).

<sup>28</sup> These three are recorded as a single entry by Oxé, *Bericht*, p. 14.

<sup>29</sup> Transcribed by Kaibel 2406, 14  $\Delta\text{ION|Y}\Sigma\text{ION}$ , and by Oxé, *Bericht*, p. 14, in the genitive case.

Puteolan potter to whom, however,  $\text{Nux|ocrep}(\acute{\alpha}\rho\sigma)$  stands even closer (see below).<sup>26</sup>

$\Delta\Omega|\text{PON}$ .<sup>27</sup> Smyrna. " [Privatsammlung]. Abgeschrieben von Anthes,"—Zahn's ms. notes.

Ephesus. (3 examples.) Heberdey, p. 170.

Notion. (3 examples.) Demangel-Laumonier, p. 384.

Athens. Kumanudes.

Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 498.

Corinth. *Ibid.*, gray ware, signed  $\Delta\Omega\text{PON}$ .

South Russia [Berlin]. Zahn's ms. notes; gray ware with  $\Delta\Omega\text{PON}$  in *tabella ansata*.

Delphi. *Fouilles V*, p. 178, Fig. 730; gray ware signed  $\Delta\Omega\text{PON}$ .

$\Delta\Omega\text{CA}$ . Antioch. Iliffe, p. 33, reading  $\Delta\Omega\text{CA}$ , but the stamp is complete (Wuagé).

$\text{EKKA|CAPH}\Sigma$ . Notion (2 examples). Demangel-Laumonier, p. 385. Prof. T. R. S. Broughton has pointed out to me that under the early Empire Caesarea was the official name of Tralles, situated on the principal highway across Asia. Notion was on the extension of the same road to the west of Ephesus. It would be perverse not to accept the hint from Pliny, *Hist. Nat.* XXXV, 160: *Habent et Trallis ibi [in Asia] sua opera [vasorum terrenorum]*, etc., and not to recognize these two vases as the first archaeological evidence of a famous ceramic center. At the same time, we arrive at a tangible approximate date.

$\text{EA|IHIE}$ . Colchester. May, *Cat. of the Rom. Pottery in the Colchester and Essex Mus.*, p. 209, with references to Helenius of Westerndorf, A. D. 161-180, and to various sites; a cup of Form 33. Here included only as an example of a western (and late) manufacturer affecting the Greek alphabet.

$\text{E//A}\Omega\text{N E//OIEI}$ . Smyrna [Louvre]. Zahn's ms. notes, from Pagenstecher.

$\text{ETI}\Lambda|\Phi\text{PA}$ .<sup>28</sup> [Berlin.] Zahn's ms. notes.

$\text{ETIF|ON}\Omega\text{Y}$ . Melos. Bosanquet ap. Hiller v. Gärtringen, p. 180.

Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 170, reading  $\text{ETIF}\Omega|\text{NOY}$ .

<sup>26</sup> The examination was made by Mr. Donald Horton of the University Museum, Philadelphia. The present statement anticipates a more extended discussion to appear elsewhere.

<sup>27</sup> For this common signature, see Iliffe, pp. 32 f.

<sup>28</sup> Compare Iliffe, p. 33,  $\text{E}\tau\epsilon\phi\phi\epsilon\delta\epsilon\iota\tau$  . . . , etc.

Priene. *Priene*, p. 436, No. 147. The reading was uncertain, but is confirmed by the preceding and by a "tiny cup" from the Athenian Agora (Iliffe, p. 33).

EPAZ|TVS. Rome [University of Illinois]. Kindly communicated by Prof. Adolph F. Pauli, who notes that the P may be simply a defective R. Italian manufacture.

ΕΡΜΗC<sup>22</sup> in *planta pedis*. Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 170.

[Berlin (2 examples)]. Hiller v. Gärtringen, p. 180, confirming Zahn's expansion of the fragmentary stamp, *Priene*, p. 435, No. 141. Compare, however, ΕΡΑCΤ in *planta pedis* at Alexandria (Iliffe, p. 34).

ΕΡ|MHC. Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 171.

ΕΡΜΗC in a rectangular stamp with round knobs at each end, impressed four times. Pitane [Berlin]. Local fabric. Zahn's ms. notes.

ΕΡΜΑ. Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 170.

South Russia [Cassel]. Behn, p. 36.

South Russia. Two examples of "Samian" fabric, in Zahn's ms. notes.

ΕΡ|ΜΟΥ. Ephesus (2 examples). Heberdey, p. 171.

Putoli [Berlin]. Cited by Iliffe, p. 34, from *Priene*, pp. 443 f., where Zahn says it has the same clay and glaze as the Priene inscribed sherds. The stamp noted in CIL X, by Kaibel and by Oxé, *Bericht*, is evidently the same fragment.

ΕΡΟ|ΕΡΜ, i. e. 'Ερω (και) 'Ερμῆς or the like. Rome [Columbia University]. The fragment is apparently of normal Italian fabric, like EPАЗ|TVS above.

ΕΡΩ[ς]. Rhegium. Kaibel 2406, 18, from NdS 1885, p. 86, where it is included with *vasellame aretino*.

ΕΡΩC *a d. ad sin.* with letters reversed, in *planta pedis*. Smyrna. "[Privatsammlung]. Abgeschrieben von Anthes," — Zahn's ms. notes.

ΕΥΤΥΧΕ|ΑΛΕCΧΕ|. Smyrna [Louvre]. Zahn's ms. notes, from Pagenstecher.

[ΕΡΟC] [C-ANNI]. [Metropolitan Museum]. An Arretine signature, kindly communicated by Prof. Pauli.

ΕΥΔΑΜΟΥ *bollo circolare*. Rhegium. Kaibel 2406, 18, from

<sup>22</sup> For other occurrences, see Iliffe, p. 34.



NdS 1885, p. 86, "sotto il fondo di un vasetto cretaceo." Perhaps not sigillata.

ΖΩC|ΔOC|'', Miletopolis [Berlin]. "Samischer Fabrik,"—Zahn's ms. notes; the first letter is quite doubtful.

HAH|TOY. Smyrna. "[Privatsammlung]. Abgeschrieben von Antles,"—Zahn's ms. notes.

HA|IC. Miletopolis [Berlin]. Zahn's ms. notes.

HPAKAHC MOCΩN, and others. Arezzo. Pasqui, NdS 1884, Pl. VIII 2. This inscription, together with the names of the Muses, also in Greek characters, has been frequently found and reprinted. It stands on vases by *Cerdo M. Perenni*, an early Arretine master, and is included here simply as evidence that Greek was used on Italian made ware in Etruria as well as in Campania. See also ΕΡΟC C'ANNI above and KOCM|SAVFEI below.

ΘEOΔ|OPOY. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 499.

KAICY.<sup>34</sup> Tarsus [Brit. Mus.] Walters, p. 18. This fragment has "the shape of stamp and the treatment of the interior of the foot which are most characteristic of this [Pergamene] ware."<sup>35</sup>

KAAΔ. Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 171, reading KaΔ ..., but the same as Iliffe's KAAA, p. 37.

KEPΔOΞ or KEPΔOC. Ephesus (3 examples). Heberdey, p. 171 (KEP|ΔOC, 2 examples); p. 178 (KEPΔOC in a double swallow-tailed frame).<sup>36</sup> The latter fragment is distinguished "durch weichen, im Bruche hellgelben Ton und glanzlos, mehr ins Bräunliche spielenden, auch leichter abspringenden Firnis. Die Gefässformen sind denen der echten Terra Sigillata ähnlich, aber massiver im Ton und weniger fein profiliert."

Smyrna. "[Privatsammlung]. Abgeschrieben von Antles,"—KEP|ΔOC,<sup>37</sup>—Zahn's ms. notes.

Beisan [University Mus., Philadelphia]. Comfort-Waagé, *Beisan*, p. 224, in shape, stamp, clay and glaze much like the last example from Ephesus, but with letters *retro* from right to left; "Pergamene" ware.

Ostia. Oxé, *Bericht*, p. 14.

<sup>34</sup> For other instances of καλ εϛ, including two more from Tarsus, see Iliffe, p. 37.

<sup>35</sup> Waagé, *Antioch*, p. 69, n. 14.

<sup>36</sup> Noted, with numerous others, by Iliffe, pp. 37 f.



Aquileia. Oxé, *ibid.*

KEC. Tarsus [Brit. Mus.]. Walters, p. 18.

KOIPA|NOY.<sup>37</sup> Olbia [Berlin]. Neugebauer, p. 200 and Zahn's ms. notes; "'Samische' Fabrik."

Kertch. *Isvestija Arch. Komm.* Heft 30 (reference in Zahn's ms. notes), KOIP|NOY.

Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 499.

Spalato. Oxé, *Bericht*, p. 14, emending Kασ(c)άου in III 14035, 3.

KOCM|SAVFEI. Rome. Riese, p. 251.

AE|QNA. Ephesus (2 examples). Heberdey, pp. 171 f., interpreting Αέω A. . .

MAP|KOY.<sup>38</sup> Aquileia (2 examples). Oxé, *Bericht*, p. 14, from AT VI, p. 302.

Emona. Oxé, *Bericht*, p. 14.

MAT|PEOY.<sup>39</sup> Ephesus (2 examples). Heberdey, p. 172.

MHNO|GENOY. Smyrna. "[Privatsammlung]. Abgeschrieben von Anthes,"—Zahn's ms. notes.

MHTPOC. *Isvestija Arch. Komm.* Heft 47, p. 55, n. 42 (reference in Zahn's ms. notes).

MINΔIC.<sup>40</sup> Modena. Cavedoni, p. 15, "fondo di tazza con tinta rossa giallognola, ben diverso perciò dal rosso schietto degli altri," reprinted by Ihm, XI 8700, 889, and Kaibel 2406, 54.

BAATCI|MOYN.<sup>41</sup> Pozzuoli [Berlin]. Bruzza, p. 253, and frequently reprinted. Zahn, *Priene*, pp. 443 f., notes that this sherd has the same clay and surface as the inscribed ware from Priene.

Cumae [Mus. Campana]. *Priene*, p. 444.

[Catania.] *Ibid.*, from X 8056, 65, reading BAACTI only.

NIKO.<sup>42</sup> Athens (2 examples). Kumanudes.

NI|KO|ET|P|A|TO|Y. [Heidelberg.] Behn, p. 42 and Fig. 4, 2. A beaker in the style of Acó.

NIK|OCTP. Rome [Columbia University]. A petrographic

<sup>37</sup> For additional occurrences, see Iliffe, p. 38.

<sup>38</sup> For additional occurrences, including one from London, see Iliffe, p. 39.

<sup>39</sup> For another occurrence with black surface and a different shape, see Iliffe, p. 39. The Ephesus examples are rendered as MAT|PEA by Iliffe, *ibid.*

<sup>40</sup> For an occurrence at Alexandria, see Iliffe, p. 40.

<sup>41</sup> See Iliffe, pp. 29 f.

<sup>42</sup> For other occurrences, see Iliffe, p. 41.

comparison of this sherd with one signed by Q. Pompeius Serenus shows that the two are ceramically indistinguishable. Since Pompeius was a Puteolan potter, it follows that Nikostratos was also. See also Δουσιόου above.

ΑἴΗΝΟ, with N reversed. Dura-on-the-Euphrates, on "Pergamene" ware. Communicated by Dr. Frank E. Brown.

ΟΝΗΞ|ΙΜΟΥ. Smyrna. "[Privatsammlung.] Abgeschrieben von Anthes,"—Zahn's ms. notes.

Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 500, *pluribus impressum*, a duplicate of a stamp from Athens  $\widehat{\text{ON}}|\widehat{\text{HC}}(\text{I})\widehat{\text{M}}(\text{O})\widehat{\text{Y}}$  published and expanded by Watzinger, p. 58 (Iliffe, p. 42).

ΟΥΕΙΡΟΞ. Capua. Kaibel 2406, 62, from Riccio, Pl. VII, 44.

ΠΑΤ|ΙΟΥ. Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 172, correcting the reading of the Priene example interpreted ΠΑ[ΞΕ]ΟΥ (*Priene*, p. 436; Iliffe, p. 42).

ΠΟ|ΘΟΥ. Ephesus (5 examples), Heberdey, p. 172.

Smyrna. "[Privatsammlung.] Abgeschrieben von Anthes,"—Zahn's ms. notes.

Antioch. Iliffe, p. 43, as the fourth entry under *Posidonius*, reread by Waagé.

ΠΟΡΦΥ////. Taranto. Kaibel 2406, 68, from NdS 1884, p. 123, "sopra un frammento di piccolo vaso," listed separately from the Arretine on the same page.

ΠΟΙ|ΔΩΝ|ΙΟΥ.<sup>42</sup> Rome [Bonn]. XV 5816 and frequently reprinted. Iliffe gives it in two lines instead of three, following *Priene*, p. 444, where its certain Asiatic origin is noted. Signatures in Greek letters (and Latin too) are rare in more than two lines, but Iliffe shows several of three or four lines which include more than a single word (pp. 47, 50, 51).

Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 173.

Notion. Demangel-Laumonier, p. 385 ΠΟΞΕΙ|ΔΩΝΙ|ΟΥ.

Olbia [Berlin]. Neugebauer, p. 200 and Pl. 100, and Zahn's ms. notes, ΠΟΞΙΔ|ΩΝΙΟΥ.

ΠΥΛΔ. Pozzuoli [Berlin]. Bruzza, p. 255, reprinted by Kaibel *ramus palmarum* 2406, 70a, and in *Priene*, p. 443.

Pozzuoli [Berlin]. Bruzza, p. 253, reading Α'ΑΥΠ; Kaibel 2406, 70b.

<sup>42</sup> For other occurrences, see Iliffe, p. 43.

Capua. Kaibel 2406, 70c, from Riccio, Pl. VII, 7, reading ΠΥ.  
 ΠΟΥ|ΦΟC. Kertch. *Odesser Ges. f. Gesch. u. Altertumer*,  
 XXVIII, p. 29, reading Που|φου (reference in Zahn's ms. notes).

Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 173, reading ΠΟΥ|ΦΟC.

Naples. Kaibel 2406, 71, "patena Arretinis similis." (The same as Iliffe, p. 45.)

ΠΥ|ΠΟΥ. Naples. Kaibel 2406, 75. Two *vascula Arretinis similis*, of which one reads ΠΟΥ|ΠΥ. (Briefly noted by Iliffe, p. 47.)

Pompeii (Villa of the Mysteries). NdS 1922, p. 481, "terra-cotta aretina . . . coppa larga" reading ΠΟΥ|ΠΥ.

ΞΩΤΕΛΗΞ. Metapontum. Kaibel 2406, 79, from NdS 1887, p. 331, "bollo rettangolare, a linee non rette, ma piuttosto arcuate." Not implied to be sigillata.

ΤΥΧΗ in *planta pedis sinistri*. Samos. Technau, p. 63, an example of his "Samian" ware, though not "die berühmte vasa Samia."

ΦΟΙ|ΒΟΥ. Delphi. *Fouilles*, V, p. 179, Fig. 751.

Aquileia (2 examples). Oxé, *Bericht*, p. 14, of which one is apparently drawn from AT VII, p. 223.

ΦΥΡΜΟC. Pompeii. X 8055, 66, reprinted by Kaibel 2406, 85. "vasculum Arretini operis in speciem cylindri fabricatum; stilo scr. ante cocturam."

ΧΑΡΑ. Alishar Hüyük. Waagö in von der Osten *Alishar Hüyük, 1930-32*, Part III, p. 82.

ΧΑ|ΠΙC in various forms.<sup>44</sup> Miletropolis [Berlin] (3 examples). Neugebauer, p. 201 and Zahn's ms. notes; two examples are ΧΑ|ΠΙC<sup>45</sup> and all are "Samischer Fabrik."

Pergamon. Conze, p. 271.

Ephesus (7 examples). Heberdey, p. 173 (6 in two lines, 1 in a single line).

Athens. Kumanoudes.

Corinth. Bronceer, *Corinth*, p. 466, the only Greek signature from the Odeum.

<sup>44</sup> For numerous other occurrences, see Iliffe, pp. 50 ff. I believe that the instances here recorded are all additional to Mr. Iliffe's, but the documentation is not always easy. Zahn, *Princ.*, p. 444, notes that not all vases signed ΧΑΡΑ are alike in clay and glaze.

<sup>45</sup> The initial X more resembles H.

Dura-on-the-Euphrates, "arranged in a square" on "Pergamene" ware. Communicated by Dr. Frank E. Brown.

Dura-on-the-Euphrates.  $\chi\alpha\pi\iota\kappa\epsilon$  on "Pergamene" ware (4 examples). Communicated by Dr. Brown.

Alexandria. *Priene*, p. 436, n. 4, from Dragendorff, *Bonn, Jahrb.*, CI (1897), p. 159, "heller Thon und etwas bräunliche Glasur."

Egypt. *Priene*, p. 436, n. 4.

Alexandria [Heidelberg]. Behn, p. 36.

Kerich. *Izvestija Arch. Komm.*, IX (1904), p. 147,  $\chi\alpha\pi\eta\kappa$  (reference and transcription in Zahn's ms. notes).

$\chi\alpha\pi\iota\kappa\epsilon\mid\kappa\epsilon\pi\alpha\delta\omicron\zeta$ . Antioch. Iliffe, p. 34, reading  $\chi\alpha\pi\iota\kappa\epsilon\mid\epsilon\pi\mu\eta\kappa$ ; reread by Wangé.

$\chi\kappa\upsilon\mid\iota\omicron\varsigma$  (?). [Brit. Mus.] Walters, p. 38, "Bright red glaze. Probably Arretine, but the shape [Form 27] is a Gaulish one."<sup>40</sup>

$\omicron\phi\eta\mid\omicron\Upsilon = \omicron\phi\alpha\iota\upsilon\varsigma$  (?).<sup>41</sup> South Russia [Hermitage Mus.] *Antiq. du Bosphore Cimmérien*, p. 135 (reference in Zahn's ms. notes).

Olbia [Berlin]. Neugebauer, p. 200.

South Russia [Berlin]. Neugebauer, p. 200, on Knipowitsch Type 11.

Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 172, on the same shape.

Samos [Vatby]. *Priene*, p. 436, n. 4.

.....  $\tau\rho\eta\omicron\zeta$ . *Priene*. *Priene*, p. 431.

....  $\eta\alpha\omicron\Upsilon$ . Mont Beuvray [Autun]. Déchelette, I, p. 33. A fragment in the style of Aco.


$\zeta$  (or  $\iota$ )  $\alpha\Upsilon$ ... South Russia [Bonn]. Plate of "Samian" fabric,—Zahn's ms. notes.


<sup>40</sup> It is worth noting, however, that a close relative of the Gaulish Form 27 in "Pergamene" ware was found at Samos (Technau, p. 50). It was unsigned, as is often the case with "Pergamene," but signed examples like  $\alpha\pi\eta\kappa$  from the same site and  $\kappa\epsilon\pi\alpha\delta$  from Beth-Shan (see above) do exist. On the other hand, Walters' "bright red glaze" is certainly more characteristic of Gaulish ware, and inspires caution in comparison with Technau's description of  $\alpha\pi\eta\kappa$ : "Der Überzug ist matt braunrot, in verschiedenen Schattierungen vorkommend, und springt gerne in punktkleinen Splitterchen ab, sodass der helle gelbe Ton hervorleuchtet."

<sup>41</sup> For other occurrences, see Iliffe, p. 53. Hiller v. Gärtringen 355, 5, observes that Watzinger's example  $\omicron\phi\eta\mid\omicron\Upsilon$  from the west slopes of the Acropolis (p. 58) is the only evidence for this interpretation; he himself prefers  $\omicron\phi\alpha\iota\upsilon\varsigma$  or  $\omicron\phi\alpha\iota\varsigma$ .

HS or FHS. South Russia [Berlin]. Cup of "Samian" fabric, —Zahn's ms. notes.

]AAONC[. (The last symbol seemed square rather than round.) Dura-on-the-Euphrates. "Pergamene" ware. Communicated by Dr. Frank E. Brown.

OTIK in . Antioch. Iliffe, p. 42; his last entry under *Ordonos* is the same as his succeeding entry; reread by Waagé as fragmentary remains of the second line of a two-line stamp.

Design of rough concentric squares in . Dura-on-the-Euphrates. "Pergamene" ware prior to 50 a. c. Communicated by Dr. Frank E. Brown.

## II. LATIN SIGNATURES

AGATE (meri). Alexandria. Oxé, *Rev.* emending Iliffe, p. 26.  
INGEN|L·ANN. Antioch. Waagé by letter. This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 69.

SEX|ANNI.<sup>48</sup> Beisan [University Mus., Philadelphia]. Comfort-Waagé, *Beisan*, p. 222.

Athens. Kumanoudes, in a stamp of unusual shape.

Samaria. Iliffe, p. 47, from *Samaria*, I, p. 304, but *Samaria*, II, Pl. 68 h 2, shows SEX|ANN[ *pluries impressum*. Much of Annius' work is "grosse Platten, die viermal gestempelt sind und somit spätestens aus dem letzten Jahrzehnt v. Chr. G. stammen" (Oxé, *Viandonissa*, p. 128, with references). Sextus Annius worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 72.

OAR|DACI, i. e. *o(f)icina Ar[daci]*. Olbia [Hermitage Mus.], Knipowitsch, p. 11, emended by Oxé, *Gnomon*, V (1929), p. 544. Ardacus worked at La Graufesenque under Tiberius and Claudius. His work was exported to the north and Spain and Africa. (Oswald, *Index*, p. 22.)

ARRE.<sup>49</sup> Notion. Demangel-Laumonier, p. 385. This stamp and the following are probably not of genuine Arretine manufacture.

COPA|ARET. Notion. Demangel-Laumonier, p. 385.

<sup>48</sup> For other examples, see Iliffe, p. 47.

<sup>49</sup> Compare *Arre|tinum* at Alexandria (Iliffe, p. 28).

ATEI.<sup>80</sup> Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 489. It is questionable whether Ateius worked at Arezzo.

C<sup>81</sup>ATEI (N within C). Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 168. Large plate *pluries impressum*.

CN ATEI|CRESTI with a palm at the end of each line. Ptolemais [Sèvres]. III Suppl. I 6636, 2. This stamp is not found at Arezzo.

CNATE|EVHODI. "Pagus ad Smyrnam." *Eph. Epig.* V (1884), p. 595, reading OI|ATE|EVHODI, emended by Oxé, *Bonn. Jahrb.*, CI (1897), p. 36.

ATT (i)<sup>82</sup> in *planta pedis*. Naukratis [Brit. Mus.]. Walters, p. 18. This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 116.

AVILLI.<sup>83</sup> Athens (3 examples in *planta pedis*). Kumanudes; one example is certain (AVIL), and one is doubtful.

Athens (?). Should Iliffe's AVITJI ("conical cup; Athens, Kerameikos") read AVILLI? Oxé already cites one instance from the Kerameikos (Oxé, *Kerameikos*, p. 221). Or are Iliffe's and Oxé's sherds the same?

Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 490.

Corinth. Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 465.

This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 130.

L AVIL in *planta pedis*.<sup>84</sup> Corfu [Brit. Mus.]. Walters, p. 14.

Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 490, L A . . . in *planta pedis*.

This stamp occurs once at Arezzo, XI 6700, 125. The name of L. Avillius Sura is frequent, *ibid.*, 127.

C<sup>85</sup>AVRI in a rectangle with a knob on the right end. Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 168, expanding C. [A]ur(eli) ?

OF BASS|N|. Egypt [Royal Ontario Mus., Toronto]. Comfort, *Toronto*, p. 407. Form 18. This potter worked in South Gaul under Claudius, Nero and Vespasian (Oswald, *Index*, p. 357).

OF CALVI. Antioch. Waagé, by letter. This potter worked at La Graufesenque under Nero to Domitian, mainly Vespasian (Oswald, *Index*, p. 55).

CAMVR| in various ligatures; in *planta pedis* unless otherwise noted.<sup>86</sup> Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 168.

<sup>80</sup> For other occurrences of Ateius and Cn. Ateius, see Iliffe, pp. 28 f.

<sup>81</sup> For an example from Athens, see Iliffe, p. 29.

<sup>82</sup> For other examples, see Iliffe, p. 29.

<sup>83</sup> For another example, see Iliffe, p. 29.

<sup>84</sup> For other examples, see Iliffe, p. 27.

Naukratis [Brit. Mus.]. Walters, p. 18, in an elliptical stamp. Corinth (2 examples). Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 466.  
Corinth (3 examples). Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 490. One of the signatures reads AMVR.

Beisan [University Mus., Philadelphia] (2 examples). Comfort-Waagé, *Beisan*, p. 222.

Athens (?). Kumanudes; a possible expansion of a stamp impossible to reproduce typographically.

This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 29.

Q-CASTVE (t...) in *planta pedis*. Corinth (2 examples). Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 491 and Waagé, by letter (Q-CASVE).

This potter is not found at Arezzo, but at Chiusi and Rimini (XI) and Rome (XV).

CEIE). Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 491, where *Celer* is conjectured with some hesitation.

CENNI. Alexandria. Iliffe, p. 30. Should we read *C. Annius*, which is usually in two lines with a slave's name, but is sometimes found alone in a rectangle? Compare also Q. ENN|SVAVI of Pozzuoli (X 8056, 132). Iliffe has two examples of *Ennius* from Egypt (p. 33), with which compare about forty examples from Pozzuoli (X 8056, 131).

ICES. Antioch. Iliffe, p. 30. "Clay soft, buff, unlike Gaulish" (Waagé, by letter).

COR(umbi)|CISP(i). Alexandria. Iliffe, p. 30, expands *Cor(nelius)* in v. 1, but the correct reading is shown by Riese, p. 252 ff.; cf. XI 6700, 189 from Cincelli, which was the site of Cornelius' factory also.

P CLO(di) PROC( ) in various forms in *planta pedis*.<sup>43</sup> Athens (2 examples). Kumanudes.

Athens. Agora. Iliffe, p. 30, reading PC! . . .

Beisan [University Mus., Philadelphia]. Comfort-Waagé, *Beisan*, p. 222, PCLPR in *planta pedis*.

Tarsus. Iliffe, p. 30, reading P. CLAVD.

This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 197.

COJRINTHVS in *planta pedis*. Athens. Kumanudes. This potter worked at Pozzuoli, X 8056, 100.

CORNELI in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 491.

<sup>43</sup> For other occurrences, see Iliffe, p. 44.

Delphi. *Fouilles*, V, p. 180.

This potter worked at Arezzo-Cincelli, XI 6700, 259; the signature is much rarer than *P. Corneli*.

*P COR(neli)*<sup>20</sup> in an ellipse. Beisan [University Mus., Philadelphia] (2 examples; the transcription of one is not given). Comfort-Waagé, *Beisan*, p. 222.

This potter worked at Cincelli-Ponte a Buriano, XI 6700, 204.

*CORNE*(li) | *CLEME*(ntis) or *P CORN*(eli) *HIME*(h..?) (*P* and *R* reversed). Athens. Kummudos, reading *COM*//////*MEN*. *Clemens*, XI 6700, 214 (Cincelli); *Hime*(n?) *ibid.* 230 (Ponte a Buriano).

*CRESTI*.<sup>21</sup> Corinth (2 examples). Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 485, one example reading *C·R SII*.

Corinth. Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 466, reading *CRE|STY*.

[Alexandria.] Dragendorff, *Bonn. Jahrb.*, CI (1897), p. 148, reading *CRESTIF* in *planta pedis*.

This potter is not attested for Arezzo; possible parallels are at Fiesole and Luna, XI 6700, 180-82.

*DEMETHVS*, Pozzuoli [Berlin]. X 8056, 121. Zahn, *Prima*, p. 144, identifies this as "Samian" fabric. Cf. *DEM|ET|RIVS* from New Carthage (Oxé's reference to II 6257, 66 in Zahn's ms. notes).

*EPOI* and the like, here included as a Latin transliteration from Greek, appearing in combinations with several names, e.g. *A·EPOI* (XV 4936 [Rome]), *EROS|IOΔE* (Riese, p. 243 [Rome]; also at Mainz, XIII 10009, 117),<sup>22</sup> *EPOE|FELIX* (XV 5211 [Rome]; also at Mainz, Geissner, p. 9).

*C·ERAS//CANI* in *planta pedis*. Delphi. *Fouilles*, V, p. 180, Fig. 760.

Corinth (3 examples). Comfort, *Corinth*, pp. 491 f., reading *DĒRĀSTICĀNIS* in *planta pedis*.

*L·FASTI|DI*. Alexandria Troas. *Epik. Npīg.* V (1884), p. 68. This signature is not reported from Arezzo or Rome (except *FA|STI|DI|EN* in *trifolia*, XV 5202 [Rome]), but parallels occur at Fiesole, Luna and Fréjus; see especially *L·FASTI*, *a d. ad sin.*, X 8056, 140 [Solunto] and *L·FASTI* Hiffe, p. 35 [Alexandria].

<sup>20</sup> For an example from Olbia, see Hiffe, p. 32.

<sup>21</sup> For other occurrences, see Hiffe, p. 31.

<sup>22</sup> *Eros|freit* also occurs.



FAVSTVS on a decorated vase (punishment of Marsyas). South Russia [Berlin]. Neugebauer, p. 203. This potter worked at Cincelli, where his moulds and decorated vases have been found, XI 6700, 200 (s. v. *P. Carnelli*).

MFE, Ptolemais [Sèvres]. III Suppl. I 6636, 1. "Ein zweites Exemplar dieses Stempels kann ich nicht nachweisen,"—Dragendorff, *Bonn. Jahrb.*, CI (1897), p. 149, n. 4.

FOR... or FON[T(ei)].<sup>50</sup> Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 492.

G]AMV.<sup>51</sup> Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 499.

GAVI, Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 492.

Beisan [University Mus., Philadelphia]. Comfort-Waagé, p. 222, in *planta pedis*. This might be C  $\widehat{\text{AVI}}$ .<sup>52</sup> Gavius worked at Arezzo-Cincelli, XI 6700, 396 GAVI usually in *planta pedis*; 305, C GAVI always in a rectangle, with and without ligatures.

L GELL in *planta pedis*.<sup>53</sup> Corfù [Brit. Mus.] Walters, p. 13. This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 308; his work is also extremely common at Aquileia, *AT VII* (1880-81), p. 233.

EIRACL<sup>1</sup>, i. e. *Heracleidas*. Naukratis [Brit. Mus.]. Walters, p. 18. This potter worked at Pozzuoli, X 8056, 160.

IANΛARIY-SFECL (with N reversed) i. e. *Ianuaris feci*. Seleucia-on-the-Tigris [University of Michigan]. Communicated by Prof. Clark Hopkins; <sup>54</sup> found in Room 160 of the third level at Seleucia, 146 B. C.—43 A. D. This name is not recorded at Arezzo, but Oxé assembles instances from Windisch, Nîmes, Tarragona, Elche, Carthage and Rome, and remarks that they are contemporary with other circular stamps (*Avilius Feli(x)*, *Romanus*, etc.) from the end of Augustus' principate or the beginning of Tiberius'.<sup>55</sup> It may be connected with the shop of *L. Titius* of Arezzo,<sup>56</sup> from which samples in the Near East are noted below and by Iliffe, pp. 48 f. Without being frequent anywhere, *Ianuaris feci* is widely dis-

<sup>50</sup> Oxé's conjectured expansion, by letter.

<sup>51</sup> Oxé conjectures *Gavinus* of Pozzuoli, by letter.

<sup>52</sup> Cf. XI 6700, 122, C- $\widehat{\text{AVI}}$  [Cortona], for which Iliffe suggests GAVI as the real reading.

<sup>53</sup> For other occurrences, see Iliffe, p. 35.

<sup>54</sup> Included here by his permission and that of the Editorial Committee of the University of Michigan *Hawaiian Series*.

<sup>55</sup> *Vindonissa*, p. 128. Another instance may be added from Rome [Columbia University].

<sup>56</sup> Oxé, *Bonn. Jahrb.* CII (1898), p. 143.

tributed; indeed, the present instance from Seleucia is, so far as I know, the farthest-travelled piece of Italian sigillata. At the time, Seleucia was outside the Empire.

LIB... South Russia [Berlin]. Neugebauer, p. 200, on Knipowitsch Type 9. This is a case of a Latin name on Hellenistic ware; during his recent visit to the University Museum, Philadelphia, Dr. Zahn informed me that the clay and surface are clearly "Samian." Cf. LONE! from Olbia.<sup>60</sup>

MCO MA in *tabula ansata*. Pergamon. Conze, p. 271.

SEX M CL (adi) in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Waagé, by letter. This name appears at Rome (XV, in *luna*), Livorno (XI), Trapani, Ponza (X), and Elche (II Suppl. 6342), but not at Arezzo.

M[M-F. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 439. As far as I know, this stamp is unique, but cf. MFE above.

A-M-PRV (dentis) in *planta pedis*.<sup>61</sup> Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 493. This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 356. 364.

A-M-VR in *planta pedis*, i.e. A. Mannei Urbani. Athens. Kumanudes.

Corinth (?). See above, s. v. Camuri.

This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 29 cc. dd. and XI Add. 8119, 27.<sup>62</sup>

MACCARVSF. Egypt [Royal Ontario Mus., Toronto]. Comfort, *Toronto*, p. 407. This potter worked at La Graufesenque in the principates of Tiberius to Nero.<sup>63</sup>

Makētis. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 485. This signature is not found at Arezzo.

C-ME.<sup>70</sup> Athens. III 6545, 7, from Dumont, p. 390. This stamp may be connected with one of those next following.

C-ME[R in *planta pedis*.<sup>71</sup> Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 493. The expansion as given is preferable to C-ME[MM], which is usually in a rectangle (once at Arezzo in *planta pedis*, XI 6700, 378),

<sup>60</sup> Knipowitsch, Fig. 3, 7-10. For these stamps Oxé suggests reading *Longi* (*Gnomon* V [1929], p. 544).

<sup>61</sup> Can this be the real reading of MBR in *planta pedis* at Alexandria, Iliffe, p. 40?

<sup>62</sup> Here Deasao-Gabola follow the expansion suggested by Oxé, adopted above, instead of Amuri.

<sup>63</sup> Oswald, *Index*, p. 173.

<sup>70</sup> For another example from Athens (Keramikes), see Iliffe, p. 40.

<sup>71</sup> For other examples, see Iliffe, p. 40.

while the former is always in *planta pedis*. No examples have been found at Arezzo, but the distribution implies Arezzo as the point of origin, and its presence in Well No. 1 at Minturnae suggests an early Tiberian date.

MEMMI. Notion. Demangel-Laumonier, p. 385.

C·MEM (mi). Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 493. This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 378.

ANTHV|C·MEM. Alexandria. Iliffe, p. 39, reads ANHV|C·MEM and connects it with *Cn. A. Ma(hetis)*; for the emendation, see XV 5332 (3 examples from Rome).

P·MESSI|HELEN. Alexandria (2 examples). Emendation of Iliffe, p. 40, suggested by XV 5345 (2 examples from Rome).

C·MVRR. Alexandria (2 examples). Iliffe, p. 37, connects these with C. Amurius. C. Murrius is frequent at Arezzo, XI 6700, 392, usually in *planta pedis*, but once in a rectangle.

N·N·H in *tabula ansata extrinsecus inter anaglyphs*. Crete [Candia]. By letter from Dr. Marinotas, Director of the Candia Museum, to whom I am indebted for permission to publish. This potter worked at Pozzuoli, Bruzza, p. 247.

:NAIV: (with N reversed), i.e. *Nassi*? Athens. Kumanudes.

FORMA L NOSTILI SERVOS MIN. CVRVS FECIT. Crete [Brit. Mus.]. Walters, p. 13, Fig. 6; medallion from a red glazed vase. Vases with applied reliefs are placed in the third Christian century by Déchelette, II, p. 167. The name is not in Oswald's *Index*.

C NV FEL in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 494. This potter did not work at Arezzo, but the signature C NVIE appears at Rimini, XI 6700, 412.

C NV RES in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Waagé, by letter. This potter did not work at Arezzo, but cf. XI 6700, 413 (Perugia).

OCT(A)VI in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 494. This signature is not found at Arezzo.

L. Oct(avi) Proc(li). Corinth (2 examples). Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 494 (OCPR[ and OCTPRO, the latter in *planta pedis*).

Corinth. Waagé, by letter (OC·PAO in *planta pedis*).

Delphi. Fouilles, V, p. 180, Fig. 762 (OCIIIIIO in *planta pedis*).

This signature is not found at Arezzo, but cf. XI 6700, 417 (Orvieto, etc.).

L O(ctavi) SALV(taris) in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 494.

Olympia. XI 6700, 418, note.

This signature is not found at Arezzo, but cf. XI 6700, 418, OCFSA (Castel d'Asso).

Q. P[.]. Notion. Demangel-Lauzonier, p. 342. On a fragment "de grand bol orné, sous une zone de feuilles de lierre, d'une série de masques dionysiaques à longue barbe, séparées par de motifs végétaux du plus gracieux effet."<sup>72</sup> The stamp is probably misread.

PATR|OCL|. Athens. Kumanudes.

Athens, Agora. Iliffe, p. 36, reading |ATK|OC||

This signature is not found in XI or XV; cf. ΠΑΤΡΟ|ΚΑΗΞ above.

PAV-P-O in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Waagé, by letter.

Delphi. Fouilles, V, p. 180, Fig. 758.

Athens, Agora (?). Iliffe, p. 31, reading ΓΑΥΡΟ

This stamp is not found at Arezzo, but cf. XI Add. 8119, 37 (Bolsena); XV 5417 and Tingdal, *Erasm*, XXV (1927), p. 81 (Rome); III 6010, 27 [Vienna Mus.]; Walters, p. 39, "probably from Etruria, but apparently not Arretine. Red glaze worn; plain shallow form. Round the rim, equidistant, four rosettes attached; in the center is the stamp."

[M PEREN(ni)] TIGRAN(i).<sup>73</sup> Corinth. Shear, *AJA XXX* (1926), p. 446, Fig. 2, a fragment of a crater very similar to *Arret.* 117 (Herakles and Omphale drawn by centaurs).

<sup>72</sup> Several unsigned, decorated sherds from Notion are described by the same editors. A banqueting scene and symplegma point directly to the workshop of the Perennii at Arezzo; the female dancer and silenus head may well be from the same source; but most intriguing is the comic person "d'une maigreur excessive (on voit les côtes) courant à toutes jambes vers la droite, la tête tournée en arrière et les bras repliés, tenant des masses; il est coiffé d'un bonnet pointu; le nez et le menton sont démesurés." Italian parallels are frequent: Oxy, *Arret.* No. 30, with parallels by Ateius (Italian and provincial) and Naevius (Pozzuoli); Hühne, *Halter*, p. 85, signed *Orestis* Euhodi; Pasqui, *NdS* 1890, pp. 458-61, by M. Perennius Bargathes. See also the woodcut in Cesnola, *Cyprus, Its Ancient Cities, Tombs and Temples*, p. 230, from Soli.

<sup>73</sup> For other later examples from the shop of the Perennii, see Iliffe, pp. 42 f. The Priene signature (*Priene*, p. 438 and Fig. 553) belongs to M. Perennius Bargathes, and the Kerameikos signature to M. Perennius Creocens.

]TAS (with S reversed), i. e. *Saturn* ( ) *M. Perenni*. Melos. Héron de Villefosse in *Gaz. Archéol.* VI (1880), pp. 219-22 and Pl. 33.<sup>14</sup> This potter was contemporary with M. Perennius Crescens (until about A. D. 40) and worked both at Arezzo and in north Italy.

PIL. Corinth. Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 460. Cf. XV 5429 PHII. 5440 C. Pili.

PLOT[DI]RVFI. Corinth. Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 466. This signature is not found at Arezzo, but five examples from Rome are reported XV 5452.

PL-CPR in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 499.

CPOMF in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 495.

Athens, Agora. Hille, p. 31, reading CROMF.

Delphi. Pouilles, V, p. 180, Fig. 761, reading CDOMI in *planta pedis*.

]OPOM E|SERENI, i. e. *Q. Pompei Sereni*. Corinth. Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 466. This potter worked at Pozzuoli, Bruzsa, p. 247.

PRISCI. Alexandria. Hille, p. 44, lists this as Gaulish (Lezoux?), Hadrian-Antonine, but it appears at Rome, XV 5464 and *Memoirs*, p. 206, q. v. for further references.

IYRAME. Athens, Kumanudes. This signature may be of Near Eastern origin; cf. Hille, p. 44 ΠΥΡΑΜΟΥ (Alexandria).

RASINI.<sup>15</sup> Corinth. Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 466.

Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 485.

Athens (2 examples). Kumanudes, RASI in a swallow-tailed stamp, and IZAR (with R reversed) in a rectangle.

This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 520.

CERTVS RASIN. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 495.

[.....] RASIN. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 495.

[.....] RASIN]. Athens. Oxé, *Arret.* No. 107, attributing the fragment to either *Rasinius* or *Pantagathus C. Anni*, but the eastern distribution of *Rasinius* makes him the more probable conjecture.

RAS LYC in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 496. This signature is not found at Arezzo.

-L-RASIN-PIS[ANI-] in *forma lunata*. Delphi. Pouilles, V, p. 180, Fig. 759.

<sup>14</sup> An unsigned decorated fragment of Italian sigillata from Parium in Asia Minor is published in the same article.

<sup>15</sup> For other occurrences, see Hille, p. 44.

Athens (2 examples). Kumanudes (L•R•PIS in *tabula ansata* and L•R•PI in *planta pedis*).

This Nero-Flavian potter is Italian but not Arretine.

RECINVS F, i. e. *Regenus F* (?). Egypt. [Hildesheim.] Summarily noted by G. Roeder, *Die Denkmäler des Pelizaeus-Museum*, p. 178, No. 908. Form 29; a photograph and transcription have been kindly communicated by Dr. Roeder. This vase and signature are among the most puzzling items here presented because Reginus I, II and III of Lesoux, Baden-in-Aargau and Heiligenberg respectively (none active before the principate of Domitian) never made Form 29 (Oswald, *Index*, pp. 260 f.). *Regenus* of La Graufesenque (Claudius-Nero) is more probably correct, though his signatures are not common and he is credited with only one other instance of Form 29.<sup>18</sup>

RVFI a d. ad sin. [Alexandria]. Dragendorff, *Bonn. Jahrb.*, CI (1897), p. 148. Perhaps the same as Iliffe, p. 45 RVFH a d. ad sin., which — *Exp. v. Sieglin* II 3, p. 105, No. 56.

LIV|QVΔIO. Alexandria. Iliffe, p. 38, reads *Liv(i) Quartio* (?), but T RVFR|RVFIO is more probable (XI 6700, 561, Arezzo).

L•S•C (?) in a quadrilateral with concave sides and double frame. Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 169.

[Alexandria.] Dragendorff, *ibid.*; perhaps the same as Iliffe, p. 46, L SC.

C S F (?; S reversed). Corinth. Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 446.

<sup>18</sup> Dr. Roeder also very kindly sends photographs of two other La Graufesenque bowls purchased in Lower Egypt (Form 37, unsigned), likewise noted in his catalogue, p. 178, Nos. 906, 907. Their decoration, like that of 908, is later than Hofheim I (abandoned 50/51 A.D.), about contemporary with the earlier vases from Rottweil (occupied 73/74 A.D.) and generally earlier than the material from Pompeii published by Atkinson in *JES* IV (1914). The same museum also has from Egypt an Arretine fragment showing a boar-hunt on foot and horseback (Roeder, *ibid.*, p. 177, No. 931), presumably by the Augustan Arretine potter *M. Perennius (Tigraeus?)*. I am further indebted to the kindness of Drs. Zahn and Neugebauer for a photograph of an unsigned fragment of La Graufesenque Form 29 from Pergamon (unpublished) in the Antiquarium in Berlin. Its date is also Neronian or early Flavian, and this seems roughly correct for, or a trifle earlier than, the five Gaulish decorated bowls from Delphi (*Fossiles* V, p. 180, Figs. 747-771). Mr. T. D. Pryce also writes that he has "examined a Banassac Form 37 from Samaria," and some of the Antioch sigillata is also from Banassac.

L-S-M in an elliptoid stamp (*planta pedis*?). Beisan. Comfort-Waagé, *Beisan*, p. 222. This signature is not found at Arezzo, but cf. XI 6700, 571 (Livorno).

SAVF(ei). Alexandria. Perhaps the right reading of Iliffe, p. 46, ?SAVP.

CLITYS|SAVFE(i). Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 168. Wide plate.

SECV|IDINI(?). Alexandria. Iliffe, p. 32, lists this as "Arretine" without conjecturing a restoration. There were several Gaulish potters named *Secundinus*, of whom the earliest worked at La Graufesenque, Nero-Vespasian (Oswald, *Index*, p. 286). This may be his work.

SECVNDI. Egypt. [Royal Ontario Mus., Toronto]. Comfort, *Toronto*, p. 406. Form 27. This potter worked at La Graufesenque in the period Claudius-Vespasian (Oswald, *Index*, p. 287).

C-SE|NTI.<sup>17</sup> Eleusis. III Suppl. Add. Postrem. 14203, 30, omitting interpunctuation.

Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 496.

This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 608 f., during the principate of Augustus. He also operated a branch factory in the Near East (Zahn, *Priene*, p. 445).

C-SEN(ti). Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 496, *pluries impressum*.

Ephesus (4 examples with EN ligatured). Heberdey, pp. 168 f. Notion. Demangel-Laumonier, p. 385.

SESTI|DAMA. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 496. Not this signature, but others of A. Sestius, are found at Arezzo. *Dama* appears at Chiusi, XI Add. 8119, 53.

PHLOGEN|A-SESTI and PHILOGE|[A-SESTI] on the same large platter of about 20 inches diameter. Corinth. Mr. M. P. Snyder, by letter. This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 631, *series impressum*.

PRIAMI|SES|TI (with first S reversed). el Iblakhiya. Iliffe, p. 43, calls this stamp South Gaulish Flavian, but *Priamius* | A. *Sesti* is found at Arezzo and Poggio Buco near Pitigliano, XI 6700, 633.

C TET|I. e. C. Tell. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 497. This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 660.

C-TETI|PH-RO. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 485. Emend

<sup>17</sup> For other occurrences, see Iliffe, p. 46.



in comparison with C-TETI|PHIPO (XI 6700, 675, Montefiascone), TETTI|PHIR (XV 5644, Rome), PHI///|C TETTI (X 8055, 32, Pompeii), PHIER|C TETT (II 6257, 143, Emporiae),

MEN]OP|L-TETTI. Antioch. Iliffe, p. 48. Waagé notes that the last letter of the upper line is smudged and could be I, F or P. L TETTI|SAMIAE.<sup>78</sup> Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 497. This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 685.

SAR]IVA|[TET]TI. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 497.

Athens. Kumanudes.

This signature is not found at Arezzo.

C-TETT (in *tabula ansata*). Athens. Kumanudes.

Athens. *Ibid.*, an example difficult to reproduce typographically, perhaps the same name; cf. XI 6700, 689 (Chiusi and elsewhere) and XV 5650 g (Rome).

Thala(mi). Alexandria. Oxé, *Rev.*, emending Iliffe, pp. 35, 48.

TITI in *planta pedis* (?). Corinth. Cheliotomylos. Waagé, by letter.

A TITI with palm branch below. Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 465.

C TITI|HERM(ae). Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 169.

C TITI|NEPOT(is). Alexandria. Iliffe, p. 41, expands v. 2 as *Neroth*, and makes the same expansion for v. 1 of *Heroph|Sesti*.<sup>79</sup>

BLAND|L-TITI. Alexandria. Iliffe, pp. 43, 49, reading PLAVT|FTIT| and assigning the ware to Lezoux under Hadrian. But compare XV 5670 (3 examples from Rome).

IVDIS|L T|TI. Antioch. Iliffe, p. 49. "Not Arretine clay; fine, grainy buff,"—Waagé, by letter. Are we faced with another Arretine master who moved his shop to the East?

PRINCE|PS-TITI. Salamis, Cyprus. Myres and Olmefalsch-Richter, p. 94.

LX]T×THYR(si).<sup>80</sup> Samaria. Samaria I, p. 304, reading IXTHYB. The glaze is stated to be genuine Arretine.

Corinth. Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 466.

<sup>78</sup> For other occurrences, see Iliffe, p. 48.

<sup>79</sup> This latter signature, from the Kerameikos, is probably the same fragment as is also transcribed on Iliffe's pp. 36, 40 from Oxé, *Kerameikos*, p. 221. A similar repetition may have occurred with *M. Ser(cili)|Figuli*, once from Oxé, *ibid.*, and once from the sherd itself (Iliffe, p. 46).

<sup>80</sup> For another occurrence, see Iliffe, p. 49.



L·V·FI in *planta pedis*. Corfù [Brit. Mus.]. Walters, p. 13. This signature is not found at Arezzo, but cf. XI 6700, 741 in *planta pedis* (Fiesole), XV 5700 (Rome), II 4970, 531.

S·V in *planta pedis*. Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 169, comparing XI 6700, 742, S·V·N

P·VĒCILI|ANTIOC. Athens. Kumanudes. This signature is found at Arezzo, XI 6700, 749.

VILLI in *planta pedis*. Cyprus. Myres and Ohnefalsch-Richter, p. 24.

VITALII. Egypt [Royal Ontario Mus., Toronto]. Comfort, *Toronto*, p. 406. Form 27. Vitalis worked at La Graufesenque in the period Claudius-Domitian (Oswald, *Index*, p. 340).

VMBR in *planta pedis*. Ephesus. Heberdey, p. 169.

LVMB in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Cheliotomylos. Waagé, by letter.

LVMB. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 485, without indicating the shape of the stamp.

Athens. Kumanudes (L·VM in *planta pedis*).

Athens, Agora. Iliffe, p. 49, identifies TWIB and L·W·I. with L. Vibius(?), but Waagé interpreted the former as *Umbricius* (*Hesperia*, II, p. 228), which is preferable for the latter also.

This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 796.

C·VOL|VSEN.<sup>81</sup> Corinth. Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 466. This potter worked at Arezzo, XI 6700, 821.

LVRB(ani). Athens, Agora. Oxé, *Rec.*, emending Iliffe's *Cosius Unappus*, p. 50.

V M C. Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 485.

XANTHI (with N reversed). Naukratis [Brit. Mus.]. Walters, p. 18. This signature is not found at Arezzo, but cf. XI 6700, 835 (Luna, Fiesole, Livorno).

ZOILI.<sup>82</sup> Corinth. Comfort, *Corinth*, p. 498. This signature is not found at Arezzo, but cf. XI 6700, 836 (Luna, Paduletta, Perugia).

CFARP or OFARP in *planta pedis*. Corfù [Brit. Mus.]. Walters, p. 13.

LLAR or EIAR(?). Corinth. Broneer, *Corinth*, p. 466.

<sup>81</sup> For other occurrences, see Iliffe, p. 50.

<sup>82</sup> For other occurrences, see Iliffe, p. 53.

.CA.SEV in *planta pedis*. Corinth. Wangé, by letter.

ANTI| [Y] OSP| (double-struck and fogged). Antioch. Wangé, by letter. I suspect *Ante|ros Ti*; cf. II 6357, 15, *Ante|ros Tit*, XV 5669 ANTI|RO|S-L-TIT|, etc., XI 6700, 698. 730, *Anteros|Titi X* (Arezzo).

PACI. Antioch. Hiffe, p. 33. "Buff clay, unlike Gaulish,"—Wangé.

XIIXX or XXIIIX. Egypt [Royal Ontario Mus., Toronto]. Comfort, *Toronto*, p. 406. Gaulish ware of La Graufesenque.

Oxé gives two parallels from Rome for the stamp showing Victoria holding a wreath and palm branch, with the letter A in the field, figured by him in *Kerameikos*, p. 221, Abb. 3, 8. It is worth adding Kumanudes, Pl. E 40, and one each in the Columbia University Collection and at Bryn Mawr College, both unpublished.



## NORTHWESTERN AUSTRALIA AND THE QUESTION OF INFLUENCES FROM THE EAST INDIES

D. S. DAVIDSON

UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA

SINCE THE early days of speculation on the peopling of the Australian continent the northwest coast has been frequently suggested as the region of original entry of either the aborigines themselves or of subsequent non-Australian visitors to whom have been attributed various culture traits now of major or minor significance on the continent. Two distinctly different problems thus are involved, each of which must be treated separately in any objective consideration of the theories advanced.

The theory that the Australians first reached their continent by a journey in canoes or other forms of watercraft from Timor or other islands in the Sunda chain to the northwest coast was a fairly popular one during the 19th century at which time questions of racial or cultural derivations were often answered without due regard to facts or probabilities, or in spite of them. Culture and race were confused as one and the same and whenever necessary to the arguments being advanced specific culture traits were assumed to have been in existence at the requisite time, and to have occupied the proper distributions suited to the theory being propounded. Thus if it were taken for granted that sea-going watercraft capable of reaching Australia were available in the Sunda Islands at the time the Australians migrated it was convenient to conclude that they came by the most direct route from Asia, via Timor to the northwest coast.<sup>1</sup>

In more recent years evidence which throws definite doubts on such a theory of maritime migration has been slowly accumulating. In the first place it seems quite likely that Australians have inhabited their continent since early Recent times, if not since late in the Pleistocene period, and we can be quite dubious that watercraft capable of crossing from Timor to Australia, whatever the

---

<sup>1</sup> Such an opinion has been expressed by several early writers, for instance, Eyre, II, p. 405 (1845), who specified 12°-10°S. as the area of arrival; Frichard, V, p. 214 (1847); Smyth, I, p. lxiii (with some reservations) (1878); Curr, I, p. 190 ff. (1886); Mathew, (a late wave) (1880).

distance may have been under changed conditions of sea level, were employed anywhere in the world at that early time. Indeed the available data suggest that craft suited for distant journeys on the open sea may have been unknown in the major islands of the East Indies until possibly late in the first millennium A. D.<sup>2</sup>

Secondly, in so far as the Australians themselves are concerned, there is no evidence to indicate that they ever were seafarers. Ocean going craft not only are still unknown to them but the most advanced types of craft they possess, the ordinary dugout and the dugout with outrigger attachment, were introduced into North Australia and the Cape York Peninsula respectively, apparently within the past 150 to 200 years. We can trace the 600 mile westward diffusion of the dugout from Clarence Strait, North Australia, to the Prince Regent River, Western Australia, since 1837, and also the recent spread of the triangular raft which preceded the dugout along this coast.<sup>3</sup> Thus, except for crude rafts or swimming logs, there is no evidence to suggest that the aborigines of the northwestern coastal regions ever were acquainted with watercraft until the twentieth century. For the remainder of the western and southern coasts of the continent as far east as the mouth of the Murray River in South Australia no watercraft of any description are reported for boan use. Nor is any employed on the rivers, except crude rafts or swimming logs in a very few localities.

It seems useless to discuss the point whether the Australians of this extensive western and southern coastal region may once have possessed watercraft. It is true that much of the western coastal country is not particularly inviting to seafarers, yet there are numerous regions where a knowledge of watercraft would be such an advantage, particularly in view of the forbidding hinterland of much of Western Australia, that there can be no logical basis for a supposition of watercraft degeneration or extinction in this region. The ready acceptance of the dugout canoe along the Kimberley coast within the past few years and its rapid assimilation in the

---

<sup>2</sup>All early migrants into the Pacific, the Tasmanians, Australians, Pygmies, Melanesians, and Indonesians seem to have confined their attentions to the more or less contiguously distributed islands few of which require more than 50 miles of sea voyaging at present sea level. See Davidson, 1937 B.

<sup>3</sup>See Davidson, 1935 A, p. 45.

local culture indicates the importance which watercraft can have in this region if known. Indeed the raft and dugout have become so thoroughly integrated in certain regions where it is known that they were lacking a few years ago that if historical records of their recent introduction were not available some, on the basis of their close integration in local culture at the present time, might be inclined to argue for a much greater antiquity.

Porteus<sup>4</sup> recently has revived the theory of an original landing of aborigines on the northwest coast and even specifies the area between the 15th and the 20th degrees of latitude as the place of entry. His main argument is that if the aborigines first reached fertile northeastern Australia they never would have moved into the inhospitable central and western regions of the continent. The fallacies of such an argument are numerous. In the first place we have no right to assume that the desert regions were always as inhospitable as they are at present. Indeed, the circumstantial evidence of man's antiquity in Australia coupled with geological and paleontological considerations suggest that man may have occupied what is now desert country at a time when climatic conditions were much more favorable. Secondly, we cannot admit that population had not reached its optimum in the congenial eastern area as he claims. It seems not unlikely, generally speaking, that the native population in all parts of Australia had reached the maximum possible under the Australian system of economy. Thirdly, and his point seems to be generally misunderstood, it is we, not the aborigines of the desert regions, who regard their habitat as unfavorable. The exigencies of life require a smaller population spread over a larger territory but this is considered normal by them. The inhabitants of the interior do not think in terms of the Queensland coast or of other more favorable regions unknown to them but only in terms of conditions among their more or less immediate neighbors who occupy at best only a slightly different environment. Any people tends to regard as satisfactory a region which furnishes sufficient food to provide what to them is an abundance of food in good years, a bare sufficiency in poor years. Furthermore, in view of the fact that the aboriginal population in northwestern Australia seems to have been from 15 to 40 times more dense than in the

---

<sup>4</sup> Porteus, 1931; reiterated 1937.

desert interior\* one could employ Porteus' logic to maintain that if Australians arrived on the northwest coast they would have been no more likely to move inland than if they had first gone to the northeast, but could have absorbed the small percentage of excess population now found in the interior deserts or through the prevailing custom of infanticide could have maintained population at the saturation point, as in historic times, thus eliminating any need of migration into the interior. Porteus hypothecates the routes of ethnic movements not only for the northwest but for the entire continent. Since it probably never will be possible to throw light on such movements, even though we could determine the approximate antiquity and could secure evidence of climatic conditions of that early time, his map can be considered worthless.

The most recent discussion of a northwest coast entry is that of Haddon who follows the suggestions of Taylor that in late Pleistocene times the continental shelf of Australia extended to within 80 miles of Timor. That the ocean level was lower during the glacial periods than at present is generally accepted; however, in order to reduce the gap between Australia and Timor to 80 miles a drop of 600 feet in ocean surface must be postulated, whereas probably few geologists would be willing to admit that the evidence indicates a change in sea level of more than from 200 to 300 feet. But long before the ocean surface could have dropped to the 600 foot level it would have been increasingly easy for man to have moved on from island to island until New Guinea was reached. New Guinea is now separated from the Cape York Peninsula, Australia, by only the 100 miles of Torres Strait, which not only is studded with islands but is only 60 feet deep.

Thus there seem to be no good grounds so far advanced for the belief that migrating Australians arrived on the northwest coast from the Sunda islands. This leaves as the only plausible avenue of migration the New Guinea-Torres Strait-Cape York Peninsula route to which the early writers seem to have objected principally because Australians had not been identified in New Guinea. How-

---

\* Radcliffe-Brown, p. 688, estimates that the density of population in the Gascoyne area is 1 to 5 square miles. It is probable that in the Kimberley there was 1 person to 10 square miles. It seems likely that between 150 and 200 square miles are required to provide subsistence for one aborigine in the desert areas.

ever, Howells recently has summarized the information to show that mixed Australoids are not only present in New Guinea but in other parts of Melanesia. This finding, combined with the probable relatively great antiquity of occupation of Australia, the probable relatively recent appearance of sea-going watercraft in the East Indies and Melanesian areas, and the unlikelihood of any sufficiently narrow strait between Australia and Timor within the proper time interval to warrant the suspicion that such a strait could have been crossed on crude craft, would seem to establish the Cape York route of entry as the only plausible one which the early Australians could have followed.

The question whether subsequent peoples came to the north-western coastal districts, either by accident or by design, to settle in that region or to visit the area, introduce blood or elements of culture and then return to their home lands, is quite another problem which at the moment admits of no satisfactory conclusion. The theory that one or more such movements have occurred has been advanced variously by several of the older writers.<sup>4</sup> But none has presented a strong case for his inductions and in most instances the arguments given are decidedly weak or fanciful.

In order to demonstrate that non-Australians have come to northwestern Australia we need to find either non-Australian skeletal remains or evidence to show definite miscegenation in the present population, or localized specific elements of culture which can be identified with appearances in some foreign region. As is well known, Australian racial features are marked by such general homogeneity that any intermixture with other races should be either obvious in first or second generations of mixed bloods or demonstrable by statistical analysis for later generations, providing the miscegenation is more or less general in a given region. Apparently no one would insist that there has been a large scale migration of non-Australians to these shores but at the most only small groups of occasional visitors. Thus it can be rightfully maintained that if a very small hypothetical non-Australian group arrived in northwestern Australia several generations ago they may have been so completely absorbed that indications of their presence in the present population might not be detectable. Hence it follows that the lack

<sup>4</sup> For various theories and discussions see Mathew, 1889, 1893, 1910; Curr, I, p. 190 ff.; Howitt, 1898, 1904, p. 1 et seq.



of definite indications of mixture cannot in itself be considered actual proof that non-Australians have never visited the northwest.

Various claims of the presence of natives showing slight indications of Malay features have been advanced, but as yet they have not been substantiated by anthropometric studies. In view of the fact that the aborigines in coastal North Australia, where Malays are known to have visited over a period of several generations, show virtually no indications of intermixture, we cannot pass judgment on the validity of such statements for the northwest until detailed investigations in this area have been conducted. At the moment claims of foreign racial features in this part of the continent must be regarded as still unsupported by tangible evidence, but we have no reason to believe that foreign visitors, if they actually came, had any profound effect on Australian racial features.

Australian culture also is characterized by homogeneity in general, although there are various distinguishing traits of local or sectional provenience which serve to set off the culture of one part of the continent from that in another. The presence of localized traits in the southern half of the continent would generally be considered without hesitation as examples of local origin, for the question of foreign introduction along the southern coast would hardly arise. For the northern coast, on the other hand, the possibility of non-Australian derivations cannot be ignored; hence we should examine those aspects of culture peculiar to the northwest with the view of determining whether there is evidence either to demonstrate or to suggest their local origin, or to furnish proof for, or to warrant the suspicion of, foreign derivation.

As known at the moment there are only a few culture traits which are prominent in the northwest but lacking in, or at least not reported as present for, other parts of the continent. These include: (1) bark buckets; (2) the angular meander design; (3) *wondjina* paintings; (4) profusely decorated pendants of pearl shell; (5) stone artifacts of phallic shape; and (6) stone spearheads manufactured by pressure flaking.

However, none of these traits is of such a character *per se* that suspicions of a non-Australian origin come to mind. If they were found localized in some southern district, there undoubtedly would be little hesitancy in regarding each of them as an example of local invention or of local elaboration from some simpler and more



widespread appearance. It is principally because they are confined to the northwestern area within about 350 miles of Timor that the possibility of foreign derivation warrants consideration. However, it is important to note that on the basis of available information we either have definite suggestions that these traits are indigenous to the northwest or no evidence which would indicate a derivation from some overseas region.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>2</sup> *Bark buckets.* These pail-like containers of paperbark seem to be restricted to the Kimberley coast. At present there is no evidence either to suggest a point of origin outside of this coastal area or to indicate their antiquity in this region. Since they are not reported from the East Indies, it seems not unlikely that they are of local origin in the Kimberley region. For a more detailed discussion see Davidson, 1937 C.

*Angular meander design.* This designation has been applied to a varying series of designs ranging from an interlocking key pattern to ordinary zigzags which merge with herring-bone designs, also present in the same region. Aside from an occasional application in paint to such objects as boabab nuts the angular meander motif is strictly associated with the incising of hard surfaces, as hardwood shields and pearl shell, which by their nature would be more difficult to engrave with rounded designs. Although it is conceivable that a perfected interlocking key pattern could have been introduced into this area and subsequently combined with old local designs to produce varying appearances it also seems apparent that the more perfected designs could have been developed from old herring-bone and zigzag patterns applied in the incising technique. Neither angular meanders nor interlocking-key designs have been found, in so far as I am aware, in nearby Malaysia. Hence, at the moment, we have no reason to suspect a foreign derivation. For details on Australian design motifs see Davidson, 1937 A.

*Wondjina paintings.* The Kimberley district is the center of a most impressive type of rock painting called by local aborigines *wondjina*. Anthropomorphic in character these paintings consist of a face and bust and occasionally of a torso, arms, and legs. The face is characterized by wide open eyes and a nose, but the mouth and chin are consistently lacking. Surrounding the sides and top of the head is a horseshoe-shaped band from which fine radiating lines emanate. The body, when shown, usually is filled with vertical solid lines or lines of dashes.

First noticed in 1838, this type of painting has since been subject to endless discussion by various writers who have attempted to demonstrate the derivation as Sumatran, as Malayan-Sumatran, as belonging to "Red Sea Merchants," as Chaldean-Phoenician, as representative of Siva (Mahadeva) of the Hindus. In some instances such theories are based upon the various interpretations of a few marks, assumed to be alphabetic characters, associated with a single painting, seen in 1838, of which we have no photograph but merely a sketch. The band and radiating lines

In addition there are no traits of more extensive appearance on the continent, such as the various initiation ceremonies, types of social organization, weapons or other utilitarian objects, the distributions of which or the known directions of diffusion of which suggest in any way that they were introduced along the north-

surrounding the head have been regarded as hairs; the lines on the body were assumed to represent clothing.

Recent ethnological investigations, however, have shown that these paintings are thoroughly integrated in aboriginal culture. Each year the paintings are retouched during important religious ceremonies associated with food increase rites and the return of the wet season. The "hairs" are identified as head-bands portrayed in a flat and circumscribing position because of the lack of knowledge of the principle of perspective. The radiating lines portray the hair. The marks and lines on the body represent felling rain or the chest. Stylistically these paintings are similar to appearances found throughout the continent and characterized by (1) lack of mouth and chin, (2) hair shown by lines radiating from the scalp, and (3) lines on the body to show body decorations. Hence we have no reason to regard the *wondjine* appearances as anything other than the local elaboration of a style of portrayal with widespread distribution on the continent.

Of quite a different character are some paintings along the Prince Regent River, Kimberley district, sketched and painted but not photographed by Bradshaw. These portrayals show considerable divergences from the usual run of Australian rock paintings but since the European character of Bradshaw's reproductions may be the result of distortions of the originals we should not give further consideration to these paintings until photographs are available. For illustrations and a more detailed discussion of the *wondjine* paintings and those by Bradshaw, see Davidson, 1936 A.

*Profusely decorated pendants of pearl shell.* Typical of the Kimberley coast are pendants of pearl shell elaborately decorated with incised designs, the furrows of which are rubbed with red or black pigment to give a vivid contrast to the natural luster of the shell. There seems to be no reason for regarding this appearance as other than indigenous. Undecorated pearl shell ornaments are found variously in northern Australia, hence the Kimberley specimens differ principally in that they are profusely decorated. The designs employed are widespread in the Kimberley area, inland as well as coastal, and are associated with various other objects. Since pearl shells are particularly abundant in the Broome region, one of the famous commercial pearl shell centers of the world, it should not be considered surprising that local aborigines evinced an interest in this beautiful material and applied local designs to it. Any theory that foreigners introduced the appreciation of the obviously striking qualities of this material cannot be given credence without tangible supporting evidence. For further discussion and illustrations see Davidson, 1937 A.

*Stone artifacts of phallic shape.* In the northwestern area in general

western coast. Of those which seem to be of non-Australian origin, the Cape York Peninsula is consistently indicated as the point of entry. Those which apparently are of Australian origin seem to be still lacking in several coastal districts in the northwestern

several stone artifacts of phallic shape have been collected. Mjöberg, p. 86 f., describes three specimens. Other examples are in the Western Australian Museum. Characterized by a completely polished surface, these nicely made objects stand forth in decided contrast to the partially polished stone axes of this region, the only major class of stone artifacts to which the polishing technique is locally applied. At first glance the superior quality of workmanship shown in the phallic stones and the fact that they seem to be restricted to the Northwest might induce one to suspect a non-Australian character. However, when the various available facts are taken into consideration it seems quite clear that these objects represent an indigenous development in the Kimberley area. First, their manufacture is reported for the Upper Levarynga district, although this fact does not prove that they are indigenous in concept. However, most examples are characterized by subincision which in its most extreme application is performed by slitting the penis from the meatus to the scrotum to lay open the urethra. This operation is a widespread initiatory rite in Australia but is lacking in the East Indies. From a technical point of view it should be noted that since partially ground stone axes in the Kimberley appear to be the results of a relatively recent diffusion from North Australia, it would seem that the phallomorphs may represent a very recent local elaboration in stone working, the antiquity of which cannot be greater than that of the introduction of the polishing technique. Thus, although satisfactory information is not available there are suggestions that these objects may have been developed even within historic times, in which case the question of foreign derivation would not arise. It is not known whether they occur archaeologically. However if it could be shown that specimens from stratigraphically lower deposits lacked subincision or preceded partially ground stone axes the question of non-Australian origin would need to be reconsidered.

*Stone spearheads manufactured by pressure flaking.* Also confined to the Kimberley area is the manufacture of stone spearheads by a pressure flaking technique, although as the result of trade the distribution of use of these spearheads is much more extensive. Since the archaeology of this region is unknown, we can say nothing about the antiquity of this class of object or the possibility that the pressure flaking technique was previously associated with some other type of artifact such as adze points. On the basis of present evidence the Kimberley type spearhead seems to be manufactured only by inland tribes who barter their product to surrounding areas. The development appears to be quite recent and unless subsequent archaeological investigation demonstrates older appearances in the coastal country, we will have no alternative to considering the industry as of local origin. For details see Davidson 1934, 1935 B.

regions and to have diffused from interior areas to those coastal localities in which they are found.\*

At the present time the only specific evidence which indicates contact between the natives of the northwestern coastal districts and non-Australian visitors consists of three examples of highly and completely polished chisels which have been collected in three widely separated localities in Western Australia (Malcolm, Warrawoona, and Yandil Station).<sup>†</sup> Beautifully executed in gabbro and greenstone, these three odd specimens, which differ considerably in size and shape, do not conform even remotely with any type of artifact now known from any other part of the continent. Equally strange is their appearance in regions where partially ground stone axes seem to be lacking or to be of very recent introduction. The nearest class of objects with which the specimens can be compared, although there are numerous differences in details, are the stone axes described by Heine-Geldern for the East Indies and southeastern Asia.

It is important to note that at the moment we know of only these three specimens from widely separated localities. We have no definite evidence to show that any of the three was made in the locality where found or indeed that the specimens are even Australian in manufacture. We have no information to suggest whether these artifacts are employed by the aborigines and integrated in local culture or are merely "curios" which came to the areas where found as the result of barter with other tribes. If these specimens represent classes of objects made and used by Australian tribes, it is very strange, indeed, that other specimens have not come to light.

For the moment, therefore, it seems desirable to regard these three specimens as apparently of non-Australian origin and to consider the East Indies as a likely place of manufacture. Such a derivation, however, by no means permits us to assume that they came to Australia in prehistoric times. With modern vessels constantly plying between the northern ports of Western Australia and the Orient it is possible that these objects were secured as curios in the East Indies and traded to the aborigines by sailors in recent years and that they eventually were passed on from tribe to tribe

\* For discussions on the diffusion of various Australian traits see the papers by the author on special subjects, as listed in the Bibliography to this paper.

<sup>†</sup> For illustrations, see Davidson, 1935 B, 1935.

until they reached the localities in which they were collected. On the other hand it would also be plausible to suspect that they may have found their way to Western Australia by similar agencies in prehistoric times if it could be shown that Malays or others actually came to the area between Northwest Cape and Broome in that period. It is to be hoped archaeological investigation will throw some light on this interesting problem.

Taking all facts and factors into consideration it must be recognized that we have as yet no specific reason to demonstrate that non-Australians have ever settled in the northwestern portions of Australia or exerted any noticeable cultural influence upon the aborigines of this region. At the same time we cannot deny that there may have been occasional visitors, especially within the past few centuries, although that is still sheer conjecture. Our data certainly are most emphatic in denying that any major aspect of culture came to the continent in this region, and at the moment we have found no reason to believe that even minor culture traits of local provenience in the northwest are to be attributed to foreign visitors. In all instances we have noted that an indigenous origin is either definitely suggested or indicated as more plausible than a foreign derivation on the basis of the facts at hand. The only tangible suggestions of non-Australian derivations in culture are the three odd stone chisels. If it could be determined that they were made in Australia and are representative of a great class of objects, the question of foreign influences in industry would be of prime interest. At the moment they cannot be ascribed to any intensive foreign influence in culture, but at most can be attributed to chance foreign contacts, historic or prehistoric as the case may be.

#### THE MALAYS IN NORTH AUSTRALIA

By way of contrast to the situation in Western Australia where, as we have seen, there is no satisfactory evidence of foreign influences, let us turn to North Australia, formerly known as the Northern Territory, where Malays are known to have visited. When Sir Matthew Flinders, the first European to explore the coasts of this region, arrived in 1802, he found Malays from Timor Laut or their camp sites in what are now the Wellesley Islands, Pellew Islands, Arnhem Land and the English Company Islands.<sup>18</sup> Moti-

<sup>18</sup> Flinders, II, p. 172 et seq.

vated by the desire to secure local products such as trepang, sandal wood, and pearl shell, which were traded westward to reach eventually the Chinese market, these sailors and entrepreneurs came to North Australia annually, remained for several months, and then returned to their homes.

The influences of these Malay traders upon the aborigines of northeastern North Australia have been well described by Warner. Coming as annual traders they did not establish any permanent settlements and apparently never brought their own women. Although such a situation would ordinarily imply that the visitors would seek temporary alliances with native women, these seem to have been very seldom the case. Not only are the tribes in this area extremely pugnacious in questions regarding their women, but it seems that the Malays themselves recognized that amicable and profitable business relations with the aborigines were impossible if the hostility of the latter was aroused. In spite of the fact that some miscegenation took place, it is interesting and important to note that out of several hundreds of Murngin natives Warner in 1929 found only two individuals who showed any definite traces of Malay ancestry. For Groote Eylandt on the other hand Tindale found evidence of Malay paternity somewhat more pronounced.

Malay influences in aboriginal culture for the most part seem to have been extremely weak. Many of their introductions were trade goods which, since they could not be produced locally, were at best of temporary character. Such goods include molasses, tobacco (although natives, at least in recent times, are acquainted with various wild native tobaccos), cloth for sarongs and belts. Of somewhat more lasting value were knives and tomahawks.

There are a few traits, however, which have become integrated in Murngin culture. These include the dugout canoe (with mast and pandanus sail), the Malay type of pipe, cutting of the beard in Van Dyke fashion and an appreciation of metals (nails for fish-hooks, etc). The pods of the Malay tamarind trees which grow wild around old Malay camps now furnish the aborigines an additional source of food.

In social culture Malay influences are even less marked but nevertheless are discernible. Many, but by no means all, males in the coastal tribes speak a pidgin Malay; many personal and place names are of Malay origin; the aborigines now perform a mast-



raising ceremony similar to part of the Malay ceremony of the same type; a mourning ceremony is of Malay derivation; and there are various additional fragmentary traits such as folk tales and the like.

This summary of Malay influences in northeastern Arnhem Land is instructive in several respects. This region is known to have been visited by Malays annually for about a century. The relations between the Malays and the aborigines seem to have been fairly amicable. Yet the cultural influences of the former on the whole are quite negligible and are confined entirely to the coastal tribes. At the same time we must recognize that there is no confusion in differentiating the Malay elements from the aboriginal. Both can be clearly ascertained.

Although the Malays undoubtedly explored along the northern coasts in search of natural resources suited to their trading interests, it appears that they found no area which compared favorably with northeastern Arnhem Land and Groote Eylandt. At least we have no data at present to show that they returned annually, or at any time in large numbers, to other parts of the northern coasts. How far east and west of Arnhem Land they explored or occasionally visited cannot be stated, but it appears that the farther from Arnhem Land, either east or west, the less are the indications of their former presence. For instance, it is known that they visited Melville and Bathurst Islands but their influences there were few. Their relations with the natives of these islands apparently were never friendly, which fact may partly account for the lack of prominent influences in this area; nevertheless, it is possible if not probable that these islands were not far from the western geographical limits of the Australian coast as known to the Malays who came to Arnhem Land. Although the inhabitants of Melville and Bathurst Islands were acquainted with tomahawks when the Europeans arrived,<sup>11</sup> it is important to note that even in recent years the dugout canoe has not succeeded in replacing the aboriginal bark canoe at Melville Island, whereas on Bathurst Island dugouts were extremely uncommon as late as 1911.<sup>12</sup> Since dugouts in 1837 were not known west of Clarence Strait, which separates these islands from the mainland, but since that time have diffused 600 miles westward as the result of aboriginal and not Malay activities, it may be that the use of dugouts on Melville Island is as much if

<sup>11</sup> King, I, pp. 111, 121.

<sup>12</sup> Basedow, pp. 303-305.

not more the result of recent influences from the aborigines of the mainland than the result of Malay contacts. In other words it seems clear that certain elements of Malay culture which have become integrated in aboriginal culture in Arnhem Land seem to have spread to many localities which Malays are not known to have visited, as well as to various places where Malay visits were infrequent or of minor significance.

It cannot be doubted that some Malays may have journeyed westward perhaps as far as Cambridge Gulf, but we have no evidence to show that they went farther. Certainly it would seem that they did not reach the western Kimberley coast, for in view of their great interest in pearl shell we would expect to find them in even greater numbers there than in Arnhem Land if they had ever chanced to reach the former locality.

That Arnhem Land was the general center of Malay activities in North Australia, rather than just one of several regions of temporary occupation, seems also indicated by the natural factors which governed their voyages. The northwest monsoon in the Timor Laut region blows directly to Arnhem Land and according to statements given to Flinders it was this wind which in driving one of their prows across the Arafuru Sea had led to the discovery of North Australia. Apparently they followed the same route each year and voyaged east and west along the coast from an Arnhem Land base.

The beginning of the Malay excursions to North Australia, according to one of the chiefs, Pobassoo by name, met by Flinders, was about 1780. This informant, who commanded six prows, had made six or seven voyages to Australia and claimed to have been one of the first to come. How truthful his statement may be we have no satisfactory means of determining. That Malays may have been acquainted with northern Australia in earlier times would not be surprising since they were able navigators in the East Indies. At the same time it must be recognized that the islands with which they were acquainted in home waters are quite close together, that they seldom were required to cover distances out of sight of land equal to that from Timor Laut to Arnhem Land, and that such distances represented short cuts between islands well known to them, which they probably had formerly visited by more circuitous but safer coastwise voyaging. We have no evidence to indicate that





Fig. 1. Jade stone found in Darwin, North Australia, in 1870 during excavations for a road (from Worsnip).  
Height about 1½ in.

the Malays sailed very far eastward along the southern coast of New Guinea which was within easy reach from Timor Laut; hence it seems not incredible that the Malays may not have known of any lands southeast of Timor Laut until relatively recent times. Perhaps Pobasso was in error in attributing the Malay discovery of Arnhem Land to about 1780. On the other hand we have no reason to believe that the development of Malay trade and influences in North Australia requires the allowance of a greater time period. Certainly at the moment we have no evidence which would lead us to assume that the Malays had any interest in, or that they even knew of, Australia many generations before Flinders' time. Nor have we any satisfactory proof as yet to demonstrate that any other non-Australian people visited North Australia in pre-European times. If such visits took place, the evidence for them either has not been presented or is insufficient for this conclusion.

Of particular interest in this respect is a small Chinese jade statue found in Darwin, North Australia, in 1879, during excavation for a road (Fig. 1). Reported as coming from a depth of about four feet in the roots of a large banyan tree<sup>12</sup> it would seem at first glance that it could not have been lost by Chinese laborers who had been brought to the region in 1874. On the other hand since the excavators apparently had no training or experience in archaeology they probably would have been unable to recognize a cache if for some unknown reason the object had been secreted in the soil beneath the tree at some time between 1874 and 1879. The likelihood that the object may have been cached seems enhanced by the fact that no other artifacts were found with it, nor were any evidences of occupational debris reported.

The statue itself throws no light on the question of its presence in North Australia or of its antiquity there. In so far as it is possible to draw conclusions solely from examining a photograph, the discernible features suggest that it belongs to either the late T'ang or early Sung dynasty,<sup>13</sup> that is at the earliest late in the 9th century or at the latest early in the 11th century of the Christian era.

<sup>12</sup> Worsnop, p. 13.

<sup>13</sup> An opinion kindly given by Mr. H. H. F. Jayne. Examination of the specimen probably would permit a more accurate determination of the period of manufacture.

How it reached Australia is the problem. There seem to be only three reasonable hypotheses; that it was brought either by (1) sailors of unknown but non-Malay nationality, (2) Malays who visited North Australia during the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries (or earlier), or (3) the Chinese laborers who arrived in Darwin in 1874.

At the present time there is no evidence to indicate that Chinese or other non-Malay sailors ever reached North Australia in pre-historic times. Indeed it has not been established that the Chinese had any direct knowledge of Timor until recent centuries, although they probably knew of it by name in the 13th century and possibly in the 12th century. Before this period, it appears that Chinese junks seldom sailed east of Java, Borneo, and the Philippine Islands, and for later times it seems not unlikely that visits to such distant islands as Timor were never more than casual.<sup>12</sup> For

<sup>12</sup> I am indebted to Dr. H. Y. Feng for information from old Chinese sources on this point. It is interesting to note that the Chinese apparently knew of Java early in the middle of the 3rd century, A.D., under the name of *Ch'u-pu* although the earliest authentic account of the island seems to be that of Pahlavi (5th century) who used the Sanskrit name of *Yab-p'o-t'i* (*Yacodeipa*). *Shu-pu* also was employed for Java in 433 and 435 A.D. when Javanese visited the Chinese court. There is no information to suggest that the Chinese were directly acquainted with the islands east of Java at this time. In the *Lün-wai-tai-fu* (answers to queries about Canton and the countries beyond, by Chou Chü-fu, 11th century) is mention of a kingdom of women east of Java where the ocean flows downward and, still further to the East, of the island of *Wei-lü*, the end of the habitable world. The remarks about these localities are fanciful and suggest that the Chinese secured their information by hearsay. The account relates of savage cannibal robbers known as *Mo-lo-su* southeast of Java. The earliest mention of Borneo, *Po-ni* (probably North Borneo), seems to be in the 9th century book of *Man-shu*, Book of Barbarians, by Fang-cho, although direct or indirect Chinese influences undoubtedly had reached this island long before this time.

A suggestion that the Chinese may have known of Timor during the 12th century is found in *Ch'u-fan-ch'ü* (Accounts of various foreign peoples, by Chao Ju-kua) in the mention of *Ti-mön*. The identification is not quite certain, for *Ti-mön* is said to be near *P'o-ni* (Borneo). However, Timor was definitely known during the Ming period (1368-1628) by the names of *Chai-mün* and *Ki-N-ti-mün* and was considered as a dependency of Java. There seem to be no satisfactory data to indicate that Chinese junks visited Timor during the 12th and 13th centuries and no direct evidence to suggest that any direct contacts in the immediately succeeding centuries were ever

instance, even in Flinders' time (1802-1803), as already noted, the Chinese seem seldom to have sailed east of Macassar where the Malay traders met them. However, even though they occasionally may have visited Timor there is no reason at present for suspecting that they ventured further east. Thus it would seem unlikely that they could have brought the statue to North Australia in pre-European times.

That the Malays may have been responsible for the appearance of the statue in North Australia can be admitted as a possibility although there is no satisfactory supporting evidence and certain considerations oppose this hypothesis. In the first place they apparently did not frequent the Darwin region, although they probably visited there at various times. In Arnhem Land where the Malay camps were concentrated no Chinese objects of any description have been found. Certainly the odds are very great against the probability that the one object of Chinese derivation which has come to light would have been lost or buried only at a place infrequently visited. However, if we could assume that the Malays are responsible for the appearance of the statue in North Australia, the available evidence would suggest that they brought it in a relatively recent period. As already pointed out there seem to have been few direct contacts between Timor and China until relatively recent centuries. If we should think that the statue has been traded from group to group in the East Indies, it would seem necessary to allow at least a few centuries for it to reach Timor or other nearby islands. Thus it probably could not have reached Timor by such indirect agencies at the very earliest before the 14th or 15th centuries. This likelihood, coupled with the apparently relatively recent voyages of Malays to North Australia, would seem to indicate that the date of arrival in North Australia was probably quite late.

The possibility that the modern Chinese in Darwin are responsible for the statue must not be underestimated. Whether nineteenth century migrating Chinese laborers would be likely to possess a statue seven or more centuries old cannot be profitably discussed. Surely the possession of an old Chinese statue by modern Chinese

---

more than casual. F. Hirth and W. S. Rockhill, who translated *Chu-fan-shan* (12th century), St. Petersburg, 1911, p. 157, believe *Si-lung* refers to Serang and Ceram but this opinion has not yet been substantiated by other evidence.

seems more likely than the possession of such an object by natives of Timor or some other distant region. The very fact that the statue came to light in a settlement already containing several hundred Chinese undoubtedly may impress many individuals as hardly a coincidence. However, if it could be shown that Chinese objects of a kindred type or of similar antiquity are not infrequently found in the eastern islands of the East Indies, the possibility that the Malays brought the statue to the Darwin area would be considerably increased. But even so, such a possibility would not necessarily indicate that it has reposed in Australian soil since much before the arrival of European explorers in this region.

### CONCLUSIONS

On the basis of evidence available at the present time the question of foreign influences on the northwestern coast of Australia can be summarized as follows:

1. The theory that the Australians originally came to Australia via the northwestern coast not only cannot be supported by any direct or indirect evidence but all considerations vigorously oppose such a possibility.

2. There is no satisfactory evidence to indicate that any major trait in Australian culture was introduced via the northwestern coast.

3. There is no evidence to demonstrate that any minor culture trait localized in the northwest is of non-Australian derivation, nor have any reasons been presented to warrant the supposition that the character of any local trait necessarily suggests a foreign origin, although it is to be admitted that conclusive proof of the indigenous origin of certain traits has not been clearly established.

4. There are no data to indicate that Malays or any other peoples to the west regularly visited any part of Australia much before the end of the 18th century. If Australia was visited by them in earlier times we are led to believe that such visits apparently were quite casual and infrequent. At least we have no evidence to indicate any perceptible foreign influence on Australian race or culture prior to the latter half of the 18th century.

5. The only satisfactory evidence of foreign visitors to the north-west coast are three stone chisels which presumably come from the

East Indies but we have no facts at hand which establish a likely date of introduction and at the moment it seems no more likely that they came in prehistoric times than within the last century.

6. The only satisfactory explanations for the presence of the small Chinese jade statue found archaeologically in Darwin in 1879 are that it was brought by Chinese migrants in 1874 and buried by them, or that it came in the custody of Malays who had secured it by trade and who buried it or lost it on some visit in relatively recent times.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- |      |  |  |  |
|------|--|--|--|
| A    | Anthropos                                      |  |  |
| AA   | American Anthropologist                        |  |  |
| APS  | American Philosophical Society                 |  |  |
| JPS  | Journal of the Polynesian Society              |  |  |
| JRAI | Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute |  |  |
| O    | Oceania  |  |  |
| PMH  | Peabody Museum of Harvard University           |  |  |
| RNSW | Royal Society of New South Wales               |  |  |
- J—Journal    M—Memoir    P—Proceedings    Pa—Papers
- Basedow, H. 1916—"Notes on the Natives of Bathurst Island," JRAI 43.  
 Curr, E. M. 1896—*The Australian Race*, 4 vols., Melbourne.  
 Davidson, D. S.  
 1928 —"The Chronological Aspects of Certain Australian Social Institutions, Philadelphia.  
 1933 —"Australian Netting and Basketry Techniques," JPS 42: 4.  
 1934 —"Australian Spear Traits and Their Derivations," JPS 43: 2, 3.  
 1935A—"The Chronology of Australian Watercraft," JPS 4.  
 1935B—"Archaeological Problems in Northern Australia," JRAI 65.  
 1936A—"Aboriginal Australian and Tasmanian Rock Carvings and Paintings," APS-M 5.  
 1936B—"Australian Throwing-Sticks, Throwing-Clubs and Boomerangs," AA 35: 1.  
 1936C—"The Spearthrower in Australia," APS-P 76: 4.  
 1936D—"The Pacific and Circum-Pacific Appearances of the Dart Game," JPS 45: 3, 4; 46: 1.  
 1937A—"A Preliminary Consideration of Aboriginal Australian Decorative Art," APS-M 9.  
 1937B—"The Antiquity of Man in the Pacific and the Question of Trans-Pacific Migrations," in *Early Man*. See MacCurdy, G. G.  
 1937C—"Transport and Receptacles in Aboriginal Australia," JPS 46: 4.  
 1938 —"Stone Axes of Western Australia," AA 40: 1.  
 Eyre, E. J. 1845—*Journals of Exploration and Discovery into Central Australia*, 2 vols., London.

- Flinders, M. 1814—*A Voyage to Terra Australis*, 2 vols., London.
- Haddon, A. C. 1935—*Reports of the Cambridge Anthropological Expedition to Torres Straits*, vol. 1.
- Heine-Geldern, R. von. 1932—"Urheimat und früheste Wanderungen der Australasier," A 27.
- Howells, W. W. 1937—"Anthropometry of the Natives of Arnhem Land and the Australian Race Problem," PMH.Ps 16: 1.
- Howitt, A. W.  
 1898—*On the Aborigines of Tasmania and Australia*, Australian Association for the Advancement of Science, Sydney.  
 1904—*The Native Tribes of South-East Australia*, London.
- King, P. P. 1827—*Narrative of a Survey of the Intertropical and Western Coasts of Australia*, 2 vols., London.
- MacCurdy, G. G., ed. 1937—*Early Man: International Symposium on Early Man*, Academy of Natural Sciences, Philadelphia.
- Mathew, J.  
 1889—"The Australian Aborigines," RSNW-J 23.  
 1893—"The Cave Paintings of Australia, their Authorship and Significance," JRAI 23.  
 1910—*Two Representative Tribes of Queensland*, London.
- Mjöberg, E. 1923—"Vom Phalluskult in Nordaustralien," *Archiv für Anthropologie*, vol. 19.
- Official Year Book of the Commonwealth of Australia*, 1925—No. 18, Melbourne.
- Porteus, S. D.  
 1931—*The Psychology of a Primitive People*, New York.  
 1937—*Primitive Intelligence and Environment*, New York.
- Prichard, R. M. 1847—*Researches into the Physical History of Mankind*, 5 vols., London.
- Radcliffe-Brown, A. R. 1936—"Former Numbers and Distribution of the Australian Aborigines," *Official Year Book of the Commonwealth of Australia*, No. 23, Melbourne.
- Smyth, R. B. 1878—*The Aborigines of Victoria*, 2 vols., Melbourne.
- Taylor, G. 1927—*Environment and Race*, Oxford.
- Tindale, N. B. 1925—"Natives of Groote Eylandt and of the West Coast of the Gulf of Carpentaria," *South Australian Museum-Records* 3: 1.
- Warner, W. L.  
 1932—"Malay Influence on the Aboriginal Cultures of North-Eastern Arnhem Land," O 2: 4.  
 1937—*A Black Civilization*, New York.
- Worsnop, P. 1897—*The Aborigines of Australia*, Adelaide.

## "LUKE" AND PAUL

MORTON S. ENSLIN

CHOXER THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY

THAT THE AUTHOR of Luke—Acts had no knowledge of the Pauline epistles is assumed today as axiomatic by most New Testament critics. Modern introductions either ignore the matter or dismiss it with a sentence. To question the truth of the axiom is to risk the charge of belonging to the lunatic fringe of criticism. The Tübingen school took the dependence of Acts upon the Pauline letters for granted, in Sabatier's happy phrase, as "*une sorte de thèse qui n'a pas besoin de démonstration.*" Zeller assumed it without argument. Overbrook cited Acts 9: 19-30; 15: 1-33; 18: 24-28 as sufficient evidence. Jacobsen<sup>1</sup> sought at some length to prove that the first twelve chapters of Acts were built up from I Corinthians and Galatians; H. Schulze<sup>2</sup> argued that Paul's speech at Miletus was verbally dependent upon Paul's letters, particularly I Thessalonians. W. Soltan<sup>3</sup> examined all the speeches of Acts and concluded that the speech at Ephesus (Miletus) depended upon I Thes. 2-4; that at Athens upon Rom. 1: 11, 14; and that the so-called Apostolic Decrees were based on or reflected I Cor. 6 and 8-10. Weissäcker had earlier devoted several pages to the contention "that the narrative (in Acts 15) is in the main taken from the letter to the Galatians is supported by the circumstance, that the picture given by it is distinct in all those features which it has in common with the letter, but that wherever it goes beyond its authority, it is either confined to generalities, or seeks to make the common element clear in the style of an expositor."<sup>4</sup>

In the reaction to the Tübingen reconstruction of early Christianity the pendulum swung to an equal extreme. Among other discredited views was this, that the author of Acts had used the epistles. Apparently it was not felt that it was necessary to argue the point. To be sure, Sabatier wrote a twenty-five page article,<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Die Quellen der Apostelgeschichte* 1885.

<sup>2</sup> *Theol. Studien und Kritiken* 73 (1900), pp. 110-125.

<sup>3</sup> *Zeitschr. für neut. Wiss.* (1903), pp. 128-154.

<sup>4</sup> *The Apostolic Age* (Engl. Transl.), vol. I, pp. 200 ff.

<sup>5</sup> *Bibliothèque de l'école des hautes études*, vol. I, 1889, pp. 205-229.



"L'auteur du livre des Actes des Apôtres a-t-il connu et utilisé dans son récit les épîtres de Saint Paul?" in which he reached a negative conclusion. Although Zahn considered it "self-evident, but at first thought strange, . . . that Luke did not use as sources the letters of Paul,"\* he did consider a few alleged cases of similarity, but registered a vigorous disclaimer that Luke had made any use whatsoever of any of the epistles. Thus without any real examination of the evidence the denial of use has become as firmly established an axiom as the contrary was for the Tübingen scholars.

The reason for this is not so much that "Luke" omits much material which modern writers assume he would have used had he known it, but that he not infrequently contradicts what is said or implied in the letters. For the Tübingen scholars this constituted no problem. Acts was more or less a romance, that is, in more scholarly words, "history with a purpose." In the swing against Tübingen this was intolerable. It seemed far better, even to those who thought that "Luke" was Luke, to let him be ignorant of what Paul had said and done than to admit that he had made any deliberate alterations. But the results of synoptic criticism have made all too clear that "Luke" was perfectly ready to modify and transform his sources. This has often been obscured. "Luke," it is said, was an editor. His variations from Mark were due to his preference at those points for parallel narratives. Thus below his Passion narrative was a non-Markan account. A Percean source which carefully kept Jesus out of Peres, a Proto-Luke, an "L"—all of these were painstakingly reconstructed. It is always risky to venture a prophecy. None the less, I am inclined to hazard the guess that there will be less and less emphasis in this direction in the future. Rather, I believe, Luke will be seen—and the same is true of both Matthew and Mark—as an author, who, while utilizing sources, stood in no awe of them but felt perfectly free to modify and change them as seemed to him wise. The setting of the resurrection experience in Jerusalem instead of in Galilee will be recognized as due to the demands of the narrative he was writing, not to a special source or tradition for which he forsook Mark. The combination of the story of the anointing of Jesus with the story of Jesus at the house of Simon the Pharisee may safely be ascribed

---

\* *Introduction to the New Testament* (Engl. Transl.), vol. III, p. 118.

to Luke's own freedom in rewriting Mark without recourse to a hypothetical other source.

If, as seems to me demonstrable, Luke has not scrupled to rewrite Mark and Matthew—I must confess to feeling that Q is simply awaiting decent burial—I fail to see any compelling reason to doubt his readiness to alter and transform material from the Pauline letters if it suited his purpose to do it, especially if he felt that by so doing he would free Paul from some unmerited disfavor. Nor should it be neglected that some of the points of clash between the accounts in Acts and the statements of Paul are not of a kind to strike the casual reader. They are real, but they are apparent only after close and critical study. There would seem little reason to assume such an attitude of mind for Luke despite the fact that many have conjured him in the role of a modern candidate for the degree of doctor of philosophy because of his famous preface.

Once freed of the presupposition that since "Luke" could not have altered anything that Paul wrote, he therefore could not have known the letters at all, one must be struck by one patent difficulty. Obviously he was a Pauline enthusiast. Not only did he devote the latter half of Acts to Paul's adventures, but he clearly portrays him as the one who beyond all others was responsible for the establishment of Christianity as a religion for gentiles. Yet we are asked to believe that such a man was either totally unaware that this hero of his had ever written letters—where could he have lived?—or that it never occurred to him that it would be of any value to make any use of them. Yet he assures us that his writing was not unpremeditated and that he had used such information as was available. Zahn feels the force of this and seeks to meet it. His failure to use the letters proves his close acquaintance with Paul. He had been with Paul so long that he found it unnecessary to use them. The trouble with this argument is that the evidence is against it. Nothing in the so-called "external tradition" appears to be either external or tradition, but simply a series of deductions from the book itself. And the evidence of this long and intimate personal acquaintance with Paul which Zahn postulates I fail utterly to detect. Sabatier can explain Luke's failure to use the letters—he does recognize that Luke could have learned from them had he used them!—as due to the fact that he lived so near to the Apostolic Age that Paul was still simply the missionary and traveller. But

is that the impression which one gets from Acts? Furthermore, the recent attempts to give an early date for Luke-Acts and thus to place its composition shortly after Paul's death, if not actually during his lifetime, appear to me to have failed utterly, and that any date before the end of the century is most hazardous. And by that time Paul was known—for better or for worse—and his letters were coming to be read in the church services, not only in those communities to which he had written them, but more generally. How could "Luke" be ignorant of them? Why did he ignore them? He may not have had copies of them, may not have had them open on his desk as he wrote, but that he had heard them, some at least, read in church services, and knew at least imperfectly their content appears to me inescapable.

It would appear to me high time that a new and completely fresh examination of this whole question be made. It may well be that the final result will but confirm the present popular notion, although personally I seriously doubt it. In this paper I would merely indicate a few of the points that would appear to merit consideration in such a study.

1. Is it simply coincidence that the missionary journeys of Paul as sketched in Acts carry him to precisely those communities to which we have Pauline letters? To be sure, we have no letters to Athens; yet it would have been unthinkable to the author of Acts that Paul could have neglected so important a city, especially when it lay on route from Berea to Corinth. Furthermore, the clear reference to his sojourn in that city—"Wherefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left behind at Athens alone" (I Thes. 3: 1)—may well have provided the setting for the story of what Paul accomplished in that city. Occasional attempts have been made to account for Paul's disparagement of human wisdom in the early chapters of I Corinthians as the reflection of his unsuccessful attempt in Athens; he had failed in his philosophy examination. Henceforth he would never try that again. But Paul did not write I Corinthians for several years after that experience. Was it still rankling in his heart? On the other hand, if "Luke" was familiar with I Corinthians, this obvious emphasis upon the superiority of the "foolishness of God" to the "wisdom of men" might well have provided him with the basis for his story of Paul's visit and speech in the city of the philosophers.

If it is objected that "Luke" gives an account of Paul's visit to Cyprus, but with no letter to Cyprus to provide the hint, a satisfactory answer may yet be found. Eduard Schwartz in his penetrating essay, "*Zur Chronologie des Paulus*,"<sup>†</sup> has stressed a point that seems to me unanswerable. If the visits to Jerusalem in Acts 11: 27-30 (cf. 12: 25) and 15: 1-35 are but one, the two journeys which follow these visits and in which Paul and Barnabas start (or plan to start) together are also one. That Paul and Barnabas quarreled in Antioch is certain;<sup>‡</sup> that this was but temporary has generally been assumed. But, of course, it is sheer assumption. It appears to me by no means impossible that this quarrel was the real source for the Acts story, and that on the basis of this incident and of his knowledge that Barnabas and Mark had travelled in Cyprus<sup>§</sup> while Paul and Silas had travelled through Asia Minor into Europe he revamped the story into two journeys, on the first of which Paul and Barnabas journey together in Cyprus and later in Asia Minor, at the outset of the second quarrel over John Mark and part. Furthermore, this reconstruction by "Luke" would have a definite value for his account. He would thus have chronicled a missionary journey by Paul before the latter in Jerusalem tells "what signs and wonders God had wrought among the gentiles"<sup>||</sup> through [him]," in keeping with Gal. 2: 2—"and I laid before them the gospel which I preach among the gentiles."

In his rapid review of the events following his conversion Paul remarks that after his brief visit in Jerusalem he went "into the regions of Syria and Cilicia."<sup>¶</sup> That these years were spent in zealous preaching for the new cause is clearly implied by the following verses. Unfortunately, the details of the story are not known. This fact is of the utmost importance, for the accounts in Acts also passes by this time in the regions of Syria and Cilicia in silence: "And when the brethren [sc. in Jerusalem] knew it, they brought him down to Caesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus (9: 30), . . . "And Barnabas went forth to Tarsus to seek for Saul, and when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch" (11: 25, 26). Is it not curious that the author of Acts passes by in silence this

<sup>†</sup> *Nachrichten von der königl. Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften zu Göttingen* (Phil.-historische Klasse), 1907, pp. 269-287.

<sup>‡</sup> Gal. 2: 13.

<sup>||</sup> Acts 15: 12; cf. 15: 4.

<sup>§</sup> Cf. Acts 4: 30.

<sup>¶</sup> Gal. 1: 21.

one period of Paul's ministry—and a long period too—for which he could get no information from the letters and summarizes it with a word<sup>12</sup> which sounds surprisingly like a paraphrase of the similar word in Galatians?<sup>13</sup> Furthermore, it is to be observed that Paul refers in this passage to having been "unknown by face unto the churches of Judaea which were in Christ." Did this fondness of Paul's for the phrase "in Christ" lead the author of Acts to stress the fact that during his sojourn in Jerusalem Paul had disputed with the "Hellenists," that is, with gentiles?<sup>14</sup>

2. There is no more perplexing verse in the whole gospel tradition than Luke 24: 34—"The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon." Why is this signal event referred to so incidentally? Why is no story told of how this appearance took place? The perplexity of early Christians is still revealed by the uncertainty of the text. Some Mss. tell the story as verse 12. This, however, is clearly an interpolation from John 20: 3 ff. and not a part of the Lukan text. Another attempt was to identify this appearance with that to the two travelling to Emmaus by making the word, "saying," their salutation to those in Jerusalem. This solution too is highly improbable. Why does Luke tantalize us in this fashion? That he deliberately refrains from telling the story known to him appears most unlikely. On the other hand, that a tradition should have come down in so bare a form is also improbable. Does not the famous catalogue of resurrection appearances in I Cor. 15 provide a reasonable explanation? The first appearance according to Paul was to Cephas, that is, to Peter. Luke suggested, "as a counsel of despair," that the words "and hath appeared to Simon" might be regarded as later additions to the text of Luke under the influence of I Cor. 15: 5.<sup>15</sup> The difficulty is twofold: There is no textual warrant (save the variants λέγοντες-λέγουρας) for excising the verse. If this were an interpolation would not "Peter" or "Cephas" have been more natural than

<sup>12</sup> Acts 9: 30 f.

<sup>13</sup> Gal. 1: 22-24.

<sup>14</sup> Acts 9: 29. For this use of the perplexing term "Hellenist" see Cudbury's note in *The Beginnings of Christianity*, V, pp. 59-74. I am indebted to my student, Mr. J. H. Allen, for this suggestion, which appears to me not improbable.

<sup>15</sup> *The Historical Evidence for the Resurrection of Jesus Christ*, p. 102.

"Simon?" I am inclined to see I Cor. 15: 5 not as the basis for a later interpolation but as the source of Luke's own phrase. The reason he has no story to tell of the appearance is that Paul gave him none. On the other hand, this mention of an appearance to Peter was essential to his purpose (cf. Luke 22: 31, 32 and the stories of the leadership of Peter in the early chapters of Acts).

3. In a study of the Lukan story of the Ascension<sup>16</sup> I suggested the possibility that familiarity with "a tradition, perhaps somewhat akin to that of Paul's in I Cor., that Jesus had appeared for many days," led him not only to make Paul say at Pisidian Antioch, "God raised him from the dead: and he was seen for many days of them that came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem" (Acts 13: 30 f.), but to revise his earlier notion that the final parting had been on the resurrection day and to substitute the story in Acts 1. I should be inclined now to feel that Paul's statement in I Cor. 15, and not "a tradition somewhat akin to it," caused "Luke" to change his opinion. Paul's repeated "then . . . then . . . then" would easily suggest "over a period of many days" and, more explicitly, the round number forty. Furthermore, Paul's word, "Whether then it be I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed" (I Cor. 15: 11), would surely suggest "who are [now?] his witnesses unto the people" (Acts 13: 31). Nor is it difficult to see why Luke made the change. He had omitted the Galilean episode at the end of the gospel through the desire to avoid back-tracking: his chronicle is of a steady advance in ever widening circles, first in Galilee, then in Jerusalem, then into gentile territory, and eventually to Rome. When they left Galilee, Jerusalem became the next centre; there was no turning back. Later, as he is assembling fresh materials for the subsequent chapters, his attention is caught by the significance of Paul's list. Failing to realize that these Pauline appearances had been of the glorified Lord from heaven, he understands them as in a resuscitated body. This gives him a fresh justification for his view that the disciples had remained in Jerusalem and a reason for the delay in the reception of the Spirit. It could not have come earlier, for, since Jesus had not ascended, the Spirit was still his.

4. Several cases of similarity of phrase deserve a word. (a) It

<sup>16</sup> *Journal of Biblical Literature* 47 (1928), pp. 60-73.



has often been pointed out that in Acts 9: 21 Luke makes Paul use *παρθέν* of his attempted extermination of Christians, while Paul twice uses the same word in this not usual sense in Galatians (1: 13, 23). That examples of this usage can be found—Zahn cites Philo, *In Flaccum* 8—does not alter the fact that these are the only occurrences of the word in the New Testament: twice used by Paul in one passage, once in a passage put in his mouth by "Luke." (b) More impressive is the parallel between Acts 7: 53 (*οἷτως λαβετε τὸν νόμον ἐκ διαταγῆς ἀγγέλων*) and Gal. 3: 19 f. (*τί οὖν ὁ νόμος; τῶν παραβάσεων χάριν προσετίθη, ἄχρι δὲ ἔλθῃ τὸ σπέρμα ᾧ ἐπηγγέλται, διαταγῆς δι' ἀγγέλων ἐν χειρὶ μεσίτου*). Aside from the verbal similarity is the notion that the law came through the instrumentality of angels. In the heat of writing Galatians Paul makes this rash statement. It is open to serious doubt that it really expressed his sober judgment. The improbability that such a notion would have become a part of the tradition about Paul plus the identity of phrase surely suggests dependence here. Nor is it to be overlooked that while Paul uses the phrase to disparage the law, Luke uses it as an additional reason for its dignity. (c) Perhaps the phrase *ζηλοσὺς ἐκάρχως* (Acts 22: 3; Gal. 1: 14) and the similarity between *ὁ καὶ ἐποίησαν* (Acts 11: 30) and *ὁ καὶ ἰσπεύδονα αὐτὸ τοῦτο ποιῶμαι* (Gal. 2: 10) should be noted since they refer respectively to precisely the same incidents.

5. That the escape from Damascus "through" the wall described in Acts 9: 23-25 is the same as that referred to in II Cor. 11: 32 f. few will doubt. How much stress should be laid on the repeated phrase *ἐκ τοῦ τοίχου* and the fact that *χαλάζου ἐν* is employed in both passages is hard to say. On the other hand, it would not be surprising to see Luke substitute the more common *σφυρί* for the infrequent *σαργάνη*. To be sure, in Paul's account it was to escape "the ethnarch under Aretas the king"—outside the walls—that he fled, while "Luke" represents it as due to the hostile Jews within the city. That "Luke's" account is secondary is palpable. It would be a most extraordinary thing if, having become the object of Jewish wrath in Damascus, Paul had fled of all places to Jerusalem. On the other hand, my friend Mr. Allen has pointed out to me that such a modification of a narrative by "Luke" is quite in keeping with his usual desire to free Paul (and other Christians) from the suspicions of having incurred

official displeasure. It was always the Jews who had hampered and hounded Paul. I think the point is well made.

6. Regarding the clash between Acts 15 and Gal. 2 little need be said. That straw has been adequately threshed. It may perhaps be noted the several differences between Acts 15: 1 ff. and Gal. 2: 11-14 are more easily explained as due to a deliberate alteration of the latter by the former than to the use of "tradition." Thus "certain from James" becomes "certain men from Judea," incidentally freeing James from disingenuousness in his later statement (15: 24); Peter is removed from the limelight. Is this not a deliberate apologetic touch to avoid a clash between the two great figures (cf. II Pet. 3: 15)? Again Paul and Barnabas "had no small dissension," but not with one another. Rather they stood shoulder to shoulder against the newcomers. Their quarrel was to be on a difficult point, and later. And finally scrupulous care is taken to omit mention of Titus, although he is surely to be seen among "the certain other of them" that accompanied Paul and Barnabas. This deliberate omission of Titus suggests that "Luke" understood Paul to mean that Titus, although a gentile, had been circumcised, and accordingly recast the statement, later inserting the story of the circumcision of Timothy, who at least had one Jewish parent.

7. In an earlier article I have suggested my reasons for feeling that the story of Paul, the former student of Gamliel, having a part in the stoning of Stephen is pure fiction.<sup>17</sup> Surely all the details of this legend could be easily evolved from his references to his earlier persecutions of Christians, his strictness in keeping the law, and that in his interpretation of it he had followed the teaching of the Pharisees.<sup>18</sup>

8. I cannot free myself from the suspicion that in the amazingly brief account in Acts (18: 1-17) of Paul's eighteen months in Corinth are obscurities in part dependent upon I Cor. 1. Both Crispus and Sosthenes are given the title *ἀρχιμαγιστρός*. The conversion of the former is explicitly mentioned; perhaps that of the latter is implied. Otherwise who are the "they all" who beat him before Gallio's judgment-seat? Is it fanciful to see in this a reference to the wrath of his fellow Jews because he too had gone

<sup>17</sup> *Journal of Religion* VII 4 (July, 1927), pp. 366-375.

<sup>18</sup> Phil. 3: 4 ff.; Gal. 1: 13 f.; I Cor. 15: 9.



the way of Crispus? Now in I Cor. Crispus is apparently one of the prominent Christians. Furthermore, a Sosthenes joins Paul in sending the letter. To be sure, he may be an Ephesian, but it seems far more likely that he is a Corinthian temporarily with Paul. How much "tradition" is known to "Luke" about these men? How much has he "deduced" from the letter?

9. One more point may be mentioned. If Luke 22: 19 b, 20 is part of the original text, there can be no question but what "Luke" has made direct and exact use of I Cor. 11: 23-25. Probably, however, the verses are to be omitted as a non-Western interpolation. Hence the question of "Luke's" dependence is not raised. On the other hand, his text is left with the order of cup and bread reversed. Is that simply an aberration of his, perhaps not unlike his reversal of the order of the Temptations? Is it a coincidence that in I Cor. 10: 16, 21 Paul makes mention of the cup before the bread, or is it legitimate to query if Luke's order is not in conscious dependence upon Paul?<sup>18</sup>

Many other passages would have to be considered in a complete study. For example, did the indignant query, "Or I only and Barnabas, have we not a right . . ." (I Cor. 9: 6), following the reference to the "rest of the apostles," suggest to "Luke" that Paul and Barnabas, in addition to the twelve, had that title (Acts 14: 4, 14)? Does the insistence of Acts 1: 21 that only those who have seen the Lord are eligible to be apostles depend upon the (probably mistaken) interpretation of I Cor. 9: 1 that an apostle must have been an eyewitness? Does Acts 20: 3 depend upon Rom. 15: 31?

The argument from silence is often raised. Why, asks Sabatier, does Luke omit the story of Onesimus if he knew it? Zahn is certain that had Luke known Paul's word, "If after the man of men I fought with beasts at Ephesus," he must have chronicled it. This type of reasoning at best is very risky. It is far too like the argument which has so long been used to prove that Luke had never read Matthew. After all, authors can omit what they do not want. It would be rash to assert that Luke did not use Mark because he fails to tell the story of the young man who ran off

<sup>18</sup> Yet caution is necessary here. In *Didache* 9: 1-5 the same order is given. Does this evidence the existence of a tradition which "Luke" knew, independent of Paul?

without the sheet. As a matter of fact, it is by no means inconceivable that "Luke" did make use of the reference to Paul's fighting with beasts. Very possibly he understood it as a figurative reference to his clash with the infuriated Ephesian mob; very possibly he was right.

Thus there appears to me sufficient evidence to warrant reopening the question of the possible relationship of Luke—Acts and the Pauline letters. Many will say some of these cases are zero factors. They may be zeros, but they are not factors, since they are added not multiplied. Thus those that are themselves zeros do not affect the total. If this sketchy paper leads to further studies, it will have served its purpose.



THE RELATIONS BETWEEN THE HEBREW TEXT  
OF EZEKIEL AND THAT OF THE  
JOHN H. SCHEIDE PAPYRI<sup>1</sup>

HENRY SNYDER GEHMAN  
PRINCETON THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY

THERE HAS BEEN deposited in the Princeton University Library a collection of Biblical papyri by their owner, Mr. John H. Scheide of Titusville, Pa. The collection consists of twenty-one leaves from an ancient codex. Nineteen of the leaves are almost perfectly preserved, while two are incomplete. They contain in uncials the Greek text of Ezekiel 19. 12-39. 29, except for the portion lost with the missing pages, and other omissions. There is no doubt that these leaves belong to the same find as the famous Chester Beatty collection and form part of the codex in that collection containing Ezekiel and Esther.

The evidence for dating uncial script is somewhat limited. Kenyon at first was inclined to date this manuscript in the late third century A. D., while Wilcken favoured the second. Kenyon has so far modified his original position as to place the manuscript in the late second or early third. This is confirmed by minuscule notations found on pages 64, 68, and 90. Dr. H. I. Bell of the British Museum says: "These cursive notes seem to me pretty certainly not later than the third century." He sees no reason to put the manuscript far into the third century, if it is not even as early as the second.

A collation of this papyrus with the other Greek manuscripts shows that Sch. is closer to B than to the other uncials. The new text has about five hundred-fifty variant readings not found in any other uncial manuscript. Both Sch. and B represent a pre-Origenian text, and consequently their close affiliation is not surprising.

<sup>1</sup>The following sigla have been used in this article—~~MS~~, Massoretic text—Greek codices: Sch., the text of the John H. Scheide Biblical Papyri; B, Vaticanus; A, Alexandrinus; Q, Marchalianus; F, Cryptoferratensis—~~MS~~, Syro-Hexaplar—Old Latin fragments: Aug, Augustine; H, Hieronymus; T, Tyconius; C, Constance; Sg, St. Gall; W, Würzburg. Minuscules are numbered according to Holmes-Parsons.

The Scheide papyrus furthermore has a large number of unique readings not represented in the minuscule manuscripts. Some of these can be explained as due to the influence of the Hebrew text. The agreements with the Hebrew are independent of Origenian influence as is clearly shown by comparison with **H**. Even if palaeographical evidence for the date of the new text were not at hand, this study would indicate that this version was written before Origen began his great work of revision. The influence of the Hebrew is somewhat surprisingly established by errors due to misreading the original or by clear evidence of the use of a Hebrew text which was not always flawless.

An examination of the readings which have no counterpart in the other Greek manuscripts shows that Sch. has forty-three cases which are an exact translation from the Hebrew. In this article, the citations from Sch. precede other Greek readings and are not indicated by any siglum. These are the forty-three cases where Sch. uniquely follows the Hebrew:

20, 13, οὐκ ἐπαρνεθήσαν, **ⲉⲙ** *lā-šaldhē* — 41, οὐ . . . . . **ⲉⲙ**: *en aic* (ou **A**) . . . . . *en autais* BAQ. Since *en* as well as *en autais* is a Hebraism, it is possible that *bdm* may have been read as *šdm*.

21, 6 (11), σοφους. Sch. alone among the Greek texts agrees with **ⲉⲙ** *māḥḥayim*; **H**, in agreement with the other Greek texts, has the possessive σου, but sets it off with the obelus. — 7 (12), τὰν πᾶν, where BAQ have *πᾶσα σὰρξ καὶ πᾶς πῦρ*. The addition is marked with the obelus in Q and **H**. — 22 (37), τοῦ βαλεῖν follows **ⲉⲙ** *lā-rōḥ*; καὶ βαλεῖν BAQ. — 23 (28), καὶ αὐτοὶ ἀναμνησκὼν ἀδικίαν τοῦ ἀρπαθῆναι agrees with **ⲉⲙ** *ʾwḥaʾ-mazkūr ʾdwdn lʾḥittāpēd*; καὶ αὐτοὶ ἀναμνησκὼν ἀδικίαν αὐτοῦ (-ιν **A**) *μνησθῆναι* BAQ. — 38 (33), οὕτως; ἐγείρου σπᾶς BAQ. The verb is not in **ⲉⲙ**. — 30 (35), ἐν τῷ τόπῳ τῆς ἰδίας θυγατρὸς: ἐν τῇ γῇ τῇ ἰδία BAQ. In Sch. ἐν τῷ τόπῳ may have been copied from the line above. The reading *θυγατρὸς* is unique, and no other restoration seems possible; **ⲉⲙ** *bʾdrē mʾḥūrōyayik* 'in the land of thine origin.' It appears that the translator derived *mʾḥūrōyayik* from the root *mākar* 'to sell,' as the Qal passive participle, feminine plural, with the possessive suffix. Accordingly *mʾḥārāh* 'what is sold' > 'what is acquired by purchase' > 'one's property,' 'one's own.' Cf. Assyrian *makkuru* 'possession' and Syriac *mʾkar* 'to buy.' Apparently

Sch. is based on a defective Hebrew text with a dittograph,  $\gamma\eta\gamma$  or  $\gamma\eta\gamma$  added to  $\omega'k\acute{\alpha}r\acute{o}\zeta a\gamma i\acute{\kappa}$ .

22. 4,  $\alpha\upsilon\epsilon\delta\epsilon\varsigma$  represents  $\mathfrak{A}$   $\lambda\acute{o}r\pi\acute{\alpha}\lambda$ . BAQ prefix  $\epsilon\iota\varsigma$ . — 8,  $\tau\alpha$   $\alpha\gamma\iota\alpha$ ;  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\tau\alpha$   $\alpha\gamma\iota\alpha$  BAQ. Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{A}$ .

23. 17,  $\epsilon\nu$   $\tau\eta$   $\pi\omicron\rho\omicron\rho\epsilon\iota\alpha$   $\alpha\upsilon\tau\omega\nu$ , in agreement with  $\mathfrak{A}$   $\delta' i\lambda\alpha\mu\alpha\delta\alpha\tau\mu$ . For  $\alpha\upsilon\tau\omega\nu$ , BAQ have  $\alpha\upsilon\tau\eta\varsigma$ . — 32,  $\epsilon\sigma\tau\alpha\iota$   $\pi\lambda\epsilon\upsilon\sigma\alpha\zeta\omicron\nu$  is based on  $\mathfrak{A}$   $\pi\acute{\iota}\eta\rho\acute{\alpha}\lambda$  . . .  $\pi\acute{\iota}\eta\rho\acute{\alpha}\lambda$ . Cf.  $\kappa\alpha\iota$  (om. AQ)  $\tau\omicron$   $\pi\lambda\epsilon\upsilon\sigma\alpha\zeta\omicron\nu$  BAQ.  $\mathfrak{H}$  indicates the verb with the asterisk. — 33,  $\tau\omicron$   $\pi\omicron\tau\eta\rho\epsilon\omega\nu$   $\alpha\phi\alpha\tau\iota\alpha\varsigma$   $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\alpha\phi\alpha\tau\iota\sigma\mu\omicron\nu$   $\pi\omicron\tau\eta\rho\epsilon\omega\nu$   $\alpha\delta\epsilon\lambda\phi\eta\varsigma$   $\sigma\omicron\upsilon$   $\Sigma\alpha\mu\alpha\rho\epsilon\iota\alpha\varsigma$  is in agreement with  $\mathfrak{A}$ :  $k\acute{o}s$   $\delta\alpha\mu\mu\acute{\alpha}\lambda$   $\acute{\alpha}\delta' m\acute{\alpha}\mu\acute{\alpha}\lambda$   $k\acute{o}s$   $\acute{\alpha}\eta\delta\acute{\iota}\zeta\epsilon\acute{\kappa}$   $\acute{\epsilon}\omega\mu' r\acute{o}\alpha$ .  $\mathfrak{H}$  supports Sch. in the addition of the name Samaria; in *Sg.* the beginning of the verse is lost, but Samaria is preserved at the end. B reads:  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\tau\omicron$   $\pi\omicron\tau\eta\rho\epsilon\omega\nu$   $\alpha\phi\alpha\tau\iota\sigma\mu\omicron\nu$   $\pi\omicron\tau\eta\rho\epsilon\omega\nu$   $\alpha\delta\epsilon\lambda\phi\eta\varsigma$   $\sigma\omicron\upsilon$ , and  $\Sigma\alpha\mu\alpha\rho\epsilon\iota\alpha\varsigma$  is added by the corrector.

24. 17,  $\pi\epsilon\iota\theta\omicron\upsilon\varsigma$ :  $\pi\epsilon\iota\theta\omicron\upsilon\varsigma$   $\epsilon\sigma\tau\iota$  B\* (cetero B<sup>ab</sup>):  $\pi\epsilon\iota\theta\omicron\upsilon\varsigma$   $\epsilon\sigma\tau\iota\nu$  Q;  $\pi\epsilon\iota\theta\omicron\upsilon\varsigma$   $\epsilon\sigma\tau\iota$  A. In the omission of the verb, Sch. follows  $\mathfrak{A}$ .

26. 13,  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\kappa\alpha\tau\alpha\lambda\iota\upsilon\sigma\omega$ ;  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\kappa\alpha\tau\alpha\lambda\iota\upsilon\sigma\epsilon\iota$  BAQ. Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{A}$   $\omega'h\acute{i}\delta\alpha\tau\tau\iota$ . H,  $\epsilon\tau$   $d\epsilon\sigma\tau\upsilon\alpha\mu$ , reflects Sch. — 18,  $\nu\upsilon\nu$   $\phi\omicron\beta\eta\theta\eta\sigma\omicron\upsilon\tau\alpha\iota$ ;  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\phi\omicron\beta\eta\theta\eta\sigma\omicron\upsilon\tau\alpha\iota$  BQ ( $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\nu\upsilon\nu$  A, 106). Sch. follows  $\mathfrak{A}$   $\acute{\alpha}\tau\tau\acute{\alpha}\lambda$   $y\acute{e}h' d\acute{\alpha}$ .

27. 4,  $\kappa\alpha\lambda\lambda\omicron\varsigma$   $\sigma\omicron\upsilon$ ;  $\sigma\omicron\iota$   $\kappa\alpha\lambda\lambda\omicron\varsigma$  BAQ. In the margin of Q is noted the variant  $\tau\omicron$   $\kappa\alpha\lambda\lambda\omicron\varsigma$   $\sigma\omicron\upsilon$ . Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{A}$   $\gamma\omicron\rho\acute{\iota}\kappa$ ; W agrees with Sch.,  $s\acute{p}\epsilon\kappa\iota\epsilon\mu$   $i\upsilon\alpha\mu$ . — 8,  $\eta\sigma\alpha\nu$ :  $\omicron\iota$   $\eta\sigma\alpha\nu$  BAQ. Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{A}$ , which has no relative before  $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\gamma\acute{\alpha}$ . — 27,  $\delta\upsilon\alpha\mu\epsilon\iota$   $\sigma\omicron\upsilon$ :  $\eta\sigma\alpha\nu$   $\delta\upsilon\alpha\mu\alpha\iota$   $\sigma\omicron\upsilon$  BAQ. The verb is not in  $\mathfrak{A}$ . — 33,  $\mu\omicron\sigma\theta\omicron\nu$   $\sigma\omicron\upsilon$ :  $\mu\omicron\sigma\theta\omicron\nu$  BAQ. While the Greek is not a literal rendering of the Hebrew, Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{A}$  in having the possessive pronoun,  $\acute{\iota}\epsilon'h\acute{o}\pi\alpha\gamma\iota\acute{\kappa}$ .

28. 7,  $\epsilon\pi\iota$   $\tau\omicron$   $\kappa\alpha\lambda\lambda\omicron\varsigma$ :  $\epsilon\pi\iota$   $\sigma\epsilon$   $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\epsilon\pi\iota$   $\tau\omicron$   $\kappa\alpha\lambda\lambda\omicron\varsigma$  BAQ. Sch. follows  $\mathfrak{A}$   $\acute{\alpha}\iota' g' r\acute{\iota}$ . — 13,  $\iota\omega\sigma\pi\iota\nu$ :  $\iota\omega\sigma\pi\iota\nu$   $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\alpha\rho\gamma\iota\rho\iota\omicron\nu$   $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\chi\rho\epsilon\sigma\iota\omicron\nu$  BA. The words added in BA are not in  $\mathfrak{A}$ ; they are marked with the obelus in Q<sup>ac</sup> and in  $\mathfrak{H}$ .

30. 5,  $\tau\eta\varsigma$   $\delta\iota\alpha\theta\eta\kappa\eta\varsigma$   $\mu\epsilon\tau$   $\alpha\upsilon\tau\omega\nu$   $\mu\alpha\chi\alpha\iota\alpha$ :  $\tau\eta\varsigma$   $\delta\iota\alpha\theta\eta\kappa\eta\varsigma$   $\mu\omicron\nu$   $\mu\alpha\chi\alpha\iota\alpha$  BAQ. Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{A}$ ,  $\lambda\alpha\delta\delta' r\acute{\iota}$   $\acute{\alpha}\tau\tau\acute{\alpha}\mu$   $\delta\alpha\lambda\acute{\epsilon}\nu\epsilon\acute{\kappa}$ . — 7,  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\epsilon\rho\eta\mu\omega\theta\eta\sigma\omicron\upsilon\tau\alpha\iota$ ;  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\epsilon\rho\eta\mu\omega\theta\eta\sigma\omicron\upsilon\tau\alpha\iota$  BAQ.  $\mathfrak{A}$  has the plural,  $\omega' n\acute{\alpha}\delta\alpha\mu\mu\acute{\alpha}$ . — 13,  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\alpha\rho\chi\omicron\iota\tau\epsilon\varsigma$  . . . . .  $\sigma\iota\kappa$  represents  $\mathfrak{A}$   $\omega' n\acute{\alpha}\delta\acute{\iota}$  . . . . .  $\acute{\iota}\delta'$   $y\acute{\iota}l\gamma\epsilon\eta$   $\acute{\alpha}\delta$ , where  $n\acute{\alpha}\delta\acute{\iota}$  is nominative. BAQ have the accusative:  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\alpha\rho\chi\omicron\iota\tau\alpha\varsigma$  . . . . .  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\sigma\iota\kappa$ . — 17,  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\alpha\upsilon\tau\alpha\iota$ :  $\kappa\alpha\iota$   $\alpha\iota$   $\gamma\upsilon\mu\alpha\kappa\epsilon\varsigma$  BQ<sup>a</sup>. Sch. seems to

be based on  $\mathfrak{A}$  *w'hēnāb*. — 21, δοῦναι, 1°: δοθῆναι BAQF.  $\mathfrak{A}$  has the active infinitive *lōšūm*, of which δοῦναι is a translation.

32, 3, καὶ ἀναξουσιν σε: καὶ ἀναξω σε BAQ. Sch. corresponds to  $\mathfrak{A}$  *w'hē'ēlāhā*. — 4, τὰ θῆρια: πάντα τὰ θῆρια BAQ. Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{A}$  *haggai*. — 20, πάντα ἡ ἰσχύς αὐτός: πάντα ἡ ἰσχύς αὐτὸν BAQ. Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{A}$  *w'hōl-hāmōneyhā* and supports the antiquity of the feminine suffix in the Hebrew. — 24, αὶ καταβασόντες, where καὶ is prefixed by BAQ. Sch. follows  $\mathfrak{A}$ .

34, 13, ἐν ταῖς φαραγξί: καὶ ἐν ταῖς φαραγξὶν BAQ. Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{A}$ . — 15, καὶ γνωσόνται ὅτι ἐγὼ εἰμι  $\overline{\kappa\epsilon}$  BAQ. This phrase is lacking in Sch., Complutensis, Aug. and  $\mathfrak{A}$ .  $\mathfrak{H}$  follows BAQ, but marks the phrase with the obelus. — 28, προνομή: ἐν προνομή BAQ. Sch. follows  $\mathfrak{A}$  *bas*, and  $\mathfrak{H}$  *l'hesdā* favours this version. — 31, προβάτα 2: καὶ πρόβατα BAQ. The conjunction is not in  $\mathfrak{A}$ .

36, 8, ἐγγιζουσι: ἐλπιζουσιν BAQ. Here Sch. is alone amongst all Greek MSS. in preserving the correct reading of the Hebrew *gēr'ḥū* and thus substantiates the emendation of J. E. Grabe, Septuaginta etc., 3 vols., Oxford, 1707-20. In Vol. III, the text has in smaller and rather slender type *ἐγγιζουσιν*, while in the margin we have in regular type *ἐλπιζουσιν*. This emendation was adopted by Rahlfs, Septuaginta, Stuttgart, 1933. J. F. Schleusner, apparently independently, came to the same conclusion as Grabe, Novus Thesaurus Philologico-criticus, Pars secunda, Leipzig, 1820, 329-330. The Old Latin follows Sch.; cf. *T*, *qui appropinquat venire*.

37, 1, μύστον οὐτῶν: μύστον οὐτῶν ἀνθρώπων BAQ. Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{A}$ . In Q and  $\mathfrak{H}$  *ἀνθρ.* has the obelus prefixed.

38, 8, ἦξει: ἐλευσεται καὶ ἦξει BAQ. Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{A}$  *tāhō'*. — 11, ἐπὶ γῆν ἀπερριμμένῃ: ἐπὶ γῆν ἀπερριμμένην (ἀπερριμμένη AQ) B. Sch. is apparently based on  $\mathfrak{A}$  *'al-'ēreṣ p'rāzōf*. — 11, ἐφ' ἡσυχάζοντος: BAQ add ἐν ἡσυχίᾳ.  $\mathfrak{A}$  *hālōdō'ēm* has no modifying phrase. — 11, κατοικούντας ἐν ἡ: BQ insert γῆν after the participle. Cf.  $\mathfrak{A}$  *yōš'ēm*, which lacks 'earth.' — 16, αὐτὸν Γωγ (Γωγ is marked with the asterisk in Q): αὐτὸν BA. Sch. follows  $\mathfrak{A}$ : *l'ēnēhēm gōg*.  $\mathfrak{H}$  marks Gog with the asterisk, apparently considering the reading of BA as that of the original LXX. — 17, ταῦτε λεγὰ  $\overline{\kappa\epsilon}$ : ταῦτε λεγὰ  $\overline{\kappa\epsilon}$   $\overline{\kappa\epsilon}$  τὰ Γωγ B. Although A, Q, and  $\mathfrak{H}$  have τὰ Γωγ, the latter two mark it with the obelus.

39. 4, *και εθνη πολλα* (cf. *και πολλα εθνη*, 22, 23, 36, 48, 51, 231): *και τα εθνη τα* BAQT, translating  $\mathfrak{H}$  *w'ammim 'āser*. The text of Sch. is based on a Hebrew version: *w'ammim rabbim*, which has support in a number of MSS. — 8, *γυναιξ ὅτι*, found in BAQT, is omitted in Sch., in agreement with  $\mathfrak{H}$ .

If the date of the manuscript is correctly determined by palaeography, it seems that the original LXX was closer to the Hebrew than the readings in B would lead us to think. Apparently these unique expressions were originally in the LXX, became lost, and were subsequently restored by Origen in his revision.

Besides the above forty-three examples where Sch. uniquely agrees with  $\mathfrak{H}$ , there are ten other instances which have not been included in that calculation. These are very close to the Hebrew, but probably should be considered separately:

22. 7, *εν ἀδικια: εν ἀδικiais* BAQ. The singular is in agreement with  $\mathfrak{H}$ .

23. 25, *εν περι καταφαγεσθαι* appears to represent  $\mathfrak{H}$  *id'ākel: περι καταφαγεσθαι* BQ. The latter reading is in the text of  $\mathfrak{H}$ , but the marginal note follows Sch.

24. 4, *και εμβαλε τα δεχοσθηματα εις αυτον*. This word-order follows  $\mathfrak{H}$  *'ēšōr n'šāhēhā 'šēyāhā*. BAQ place *εις αυτον* directly after the verb. — 20, *λογος ἐν εγωισμο προς με*: B places *προς με* before the verb. Sch. agrees with  $\mathfrak{H}$  even in word-order: *d'har-YHWH lāyāh 'šay*.

25. 3, *επечарос: επεχαρηс* BAQT. Although the Greek is not a literal translation of the Hebrew,  $\mathfrak{H}$  has the verb in the singular: *yā'an 'om'rēh lē'āh*.

26. 6, *στενωσουσιν: στεναξουσιν* BAQ. Sch. is closer to  $\mathfrak{H}$  *šāh'mū*.

27. 14, *την εμποριαν: αγοραν* BAQ. Here Sch. is probably closer to  $\mathfrak{H}$  *'iz'hōnāyik 'thy wares.'*

32. 21, *και κρουσιν: και κρουεις σοι* BAQ. Sch. lacks the second person pronoun in agreement with  $\mathfrak{H}$  *y'dabb'rū-lā*.

38. 17, *εν χειρι: δια χειρον* BAQ. Sch. has a Hebraism based on  $\mathfrak{H}$  *b'yād*, which is not unusual in the LXX; cf. Haggai 1. 1; 2. 1.

39. 4, The reading of BAQT, *δοθησονται*, is not in Sch., but later in the verse, *δεδοκα* is found in Sch., as well as in BAQ. It should be noted that  $\mathfrak{H}$  uses the root *nāfan* only once: *n'fattiḥā* represented by *δεδοκα* σς.



There are also twenty-two other passages which have not been included in the previous fifty-three. While in these unique readings there is possible Hebrew influence, it is decidedly more remote than in either of the previous groups. These are the passages:

20. 41, *ἐθὼν* is closer to *𐤀𐤅𐤋𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍* than *λαὸν* of BAQ. — 44, *ἐν ἡμέρᾳ* probably reflects *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍*: *עֵתֵינוּ* BAQ.

21. 21 (26), *ἐν τοῖς τυποῖς* may have been suggested by *𐤀𐤁𐤏𐤏𐤓𐤏𐤇𐤍*; cf. *ἐν τοῖς γλίστοις* BAQ.

22. 25, *δινοσσεῖα*, where BAQ use the preposition *ἐν*. *𐤀𐤏𐤏𐤓𐤏𐤇𐤍* has no preposition, and it may be that Sch. shows that influence, though good usage does not require it in Greek.

24. 14, *κριθῆσεται* may represent the influence of *𐤀𐤏𐤓𐤏𐤇𐤍*, which occurs only once and is rendered by *קראוּ אֵלַי* 1<sup>o</sup>.

26. 14, *οὐ μὴ οἰκοδομηθῇ*: *οὐ μὴ οἰκοδομηθῆς* BAQ. While the latter preserves good Greek usage, the future may reflect the imperfect tense in *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍*.

27. 19, *καὶ οὖτως ἐξ Ἀσὴλ αἰς τὴν ἀγορὰν σοῦ ἔδωκαν*: *καὶ οὖν εἰς τὴν ἀγορὰν σοῦ ἔδωκαν ἐξ Ἀσὴλ* (Ἀσαρλ A) BA. The latter is based on an error in reading *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍*: *וְגִלְגָּלִי וְגִלְגָּלִי מִן־אֶשְׁדָּד בִּן־יְהוֹנָדָב* *וְגִלְגָּלִי*. Similarly Sch. has the same error as BA, though its version is unique. Yet it reflects Hebrew influence in the position of *ἐξ Ἀσὴλ*. — 30, *καὶ θρονοῦνται ἐπὶ τῆς κεφαλῆς αὐτῶν γὰρ στροσσονται σποδοῖν*: *καὶ ἐπιθρονοῦνται ἐπὶ τῆς κεφαλῆς αὐτῶν γὰρ καὶ σποδοῖν στροσσονται* BA. — Cf. *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍* *gilpallāšā*. Sch. agrees with *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍* in omitting the conjunction, but BA agree in having the Hebrew word-order. — 33, *ἀπὸ τοῦ πληθεύς σοῦ καὶ τοῦ συμμείκτου σοῦ*. BAQ repeat the preposition after *καὶ*. The omission in Sch. may reflect *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍*.

28. 13, *δὲ*: *τοῦ δὲ* BAQ. *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍* omits the article.

29. 14, *αἰχμαλωσίαν Αἰγυπτίων*: *τὴν αἰχ. τοῦ Αἰγ.* BQ. The omission of the first article may be due to the influence of *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍* *misrayim*, where *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍* is in the construct state.

30. 18, *σκοτάσαι*: *συσκοτάσαι* BAQ. It seems Sch., without the intensive prefix, is closer to *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍*.

31. 8, *κυπαρισσοὶ οὐ τρώσται*. BQ omit the negative; A adds *οὐκ ἐγενήθησαν* to the reading of BQ. Cf. *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍* *lō'-āmāmūlā*; *𐤀𐤏𐤍𐤔𐤁𐤏𐤇𐤍* agrees with Sch. Cf. *Sg. et cypressi non tales*. — 16, *ἀπὸ φώτης*

πρωτος αυτου: απο της φωνης της πρωτης αυτου BAQ. In the omission of the articles Sch. represents a rendering of א made without concern for the Greek idiom. — 18, καταβηθι καταβιβασθης: καταβηθι καταβιβασθης BAQ. The indicative of Sch. may be reminiscent of א הורדתא.

34. 14, εν ορει υψηλ: εν τω ορει τω υψηλω BAQ. It appears that Sch. omits the article through influence of the Hebrew, where both nouns are in the construct state: *b'hārē m'ōm-yišrā'el*. — 19, και το τεταραγμενον ιδου των ποδων υμων. The preposition εντο is inserted before των ποδων by BA; απο by Q. The unusual Greek construction in Sch. is evidently a Hebraism, since no preposition is used in א, which has the construct state: *mirpā' raglêkēm*.

35. 11, και γνωσθησομαι. BAQ add σοι. א נודעת'י ב'אם has nothing corresponding to σοι, which may represent *bām* misread as *b'hā*.

36. 3, και μεσηθηναι: και μεσηθηναι υμης BA. The omission of the pronoun in Sch. may be due to א, which has the pronoun only once with the two infinitives: *šammōt' w'šā'ōp*.

There is also evidence that the text in Sch. represents a translation which is based either upon a faulty Hebrew text or upon errors in reading the Hebrew. These passages have not been included in the above résumés. Such an error is found in 24. 2, γραφον εκει σταντα ημιν. This is evidently based on א: *k'ṭoh-š'ḥā 'et-šēm haggōm*, but *εκει* appears to be an error, *šēm* 'there' being read for *šēm* 'name'; in consequence *haggōm* was not put in the genitive as in א. Another error is found in 36. 2: ενεστηθης: ενεστηθ BAQ. Sch. is evidently based on a misreading of א *hāy'ṭāh* as *scriptio plena* for *hāy'ṭā*, unless it be a mere mistake of the copyist.

In 32. 18, the text of Sch. apparently represents an attempt to restore order out of chaos in the LXX: τα εθη των θυγατερων νεκρα: τας θυγατερας τα εθη νεκρα BAQ. The Greek is based on a misreading of the Hebrew or else on a faulty Hebrew text. Evidently εθη is meant to be taken as the subject of the main verb. Cf. א *āh'nōt gōyim (haggōyim) 'addirū*. The translator of the LXX left out *ā*. There is no doubt that *gōyim* had the article in the text before the translator; 'addirū certainly had *god* written between *d* and *r*. Through misreading the Hebrew, the translator worked on *haggōyim hārūgim*. Cf. 37. 9 *bahārūgim*, which is rendered εν τοις σκαροις. Originally the LXX probably had τας

*dyatēpas ta ebrē nekra* (cf. *nekra* Q\*); in the course of time -*τ* was attached to *nekra*. In the text of Sch. we have an attempt to restore order out of chaos and to conform to a construction which does less violence to Greek usage.

Two errors in Sch. are intensely interesting. The first is in 27. 16, *ἐκ θαρρεῖς καὶ θασοβ καὶ Ραμὰ καὶ Χορχορ*: *ἐκ θαρρεῖς καὶ λαμὰ καὶ Χορχορ* BQ; *ἐκ θαρρεῖς καὶ Ραμὰ καὶ Κορχορ* A. The three proper names of BAQ represent *𐤀𐤁𐤁𐤅 𐤔𐤓𐤕𐤌𐤔 𐤔𐤓𐤁𐤊𐤁𐤔*. The reading *ἐκ θαρρεῖς* seems to go back to a Hebrew text in which *šēš*, a synonym for *bāš* was used. *Riqmāh 𐤓𐤓𐤔* apparently was misread as *riqmāh 𐤓𐤓𐤔*, whence the transition to *riqmat 𐤓𐤓𐤔*, and finally to *riqmat 𐤓𐤓𐤔* was easy. It may be that while one Hebrew text had *riqmāh 𐤓𐤓𐤔*, another well-known reading was *riqmāh 𐤁𐤁𐤅*. Some scribe probably wrote in his text a small cross over *šēš* as a reference to the margin where he wrote *𐤔𐤓𐤕*<sup>x</sup>. Then in a subsequent copy, the cross (<sup>x</sup>) in the margin was enlarged (X) and brought down to the line of writing. In the transitional Hebrew alphabet X would be understood as *t*. With metathesis of *b* and *š*, *𐤁𐤁𐤅* was read and taken into the text, and the conjunction *ו* placed before it. The reading *καὶ θασοβ* in Sch. is accordingly a doublet for *ἐκ θαρρεῖς*. While it seems clear that there were two Hebrew texts, one with *bāš* and one with *šēš*, we cannot tell which is the older. This *šēš* may have come into this verse from verse 7 in the same chapter. At any rate, this error in Sch. supports the Massoretic text. The reading *Χορχορ* is evidently due to the confusion of Hebrew *r* and *d*. It is quite apparent that the translator did not know the meaning of the Hebrew text. The second is in 28. 16, *το χερουβ τοσυχ ἐκ μέσων λίθων πυρρουν*. The word *τοσυχ* is omitted in BA, while Q substitutes for it the more correct translation of the Hebrew, reading *το χερουβ το σισκιαζον*. *𐤀* has *𐤔𐤓𐤕𐤌𐤔 𐤕𐤓𐤕𐤌𐤔 𐤔𐤓𐤕𐤌𐤔*. In the Sch. version, or its predecessor, it is evident that the Hebrew text was incorrectly read and that *𐤕𐤓𐤕𐤌𐤔* was taken as a proper name and incorrectly transliterated as *τοσυχ*. C clearly follows the Sch. tradition, *cherubin sech de media lapidum igneorum*. Here it is evident that *το* was regarded as the definite article and consequently was dropped in Latin.

Some of the readings in Sch. can be explained from dittography of some letter in the Hebrew:

29. 20, *καὶ*: *αὐτοὶ* BAQ.  $\mathfrak{A}$  *p'allātō* has neither the conjunction nor the preposition. *καὶ* may have arisen from dittography of *waw* in the previous word, *l'hēlō*, which is the last word in verse 19.

30. 9, *παράχρη μεγάλη*: *παράχρη* BAQ. The text of  $\mathfrak{A}$  is *hāhālāh bāhēm*. Sch. is evidently based on a Hebrew text in which through dittography final *h* and *bāh-* were combined to give the reading *hāhālāh rabbāh bāhēm*. It is possible, on the other hand, that Sch. represents the original text and that *rabbāh* fell out in later revisions.

31. 4, *καὶ ἡ ἀβύσσος*. The conjunction is omitted in BAQ, but cf. *H, et abyssos*. There is no connective in  $\mathfrak{A}$  before *l'hēm*, but it may be that the final *waw* of the preceding word, *gid'd'lēhā*, was repeated by dittography, and thus *καὶ* was introduced into the text of Sch. — 7, *ὕψι αὐτοῦ καὶ* BAQ omit the conjunction.  $\mathfrak{A}$  also has no conjunction, but the *καὶ* of Sch. may be based on dittography of *waw* in *b'god'lē*.

32. 22, *καὶ πάντες*: *πάντες* BAQ. The conjunction in Sch. may result from dittography of *waw* in  $\mathfrak{A}$  *qib'rōlāyū kullām*. If *waw* was doubled, the second one was taken as a conjunction.

34. 27, *καὶ ἐν τῇ συντροφίᾳ*. The conjunction is omitted in BAQ, nor is it found in  $\mathfrak{A}$  *b'shēfē*. *καὶ* apparently represents *waw*, which may have arisen as a dittograph of final *h* in YHWH, or *waw* may have crept into the Hebrew text of the translator through the influence of the labial *b*.

38. 16, *καὶ ἀναβαταὶ*. The conjunction is omitted in BAQ.  $\mathfrak{A}$  *rōh'hē* does not have the conjunction; it may be that by dittography *r* was read as *wr*, or the *w* may be a dittograph of final *h* in the preceding word. — 18, *καὶ ἀναβήσονται*. The conjunction is omitted in BAQ, nor is it found in  $\mathfrak{A}$  YHWH *ta'ālēh*. It appears that Sch. is based on a Hebrew text which by dittography of final *h* read YHWHw.

39. 14, *καὶ καθαρίσαι*. BAQ omit *καὶ* as in  $\mathfrak{A}$  *l'hakārāh*. The conjunction *w* may have been introduced through dittography of initial *l*. — 23, *Ἰσραὴλ καὶ ἐν ὧ*. BAQ omit *καὶ* and translate  $\mathfrak{A}$  *yisrā'el 'al 'āser*. It seems that Sch. is based on a text in which final *l* of *yisrā'el* was doubled and the second was read as *w*.

Other readings of Sch. seem to be based on haplography in the Hebrew text:

38.14, *en tē hēma: oux* (ouch A) *en tē hēma* BAQ. Judging from  $\mathfrak{M}$  YHWH *kalō' bayyōm*, it seems that Sch. goes back to a text in which *kalō'*, on account of its resemblance to what precedes and follows, was omitted through haplography.

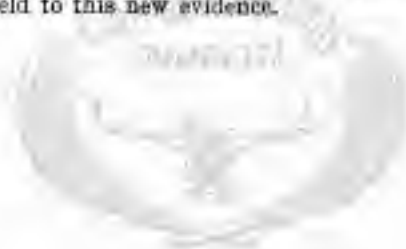
39.18, *αἶμα: καὶ αἶμα* BAQ. Cf.  $\mathfrak{M}$  *lō'kēla w'gām*. Sch. goes back to a text in which *w* was left out by haplography.—23, *μοι: εν: εἶς καὶ* BAQR. Cf.  $\mathfrak{M}$  *bē wā*. Sch. probably goes back to a text in which *waw* resembled *god* and consequently was dropped through haplography.

An interesting problem is presented in 30.9, *καὶ ἄν* where BAQ omit *ἄν*. Cf.  $\mathfrak{M}$  *bā'āh*. It is possible that Sch. is based on a text in which the verse ended in *bā'* YHWH, *bā'yā* being read for *bā'āh*; then *yā* was understood as an abbreviation for YHWH. Or it is possible that through misreading and dittography *kāh*, the first word of verse 10, was read as *wā*, thus with *yā* giving rise to *bā'* YHWH. On the other hand, the question may be raised whether Sch. represents the original text.

The Syro-Hexaplar generally follows B against Sch. On account of the frequent agreements between B and the Syro-Hexaplar against Sch., one might assume that B and  $\mathfrak{M}$  represent the original version of the LXX. One cannot, however, come to such an easy conclusion. While the Old Latin texts are not uniform in their testimony, there are in those versions a sufficient number of agreements with Sch. to bear witness to the antiquity and the definite tradition represented by this text; cf. especially *sech* in 28.16. If we were to recognize  $\mathfrak{M}$  as representing the true and original LXX, we should have to assume that some one revised this early version of Ezekiel on the basis of the Hebrew to produce the Scheide text and that this version was sporadic and individual and did not become the accepted version. According to such a view, Sch. would represent this sporadic revision which was intended for private use rather than for the Church in general. Such a theory is clearly untenable, for the preservation of *sech* shows that the Sch. tradition was widely current.

It appears that already long before Origen's time serious differences had crept into the text of the original LXX; that originally the latter may have had more agreements with the Hebrew than the text of B or  $\mathfrak{M}$  would indicate, and that Sch. represents an early tradition which may be closer to the original LXX than

either B or  $\mathfrak{H}$ . Perhaps some of the agreements in the LXX with the Hebrew were lost in the course of time and were later restored by Origen from the Hebrew when he marked them with the asterisk. A comparison of  $\mathfrak{M}$ , B, Sch.,  $\mathfrak{H}$ , and the Old Latin indicates that there were at least two pre-Origenian traditions of the LXX; one of these is represented by Sch., the other by B and  $\mathfrak{H}$ . Of supreme importance is 36. 8, where Sch. alone among extant Greek versions has the correct rendering of the Hebrew, which is also preserved in the Old Latin of Tyconius. The evidence of the passages cited above rather supports the view that Sch. bears witness to an old version of the LXX. Incidentally the new text also helps to confirm the authority of the Massoretic tradition. It is evident from a comparison of Sch. with the uncial and minuscule MSS.,  $\mathfrak{H}$ , and the Old Latin that this text represents the LXX previous to its separate development in three centres: Antioch, Caesarea, and Alexandria. The authority of B as our best source for the original LXX must yield to this new evidence.



# EXPRESSION OF THE CAUSATIVE IN UGARITIC

ZELIG S. HARRIS

UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA

IN THE FIRST few years after the discovery of Ugaritic (the language of ancient Ras Shamra) its verbal system presented many problems, some of which are now reaching the stage of solution. Among the most widely discussed of these was the question of the causative. Most scholars expected a causative with *h*-preformative, more or less like the Hebrew *hifl*, and this view gained support because of the generally Canaanite character of Ugaritic. However, a number of verbal forms in the *š*-causative (*šafel*) were soon identified in the texts. The question arose: How was the causative verbal relation<sup>2</sup> of Semitic expressed in Ugaritic? Did Ugaritic use the *š*-form, or the *h*- (or *ʿ*-) form, or both?<sup>3</sup>

In order to decide this question, we must investigate all words which seem to be causative in form or in meaning. The meanings alone would not be sufficient evidence; many words with causative meaning, or with meanings which in other Semitic languages are expressed in the causative, may not be in the causative stem in Ugaritic. However, we cannot judge by written form alone, for the paucity of vowel-indication in the Ugaritic script conceals many formal differences; thus we must not be led to exaggerate the relative frequency of *š*-forms as against possible *h*-forms merely because the *š*-forms are so much easier to discern.

The evidence for *š*-causative is considerable:<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The term causative is here used for the whole field of relations expressed by the causative stems in Semitic. See E. A. Speiser, "Studies in Semitic Formatives," *JAOI* 56 (1936), 23-4; H. S. Nyberg, "Wortbildung mit Präfixen in den semitischen Sprachen," *Le Monde Oriental* 14 (1926), 250 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Albright showed the existence of probable *hifl*/*afel* forms in *JPOS* 14 (1934), 112-3, cf. also in his translation of the Keret text, *BASOR* 63 (Oct. 1936), 27, note 124. Ginsberg argues for the *šafel* as against the *afel* in *JRAS* 1935, 32-3, and in his forthcoming article "Ba' and 'Ami," *Orientalia* 1938, 3-4. Friedrich recognized the *šafel* in his *Ras Shamra* (*Der alte Orient* 1934, I), 27.

<sup>3</sup> The Ras Shamra tablets are referred to as in J. A. Montgomery and Z. S. Harris, *The Ras Shamra Mythological Texts* (*Memoirs of the American Philosophical Society* IV 1933), 43-4, 85, 131. Most important



*āšprk 'm b'l šnt*, Dan. vi 28. Pres. "I shall cause you to be counted with ..."

Verbs with strong roots:

*āšrb glmt*, Keret 204. Pres. "I shall cause the girl to enter."

*āšrb'*, Dan. 2 v 3 "I shall make four-fold."

*yšrb'*, Dan. 2 v 12-3 "he made four-fold."

*ālp ytbh lktet yālh m krt wyšg bnt hll šnt*, Dan. 2 ii 30-1 ff.

Pret. "a bull he slaughtered for the K.; he gave the K. to eat; he gave to drink the ..."

*wyālh m h*, K i 5. Pret. "and he gave him to eat."

*tālh m tšgy ūm*, Dan. 2 v 29. Pret. "she gave the gods to eat and to drink."

*ālh m šgy ūm*, Dan. 2 v 19. Inv. f. ag. "give the gods to eat and to drink."

*mšpdt*, Dan. 1. 172, 183. Part. f. pl. *ḥkrt* "leaders of the lament."

*šrb ḥr*, T 2. 18. Inv. "sacrifice an ox."

*šb'd*, C 12, 14, 15. Inv. "continue (cause to extend far)."

*šb'r amrr kkkk*, B iv 16. Pf. "A. caused (was caused?) to light like a star."

Root *hkk*:

*āhkk*, Dan. 3 R 11 "I cause to go."

Roots *l y*:

*lāših m*, E 2 "that I may cause them to leave" (context unclear).

*mšp*, Dan. 2 i 28, 46. Part. "causing to come out, emitting."

*wyṭṭb lymn aliyn b'l*, B v 109. Passive(?) short pret. "and (Kuthar-and-Hasis) was caused to sit to the right of A. B." (with assimilation of *š* to *ṭ* of the root *yṭb*).

*yṭbn*, A vi 33. Pret. "he caused him (Ba'l) to sit (upon his throne)" (context broken).

*ṭṭbn ūm*, T 33. 6. (context broken).

*šrd b'l bdbhk*, Keret 77. Inv. "cause Ba'l to come by means of your sacrifice."

*šrd b'l bdbhh*, Keret 169. Pf. "he caused Ba'l to come by means of his sacrifice."

tablets published since: F (*Syria* 1935. 247-68), Dan. (Ch. Virolleaud, *La légende phénicienne de Danel*, 1928), Keret (Ch. Virolleaud, *La légende de Keret*, 1936), I (*Syria* 1936. 150-73), J (*Syria* 1936. 209-28), K (i: *Syria* 1936. 335, ii: *ibid.* 1937. 88).

Roots II *w*:

*wjṭb mlakm lh*, Keret 136 "and he caused the messengers to return to him" (assimilation of *š* to *ṭ* of root).

*špq ilm*, B vi 47 ff. Pret. "he caused the gods to be sated."

Roots III *y*:

*wyššq*, Dan. 2 ii 30-1. Short pret. "and he gave (them) to drink."

*lššqy*, Dan. 2 v 29. Pret. "she gave to drink."

*ššqy*, Dan. 2 v 19. Inv. f. sg. "give to eat" (context for these forms under *lhm* above).

*yšly*, Dan. 1. 185. Pret. "he sacrificed."

*lšlynh*, A i 15. Pret. "she brought him up."

*šly*, Dan. 1. 192. Inv. "sacrifice."

*šly 'zn ldy*, Syria 16 (1935). 178. Pl. "'zn has offered up to Dagān."

*šlyt tryl ldy*, *ibid.* 177. Pl. 3. f. sg. "Tryl has offered up to Dagān."

## Geminate Roots:

*ššqlk tāt* ..., Dan. 2 vi 44. Pres.? "I shall cause you to stoop under ...."

## Uncertain because of obscure context:

*lšhṭann*, Dan. 1. 151.

*lšknnnn*, T 26. 11.

*lšhšn*, D v 23.

*lšnqm*, T 23. 6.

*šnst*, K ii 12.

*škn-m'*, B i 21.

*lšq*, A ii 10.

In *i*-reflexive stem:

*yštql dān lškḫ*, Dan. 2 ii 25 "Dan'il entered into his temple."

*lštql ilt lškḫ*, K ii 18, *as above*.

*lštḫwy* (?), A i 38, B iv 26, viii 28, etc. Pret. "she bowed down."

For the *h*(')-causative, the evidence is necessarily far less clear: several words seem to be causative in their meaning and in the way they are used, but their written forms can usually be interpreted in several ways, as representing either the causative or some other

stem. Each form must therefore be tested in all the readings which its written occurrence permits, to see which reading (verbal stem) best fits the meaning which its context demands. The suspected *h*(\*)-causative words are therefore arranged here according to the possible readings of their written forms.

Apparently 'causative (afel) form:

*akn lh*, Keret 15. Apparently inv.\* "set (prepare) for her"; perhaps pl. "he has prepared for her" (root *kūn*). In either case *a* would represent the preformative of an 'causative. This form cannot be read as intensive, for the intensive of *kūn* is expressed in Ugaritic by the Polel stem (*gknnh* B iv 48 "he created him"). The spelling could represent the simple stem (qal) only in the first person of the preterite, which would hardly be suitable here. In meaning, this form is similar to the cognate Hebrew *hākīn* "he prepared" (*h*-causative).

*hšk al tš lqrh abn ydk mšdpt*, Keret 116-8. Albright:† "thou shalt not shoot thy arrows at his city; look at thy hand: it is withered." If *abn* (root *bīn*) is imperative, parallel to the negative imperative *al tš*, it too shows the *a* preformative of the 'causative. However, elsewhere in Ugaritic (B v 122) as in Hebrew, it is the qal of this root which means "to see"; in Hebrew the causative means "to understand", and perhaps some related meaning is involved here. It is also possible that *abn* may not be a verb at all.

Forms which may be 'causative or intensive:

*gmš lars*, A v 4. Short pret. ("apocopate"). "he caused (them) to find the earth; he sent to earth." The final ' of the root *mš*, since it is not followed by a vowel, reveals here the preceding *i* vowel of the second syllable. This vowel would occur here only in the derived stems; in the qal the vowel of such laryngeal roots is *a*.‡ As between the intensive and the causative, to which we are therefore restricted, all probability is on the side of the causative; in Hebrew, Aramaic, and Akkadian it is only the causative of this verb which has this meaning, and the intensive does not occur.

\* W. F. Albright, BASOR 63 (Oct. 1934), 27, note 12x.

† *Ib.*, p. 30, reading *tš lqrh*; but the word division may be *tš l qrh*.

‡ Harris, JAOS 57 (1937), 103; H. L. Ginsberg, *Torbia* 4 (1933), 382.

*amid*, Keret 58. "I increased" (context broken). Here too the *i* vowel points to a derived stem, causative or intensive.

Forms which may be afel or qal:

*asb skn ilibg*, Dan. 2 i 16. Pret. "I set up the monument of my ...". *asb* (root *asb*) cannot be read as intensive, for then the *n* of the root would appear in the writing. If it is qal the form would be *'asasbu*; if afel, *'assibu*. The causative of this root means "to set up" both in Hebrew and Aramaic; the simple stem (qal) of *asb* in Aramaic also means "to set up," but in Akkadian "to be fixed." The question whether this word is in afel or qal is complicated by a parallel passage *asb skn ilibh*, Dan. 2 i 27. In this passage the verb may be qal participle "setting up a monument," or perfect or imperative, or nifal participle "there stands a monument of his ...". The interpretation depends upon one's understanding of the whole scene. If *asb* is qal, then *asb* too must be qal; if *asb* is nifal, *asb* is probably afel.

*lys' alt lbtik lykpk ksa mlkk*, A vi 27. Apocopate. "indeed he will pull up the posts (or: remove the ...) of your seat; he will overturn the throne of your royalty." Here too the intensive is eliminated, since it would have to show the *n* of the root *as*. The causative of this root in Hebrew and Aramaic means "to remove," while the qal usually means "to go off," as it does in Akkadian. However, the early meaning of the qal was "to pull up (the tent-pegs)," as may still be seen in Hebrew *wayyiss'ēm* (Judges 16. 3), and it is difficult to tell whether *lys'* was in the afel or the qal.

*lbbk bti lbbf*, B iii 21. Apocopate. The verb (root *asb*) is probably *labbif*, in the afel; as in the cases above, it cannot be intensive. However, it may possibly be an otherwise unknown qal meaning "to be apparent."

*wykn bnh lbt is' bgrb kklh*, Dan. 2 i 26, 43. Apocopate. Either afel "and he will install his son in (his) house, his offspring within his temple"; or less probably qal "let there be his son in his house." The intensive would be in the Polel stem (see under *akn lh* above).

Forms which may be afel, or intensive, or qal:

*lu alh bbnk amlkn*, A i 45-6 (old numbering 17-8). "give one of your sons that I may make him king"; also *amlk* A i 48, 54

"let us make king." While this consonantal writing could be vocalized to represent any of the three stems, it is directly causative in meaning; the causative stem, which has this meaning of the root in Hebrew and Aramaic (and Arabic), is more probable than the intensive.

*asālāk*, Dan. 2 vi 28 "and I will make you rule; I will give you power." The argument here is as in the case above. However, it must be remembered that in many roots the intensive stem too expresses causative meaning.<sup>7</sup>

*šmā šmā šmān*, A iii 6, 12. Pret. "the heavens rained oil." This passage may be read with *šmān* in the causative stem and *šmā* as direct object, or, perhaps less probably, with the verb in the qal.<sup>8</sup> The intensive would in any case be most improbable, since its meaning in this root, where it occurs, is "to cause to rain."

*dyšb' hmlt ar*, B vii 51-2 "(it is I) who will satiate the people of the earth." The causative meaning here would be possible in either the afel or intensive stem; the afel would be more probable.

*y'ēr wyšqynh ytn ks bāh*, K i 9-10; *y'ēr wyšqynh*, Dan. 2 vi 30-1. Apparently "he . . . and gave him to drink (root *šqy*); he gave a glass into his hand." The first is parallel to *wyšlānāh*, and both seem clearly to be causative in their contexts. However, this root occurs in Ugaritic in the *š*-causative: *wyššq*, while the writing *yšqy* represents the qal "he drank" (Dan. 1. 315, 2 i 11). These two apparent causatives may be haplographic errors for the *š*-causative form (one *š* instead of two; but why in identical phrases?); or they may be in the intensive stem with causative meaning. This would seem more probable than having two causative forms, an afel by the side of the šafel, in the same root.

The difficulty in finding indisputable evidence for the 'causative arises from the fact that by far the most common verbal form in Ugaritic is the preterite, while it is precisely the preterite in which

<sup>7</sup> Nyberg, *op. cit.*, p. 250, points out that the increased use of the intensive in causative meaning is rather a later development.

<sup>8</sup> Albright's reading of the parallel *tik* as causative (in JPOS 1934. 112) is improbable, as Ginsberg has recognized; in Hebrew the root *āk* in the sense "to flow with (something)" is used in the qal.

the 'preformative of this causative stem is lost. Imperatives, participles, and perfects of the afel would show its characteristic 'preformative. Even in the preterite, however, it is possible to determine key types which betray the afel by their form. Thus any I n root which is at the same time III ' could be readily distinguished in the apocopate: the intensive would have the *n* of the root; the qal would have an *a* vowel in the second syllable<sup>10</sup> (which would be revealed by the written final *a*), while the afel would have an *i* vowel.<sup>11</sup> Similarly, any I n with a laryngal for its second or third radical could be distinguished in the first person singular: here again the intensive would write the *n*; the qal would have an *i* vowel in the preformative<sup>12</sup> (revealed by the written ' of the first person); and the afel would have *a*, as is true of the preformative of all derived stems except the *t*-reflexives.<sup>13</sup>

On this evidence we must conclude that in Ugaritic the living form for the expression of the causative relation was the šafel stem.<sup>14</sup> It occurs chiefly with the direct causative meaning, though some words show other meanings which occur in the causative stem.<sup>15</sup>

This evidence also makes it probable that Ugaritic had a number of words in the afel form. They are fewer by far than the šafels, and most of them have specialized meanings: *škn* "prepare," *gkn* "he installed," *an* "notice" (?), *ymai* "he sent," *aš* "I set up" (?), *lbi* "it looks," *twfen* "it rains." Some verbs seem to express the direct causative relation: *amken* "that I may make him king," *asifk* "I will give you power" (?), *dydb* "who will save."

Because of its occurrence in such few cases and specialized meanings, the afel may be judged to be the older form of causative

<sup>10</sup> See note 6 above.

<sup>11</sup> The preterite of derived stems had *i* in the second syllable; cf. Harris JAOS 57 (1937), 153, note 12.

<sup>12</sup> H. L. Ginsberg, *Tarbiz* 4 (1933), 382; Harris, *loc. cit.*

<sup>13</sup> Harris, *Ibid.*, note 12.

<sup>14</sup> This has been held throughout by Ginsberg, who failed, however, to admit any afel forms.

<sup>15</sup> *šrb* has the specialized meaning "to sacrifice" (as its cognate does in Hebrew); *šly* has the same specialized meaning (also as in Hebrew), but also the direct causative "to bring up." Some of the šafel words occur in uncertain contexts, so that their exact sense is not clear.

expression in the history of Ugaritic, and of the dialect group from which it developed. This bears out the correlation which has been shown in the incidence of the causative formative and of the third person pronouns.<sup>12</sup> Akkadian and Minaean, which have third person pronouns in *š* (*š*), have *š* (*š*) causative stems; Arabic, Sabaeen and Ethiopic, Aramaic, Hebrew and Phoenician, which have third person pronouns in *h*, have *h* and ' (*y*) causative stems. In Ugaritic the pronouns of the third person are *hwt*, *hwt*, *hwt*; <sup>13</sup> it is not surprising that its early causative stem should have had the *h* (') formative.

The form of the *h* (')-causative seems to have been: imperative *'aqtíl*, preterite *yaqtíla*, similar in its preformative to the Arabic *aqtala*,<sup>14</sup> and in its stem vowel to the Hebrew *hiqtíl*.

How then did the *š*-causative develop in Ugaritic?

In Aramaic there are a number of verbs in the šafel, borrowed from Akkadian: *šēzīb*, *šāglel*, etc. In addition there are several šafels which must have been formed in Aramaic: e. g. *šā'bed* "to enslave," which could not have had this phonetic form in Akkadian. These šafels of Aramaic origin could have been patterned upon the borrowed Akkadian causatives: the large group of šafel loan-words had established that form in Aramaic as a recognized causative construction, and then a few Aramaic verbs came to be expressed in the causative on the same pattern.<sup>15</sup>

In Ugaritic, however, the šafel is far more frequent, and one is led to trace its history further back. There are, in fact, many traces of an early šafel in West Semitic. In the south, Minaean has an *š*-causative and *š* in the third person pronouns, while its close neighbor Sabaeen has *h* in both; Arabic and Ethiopic have *š* in the *t*-reflexive stem *štaqtala* by the side of ' in the causative active; Ethiopic also has, in addition to its 'causative, a large number of verbs with an old *š*-causative.<sup>16</sup> Furthermore, nouns

<sup>12</sup> For this important correlation and for the analysis of the causative form, see Speller, "Studies in Semitic Formatives" I JAOS 56 (1936), 22-33.

<sup>13</sup> B III 24, VIII 28, Dan. I. 129, 133; Dan. I. 138, 143; Dan. I. 150. Cf. J. A. Montgomery JAOS 56 (1936): 440-1.

<sup>14</sup> On the relation of *h* to ' forms in the causative, see Speller, *op. cit.*, p. 25.

<sup>15</sup> On the question of old Aramaic šafels, see C. Brockelmann, *Grundriss vergl. Gram. sem. Spr.* I 525.

<sup>16</sup> Cf. Dillmann, *Ethiopic Grammar*, tr. Crichton, p. 131, 135, 148, 158.



with preformatives in *š* (Arabic *s*) exist in Hebrew, Aramaic, and Arabic, and have been shown to be related to the *š* formative in the causative stem.<sup>20</sup>

To sum up: Although the *h*(') form was the regular expression of the causative in that part of the Semitic area which had *h* in the third person pronouns, nevertheless the *š*-causative was also known over much of this area, appearing in verbal stems and, apparently, as noun-prefix. In Ugaritic the *š* form came to be favored over the common *h*(') stem, and causatives came to be expressed in the *šafel* instead of the *afel*. In the course of time, the *afel* ceased to be used for expressing the causative, and any new causatives that arose were undoubtedly formed in the *šafel*, as the only living stem with that function. But a number of words in the *afel*, which had long developed specialized meanings, were no longer felt as direct causatives, and so were not expressed by the *šafel*, but remained as formulae in their old *afel* inflection.

---

<sup>20</sup> Nyberg, *op. cit.*, p. 197 ff.

## THE RESTORATION OF ORDER BY DARIUS

ROLAND G. KENT

UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA

IN THIS JOURNAL 54.40-50 (1934), I attempted a complete restoration of a cuneiform inscription of Darius in the Old Persian, to which I gave the title "The Restoration of Order in the Empire";<sup>1</sup> I accompanied it with the Akkadian version, in which I enjoyed the collaboration of my colleague Prof. R. A. Speiser, without whom I could not have ventured into the Akkadian field. Since then, Prof. F. H. Weissbach has republished a part of this same inscription in *ZDMG* 91.80-6 (1937), with the help of certain other fragments which he had identified as belonging to it. It is in the light of these additions that I wish to treat the inscription again.

With one exception, the fragments were published by Père V. Scheil in Vols. xxi and xxiv of the *Mémoires de la Mission Archéologique de Perse, Mission en Susiane* (Paris, 1929 and 1933). Scheil himself identified as belonging together two OP fragments and one Elamite, given in 21.61-4, and six OP fragments and a nearly complete Akk. copy on the two sides of a tablet, in 24.116-25. To these, Weissbach has added two Elam. fragments, given by Scheil 21.71-6, as Nos. 20 and 21; one small OP fragment, given by Scheil 21.28 at the right of the middle row of fragments, and indicated by a question-mark; an OP fragment of unknown provenience, which Weissbach had listed in his *Keilinschriften der Achämeniden* as *Inc. b*, page xxix and page 130.

Of this inscription, then, we have 10 OP fragments, 3 Elamite fragments, and a nearly complete Akkadian copy.

After this article was in galley-proofs, I received Weissbach's article in *Zeits. f. Assyr.* 44.140-69 (1938), which lists an eleventh OP fragment (his  $\beta$ , containing portions of lines 1-4 and of 46-51), and a second Akkadian fragment, both in the Louvre, unpublished, but to appear in a new volume by Scheil. The data in his article have been used here as far as possible.

The first part, down to the middle of line 30 in the OP version, contains the praise of Ahuramazda, the titles of Darius, the statement of his acquisition of the empire and the list of the provinces;

<sup>1</sup> Scheil, *Mémoires* 21.116, entitles it "Conquêtes et Politique de Darius."

all this is a duplicate of the Nakš-i-Rustam inscription, except that the list of provinces is slightly changed. No comment to my version of this portion is here needed, except as follows: in line 4, *adā* should be *adadd* (on the evidence of Frag. 11); in line 6, *XŠ* (misprint) should be *XŠm*; in line 9, read *dahyānām* for *DAHām*, and in line 10, read *būmīgā* for *BUgā*, to get the proper number of characters in the line (so Weissbach); in line 19, normalize *ašahy* on the evidence of the Daiva-Inscription (*Language* 13. 292-305); in line 24, *Kadaš* should be replaced by *Maka* or *Maciğā* (cf. *JAOS* 56. 217-8); in line 28, *Sakā* should perhaps be replaced by *uṭē* (cf. below, on Akk. 20); and the next to the last name in the list of provinces, now in line 30, should be left blank, both in the OP and in the Akk.

With the middle of line 30 a new section begins, and this is where my previous version went astray. My OP text contained one more section than the Akk. version, because of my failure to unite more closely the fragments at my command; Weissbach has succeeded in doing this, showing that my fragment 5 should not be fitted into lines 31-38, but into lines 35-41, thereby eliminating four lines from the total length of the text. I am happy to admit and confirm the correction, and to present here this portion of the text of the inscription, into which there fits also Weissbach's *Inc. b*, given in a typeset facsimile by C. Bezold in a review of Weissbach's *Keilinschr.*, *Zts. f. Assyr.* 25. 394 (1911), the improved readings of which were utilized by Weissbach in his recent article.

For clearness as to the relation of this fragment to the other fragments, a transcript of Bezold's plate in *ZA* 25. 394 is here given, showing the right margin and the number of characters in each line, as well as the position in the complete inscription:

Position in Inscription		Line of Fragment	Characters in Line
31	: -du-u-ša-ṭ-+ +	1	
32-33	ma-: -da-ha-ya-a-va	2	26
33-34	ya-ma-: -a-ja-:	3	20
34-35	a-: -a-u-ra-mu-za	4	24
36	ma-: -na-i-ya-: -ja-ta-i	5	27
37	ya-: -a-sa-ta-i-ya	6	24
38	va-na-a-: -ta-ra	7	24
39	ya-a-: -ta-ya-ma-: sa	8	24
40-41	na-i-ya-: -vi-i-ma	9	22

Position in Inscription		Line of Fragment	Characters in Line
42	- <i>xa-ka-a-ya-ka-i</i>	10	26
42-43	<i>ka-ra-ta-ma-i</i> - <i>t</i> - <i>t</i>	11	27
44	<i>ta-ma-t</i> - <i>t</i> - <i>t</i>	12	28

The number of characters per line is not so nearly uniform as in the version represented by the other fragments, and there may be some variations in the text, especially in line 3, where the replacement of (lost) *a-ga-u-da* by *ya-u-di-i-na-i-ya-i-a-ka* would add 6 characters without changing the meaning (for the reading, cf. *Dar. NRs 32*), thus bringing the line up to normal length. Variation is seen also in line 10, where *xšdyāfi[ya]* was written in full instead of the ideogram *YS* of Fragment 7.

In presenting lines 30-43 of the inscription, the portion in which Weissbach has made improvements, I shall use the same notation as in my previous article, but using the new revised numbering of the lines:

Fragment 5, lines 31-37 (no line-ends); Scheil 24. 125.

Fragment 6, lines 33-45 (line-ends at left); Scheil 24. 123.

Fragment 7, lines 35-49 (line-ends at left); Scheil 24. 124.

Fragment 9, lines 31-44 (line-ends at right, but a different line-length); Bezold, *Zts. f. Assyrl.* 25. 394.

Fragment 10, lines 34-37 (no line-ends); Scheil 21. 23, marked ?.

Their readings will be indicated by raised numerals placed at the beginnings and the ends of the extant passages, except that the readings of Frag. 10 will be set between asterisks; passages not extant in any fragment will be set in *italics* within square brackets, and characters which are extant only in such badly damaged form as to make their reading dubious apart from their context, will also be set in *italics*. But in the commentary, all linguistic citations are in *italics*.

In this notation, it should be remembered that the extant characters of each fragment overrun the ends of the lines as here given, only in Fragment 9, which overruns the ends of lines 32, 33, 34, 40, 42. Frag. 6 began line 41 with [*rda*]*tiy*, the *ma* which begins the line in Frag. 7 being in Frag. 6 at the end of the preceding line. As the inscription is now restored, lines 31 to 43 inclusive each have 21 characters, and line 44 has 22 characters; with this,

we may compare the length of the lines at the beginning of the inscription, where the line-ends and the formulaic character of the text give certainty to the restoration:

Line 1,	22 characters
Lines 2-4,	21 characters
Lines 5-10,	22 characters
Line 11,	21 characters
Lines 12-17,	22 characters

Lines 18-29, with *Ma-ka* <sup>2</sup> in line 24 between *Šatagut* and *Gadāra*, and ending with *Škudra*, will contain 255 characters, which gives 9 lines of 21 characters each and 3 lines of 22 characters each. Line 30 will begin with the word-divider, followed by a lost name of five characters (estimated; the name is lost also in the Akk.), then a divider and the name *Karkā* (proved by the Akk.); which, with the remainder of the line here given, makes the average 21 characters:

- 30 [ : *Šatig* : *Dāra* ]  
 31 [ *yavaus* : *XŠ* : *vasaig* : *t* ] <sup>1</sup> *ya* : *d* <sup>2</sup> *us* [ *kar(a)-* ]  
 32 [ *m* : *āha* : *asa* : *naibam* : *a* ] <sup>3</sup> *kunawam* : *da-*  
 33 *h* <sup>4</sup> *yāva* <sup>5</sup> [ : *ayanda* : *aniga* ] <sup>6</sup> : *an* <sup>7</sup> *ya* <sup>8</sup> *m* :  
 34 *a* <sup>9</sup> *ja* <sup>10</sup> : *a* <sup>11</sup> *va* : *a* <sup>12</sup> [ *dam* : ] <sup>13</sup> *kunavam* <sup>14</sup> [ : *rašn* ] <sup>15</sup> *ā*  
 35 : <sup>16</sup> *A* <sup>17</sup> *urama* <sup>18</sup> *x* <sup>19</sup> *dāh* <sup>20</sup> *ā* <sup>21</sup> : *ya* <sup>22</sup> *ā* : *a* <sup>23</sup> [ *niga* : *a-* ]  
 36 <sup>24</sup> *ni* <sup>25</sup> *ya* <sup>26</sup> *m* : *na* <sup>27</sup> *y* <sup>28</sup> : *ja* <sup>29</sup> *ti* <sup>30</sup> *y* : *ā* <sup>31</sup> [ *nā* : *gā-* ]  
 37 <sup>32</sup> *av* <sup>33</sup> *ā* : *ka* <sup>34</sup> *ci* <sup>35</sup> *y* : <sup>36</sup> *a* <sup>37</sup> *s* <sup>38</sup> *ti* <sup>39</sup> *y* : *d* <sup>40</sup> [ *ātam* : ]  
 38 <sup>41</sup> *ti* <sup>42</sup> *ya* : *ma* <sup>43</sup> *nā* : *ha* <sup>44</sup> *ā* : *a* <sup>45</sup> *va* <sup>46</sup> *nā* : *ta* <sup>47</sup> [ *ati-* ]  
 39 <sup>48</sup> *y* : *ya* <sup>49</sup> *ā* : *hyā* <sup>50</sup> : *tauv* <sup>51</sup> *ya* : *tyam* : *sa-* <sup>52</sup>  
 40 <sup>53</sup> *kau* <sup>54</sup> *im* : *na* <sup>55</sup> *y* <sup>56</sup> : *ja* <sup>57</sup> *ti* [ *y* : ] <sup>58</sup> *na* <sup>59</sup> *y* : *vi-*  
 41 <sup>60</sup> *ma* <sup>61</sup> *rda* <sup>62</sup> *ti* <sup>63</sup> *y* : *ā* <sup>64</sup> *ti* <sup>65</sup> *y* [ : *Dārayavauš* : ]  
 42 <sup>66</sup> *XŠ* <sup>67</sup> : *va* <sup>68</sup> *nā* : *Au* <sup>69</sup> *ramazd* [ *dā* <sup>70</sup> *da* <sup>71</sup> *ta* ] <sup>72</sup> *ka-*  
 43 <sup>73</sup> *rtam* <sup>74</sup> : *va* <sup>75</sup> *na* <sup>76</sup> *y* : <sup>77</sup> *ti* <sup>78</sup> *ya* : <sup>79</sup> [ *paravam* : *naig* ]  
 44 <sup>80</sup> : *gā* <sup>81</sup> *avā* <sup>82</sup> : *kar* <sup>83</sup> *am* <sup>84</sup> [ : *asa* : *adam* : *gā* <sup>85</sup> *ā-* ]  
 45 <sup>86</sup> *vā* : *akuna* <sup>87</sup> *va* <sup>88</sup> *m* : <sup>89</sup>

§ 4. 30-41. Says Darius the king: Much that was done ill, that I made good. Provinces were in uproar, one man smote another; the following I effected by the favor of Ahuramazda, that one man not smite another at all, each person is in his place. The law which

<sup>2</sup>If *Maciā* be used, then we have 258 characters, making 8 lines of 21 characters and 6 of 22 each.

is mine, of that he is afraid, so that the stronger smites not the weak, nor harms him.

§ 5. 41-45. Says Darius the king: By the favor of Ahuramazda, much handiwork which before was put out of its place, that I put back into its place. ....

§ 6. 45-50. ....

§ 7. 50-52. ....

#### NOTES

This version follows Weissbach's, except in cī[ād] 36. The language is at several points confirmed by the idioms used in the Daiva-Inscription of Xerxes found by Herzfeld at Persepolis and available in *Lang.* 13. 292-305. The notes take up the differences from my previous version.

30 *šatīy* to 34 *aja*: this represents my previous 30 *šatīy* to 33 *ajana*, combined with 34 to 37 *dahyāva*; essentially with the omission of 34-7, and of the repeated *šatīy*: *Dārayavauš*: *XS*.

31-2 *dukkartam*: assured by Frag. 9; the trace of the character *du* in Frag. 5 is ambiguous.

32 *dka*: its addition makes the line of the proper length.

32 *naibam*: shown by the Daiva-Insc. 43, to be the regular word for "good", rather than \**vauv* (= Skt. *vasu*, Av. *volu*), which appears in OP only in a few personal names.

33 *ayanda*: this fits the line-length better than my previous *goudatiya* with a resumptive *tyā* immediately following.<sup>2</sup>

33 *aniya aniyam*: masc., not fem. as I previously supposed. For the use of the masc. with *dahyāva*, cf. Daiva-Insc. 31 and note thereto, *Lang.* 13. 299.

34 *aja*: not *ajana*.

34 *adaw*: the addition gives the line its proper length. From here the text goes on at my older line 38.

36 *ca-i-+-+*: here stood a word of four characters, the first two being extant in Frag. 5. The only possibilities seem to be *cīdā*, known from Bk. 2. 48 and 63, and a hitherto unknown *cīād*. OP *cīdā* "so long" is used only with correlative *yātā* "until";

<sup>2</sup>In the Daiva-Insc., *a-pa-u-da* should be normalized not *ayuda*, with Herzfeld *AMI* 8. 56-77 (whom I followed in *Lang.* 13. 294), but *ayanda*, since the corresponding verb in Avestan has the present-tense stem *yanza-*, "boil" = OP *yāda*. Equation with Skt. *yudh-*, Av. *yōd-* "fight", is possible, but somewhat less likely because of the difference in present formation: *yudhyāti*, *yōdyēti*.

it is possible, but not probable, that *citā* alone was used in the meaning "until", with the connotation "so that". *Cinā* seems to me more likely, as an instrumental adverb from the stem *ci-*, meaning "whereby", = "so that"; or in an indefinite meaning, "at all", after a negative, as here, and followed by a supplementary statement. The latter interpretation seems to me better, since the word can then be equated with Avestan *cinā*, given by Chr. Bartholomae in the *Altiranisches Wörterbuch* 594-5 as following a negative and having the meanings, in combination with the negative, "auch nicht, gleicherweise nicht, ebensowenig, nicht einmal, ne . . . quidem". The *nicht einmal* meaning is that which fits here, and I have adopted it in my translation. The only objection to the equation is that the Avestan *cinā* (and its declinable derivative stem *cina-*) are equated with Skt. *canā*; but the *i*-vowel may be original in the Avestan forms, rather than secondary from *-a-*, and Av. *cinā* may therefore be exactly equivalent to the restored OP *ci[nā]*.

37 *astiy*: certain in Frag. 9, although in Frag. 6 the last characters of this line are *a* and a very fragmentary character which in Scheil's drawing does not agree with *sa*.

38-9 *tur[sati]y*: the first two characters assured by Frag. 9, thus replacing my previous [*apariya*]<sub>32</sub>.<sup>\*</sup>

39 *lauvigā*: nom. sing. masc. of the comparative; for the formation, cf. Av. *staogah-* "stronger", Skt. *sthauiyas-*.

39-40 *sukaubim*: as established by Frag. 9; cf. *JAOS* 56, 219-20.

40-41 *vimardatiy*: with the prefix, as shown by Frag. 9.

42-3 *dastakartam*: the *dasta-* is established by the Elamite *SU-MES-mu h[u-ut-tuq-qa]* "in (=with) the hand made", in the corresponding place; cf. Weissbach, *ZDMG* 91.85.

43 *paruzum naty*: established by the corresponding Elamite *ap-pu-qa in-ni* "formerly not"; cf. Weissbach, *ZDMG* 91.85.

45 ff.: Weissbach's latest restoration, in *ZfA* 44, 159-60, using the reverse of Frag. 11, completes the text in 52 lines, which seems to be correct. In 45-49 (= my old 50-55) there are still considerable gaps. In the final section, the wording is correct as I gave it in *JAOS* 54, 43-4, though the ideogram may have been used for *Auramazda*. The publication of Fragment 11 is an essential preliminary to further comment.

<sup>\*</sup> But the idiom of the ablative with *apariyaga* is assured by the Dairvane, lines 49 and 51-2, cf. the note thereon in *Lang*, 13.303.



The three Elamite fragments are so distributed that with the aid of the OP and Akk. versions and of the Nakš-i-Rustam texts it is possible to make a tentative restoration of the 34 lines corresponding to the first 44 lines of the OP, except for a very few words. Two of the three fragments are inscribed on both sides, so that we have five fragments of text, as follows:

- Frag. 1, lines 4-11 (line-ends at left); Scheil 21.71, obverse.  
 Frag. 2, lines 9-13 (no line-ends); Scheil 21.75, obverse.  
 Frag. 3, lines 13-21 (line-ends at left); Scheil 21.63.  
 Frag. 4, lines 27-36 (line-ends at left); Scheil 21.72, reverse of Frag. 1.  
 Frag. 5, lines 30-34 (no line-ends); Scheil 21.75, reverse of Frag. 2.

The same notation is used as for the OP transliteration, namely raised numerals to indicate the fragments and italics for letters present only in ambiguous traces, as well as for those entirely lost. Line 13 is given twice, since the line-divisions in Fragments 2 and 3 were different. After line 20 there is a blank space of one line in Frag. 3, though no text seems to have been omitted. The division in lines 30-34 is according to Frag. 4, the extant text of Frag. 5 here overrunning the line-ends.

A serious difficulty develops when the relative position of the texts on obverse and reverse is studied. Line 32 on Frag. 5 stands opposite line 11 of Frag. 2, its obverse, which indicates an inscription of 42 lines, a length made probable by the amount of OP text; but lines 9 and 30 are opposite each other on Frag. 1 and Frag. 4, which gives an apparent total of 38 lines. This inconsistency can be explained on the basis that Frag. 1-4 was inscribed on the front and back of a tablet, and on the top and bottom edges as well; 17 lines on the front, 4 on the bottom, 17 on the reverse, 4 on the top edge, which brings lines 9 and 30 opposite each other. Frag. 2-5 was on a tablet which was inscribed front and back only, or perhaps also on the bottom edge, but without text on the top edge. In any instance, Frag. 3 represents another copy, since its text overlaps that of Frag. 2, and it runs from line 13 to line 21, ending at an edge—whereas lines 18-21 on Frag. 1-4 must have been on the bottom of the tablet. Also, the stopping of Frag. 3 at line 21 indicates a half-way mark which is confirmed by our other calculations, though we may wonder why Frag. 3 has a line of empty space

before line 21, which must have been matched by another blank somewhere on the reverse.

I wish to emphasize again that this text is only tentative; the original may have had alternative writings in almost any portion of the restored parts. Above all, I should not have ventured to give it here if I had not enjoyed the assistance of my friend and colleague, Professor E. A. Speiser. My hope is that this tentative text will assist in the utilization of any further fragments which may be found to belong to this document.

I here use, with a few slight modifications, Weissbach's old system of transliteration, that the reader may more easily compare this text with the material published in his *Keilinschriften*. For the readings now proposed by Weissbach himself, cf. *ZfA* 44, 161-2.

- 1 [<sup>100</sup>na-ap ir-ša-ir-ra <sup>100</sup>u-ra-mā-da ak-qa <sup>4</sup>mu-ra-un da-aš-]
- 2 [-da <sup>100</sup>ki-ik hu-be da-aš-da ak-qa <sup>1</sup>ruh<sup>14</sup> be-ip-la-iš-da]
- 3 [ak-qa ša-ya-ti-um be-ip-la-iš-da <sup>1</sup>ruh<sup>14</sup> ša-ri-na ak-qa]
- 4 [<sup>1</sup>da-ri-ya-ma-u]-<sup>1</sup>iš <sup>1</sup>sunkuk<sup>1</sup> [ir šu-ut-lāš-da bi-ir ir-še-ki-]
- 5 [-ip-na] <sup>2</sup>sunkuk ki-ir ir-še<sup>1</sup> [ik-ki-ip-in-na da-]
- 6 [-ut]-<sup>1</sup>te-nu-um-ir-ra <sup>1</sup>š<sup>1</sup> [<sup>1</sup>da-ri-ya-ma-u-iš <sup>1</sup>sunkuk ir-]
- 7 <sup>1</sup>ša-ir-ra <sup>1</sup>sunkuk <sup>1</sup>sunkuk-ip-in-na <sup>1</sup>[sunkuk da-a-u-iš-pe mi-]
- 8 <sup>1</sup>iš-be-da-na-aš-pe-na <sup>1</sup>sunkuk <sup>4</sup>mu<sup>1</sup> [ru-un hi ak-ku-ra-ir-]
- 9 <sup>1</sup>ra ir-ša-na ša<sup>1</sup>-da-na<sup>2</sup>ni-qa ha-to<sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup>mi<sup>2</sup> [iš-da-aš-be <sup>1</sup>ša-ak-]
- 10 <sup>1</sup>ri <sup>1</sup>ha<sup>1</sup>-<sup>2</sup>ak-qa-man-<sup>1</sup>nu-ši-ya <sup>1</sup>par-sir<sup>12</sup> [<sup>1</sup>par-sir<sup>1</sup>]
- 10 <sup>1</sup>ri <sup>1</sup>ha<sup>1</sup>-<sup>2</sup>a-qa-man-<sup>1</sup>nu-ši-ya <sup>1</sup>par-sir<sup>12</sup> [<sup>1</sup>par-sir<sup>1</sup>]
- 11 <sup>1</sup>ša-ak<sup>1</sup> [ri<sup>1</sup>] <sup>2</sup>har-ri-ya <sup>1</sup>har-ri-ya<sup>2</sup> [š<sup>1</sup>i-iš-ša a-ak <sup>1</sup>da-ri-]
- 12 [-ya-ma-u]-<sup>2</sup>iš <sup>1</sup>sunkuk na-an-ri za-u<sup>2</sup>-[mi-in <sup>100</sup>u-ra-mā-da-]
- 13 [-na hi <sup>1</sup>da-a]-<sup>20</sup>ya<sup>3</sup>-u-iš <sup>1</sup>ap<sup>2</sup>-[pa ...
- 13 <sup>20</sup>ya<sup>2</sup>-u-iš <sup>1</sup>ap<sup>2</sup>-[pa <sup>1</sup>š mar-ri-ra me-ša-me-ra-qa <sup>4</sup>par-sip ik-]
- 14 <sup>2</sup>qa-mar<sup>3</sup> [<sup>1</sup>š ik-ki me-ir-da-nu-ip man-na-ut-me <sup>1</sup>u-ni-]
- 15 <sup>2</sup>ni ku<sup>3</sup> [ti-iš ap-pa <sup>1</sup>š ik-qa-mar ap tur-ri-qa hu-be hu-ut-luk-]
- 16 <sup>2</sup>qa da-at<sup>3</sup> [da-um ap-pa <sup>1</sup>š-ni-na hu-be ap-in mar-ri-]
- 16 <sup>2</sup>ud-da ap<sup>3</sup> [pa <sup>1</sup>š-ni-na da-at-da-um hu-be ap-in mar-ri-]
- 17 <sup>2</sup>iš <sup>2</sup>ma<sup>3</sup> [da <sup>4</sup>hal-la-lam-ti <sup>4</sup>par-tu-ma <sup>4</sup>har-ri-ma <sup>4</sup>ba-]
- 18 <sup>2</sup>ak-tur<sup>3</sup> [ri-iš <sup>4</sup>su-ug-da <sup>4</sup>ma-ra-iš-mi-iš <sup>4</sup>sir-ra-an-qa <sup>4</sup>]
- 19 <sup>2</sup>hu-ru-ma<sup>3</sup> [ti-iš <sup>4</sup>su-at-da-tu-iš <sup>1</sup>maš-pi-ya-ap <sup>4</sup>]
- 20 <sup>2</sup>gan-da<sup>3</sup> [ra <sup>4</sup>hi-in-du-iš <sup>4</sup>ša-ak-qa <sup>4</sup>u-mu-mar-qa-ip <sup>4</sup>ša-ak-]
- 21 <sup>2</sup>qa ti<sup>3</sup> [ik-ra-qa-u-da-ap <sup>4</sup>ba-pi-lī <sup>4</sup>šā-šā-ra <sup>4</sup>har-ba-ya]
- 22 [<sup>2</sup>ya-u-na-ip AN.KAM<sup>14</sup>-ip <sup>4</sup>ša-ak-qa ap-pa AN.KAM<sup>14</sup> mi-ud-]
- 23 [-du-man-na <sup>4</sup>iš-ku-ud-ra <sup>4</sup>+ + + + <sup>1</sup>tur-qa-ap a-ak]

- 24 [<sup>1</sup>da-ri-ya-ma-u-iš <sup>2</sup>sunkuk<sup>3</sup> na-an-ri ir-se-ik-ki ap-pa]  
 25 [+ + + hu-ut-tuk-qa hu-be šì-iš-ni-na <sup>4</sup>á hu-ut-da-ra]  
 26 [<sup>1</sup>da-a-ya-u-iš + + + ir-qa ki-ir hal-pi-iš hu-be <sup>2</sup>]  
 27 <sup>3</sup>u hu<sup>4</sup>-[ut-da-ra za-u-mi-in <sup>5</sup>u-ra-más-da-na sa-ap ir-]  
 28 <sup>6</sup>qa ki-ir in-ni<sup>7</sup> [za-ma-ak + + +]  
 29 <sup>8</sup>qa-te-ma mur-da<sup>9</sup> [da-at-da-um ap-pa <sup>10</sup>á-ni-na hu-be]  
 30 <sup>11</sup>iq-qa-mar ip-se-man-be sa-ap<sup>12</sup> [<sup>13</sup>iš-<sup>14</sup>ba<sup>15</sup>-ak-ra iš-  
 31 <sup>16</sup>tuk-ra<sup>17</sup> in-ni ir-qa za-ma-ak in-<sup>18</sup>ni<sup>19</sup> ir-qa ra-ma-ak  
 32 <sup>20</sup>a-ak<sup>21</sup> <sup>22</sup>da-ri-ya-ma-u-iš <sup>23</sup>sunkuk<sup>24</sup> na-an-ri za-u-mi-in  
 33 <sup>25</sup>u-ra-más-da-na ŠU-MEŠ-<sup>26</sup>ma hu<sup>27</sup>-ut-tuk-qa ir-se-ik-ki  
 34 <sup>28</sup>ap<sup>29</sup>-pa ap-pu-qa in-ni qa-te-ma hu<sup>30</sup>-ut-tuk<sup>31</sup>-[qa ir]-<sup>32</sup>še<sup>33</sup>-[ik-]  
 35 [-ki + + + + + ]-<sup>34</sup>ri-ap <sup>35</sup>á[  
 36 ]<sup>36</sup>qa<sup>37</sup>[

## NOTES

1 ff. I have used a suspended *d* to designate the horizontal wedge-determinative.

5-6 *da-ut-te-nu-um-ir-ra*: with reversal of the order of the elements in the compound, as compared with NRa 6 *te-nu-um-da-ut-ti-ra*, as Scheil 21, 73 points out.

19 *may-si-ya-ap*: equivalent to OP *macyā*, as in Elam. NRa 25 = OP NRa 30. The length of the line seems to demand this reading rather than the shorter *ma-ak-qa* Bh. I. 14 = OP *maka* Bh. I. 17.

23: There is a name of a province here, that is lost in all versions.

25: The gap is for a word representing the *duš*- of OP *duškartam*.

26: The gap is for the correspondent of OP *ayauša*. For the *aniya aniyam* that immediately follows in OP 33, and recurs in OP 35-36 (Elam. 27-28), I have set *ir-qa ki-ir*, which is in part extant at its second occurrence; space seems to be lacking for *da-a-e da-a-e*, in both places.

38: The Elam. text here is inadequate to fill the line, although by the meaning we seem to need only the equivalent of OP *cinā* (if that be the correct restoration in OP 36).

29 *da-at-da-um*: for OP *dātām*, borrowed into Elam. Weissbach, ZDMG 91. 83, restores as *da-ut-tam*; NRa (Elam.) 16 has *da-at-tim*, according to Stolze's photograph (so Weissbach, Keilinsch. d. Achām. 88); but the Dairva-Inscription of Xerxes has *da-at-da-um* (according to photograph in my possession, Elam. 14-15), and this is what I have followed.

Finally, Weissbach in *ZDMG* 91. 84-5 and *ZfA* 44. 162-4 offers some alternatives to the Akkadian text (Scheil 24. 116-21, with plates), which Professor Speiser prepared for inclusion in my article in *JAOS* 54. 47-50. It is to be remembered that in the restorations Speiser was misled by the defective character of my OP version. The essential changes are as follows:

- 4: Wb. omits *is-tin*, thinking the space inadequate.
- 11: Wb. omits *û*.
- 14: Correct *ma-da-a* (misprint) to *ma-da-a-a*.
- 20, at end: Wb. has *i-na* <sup>acc</sup>*m[ar-ra-tum û šá]*, which means *utâ* instead of *Sabâ* in OP 28; this agrees with the Daiva-Insc. 23-4, rather than with NRa 28-9.
- 21: Wb. restores at the end [<sup>acc</sup>*pu-û-ta* <sup>acc</sup>*ku-û-šu*], though he admits (*ZfA* 44. 168) that the space is inadequate for the restoration of more than one name, unless the characters are unusually crowded.
- 23: Wb. has *b[ab-ba-nu-û]* for [*da-mi-ig-ti*].
- 24: Wb. omits the restored *-šû-nu* of Speiser's text.
- 25: Wb. has [*a-na-ku e-pu-uš i-na*] instead of [*nu ki pa-na-ma e-te-pu-uš*] *i-na*.
- 26: Wb. restores *ša* <sup>acc</sup>*niš* instead of *a-ga-šû-û-nu*.
- 28: Wb. restores *p[a-li]h-u-* (— OP *larsatiy*), instead of *ku-[ul]-lu-*.
- 31-33: Weissbach's proposed text is the following; I set \* before words differing from the readings of Speiser, who however proposed (or considered) them all, *JAOS* 54. 50.
- 31 ..... \**dul-lu-um* (?) *ma-a-da šá i-na*
- 32 \**pa-na-ma* [*i-na šá*]-*ri-šû la ep-šu a-na-ku i-na*
- 33 *šâ-r[i-šu \*e-(te-)pu-u]š \*a-mu-ur-ma bir-tum*

The last passage then agrees perfectly with the OP, beginning with *dul-lu-um* 'Arbeit', — *dastakartam* OP 42-3, to *e-pu-uš* (or *e-te-pu-uš*) = *akunavam* OP 45. He regards the character GUR as the stonemason's error for *pa*. After *akunavam*, however, he sets [*utâ : anai*] 46 'nam : didâ', to correspond with (Scheil's reading) *a-mu-ur-ma bir-tum* "(and) I saw: a well . . ." Even with the insertion of *utâ*, line 45 of the OP has then but 17 characters, which makes it plain either that another word stood there or that *a-mu-ur-ma* and *anavam* are not to be read. For Akk. 33, therefore, I still feel that Speiser's reading (given *JAOS* 54. 48) is better.

## LAPSES OF OLD TESTAMENT TRANSLATORS

THEOPHILE JAMES MEER

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO

NO BOOK has been so frequently translated as the Hebrew Bible and none has been the object of such profound and critical scholarship, and yet no book has probably been less accurately translated than that same Bible. The main difficulty is, of course, that Hebrew and English are so very different from each other in vocabulary, grammar, and syntax. The task of the translator is not an easy one.<sup>1</sup> There are a thousand and one things to keep in mind, and it is little wonder that slips so frequently occur. It is the purpose of this paper to note a few of the many instances where translators of the Old Testament have erred through inattention to Hebrew grammar and syntax.

The order of words in a Hebrew sentence is scarcely ever what it would be in English. All scholars know this, and yet they often fail to apply their knowledge. An illuminating example is Josh. 21:43, where all translators have followed the Hebrew order of words to give the totally wrong rendering, "So Yahweh gave Israel all the land which he had sworn to give to their fathers." What the Hebrew actually says is, "So Yahweh gave Israel all the land which he had sworn to their fathers to give to them," i. e., "to Israel" (with the direct object first and the indirect object second, as is usual in Hebrew).

More illuminating still are the many instances where the *casus pendens* construction in the Hebrew has been overlooked. Scholars have quite generally recognized this construction in Gen. 1:4, which reads literally, "God saw, as for the light, that it was good," or in idiomatic English, "God saw that the light was good." What God saw was not "the light," as used to be understood by reproducing the Hebrew order of words, but "that the light was good." This construction is a very common one in most of the Semitic languages, and it is found in the Old Testament much more frequently than is generally recognized. For example, in Dent. 9:18 וַיִּשְׁמַע יְהוָה בְּקוֹל מֹשֶׁה is regularly taken as the object of the pre-

<sup>1</sup> For some of the difficulties see the present writer's "Translation Difficulties in the Old Testament," *Religion in Life* III 491-508.

coding verb, but closer inspection shows that it is to be taken as *casus pendens* and the verb as the perfect of instantaneous action: "I see, as for this people, behold it is a people stiff of neck," or in idiomatic English, "I see that this people is indeed a stiff-necked people."

Similarly, Deut. 5:12, with its variant Exod. 20:8, is not to be translated, as it is universally, "Observe (*var.*, remember) the Sabbath day to keep it holy," but "Be careful (*var.*, remember) to keep the Sabbath day holy." The words, *אֲתֵיָּיִם לִשְׁמֹר*, are not the object of *שְׁמֹר*, but are in the *casus pendens*, and the verb *שְׁמֹר* has here, not the meaning "to keep, observe," but "to be careful," as so frequently elsewhere. If any other proof of this were necessary, it would be sufficient to compare two passages like Deut. 8:1, "All the charge that I am enjoining on you today, you must be careful to observe," and Deut. 7:11, literally, "So you must be careful, as for the charge, namely, the statutes and ordinances that I am enjoining on you today, to observe them," or in idiomatic English, "So you must be careful to observe the charge, namely, the statutes and ordinances that I am enjoining on you today." In these two passages the author is saying exactly the same thing, using two different constructions to emphasize the word "charge": by placing it at the beginning of the sentence in Deut. 8:1 and by putting it in the *casus pendens* in Deut. 7:11.

Other examples of the *casus pendens* construction, properly translated into idiomatic English, are as follows: "For I fear that he will come and slay me, as well as the mothers and children" (Gen. 32:12); "Be assured that your sin will find you out" (Num. 32:23); "But you must remember that it is Yahweh, your God, who has been giving you power to gain wealth" (Deut. 8:18); "That all the peoples of the earth may know that the hand of Yahweh is strong" (Josh. 4:24); "I alone am left, and they seek to take my life" (I Kings 19:10, 14); "For those who keep his covenant and remember to observe his precepts" (Ps. 103:18). And these are only a few of the many instances where translators have failed to recognize the *casus pendens* and have erred accordingly in their translations.

Another construction that is frequently overlooked is the explicative use of *war*. It is found in one of the passages quoted above, Deut. 7:11, "So you must be careful to observe the charge, namely, the statutes and ordinances that I am enjoining on you today."

The *waw* used with **וְהָיָה** in the Massoretic text is omitted in some thirteen Hebrew manuscripts and in the Samaritan version, as it is in the same context in Deut. 6:1. This shows that the *waw* is not conjunctive, as ordinarily taken, but explicative, and so it is to be translated "namely." Similarly, in Exod. 20:4 the *waw* prefixed to **כָּל־חַסְוֹנָה**, as is shown by its omission in the parallel passage, Deut. 5:8, is explicative, "You must not make for yourself a carved image, namely, any likeness of that which is in the heavens above, or which is on the earth below, or which is in the waters under the earth." The *waw* is not to be taken as conjunctive, as it regularly is, nor is it to be deleted with the editors of all three editions of the Hebrew text in Kittel's *Biblia Hebraica*.

Sometimes the failure to recognize the *waw* explicative leads to a totally wrong interpretation, as, for example, in Lev. 18:7, usually translated, "The nakedness of thy father and the nakedness of thy mother thou shalt not uncover; she is thy mother; thou shalt not uncover her nakedness." The verse, however, reads literally, "The nakedness belonging to your father, namely, the nakedness of your mother, you must not uncover; since she is your mother, you must not uncover her nakedness," or in better English, "You must not have intercourse with her who belongs to your father, namely, your mother; since she is your mother, you must not have intercourse with her." The last half of the verse, with its first clause circumstantial, shows quite definitely that the *waw* with **עִוָּת אִמְךָ** is not to be taken as conjunctive, as it is by all translators, but as explicative.

This same passage also illustrates another construction that Old Testament translators are continually overlooking—more often than any other. All scholars are perfectly aware of the fact that Hebrew expresses logical subordination by grammatical co-ordination, the grammatically subordinate clause appearing with comparative rarity. In the verse under discussion, Lev. 18:7b, there are two grammatically co-ordinate clauses in Hebrew, but the first is clearly circumstantial and should accordingly be translated, "since she is your mother."

Another illustration of the same construction, universally overlooked, is Exod. 7:14b, 15a, where we have, it is true, four grammatically co-ordinate clauses, but to translate them as independent clauses is to fail utterly to bring out the thought of the Hebrew. The first clause, with its verb as participle, is clearly circumstantial.



The second clause is just as clearly adverbial to it,<sup>2</sup> telling how Pharaoh is stubborn. Since a clause can be construed as a noun and hence can be in any case (nominative, genitive, or accusative), this clause is to be taken as being in the accusative; not as the object of a verb, but in the adverbial accusative or the accusative of manner. The main clause appears at the beginning of verse 15, and the clause that follows, with its verb as participle, is of course circumstantial. Hence it is quite incorrect to translate these clauses as four independent sentences, as is regularly done, but instead they must be translated as follows: "Since Pharaoh is stubborn, in that he refuses to let the people go, go to Pharaoh in the morning, just as he is leaving the water."<sup>3</sup>

When once it is recognized how clauses may appear in the adverbial accusative in Hebrew, the construction is seen to be of common occurrence, and its accurate reproduction in English makes a translation quite different from the accepted versions, as a few examples will show: "Search was made, beginning with the oldest and ending with the youngest" (Gen. 44:12);<sup>4</sup> "So Joshua captured all the cities of those kings, as well as all the kings themselves, and put them to the sword, putting them under the ban, as Moses, the servant of Yahweh, had commanded" (Josh. 11:12);<sup>5</sup> "You have acted foolishly by not keeping the command of Yahweh, your God" (I Sam. 13:13);<sup>6</sup> "So he remained there with Yahweh for forty days and nights, without eating bread or drinking water" (Exod. 34:28); "I found<sup>7</sup> that you had indeed sinned against Yahweh, your God, by making yourselves a molten bull, having quickly swerved from the path that Yahweh appointed you" (Deut. 9:16); "Only be very strong and resolute to be careful to do just as my servant Moses commanded you, without swerving therefrom either to the right or to the left, in order that you may succeed in

<sup>2</sup> For this kind of clause see the writer's articles, "The Co-ordinate Adverbial Clause in Hebrew," *JALN* 40, 156 ff.; *AJSL* 47, 51 f.

<sup>3</sup> To change the verbs of the co-ordinate adverbial clauses in these two passages from the finite form to the infinitive absolute, as is regularly done, is seen to be quite unnecessary and wrong, when once the construction is recognized.

<sup>4</sup> To change קם to ים in this passage, as is regularly done [but see Driver, *Notes on Samuel*, ad loc.], is again quite uncalled for and wrong.

<sup>5</sup> All translators take this verb as intransitive, "I looked," whereas it is clearly transitive, its object being the clause immediately following.

all that you undertake" (Josh. 1:7); "So Joshua made a surprise attack on them, by marching all night from Gilgal" (Josh. 10:9); "You are to eat it just as you would a gazelle or a deer, the unclean and the clean eating it together" (Deut. 12:22). To the extent that the translator fails to recognize these adverbial clauses, to that extent he fails to do justice to the Hebrew. They are not to be translated as independent clauses, as is universally done, but as subordinate clauses, since that is their equivalent in English. A translation, to be accurate, must reproduce the idiom of the original in the idiom of the language into which it is translated and not simply produce a literal word by word rendering, which is often no translation at all.

Closely related to the clause in the adverbial accusative is that in the accusative of specification. A good illustration is found in Lam. 2:17, which verse, rather strikingly, contains three clauses in the accusative, each of a different kind. The clause, **אֲשֶׁר זָמַם**, is in the accusative as the object of the verb **עָשָׂה**. The last clause, **וְלֹא חָטַל**, is in the adverbial accusative, expressing the manner in which the action of the preceding verb, **זָמַם**, was carried out. The clause, **אֲשֶׁר צָוָה מִיִּסְדִּיקָם**, has regularly been taken as a relative clause, but to do this is to destroy the parallelism of the passage and turn the poetry into prose:

"Yahweh has done what he planned; he has carried out his word,  
Which he decreed long ago; he has devastated without mercy."

The clause in question is not relative, but is in the accusative of specification, "in the matter of that which he decreed long ago," or in more acceptable English, "as he decreed long ago." Hence the verse should be translated as follows:

"Yahweh has done what he planned, he has carried out his word;  
As he decreed long ago, he has devastated without mercy."

This is poetry, with the parallelism of the original preserved, and it is to be noted, furthermore, that the parallelism is climactic, another thing that is lost in the ordinary translation.

The fact that the grammatically co-ordinate clause is sometimes logically subordinate has at times an important bearing on Old Testament problems, as, for example, that of the content of the Decalogue. All scholars have read Exod. 20:2 — Deut. 5:6 as an independent sentence. Most of them have made it introductory to the Decalogue, but some have made it the first command,\* when it

\* E. g., J. M. P. Smith, *The Origin and History of Hebrew Law*, pp. 81.

is no command at all, but a mere statement of fact. They have been forced to do this because they delete the command prohibiting images (Exod. 20: 4 — Deut. 5: 8) as a late insertion into the Decalogue. Closer inspection of the text, however, shows how utterly wrong both conclusions are. The clause in question is clearly a circumstantial clause, with the subject first, as is usual with this type of clause, and the divine name, "Yahweh," is not to be taken as the predicate, but in apposition to the subject "I."<sup>1</sup> Hence the first command in the Decalogue has to be translated, "Since I, Yahweh, am your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of a state of slavery, you must have no other gods beside me." This makes utterly impossible the reading of the two verses as separate sentences or the deletion of the command prohibiting images. Hence the Decalogue must stand as it appears in the Hebrew text; but whether that was its original content is quite another matter. It has generally been thought that the arrangement in ten laws is primitive, but there is no assurance of this whatsoever. It is an arrangement found in no other Oriental law-book, and it is much more likely to be late rather than early, a purely mechanical arrangement that smacks of artificiality.

All translators, apparently without exception, ignore the consecutive or consequential force of  $\text{ו}$  and  $\text{וְכֵן}$  with the infinitive construct, some scholars even going so far as to deny the usage.\* Note, however, a passage like Judges 2: 11 f., "Then the Israelites did what was evil in the sight of Yahweh, by serving the Baals and forsaking Yahweh, the God of their fathers, who had brought them out of the land of Egypt, and by running after alien gods, from among the gods of the peoples that surrounded them, and by paying homage to them, so that they provoked Yahweh to jealousy." The last clause is introduced by  $\text{וְכֵן}$  consecutive with the imperfect ( $\text{וַיִּשְׁמְרוּ}$ ) and hence can only be interpreted as consequential. Now with this compare a passage like Deut. 9: 18, "Then I prostrated myself before Yahweh, as I did before, for forty days and nights, without eating food or drinking water, because of all the sin that you had committed, in doing what was evil in the sight of Yahweh,

<sup>1</sup> So the present writer as long ago as 1927, *The Old Testament: An American Translation*; cf. also Poschel, *Das oppositionell hesitative Pronomen der 1. Pers. Sing. in den westsemitischen Inschriften und im Alten Testament* (1932).

\* See, e.g., Brown-Driver-Briggs, *A Hebrew and English Lexicon*, p. 775.

thus provoking him to jealousy." Here we have a different construction, the infinitive construct with the preposition ל (להכעיס), but the meaning is exactly the same, so that the ל is clearly consequential. And the same must be true of למען in such a passage as II Kings 22:17, "Because they have forsaken me and have sacrificed to alien gods, thus provoking me to jealousy (למען הכעיסני) by all the work of their hands, therefore my wrath shall be kindled against this sanctuary and it shall not be quenched." The three passages exhibit three different constructions, but they are exactly parallel, with the character of the first unequivocal and hence determining the character of the other two.

It is apparent, then, that there must be a goodly number of instances in which ל and למען with the infinitive construct must be interpreted as consequential, and the translator must ever keep a sharp lookout for these occurrences if he essays an absolutely correct translation. Another of the occurrences is Amos 2:7, "A man and his father go in to the harlots," thus profaning (למען חלל) my holy name," or "to the profanation of my holy name," as against the regular translation "in order to profane my holy name," which is quite incorrect, since למען here is not final, but consequential.<sup>10</sup> Hence a passage like I Kings 2:27 is to be translated "So Solomon ousted Abiathar from being priest to Yahweh in fulfilment of (למלא) the word of Yahweh, which he spoke concerning the house of Eli at Shiloh." The ordinary translation of יהוה למלא אחדברי יהוה here, "in order to fulfil the word of Yahweh,"

<sup>10</sup> This word, זנות, has been universally mistranslated. It is a collective with the generic article, literally "the maidens," i. e., "the harlots," as the context indicates; probably religious prostitutes.

<sup>11</sup> The exact equivalent of למען in Greek is *pro*. In classical Greek this is always final, but in the New Testament it is often consequential, particularly with the verb *παράβω*, as most modern translators of the New Testament have recognized, but all of them have been inconsistent in their interpretations: Moffatt gives *pro* with *παράβω* its consequential force only in Matt. 1:22, 12:17, 21:4, making all the others final; Goodspeed sees the consequential force in twice as many passages, Matt. 1:22, 2:23, 8:17, 12:17, 21:4, John 12:38; Torrey, the most consistent of all, sees the consequential force in all passages except three, which, doubtless through an oversight, he makes final, John 12:38, 15:25, 17:12. In only three passages do all the translators agree in their interpretations, viz, Matt. 1:22, 12:17, 21:4, all taken as consequential. This lack of consistency among competent scholars is an interesting commentary on the very subject that our paper discusses.

makes the mistake of taking  $\text{ל}$  with the infinitive construct as final, when it is clearly consequential; exactly as it is in English in such a sentence as "The tower rose to a height of a thousand feet, to become the tallest in the country."

Another usage of  $\text{ל}$  with the infinitive construct is that expressing degree. A good illustration is Deut. 9:8, "Even at Horeb you provoked Yahweh to anger; indeed Yahweh was angry with you to the point of destroying you" ( $\text{לְהַשְׁמִיד אֹתְכֶם}$ ), or in better English, "indeed Yahweh was angry enough with you to destroy you." The same phrase and the same construction appear in Deut. 9:19, "For I stood in dread of the anger and wrath, with which Yahweh was angry against you to the point of destroying you," which in better English could be translated, "For I stood in dread of the anger and wrath which Yahweh had against you to your destruction," where the  $\text{ל}$  of the Hebrew has its exact equivalent in the English "to." One other illustration is Ruth 2:10, "Why have I found such favor in your sight that you should take notice of me ( $\text{לְהַצִּירָנִי}$ ), when I am a foreigner?"

And so the list of lapses on the part of Old Testament translators might run interminably on. Our illustrations only indicate a few of the many places where translators have gone astray. No man, of course, can attain perfection, and venturesome indeed is he who would essay it. He has undertaken the impossible. But man has always been attempting the impossible, and each endeavor, with all its failures, has been a stepping-stone to a better effort. None can attain perfection, but each can add his mite to the attainment of what in the end may at least approximate perfection.

## HEBRAICA

JAMES A. MONTGOMERY  
UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA

(1) *dārôm*, "the South" — the circle of the ecliptic?

Professor Burrows has presented an admirable historical study of the later use of the word in his article "Daroma" in *JPOS* 1932, 142 ff., and so with confinement to its application to the Southland of Judah. He gives no further suggestion for the etymology of the cryptic word. But it has a broader and more ancient signification than in its Jewish application to the Judæan Negeb. It appears first in the North Israelite Blessing of Moses, Dt. 33: 23, according to which Naphtali is promised the possession of "West (—Sea) and South (*dārôm*).” The word is originally a general term for the south without local application. All through the Bible it refers to that point of the compass, at Eze. 40: 24, etc.; 42: 14 ff., in the plan of the temple; at Job 37: 17; Eccl. 1: 6 and 11: 3 (at these two last places in contrast to the north); at Eze. 21: 2 it is paralleled with *šāmā(h)*, the more common word for the south, and then more particularly precised as the Negeb—a passage which may represent the first instance of the late localization of the word (the English translations generally fail in distinguishing the three words). The word occurs elsewhere only in the Aramaic Christian-Palestinian dialect (see Schulthess, *Lexicon*, 48), where it is used of the point of the compass, e. g., at Is. 43: 6, Luke 13: 29. It is accordingly common to both Hebrew and Aramaic. For its etymology the writer suggests derivation from the root *dār*, with its sense of "circle," and so with reference to the ecliptic, the great southern circuit of the sun. Arabic derivatives of that root are similarly used by the Arabian astronomers. That such an astronomical term was used early by the West Semites is no cause of suspicion; the Babylonians knew of the ecliptic as "the path of the sun"; see Meissner, *Bab. u. Ass.*, II, 406. The final syllable *-ôm* is then the old accusative ending. For the surviving ending in *-â* in nouns of direction see Ges.-Kautzsch, *HG* § 90 d-g, e. g., in the words for north and east at Is. 15: 5; for the survival of the acc. in fixed noun-forms see Bauer-Leander, *Hist. Grammatik*, p. 528. For the nasal suffix we have numerous examples, e. g.,

*yōmām* = Syr. *ʾmām*, also S. Arab. *yumm* (Rhodokanakis, *Studien z. Etymologie*, I, 65), *ʾlām* (see the writer's note in *JQR* 25, 267 f.). In place-names this suffix appears, e. g., in Adullam, and constantly with distraction of the long vowel, presented as *-ajim* (see Ges.-Kautzsch, § 88). In general for these terminations see H. Torczyner's *Die Entstehung des semitischen Sprachtypus* (1916). The vocalization of our word appears to be North Canaanite.<sup>1</sup>

(2) *yām sūp* ("the Red Sea") — *Ultimum Mare?*

The translation throughout in the Greek is 'the Erythraean, i. e., Red Sea,' except at I Kings 9: 26, where the Grk. have unanimously ὁ ἑρυθρὸς θάλασσα, i. e., vocalizing as *sōp* instead of *sūp*. This gives a novel but admirable name for that Sea, which as an arm of the Indian Ocean is *ultimum mare*. The usual translation as 'Sea of Sedge' has never explained itself. The Red Sea is a deep body of water without, to my knowledge and upon inquiry, any particular aquatic flora. It has become customary to explain the name by a revision of the tradition of the crossing of the Red Sea at the Exodus, whereby the waters crossed were those of the swampy pools in the isthmus of Suez, with which theory the identification of the word *sūp* with Egyptian for papyrus would agree. (Reference may be made for the discussion to W. M. Müller, *Asien u. Europa*, 42 ff., 101, and his article "Red Sea," in *Enc. Bibl.*)

<sup>1</sup>Subsequent to the writing of the above there has come to hand D. Nielsen's *Das Shamra Mythologie u. Biblische Theologie* (Leipzig, 1936). He presents (pp. 17 ff.) a strong argument for the determinative force of final *m* in many such cases in S. Arabic, e. g., the divine names *ʾdām*, *ʾlām*, *Waddām*, at times exchanging with *n*, e. g., both *ʾdān* and *ʾlān*. With this phenomenon he combines *Has Shamra eīm*, as not "gods" but "the god," which he finds also in Phoenician *ʾm*; and he compares the name of the Ammonite deity *Milkām*. This outlook throws light on numerous Hebrew place-names in *-am* > *-ajim*, e. g., Kiriathayim, accusative of "the City" (cf. *ἐκ τῆς πόλεως* > "Stambul"; Kartan Jos. 21: 32 = Kiriathayim, 1 Ch. 6: 61; etc. And so in Heb. *yōmām* = *ἡγγām*, 'this day, to-day' (as in Arab.). Brockelmann, *Grundriss*, I, pp. 473 f. (c, d, e) notes as though with indefinite mimation such nominal forms, place-names and adverbial forms, but in these instances the mimation is generally of definite meaning. We have to recognize the early fluid exchange of final *m* and *n*, even in Canaanite dialects, e. g., the Moabite masc. pl. in *-n*, along with intrusions in Biblical language (Ges.-K., § 87 e). Consequently the word under discussion should mean "the circuit."



But the writer has always wondered why the Red Sea should have been given so insignificant a name as Sedge Sea. The critics' plea of the ignorance of the ancients is shallow. The sea was well enough known from early times as the avenue of commerce with the distant Orient; the tradition of the crossing makes it a deep sea, Ex. 14: 21 ff.—it was no mere swamp in that tradition. The word *sāp* is used of "the flags" among which the ark containing the infant child Moses was placed, Ex. 2: 3; was the definition and so ultimately the vocalization taken from there? At all events the Greek translation with *ultimum mare* is most ingenious; if not correct, it is one of the cases in which a translation betters the original. The only writer known to me who has remarked this unique Greek rendering is B. Moritz in his *Arabien* (1923), 71, he holding however that it refers to the Gulf of Akaba as "farthest" in relation to the Gulf of Suez. Here also may be a note on other references to this *Ultimum Mare*. Psalm 72: 8 prays that the king "may have dominion from sea to sea, and from the River to the ends of the earth" (cf. Zech. 9: 10, BSira 44: 21). Commentators generally find the Euphrates in "the River," but are indefinite about the seas, as though here we have Messianic exuberance. Among the commentators, so far as I find, only the Reformation scholar Geier, and Ewald, Baethgen, Cobb place that extension between the Mediterranean and the Red Sea. (See Gunkel's Comm. for various interpretations.) It is supported by v. 10 according to which the tributaries will come from Tarshish and the Isles on the one side and Seba and Sheba on the other. This definition of the seas is supported by Ex. 23: 31, where the Deity sets "thy border from the Yam Suph to the Sea of the Philistines, and from the wilderness (*miḡbār*) to the River." Objection might be made that our usual geographical polarization is not made, N — S, E — W. However P. K. Hitti in his recent admirable *History of the Arabs* (1937), 476, cites the Arab geographer Ibn Khallikan's specifications of the extent of the Seljuk empire at the end of the eleventh century in these terms: "His kingdom extended in length [i. e., in longitude] from Kashgar, a town at the extreme end of the land of the Turks, to Jerusalem, and from Constantinople to the Caspian Sea." Such a statement is far more obscure to our cartography than the Biblical one. To sum up, the Mediterranean and the Red Sea-Indian Ocean are the two *Ultima Maria* of Biblical geography.

## (3) The land of Cabul.

Josephus is the first to give an interpretation of this place-name at I Kings 9: 13, as "not pleasing," and subsequent commentators have in vain attempted to establish the meaning "good-for-nothing," and so the Chicago Bible renders it. But our oldest authority, the Greek Bible, translates the word with *τὸ ὅριον*, "the border," i. e., "the march-land." It is simply a phonetic (Phoenician?) variant of *g'pāl*, which has that meaning; cf. Phoen. *palek* for *peleg*. The depreciative interpretation is due to the conclusion that the name was given by Hiram in his displeasure at Solomon's rate of payment of his debt, with the translation, "and he called them the land of Cabul to this day"; but that the verb is to be impersonal, after frequent usage, is demanded here by the final "unto this day." Translate with the Jewish Version and Moffatt, "and they were called," etc.

(4) "in the land" = Akk. *ina mātī*.

I Kings 4: 19 concludes the list of Solomon's officers with "and one lieutenant in the land." The Old Gr. attached to this the first word in v. 20, obtaining "in the land of Judah," and either this reading has been adopted by modern critics, e. g., by Stade, who however retains "Judah" in the next verse, or another tribal name has been invented in lieu of "Judah" (see Kittel in *BH* ed. 3). But by "the land" is meant the royal province of Judah, which had its particular vice-regent. At once is to be compared the Assyrian *šakia mātī*, the governor of the home-province of Ashur (see Forrer, *Provinzeinteilung*, 7), as well as the frequent occurrence of the expression *ina mātī* for the king's remaining in residence. This usage appears again at 9: 18, 'Tamar in the steppe in the land,' which has puzzled early translators and modern critics, and also at II, 8: 1.

## (5) The multiplicative expression.

Jer. 16: 18 reads, "And I will repay their sins *ri'šōnā(h)* *māšōnē(h)*." The Grr. translate this phrase with *δωλῶν* "two-fold" (and so a gross error in Cod. B is to be corrected). The Syriac and Vulgate translated the first word with the adverb "first," which has been followed by the English and American Versions in general. Some critics simply cancel the first word "as omitted in

the Gr." [1], e. g., Kittel in *BH*. Graf and Cornill have attempted rewriting. But the phrase is correct and means just what the Gr. has, 'two-fold.' We may only note as strange, but perhaps idiomatic, not the expected cardinals, one and two, but an adjective 'first,' followed by a noun, "double." It is the multiplicative expression,  $1 \times X = X$ -times, well known in Aramaic, e. g., Dan. 3: 19, common in Syriac, and represented in the Greek Gospel of Mark 4: 8, 20 with *ἐν τριάκοντα*, etc., "thirty-fold," etc.; as long recognized by students cognizant of the Aramaic; and yet the most recent commentator on Mark, Lohmeyer (1937), still ignores the idiom. For the troubles of the Greek textual critics (whether *ἐν*, *iv*, *eis*, *eis*) see Westcott and Hort, *et al.*

This idiom in Jeremiah might appear to be an Aramaism. But it also occurs in an ancient pure Hebrew text. I Sam. 1: 5 reads: "And to Hannah he would give a portion 'אֶפְסָה 'appa'im." The recent English Versions follow the Syriac in translating with "a double portion." But the phrase has been long debated, especially because of the variants in the Greek and the Latin. Smith in his Commentary and Kittel in *BH* change the text to conform with the Greek, "one portion, but [reading 'ἐπες] he loved her." (Rather a sorry reward for the best loved wife!) Jerome has a remarkable *tour de force* for the second word, *tristis*. The Syriac recognized the idiom and is correct. 'appa'im, generally the "nostrils," but also the "face" (e. g., Gen. 3: 19) is here used as dual of 'ap meaning "person." Gesenius in his *Thesaurus*, I, p. 127, properly insisted on this interpretation comparing Syriac 'appā, "person." This use of the singular is now corroborated from Ras Shamra, by no. 5 of the first published tablets, where the whole personality is expressed in the phrase 'ap napš, "face and soul [psyche]," just as in Heb. pānīm came to mean the person. The passage means "a portion of 1 x 2 persons," i. e., "a two-persons' portion." And this is simply what we expect.

With regard to the 'face' as representing the person, as in the phrase, "the Face of God," I recall my note on the occurrence of its use to express the divine Person at II Cor. 4: 6, where Paul speaks of 'the light of the knowledge of the Glory of God in the Person of Jesus Christ,' the earliest use of the term in Christian theology.<sup>2</sup> As may not have been recognized, this use of "face"

<sup>2</sup> *JBL* 1934, 88.

appears in a kindred Semitic field. In Sura iii, 18 of the Koran the Prophet is bidden to say, "I have resigned my face to God." On this Baidhawi comments: "I have given my whole soul and person to him. . . . 'Face' is used to express 'self,' because the face is the most honorable of the external members of the body, and the theatre of the faculties and senses." The comment is of interest as coming from a Semitic interpreter, even as the Prophet's use of the term vouches for its widespread Semitic vogue.

(6) A case of arithmetical proportion.

At I Kings 5:30 we read of 3300 officers "ruling over the people" in Solomon's *corvée*, but at 9:23 there are 550 such officers. Now at 5:27 there is a levy of 30,000 laborers for Lebanon, but at 5:29 the figure is increased by 70,000 carriers, 80,000 hewers, i. e.,  $30,000 + 70,000 + 80,000 = 180,000$ . The increase from the lower to the higher figure of the officers was cleverly made by some computer:  $550 : 3300 = 30,000 : 180,000$ . It may be noted that the figure 3300 was changed by the Chronicler (II, 2, 17) and by the OGr. here to the round number 3600, which some modern text-critics too easily accept.

(7) The word for the harlot's fee.

At Hos. 2:14 and 9:1 this word appears as *'eṣṣā(h)* and *'eṣṣān*. It is generally recognized that the word in its variant forms is connected with the root *ṣṭn*, "to give." (Otherwise now G. R. Driver, who finds here an Aramaism, *Journ. Theol. Studies* 38:293 ff.) But it is to be related immediately to the Phoenician development of *ṣṭn* > *yṭn*, for which see Harris's ingenious explanation in his *Gram. of the Phoen. Language*, 44. The present Heb. noun arose by further process of *yṭ-* to *'ṭ*. The second Nun in the alternate form may represent an artificial attempt to relate the word to the Heb. root; n. b., the remarkable vocalization of the second syllable. Further, the verbal forms at Hos. 8:9, "they hired lovers" (*ḥitnū*) and v. 10, "they will hire among the nations" (*yitnū*) are denominatives from the noun just studied. N. b., the peculiar vocalization of the second verb, where a Hifl is expected.

(8) Hebrew "word" = "reason."

At Ben Sira 37:16 is read: "The beginning of every work is *dābār* (var. *mā'mār*). And before any action is thought

(*mahšêbet*). The Gr. translates the first word with *logos*. The parallelism requires the identification of "word" with "reason." This possibly overlooked case is the earliest instance of that identification in the Semitic, probably under Greek influence. Of the use of *logos* at Heb. 4:12, "the reason of God," while the hypostatization of the Divine Logos or Reason at John 1:1 has its roots in long Semitic usage. Indeed it is striking to compare with our verse the introduction to the Gospel of John, "In the beginning was the Word."

(9) Light from the Arabic.

(a) The ancient versions are mostly used as correctors of the Hebrew text and their intrinsic linguistic and literary interest is generally ignored. The following two cases are specimens of the Greek knowledge of vocabularies known only in the Arabic.

At Dan. 9:4 the OGr. translates נִסָּה, properly ("Ah," with δὸν "behold," i.e., reading the word like the sole Arabic *'inna*, (I have earlier noted this in my *Daniel*, *ad loc.*)

At Kings I, 18:42 and II, 4:34, 35 occurs a verb *gakar*, translated customarily in the former case with "he bowed himself down" (in worship), in the second with "he stretched himself" (upon the dead boy's body). In the first case the Greek translators agree with the current translation, although the root is not otherwise known to us. But in the two verses in II Kings no less than five different translations are offered by the Grr. in text and glosses, plus a Lucianic translation of the Heb. vocable appearing variously as γυλαδ, γυαδ, γυαλαδ. This variation from the Heb. *gkr* is usually explained (e.g., by Benzinger) as by the common corruption of the final letter. But further in the OGr. the verb is translated with δεικναι, in Lucian with the correspondent ἀνίσταμεν, along with his original ἀνδράσας, both of which can only be explained from the well known Arabic root *jakada*, "to act strenuously," used especially of fighting in the holy war, giving the well-known noun *jihad*. That is, the root *ghd* was read by the Grr., the received transliteration is correct. The translation has the idea of the prophet "struggling" upon the child's body, by a kind of full-length chiropractic, just as in the similar miracle Elijah "stretched himself upon the child three times" (I, 17:21). Note that the Gr. ἀνδρίζεσθαι is also used in *sensu obscuro*; i.e., those early translators knew a verb *ghd*, which is otherwise found only in the Arabic.

(b) All English translations, and so far as I know, all commentators present at I Kings 10: 25 (= II Ch. 9: 24) among the list of "presents" which "every man" gave to King Solomon, "vessels of silver and gold and raiment and armor and spices," etc. But armor, as the vocable is generally translated elsewhere, is rather a questionable gift as from aliens. It occurred to the writer from the translation of the Grr. here with *σπαρτή* — Lat. *stacte* (and so in the Old Latin here), that the Heb. word *nšq* must mean myrrh. He subsequently discovered that Ewald long ago had made this suggestion, that the word must mean "some kind of perfume, as it is in the Arabic," but without observation of the Greek corroboration of his etymology.\* *Stacte* is the best quality of Arabian myrrh.<sup>4</sup> The word thus belongs to the Arabic root *naṣaqa*, 'to smell,' and so by regularity our word should be spelt with a Sin, *nšq*, and so distinguished from the word for armor. There arises with this derivation the question of the relation of the theme with Heb. *nšq*, "to kiss": see the discussions cited in Ges.-Buhl, *Heb.*, 527. Compare the corresponding theme, of etymological and social interest, of the "The Sniff-kiss in Ancient India," as treated by the late Professor Hopkins in *JAOI* 28, pp. 120-134.

(c) In the Greek Supplement to I Kings 2, v. 46a it is read that Solomon *ἤρξατο ἀνοίγειν τὰ θησαυροεῖματα τοῦ Λιβάνου*, i. e., "began to open the . . . of Lebanon." For attempts to interpret the otherwise unique word represented with a blank see the writer's note in *ZAW* 1932, p. 128, e. g., Winckler's suggestion of "opening the mines." But the word must mean dynastic states, *imperia*, or the like. The passage makes sense by reverting the verb "to open" to Heb. *pnjah*, and giving it the common Arabic meaning of "to conquer"; i. e., "he conquered the kingdoms of Lebanon." The same meaning of the root is doubtless to be found in the *n. pr.* Jephthah, reduced from Yiptah-il, 'God-conquers.' Again I find that Ewald has anticipated me as to the sense without, however, giving the Arabic parallel (*ib.*, Eng. tr., III, 261).

(d) "His delight is in the fear of the LORD," Is. 11: 3.

The variety of translations of this phrase is remarkable. The Versions all read otherwise, or missed, or ignored. Poole in his

\* *Gesch. Israels* III, 391; Eng. tr., III, 285.

<sup>4</sup> See W. H. Schoff, *Periplus of the Erythraean Sea*, 112 ff., with citation of Pliny's account of the drawing of the precious sap.

*Synopsis critica* gives a half column to the interpretations of the phrase, in which the first word would normally be translated "his smelling." It is a humor of exegesis that he cites one commentator who holds that the sense of smell is less liable to error. The AV, following the same psychology, offers "a quick understanding," however very honestly in the margin giving as a variant "scent, or, smell." In English first with the RV do we obtain a fairly standard translation, as given in the title above, followed by subsequent translators (Moffatt's Bible omits the phrase, whether on ground of criticism or personal repugnance is not known). This interpretation is anticipated by Luther, "sein Gefallen." But modern commentators still object, e.g., Gray, who after a half page of discussion concludes that the phrase is quite improper, "the fear of Y. was not a smell." But there is in Arabic a similar phrase from the root *ʾṣṣ* (— Heb. *ʾṣṣ*), parallel to the Heb. root *ʾrāḥ*, the basis of our word in question, and which includes the ideas of breath, smell, etc.; the VIth form of the Arabic verb, *tanāḥṣa* means "to take pleasure (in)"; I note a case in Ibn Khaldūn's *Prolegomena*, Cairo ed., 1930, p. 2. In either case, Arabic and Hebrew, the verb means to take a good, satisfying breath, to refresh one's self with the atmosphere.

(e) "After thee, O Benjamin!", Jud. 5: 14; Hos. 5: 8.

Various emendations of this text have been proposed; Moore, at Judges, remarks after considering various alterations that it is rash to emend in this desperate context. But comparing the prepositional phrase *ʾaḥarākā* with the equivalent *wardaka* (see Wright, *Arab. Gr.*, II, p. 75), it simply means, "Back!", and so "Look out for yourself!" In the Koran, Sura xiv, 19 occurs *min ward'ihī jahannum*, literally "Hell is back of him," on which Baidhawi comments, making it identical with *min bayni yadayhī*, "in front of him," i. e., with either preposition — "may he look out for Hell!" Cf. also Sura xi, 94.

(f) The caritative name-form "Solomon."

In *JQR* 25 (1936), 263, I have noted the diminutive, caritative formation of this name, properly represented in the Arabic with Sulayman, via the Syriac. There may be noted Baidhawi's comment (at Sura cvi) on the same form for the name of the Prophet's clan of Quraysh, that it was so pronounced "for magnification,"



i. e., *ad honorem*, which gives another slant on the use of the diminutive.

(g) The Ras Shamra locative with *Hē*.

Despite the vowellessness of the Ras Shamra script the locative *šmm* "heaven," is *šmmh* (as in Heb.),<sup>1</sup> which must indicate the presence of a breathed *h* at the end. I may compare the cases cited by Wright in his *Arab. Gr.*, II, § 236, for the same phenomenon in Arabic poetry, where the same termination in fem. nouns (as in Hebrew) is breathed and pointed as a consonant, i. e., *-ah*.



<sup>1</sup> See Montgomery and Harris, *R. Shamra Myth. Texts* 21.

THE ORIGIN OF THE EARLY DYNASTIC STYLE  
(STUDIES IN ORIENTAL ARCHAEOLOGY II)

VALENTIN MÜLLER  
BRYN MAWR COLLEGE

MOORTGAT HAS RECENTLY given an excellent picture of the development of Mesopotamian figure representation from the Uruk-period to the Early Dynastic.<sup>1</sup> The beginning of the development is characterized by a very fresh, lively, and rather naturalistic, but undisciplined, style; the figures are scattered all over the field, not standing in rows on a line which represents the ground. The forms are full and swelling, the lines curving and swinging; we feel the exuberance of unspoiled power and force. The end is marked by order and discipline, by fixity and rigidity. The figures no longer float in the field, but have an absolutely fixed position determined by a rigid scheme of lines. The forms of the figures are rather hard and restrained and the lines are sharp and geometric. The power of abstraction has taken hold of life and given it a new organization; witness the coat of arms of the various towns showing the Indugud with various animals in strictly antithetical compositions.

The foregoing very condensed characterization may be supplemented by the description of two figures in the round, not analyzed by Moortgat. One belongs to the Jemdet Nasr period and was found recently by H. Frankfort.<sup>2</sup> It is of stone, but looks very soft in texture. The forms are round and swelling; the limbs are thick and fleshy, and the breasts are large and full, while the nose is big and curved. The modelling is not very detailed, but exact in rendering the natural forms. The artist reproduced a human being in a general, but faithful, manner; he did not stylize it, but preserved the impression of the living being as such. Stylization, on the other hand, is apparent at once in the other figure, which was found at Al Ubaid and belongs to the Early Dynastic period.<sup>3</sup> It has an inscription telling the name of the person, Kur-lil. Kur-lil

<sup>1</sup> Anton Moortgat, "Frühe Bildkunst in Sumer," *Mitteil. Vorderasiat. Ges.* 40, part 3, Leipzig, 1935.

<sup>2</sup> *Illustr. London News*, Sept. 22, 1936, p. 584, fig. 4-5; *Arch. Orientforsch.* 11, 264.

<sup>3</sup> *Ur Excavations*, I, 27, pl. 9.

is seated on the ground with his legs crossed and the hands clasped in front of the body, in the common Mesopotamian manner. The forearms are, however, not held horizontally as in the statues of Gudea, but obliquely with the hands on a higher line than the elbows; the upper parts of the arms are likewise slightly divergent from the perpendicular pose and so are the contours of the legs. Consequently the figure resembles a cone with the head as the apex. The human figure has been fitted into a geometric scheme. If we look at the figure in sideview we likewise see that all the contours converge towards the top, so that the human figure is approximated to a geometric one as closely as possible. Furthermore, not only the contours but all the lines as well, follow the geometric scheme. The upper contour of the leg bulges upwards, the forearms form a kind of gable which likewise points upwards, and even the eyes are set obliquely in the face. The forms are no longer full and swelling as in the earlier figure, but rather dry and hard, while the lines (for instance, the lids of the eyes and the lips) are geometric, not organic. Summarizing, we may say: the human figure has been organized according to a preconceived scheme.

Moortgat has pointed out admirably that the development from one style to the other was not abrupt, but that several characteristic features of the later style occur already in the earlier one, such as the antithetical group, the groundline, and others. Nevertheless, he rightly emphasizes that a change in style took place at the beginning of the Early Dynastic period in so far as the earlier loose style had disappeared and order and discipline had become supreme.\* A comparison between two examples of the antithetical group, one from the Uruk and the other from the Early Dynastic period, make this difference clear.\* Although the antithetical composition as such means the subordination of the figure to a scheme, the example from Uruk is much looser; we have the feeling that the pattern is not rigid, but that we could expand or compress it. The forms of the animals are full and swelling, and the lines are as round and swinging as in other monuments of the period. It is significant that only extremities, namely necks, legs, or tails, cross one another, not whole bodies. The crossing of bodies, on the other hand, is characteristic of many pictures of the Early

\* Moortgat, *loc. cit.* 70, 90.

\* Moortgat, *loc. cit.* 34 fig. 1 and 85 fig. 12.

Dynastic period. The pattern has become rigid and the figures petrified.

What are the reasons for this change and for the origin of the new, rigidly organized structure? Moortgat leaves the question open, whereas Christian explains it on ethnic grounds.<sup>6</sup> A conquering people might have brought the new style with it. A conquest at the beginning of the Early Dynastic period is indeed very probable,<sup>7</sup> but, for the following reasons, it is not possible to explain the new style as introduced from outside. First, since the script proves that the Sumerian language was spoken in Mesopotamia before such a conquest,<sup>8</sup> the invaders were either so few in number and so easily absorbed that they could not impose their language and thus also their style upon the conquered, or they were of related stock; in the latter case, the style of their art would not differ so much from the earlier one. Secondly, the main features of the new style are not discernible in the arts of the surrounding countries from which the conquerors might have come. We find abstraction and linearity contrasting with Mesopotamian naturalism in Persia, as shown by the Susa-I style, but not order and discipline.<sup>9</sup>

We must, therefore, look for another explanation. Are there any analogies for such a change from an indefinite to a disciplined style? I think there are. The change in the style of Egypt from the prehistoric to the dynastic period is described by various scholars with almost the same words as Moortgat used for Mesopotamia.<sup>10</sup>

The wall paintings at Hierakonpolis and on early sculptured

<sup>6</sup> Moortgat, loc. cit. 54. Christian, f. d. d. WZKM 43 (1936): 237 f.

<sup>7</sup> Speiser, AJA 37 (1933): 406; V. Müller, JAOS 57 (1937): 87; Legrain, *Ur Excavations* 3, 2; Jordan, 3. *Bericht Deutsch. Ausgrab. Irak* = Abh. Preuss. Ak. Phil.-Hist. Kl., 1932, Nr. 2, 37. A definite change in architecture at the beginning of the Early Dynastic period is well exemplified by the temple of Sin at Khafaje: Frankfort, *Progress of the work of the Oriental Institute in Iraq 1934/5*, 29.

<sup>8</sup> Legrain, *Ur Excavations* III, 3.

<sup>9</sup> Cf. Moortgat, loc. cit. 17; M. Swindler, *Ancient Painting*, fig. 100-102; H. Frankfort, *Studies in Early Pottery of the Near East* 1, pl. 1 f.; *Délégation en Perse, Mémoires* 13.

<sup>10</sup> A. Moret, *Histoire Ancienne* 1; *Histoire de l'Orient* 21 ff.; L. Curtius, *Die Antike Kunst* 1, 20 ff.; F. Matz, *Jahrb. Deutsch. Archäol. Inst.* 37, 1922, 41.

palettes<sup>11</sup> do not show the figures arranged in friezes and standing on groundlines, but scattered all over the field as on vase fragments from Bismya and Khafaje and on other Mesopotamian monuments.<sup>12</sup> Also the forms of the figures on the palettes differ from the later ones by being full, round, swelling, naturalistic and powerful. The style of the Gilgamesh figure on the knife-handle from Gebel El Arak which imitates an Asiatic model of the Jemdet Nasr period has hardly been modified by the Egyptian artist.<sup>13</sup> We feel in these monuments an undisciplined life of brutality and wildness. The palette of Narmer exemplifies the new style of the historic period.<sup>14</sup> Discipline and order have been established. The figures are fixed to a groundline. The pharaoh, as the most important person, dominates the composition, the other figures being subordinated to him and put at places fixed by the composition as a whole. The figures themselves have changed in form; they appear rather abstract and sober; the contour is sharp; straight lines and angles prevail instead of curved and swinging forms. We shall not speak of petrification as in Mesopotamia, but of linearization. Furthermore, the special scheme of the Egyptian silhouette with parts of the body in sideview and others in frontview is being developed.<sup>15</sup> It is true that the new style did not arise within one year and that there is still some of the former indefiniteness in the palette of Narmer in comparison with later monuments, but the stylistic change seems to have been more abrupt in Egypt than Mesopotamia.

In Egypt we have proof that the change in style coincided with a conquest, namely with the conquest of Lower Egypt by the kings of Upper Egypt and with the establishment of a strong and centralized monarchy replacing the loose federation of clans.<sup>16</sup> In Egypt, just as in Mesopotamia, the conquerors did not differ con-

<sup>11</sup> M. Swindler, *Ancient Painting*, fig. 32; Capart, *Primitive Art in Egypt* 168 f., 231 ff.

<sup>12</sup> Montgat, loc. cit. 79, 84; B. Meissner, *Babylonisch-assyrische Plastik* 7, fig. 12; Banks, *Hiampa* 268; Scharff, *Zeitsch. Ägypt.* 71 (1935), pl. 1.

<sup>13</sup> Frankfort, loc. cit. pl. 12; Scharff, loc. cit. 85, pl. 1, cf. Heinrich in *5 Bericht. Druck* (1933), 20.

<sup>14</sup> Swindler, loc. cit. fig. 34; Capart, loc. cit. 244 f.; Frankfort, loc. cit. pl. XI.

<sup>15</sup> Cf. Curtius, loc. cit. 124 f.; Mats, *Jahrb. Deutsch. Arch. Inst.* 38/9 (1923/4) 3 f.

<sup>16</sup> Moret, loc. cit. 181 f.

siderably from the conquered in ethnic stock, although the Asiatic admixture might have been greater in Lower Egypt.<sup>17</sup> We are thus forced to the conclusion that the conquest as such was influential in the sense that the shock upset the old pattern of culture and established a new order. But Moret has shown admirably that an internal mental development went side by side with the external political one: writing developed from the pictographic to the phonetic stage.<sup>18</sup> Definite and fixed terms and orders could be given and a well organized administration could be built by the pharaoh. Oral commands and oral tradition, always exposed to change, gave place to written forms; tradition was made permanent. Egypt entered the historic period.

Scholars used to begin the historical age in Mesopotamia with that period which we now call Early Dynastic.<sup>19</sup> I think we are justified in retaining this use, although the excavations have shown that the preceding phases of civilization were already highly developed and writing was known in some of them. But writing made a great step forward and reached a higher level with the Early Dynastic period.<sup>20</sup>

There is a third example of the change in style under consideration. It took place in Greece at about 700 B. C. I showed the origin of a new style of sculpture some years ago<sup>21</sup> and shall do it for architecture elsewhere. Other scholars have followed me in regard to sculpture and have pointed out the same change in pottery and in the decorative arts.<sup>22</sup> The style of the Geometric period down to about 700 B. C. is loose and indefinite. In sculpture, the figures are often thin-like skeletons with the limbs spreading off from the body. The vases are decorated with zones of linear ornaments. These zones are arranged in a specific composition, it is true, illustrating the shape of the vase: large zones, for instance,

<sup>17</sup> Moret, loc. cit. 172 f. <sup>18</sup> Moret, loc. cit. 96 ff. <sup>19</sup> Moret, loc. cit. 332.

<sup>20</sup> V. Gordon Childe, *Man Makes Himself* 171-8.; Moret, loc. cit. 149; Lagrain, *Ur Excavations* III, 5; Falkenstein, *OLZ* (1937), 95 ff.; Moret, loc. cit. 32 f.

<sup>21</sup> V. Müller, *Frühe Plastik in Griechenland und Vorderasien*, Augsburg, 1929.

<sup>22</sup> Buschor, *Plastik der Griechen*, Berlin, 1936, 13; E. Hampe, *Frühe griechische Vasenbilder* 20 ff.; E. Kunze, *Kretische Bronze-reliefs*, Stuttgart, 1931; F. Matz, *Gnomon* 2, 1933, 460. The difference between the two styles is, however, much greater than in Mesopotamia or Egypt, which fact supports the hypothesis of Oriental influence in Greece.

emphasizing conspicuous parts. Nevertheless, the composition is not a closely knit and centralized unit, but a loose aggregation of various elements which consist of rather thin and unsubstantial lines. Weight and substantiality are characteristics of the following style, after 700 B. C. The number of zones is reduced and they are filled with weighty figures instead of ornaments.<sup>23</sup> Furthermore, the composition has become unified and fixed, the elements being subordinated to an embracing scheme. Figurines now display the *blackstyle* with the limbs not spreading off, but close to the body. The arms mostly hang by the sides vertically, and the division between the upper and lower parts of the body is marked by a belt, so that the figure seems to be encased in a fixed composition of lines. The exploding energy of the preceding style has been disciplined; an organized structure has appeared.

The other traits which accompany the change of style in art are likewise present in Greece. The Geometric age was illiterate, writing having come in at the end of the period, although we must call the period which begins at about 700 proto-historic rather than historic.<sup>24</sup> Great economical and political changes are indicated by the beginning of colonization in the second half of the eighth century and by the rise of tyranny in the first half of the seventh,

<sup>23</sup> Swindler, *loc. cit.* fig. 199, 202, 211, 256; Pfuhl, *Malerei und Zeichnung der Griechen*, 3, pl. 1, 12, 15.

<sup>24</sup> Carpenter's date for the introduction of the alphabet, namely about 700, might be a little too late, but a much earlier date is excluded on several grounds: oriental motives taken over in the Geometric period are completely changed in style (cf. the centaur in the Metropolitan Museum at New York; cf. G. Richter, *Handbook of the Glass, Coll.*, 1930, 62, fig. 29; Kunze, *Arch. Mitt.* 55, 1930, Beilage 38) whereas the Greek letters reproduce Phoenician ones rather closely as do Greek works of the Early Orientalizing period (cf. V. Müller, *loc. cit.* 89). The uncertainty of early historical dates in Greek history, for instance of the founding of colonies, proves that written records were non-existent in the eighth and rare even in the seventh century. The alphabet was probably used first by merchants and sailors who came in contact with the Orientals, as the early occurrence of inscriptions on vases seems to prove, and we might assume that the higher classes were first reluctant to adopt it; but it cannot have taken centuries before the alphabet spread from business to government. For the alphabet see Carpenter, *AJA* 37 (1933), 8 ff.; opposing views are expressed by Ullman, *AJA* 38 (1934), 359 ff., Harland, *AJA* 38 (1934), 90 ff., and Blakeway, *Journ. Rom. St.* 25 (1935), 143. For the uncertainty of early dates in Greek history see Burn, *Journ. Hell. St.* 55 (1935), 130 ff.



the latter establishing a new social order.<sup>31</sup> A conquest such as in Mesopotamia and Egypt did not occur in Greece, but the contact with Oriental civilization beginning in the eighth century and proved by imported objects and Greek imitations of Oriental motives can be taken as an equivalent.

We draw the following conclusions: A new style arises in all three leading civilizations of antiquity with the beginning of the respective historical periods. Its chief characteristic is a definite organization which subordinates all elements to a comprising scheme. Consolidation takes place and order and discipline are substituted for earlier indefiniteness and looseness. This new style was not imposed from without as is proved by the following facts: Writing had existed in Mesopotamia before this change; the establishment of the united kingdom in Egypt was an internal affair; there was no conquest of Greece by foreigners about 700. We thus have an internal development. But, we ask, was the development purely internal and is it irrelevant that the change coincided with an upheaval, namely conquests in Egypt and Mesopotamia, and contact with the outside world in Greece? We are forced to the conclusion that a releasing force, a catalysator, was needed to materialize the change. The case is clearest in Egypt where the influence of the new political order on the other phases of life is unmistakable. We may, therefore, conclude that the analogous events in Mesopotamia and Greece were of equal importance. The releasing force is thus as necessary as the internal development; both together create something new which has no actual antecedents in the previous life of the nation. The internal development is the condition for the creation of the new style, but the actual creation depends on historical events and, therefore, not on racial, ethnic, or other predispositions. We must say: the origin of a new style at the beginning of a historical period is explainable on historical grounds, that is on events, not on predispositions.

It goes without saying that there are differences between the new styles in Egypt, Mesopotamia, and Greece, only the essential feature, i. e. the new order, remaining the same. These differences are due to the varying predispositions, different lines of development and the different historical situations. The Egyptian works,

<sup>31</sup> *Cambr. Anc. Hist.* III, 548 ff., 649 ff.; C. A. Robinson, *Anc. Hist. Rev.* 42 (1936), 68 ff.

for instance, are generally higher in quality and show the more delicate Egyptian style, characterized by long and straightlined forms in contrast to the more contracted Mesopotamian style which prefers curved and dynamic forms.<sup>26</sup> In Greece, the abstract and linear style precedes the naturalistic style and does not follow it as in Egypt and Mesopotamia. Furthermore, the development in Egypt and Mesopotamia takes place under similar conditions, but independently, because the Mesopotamian influence occurred some time before and brought to Egypt the late predynastic style.<sup>27</sup> In Greece, however, the Orient was the releasing force and gave the models for the new style. We abstain from all valuations, whether such influences have to be taken as good fortune or as disaster, namely that they were helpful in furthering the development, or whether they gave it a wrong direction. People may even differ whether the order of the historical style was a blessing or whether the earlier youthful, although undisciplined power, was preferable.<sup>28</sup> The author will be satisfied if the reader accepts the foregoing argumentation as sound reasoning about historical facts.<sup>29</sup>



<sup>26</sup> Cf. Scharff, loc. cit. 105 f.

<sup>27</sup> Scharff, loc. cit. 105; Christian, *Mill. Anthe. Ges. Wien*, 46, 1936, 216.

<sup>28</sup> Cf. Schott in *5 Bericht Druk*, 84.

<sup>29</sup> The author hopes that A. Toynbee's monumental *Study of History*, Oxford, 1934 will make discussions of this kind more popular.

# ANOTHER CASE OF THE PREDICATIVE USE OF THE GENITIVE IN SUMERIAN

ARNO PORRELL

ORIENTAL INSTITUTE, UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

IN AN ARTICLE entitled "Le suffixe du relatif et le suffixe du génitif en Sumérien" which appeared in RA XXXII (pp. 191-98), Thureau-Dangin on pp. 193 and 194 compares the following two passages (here given in his transliteration and translation):

Förtsch, VS XIV, No. 179, col. 9, ll. 4 ff.

maš-da-ri-a	(Ce sont) présents
Bára-nam-tar-ra	qui pour Baranamtarra,
dam Lugal-an-da	l'épouse de Lugalanda,
PA-TE-SI	PA-TE-SI
Lagasa <sup>k</sup> -ka-ra	de Lagas,
esen še-kú	en la "fête de la consommation du grain"
<sup>a</sup> Nanše-ka	(fête) de Nanše,
mu-na-gigin-na-am,	sont arrivés.

and

Nikolski, Drevnosti II, 2, No. 157, col. 4, ll. 2 ff.

maš-da-ri-a	(Ce sont) présents
Bára-nam-tar-ra	qui pour Baranamtarra
dumu-mín i-tu-da-a	au (jour) où elle accoucha d'une fille,
é-gal-la	au palais
mu-na-gigin-na-kam	sont arrivés.

Thureau-Dangin believes that the phrase maš-da-ri-a....-mu-na-ge<sub>12</sub>-ge<sub>12</sub>-na-am, in the first text, where the relative clause mu-na-ge<sub>12</sub>-ge<sub>12</sub>-na is followed immediately by the enclitic verb form -am, "is," and the phrase maš-da-ri-a....-ge<sub>12</sub>-ge<sub>12</sub>-na-kam in the second text, where the relative clause mu-na-ge<sub>12</sub>-ge<sub>12</sub>-na and the enclitic verb form -am are separated by a k, are identical, both meaning "(Ce sont) présents qui . . . sont arrivés." In view of this assumed identity he feels that the only possible explanation of the k in the second text is that it is inserted to avoid the hiatus between the two vowels. Thus he finds support for his theory that the k so frequently noted in Sumerian genitive phrases

is not an organic part of the genitive element and serves no other purpose than the avoidance of a hiatus.

Now if it is true—as I believe I have shown in many articles with absolute conclusiveness—that the *k* is an organic part of the genitive element, the two phrases referred to by Thureau-Dangin obviously cannot be identical; in point of fact they are not identical. For only the first phrase, *maš-da-ri-a...mu-na-ge<sub>12</sub>-ge<sub>13</sub>-na-am<sub>3</sub>*, means “(the various objects enumerated on the tablet) are (—am<sub>3</sub>)” the gifts that have arrived for her (—*maš-da-ri-a...-mu-na-ge<sub>12</sub>-ge<sub>13</sub>-na*),” while the second phrase, *maš-da-ri-a...mu-na-ge<sub>12</sub>-ge<sub>13</sub>-na-kam*, clearly means “(the various objects enumerated) are (—am) (part) of (—k) the gifts that have arrived for her,” or “they belong to the gifts that have arrived for her.” In other words, the *k* which the second phrase inserts between the relative clause and the enclitic verb form is not a meaningless insertion, but represents the genitive element -(a)*k*, which here after the -a of the relative clause appears without its amissible vowel *a* in complete conformity with the rule given in *Grundsätze d. Sumer. Gram.* § 349 for cases in which the genitive element follows words or grammatical elements ending in a vowel.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>2</sup> As to their grammatical forms the substantive *maš-da-ri-a* and the verb forms *mu-na-ge<sub>12</sub>(n)-ge<sub>13</sub>(n)* and -am<sub>3</sub> are singulars since, according to *Grundsätze d. Sumer. Gram.*, § 132, Sumerian does not form a plural of substantives denoting things. Properly -(a)*m* therefore means “is,” while “are” properly is -(a)*meš*. The plural idea, however, is expressed by the repetition of the verbal root in *mu-na-ge<sub>12</sub>(n)-ge<sub>13</sub>(n)* (*ibid.*, §§ 444 ff.).

<sup>3</sup> The same form of the genitive element is observed in II. 14 f. of the first passage referred to above, *exen-še-kù-nanše-ka* (grammatically analyzed: *exen-še-kù-nanše-k-a*), “on the occasion of (—a) the *še-kù* festival (= *exen-še-kù*) of (—k) Nanše (= *nanše*).” For -a, “on the occasion of,” cf. also l. 5 of the second passage, *umu-munus-i-tu-da-a*, “on the occasion of (—a) her having given birth to a daughter (*umu-munus-i(-n)-tud-a*).” *itud-a* is the independent verb form *i-n-tu(d)*, “she has given birth to . . .,” substantivized by means of the formative element -a, and thus means literally “(the fact) that she has given birth to . . .” (*Gram.*, § 422). The equivalent of Thureau-Dangin’s “au (jour) où elle accoucha d’une fille” would necessarily be *u<sub>1</sub>(d)-umu-munus-i(-n)-tud-a-a*. Note also that it is very unlikely that all of the presents were delivered on the very day the birth took place and that in the other case referred to at least some of the presents might well have been delivered before the beginning of the festival.

It will be noted that syntactically the genitive here is used as a kind of "predicate noun" or "predicate adjective," a usage already known from phrases such as . . . mā-kam, "(some object) belongs to me," literally, "it is (= -am) (the property or a possession) of (= -k) me (= mā)," and . . . za-kam, "(some object) belongs to thee," literally, "it is (= -am) (a possession) of (= -k) thee (= za)." For inscriptional passages in which these phrases and other phrases of this kind occur see § 181 of my *Grammatik*.





Σάρκις - Ορθόγων Μαντείο 1

# COPTIC OSTRACON MERTON 1

NATHANIEL JULIUS REICH

THE DUROSE COLLEGE

IN THE summer of 1935 Mr. Wilfred Merton of London showed me two ostraca and two papyri of his collection and gave me permission to publish them. He also supplied me with excellent photographs of them and allowed me to make handcopies of them in ink. I want to express here my profound thanks to Mr. Merton.

In this article I am publishing one of these items, namely, the Coptic Ostrakon Merton No. 1. It measures from the extreme top to the bottom 19 cm, and at the widest place, which is the horizontal edge over the first line, 15.5 cm. The six lines of the Coptic inscription are written in clear ink, each line between the horizontal rills of the burned clay.

To save space the scribe frequently employed ligatures of letters, such as **ⲙⲣ** for **ⲙⲡⲣ** (l. 1), **ⲁⲣ** for **ⲁⲣ** (ll. 1, 2, and 4), **ⲙ** for **ⲙⲡ** (l. 2), etc. The end of sentences and clauses is marked with a dot, except for the first sentence, which ends with three vertical dots. The *hori* (l. 4) is written horizontally for lack of space between the rills. In the word for "prophet" (l. 6) note the ligature of the letter *phē*, etc. and *tau*. For other peculiarities of the scribe I refer to the reproduction on the accompanying plate.

The contents consist of a conflation of biblical sentences expressing a devotional meditation on effectual prayer.

## Transcription

ⲣ̅ Ⲛⲉ ⲙⲡⲣ ⲕⲁ ⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ ⲡⲁⲕ ⲙⲣⲱⲛⲉ· ⲉⲙⲟⲛ  
ⲙⲡⲉⲕ ⲱⲗⲏⲁ ⲱⲛⲡ ⲁⲛⲓ ⲁⲣⲓ ⲓⲣⲏⲛⲉ·  
ⲙⲏ ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ· ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲕ ⲱⲗⲏⲁ  
ⲓⲛ ⲟⲩⲡⲁⲣⲉⲥⲓⲉⲗ·  
ⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ  
ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲡⲣⲟⲑⲏⲧⲏⲥ



*Translation*

Behold, do not put blame (but) have pity on man, else  
thy prayer is not received. Make peace (εἰρήνην)  
with everybody in order that thou mayest pray  
with (the result of obtaining God's) forgiveness (ἀφέσεις).  
This is the law (νόμος)  
and the prophets (προφῆταις).



## THE NAME ASHUR IN THE INITIALS OF A DIFFICULT PHRASE IN THE BIBLE

JOSEPH REIDER

DROPSIE COLLEGE

THE DIMINUTIVE book of Nahum abounds in textual difficulties of all sorts, which every exegete and commentator tries his best to unravel, but perhaps the greatest of these difficulties is the enigmatic phrase in 1: 12 *'im š'lemim w'-hēn rabbim w'-hēn nagazzū w'-š'ār*, on which many fertile brains have exercised their acumen and ingenuity, for the most part in vain. The difficulty is not alone of a grammatical or syntactical nature, such as the conditional particle *'im* in an apparently declarative sentence, or the duplicate *w'-hēn*, which, besides, has an entirely different meaning from that which it receives here, or the incongruity of one verb of the predicate being in the plural and the second verb in the singular; it concerns also the context and the general tread of the discourse, namely the problem whether the address is to the Assyrians or the Judeans. Thus most of the early exegetes took it as directed to the Assyrians, while many modern commentators prefer to construe it as addressed to the people of Judah.

The rendering of this phrase in the ancient versions is variable and fails to throw any light on the true meaning of the sentence. The Septuagint's *κατάρχων ὁδίων πολλῶν* evidently leads to a different reading, *mōšēl manyim rābbim*, "ruler of many waters," an epithet applied to God of the preceding phrase; similarly the Peshitta. The Targum, as usual, paraphrases and introduces its own interpretation: "if they will be unanimous in their advice and numerous in the number of nations that gather to harass thee, Jerusalem, and will traverse the Tigris and pass the Euphrates and come to afflict thee, etc." The Vulgate is closely literal: *si perfecti fuerint, et ita plures, sic quoque attendentur, et pertransibit*. It is evident from the Targum that the words were considered an allusion to mighty Assyria which was about to be crashed in order to set Judah free from its yoke. This interpretation is reflected also in medieval Jewish commentaries, with the difference that some of them construe the word *š'lemim* as "peaceful" (Ibn Ezra, Kimhi, et al.) instead of "intact or perfect" (Rashi, et al.). As a

matter of fact, most of the early interpreters of the book of Nahum took this phrase as an allusion to the invasion of Sennacherib: "if they, namely the Assyrians, were once intact and so many and yet were mown down, and he, namely Sennacherib, passed away." Similarly the Revised Version and the American Jewish Version: "though they be in full strength, and likewise many, even so shall they be cut down, and he shall pass away."

Modern commentators for the most part refer the entire sentence to Judah and emend it to suit their purpose. So Duhm, who reads *'im šalem yôm 'anôfêš*, "if the day of thy affliction is complete," omitting half of the sentence as superfluous; so Marti, who reads *šalmâ gema rišî*, "completed are the days of my strife"; so also Gray, who amplifies as follows: "The thought is that the period during which Yahweh has constantly been under the necessity of punishing Judah for its sins has now come to an end; a new dispensation may now be expected from him." Other commentators take their cue from the reading of the Septuagint mentioned above, although following a different construction. Thus Bickell obtains the following expression: "The haughtiness of a tyrant is like the high tide, which soon subsides and disappears"; Wellhausen prefers the following rendering: "May the great waters be ever so full, they will yet come to naught and pass away"; Haupt somewhat similarly: "How high the tide was soever, it has ebbed and subsided"; Sellin, who is concerned with the alphabet of the first chapter of Nahum and is bent upon restoring it to its completeness, formulates the phrase in this manner: "Rulers passed and so many were cut down." Needless to say, there are some exegetes who, like Ehrlich, consider the sentence hopelessly damaged and beyond repair.

As far as I have been able to ascertain, no one has yet noted the fact that this difficult phrase, *'im šlēmim w'šên rabbim*, is acrological in character, the initial letters yielding the name Ašur. Since this is so, it stands to reason that the four words constitute a characterization of mighty Assyria, which after a period of unparalleled glory and splendor is now on the brink of doom and destruction. I suggest therefore the construction of *'im* and *šên* as substantives, the former meaning "tribe, people," in which sense it occurs in Pa. 117.1 (pl. *'ummim* | *qôyyim*, an unusual masculine form on the side of the feminine *'ummôt*, which has its counterpart also in Arabic; the postulated sing. would be *\*'am*, from *\*'um*).

*Kān* would signify "base, support."<sup>1</sup> The sense of our phrase would then be: "A nation of perfect people and support of mighty men," namely Ashur, was cut down, and passed away. Eliminate accordingly the second *wēgēn*, which is senseless, as a dittography (curiously enough the first *wēgēn* is wanting in the Septuagint, Targum, and Peshitta), similarly the plural suffix of the verb *nagorru*, unless we take it as a case of attraction to the genitive, which is plural, instead of to the nomen regens, which is singular (Gesenius-Kautzsch-Cowley, § 146a). This interpretation yields good sense and, further, is not at variance with the masoretic text.



<sup>1</sup> [The combination of *kān* and *kēn* points strongly, in view of the above connection with Ashur, to the Assyrian legal clause *šafnu ā kēnu*, the phrase signifying "an indivisible whole"; see provisionally Koschaker, *Neue Keilschriftliche Rechtsurkunden aus der el-Amarna Zeit*, 118, note 3. The sense would be, then, that a seemingly indestructible body was cut down and passed away. A fuller discussion will be given elsewhere. E. A. S.]

# THE USE OF THE WORD 安 <sup>1</sup>

J. K. SHRYOCK

PHILADELPHIA

DURING THE nineteenth century, western sinologists were much interested in Chinese grammar, and produced a large number of treatises on the subject. Among the scholars in this field were Wade, Rémusat, Marshman, Parker, Bridgman, Goodrich, Wells Williams, H. A. Giles, Chalmers, Gonçalves, Medhurst, Eitel, Crawford, Callery, Summers, Stanislas Julien, Edkins, Morrison, and De Guignes. This work culminated in the exhaustive work of von der Gabelentz, which is still generally considered the best treatment of Chinese grammar.<sup>2</sup>

The method of approach was to show how the Chinese expressed the categories of Latin grammar. Glancing through von der Gabelentz, one finds such headings as Ablativ, Activum, Adjectiv, Adverbiale Bestimmungen, Conjunctionen, Copula, Dativ, and so on down the alphabet. How was the passive voice, the subjunctive mood, or the accusative case expressed in Chinese?

It must be admitted that such exercises are an admirable preparation for the translation of Chinese into some European language. We owe these scholars a great debt for their careful and exhaustive

<sup>1</sup> The author is indebted to Professor Roland G. Kent, Dr. A. W. Hummel, and Dr. Zellig S. Harris for assistance in the preparation of this paper.

<sup>2</sup> Among the grammatical works produced were:

J. Summers. *A Handbook of the Chinese Language*. Oxford, 1863.

Stanislas Julien. *Syntaxe nouvelle de la langue chinoise*. Paris, 1862-70.  
2 vols.

J. Edkins. *A Grammar of the Chinese Colloquial Language*. Shanghai, 1857.

J. Marshman. *Classie Sinica*. Serampore, India, 1814.

J. P. Abel-Rémusat. *Éléments de la grammaire chinoise*. Paris, 1822.

B. Morrison. *Chinese Grammar*. Serampore, 1815.

J. G. Bridgman, a translation of P. Premare. *Notitia Linguae Sinicae*. Canton, 1847. Premare's work was published in 1831.

T. F. Wade. *Yü-pen Tzu-erh CH*. Shanghai, 1867.

C. W. Mateer. *A Course of Mandarin Lessons*. Shanghai, 1892.

K. F. A. Gützlaff. *Notices of Chinese Grammar*. Shanghai, 1843(?)

Georg von der Gabelentz. *Chinesische Grammatik*. Leipzig, 1881.

The first systematic work on Chinese grammar was *Arte de la lengua mandarina*, by P. Francisco Varo, a Dominican, published at Canton in 1703.

work. In so far as such methods are sound, von der Gabelentz has left relatively little to be done.

But can works produced by such a method be called studies of Chinese grammar? They are rather studies in how the various Chinese constructions may be translated into European languages. They tell us that certain Chinese sentences must be rendered by nouns in a certain case and verbs in a certain tense when translated, but they do not show that the Chinese think in the same categories that we use.

The weakness of the older method has been increasingly realized by western sinologists. In 1909, Hirth wrote that the categories of grammar were:

"A sort of philosophical necessity, the principles of thought peculiar to the human mind. Speaking, therefore, of the Verb Passive, for instance, I do not mean to show how the 'Passive' is formed in Chinese, but simply answer the question: What are the means at the disposal of the language for expressing that change taking place with an active verb which in Western language is expressed by giving it the passive form?"<sup>3</sup>

More recently, Margouliès has written, "Le fait est que, dans toutes les langues européennes et la plupart des langues asiatiques, malgré des différences souvent considérables, la grammaire suit une voie suffisamment analogue pour permettre une méthode unique d'étude. Pour le chinois, cette méthode s'avère inapplicable: les différences touchent aux points vitaux des langues et la grammaire chinoise doit forcément être construite d'après des principes à part, se basant sur des éléments qui ne trouvent pas d'équivalents dans la grammaire européenne. Rechercher et préciser ces éléments représente déjà un travail bien difficile."<sup>4</sup>

As a result of this feeling that a new method must be developed for the adequate study of Chinese grammar, and of the great difficulties inherent in such a task, the attack has somewhat slowed down. In the twentieth century, great progress has been made in the study of Chinese phonetics and the reconstruction of pronunciations as far back as the sixth century. There have been attempts to show that pronouns were declined in ancient Chinese. But generally speaking, the scholars of the present have shown a ten-

<sup>3</sup> Hirth, *Documentary Style*, p. 18.

<sup>4</sup> Margouliès, *Petit Précis de Grammaire Chinoise écrite*, p. 3.

dency to avoid the obstacles so bravely attacked by their predecessors. Some modern works on the Chinese language hardly mention grammar at all, while others continue the methods of the last century.<sup>5</sup>

It is certainly not correct to say that Chinese has no grammar. "La langue chinoise écrite a une grammaire très élaborée et très stricte."<sup>6</sup> But it is a grammar which cannot be forced into the categories of Latin, or of the languages based on Latin. Chinese is an isolating language, without inflections. Consequently it possesses no syntax of form, but it does possess a syntax of order, and this latter must be investigated more fully than has yet been done.

But the difficulty of this task is enormously increased by the fact that Chinese writing is ideographic, and even the present forms are as old as the Christian era. This has resulted in the preservation of old meanings and constructions which would have been lost in languages written phonetically. We now need a dictionary in order to understand Chaucer, who wrote as recently as the Ming period. The Manchus were rising to power when the Book of Common Prayer was assembled, but it would be incorrect today to use *lei* in the sense of *hindered* except in a game of tennis or a legal document. Yet even in modern Chinese we may strike words and phrases used in the sense of 500 a. c. During the intervening centuries there has been a semantic development in Chinese as in European

- 
- \* Among the grammatical works of this century are the following:  
 F. Hirth. *Notes on the Chinese Documentary Style*. Shanghai, 1900.  
 F. W. Baller. *A Mandarin Primer*. 14th ed., Shanghai, 1920.  
 ———. *Lessons in Elementary Wen-li*. Shanghai, 1912.  
 Georges Margouliès. *Petit Précis de Grammaire Chinoise écrite*. Paris, 1934.  
 B. Karlgren. *Analytic Dictionary of Chinese*. Paris, 1923.  
 ———. *Sound and Symbol in Chinese*. London, 1923.  
 ———. *Philology and Ancient China*. Oslo, 1926.  
 J. J. Brandt. *Wen-li Particles*. Peiping, 1929.  
 M. Courant. *La langue chinoise parlée, grammaire de Kuan-hua septentrional*. Paris, 1914.  
 E. von Zach. *Sinologische Beiträge*. Batavia, 1930.  
 T. F. Wade. *Wen-chien Tsu-erh chi*. Shanghai, 1903. 2 vols.  
 E. Haenisch. *Lehrbuch der chinesischen Schriftsprache*. Leipzig. 4 vols. (Vol. III was published in 1933.)

The author regrets that he has seen only the volume on Chrestomathie of Professor Haenisch's work, so that his statements may not apply to it.

<sup>5</sup> Margouliès, *op. cit.*, p. 3.



languages, but the ideographic nature of the writing has resulted in the accumulation of meanings associated with a given word, and seldom are even the oldest meanings lost. This result affects the phrasing and the word order, increasing the difficulties of the grammarian. For although there are many styles of composition in Chinese, varying with the period and the subject matter, there is one Chinese language, the whole of which must be considered.

We can observe in English a tendency that has run its full course in Chinese. We speak of "a bad cut," of "cut glass," and we "cut the rope," using the same word as three different parts of speech without a change of form. Yet there is no danger of a misunderstanding because, like the Chinese, we use the context, the word order, and particles to make clear the meaning. It has been said that there are no parts of speech in Chinese. But it would be more accurate to say that it is seldom a Chinese word is limited in such a way that it must always be translated by the same English part of speech, for there is no syntax of form, or inflection.

Chinese grammar must base its categories upon the way in which the Chinese think, and while, as Hirth says, there are certain forms and molds of all thought, there is room for considerable differences within these forms. The structure of Chinese is quite different from the structure of Latin, and just as Semitic grammar has freed itself from Latin domination, so Chinese grammar must develop its own system of classification.

The Chinese divide words into two broad categories, "real words" <sup>7</sup> and "empty words." <sup>8</sup> These classes might be described as words which have content, and words which indicate relationships between content-words.

The content-words are divided into two classes: "dead words," <sup>9</sup> and "living words." <sup>10</sup> The grammars consider these classes as equivalent to our nouns and verbs. The "empty words" are said to include all parts of speech except nouns and verbs. It is more than doubtful whether this western explanation is correct. Pronouns are not considered empty words, nor are words or phrases which we would translate by adjectives and adverbs. Occasionally the meaning of a word, or convention, limits its use so that it would always be translated by the same English part of speech, nouns, verbs and pronouns, <sup>11</sup> but there do not appear to be any words

<sup>7</sup> 實字

<sup>11</sup> Examples are 書 book, 看 to see, 你 you.

<sup>8</sup> 虛字

<sup>9</sup> 死字

<sup>10</sup> 活字

which are always translated by adjectives or adverbs, and there are few words which must always be translated by nouns, verbs or pronouns. Generally content-words may be used as we use nouns, verbs, adjectives and adverbs. The part of English speech by which a word is translated depends upon the meaning of the sentence or phrase, which is indicated by the context, the word order, or by "empty words" which we would call particles.

The essential question is, how do the Chinese think in speaking and writing? It would appear that the essential distinction in their minds is between content-words and relationship-words. While they do make a relatively unimportant distinction between "dead words" and "living words," it would be better not to consider these as corresponding to nouns and verbs, but rather as indicating different uses of content-words. And it may be maintained that the Chinese in their grammatical structure do not have the categories of adjective and adverb. Phrases and words which we translate by adjectives and adverbs are merely relative positions between content-words.

The relationship-words would include such English parts of speech as conjunctions, prepositions, interrogative pronouns and adverbs and exclamations. They are written by words which are or have been used as content-words. Apparently what has generally occurred has been that a content-word has been used to write a relationship-word with the same sound. The two categories of words are distinct, however, and represent a fundamental difference.

Chinese grammars having been written as far as possible in accordance with Latin grammar, treat largely of parts of speech, and of subject, predicate, and object, which in Chinese are generally arranged in this order. But it may be useful to consider a single Chinese word, observing the different ways in which it is used, for this the grammars do not do. A study of such an illustration will indicate the reasons for the preceding generalizations.

The word used for illustration is 安, having as a content-word the meanings "peace, quiet, to place, at ease." It is formed of two primitives indicating a woman in a house. As Chinese words go, its uses are relatively simple and easy, so that we might expect to find our study quiet and peaceful; but unfortunately, as many men have found when they had secured a woman under their roof, the result is not as peaceful as we expected.

The following sentences illustrate the ways in which 安 is used.

The Chinese phrase is given first, then the English translation given in Giles' Dictionary with the translation of Wells Williams where it differs from Giles,<sup>12</sup> and finally, in parentheses, the content-words put into noun form.

*An* is used as a surname, and frequently as a place-name, but as such uses would add nothing to the other illustrations, examples will not be given. Such uses might give difficulty to a westerner who did not recognize them, but would not be mistaken by a Chinese reader.

*An* as a Content-Word

1. 平安 A state of peace. (Peace peace.)
2. 偷安 To steal repose, to shirk work. (Theft ease.)
3. 安樂公 A man of pleasure. (Ease joy man.)
4. 安民 To quiet the people. (Peace people.)
5. 安心 To put the mind at rest. (Quiet mind.)
6. 老者安之 To soothe the aged. He quieted the aged.  
(Elders quiet them.)
7. 安放 To place, to arrange. (Place place.)
8. 安席 To arrange guests at table. (Place mat.)
9. 安命 To accept one's destiny. (Peace fate.)
10. 安息 To rest peacefully. (Peace rest.)
11. 安分 To do one's duty. Contented with one's lot. (Peace division.)
12. 安神 To set up an image or tablet in its shrine. (Place spirit.)
13. 安康 Healthy, robust. (Peace health.)
14. 安妥 Steady, secure. (Peace security.)
15. 安閑 Repose and leisure. (Quiet leisure.)
16. 問安 To inquire after a person's health; are you well?  
(Question health.)
17. 欠安 To be unwell. (Lack peace.)
18. 安固 Securely. (Peace security.)
19. 竟得安然 After all he lives in peace and happiness, or,  
does as he pleases. (End acquisition peace man-  
ner.)

<sup>12</sup> Giles appears to have borrowed wholesale from Williams, and for *an* he has taken practically all of Williams' illustrations. Couvreur and von der Gabelentz give entirely different ones.

20. 吾輩則安然 Then we shall be at peace. (We then peace manner.)  
 21. 安抵 To arrive safely. (Peace arrival.)  
 22. 安安 Naturally, without constraint. (Ease ease.)  
 23. 安不上 It cannot be fixed, or done. (Peace lack supremacy.)

In the following eleven phrases, *an* is used as a content-word, but with special meanings.

24. 安息日 Sunday. (Quiet rest day. A modern Christian phrase.)  
 25. 安息 Parthia.  
 26. 安息香 Benzoin. (Incense from Parthia.)  
 27. 安南 Annam.  
 28. 安桂 Annam cinnamon.  
 29. 安人 The title of wives of officials of the sixth grade.  
 30. 安童 Servant boys.  
 31. 安本 Anban, the Chinese resident at Lhasa.  
 32. 安居 A technical Buddhist expression for keeping the rainy season, or Buddhist Lent.  
 33. 安家 Funds left behind for the use of the family. (Peace family.)  
 34. 生安白造 Made out of whole cloth, concocted.

*An* used as an interrogative particle

35. 安能如此 How can it be so? How can I act thus?  
 36. 如今安在 Where is he now?  
 37. 安是安非 Which is right and which is wrong?  
 38. 安有 How can . . . ? How is there . . . ?  
 39. 安敢 How dare you?  
 40. 安肯 How can I be willing to . . . ?  
 41. 主人安在 Where is the master?

In these sentences, Nos. 24-34, while interesting, need not concern us. They might prove troublesome to the western reader, but not to a Chinese, although even a Chinese scholar might not know the phrase for benzoin.

In the remaining sentences, in Nos. 1-8 and 15, *an* is translated by a noun, although in No. 15 it would be better rendered by an adjective. In Nos. 4-12, it is translated by a verb. In Nos. 13 and

14, it is translated by an adjective; in Nos. 16-22, by an adverb. Nos. 23 and 34 are idioms which cannot be literally translated. In No. 37, it is translated by an interrogative pronoun, and in Nos. 35, 36, and 38-41, by an interrogative adverb. Williams also says that it may be used as a preposition.

What shall we say of a word which, without any change of form, may require translation by any one of these different parts of English speech? Is it not better to give up the attempt to force Chinese into the categories of European grammar?

In Nos. 1-23, *an* is a content-word having the meanings "peace, quiet, ease, place." In the majority of these phrases, it is related to some other content-word, the related words affecting each other's meaning. In some instances the phrases might legitimately mean something else, but by convention have only a single meaning. For example, No. 15 might mean "to make leisure peaceful," and No. 16, "to ask peace"—but they do not.

The Chinese think in terms of content-words and their relations, and it will help in understanding how they do this to look at the nouns in parentheses after each phrase. It is interesting that nine of the English nouns used in these parentheses—*ease, people, quiet, mind, place, rest, spirit, question and lack*—are like the Chinese in that they may be used also as verbs without any change of form. We have no difficulty with these common words, and neither do the Chinese with their equivalents. The relations between such content-words are determined in one or more of three ways.

They are determined by the context. This is not illustrated well by the phrases given, because most of the phrases do not form whole sentences. But whether *an* has the meaning of "to place" or that of "to pacify" is clearly shown by the context. Followed by *mat*, *an* must mean "to place," but followed by *people*, it means "to pacify."

The relation is also determined by the position, or word order. *An* when preceding the word to which it is related appears to have a causative significance which usually makes it necessary to translate it by a verb. On the other hand, it follows its own attribute, and then would usually be translated by a noun.

This importance of position makes the punctuation of a Chinese text of fundamental importance. Many difficult texts are not punctuated, and it may be doubted whether any European learning Chinese as an adult should attempt to punctuate a classical text to

which there is no commentary. But it may be noticed that rhythm is of much greater importance in Chinese than in European prose, and once the rhythm is known, and the balance and correspondence of sentences, the task of punctuation can be completed.

It will be seen that this analysis leaves no place for adjectives and adverbs, nor do they appear necessary. It would be possible to translate all the phrases correctly into English without using either adjectives and adverbs, and those parts of speech are used only to make smoother English. A word like 大 "big" would generally be translated by an adjective, but in the Chinese, the relation would be between *bigness* and some other content-word.

Before leaving these generalizations, three apparent exceptions to them may be explained.

1. In No. 4, *an min* is translated "to pacify or quiet the people." Had the order been reversed, the meaning would have been changed, *min an* meaning "the people are at peace."

On the other hand, No. 1, *p'ing an* has the same meaning as *an p'ing*, both phrases meaning "peace." In this instance the word order makes no difference in the meaning.

These two constructions are frequently met. The difference between them might be explained in terms of different parts of speech, but this would be incorrect. A better explanation is that in the first construction the two words have different contents, and therefore a reversal of the word order changes the meaning, while in the second construction, the words define each other, and so their order is immaterial. The first construction is frequently met in English, but not the second. But the second is very common in Chinese, especially in the modern spoken language, for it helps to overcome the difficulty caused by the large number of homophones.

2. In No. 22, the phrase *an an* is translated "naturally." The reduplication increases the intensity, and this construction is common in Chinese. But in the phrase 日日 or "day day," the meaning is not intensified, and the translation would be "every day," or "daily." This also might be explained incorrectly as due to different parts of speech. A better explanation is that the reduplication indicates increase. Where the meaning of the content-word is such as to permit intensification, reduplication has that effect. But such a word as *day* does not permit this, so that the effect of reduplication is not to increase the intensity of *dayness*, which is impossible, but to increase the number of days.

3. In Nos. 19 and 20, *an* is followed by the particle *jan*, and this construction, which is very common, is translated by an adverb. Other illustrations are 果然 "certainly," 忽然 "suddenly," 断然 "decidedly," 慨然 "immediately," and 自然 "naturally so, of course." But while such phrases are translated by adverbs, they do not indicate that Chinese possesses adverbs. In this construction, there are two content-words, and *jan* following one of these content-words shows that it indicates the manner of the other. We must translate this construction by an adverb. There are words in Chinese which mean "already," "now," "after," "before," etc., but while these are translated by adverbs, it is better to consider them as content-words. For example, the phrase 先生 "first-born," *hsian* meaning "before" in time or place, is really a phrase consisting of two content-words, and is generally translated by a single noun.

That Chinese possesses only two parts of speech "real words" having content, and "empty words" indicating relationship, is also shown by the varying ways in which so many Chinese phrases or sentences may be translated, and this is particularly true where in English we would use adjectives or adverbs. The distinction between "living words" and "dead words" is not essentially that between verbs and nouns, but rather between two ways in which content-words may be used.

There remains the use of *an* as an interrogative particle. Here we deal with what is really a different word, but one written by a content-word with the same sound.<sup>23</sup> As a particle, *an* is treated in works on Chinese grammar;<sup>24</sup> that is, illustrations of its use are given, with Chinese sentences and their translations. Even so, work remains to be done on the structure of such sentences. The important or variable word in the interrogation immediately follows *an*, and this gives the clue to the meaning. In Nos. 36 and 41, the phrase *an tsai*, which might be literally translated "where at," the use of *an* as a particle is indicated, and von der Gabelentz devotes a paragraph to this phrase. In No. 37, the use as a particle is also clear because of the presence of another Chinese device for showing an interrogation, the form "right-wrong." In Nos. 38-40

<sup>23</sup> Karlgren, *Analytic Dictionary*, p. 35.

<sup>24</sup> *An* as a particle is treated in von der Gabelentz, pp. 276, 486-87; by Brandt, p. 13.



there is nothing in the word order to show that *an* is necessarily used as a particle, and the meaning would be shown only by the context. This difficulty cannot be avoided when two different words are written by the same sign, but the context would usually indicate which word was intended.<sup>10</sup>

It is impossible to generalize concerning a language from the use of a single word, and *an* is used only as an illustration. But the illustration of this typical word shows that a new approach to Chinese grammar is desirable, and that there is still a great task awaiting adventurous sinologists.



<sup>10</sup> The illustrations of the use of *an* are taken from English dictionaries, since the paper is concerned with the study of Chinese by western sinologists. Had Chinese sources been consulted, the result would have been even more complicated. The *Ys'w yüan* gives 141 phrases using the word. Yang Shu-ia, in the *詞詮* (Commercial Press, 1928), analyzes the use of *an* as a particle, finding six different uses, including its use as a conjunctive, and as a final particle.

# A STUDY OF THE USES OF LETTER "YŌD" BY DAVID BEN ABRAHAM AL-FĀSĪ<sup>1</sup>

Translated from the Arabic by

SOLOMON L. KROSS

THE DROPSIE COLLEGE

THE LETTER Yōd is the fifth of the letters of the Hebrew alphabet, which may be employed both as radical and as servile.\* Its uses as servile letter are divided into three classes: (a) In the beginning of the word (prefixes<sup>2</sup>); (b) In the middle of the word (infixes), and (c) in the end of the word (suffixes). The Yōd is employed as prefix in twelve<sup>3</sup> formations, nine of which are with imperatives<sup>4</sup> and three with other forms.

(1) When the second radical of a triliteral imperative is vocalized with a Holem, the prefixed Yōd is vocalized in three ways: (a) If the first radical is א, the Yōd takes either a Holem, as in אָמַר, אָמַרְתָּ, or a Seghol, as in אָמַרְתָּ, אָמַרְתָּ (cf. Judg. 16:3+); (b) If the first radical is ה ו ח ע, the Yōd takes a Patah, as in חָמַל, except חָמַלְתָּ (Prov. 10:3); (c) Before other letters the Yōd takes always a Hireq, as in חָבַרְתָּ.

(2) When the second radical of the imperative has a Patah, the prefixed Yōd takes a Seghol before א ה ו ח ע, as in אָמַרְתָּ, אָמַרְתָּ, and a Hireq before other letters, as in אָמַרְתָּ, אָמַרְתָּ; similarly, when

<sup>1</sup>The present study forms the Introduction to Part Ten (or Part Yōd) of the Hebrew-Arabic Dictionary of the Bible *Kitāb Jāmi' al-ʿAlfāz* of David ben Abraham al-Fāsi, Volume II, the edition of which is in course of preparation. It presents a very interesting view of the beginnings of Hebrew philology in the tenth century, before the triradical theory of Hebrew roots was inaugurated by Judah Hayyāḡ. The various instances are profusely illustrated by the author with many examples, but most of these have been omitted in the present translation for reasons of economy.

<sup>2</sup>The division of the letters of the Hebrew alphabet into radical and servile was made by the author in his general introduction; cf. my edition of *Kitāb Jāmi' al-ʿAlfāz*, I, p. lxxiii, and n. 100.

<sup>3</sup>The author's classification includes beside what he terms prefixes, infixes, and suffixes also instances of *Katib* and *Qere* of Yōd found in the Bible, as will be seen later.

<sup>4</sup>So all Mss., although a 13th subdivision is given later.

<sup>5</sup>The early Karaite grammarians took the imperative as the fundamental (or simplest) form of the verb, see op. cit., p. lxxxv, and n. 124.

the last radical is *N*, as in *בָּנָה*, *יָבֵן*, but if the first radical is *N H H E*, the Yöd takes a Seghol: *בָּנֶה* (Lev. 4:3+).

(3) When the second radical of the imperative has a *Sere* and the first is a laryngal (*N H H E*), the prefixed Yöd is vocalized in three ways: (a) With a Patah: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן* (cf. Num. 1:50+); (b) With a Seghol: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן* (Num. 24:4+), and (c) With a Hireq: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן*. Before non-laryngals the Yöd takes a Hireq: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן*.

(4) When the second radical of the imperative has a Daghesb, the prefixed Yöd takes a Shewa: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן*; also when the second radical is *N H H E R* (which usually do not take a Daghesb), the Yöd takes a Shewa: *בָּנֶה* (Hos. 9:2), *יָבֵן* (2 Sam. 15:14+).

(5) When the imperative consists of three consonants but its stem is bi-consonantal (sic!), the prefixed Yöd takes a Hireq in intransitive\* formations: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן* (Lev. 11:7), *יָבֵן* (cf. Job 37:1), and a Patah in transitive formations: *בָּנֶה* (*ibid.* 40:19), *יָבֵן* (cf. Ps. 7:6).

(6) When the imperative is vocalized with a Holem and its stem is bi-consonantal, the Yöd is vocalized in three ways: (a) With a Qameṣ: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן* (Isa. 44:16); (b) With a Hireq: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן* (cf. *ibid.* 24:3), and (c) With a Sere: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן* (Isa. 29:23), *יָבֵן* (cf. 2 Sam. 2:32), *יָבֵן* (Jer. 6:22+).

(7) When the imperative has a Shureq, the Yöd takes a Qameṣ: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן* (Lev. 25:25+), and in transitive formations: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן*. Similarly, when the imperative has a Hireq in intransitive and transitive formations, as *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן*.

(8) When the imperative has two consonants, the Yöd in the imperfect (עֲתִיד) takes either a Sere: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן*, or a Hireq: *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן*; in the perfect (עָבַד) it takes a Qameṣ: *בָּנֶה*.

(9) When the imperative begins with a Hé and its stem is only one consonant (sic!), as *בָּנֶה*, *יָבֵן*,—the prefixed Yöd takes a Hireq in intransitive formations: *בָּנֶה* (Lev. 6:20), *יָבֵן* (Job 15:29), and a Patah in transitive formations: *בָּנֶה* (Lev. 16:14+), *יָבֵן* (Isa. 31:3).

(10) When the Yöd which is used in Hebrew in the beginning

\* By "intransitive" (עֲתִיד) the author refers to *Qal* and by "transitive" (עָבַד) to *Hif'il*. Similarly Seadiah in his *Kutub el-Lughah* (JQR, N. S., XXIII, 333) uses the terms *לִרְאוּתָהּ* (עֲתִיד) and *לְעִיּוּתָהּ* (עָבַד) in reference to these conjugations.

of words (before stems) is occasionally replaced by a Waw, as *אֶרָא*, *אֶרְאָה*, etc., *הָנָא* (Ps. 130:4); *יָסֹד* (Ex. 29:12+), *תָּנֹסֶד* (Isa. 44:28); *יָקָד מִקְדָּר אֵשׁ* (*ibid.* 10:16), *כְּמוֹקֶד* (Ps. 102:4); *יָשַׁע* (*ibid.* 20:7), *תָּנִשַׁע* (Jer. 23:6). I have discussed this formation here briefly, having already dealt with it in Part Waw.<sup>7</sup>

(11) Words (stems) occurring in Hebrew with prefixed Yōd and Waw which are occasionally omitted, as *יַעַן* (2 Sam. 16:23+), *נוֹעָצִים* (1 Kings 12:6+), *עָנָה* (2 Sam. 16:20+); *יָלַד* (Ecc. 4:14+), *לָרָה* (Jer. 13:21). Similarly *יָקֹם* (cf. Gen. 7:4+) < *קָם*, *יָבֹל* (Judg. 6:4+) < *בֹּל* (Job 40:20), *יָסֹד* (Ex. 29:12+) < *הוֹסֵד* (Ezra 3:11+), *יָקָד* (Isa. 10:16) < *מוֹקֵד* (cf. Ps. 102:4), *יָקָר* (Prov. 20:15+) < *הוֹקָר* (*ibid.* 25:17), *יָלַחַת* (Lev. 21:20+) < *יָלַחַתוּ* (Job 6:18), *יָשָׁן* (1 Sam. 26:7+) < *שָׁנָה* (Ps. 90:5+).

(12) When the Yōd is written (Ketib) in the beginning of the word, but not read (Qere),<sup>8</sup> as *יָעֲסֹדוּ* (Ezek. 47:10), *יָצָאוּ* (Jer. 50:8), and conversely, when the Yōd is read but not written,<sup>10</sup> as *יָעֲשֶׂה* (1 Sam. 20:2), *יָעֲבֹר* (Isa. 28:15).

(13) When the Ketib is a Yōd in the beginning of the word and the Qere is a Waw,<sup>11</sup> as *יָבֹאוּ* (Judg. 6:5), *יָהֲנוּי* (2 Sam. 12:22), *יָפְעֻהוּ* (Isa. 49:13), *יָאֲשֵׁר* (Ps. 41:3), *יָחֲרַל יִשִּׁית* (Job 10:20); and vice versa, the Ketib is a Waw and the Qere is a Yōd,<sup>12</sup> as *יָשָׁאֵן* (Isa. 3:29), *יָשַׁפְסֹהוּ* (Ezek. 44:24), *יָעֲשֹׂו* (*ibid.* 46:15).

The second class dealing with the Yōd in the middle of the word occurs in four<sup>13</sup> ways: (1) When the intransitive verb has a Waw, it changes to a Yōd in its transitive form, as *יָקֹם*, *יָקִים*; *יָסֹד*, *יָסִיד*; *יָשׁוּב*, *יָשִׁיב*. (2) A Yōd occasionally replacing a Waw, as *לָלֵן* (Gen. 24:25+), *לָלִין* (*ibid.* 23); *פָּנוּאֵל* (*ibid.* 29:31+), *פָּנוּאֵל* (*ibid.* 31); *שָׁנוּאָה* (*ibid.* 29:31+), *שָׁנוּאָה* (cf. Deut. 21:15). (3) The euphonic<sup>14</sup> (or emphatic) Yōd: *יָרִבּוֹן* (Ps. 139:18),

<sup>7</sup> *Jāmi' al-Alfāz*, I, 465, 184 ff. Most of the author's examples cited in this and in the following paragraphs have been left out in the translation; see above, note 1.

<sup>8</sup> This and the following examples have been previously cited by the author.

<sup>9</sup> Cf. *Preisendorff, Das Buch Oekla W'ocla*, Hannover, 1864, No. 124.

<sup>10</sup> *ibid.*, No. 125.

<sup>11</sup> *ibid.*, No. 134.

<sup>12</sup> *ibid.*, No. 135.

<sup>13</sup> So Mas., though a 5th subdivision is given later.

<sup>14</sup> The author employs the expression *הַמְשִׁיבִים* (*Jāmi' al-*

יִרְבִּין (Deut. 8:13); יִכְלוּ (Isa. 1:28+), יִכְלִינָן (*ibid.* 31:3). (4) The Yōd is written but not read,<sup>15</sup> as דִּבְרֵיו (Ps. 105:28), וּסְדֻכְרֵיךְ (Ps. 119:161); and conversely, the Yōd is read but not written,<sup>17</sup> as צִוְּאוֹ (Gen. 33:4), וַעֲשֹׂהוּ (Ex. 27:11), מְרִיבֹ עָלוּ (1 Sam. 2:10); such instances are found mostly in the description of the Temple (in Ezek. 40-48). (5) When the Ketib is a Yōd and the Qere is a Waw,<sup>18</sup> as לֵוִים (Gen. 25:23), יַעֲוִשׁ (*ibid.* 36:5+); and vice versa, the Ketib is a Waw and the Qere is a Yōd,<sup>19</sup> as חֲלוּנִי (Num. 16:11+), עֲנוּיִם (Isa. 32:7+).

The third class, which concerns the Yōd at the end of the word, occurs in eight<sup>20</sup> ways. (1) Pronominal suffix of first person has various formations: (a) Nouns, singular: אֲנִי, בִּשְׂרִי בְנִי, and plural: בְּנֵי יְדִי, רְגִלִּינִי יְדִי; (b) Verbal forms, as nouns, singular: עַד בָּאִי (Gen. 48:5+), עַד שׁוּבִי (2 Chron. 18:26), or פָּעִלִי (Ps. 95:9), דְּכָרִי (Num. 11:23+), and plural: מַעֲשֵׂי (Ps. 45:2+), דְּכָרִי (Deut. 11:18+), also in the perfect: עָשִׂיתִי, שָׁמַעְתִּי; (c) Accusative in the singular and plural, masculine and feminine, perfect and imperfect, of second and third persons, as הוֹרְגִנִי (Ps. 27:11+), הַבִּינִנִי (*ibid.* 119:27+), יִדְעָתִנִי (Isa. 45:4), עֹבְדָתִנִי (Deut. 28:20+), הוֹרֹנִי (Job 6:24), עֹזְבָתִי (1 Kings 11:33+), עֹזְבָנִי (Isa. 49:14+), יִלְדָּתִנִי (Jer. 20:14), רָאִי (Gen. 16:13), רָאִי (Ps. 22:8+); there is no need to enumerate here all the formations where a Yōd is employed in the pronominal suffixes, for it would be to no purpose.

(2) Nouns ending in Yōd, as נֶקֶח < נָקִי (Jer. 49:12), עָנִי < נָקָה (Ex. 22:22), קָלִי < קָלוּי (Lev. 2:14), אֲצִלָּה < צָלִי (Isa. 44:19); the pronominal suffix for the first person takes another Yōd, as פָּרִיִּי (Prov. 8:19), בְּכִיִּי (Ps. 6:9).

*Alfār*, I, 235, 12) to indicate the so-called "pleonastic" letters for euphonic or emphatic purposes, as illustrated here and later. For its use by Saadia and the Hebrew rendition סִיאָר by Dunash b. Labrat see Baehar, *Anfänge d. hebräischen Grammatik*, 56 f. and 111, n. 3. Cf. Lane, Dozy, and Fleischer, *Kleinere Schriften*, II, 661 f.

<sup>15</sup> Cf. Fränkel, *op. cit.*, No. 129.

<sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*, No. 131.

<sup>17</sup> *Ibid.*, No. 128.

<sup>18</sup> *Ibid.*, Nos. 138, 140, 144, and 148.

<sup>19</sup> *Ibid.*, Nos. 139, 141, 145, and 147; cf. also *Mishat Shai* on 1 Kings 17:15.

<sup>20</sup> So Mas., though a 9th subdivision is given later; cf. nn. 4 and 13, above.

<sup>38</sup> *Ibid.*, No. 127.

25:34), *מַה יֵשׁ לָךְ* (2 Kings 4:2), *שִׁבְעִי* (*ibid.* 3); most of these forms are feminine, though some are not: *נִשְׂאִי כְּלִי יוֹאֵב* (2 Sam. 23:37), *בְּנֵי קְנִי-הַנֶּחֱם* (2 Kings 23:10), *שֹׁשִׁי וּמֹשִׁי* (Ezek. 16:13), *בְּלִי יַעֲשֹׁן* (Hos. 9:16), *קִנְיִי* (Ruth 4:5), *בָּצַע*, *שָׂאִי* (Prov. 28:16), *קָנָאִי חַיִּים* (*ibid.* 8:35). Also conversely, when the Yōd is read but not written,<sup>28</sup> as *מַעֲלִי עֵינַי* (1 Kings 20:41), *עַל יָדַי עָלִי* (2 Kings 12:12), *עַלִּי אֶרֶץ* (Job 7:1), *יִרְעָתִי כִּי כָל תּוֹכֵל* (*ibid.* 42:3), and the like.



<sup>28</sup> *Ibid.*, No. 120.



## NOTES ON HURRIAN PHONOLOGY

E. A. SPEISER

UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA

UNTIL RECENTLY all deductions concerning Hurrian sounds were based only on material preserved in the cuneiform syllabic writing. In such a medium, itself re-designed for the purposes of Akkadian, Hurrian phonetic elements could receive adequate treatment only in so far as they approximated phonetic elements present in Akkadian. There were here no ready means for the expression of values for which the parent script had not provided. The result was an unduly simplified conception of Hurrian phonology. Frequent use of signs containing either *š* or *s* to express a single sibilant of Akkadian was regarded as proof that Hurrian had but one voiceless sibilant; and the constant confusion of voiced and voiceless stops led to the assumption of a single series of stops in Hurrian.<sup>1</sup> To be sure, scattered indications of departures from the phonetic repertoire of Akkadian were noted from time to time.<sup>2</sup> But the picture as a whole was naturally out of focus.

With the discovery of Hurrian material among the alphabetic texts from Ras Shamra there was provided a source for an independent estimate of the sounds of Hurrian. Nothing like a systematic survey is as yet possible. The available material is scanty and full of difficulties of its own. In a consonantal script the sense of individual lexical elements of this virtually unknown language is far more difficult to determine than it has been in the syllabic writing. On the other hand, such a script will allow consonants a greater measure of individuality than might be expected in syllabic texts.<sup>3</sup> Above all, it furnishes means for checking previous phonetic deductions.

<sup>1</sup> It is hardly necessary to give a list of those who have held these views, or to point out that I used to belong to that school myself.

<sup>2</sup> See already Bork, *Die Mitannisprache*, *MFAO* 1909 14 ff. For other suggestions cf. Speiser, *Mesop. Origins* 123 ff., and *JAOI* 53.26 n. 39.

<sup>3</sup> Another important difference is this: The Nuzi dialect of Akkadian was used in writings by Hurrians; the cuneiform signs reflect here Hurrian pronunciation. But the characters used in RS Hurrian texts were used simultaneously by the Semites of Ugarit and represent, therefore, contemporary phonetic values of Ugaritic. These characters are accordingly a primary phonetic witness.

Thureau-Dangin<sup>2</sup> and Friedrich<sup>3</sup> have been prompt to realize the value—and the limitations—of the RS Hurrian material for phonological purposes. Progress has been made also in certain specific details. Thus Ginsberg-Matsler<sup>4</sup> and Harris<sup>5</sup> discovered independently a special sign (the two-wedged *š*), which is used chiefly in Hurrian contexts. In the meantime, Berkooz<sup>7</sup> and Oppenheim<sup>6</sup> have given a fresh impetus to a further evaluation of the Hurrian syllabary through their recent studies of the Nuzi material. The problem is thus being approached from two directions.

Further progress in Hurrian phonology can be made by co-ordinating the testimony of the cuneiform syllabaries and the alphabetic texts from Ras Shamra. The discussion which follows attempts such a co-ordination with regard to some sibilants, the rest offering merely a few scattered observations. It is assumed at the outset that the Hurrian texts from Ras Shamra, the Hurrian material from Boghazköi, the letter of Tushratta in the "Mitanni" language, the related elements in the other Amarna letters, and the bulk of the non-Semitic material from Nuzi<sup>8</sup> represent one and the same basic language, for all the differences that lack of equally extensive sources in all these centers, divergences of script, and considerable geographic decentralization may have caused to become apparent. The underlying relationship is supported primarily by the constant recurrence throughout the area under discussion of

<sup>2</sup> *Syria* 12. 249 ff. These comments are appended to his masterly treatment of the syllabic Hurrian material from Ras Shamra, *ibid.* 234 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Analecta Orientalia* (abbr. *An. Or.*) 12. 128 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *JPOS* 14. 244.

<sup>5</sup> *JAS* 55. 95 ff.

<sup>6</sup> *The Nuzi Dialect of Akkadian* (abbr. *NDA*), Language Dissertations 23 (1937).

<sup>7</sup> See especially *WZKM* 44. 178 ff.; 45. 38 ff. (a review of Berkooz's monograph); *Revue Hittite et Asiatique* (abbr. *RHA*) 26. 58 ff.; *Afo* 12. 29 ff.

<sup>8</sup> The view that Hurrian constitutes the principal substratum at Nuzi about the middle of the second millennium B. C. (not in the Old Akkadian period, for which see Meek, *HHS* (abbr. (H) IX) has recently been attacked by Oppenheim, *Afo* 11. 56 ff. Oppenheim's arguments were promptly refuted by Friedrich, *ZDMG* 91. 212 ff., and more extensively by Speiser, *AASOR* 15. 136 ff. For the cultural and historical background of the Hurrians cf. my *Ethnic Movements*, *AASOR* 13. 13 ff.; Albright, in Leary's *From the Pyramids to Paul* (1935) 9 ff.; Götz, *Hethiter, Churriter und Assyrer* (1936); and Ungnad, *Subartu* (1936). Oppenheim has lately modified his position, cf. *Afo* 12. 29 n. 2 and, indirectly in *RHA* 26. 58 (cf. the title of his paper; cf. below, note 100).

such formatives and endings as *hi*,<sup>10</sup> *ni*, *-n*, *na*, *wa/wa*, *ve/we*, and *-š*, for which fresh evidence will be adduced below; by correspondences in numerals, personal names, and names of deities; and secondarily only by the identity of certain lexical elements and by a common chronological, historical, and cultural background. The sole purpose of the present discussion is to determine whether it is possible to discern at present, in certain significant instances, a common phonetic pattern, in spite of the fragmentary nature of the material at our disposal.

### A. Sibilants

The long-held view that Hurrian possessed no *š*-sound, or rather that in the Hurrian syllabary *š* represents *s*, has been questioned recently from several quarters. Thureau-Dangin<sup>11</sup> would see evidence for *š* (no doubt as distinct from and by the side of *s*) in Babylonian transliterations of Hurrian names; in the contracts from Dilbat *Te-š-šu-šb-ša-ri* must contain *š*, since *s* would have been expressed differently. Oppenheim and Berkooz concentrate on the Nuzi material where, it is true, *š* and *s* are often confused in writing; but interchanges between sibilants and non-sibilants convince Oppenheim by their very variety that several types of sibilants should be presupposed,<sup>12</sup> while Berkooz adduces arguments in favor of *š*, *s/z*, and *š/z*.<sup>13</sup> So much for interpretations based on the Hurrian syllabary. The alphabetic Hurrian material from Ras Shamra has been shown by Friedrich<sup>14</sup> to distinguish with regularity between *š*<sup>15</sup> (= *t*, *ʃ*) and *š*, although both may be expressed in the Hurrian syllabary as *š*; thus we have *šmg*/<sup>16</sup>*šimigi*, alongside *šmr̄r*/<sup>17</sup>*šmrišarri*. Finally, Ginsberg-Maisler and Harris<sup>18</sup> have argued that the character transliterated as *š* (or *š<sub>2</sub>*), which is written with two wedges, is not to be confused with the three-wedged *š* proper; it represents, instead, a Hurrian sound, which Ginsberg-Maisler would regard provisionally as *ʃ*, while Harris

<sup>10</sup> For *-hi* in Nuzi cf. *JAOS* 55.443 n. 38 and Friedrich, *ZDMG* 91.212. On the occurrence of this suffix in Ras Shamra, see below, p. 197 ff.

<sup>11</sup> *Syria* 12.253.

<sup>12</sup> *NDA* 60-63.

<sup>13</sup> *WZKM* 44.185-87.

<sup>14</sup> *An. Or.* 12.129 f.

<sup>15</sup> In this discussion I have used *š* for the Ras Shamra (RS) character representing the spirant which corresponds in Semitic to Arabic *ʃ*, and *š* for the two-wedged sign which Friedrich transcribes *š*.

<sup>16</sup> See above, notes 5-6.

introduces for it a purely conventional symbol  $\tilde{s}$ , suggesting as possible phonetic interpretations a sibilant or an affricate.

On one point at least all these writers are agreed: that Hurrian recognized more than one sibilant. Beyond this important concurrence, however, their results vary, largely because the several discussions are devoted to different aspects of the same problem. Friedrich is content with his convincing demonstration of the fact that the  $\tilde{s}$  of the Hurrian syllabary may represent one of two characters in RŠ Hurrian. The article was written before Harris had shown that his  $\tilde{s}$  is not to be confused with the three-wedged  $\tilde{s}$ ; otherwise Friedrich would have been obliged to state whether he regards  $\tilde{s}$  as yet another definitely established sibilant of Hurrian. On the other hand, Harris confined his study to the problem of  $\tilde{s}$ , and Ginsberg-Maisler limited the corresponding part of their article to the question of  $\tilde{s}$ , which is, as we have seen, merely another symbol for the above  $\tilde{s}$ . Lastly, neither Oppenheim nor Berkooz strayed far beyond the limits of the Nuzi material.

Before we proceed with this discussion, it will be necessary to review the available evidence. Hurrian contexts from Ras Shamra are restricted for the present to Syria 10, Tablets 4, 7, 28, 34 + 45, and apparently 30, 31, 35 to be designated hereafter as RŠ 4, 7, etc.); Syria 12, 389 f., and words in the "Seleg" text, Syria 15, 148 (cf. also the fragment, *ibid.* 153). The really significant text in the entire group is RŠ 4, on account of its length (63 lines), comparatively few gaps, and its use of word dividers. The short tablet marked RŠ 7 is complete, but of little assistance. No word dividers are employed here, nor do words end with the line; thus the first two characters of *kmrb* (*"Kumarbi/we"*) are at the end of line one, the last two at the beginning of line 2. In fact, what little we know from this text is due primarily to the insight of the late Hans Bauer,<sup>16</sup> who obtained his results by comparing this tablet with the fragmentary texts in RŠ 31 + 45. The remainder of the material presents no connected contexts. It follows that RŠ 4 alone can be looked to for reliable contributions.

But even this text is not uniformly reliable. A comparison of the following three passages<sup>17</sup> will prove instructive in this connection.

<sup>16</sup> *OLZ* 1934 474 f.

<sup>17</sup> In the transcriptions which follow a subscript dot shows that a part of the character in question is missing.

RS 4. 7-8: 'il k[*u*]r<sup>h</sup> <sup>18</sup> sbl p̄y l'nm kr. 'il kmr<sup>h</sup>nb <sup>19</sup>

ibid. 26-8: θr θbl (l- - - - -) -l̄ k[r θr(θ)]

ibid. 32-3: ḫdn ḫdlr θbl [p̄y?] l'nm.kr.ḫdn.ḫdlr

In the last passage we have names of two groups of deities (*ḫdn ḫdlr* = <sup>2</sup> *Hutean* <sup>3</sup> *Hutekurru*) <sup>20</sup> followed by *θbl* - *l'nm* *kr* and the same divine names. The middle passage has *θr* (a deity?) <sup>21</sup> followed by *θbl*, a long break, *l'nm* *k[r]*, and probably [*θr*] or [*θrθ*]. The first passage begins with 'il.kmr<sup>h</sup> and ends with kr.'il kmr<sup>h</sup>nb. <sup>22</sup> In all three passages the same sequence is observed. But instead of *θbl*, as in the two other citations, we have in one instance *sbl*; the *kmr<sup>h</sup>* of this section is, of course, the well-known god *Kumarbi/wa*. The formulaic character of the above passages makes it certain that the *sbl* of line 8 is an error for *θbl*, of which there are two clear occurrences in lines 27 and 33. Incidentally, this error involves one of the two appearances of the *s*-sign in the present text. The other is in *psm*, line 53. It is logical, therefore, to regard also the latter reading as suspect. The same may be said of the only remaining occurrence of the *s*-sign in a RS text which is certainly Hurrian; RS 45 rev. 10. <sup>23</sup>

RS 4 introduces, in addition, *š* (the three-wedged character) and *z*. The former is found definitely in the form *šr̄spn*, line 42 (and evidently is to be supplied in the preceding line). Examples with *z* are *ḫzḫg*, 4. 24 (16, 20), and *anzz*, 4. 11. On the other hand, both *θ* and *š* are very common. In the other Hurrian tablets *š* is found in 7. 6, 10; 34 end, and 45 rev. 1; *z* appears in 7. 10. In 7. 6 there is the sequence *šm* (with the *šdl̄*-sign), but Bauer <sup>24</sup> reads the word *šm*, on the analogy of 45 rev. 2.

To recapitulate this part of our inquiry, there is ample evidence

<sup>18</sup> The 'il before *kmr<sup>h</sup>* is hardly the Semitic word for "god."

<sup>19</sup> For *kmr<sup>h</sup>nb* = *Kumarbi-ni* see below, p. 192 f.

<sup>20</sup> For this pair of names cf. Hrozný, *Archiv Orientalni* 3, 121 ff.; Friedrich, *An. Or.* 12, 130.

<sup>21</sup> Cf. also RS 4. 01; 34. 3; perhaps to be connected(?) with *Seril*, in Boghazköi (Götze, *Kleinasiens* 121, 123, and in Nuzi *Arp-šeri*, HV 79. 36, *Nat-šeri*, N 177. 7, etc.)

<sup>22</sup> For the suffix *-s* and the incorporating infix *-ni* see below, p. 193.

<sup>23</sup> The fragment published in *Syria* 15, 153 adds two occurrences of the *s*-sign. But the context is enigmatic; all that can be said about this piece is that it includes two names of Hurrian deities; cf. Friedrich, *An. Or.* 12, 129.

<sup>24</sup> *OLZ* 1934. 475 n. 2.

for both *θ* and *z*. The tablets contain also signs for *s*, *š*, *z*, and *ž*. Of these, the first two appear to be due to scribal errors. Little doubt can be cast on the presence of *z*, in spite of the rare occurrences of the sign in question. As for *ž*, the corresponding character is certain in RS 4 in only one name;<sup>24</sup> but the other Hurrian tablets seem to indicate that a sound represented by this character may have been known to Hurrian.

With regard to phonetic values, it goes without saying that all we can expect at present is a general orientation rather than a satisfactory classification. On the basis of the foregoing remarks the elements at issue may be reduced to four, viz., *s*, *š*, *θ*, and *z*. Of these, the first three are well known from the Semitic texts of Ras Shamra, so that approximately analogous values may for the present be presupposed in each case for Hurrian as well: *s* would be the voiced sibilant, *š* would fall within the *šin/šān*<sup>25</sup> range, while *θ* would have the spirant value of the Arabic *ṣā*. As for *z*, Harris<sup>26</sup> has established conclusively that the character in question is all but restricted to Hurrian texts. Its occurrences in Semitic contexts are rare, although seemingly regular with certain words. The Semitic instances require a thorough investigation. For our immediate purposes it may be significant that in the poem on the "Gracious Gods," Syria 14. 128 ff., the word for "breast" in the phrase "sucking at the breast" is written *sd* in line 24, but *šd* in line 61. If we disregard the possibility of error in these two writings, this particular word for "breast" began with some sound which was intermediate between *s* and *z*.<sup>27</sup>

We are now ready for the evidence of the Hurrian syllabary. There we have a gratifying amount of comparative material, but

<sup>24</sup> For this name there is only a single citation from Boghazköi (*An. Or.* 12. 129), so that its Hurrian background is not quite certain. Our doubts on this subject gain some confirmation from the occurrence of the personal name *Ur-ia-ap-pa* in the first Arzawa letter, Götz., *Verstreute Boghazköi Texte* I, 11.

<sup>25</sup> These designations are employed in the present paper in an etymological sense only, without any implications as to relative priority or ultimate origin.

<sup>26</sup> See above, note 6.

<sup>27</sup> It may be of interest to recall that in the Semitic analogues (not to speak as yet of cognates) outside Ugaritic the initial consonant is also varied, owing doubtless to the onomatopoeic origin of the term; cf. e. g., Heb. *šed* and *dad*.

the evidence is bewildering at first. Thus the names of the deities *Simigi/qa*, *Sa(w)uška*, *Aštubī*, *Tešub*, and *ašti-* "woman" appear in the RS tablets as *smg*, *sw(u)šk*, *aštū*, *ištū*, and *ašti-* respectively.<sup>28</sup> The personal name *Ewirišurri* appears as *iuršr* (*Syria* 14 pl. 35 b 1), while *Iršappi* is rendered *iršp*. In other words the *š* of the syllabary may correspond to *θ*, *z*, and *š*. The syllabary was obviously incapable of individualizing all of the spirants and sibilants of Hurrian.

Our first concern is with *θ*. We know that the same character is employed in the Semitic texts to represent an original spirant *š*. The syllabary uses in its place the sibilant *š*. We shall see presently that in the extensive material from Nuzi there is no sure exception to the equation *θ* = *š*, and the question is therefore in order whether *θ* in Hurrian texts was as definitely spirant as is, e. g., Arabic *š*. On this point we get some hints from the Semitic texts of Ras Shamra. Here the *šafels* *yššb* (bis), and *ššbn* (all three from rt. *yšb*) and *wššb* (rt. *iwb*) use *θ* in the preformative; in all these instances an original *š* was assimilated to the *θ* of the next syllable.<sup>29</sup> The assimilatory influence of spirant upon sibilant, especially when heterosyllabic and where the pressure of the paradigm is strong, is certainly not normal in Semitic; if anything, the reverse process would be expected.<sup>30</sup> It would seem that even in the Semitic dialect of Ugarit *θ* (= *š*) had begun to shift toward *š*, just as it was to in Akkadian, Phoenician, and Hebrew. The above examples would thus indicate not so much an assimilatory influence on the part of a spirant *θ*, but rather a sibilant leaning in *θ*.

To return to the Hurrian syllabary, our richest source is furnished by the Nuzi texts. The phonetic evidence has been worked over recently by Berkooz and Oppenheim, whose studies on the subject may now be consulted. As a first step, however, we need a critical appraisal of their respective methods in order to appreciate the results in their bearing upon the present problem.

Berkooz set out to examine the orthography and phonology of the Nuzi documents.<sup>31</sup> Since his was a comprehensive survey of the

<sup>28</sup> Friedrich, loc. cit. For *ašti-* (in RS 4. 55: *aštū[š]*); cf. id. *Die Welt als Geschichte* III/1 82. For the bearing of the form *aštū* on the question of the *-šk* suffix in the RS texts see below, p. 197 f.

<sup>29</sup> See Harris, this JOURNAL, above, p. 104 f.

<sup>30</sup> Cf. e. g., Arab. *ššš* > *ššš* "sixth."

<sup>31</sup> See above, note 7.



material, he utilized both the Akkadian and the non-Akkadian elements, but treated the evidence from the non-Semitic proper names separately, owing to the heterogeneous character of the two sources. Moreover, in evaluating such evidence as he had for sound shifts and sound changes in Hurrian names, Berkooz was careful not to draw conclusions from apparently related onomastic elements unless the relationship was confirmed by genealogy. For instance, he compares the names *Ta-an-ki-ia* and *Ta-ki-ia* (NDA 57) only because in both cases the father is *Taana*; *Gi-el-ia* and *Gi-ir-ia* (p. 60), because the parent is always *Sarramuhi*, and so on. In studying unknown linguistic material, where, say, *tauk-* and *tak-* or *gel* and *gir* might represent conceivably so many independent elements, the genealogical criterion is the only safe guide to comparisons. Caution in matters of this kind has contributed to the conservative nature of Berkooz's results. Nevertheless, arguments are adduced against the prevalent assumption that Hurrian had only one series of stops (p. 40), and valid objections are raised against the theory that the Hurrians had but one sibilant for the Akkadian *s* and *š* (pp. 60 ff.).

Berkooz's reasoning with regard to the sibilants in the non-Semitic proper names from Nuzi is of particular interest in the present connection. He finds that certain elements are written only with signs containing *š* (including *šawuška*, *šimika*, *tešup*), while others are written with *s* only (e. g., *sigi*, *sili*, *sizza*).<sup>22</sup> The interchange of *s* and *š* in certain other elements is interpreted, therefore, as an indication that the Hurrians had in addition to *š* another (presumably voiceless) sibilant, which the Nuzi scribes failed to represent with consistency because it was foreign to Akkadian.<sup>23</sup>

So far the argument has been perfectly sound; we can scarcely criticize Berkooz for seeing his foreign sibilant in the element *šarri*, which he equates, with Ginsberg-Maisler and Harris, with RŠ 2r.<sup>24</sup> His further argument, however, that the new sibilant was phonetically *š* is not quite so valid. It is based on a comparison of the writings *Ku-uz-za-ri* and *Ku-uz-za-zi*, both of which represent a son of *Hamanna* (p. 62). It is true that the vacillation between *r* and *z* would justify such a conclusion. Unfortunately, however, the discrepancy may be graphic and not phonetic. The signs *zi* and *ri* may be confused in the Nuzi texts, very likely by the copyist, as I

<sup>22</sup> NDA 61.<sup>23</sup> Ibid.<sup>24</sup> Ibid. 62.

have shown elsewhere in safe Akkadian examples.<sup>35</sup> For this reason, no phonetic conclusions can be drawn from such cases.

Oppenheim has lately been pursuing Nuzi studies with great industry and marked success. Non-Semitic proper names have received his special attention as is evidenced by several unusually stimulating articles, to which is added a thorough and critical review of Berkooz's monograph.<sup>36</sup> This is not the place for a detailed estimate of Oppenheim's results. It is necessary, however, to state that these results are not always conclusive because of the author's failure to adhere rigidly to the genealogical principle of comparison. Thus he juxtaposes *Na-ip-šu-ur-ra* and *A-ri-ip-šu-ur-ra* (WZKM 44. 187), with entirely different initial elements, in order to demonstrate the interchange of *š* and *h* in the respective final elements; and he loses sight of the inherent probability that *šurra* and *hurra* were not the same word at all. More serious is this excess of optimism when a comparison is made between *Ku-ur-tu<sub>1</sub>-ru-uk* (Gadd 33. 28) and *Wu-ur-tu<sub>1</sub>-ru-uk* (N 12. 21). This single instance of interchange between *k* and *w* is deemed sufficient to establish the existence of the labiovelar *g*.<sup>37</sup> But when the references are checked, the first one turns out to be *w[u]*, not *kā*, so that the name is to be read in both instances as *Wur-turuk*. Lastly, not enough attention is paid to the possibility of scribal errors (*ki/di*, *ra/ša*, *hi/ie*) for which there are abundant examples in the Akkadian and easily controlled material from Nuzi;<sup>38</sup> no phonetic conclusions should be based on examples where the likelihood of such errors has not been considered. Similarly, graphic peculiarities can not be ignored. The comparison of *A-wa-ta-gi* with <sup>39</sup>*A-wa-sag-gi* (WZKM 44. 186) is to be deleted for the simple reason that the text in which the alleged *\*Awasaggi* occurs (N 516. 5)<sup>40</sup> writes *ta* almost exactly like *sag* (in the unambiguous *Im-ma-ta-am-mar*, line 11, and again in *Ša-ta-ri-el-li*, line 12).

With these reservations we approach Oppenheim's analysis of the

<sup>35</sup> Cf. AASOR 16. 116, note at 69. 18. <sup>36</sup> Cf. note 8, above.

<sup>37</sup> Again, there is here no genealogical evidence for connecting the two names. Since far-reaching conclusions are to be based on this single pair of names, the possibility should first have been weighed that *ur* and *\*ur* are different etymologically.

<sup>38</sup> See NDA 22 ff.

<sup>39</sup> In citing Nuzi texts I use N for Chiera, *Joint expedition with the Iraq Museum at Nuzi*, vols. I-V; H for *Harvard Semitic Series*; Gadd for RA 23. 142 ff.

sibilants. The interchange of *š* and *s* (loc. cit. 185) calls for no comment. The next paragraph (15; p. 186) deals with the change between *š/s* and *r*. We find here a number of examples, but no single group of these is really conclusive. Three pairs of names involve the change of *ša* and *ra*; a comparison of Gadd 70.6 and *ibid.* 82.22 (the first pair of examples cited by Oppenheim) will show, however, how close is the *ra* of *I-wa-ra-an-ni*, in the former instance, to the *ša* of *I-wa-ša-an-ni*, in the latter reference. Then we have three examples of interchange of *š* and *r* before *i* and *g/k*.<sup>40</sup> But even if we assume that each pair represents actually a single name, the effect of a dental or a velar upon a preceding *r* or *š* would not be on a par with an antevocalic change.<sup>41</sup> Pairs like *Ha-ma-ar* and *Ha-ma-aš-šu-ḫē* involve at best assimilation. *Ba-su-un-du* and *Ba-ru-un-du* are outside Nuzi and, moreover, the former has a rich Semitic genealogical background (cf. YOS I ad loc.). The *š* of *Hu-uš-ši* (N 424.5) is to be read *ḫ* and points, upon comparison with *Hu-uš-ri* in line 36 of the same text, to the frequent and well-established interchange between *r* and *l*.<sup>42</sup> Lastly, for graphic reasons, no reliance can be placed on the assumed change between *ri* and *ri*, as was explained above.

I have analyzed all of Oppenheim's sets of examples in that particular paragraph to demonstrate that there is no safety in numbers alone. They should have been treated by the author under the several classifications to which they belong, for they reflect by no means related phonetic conditions. But even then, the net result would not have been the establishment of a *š*-sound in the non-Semitic names under discussion. At best, the possibility of such

<sup>40</sup> *Uš-ku-se/Uš-ku-ti*; *Aš-tar-ti-lu/Ar-tar-ti-lu*; *Zi-š-te-šup/Zi-ir-te-šup*. The pair *A-ra-aš-gi-šu* and *A-ra-aš-gi-šu*, which is cited also, does not belong here at all; if these names should happen to belong together they would indicate only interchange of *š* and *d/t*.

<sup>41</sup> In other words, a change of *ša* to *ra* would not be on a par with the development of *ḫ* to *rt*. For the latter, examples can be found in good Akkadian; cf. Brockelmann, *Grundriss d. vergl. Gram. d. sem. Spr.* I p. 166 f. In the antevocalic change of *luššu* to *lušru* we have in reality an analogue of *luššu* > *lušru* and then dissimilation of *\*luššu* to *lušru*. The influence of *k* may be seen in the Akk. doublets *kaškadānu* and *kaškadānu* or *kikēdānu* and *kikēdānu*. Such changes are the result of special phonetic conditions and are not to be implied for any *š* and *r*, especially when the investigated material comes from an obscure language.

<sup>42</sup> *NDA* 59 f.; *WZKM* 44. 121.

an occurrence would have to be borne in mind. Until less ambiguous evidence for such a sound is adduced, the problem will remain in a purely speculative stage.

Equally doubtful is the palatal *s* which Oppenheim postulates on the basis of the alleged interchange of *s* and *š* (loc. cit. 187). The pair *Naip-šurra* and *Arip-šurra* was disposed of earlier in this argument. For similar reasons (lack of genealogical confirmation) the pair *Wu-ur-ša-ri* and *Wu-ur-ša-ri* is inconclusive. The remaining examples involve graphic confusion of *še* and *hi*.<sup>43</sup> And so we are confronted once again with an interesting possibility for which there is no decisive proof; interesting because, if established, it would account for the juxtaposition of *šubur* and *subar* among the Sumerian ideograms for *Subartu*. As it is, both Ungnad<sup>44</sup> and Goetze<sup>45</sup> regrettably but wisely reject this comparison for lack of sufficient evidence.<sup>46</sup>

All that is left of Oppenheim's discussion of the sibilants are two brief paragraphs (16-17, p. 186). Of these, the first tends to establish the interchange of *s* and *t*, on the basis of examples which are not reliable,<sup>47</sup> and the other deals with some correspondences between *s/z* and *t/d*. On this latter point the evidence is not extensive, but unambiguous none the less. When we find, e.g., the same Hurrian term written *za-za-ru-uš-še* (Gadd 40.7) and *za-ta-ru-uš-še* (ibid. 29, 22, 37),<sup>48</sup> we know that textual criticism cannot affect these instances because *m* and *ta* are not subject to confusion in writing or copying. It is obvious that the scribes attempted to represent here some Hurrian sound for which the

<sup>43</sup> Cf. NDA 23.

<sup>44</sup> *Subartu* 110.

<sup>45</sup> JAGS 57, 108.

<sup>46</sup> The *š* of RS 2. 12, 30 is far from certain as a transcription of *šubur*. In fact, if our law that Akkadian (and doubtless Sumerian) *s* which may vary with *š* cannot correspond to RS *s* (see below, p. 192) is confirmed, then *š* must be something other than *Sub/ur-Subur*. (For a contrary opinion cf. Albright JPOS. 14, 107. In the light of more recent material, that section of Albright's study (ibid.) is now largely out of date. The sibilant in the name *Šin* is written in Nuzi as *š* or *z*, hence it can not correspond with Ugaritic *š*.)

<sup>47</sup> Not one of these alleged correspondences can be confirmed genealogically. The strongest case is *E-ša-ku*, N 177.4 and *E-ta-ku*, ibid. 10, because *ša* and *ta* are not confused in these texts as a rule. But although these writings occur on the same tablet, it is uncertain from the context whether the same person is referred to in both instances!

<sup>48</sup> WZKM 44, 186, and Berkeoz, NDA 62 n. 144.

syllabary had not provided; that sound was close to, or composed of, a sibilant and a dental, hence it was probably an affricate.

The evidence of the Nuzi script with regard to the sibilants, as evaluated so far, may be summed up as follows: In Akkadian words *š* and *s* are often confused in writing. But many words have their sibilant represented only as *š*, while others are written consistently with *s/z*. The writings would seem to reflect three varieties of sibilant: as expressed by *š* only; by *s/z*; by *š* or *s/z*. What we get here is, of course, no more than the Nuzian rendering of certain Akkadian sounds. Indirectly, however, we gather that in the Hurrian dialect of Nuzi, whose phonology is reflected of necessity in the local Akkadian documents, there were at least two distinct sibilants, expressed in the Nuzi script as *š* or *s/z* respectively. The probability of an affricate was also indicated. A further possibility will be considered below.

To carry this inquiry a step further, however, we shall dwell a while longer on the Akkadian material, since it lends itself, despite its Nuzian guise, to phonetic analysis. Having found that the Nuzi texts represent Akkadian sibilants with some degree of method, we may now inquire how that method was applied: Which Semitic sound or sounds was expressed by *š* only, which by *s/z* only, and which could vary between *š* and *s/z*?

1. The clearest case is furnished by *s/z*. Berkeoz has shown that all forms of the verbs *esēbu*, *asū*, *esēdu*, *zāzu*, *zakū*, *zakāru*, *mašāsu*, *nakāsu*, *sabāsu*, *rakāsu*, and *qasāsu* are always written with signs containing only *s* or *z* (*š* — *zē* is used very rarely), never with *š*.<sup>40</sup> The nouns present a similar picture.<sup>41</sup> For *s* written as *š* Berkeoz can cite only two examples, *i-sa-aš* (H IX 119, 15) for *išassi*, and *Ši-ni-ki-še* (N 347, 29) for *Šin-iqīša*.<sup>42</sup> In other words, Akkadian *s* and *g* are never written with *š*, Akkadian *s* hardly ever.

<sup>40</sup> NDA 61.

<sup>41</sup> The genitive and accusative of *riku* are cases in point because they are always written with *si* and *za* respectively, although the local syllabary employed *si* and *sa* for other purposes; cf.

*ri-ik-si*: N 435.1; 439.1; 440.1; 441.1; H V 80.1; H IX 24.1; TCL 9 41.1; AASOR 16 44.1.

*ri-ik-za*: N 435.4; 440.4; 441.3; H V 80.3; H IX 24.3; TCL 9 41.4; AASOR 16 44.3.

<sup>42</sup> NDA 61. In *i-sa-aš* we have plainly erroneous transposition of *s* and *š*, cf. *ibid.* note 140. The other example is a proper name, whose initial sibilant is otherwise regularly *s*.

Further analysis yields still more definite results.

- a. Words containing *z* or *s* are written with *z*, rarely with *s*, but never with *š*, e. g., from *ezēbu*: *e-zi-ib*, H V 82. 29; *i-zi-ib*, N 302. 12; 305. 8; *i-iz-zi-ib*, H V 57. 14; Gadd 12. 27; *i-zi-ib-ma*, N 308. 17; *i-zi-ib-šu*, N 317. 17; *e-te-zi-ib-ši*, Gadd 33. 7; *i-te-zi-ib*, H V 1. 6; *ú-sé-zi-ib*, H V 40. 14.

From *gabānu*: *az-za-bat-mi*, H IX 12. 10; *az-za-bat-za*, H IX 141. 12; *az-za-pa-az-za-mi*, N 138. 5; *iz-za-ba-at*, N 8. 9; H V 52. 7; *is-za-ab-ba<sup>62</sup>*, N 135. 19; *is-za-ab-bat*, Gadd 33. 25; *i-za-bat-za-ma*, H V 96. 18; TCL 9 10. 22; *iz-za-bat-za-šu-ti*, H V 47. 11; *i-za-pa-ad-du*, N 473. 29; *is-za-ab-du*, H IX, 8. 10; *iz-za-ab-tu*, *Univ. of Cal. Sem. Pub.* 9, 412, line 35; *i-za-ap-pa-du*, N 222. 14; *is-za-ab-du-ni-mi*, N 138. 14; *i-za-ab-ba-du-ni*, N 123. 10; *ú-za-ab-du-aš*, Gadd 15. 31; *za-bi-it*, H V 5. 17; *za-pa-ti*, H V 44. 22. In all these forms *za* (= *ša*) is never written with the sign *sa*, although the latter does occur elsewhere in the Nuzi texts (for *ša*)<sup>63</sup> and in spite of the fact that the same forms exhibit every conceivable variation in the expression of other sounds.

- b. In addition, *s* is written frequently with *z*-signs. This is established by such forms as *al-zi*, *li-il-zi*, *i-sa-az-zi* (from *šesū*)<sup>64</sup> where the final syllable is written *zi*, not *ši*, although the latter sign is again no stranger to the Nuzi texts.

The above cases justify therefore this conclusion: Since Akkadian *z* and *s* are always written in Nuzi with *z*, while Akkadian *s* may also appear as *z*, the Nuzians pronounced all three sounds as *z*. In the Nuzi dialect of Hurrian, which affected the local pronunciation of Akkadian, there must have existed a voiced sibilant.<sup>65</sup>

2. We next turn to instances which show Akkadian *š* represented in Nuzi normally also by *š*, but occasionally by *s/z*. Berkoos's examples of this group are limited to the writings of *š* as *s* and do not include the illustrations with *z*. His list contains a number of

<sup>62</sup> So especially in the present and periphrastic of *šesū*, cf. *NDA* 63.

<sup>63</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>64</sup> In other words, original Akkadian *s* shifted to *z* in the Nuzi dialect. Consistent use of *z*-signs in Nuzi would point, therefore, to a sound which was not *s* in Akkadian proper; see the next section.

forms of the verbs *šesû* and *šafûru*, one form of *šakûnu*, and the name *ši-ma-an-ni* (with the rare Š1-sign) in place of the common *ši-ma-an-ni*.<sup>54</sup> Inasmuch as all examples of this group have a particular significance, Berkooz's list should be supplemented. We note the following:

Akkadian *š* becomes *s* in certain occurrences of forms based on *šemu* "to establish, grant, deed," such as *i-si-mu*, N 443.2; H I 71.4; *i-si-ma-an-ni*,<sup>55</sup> N 333.47; *si-im-ti*, H I 71.1; *si-im-ta*, *ibid.* 4.

*š* becomes *s* in numerous occurrences of *šesû*, cf. e.g., *a-sa-as-si*, N 106.18; 109.13; 122.24; 476.16; *AASOR* 16 29.12; *a-sa-si*, N 117.8; *i-sa-as-si*, N 131.19; 428.14; 546.19, 21; *AASOR* 16 19.17; *i-sa-si*, N 434.23; 546.35; also in the suffix *-šu* "his," cf. *a-ša-su*, H 43.16, and perhaps *a-ša-as-su*.<sup>56</sup> *AASOR* 16 23.2, 17. It should be emphasized that the above writings are not the rule, the usual orthography being with *š*.

Upon a closer examination of these departures from normal Nuzi orthography, one fact becomes apparent: the Akkadian *š* which appears here as *s* or *z* represents an original sibilant of Semitic (*šin* or *šîn*),<sup>57</sup> not a spirant (Arabic *š*). For the *š*-sounds of *šemu*, *šafûru*, *šakûnu*, *šesû*, and *-šu* were all sibilants from the start.

<sup>54</sup> NDA 63.

<sup>55</sup> In verbal forms of this type there is the possibility that the *t*-form (*ištim-*) is represented. In the noun, however, no *t* could affect the preceding sibilant.

<sup>56</sup> In my translation of this text I interpreted *ašas-su* as *ašas-su*, because the syntax favored such a construction. A renewed study of this text convinces me, however, that *ašat-su* may have been intended, the ambiguity being due to the scribe's difficulty with Akkadian. By analyzing the word as "his sister" we assume only a mistake in syntax and not a radical departure from the established structure of the Nuzi family law (sororate instead of fratriarchal rights), which the alternative view would compel us to do.

I wish to take this opportunity to state that a re-reading of *AASOR* 16 has brought out a number of slips in my contribution to that volume. Some of these consist of wrong references and are due primarily to the circumstance that the necessary sources for checking the entries were not available at Tepe Gawra, where the proofs reached me. Others would probably have slipped through anyway. In text 75.3, 14 the forms *is-si-a-su*, *is-si-el-mi* are plainly not from *nasûu* but from *šil* (*t*-form) "to quarrel."

<sup>57</sup> Cf. note 25.



There is not a single instance in which Nuzi *s/z* can be shown to represent Akkadian *š* derived from Semitic *f*. To be sure, the above writings are exceptional, but all these exceptions involve one and the same original sound, different etymologically from its Akkadian homophone *š* < *f*. This evidence cannot be disregarded, especially since it has come down to us through the medium of a heterolingual group. If the Semitic dialect of Nuzi were an inner-Akkadian development, normal orthography would carry normal weight. But when a dialect is preserved through an alien medium, exceptions that betray definite uniformity must be assigned a definite significance.

There is one outstanding difference between the present class of examples and that which was discussed in the preceding section. Here *s* or *z* may be substituted for the far more usual *š*; there *z* was the usual writing, while *š* appeared only in two suspect cases.<sup>59</sup> In section 1 the sound indicated by the writing was in all probability the voiced sibilant *z*; here the predominance of *š* strongly suggests an underlying voiceless sound.

3. When we next examine the list of instances which show Akkadian *š* invariably represented as *š* in Nuzi, we find included in this group all the words known from these documents which contain an original Semitic *f*. The very common verb *aššû*, the preposition *asûr*, and the numerals *šind* and *šaldû* provide standard illustrations of this rule. That the list contains also many words with original *š* or *st* is not surprising in view of the fact that any Akkadian *š*, whatever its origin, is normally written with *š*-signs in the Nuzi documents. But whereas this norm is never broken with an original spirant, etymological *š* or *st* has produced, as we have seen, a number of telltale exceptions.

This unexpected and differentiating Nuzi treatment of Akkadian *š* is strikingly paralleled in the Old Akkadian texts. Ungnad was the first to puzzle over the circumstance that these texts represent as *s* or as *š* that sound which later became *š*, the treatment remaining regular with any given word.<sup>60</sup> The problem was solved by Thureau-Dangin, who demonstrated that this dual treatment reflects a differentiation between original spirant and sibilant; the former (*f*) was written in Old Akkadian with *š*-signs, the latter (*š/š*)

<sup>59</sup> Cf. note 51.

<sup>60</sup> *Materialien zur altakkadischen Sprache* (MVAG 1915/2) 21 ff.

with *s*-signs, although peculiarities of the syllabary and incipient confusion in actual pronunciation resulted in a number of apparent or real exceptions in the texts.<sup>43</sup> Valuable confirmation of this analysis has recently been found by Meek<sup>44</sup> in a study of his Old Akkadian texts from Nuzi itself: the preformative of the causative conjugation, which is cognate with the pronoun of the third person<sup>45</sup> and consequently begins with a sibilant, is always *s-* in Old Akkadian.

How did the Nuzi script come to perpetuate, even though it did so only sporadically, a tradition which goes back to Old Akkadian times? There can be no question of unbroken continuity in Akkad proper, for there the orthographic differentiation between Semitic spirant and sibilant goes out with the Third Dynasty of Ur.<sup>46</sup> The efforts of the Semites, in so far as the orthography of the sibilants was concerned, seemed to be concentrated on adapting the script which they took over from the Sumerians to the needs of their so-called emphatics.<sup>47</sup> The spirant *f* had merged completely with *s*.

A possible way to account for the dual use of *s*-signs at Nuzi, in restricted correspondence with the Old Akkadian usage, is by recalling the position of the Nuzian syllabary. That syllabary belongs to the "Akkado-Hittite" family, as was shown most recently by Berkocz,<sup>48</sup> Now the Akkado-Hittite syllabary did not

<sup>43</sup> RA 23. 28 f.; 30. 93 f. It goes without saying that if the problem were to be investigated at its ultimate source, the phonetic values of the sibilants in the Sumerian syllabary would have to be taken into account. On this point, however, there are interesting possibilities, with little that could be termed certain.

<sup>44</sup> RA 34. 61 f.

<sup>45</sup> Speiser, JASOR 56. 22 ff.

<sup>46</sup> RA 30. 94.

<sup>47</sup> Cf. Goetze's demonstration of the treatment of *ṣ* in Old Babylonian, *Orientalia* 6 (1937) 12 ff.

<sup>48</sup> NDA 9; but the case is far from complete. That Nuzi Akkadian was not purely Babylonian, or Assyrian in a linguistic sense, or even a mixture of the two dialects, but was affected also by West Semitic, may be seen from a cursory examination of the Nuzi vocabulary. The Nuzi term for "threshing floor" is not *sdru* (Aram. *šdār*), as in contemporary Assyrian, but *magratju*, from the West Semitic *grā*, which had to be imported from farther west than Assyria. Similarly, *uštudešin* takes us to the territory of the Amarna letters (cf. *AdSOR* 10, p. 72). These are merely lexical items, to be sure, but they cannot be entirely ignored. They add indirect confirmation to the view that Nuzi depended in a literary sense on Western sources, and hence only indirectly on Akkadian material. For these reasons, Driver-Miles' use of the term "Middle-Babylonian" as applied to Nuzi (in their *Assyrian Laws*) is misleading.

develop from the script of the Old Babylonian age, but from that of a stage which preceded it.<sup>67</sup> If the borrowing took place at a time when the writers still differentiated, to a certain extent at least, between original *t* and *š*, that distinction may have been preserved by the borrowers, away from Sumer and Akkad, although it was to be lost later in the homeland. This view involves certain chronological difficulties, but these may not prove to be insuperable.<sup>68</sup> What is more pertinent just now, a similar indirect differentiation between originally disparate sounds is found in the writing of the sibilants in the non-Semitic elements from Nuzi,<sup>69</sup> to which we shall now turn after our lengthy digression into Akkadian phonology.

In the Hurrian names from Nuzi the following sibilants are indicated: one is written with *š* only, another with *z* only, while in some cases *š* may interchange with *z/z*.<sup>70</sup> In other words, the situation is the same as in Nuzi Akkadian, which is precisely what we should expect in this case. Our only surprise is caused by the dual nature of *š* in Hurrian elements, as betrayed by its constancy in some cases, and its ability to interchange with *z/z* in others. We have seen that there was an etymological basis for the analogous dichotomy in the local dialect of Semitic. Could there be a similar reason within Hurrian for the same kind of dualism?

If we examine the list of Hurrian elements which are always

<sup>67</sup> For the latest evidence on this point see the remarks by Landsberger and Güterbock in *A/O* 12, 55 ff.

<sup>68</sup> It is generally agreed that the "Akkado-Hittite" syllabary is older than the Old Babylonian. But the script of the Third Dynasty of Ur is clearly earlier than our syllabary. We are left then with the alternative that at the time when the Akkado-Hittite syllabary was initiated, the Old Akkadian differentiation of the sibilant in {w}abšiu as against the one in *šafaru* was still alive to a certain extent. A satisfactory solution must await an exhaustive study of this problem.

Incidentally, the parallel treatment of sibilants in Old Akkadian and in Nuzi enhances the probability that the Hurrians were responsible for the adaptation of the Akkado-Hittite syllabary. They were certainly in Babylon by the end of the third millennium, as transients rather than settlers in large groups. Travellers of that sort are precisely the type to carry writing back home.

<sup>69</sup> It should be pointed out in this connection that Boghazköi Akkadian, which is written in a typical form of the Akkado-Hittite syllabary, furnishes evidence for an analogous treatment of the sibilants; cf. Labat, *L'akkadien de Boghaz-köi* 33 ff.

<sup>70</sup> *NDA* 61.

written with *š*, we shall find among them the names *Sawuška*, *Šimiga*, and *Tēšup*.<sup>11</sup> Now in all three of these names of deities the sibilants occur in the alphabetic texts from Ras Shamra as *š*, which we found employed also in Semitic words for a sound corresponding etymologically with Semitic *š*. In other words, the Nuzians wrote *š* for that Hurrian sibilant (or spirant) which RS Hurrian represented as *θ*, just as they expressed with *š*-signs that sibilant of Akkadian which goes back to Semitic *š* and would appear in Ugaritic as *š*. In view of this complete and manifold agreement, we cannot but see in the variable *š*, *s/z* of certain non-Semitic elements from Nuzi a sibilant quite different from *š/θ*. Specifically, since RS *šmg* appears in Nuzi (and cognate) texts as *Šimigi/qa* but never as *\*S/Zimigi/qa*, just as RS (Ugaritic) *yšb* corresponds with *ašbu* but not *\*aš/zābu*, then Nuzi *I-ši-ip-ša-lu* (N 557. 5) alongside *I-zi-ip-ša-lu* (N 455. 21) could not have its sibilant expressed by RS *θ*. The Nuzi Akkadian analogue of this particular sibilant would have to be sought in *šašaru*, *šakānu*, or the initial sound of *šewi*, but not in *ašbu* or *ašru*. But what would that be in the RS script?

Theoretically, our possibilities are RS *š*, *z*, and *z*. The first of these (the three-wedged *š*) is insufficiently established because it occurs rarely and has but one certain tie with the syllabary, viz., through *\*Iršappi*.<sup>12</sup> Furthermore, in order to prove conclusively that the *š* of RS *\*iršp* corresponds to the sibilant in *Iš/zip-Halu* (see above), we should need first a syllabic *\*Irz/sappi*, which we do not have. RS *z* may be eliminated because it is the obvious counterpart to the unvarying Nuzi *z* in *zigi*, *silli*, *sizza*, etc.,<sup>13</sup>

<sup>11</sup> These writings occur also in all the other sources of the Akkado-Hittite syllabary. The single writing with *š* (*\*Te-ša-ub-uš*; cf. Thureau-Dangin, *Syrie* 15. 253 n. 3) occurs in a late Assyrian text and conforms strictly to the Assyrian treatment of *š* and *z* as one sound.

Although this discussion is concerned with the Hurrian syllabary in general, Nuzi occurrences have been cited so frequently because recent studies of the Nuzi texts have clarified the situation and facilitate references. Labat's monograph is not specific enough on the phonetic side. No mention need be made here of the nature of *š* in Hittite documents, because the problem is entirely different; the sibilants of "Amorite" are also a matter apart.

<sup>12</sup> RS *\*iršp-n*, 4. 42 (with acc.-s); KUB XXVII I II 23, *\*Ir-šap-pi-ni-iš* (with the incorporating -*ni*- and the *š*-suffix); cf. Friedrich, *An. Or.* 12. 129 n. 3. See, moreover, above, note 24<sup>a</sup>.

<sup>13</sup> NDA 61.

which corresponds plainly to the voiced sibilant which represents in the Nuzi texts Akkadian *z*, *s*, and *š*.<sup>14</sup> There remains thus only RS *z̄*. It commends itself by its frequent occurrence in an important text, RS 4; there is not any doubt that *z̄* indicates a sound common to Hurrian and apparently peculiar to that language. Ginsberg and Maisler believe that they have found a positive connection between RS *z̄* and the variable *š/z* of the syllabary by connecting the sibilants of RS *\*wzr* and Amarna *Saratu/Zuratu*.<sup>15</sup> But the Hurrian character of the above Amarna name remains to be demonstrated.<sup>16</sup>

The postulated correspondence between alphabetic *z̄* and the variable syllabic *š/z* is so far merely circumstantial. Definite confirmation will depend on evidence from new material. What remains

<sup>14</sup> See above, note 54. For the very rare sign SI cf. NDA 11.

<sup>15</sup> JPOS 14. 244.

<sup>16</sup> It is true that *Saratu(w)/Zuratu* refer to the same person who is the son of *Zu/itana* (written also *Sutana*). But that does not prove by any means that *Sar/zw* and RS *z̄* are identical. In order to make such a correspondence probable, it would first be necessary to show that the Amarna name is Hurrian. The best that could be done in this case is a normalization to *\*Sar-otna*, a hybrid Hurro-Semitic name. The name of the father presents a worse problem still. One would have to show that *sa*, *zi*, and *zu* all stand for *Sin* and that *itana* equals *otna*, so that the whole might be linked with *\*Sin-sai-ni* H V 6. 28 and *Zi-as-at-na*, H IX 31, 12 (on these names see Oppenheim, *A/O* 12. 34). But by the time that the last link has been forged, the whole chain becomes too weak for practical purposes.

All that we have, then, is the correspondence of RS *z̄* with syllabic *zar* (on this element see Güter, *Die Assuren des Mittelalters* 226 ff.). A reliable instance with *z* or *z̄* (*z/za-zr*) is still lacking. A contributory cause may be the circumstance that the sign *zar* also has the value *zar*. But this does not get us anywhere.

The common element *šenni* should also be capable of furnishing positive proof, especially if my suggestion to connect it with RS *šn* in *šgn*, *Syria* 15. 244. 9, (apud Harris, *JPOS* 53. 98) is borne out. But the Nuzi scribes did not welcome the complicated *si-e* for the simple *še*. And the *si* in the name of the king of Urkis and Naway (and of his builder, RA 9. 1 ff.) is ambiguous, because at the time from which this text dates SI had the values *si* and *š*; instead of the customary reading *A-ri-si-en*, Thureau-Dangin (*Syria* 12. 253 f.) would now read *A-ri-š-en*. Since this latter version can neither be proved or disproved, the case remains problematical. [Cf. however, *Pa-i-si-ni* AASOR 16 95, 21 (called to my attention by Goetze) as possible evidence for the writing of *šenni* with *z*.]

to be considered at present is the possible connection between the sound indicated by the above syllabic writing and the affricate assumed for Hurrian from interchanges between sibilant and dental. Concretely, was the recorded sibilant of *Iš/zip-Halu*, which the Nuzians employed also to render Akkadian *š* in *šēnu*, *šataru*, etc., the same as the initial sound of *z/tatarušše*?<sup>77</sup> This is a possibility that should not be overlooked. If confirmed, it would add to the cumulative evidence in favor of equating syllabic *š/z* with RS *š*, since the latter could interchange with *z* in Semitic texts (*šd: zd*).<sup>78</sup> We assume, therefore, provisionally and as a working hypothesis only, that the several writings under discussion represented a Hurrian affricate;<sup>79</sup> the Hurrians seem to have used this sound to render Semitic *š/s* (but not original *š*).

The net result of this lengthy discourse may be summed up as follows. The *š* of the Hurrian syllabary represents more than one Hurrian sound. Where it corresponds to RS *š*, the sound in question was intermediate between a sibilant and a dental spirant. But if that *š* is ever replaced by *s*, *z* or *t/d*, the underlying sound was probably an affricate, which RS would express as *š*.

In conclusion, it is of interest to inquire how the suffixes in *-š* and *-še/i*<sup>80</sup> of the Hurrian syllabary are represented in RS Hurrian: with *š* or *š?* It is certain that the ending *-š*, which indicates the nominative or subject case,<sup>81</sup> appears as *š*. This is established by the occurrence of *kurb-n-š* in RS 4, 8, alongside *kurb-n-d*, line 7, and *kurb*, 6-7. The syllabic form corresponding to *kurb-n-š*<sup>82</sup>

<sup>77</sup> See above, note 48. I am using this pair of writings as parade examples suggestive of a possible affricate, because they are not vulnerable on textual grounds. Some of the other examples cited by Oppenheim, *WZKM* 44.186, pars. 16-17, may prove valid. Berkeoz's other argument for a possible affricate (*ša-ak-ru-ut-še*, N 401.7 and *ša-ak-ru-ut-še*, N 411.16; cf. *NDA* 62 n. 144) carries more weight because both passages seem to refer to the same district (*dimit ša š/ša t.*).

<sup>78</sup> See above, p. 178.

<sup>79</sup> The possibility that there may have been more than one affricate is, for the present, purely academic.

<sup>80</sup> For other Hurrian elements containing a sibilant followed by a vowel see provisionally *WZKM* 44.204 ff.

<sup>81</sup> For occurrences cf., e. g., the list in Messerschmidt, *MFAG* 4.270. The same is true of pronouns: *iesē* "you" (sg.) alongside *ue-ue* (gen.); *An. Or.* 12.132.

<sup>82</sup> For the *-ni* element in Hurrian see Thureau-Dangin, *Syria* 12.264 ff..

would be <sup>82</sup>*\*Kumarbi-ni-š*, on the analogy of <sup>83</sup>*\*Ir-šap-pi-ni-iš*, KUB XXVII 1 ii 25; <sup>84</sup>*\*Ši-mi-i-gi-ni-š*, Mitanni letter I 106, <sup>85</sup>*\*Ši-mi-gi-ni-eš*, KUB XII 34 i 14. Another occurrence of this suffix *-š* is furnished by *šbš* (= *Tašub-aš*), RS 4.13 (14).<sup>86</sup> This particular section (lines 10-14) is damaged in part, but since it follows closely the phraseology of the preceding undamaged section, which deals with *kurb* (6-9), some of the gaps can be restored. In line 10 we should read *š[b] šlbz*, because of the complete *šbš* of line 13, and not *š[p]* as suggested by Hrozný.<sup>87</sup> The whole introductory phrase was almost certainly

*\*iz[r š]šr [š]šlš š[b] šlbz š[šbš šlbzn]d . .* (10-11)

on the analogy of

*\*šr ššr ššlš 'il kurb 'ild kurbud . .* (6-7)

A suffix *-š* would seem to result from the juxtaposition of *pba*, *ibid.* 60 and *pbaš*, *ibid.* 30.<sup>88</sup> But in the latter instance the context is lost so that this suggestion is problematical. To combine this element with the *še/š*,<sup>89</sup> or *še/-zi* of the syllabaries would be correspondingly more doubtful, although plausible phonetically after our analysis of the *š*-sound. For more satisfactory results we need fresh material and further study.

and Friedrich, *An. Or.* 12.122 n. 3. I have followed Friedrich in calling this an incorporating element ("suffixierend," *ibid.* 122 n. 3) because this designation is noncommittal. For a syllabic occurrence of this element with *Kumarbi* cf. *An. Or.* 12.122 n. 3. The rules governing the use or omission of *-uš* are as yet unknown (*ibid.*). In the Nuzi documents we find this element in *gu-šš-gi-ni-še*, H V 18.25; IX 105.40), alongside *kaške*, etc.; cf. Speiser, *JAOI* 52.363; 366 n. 85; *\*štar-šš-ku-ba-še-ni-še*, *AASOR* 16 47.6 alongside *\*šš-ku-pa-e*, *ibid.* 48.10; cf. p. 99; and probably in *gaš-te-ni-še*, H ix 44.5; Gadd (60.4); and *gaš-te-ni-še-aš* (with *-š*) H IX 44.7; cf. Cross, *Movable Property in the Nuzi Documents* 34.

<sup>86</sup>Cf., e. g., Mitanni letter I 75; II 65; IV 118. The normalization of the name as *Tašub*, with *s* instead of *š*, is now proved incorrect by RS 18b (with *š*).

<sup>87</sup>*Archiv Orientalni* 4.128.

<sup>88</sup>The occurrences of *\*šš*, RS 4. (26), 39, 60, 61, are as yet morphologically ambiguous.

<sup>89</sup>For a possible nominal ending in Nuzi Hurrian see my remarks in *AASOR* 16 pp. 122 f. For the verbal suffix *-šu/še*, and perhaps *š* in the Hurrian vocabulary from Ras Shamra cf. Thureau-Dangin, *Syria* 12.263 f.



## B. Labials

In the Hurrian syllabary, and especially in the Nuzi texts, the labials show a greater variety of changes than is found in any other group of consonants.<sup>87</sup> Not only are *b* and *p* confused in writing, but *b*, *m*, and *w* are all interchangeable. The confusion is enhanced by the fact that the sign PI may be used for any one of these interchangeable labials followed by any vowel. In Nuzi this anarchy is confirmed by the evidence of the Semitic material, but the confusion is at its worst in Hurrian elements. In these circumstances it would be futile to look for a definite system. All that can be said in general is that the Nuzi scribes allowed their inability to express the labials of Hurrian with the means afforded by the syllabary to affect also their presentation of Akkadian labials.

A few details become apparent, however, upon closer examination. Thus the loss of *w* in the feminine name *Ištanu*, Gadd 62. 5, alongside *Wištanu*, ibid. 61. 1, indicates that *w* must have stood here for a semivowel. But such a semivowel could be written also with a *b*-sign just as blandly as with PI: cf. *Hu-i-te*, N 534. 3, and *Hu-bi-te*, Gadd. 6. 14, the father in both instances being *Gilga*. Since *b* could represent a semivowel, it follows that the underlying sound was, or could be, a spirant. On the other hand, the writing *mu-ag-wu*, N 128. 9, 14, for the common Akkadian *baqu* "plucked" indicates that PI could express not only a semivowel but also a spirant.<sup>88</sup> The one thing that need not be assumed, even with all this confusion, is that PI was used for stops.

In the alphabetic Hurrian texts from Ras Shamra we find characters for *b*, *p*, *m*, and *w*. But in all instances that are clear to us, such as with names of gods or well-known words, the same labial is used invariably with the same words:

- b*. *kmrb*: RŠ 4. 6, 7 (bis), 8; 7. 1 f., 8 f.  
*tōb*: RŠ 4. 8, (7, 9)  
*nōdg*: RŠ 4. 50; 31. 4; Hr. (*Archiv Orientalni* 4, 118) 4.  
*hbt*: RŠ 4. 60 (bis), 62; *Syria* 15 153 line 5.  
*'aōtō*: RŠ 4. 29, 31; Hr. rs. 3
- p*. *'irp*: RŠ 4. 42, (41?).  
*pāzph*: RŠ 4. 35, (37); Hr. 5.

<sup>87</sup> NDA 47.

<sup>88</sup> For these and other examples see NDA 47 ff. For the spirant value of *b* in the Boghazköi syllabary cf. *A/O* 10. 225.

- w. 6w9k: RS 34.45.2, (12, 14), but 6w9k, *Syria* 15 153.6, (2),  
 1wr "lord": RS (4.51?) 28 rev. 9; and in the name 1wrZr,  
*Syria* 14 pl. 25 b 1.
- m. See above, at kwrb.

This regularity indicates one thing beyond any doubt: that Hurrian recognized at least four distinct labials. Whether any or all of them would interchange under particular conditions, cannot be decided at present, what with the paucity of the examples and the added difficulties inherent in a consonantal script. It is clear, at all events, that the confusion of labials in the Hurrian syllabary was not due to the fact that the language did not have as many of these sounds as were allowed for in the script, but resulted rather from the inadequacy of the syllabary to render satisfactorily the sounds of the spoken language.

The next question is whether the alphabetic script covers the needs of the language with regard to labials. The answer will depend on what internal evidence there may be at present for the character of the sounds represented by the signs for *b*, *p*, *w*, and *m*.

The dual writings 6w9k and 6p9k show that the labial in the name of this goddess was in reality a semivowel. The syllabary may express this sound as *b* (Boghazköi) or *m* (Nuzi), and of course as *w*.<sup>52</sup> Unless we assume radical dialectal differences, *b* and *m* could represent semivocalic *y* in the syllabic script. It follows that in the Hurrian syllabary *b* could figure as a spirant; it must be that in the form kwrb alongside Nuzi "Ku-mu-ur-we."<sup>53</sup> But if we recognize the principle that the RS script individualizes the underlying sounds, then the spirant in the final syllable of kwrb was distinct from the *w* in 6w9k and 1wr. What we do not know as yet, and have no means of determining just now, is whether *b* was also a stop in Hurrian. If it was, the language will have to be credited with a fifth labial.

<sup>52</sup> Cf. *As. Gr.* 12.129 n. 5. In Nuzi the sound may be expressed by *su* (Ar-sa-mu-uf-qa, N 70.25; 412.7, or *su* (Ar-sa-wa-uf-qa, N 242.20; 247.20); cf. *NDA* 50.

<sup>53</sup> For the latest Nuzi occurrences of this name (not in personal names but as an independent divine name) see *AASOR* 16 47.1; 48.1 (with the middle vowel assimilated to *u*: Kumawur). Fresh examples with *-we* from Boghazköi are listed by Forrer, "Eine Geschichte des Götterkönigtums aus dem Hatti-Reiche," *L'annuaire de l'Institut de philologie et d'histoire orient. et slave* 4.702 n. 3.

Concerning *p* the evidence is somewhat more involved. That the sound in question occurs in a suffix is evident from a comparison of *ʾidr*, RS 4. 29, with *ʾidr-p*, *ibid.* 41, and *ʾidr-n*, *ibid.* 43. In two instances this word follows the name of a deity. In line 29 neither the name (*ʾaθē*) nor the sequel has a suffix. In line 43 both name (*ʾiršp*) and sequel end in *-n*, being apparently in the accusative. In line 41 *ʾidr-p* is preceded by *ʾir[šp?]*; the restoration is suggested by Friedrich with all due reserve, and it commends itself even though the copy does not allow enough room for two characters. At any rate, the *-p* in *ʾidr-p* is practically certain as a case ending.

When we examine the list of Hurrian case endings known from the syllabary, we find that those best established are "nominative" *-š*, "genitive" *-we*, "accusative" *-n*, and "dative-locative" *-sa*.<sup>21</sup> In our alphabetic texts the nominative ends in *-θ*, the accusative in *-n*. The other two endings are yet to be identified.

From here on the available evidence becomes purely circumstantial and the conclusions will be correspondingly speculative. It is worth noting, however, that the final syllable of *kurā* has been plausibly connected with the genitive ending, the name being analyzed as "he of (the city) Kumar."<sup>22</sup> If this analysis is accepted, we obtain *-b* as the sign of the genitive in our alphabetic texts, at least under certain conditions. This would leave us with only one immediate possibility in the case of *idr-p*: the dative-locative ending *-wa*. And if this whole admittedly tenuous argument is still accepted, we may go a step farther and assume that, in view of the apparent consistency of the consonantal script, the labial of the genitive ending (*-b*) was voiced, that of the dative-locative ending (*-p*) voiceless. Furthermore, since both endings are written in the syllabary as a rule with *w*, neither labial could be a stop: the full ending of the genitive appears to have been *-ve*, that of the dative-locative *-fa*.<sup>23</sup>

New material may upset this entire structure. The identifications may prove erroneous, or the presence or absence of voice may

<sup>21</sup> For the suffixes with initial labial see Thureau-Dangin, *Spria* 12. 256 f.

<sup>22</sup> Forrer, *loc. cit.* 702 ff.

<sup>23</sup> Certain objections to the assumption of *-fa* as the dative-locative suffix are raised by Thureau-Dangin, *loc. cit.* I would say, tentatively, that the initial sound in question need not be our own voiceless continuant *f*, but some voiceless labial sound approximately like *f*. The speculative nature of this whole argument was admitted at the outset.

turn out to depend on the preceding sound and not at all on the nature of the suffix. But since we have gone this far, we may just as well end up with a still more hazardous suggestion.

The labial in the RŠ name of the sun-god has been a puzzle from the beginning. *Samaš* should, and occasionally does, yield *šawaš* or *šayā*, but *šap(a)š* is definitely abnormal. The above discussion, however, has made possible the occurrence of an *f* in Hurrian, which would appear as *p* in the alphabetic texts. If the *p* in *špš* was pronounced *f*, the connection of the latter with the original *m* would not be as precarious as the change of *m* to *p*. The accompanying sibilants could account for the loss of voice, for which influence there are unambiguous illustrations in Semitic,<sup>94</sup> and possible, but ambiguous, parallels from our present texts, in *širip* and *pšipš* (with *p* appearing in both names). The final obstacle is that *špš* occurs in the Semitic, not the Hurrian, texts. Would Hurrian phonology affect Semitic names, or at best one Semitic name, to such an extent? Or was *p* a spirant, under certain conditions, in the Semitic material as well?<sup>95</sup>

By this time the indulgence of the reader has been taxed sufficiently. The case, such as it is, is in need of further evidence.

### C. Velar Spirants

In his discussion of the suffix *-hi* in Hurrian (*An. Or.* 12, 128 ff.) Friedrich was unable as yet to cite definite occurrences from Ras Shamra. The sole possibility appeared to be *lš[b]* (sic!)<sup>96</sup> *hšh*, RŠ 4, 126 f., because of its evident parallelism with the syllabic *Tšup/h Halpa-hi*,<sup>97</sup> a fact already recognized by Hrozný.<sup>98</sup> If this was so, the RŠ character transcribed as *x* was indeed *š* (i. e., *ghain*, after Baneth),<sup>99</sup> and not *z*; that *š* was employed, therefore, in all probability to represent in the alphabetic texts the consonant in the suffix *-hi*.

Since then, however, *-hi* has been identified by von Brandenstein with the alphabetic *h* of *trhn*, RŠ 4, 55, and *ašh(n)* (*m*), *ibid.* (55), 56, since *'in trhn* *'in 'ašh(n)* cannot be separated from *enna duruḥ-*

<sup>94</sup> For *š* becoming *pš* in Akkadian see provisionally Brockelmann, *QVg* I 186. Numerous other examples of this change could be added.

<sup>95</sup> This interesting problem cannot be followed up in the present paper.

<sup>96</sup> For the *b* see above, p. 193.

<sup>97</sup> *Archiv Orientalní* 4, 128.

<sup>98</sup> *An. Or.* 12, 126 f.

<sup>99</sup> *OLZ* 1932, 705; cf. also RŠ 4, 56.

*hina enna aiduhhina* "male gods, female gods."<sup>99</sup> Accordingly, another writing of the suffix, as *x*, in the same text, becomes extremely unlikely, if not impossible. But there remains still the inherent probability that *hīb̄x* corresponds semantically to *Halpa-hi* "he of Aleppo." The only solution would be to find another Hurrian suffix identical in meaning with *-h̄i* (*RS -h̄*), but written *x* in the alphabetic script.

The Nuzi texts present a suffix *-(a)RI*<sup>100</sup> which is clearly adjectival in such names as *Ek̄lip-aRI*, *Zilip-aRI*, where it is substituted for divine names; and probably so in *Ninua-RI*, *Arrapha-RI*, *Nawar-aRI*, where it is combined with place-names. In the latter group the element could perhaps have a verbal character, because a suffix *-(a)ri* occurs also in theophorous names, such as *Šimiga-ri*, where the correspondence with *Ar-Šimiga* insures both the verbal nature of the element in question and the reading *a-ri* (not *a-lal*); and city names are found in the Nuzi texts in a theophorous sense.<sup>101</sup> It is best, however, to separate place names from names of gods proper.<sup>102</sup>

It follows that we have in Nuzi in addition to the prefixed verbal element *ar*, which is well-known from other Hurrian sources in the sense "give," a suffixed adjectival element *(a)RI*. The verbal element may also be suffixed, as in *Šimiga-(a)ri* alongside *Ar-Šimiga*. But the establishment of an adjectival suffix *(a)RI* makes it uncertain whether all theophorous names in *(a)RI* are necessarily composed of god + a form of the verb "give." It is conceivable, at least, that *Šimigari* may mean "Belonging to Šimigi" as well as "Grant, O Šimigi." Thus the suffix *aRI* remains ambiguous in

<sup>99</sup> *Die Welt als Geschichte* III/1 62.

<sup>100</sup> See Oppenheim's "Was bedeutet *ari* in den hurritischen Personennamen?" *RHA* 26, 58 ff.

<sup>101</sup> *Ibid.* 58-63. I might add that I assumed an adjectival *(a)ri* in Nuzi as early as 1930 (*Meap. Orig.* 139).

<sup>102</sup> To be sure, Oppenheim is right in saying (p. 63) that *Ar-Dimtu* can scarcely mean "Giving is (the god) Dimtu," since the noun is used in these texts for "district" (specifically, for administrative units responsible for feudal services; cf. *AASOR* 16 p. 66). But while the prefix may indicate relationship in this and similar instances, it need not be etymologically the same as the suffix *-(a)RI*. At all events, Oppenheim admits that he is unable to account for the various uses of *(a)ri*. The present suggestions are no more than a working hypothesis.

meaning; with place names it is likely to be adjectival rather than verbal: "He of Nineveh, Arrapha, Nawar, etc."

Another source of ambiguity is provided by the polyphonus nature of the sign RI, which has in Nuzi the value *tal* as well as *ri*. Thus, e.g., we find the name *Ir-wi-RI*, N 436.4, written out *Ir-wi-ta-al*, *ibid.* line 20.<sup>101</sup> If we are disinclined to assume that an adjectival suffix can appear also as a prefix, i. e., that *Na-wa-ra-RI*, Gadd 53. 18, has the same value as *Ar-Nawar*, Nu 355. 2, then there is no way of proving, on this basis alone, that the adjectival suffix was read (a)*ri* and not (a)*tal*, since the unambiguous *ar* appears only as a prefix.

In this extremely complicated situation, which Oppenheim has admirably brought out, I find it safest to limit ourselves to the adjectival suffix (a)RI, leaving aside all prefixed elements of this type, whether verbal or nominal, and also such plainly theophorous names as *Šimigari*, *Kušuhari*, and the like. In other words, we shall restrict ourselves to instances like *ḪḪip-aRI* and *Zūip-aRI*, and to names like *A-be-ra-RI* (*AASOR* 16 67. 8), a derivative of the place name *Abenaš*, which can hardly be suspected of theophorous implications.

So far we have had proof that the RI of this suffix may be read *tal*; evidence for the reading *ri* is still wanting. This evidence is supplied by Berkkooz's observation that the names *Wi-ir-ra-ri* (Gadd 28. 23) and *Wi-ra-aḫ-ḫé* (N 73. 2, 13, 16) represent the same person, son of *Nalduya*.<sup>102</sup> The interchange of *ḫ* and *r* in this name establishes the reading *ri* in this particular instance. The sound in question was obviously a voiced velar spirant, comparable to *g*.

It follows that Hurrian had such a sound, which could be written *ḫ* (its voiceless analogue) or *r*, but was different phonetically from either. On the basis of syllabic texts alone it is impossible to determine which writings with *ḫ* or *r* represent *g*, unless there is proof of interchange, as in *Wirrari/Wiraḫḫe*. Very likely, the Nuzians chose the cumbersome sign *ḫé*, instead of the simple *ḫi*, in order to indicate *g*. If this supposition is right, we may suspect a *g* also in *Ar-bi-ḫé Nu-sa-ḫé* ("Nuzian"), *A-qa-bi-ḫé*, *Ka-zu-uḫ-ḫé*, *A-ri-im-ma-ḫé*<sup>103</sup> (where the initial element is plainly the other *ari*), and the like.

<sup>101</sup> Cf. also *RHA* 26. 60-7.

<sup>102</sup> *NDA* 42.

<sup>103</sup> For these examples see *WZKM* 44. 200. Of course, the writing may indicate merely the purely vocalic variation of *e/i*, which is common in

Having demonstrated an unambiguous adjectival  $-(a)ri$  in the syllabary, we may now return to the RS  $\dot{h}b-x$ . The meaning of the latter would be accordingly "of Aleppo," just as that of *Nuzahe* is "Nuzian"; similarly, *Ahenari* means "from Ahenāš," while *Niwari*, *Arraphari*, *Nawarari* evidently mean "from Nineveh, Arrapha, Nawar" respectively. Such an adjectival ending lends itself to patronymic and hypocoristic use, as in *Wirrari*,<sup>106</sup> on the one hand, and *Zilipari* on the other; in fact, *Arimmahe* might well be a hypocoristic for *Arimmatga*.

The  $-x$  suffix of RS Hurrian would then be synonymous with  $\dot{h}$ , but not homophonous, on account of the difference in consonants. Indirectly, it would confirm the reading of the sign  $x$  as  $\dot{g}$ .

In conclusion, attention should be called to the multiple significance of  $\dot{h}$ -signs in the Hurrian syllabary. In addition to the voiceless velar spirant established by the correspondences of syllabic  $\dot{h}i$  with RS  $\dot{h}$  (which is used also for Semitic  $\dot{h}$ ), and the voiced velar spirant resulting from the equation of syllabic  $\dot{h}i/\dot{h}e/ri$ <sup>106a</sup> and alphabetic  $x/\dot{g}$ , we have aspirated  $\dot{h}$  (*Hu/Gu/Kušiḫarbe*).<sup>107</sup> Finally, Oppenheim cites several pairs of names which he interprets

---

Hurrian (NDA 33). But the subject is worth considering, nevertheless, because of the RS evidence for two individual suffixes,  $\dot{h}$  and  $x$ , which were apparently closely related as to meaning. In the light of this evidence special significance may attach to the circumstance that the Mitanni letter uses consistently the form *Hurr(w)uḫ-* (with the sign  $\dot{h}e$ ) for the ethnicon "Hurrian" (I 11, 14, 19; II 68, 72; III 6, 112; IV 127); the  $\dot{h}i$ -sign is never employed in this particular instance. It would be too sanguine to deduce from this writing that the suffix in question was not  $-\dot{h}i$ , but the  $\dot{g}i$  corresponding to  $-(a)ri$ ; the alphabetic texts alone are capable of settling this problem. For the present I wish to call attention to an interesting, if remote, possibility. In RS 4.16 we find the form  $\dot{h}ard$ , where the final  $d$  is very likely a suffix (cf. *kurb-d*, *ibid.* 6; also line 40, and *Archiv Orientalni* 4.118 ff.). Is  $\dot{h}ard$  the RS version of *Harruḫe*? (For the Semitic form of the ethnicon, *hry*, cf. RS 2.12, 21, 29). For other forms in  $-x$  occurring in RS 4 see line 15 ('*ykḫx*'), 36 (*lḫx*), and 36 ('*l'au*)*ram* 'u $\dot{a}r$ ḫ', followed by 'ardān 'ar[ $\dot{d}x$ ]; cf. line 6).

<sup>106</sup> For this element cf. also *Wi-ir-ra*, II V 73.53 and *Wiriḫtanai*, *AASOR* 10.86.16, 17.

<sup>106a</sup> While discussing this matter with Dr. Sturtevant and Dr. Goetze I was reminded by them of the evidence for *ghayin* in Hittite texts; cf. Goetze, *Mursili's Sprachlehre* 28 ff.

<sup>107</sup> Cf. *AASOR* 10.61-2 and, for other examples, NDA 43-4.



as proof that  $\bar{h}$  may disappear in certain positions.<sup>108</sup> Such a  $\bar{h}$  would be a sound different from the above three varieties. Fortunately, however, all of Oppenheim's examples for this kind of  $\bar{h}$  lack genealogical confirmation. As it is, we have enough varieties to give us many uneasy moments.<sup>109</sup>

#### ADDENDUM

While these *Notes* were in proof I got hold at last of a copy of the *M. Gaster Anniversary Volume* which contains an article on "A New Asiatic Language" by Th. H. Gaster (154 ff.). The author has set out to examine the Hurrian material from Ras Shamra, so that the subject matter coincides in part with the subject of the above *Notes*. Under these circumstances, a certain degree of independent agreement as to sundry details is inevitable. Far more notable, however, are the numerous fundamental divergences. Furthermore, our respective papers follow for the most part entirely different paths. Since we differ also in our methods of approach and in our understanding of evidence, there is no need to list here the correspondences or to argue in detail the differences.

<sup>108</sup> *WZKM* 44.188 and *RHA* 26.63. Here may belong also *s-a-ra-ši* (*iyerahi*; cf. Ungnad, *Subartu* 66-7), if it is cognate with *hiyarašše* "gold."

<sup>109</sup> While we are dealing with sounds which are often listed under "laryngeals," it may be of interest to see how the 'alephs are employed in the Hurrian alphabetic texts. To Friedrich's remarks on this subject (*Au. Or.* 12.129, and *ibid.* n. 5) it should be added that *RŠ* 4 uses medially only '4 and 'u, but not 'a. It would appear that the 'a-signs could be employed to express the glide between dissimilar vowels. A good illustration of this usage is furnished by *šim'a*, line 2. On the basis of *Syria* 12, pl. I. ii 18, where *te-la-ma-e* is given the meaning "great," our word may be vocalized *telama'ea(a)*. The meaning "great" would fit the context very nicely.

Finally, 'syia occurs certainly in *RŠ* 4.44, 'aš 'šwra "That the Amorite (1)"

## CONCEPTS OF RIGHT AND LEFT IN AFRICAN CULTURES

HEINZ A. WIESCHTIOFF  
UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA

### I

QUESTIONS connected with right and left in their physiological and psychological aspects have been treated extensively in the book *Handedness, Right and Left* by Iva S. Wile.<sup>1</sup> According to his special frame of interest he devotes a few pages to the treatment of material touching this problem as applied to the African continent. I cannot consider it to be my task to adopt a critical point of view towards the author's data and its interpretation, although his views, as I regard them, are not generally sustainable throughout in an anthropological sense. This, however, is not important for the validity of his thesis in general. Here I shall only present the material itself in an ordered manner. The "right and left" problem will be offered in its cultural confines, and no attempt will be made to discuss the question of handedness physiologically.

As may be expected the material available in the literature is rather poor, not only in that information is lacking from many parts of Africa, but that many references are not trustworthy and may consequently be eliminated.

It may be well to arrange the data on the basis of the following classification:

1. Right side associated with men, left with women.
2. Right equivalent to "good," left to "bad" (inferior).
3. Right connected with good luck, left with misfortune; or, correspondingly, happenings on the right side being good omens, those on the left bad omens.
4. Left representing fortune; right misfortune.
5. Right side preferred, left considered inferior.
6. Color associations with right and left.
7. Right and left denoting orientation.

---

<sup>1</sup>Wile, I. S. *Handedness, Right and Left*, Boston, 1934.

There exist furthermore a number of statements in the literature which do not fit very well into these groups and which apparently have no bearing upon the question at large.

1. *Right side associated with men, left with women*

The close association of right with male and left with female has been recorded from various parts of the African continent. Attention may be drawn to the fact that the same associations are very strongly predominant in the Western world. In respect to the Bantu-speaking parts of Africa, Werner<sup>2</sup> makes the general statement that the right hand is often called "the male hand" or sometimes "the strong hand," and the left, although less frequently, is called or referred to as the "female hand" or the "inferior hand." In particular Weeks<sup>3</sup> states that among the Boloki of the northern Congo area, the ears of new born infants are pierced, the left ear lobe in the case of a girl, the right of a boy. The author emphasizes the fact that as a rule the left side is considered inferior. From the Loango Peschmel-Lösche notes that every person in leaving a hut or a bed is very careful to touch the floor with the right foot first, and that among these people the right leg is called in the native language, the "man-leg."<sup>4</sup> In the same book we find the statement that left-handed persons, who form the same proportion of the population as elsewhere, are referred to as using the "other hand" or "woman-hand."<sup>5</sup> The secret society of the Ekoi in Cameroon has a sacred drum, upon the right side of which is carved the figure of a man, on the left side a woman's (Talbot).<sup>6</sup> The author mentions, in connection with the strings worn by medicine men of the same tribe, that those on the right side are regarded as male and those on the left, female.<sup>7</sup> And again the same author states that twitching of the sole of the right foot announces the visit of a strange man, of the sole of the left foot, however, the visit of a strange woman.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>2</sup> Werner, A. "Right and Left Hand in Bantu," *Journal of the African Society*, London, 1904, pp. 112-116.

<sup>3</sup> Weeks, J. H. *Among Congo Cannibals*, Philadelphia, 1913, p. 100.

<sup>4</sup> Peschmel-Lösche, E. P. *Völkerkunde von Loango*, Stuttgart, 1907, p. 325.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 32.

<sup>6</sup> Talbot, P. A. *In the Shadow of the Bush*, London, 1932, p. 218.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 174.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 324.

From the area around Lake Tchad, Frobenius<sup>9</sup> in describing the founding of a town and the ceremonies which are connected therewith, reports that after certain rituals a virgin—the representation of the female—is buried to the left of the east entrance, and a bull—the symbol of the male—to the right of it.

In the provinces of Dar For as well as in Wadai, Nachtigal<sup>10</sup> found that the right is always connected with man and the left with woman. The A-Kamba in East Africa (Lindblom)<sup>11</sup> consider the expression "on the right hand" as equivalent to "men's hand," while "on the left hand" means "women's hand." In respect to burial practices the author reports a similar attitude. The corpse of a dead man is placed on the right side with the hands under the head, that of a woman on the left side. That the left arm is called "woman's arm" is stated by the author in another place.<sup>12</sup> Hobley<sup>13</sup> also affirms this association of left and female from the East African Kavirondo.

The same concept seems to be prevalent among the Bakitara of the Victoria Nyanza. They bury a dead queen as well as the wives of their more prominent tribesmen in such a way that their hands are placed under the left side of the head and the wives of the latter dignitaries are buried on the left side of their huts. Ordinary men and women are buried with their hands under the right side of the head (Roscoe).<sup>14</sup>

This association of left with women and right with men in respect to burials seems rather widely distributed in Africa. I found it to be the case for all the tribes in Mashonaland, Southern Rhodesia. Of the Bavenda in Northern Transvaal Stuyt<sup>15</sup> mentions that "when the deceased is a man the body is arranged in a sitting position, with the right side of the head resting on the clasped

<sup>9</sup> Frobenius, L. *Monumenta Africana*, Frankfurt a. M., 1929, p. 125.

<sup>10</sup> Nachtigal, G. *Sahara und Sudan*, Leipzig, 1885, vol. III, pp. 55, 341, 429.

<sup>11</sup> Lindblom, G. *The A-Kamba in British East Africa*, Uppsala, 1920, p. 104.

<sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 291.

<sup>13</sup> Hobley, C. W. *Ethnology of A-Kamba and Other East African Tribes*, Cambridge, 1910, p. 104.

<sup>14</sup> Roscoe, J. *The Bakitara*, London, 1923, p. 323.

<sup>15</sup> Stuyt, H. A. *The Bavenda*, London, 1931, p. 161.

hands.<sup>29</sup> A few examples are given by Seligman of the Nilotic tribes of the Eastern Sudan. The Acholi buried a man on the right side of the door and a woman on the left.<sup>30</sup> A similar report is given of the Bari: " . . . the grave being dug in front of the house of the deceased—on the right of the door for a male, on the left for a female."<sup>31</sup>

The Konde of the northern Nyassa area, upon visiting the grave of a relative, touch it with the elbow, the body, and the forehead (Fülleborn).<sup>32</sup> If the buried person is a woman, the women touch the grave with their right side, if a man, they touch it with the left; the men, however, observe the same custom in the reverse. Baumann<sup>33</sup> informs us that among the Wambugwe in East Africa the bodies of deceased women are carried from their huts with the left side downward, male corpses in the reverse manner. The WaChagga (Merker)<sup>34</sup> cut a piece of skin from the hide of a sacred bull and wear it around the middle finger. This piece is worn on the right hand when the person to whom the bull was sacrificed belonged to the father's family, but on the left if the person thus honored was a member of the mother's family. If the sacrifice was made for an undetermined male ancestor the string was tied around the big toe of the right foot, around the big toe of the left foot instead when a female ancestor was honored.

Concerning the Bushmen of the Cape Colony, Dornan<sup>35</sup> narrates that at initiation ceremonies the little finger had to be cut off, boys losing one from the right hand, girls one from the left.

The only exception to this rule is reported by Schinz<sup>36</sup> from the Hottentot of South Africa, among whom women occupy the right side of the huts. It is naturally difficult to decide how much emphasis can be placed upon this remark.

<sup>29</sup> Seligman, C. G. and B. C. *Pagan Tribes of the Nilotic Sudan*, London, 1932, p. 133.

<sup>30</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 290.

<sup>31</sup> Fülleborn, F. R. *Das Deutsche Nyassa- und Ruwuma-Gebiet*, Berlin, 1906, p. 328.

<sup>32</sup> Baumann, O. *Durch Massailand zur Nilquelle*, Berlin, 1894, p. 187.

<sup>33</sup> Merker, M. *Die Massai*, Berlin, 1904, p. 20.

<sup>34</sup> Dornan, S. *Pygmies and Bushmen of the Kalahari*, London, 1923, p. 159.

<sup>35</sup> Schinz, H. *Deutsch-Südwestafrika*, Oldenburg and Leipzig, 1891, p. 82.

## 2. Right equivalent to "good," left to "bad" (inferior)

Similarly distributed throughout the African continent we find the belief that right is equivalent to good and left to bad. Its expressions are as manifold as those of the beliefs mentioned above.

Repulsion from use of the left hand is especially strong in respect to food. For the Mohammedans of the Sudan, Junker<sup>22</sup> states that, generally speaking, they are not allowed to eat with the left hand, as it is considered *negis*, or "impure," in the religious sense. Therefore it is well to sit with the right side towards the food, especially if space should be limited. In respect to the inhabitants of Morocco Westermarck<sup>23</sup> says in more detail: "The disfavour with which a left-handed person is regarded is due to the notion that the left side is bad and the right side is good, which is found among so many other peoples and also prevailed among the ancient Arabs. It is bad *fal* to use the left hand for good acts, which in accordance with custom are performed with the right, such as eating, giving alms, offering and receiving food or drink or other things, greeting a person, telling the beads of one's rosary; whereas the right hand should not be used for dirty acts, such as cleaning one's anus or genitals or blowing one's nose, and when you spit you should do it to the left."

The Jekris of the Lower Niger area use the left hand for cleansing purposes and therefore eat only with the right hand (Roth).<sup>24</sup> They present objects and shake hands only with the right. Winterbottom<sup>25</sup> says similarly, that the natives of Sierra Leone consider it an unpardonable offense to offer the left hand, which also is never used for eating. The Tim call the right hand the "eating hand" and the Suru of the same area name it the "good hand." Also the Ashanti of the West African Gold Coast are very careful not to touch food with the left hand and to clean the right hand before they eat with it (Bowdich).<sup>27</sup>

<sup>22</sup> Junker, W. *Reisen in Afrika*, Wien und Otmütz, 1890, vol. I, pp. 222, 223.

<sup>23</sup> Westermarck, E. *Ritual and Belief in Morocco*, London, 1926, vol. II, p. 14.

<sup>24</sup> Roth, H. L. "Notes on the Jekris," *Journal of the Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland*, vol. 28, 1899, p. 122.

<sup>25</sup> Winterbottom, T. H. *Nachrichten von der Sierra Leone Küste*, Weimar, 1805, p. 184.

<sup>27</sup> Bowdich, T. E. *Mission from Cape Coast Castle to Ashantee*, London, 1819, p. 490.

The tribes of the Lower Niger area do not allow women to touch kitchen implements with the left hand, nor are they allowed to touch them at all during the period of menstruation (Leonard).<sup>28</sup> In general, remarks the recorder in a footnote, the right hand is regarded as good, the left as bad. The right hand indicates friendship, the left animosity. The Ija as well as the natives of Brass observes the rule that in no case may a woman touch her husband's face with the left hand, or cook or eat food except with the right. From the Ibo and other tribes of this area the same author reports that only warriors who have killed men with their own hand, may drink with the left, apparently as a sign of distinction.

Of the Pangwe in Cameroon Tessmann<sup>29</sup> records that the bodies of prominent sorcerers are placed so as to lie on the left side in burial, which means, as the author himself emphasizes, with the right side uppermost. Evil magicians, those who practice witchcraft, are buried on the right side, or with the left above.

The Bakitara of the Victoria Nyanza hate left-handed people and no one is allowed to give anything to another person with the left hand (Roscoe).<sup>30</sup> Exactly the same is reported by Baumann<sup>31</sup> for the Waseguyu who consider it bad manners to eat with the left, as this is used for all kinds of impure actions. The Ovambo in Southwest Africa avoid passing an object to a person with the left hand, and regard a greeting made with the left hand as an offense (Schinz).<sup>32</sup> Perhaps also what Irls<sup>33</sup> reports from the Herero, the southern neighbors of the Ovambo, belongs to this group of concepts. When, during a fight, the leader has a cramp in the left cheek below the eye, it indicates that the fight will be lost and that important persons will be killed. In contrast to this belief, it may be added here, itching in the right foot denotes an approaching death in the family. Among the Ovimbundu of Southern Angola "a very insulting sign is made in this way. The left arm is held up with the fist closed. The left wrist is grasped with the right hand. The left fist is then shaken while the right hand is still

<sup>28</sup> Leonard, A. G. *The Lower Niger and its Tribes*, London, 1908, p. 310.

<sup>29</sup> Tessmann, G. *Die Pangwe*, Berlin, 1913, vol. II, pp. 131, 378, 379.

<sup>30</sup> Roscoe, *op. cit.*, p. 20.

<sup>31</sup> Baumann, *op. cit.*, p. 37.

<sup>32</sup> Schinz, *op. cit.*, p. 277.

<sup>33</sup> Irls, J. *Die Herero*, Gütersloh, 1906, p. 133.



grasping the left wrist" (Hambly).<sup>34</sup> Apparently what we have here is an indication that left is equivalent to bad.

A belief may perhaps be indicated in Halkin's<sup>35</sup> report about the Ababua of Central Africa, who during an ordeal, put a liquid into a person's left eye to determine his innocence or guilt. Unquestionably, however, what Trilles<sup>36</sup> reports of the Central African Pygmies also belongs in this group. He writes: "Les doigts de la main gauche représentent l'étranger, l'ennemi, le gibier chassé, l'objet convoité, ou dans un autre ordre d'idées, la femme, les enfants, c'est-à-dire, en somme, comme toujours pour le côté gauche l'être inférieur, d'où malheur et calamité, tandis que les doigts de la main droite représentent l'homme lui-même, l'hôte, le chef, les hommes du clan, c'est-à-dire l'être supérieur, d'où bonheur, chance etc."

### 3. Right connected with good luck, left with misfortune

As far as literary information is concerned the most consistent data on association of right with good luck and left with misfortune are found in North and East Africa. I should like to quote here Westermarck's observations in respect to the inhabitants of Morocco:<sup>37</sup> "Twitching of your right eyelid indicates that some absent member of your family will come back or that some other pleasant event is in store for you, but a twitch of your left eye means that a member of your family will die or that you will have some other sorrow. . . . According to a scribe from the Ait Waryäger, itching of the right palm, the right side of the face, or the right eyebrow indicates happiness, but itching of the left palm, the left side of the face, or the left eyebrow indicates sorrow."

The A-Kamba in East Africa believe that if a hyena or jackal crosses one's path from right to left, it is a bad omen, but from left to right, a good one (Hobley).<sup>38</sup> But there are some instances from this tribe which point in the opposite direction, as will be seen later. Nigmann<sup>39</sup> reports of the Wahehe that sacrifices are interrupted

<sup>34</sup> Hambly, W. D. *The Ovimbundu of Angola*, Field Museum of Natural History Anthropological Series, vol. 21, 2, Chicago, 1934, p. 253.

<sup>35</sup> Halkin, J. *Les Ababua*, Brussels, 1911, p. 285.

<sup>36</sup> Trilles, R. P. *Les Pygmées de la Forêt Equatoriale*, Paris, 1932, p. 202.

<sup>37</sup> Westermarck, *op. cit.*, vol. II, p. 35. <sup>38</sup> Hobley, *op. cit.*, p. 104.

<sup>39</sup> Nigmann, E. "Die Wahehe," *Baessler Archiv*, Berlin, 1908, p. 27.

when the bird *ngulung ulu* cries on the left side of the road, but that the same cry heard from the right side is a good omen. Of the Masai, Fuchs-Hollis<sup>40</sup> notes that a man on a visit to a sick woman, hearing the call of the bird *al-tila* on the left, knows that the woman is very ill, but if the bird calls on the right side of the road it is a sign that she feels better. If, however, somebody wishes to visit a sick man and hears the bird cry on the left side, it is a sign that the illness is not serious; the bird call coming from the right side, however, means that the man will die. Here it is of course interesting to note that we find a sex-association, as pointed out above, that refers to visiting a sick man or woman. If a man departing for war hears the bird *tila* crying on the right, he knows that he will be successful, but if the bird calls on the left quarter, he immediately turns home to avoid defeat.

Among the WaChagga a left-handed man is not allowed to accompany a party of warriors, as it is believed that he would bring misfortune. The same recorder (Gutmann)<sup>41</sup> adds that if a person when traveling hits his right foot against something it is a good omen and that good news and good food may be expected at the journey's end; the same occurrence in regard to the left foot, however, would be regarded as a warning not to continue the trip. The Wasambaa interpret the cry of the black monkey on the right side of a traveler as a good omen, on the left as a bad one (Karasek and Eichhorn).<sup>42</sup> Müller<sup>43</sup> tells of a similar belief from Feta. The call of the bird *obruku* on the right side signifies good fortune, on the left evil, and a person starting on a journey will instantly turn back, however far he may have walked, should he hear the call on the left side. Also among the Amhara of Abyssinia this belief is found (Harris).<sup>44</sup>

Among the natives of the Kilimanjaro areas Dundas<sup>45</sup> observed the wearing of rings of sheepskin around the third finger of the

<sup>40</sup> Fuchs, in Hollis, A. C., *The Masai*, Oxford, 1909, p. 119.

<sup>41</sup> Gutmann, B. *Dichten und Denken der Wachagga Neger*, Leipzig, 1909, p. 153.

<sup>42</sup> Karasek, A. and Eichhorn, A. "Beiträge zur Kenntnis der Wascham-baa IV," *Saesslerer Archiv*, vol. 9, Berlin, 1923-1924, p. 24.

<sup>43</sup> Müller, *Feta*, p. 100. (Exact title unavailable at present.)

<sup>44</sup> Harris, Sir, *Gesellschaftsreise nach Schoa* (German edition), Stuttgart, 1845, vol. II, p. 58.

<sup>45</sup> Dundas, C. H. *Kilimanjaro and its Peoples*, London, 1924, p. 212.

right hand. After the sacrifice of an animal they wear it on the big toe of the right foot. These skin-pieces are considered to be charms. Thus if a man travels at night and a dangerous animal approaches him, he spits on the ring and asks his ancestors for help.

The Bedouin north of Agazi postpone a journey if they see a (black) bird on the right and an old woman on the left of the road. Here again we note the association of women and left (Munzinger).<sup>45</sup>

Des Marchais,<sup>47</sup> reporting on the Gold Coast in the early part of the eighteenth century, remarks that the natives, upon leaving the hut for trading purposes, note the direction in which the head is turned. If to the right, they regard the day as a fortunate one and do not hesitate to risk everything, but if the head turns to the left, it foretells misfortune, and they do not leave the hut under any circumstances.

The Ekoi believe that the twitching of the upper lid of the left eye indicates that something bad will soon be seen, for example, an ordeal by boiling water; twitching of the lid of the right eye announces the prospect of a pleasant sight, such as a dance. Twitching in the top of the left arm at the beginning of a journey indicates that disagreeable things are in store and that friendly powers are trying to hold one back. The same feeling in the top of the right arm, however, is a good omen "and foretells that a friend's arm will soon lie within one's own" (Talbot).<sup>48</sup> In respect to the call and flight of birds, the Ekoi have a different interpretation as will be seen later.

Tönjes<sup>49</sup> remarks of the Ovakuanjama, a tribe of the Ovambo group, that the call of a bird on the right side means luck, but when heard on the left, misfortune. Thus if one goes to visit the chief, a bird call on the left signifies that one will not have the success desired. The neighboring Herero believe that misfortune is imminent when a rabbit or buck runs through the settlement from right to left (Irle).<sup>50</sup> In the religion of the Bushmen, Comp-

<sup>45</sup> Munzinger, M. *Ostafrikanische Studien*, Basel, 1883, p. 159.

<sup>47</sup> Des Marchais. *Voyage en Guinée, îles voisines et à Cayenne*, Paris, 1730, vol. I, p. 353.

<sup>48</sup> Talbot, *op. cit.*, p. 124.

<sup>49</sup> Tönjes, H. *Ovamboland, Land, Leute* . . . Berlin, 1911, p. 207, 208.

<sup>50</sup> Irle, *op. cit.*, p. 132.

bell<sup>31</sup> finds the belief that there exists a kind of devil who has made everything with the left hand.

A report may be added here which has no direct bearing upon this question and which cannot be interpreted according to the classification here offered. The Mountain-Dama in Southwest Africa bury a dead man with his sandal on the left foot only. The one from the right foot is given to his brother or relative (for luck?) (Irle).<sup>32</sup>

#### 4. Left representing fortune; right, misfortune

The geographic area representative of the belief that the left side represents luck and fortune is rather limited. Aside from the Ekoi in Cameroon we find evidence of this association predominating widely throughout Northeast Africa. Regarding the Ekoi we have already noted that prominence is generally given to the right side, which symbolizes the male principle as well as good fortune. But in respect to the flight and calls of birds it is the opposite. Talbot<sup>33</sup> cites five different types of birds which are regarded as important for predictions. Some of them indicate good fortune if they are heard on the left side, but bad, if they call on the right. Other birds bring luck when they cross a road or path from right to left, misfortune when they fly in the opposite direction. With these remarks the general tendency to regard the left as favorable, although not exclusively so, is evident, as has been shown above.

Also from the East African A-Kamba we have already mentioned the predominant importance of the right for omens of good fortune. In respect to the calling of birds, however, these natives make certain exceptions. Thus Hobley<sup>34</sup> reports that the call of a red-headed woodpecker on the left side of the road is a good omen and is believed to be a sign leading to a dead elephant, a great "find" for these people. But the same call heard on the right side is a bad omen. This is confirmed by Lindblom.<sup>35</sup> He says of the same tribe that the call of a bird on the left side is a good omen and that the hearer will have future opportunities to acquire women, cattle, and other wealth, but that a twitching of the left arm, in A-Kamba terminology synonymous with "woman's arm," signifies that one

<sup>31</sup> Campbell, J. *Travels in South Africa*, London, 1822, vol. II, p. 13.

<sup>32</sup> Irle, *op. cit.*, p. 155.

<sup>33</sup> Hobley, *op. cit.*, p. 104.

<sup>34</sup> Talbot, *op. cit.*, p. 324.

<sup>35</sup> Lindblom, *op. cit.*, p. 201.

may be compelled to give something away. This latter part of the report indicates the primary importance of, and emphasis upon, the right, as discussed above.

The Wageis-Kavirondo consider the right hand to be unlucky, the left, however, to be lucky (Weiss).<sup>56</sup> The result of a journey was therefore predicted according to whether a bird cried on the left or right side. If a traveler struck the great toe of his right foot against a stone or a root twice, it indicated bad luck; the same happening with the left foot meant that the journey would be successful. To stumble with the right first and then with the toe of the left foot was considered to be without significance. Here may be added the statement of Gutmann<sup>57</sup> on the WaChagga. As mentioned above these natives interpret the hitting of the left foot as a bad omen, but if somebody should continue a journey in spite of such warnings he might discover that his left foot is the lucky one and would in future regard it as such, providing that he does not make discoveries to the contrary. The personally favored foot or leg is referred to as the "nice one," although ordinarily this term is given to the right leg or foot.

The Danakil in the Northeastern parts of Africa considered the flight of birds from left to right as a bad omen (Harris).<sup>58</sup> The same is reported for the Wateita (Rehmann)<sup>59</sup> and the Bogos when making a journey regarded a bird's call on the right as a sign of safe return, on the left of success in their plans (Munzinger).<sup>60</sup> Here we note a slight difference in the interpretation.

Perhaps in line with the general understanding of left as being favorable is the custom of the Masai who at new-moon throw a stone or branch with the left hand and say: "Give me a long life," or "Give me strength" (Fuchs-Hollis).<sup>61</sup>

##### 5. Right side preferred, left considered inferior

It is generally understood that almost universally the right side is the superior or preferred one, so it might seem superfluous to

<sup>56</sup> Weiss, M. *Die Völkerstämme im Norden Deutsch-Ostafrikas*, Berlin, 1910, pp. 232, 233.

<sup>57</sup> Gutmann, *op. cit.*, p. 153.

<sup>58</sup> Harris, *op. cit.*, vol. I, p. 134.

<sup>59</sup> Rehmann, in Krupf, *Reisen in Ostafrika*, Kornthal, 1858, vol. II, p. 5.

<sup>60</sup> Munzinger, W. *Über die Sitten und das Recht der Bogos*, Winterthur, 1859, p. 99.

<sup>61</sup> Fuchs, in Hollis, *op. cit.*, p. 80.

cite such evidence for Africa. There are not very many remarks in the literature, but such testimony speaks of this preference for the right.

Herodotus<sup>42</sup> mentions that Psammetichus I favored foreign, especially Ionian, soldiers and gave them the place at his right. In the kingdom of Wadai in the central parts of the Sudan the highest official was called *Dskerma toluk* and the next in rank *Dsherma luluk*. The modifier *toluk* means right and *luluk* left, so that the highest official has the title "to the right" (Nachtigal).<sup>43</sup> From the province of Dar Fur the same author<sup>44</sup> mentions that the newly-crowned king when inducted into office in an inaugural procession first took the road *Orra de*, which means the "route of man," then the *Orra beja*, the "route of woman," which are associated respectively with right and left. In Abyssinia the seat on the right of the emperor was considered the superior one, the one of the left of less importance (Salt).<sup>45</sup> A similar report is given by Bruce,<sup>46</sup> although the preference for right is not specifically expressed.

The highest officials next to the king, the Bale, in the town Ibadan, Yorubaland, have the title right- and left-handed Bale (Ellis).<sup>47</sup> They were the principal councillors of the king. The author makes at this place no definite statement as to which is the higher in rank. Referring to the Magba or high priest of the god Shango, however, he remarks<sup>48</sup> that this priest had twelve assistants who were called according to their rank and authority the "right hand," "left hand," third, fourth, etc., which seems to indicate a preference for the right hand.

The Masai, writes Fuchs-Hollis,<sup>49</sup> called the boys who were circumcised first the "right hand circumcised," those subsequently circumcised the "left hand circumcised." Of the Boloki Weeks mentions<sup>50</sup> that the first-born of twins was carried on the right arm, the second-born on the left arm. Among the Wagula of the eastern parts of the Belgian Congo, the father's brother takes the new-born

<sup>42</sup> Herodotus II, 30.

<sup>43</sup> Nachtigal, *op. cit.*, vol. III, p. 233.

<sup>44</sup> *Ibid.*, vol. III, p. 440.

<sup>45</sup> Salt, in *Neue Bibliothek der Reisen*, Weimar, 1814, vol. IV, p. 241.

<sup>46</sup> Bruce of Kinnaird, J. *Die Quellen des Nils*, Leipzig, 1790-91, vol. III, p. 265.

<sup>47</sup> Ellis, A. B. *The Yoruba-speaking Peoples*, London, 1894, p. 169-170.

<sup>48</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 97.

<sup>49</sup> Fuchs, in Hollis, *op. cit.*, p. 5.      <sup>50</sup> Weeks, *op. cit.*, p. 99.

child from the hut and lifts it first to the right, then to the left, and finally towards all those mountains which are thought to be occupied by spirits (Schmidt).<sup>71</sup>

Krapf<sup>72</sup> and others<sup>73</sup> remark that the Zulu distinguish between three houses in a family: (1) The house of the first married woman, called the house of the right hand; (2) the house of the great woman; and (3) the house of the third woman, or the house of the left hand.

Here perhaps may be added Irlé's<sup>74</sup> statement about the Herero, who call the Kunene river the right-lying river and the smaller river, the Okavangu, the left-lying river. It is uncertain as to whether these names were adopted because the Herero on their migration first encountered the Kunene on their right. It is, however, possible that Kunene and right have been identified through the idea of size, a suggestion that is perhaps strengthened by the circumstance that the name Kunene sometimes has been interpreted as "great river."

#### 6. Color associations with right and left

The association of colors with right and left is a topic which I intended to treat in a special study, since it involves questions which have no direct bearing upon the problem raised here. In general, however, I should like to state that among many tribes right is associated with light (white) and left with dark (particularly red) colors. There are, as might be expected, exceptions to such a rule. Thus Fuchs-Hollis<sup>75</sup> reports from the Masai that those warriors who have killed enemies paint the right part of the body red, the left white. The Baluba Hembe of the Congo region color the left eyelid of a deceased person with white earth (Colle).<sup>76</sup> On other occasions this same tribe uses the customary colors, i.e. white for right and red for left (Colle).<sup>77</sup> Or, to give an example which indicates sex association, Lichtenstein<sup>78</sup> who visited South Africa

<sup>71</sup> Schmidt, R. *Les Wagvato*, Brussels, 1911, p. 140.

<sup>72</sup> Krapf, *op. cit.*, p. 101, 164.

<sup>73</sup> Fritsch, G. *Die Eingeborenen Südafrikas*, Breslau, 1872, p. 92.

<sup>74</sup> Irlé, *op. cit.*, p. 50.

<sup>75</sup> Fuchs, in Hollis, *op. cit.*, p. 104.

<sup>76</sup> Colle, B. *Les Baluba*, Brussels, 1913, vol. II, p. 430.

<sup>77</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 586.

<sup>78</sup> Lichtenstein, H. *Reisen in südlichen Afrika*, Berlin, 1811, vol. I, p. 415.



at the end of the eighteenth century states that the female sorcerer of the Xosa painted the left eyelids, arm, and thigh white and the corresponding members on the right, black.

#### 7. Right and left denoting orientation

In the literature only one reference could be found to indicate that words for right and left are unknown. From the Waniaturu, von Sick<sup>39</sup> reports that right and left are expressed in terms of orientation. Thus in saying to a man "turn to the right" they say "go to the east," and so on, according to the general direction intended.

In Wadai as well as in Dar Fur right is very definitely associated with west and left with east (Nachtigal).<sup>40</sup> It seems as if such an association is quite frequent in the Eastern or Anglo-Egyptian Sudan. And moreover here the concept of left and east is closely connected with women, right and west with men.

In the region of Shoa in Northeastern Africa left is associated with south and right with north (Krapf).<sup>41</sup>

In this connection a report might be added which may have some bearing upon this question. Holub<sup>42</sup> says of the Barotse of the Upper Zambesi the following (in free translation): "Some of the king's wives and children are always invited to attend the morning meal of the king. At this occasion the wives as well as strangers (referring only to Europeans) sit down in the direction of the rising sun, while at evening meetings the same persons are placed at the left of the king. Invited dignitaries of the tribe sit at the right of the king, if the meal is taken in the interior of the house, at the left, however, if taken outside." It seems quite obvious that Holub emphasizes the contrast between the direction of the rising sun (east) and left. If he actually means this to be a contrast, we can then believe that in the Barotse area right and east as well as left and west are synonymous. This interpretation will, however, not be stressed here.

<sup>39</sup> Sick, H. von. "Die Waniaturu," *Baessler Archiv*, vol. V, L. 2, Leipzig, 1915, p. 54.

<sup>40</sup> Nachtigal, *op. cit.*, vol. III, pp. 227, 236, 341, 419 n., 429.

<sup>41</sup> Krapf, *op. cit.*, vol. I, p. 72.

<sup>42</sup> Holub, E. *Sieben Jahre in Südafrika*, Wien, 1881, vol. II, p. 323.

## II

According to the material offered in this study the predominant importance of the concept of right is quite obvious. Scattered over most parts of the African continent are indications that the right is considered as the superior side and is associated with such beliefs as are understood to be good and favorable. In a rather limited area of Northeast Africa and among the Ekoi of Cameroon we found a few cases in which the left side was preferred, but the same tribes considered the right more favorable in other relations, so that we do not have an area with exclusive left preference. The material in respect to this interesting problem, as far as the African continent is concerned, is certainly not sufficient to enable us to offer any definite theory. It may, however, be pointed out that most of the references dealing with right-predominance come from East Africa, the Sudan, Nigeria, and Southwest Africa, the last being closely connected culturally with East Africa. Only a few references can be found from among tribes inhabiting the Central parts of the continent, such as the Boloki, Loango, Ababua, etc.

This distribution of right-preference, despite the incompleteness of our survey, seems to point to outside influences. As the clearest description was obtainable from those tribes which had more or less close cultural contacts with Arabs and Islam, it seems to me that such an influence might be suggested. The long lasting Arabic influence upon North as well as East Africa, going back at least for a period of a millenium, cannot be overestimated. Such cultural influences may even have reached the tribes of the Congo area.

Such an introduction of culturally confined right-preference must have had a considerable influence upon handedness in general. That is the point I should like to emphasize in connection with the material presented: perhaps handedness is to a greater extent determined by custom and belief, so that even for primitive groups it is almost impossible to obtain data concerning the biological confinement of handedness. Among most of those African tribes which have an outspoken right-preference as shown above, we find the occurrence of most rigorous customs to "cure" left-handedness. So Kidd<sup>22</sup> writes: "If a child should seem to be naturally left-handed the people pour boiling water into a hole in the earth, and

<sup>22</sup> Kidd, D. *Savage Childhood*, London, 1906, p. 296.

place the child's left hand in the hole, ramming the earth down around it; by this means the left hand becomes so scalded that the child is bound to use the right hand.<sup>33</sup>

It seems to me that most of those tribes which live outside the area discussed above are rather indifferent toward the question of right or left. It would be too premature to make more definite statements as long as the available material is as scanty as it is now. Another important culture trait for right and left questions is the system of counting, i. e. whether the right or the left hand is used for expressing numbers. Although this problem is not discussed here, it is well to emphasize that, while in the East African region the right hand is predominantly used for counting, in the central parts of the continent the left is preferred. This is true for the Pygmies of the Congo area and for the Bushmen.<sup>34</sup>



---

<sup>33</sup> Schapera, I. *The Khoisan Peoples of South Africa*, London, 1930; p. 220. Trilles, *op. cit.*, p. 201.

## NOTES OF THE SOCIETY

---

The following persons have been elected Corporate Members of the SOCIETY on action of the Executive Committee:

Chauncey J. Blair	Hugh A. Moran
Frank A. Brown	James Muilenberg
Y. Z. Cahng	John K. Musgrave, Jr.
A. Jessurun Cardoso	John E. Orchard
Ephraim Cross	James B. Pritchard
Rufus S. Day, Jr.	Hermann Ranke
Sydney N. Fisher	V. A. Riasanovsky
W. W. Freeman	John F. Rowan
Herbert W. Hines	Joseph Sarnachek
Harry N. Howard	Osama Shimizu
Thorikild Jacobsen	Francis R. Steele
John M. Kelso	Dorothy Stehle
H. M. G. Labatt-Simon	Elmer J. Templeton
William R. Leete	Elbert D. Thomas
George C. Miles	Mischu Titlev
William J. Moore	A. Wehrli
	Louis Wolsey

---

## NOTES OF OTHER SOCIETIES

---

The Oriental Club of New Haven celebrated its twenty-fifth anniversary on March 12, the club having been founded on March 15, 1913, at the suggestion of Professor Albert T. Clay. The anniversary meeting was made the occasion of reminiscences concerning the beginnings of the club, presented by surviving charter members, Professors C. C. Torrey, F. C. Porter, E. Huntington, and P. V. C. Haur.

Chinese Language Intensive Summer Courses, sponsored by the American Council, Institute of Pacific Relations, June 27-August 20, 1938, for graduate or otherwise specially qualified students or professional people whose work requires a knowledge of modern written Chinese as a tool. Only twenty will be enrolled in each of the two courses. Location: University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Michigan.

Course One, Elementary Chinese, meets three and a half hours daily, from 8.00 to 9.30 a. m., and from 10.00 to 12.00 noon. It uses specially

prepared material for learning to read in a limited vocabulary. Students are expected to devote full time to this work; six hours credit is given by the University of Michigan.

Course Two, for advanced students, meets four hours daily, from 10.00 a. m. till noon, and from 2.00 to 4.00 p. m., each hour constituting a separate unit. The first hour is devoted to pronunciation drill and conversation practice. In the other three hours are read selections respectively from (a) newspaper Chinese; (b) stories of historical characters; (c) standard novels. Students may elect the whole course, if sufficiently well prepared, or any portion of it. Credit of two hours for each of the sections, (a), (b), and (c), is given by the University of Michigan. The tuition fee is \$80.00, payable to the American Council of the Institute of Pacific Relations upon admission to the School. This amount includes the \$35.00 registration fee at the University of Michigan. Some funds are available for tuition scholarships and grants-in-aid. Announcement of awards will be made May 15. Instruction will be in charge of Dr. George A. Kennedy, of Yale University. All applications for admission to the school and for scholarship aid must be received not later than May 1, 1938, by Jean W. Kennedy, 80 Howe Street, New Haven, Conn.

The second Summer Seminar in Arabic and Islamic Studies will be held in the Graduate College, Princeton University, Princeton, N. J., under the directorship of Professor Philip K. Hitti, for a period of six weeks beginning Saturday morning, June 25, 1938. The courses are open to men and women of graduate standing and are designed to meet the needs of new students as well as those who attended the first Seminar in 1935. Teachers of philosophy and religion, Near Eastern and medieval history, Romance languages and fine arts will be offered an opportunity to acquire first-hand knowledge of some of the sources in the Islamic phases of their respective subjects. The courses in the Arabic language and Arab history will be given by Professor Hitti, Dr. Nahik A. Faris and Dr. Edward J. Jorji. Those in the Turkish language and history will be offered by Dr. Walter L. Wright, Jr., president of Robert College, Istanbul. Professor M. Aga-Ogla of the University of Michigan will have charge of the courses in Islamic art. Dr. Muhammad Simsar, of the University of Pennsylvania, will give the courses in Persian. Special lecturers will deliver each a series of lectures dealing with different phases of Islamic culture in Spain, the Eastern Mediterranean and Central Asia. The tuition fee for the Seminar is \$40.00. Fees for room and board at the Graduate College are \$20.00 a week per person. A limited number of grants-in-aid are available for specially recommended and qualified students. For further information address Dr. Nahik A. Faris, 68 Mercer Street, Princeton, New Jersey.

The Twentieth International Congress of Orientalists will be held at Brussels, Belgium, September 3-10, 1938. The President of the Committee,

Professor Louis de La Vallée Poussin, and the committee invite those who wish to participate or to secure information about the Congress to address the Secretary General, M. Jean Capart, *Musées Royaux d'Art et d'Histoire, Parc du Cinquantenaire, Brussels, Belgium.*

---

The Third International Congress of Phonetic Sciences will be held in Ghent (Belgium) from Monday, July 18, to Friday, July 22, 1938. By the courtesy of the authorities of the University of Ghent, the sessions will be held in the buildings of this University. The fee for full membership of the Congress has been fixed at 25 Belgas. Relatives of members will be admitted as associate (non-voting) members for the fee of 12.50 Belgas. Full membership and associate membership include general admission to lectures and entertainments. Full membership will moreover entitle to a reduction in price as regards the proceedings of the Congress. Information concerning the offering of papers and registration may be obtained from the Secretary of the Congress (Dr. Willem Pée, *Tentoonstellingslaan, 52, Ghent (Belgium).*

---

The Eighth International Congress of Historical Sciences will be held in Zurich, Switzerland, on August 28-September 4, 1938. It will be organized in fourteen sections, dealing with the various fields and periods of historical studies, including pre-history, science of antiquities, auxiliary sciences, numismatics, religious, legal, constitutional, economic, social, and military history, intellectual history and history of science, and historical methods. The organization of the Congress is in the hands of a committee of which Dr. George Hoffmann, *Susembergstrasse 145, Zurich 7, Switzerland*, is secretary, to whom all correspondence respecting the Congress or participation in it should be addressed. The membership fee has been set at 25 Swiss francs, but members of the families of participants as well as undergraduates may secure membership at a reduced fee of 12 Swiss francs.

---

The Vice-President of the Egypt Exploration Society, of London, advises that the Society has a residue of its numerous publications, which it is prepared to present to such American libraries as would pay the cost of packing and transit. Any American libraries or museums that may be interested should communicate directly with him: Alan A. Gardiner, Esq., 9, Lansdowne Road, Holland Park, London, W. 11, England. It would be well for the institution to report its present holdings, or its deficiencies.



*Abraham Valentine Williams Jackson, 1862-1937*



## ABRAHAM VALENTINE WILLIAMS JACKSON \*

EDWARD DELAVAN PERRY  
COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY

PROFESSOR A. V. Williams Jackson was born, February 9, 1862, not far from the present site of Columbia University, and died at his home overlooking its gates, August 8, 1937. From the day when he entered Columbia College as a freshman in 1879 to the day of his death, his official connection with the University was unbroken. He received the degree of A. B. in 1883, those of A. M., L. H. D., and Ph. D. in the three following years, and the Honorary LL. D. in 1904.

The undaunted devotion to a chosen ideal and the untiring industry which were so prominent throughout his adult years and even through the serious impairment of his health and subsequent retirement from active service in his professorship, had already become conspicuous during his undergraduate years. They were strongly emphasized by the late Professor A. C. Merriam in a characterization of him given to one of his subsequent teachers in 1880. "You will find," said Mr. Merriam, "that Jackson will absorb every word you utter in class, and give it out again, if called on to do so, at the examination."

The broad scope of Jackson's interests was shown early in his career. For example, he was one of a small group of upper classmen in Columbia College in 1881-1882 who made up a voluntary class for a short series of elementary lectures on what was then known as "comparative philology," and his eager interest in the relatively new subject was remarkable. At that time instruction in Sanskrit and in Ancient Persian was already available; and into these by no means easy subjects Jackson threw himself with characteristic enthusiasm. Strange and complicated alphabets and intricate grammatical structures had no terrors for him; he simply took them in his stride. With him it was no case of the seed sown

---

\* This note on Professor Jackson was written by the late Professor Perry between October 24, 1937, when he agreed to prepare it for the *Journal*, and November 10, 1937, when he and Professors Frederick J. E. Woodbridge, James C. Eglert, Jefferson B. Fletcher, and Louis H. Gray, presented it with the omission of one paragraph at a Faculty memorial meeting in the Trustees Room at Columbia University.

on stony ground—it sprang up quickly indeed, but it was not withered by the midday sun. In another field, Anglo-Saxon, he had already become so expert that he was made Assistant in it in 1886; and his competent knowledge of English literature led to his appointment as Adjunct Professor in 1891. He had been made Instructor in Indo-Iranian Languages in 1886—a remarkable tribute to his attainments in that field. In 1895 a reorganization of the linguistic and literary departments of the College established a Department of Indo-Iranian Languages and Literatures with Professor Jackson as its head. Thus at the early age of thirty-three he entered upon full heritage of the subject which had come to lie closest to his heart. During the years from 1887 to 1892 he had spent much time in study in Germany, chiefly at Halle, under Professors Geldner and Pischel, and at Berlin under Geldner. But not content with even the widest book knowledge of Indian and Persian antiquity he made a series of extended visits to India and Persia for thorough study and exploration: the first in 1901, others in 1903, 1907, 1910, 1911. Then in 1918 as a member of the American-Persian Relief Commission he made a trip round the world, for a large part of it as a special guest of honor under particular convoy of the British Government. His last journey to the East was made in 1926. On these visits he was often the recipient of unusual privileges and honors, equally in India and Persia.

Jackson's productivity as a scholar began early and continued till the end of his life. His knowledge of Sanskrit language and literature was wide and accurate, yet Iranian language, literature, and antiquities, and most of all Iranian religion, were his chosen field. One of his first publications was *A Hymn of Zoroaster, Yasna XXXI*: 1888. *An Avesta Grammar* followed in 1892, the corresponding *Reader* in the following year, and many special, more technical articles were published in American and foreign periodicals. Of more general interest were his *Zoroaster, the Prophet of Ancient Iran* (1899); the fascinating *Persia, Past and Present* (1906), and *From Constantinople to the Home of Omar Khayyam* (1911). The latest complete work from his pen is *Researches in Manichaeism* (1932). As founder and editor of *The Columbia University Indo-Iranian Series* he was, either as author or maieutically, responsible for some thirteen volumes.

Professor Jackson's enthusiasm for the cause of Indo-Iranian scholarship was naturally not satisfied by teaching and publication. He was a member and Director of the American Oriental Society for many years, and its President in 1915-1916 and 1929-1930; an Honorary Member of the Royal Asiatic Society of London; and a member of numerous other learned societies.

Some sixty years ago a Swiss journalist, writing a notice (rather than a review in the stricter sense) of a brilliant book on comparative grammar by a compatriot, at the end of his ecstatic eulogy expressed himself somewhat as follows: "M. de Saussure possède en sa propre personne plusieurs chaos de connaissances." With the important modification that the vast store of Professor Jackson's knowledge was never in the confusion implied by the modern use of the word "chaos," this might be truly said of him. Yet there was never a trace of pride about him, or personal vanity, or "push." While still a young man he had become a great scholar; he was by nature and inheritance a great gentleman, and his achievements, instead of developing about him—as so often happens—a hard crust of aloofness, made him even more sympathetic and approachable and kindly—in every way one of the most justly beloved of men. It was an indication of the essential kindness of his nature that he did not choose to write reviews of the work of other scholars. This was the more remarkable because the field of Oriental philology had been so often the battle ground of violent and unseemly quarrels. His great social gifts, far from interfering with his extraordinary industry, made him a favorite among his fellow-men. The opening words of *From Constantinople to the Home of Khayyam* run as follows: "A Charity Ball and a journey to the East seem to have little connection, yet so they had in the case of the third of my four journeys to the Land of the Dawn." The connection was more extensive than is implied in Professor Jackson's words; it illustrates his active participation in human affairs quite outside of academic and scholarly matters, as does also, for example, the fact of his service as Trustee of the Yonkers Public Library and the Board of Education for many years. It was the constant wonder of his friends at Columbia College that along with his intense and unrelenting study he could still find time and energy for social activities. He found it not by neglect of his books but by curtailment of his sleep. The prediction was

freely made in those days: "Jackson will not live to middle age." Gradually we came to recognize what an indomitable resolution and nerves of steel and physical courage (as shown in some of his experiences in Asia) lay behind that gracious and polished exterior, an exterior in which the faultless excellence of his dress harmonized so completely with the suavity of his manner. For the harmony was there, unmarred by any harsh or rude note.

Professor Jackson, as student and teacher at Columbia, saw almost two generations come and go, if we let the biologist measure a generation as a century's third. The historian, however, must have respect for the velocity of events. Their speed in a single decade can make the beginning and end of even so brief a period strangers. Great speed too commonly weakens the ability to remember and to carry through the fleeting years a constancy of character and personality which does not lose itself in isolation. The Columbia of fifty-eight years ago and the Columbia of today would not recognize each other if brought unexpectedly face to face by some magic which could annul the calendar. That magic could easily have been the velocity of events were it not for men like Professor Jackson who with a magic of their own walked gayly to and fro among us, growing old with the light of youth still in their eyes, the living memories that unify what we were and what we are. Let his memories for us be our memories of him.

## THE DOCTRINE OF THE BOLOS IN MANICHAEAN ESCHATOLOGY

† A. V. WILLIAMS JACKSON

COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY

[PRELIMINARY NOTE.—This article, which was to have formed part of a projected general account of Manichaeism, was presented by Professor Jackson as a paper at the meeting of the American Philosophical Society in Philadelphia on April 23, 1925. Marginal notes in pencil and some extra material show that he continued to work on the article from time to time until as late as 1929.—C. J. OGDEN.]

As stated above,<sup>1</sup> Mānī conceded that there might remain a certain small element of light so closely mingled with the darkness that it would fail of disjunction through the action of the sun and moon and could be separated only by the universal conflagration, whereupon the cruder mass was to be relegated to oblivion. This conglomerate and undigested mass is referred to in both the Greek and the Syriac texts by the Greek word βῆλος "lump, clod, coagulated mass," and appears in the Latin as *globus* "ball, or globular mass."<sup>2</sup> In the Arabic it is characterized as a portion that is "knotted, or closely knit" (*mun'qid*). The word by which Mānī designated this coagulation has not thus far been found in the Fragments;<sup>3</sup> but, since the Greek term has been borrowed by the Syriac, and Mānī wrote in Syriac as well as in Persian, it is not impossible that this term may have been the one originally used by himself.<sup>4</sup>

The *Acta Archelai* (§ 11 and § 13), in the first part of the

<sup>1</sup> [The reference is to a discussion of Manichaean eschatology, a summary of which was presented by Professor Jackson in his address as President of the American Oriental Society at its meeting in 1930 and published under the title "A Sketch of the Manichaean Doctrine Concerning the Future Life," *JAOS* 60: 177-198. See especially pp. 196-197.—C. J. O.]

<sup>2</sup> For an instructive discussion of the Syriac-Greek word, see Burkitt, in *S. Ephraim's Prose Refutations*, translated by Mitchell, Bevan and Burkitt, 2, p. cxxxix.

<sup>3</sup> [A marginal annotation suggests the Turfan Pahlavi word *pdred* "altered, strained" as possibly an anticipation of the idea; cf. now Jackson, *Researches in Manichaeism* (1932), pp. 47-48, where the suggestion is more fully worked out.—C. J. O.]

<sup>4</sup> The Turfan Pahlavi Fragments are not wholly free from foreign terms, especially if technical.

fourth century A.D., furnishes the earliest recorded mention of this compacted mass ( $\beta\acute{\alpha}\lambda\omicron\varsigma$ ). Thus Turbo quotes Mānī as inveighing against the Prophets whom the Christians recognize and as saying: "If anyone follows their words he dies forever, bound into the 'lump' ( $\beta\acute{\alpha}\lambda\omicron\varsigma$ ), because he has not learned the knowledge of the Paraclete (Mānī)." <sup>2</sup> And, when Omophorus (Atlas) throws off his burden and the world-conflagration begins, he also "casts away the 'lump' (or mass) in connection with ( $\mu\epsilon\tau\acute{\alpha}$ ) the New Aeon, so that all the souls of the sinners may be bound for ever." <sup>3</sup>

[Alexander of Lycopolis, chap. 3 (ed. Brinkmann, p. 6, lines 13-16). This early fourth century author, when arguing against the Manichaean account of creation, says that according to Manes: "The part of Matter (i.e. Darkness) from which Sun and Moon were separated was cast away outside the Cosmos; and that part is a fire, burning but like unto darkness and without light, resembling night." . . . The concluding clause recognizes also the eternal perdition to which this discarded portion was condemned according to the Manichaean tenets.] <sup>4</sup>

Titus of Bostra (writing between the years 364 and 368 A.D.) quotes Mānī as maintaining, with regard to the souls of the sinful, that "they are to be made fast in the lump (or mass) together with Evil (i.e. the Evil Principle)." <sup>5</sup> Titus refers to it likewise when he cites Mānī's words with reference to the triumph of the Good Principle over Matter, thus: "He (i.e. God) in the end will get the mastery over it (Matter) and, making it into a lump (mass), will cause it to go on being burned of itself." <sup>6</sup>

<sup>2</sup> Hegemonius, *Acta Archelai*, II (10). 3, ed. Beeson, p. 19.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, 13 (11). 1, ed. Beeson, p. 21. The idea of the souls of the wicked being bound up in this mass will be found also in the quotations that follow.

<sup>4</sup> (The manuscript at this point has merely "add Alexander of Lycopolis," with an extra page containing the reference but not a translation. The section as inserted above is from Jackson, *Researches in Manichaeism*, p. 47.—C. J. O.)

<sup>5</sup> Titus of Bostra, I. 31 (41),  $\delta\epsilon\ \tau\acute{\alpha}\ \beta\acute{\alpha}\lambda\omicron\varsigma\ \epsilon\kappa\alpha\gamma\gamma\acute{\iota}\sigma\tau\omicron\upsilon\sigma\theta\alpha\iota\ \kappa\alpha\iota\ \tau\acute{\alpha}\ \kappa\alpha\kappa\acute{\iota}\alpha$  (ed. Lagarde, Greek text, p. 25, line 18; cf. ed. Basnage, p. 84, Amsterdam, 1725). Compare also Baur, *Das Manichäische Religionsystem*, p. 326, and especially Burkitt, *op. cit.*, 2, p. cxxxix n. 1. See also Alfaro, *L'évolution intellectuelle de Saint Augustin*, p. 168 n. 1.

<sup>6</sup> Titus of Bostra, I. 30 (40),  $\beta\acute{\alpha}\lambda\omicron\varsigma\ \epsilon\kappa\epsilon\gamma\gamma\alpha\sigma\mu\epsilon\tau\omicron\varsigma$ ; ed. Lagarde, p. 24, lines 30 f.; cf. ed. Basnage, p. 83.

Addendum.<sup>10</sup> Titus of Bostra, 1. 31 (41) (ed. Lagarde, p. 25, lines 24 ff.). "Besides all these things wonder also at that (passage) of his (i. e. Mānī's) where he says that, Darkness being occupied thither (*ἄραστοι*, i. e. in the Bolos), God in the interval fills up with a mound (*χόμαρι*) the depth whence Matter raised its head, according to his (Mānī's) most dreadful imaginings, whereas he does not comprehend that what is thrown on—if it should be from the earth of Good, how is there room for it in a place of the opposite sort; if from the quarters of Evil, it will not shut out its own (i. e. the Evil) which has set out from the same place. But, according to the Maniac (Mānī), God is through eternity seated carrying about mounds and little by little filling up certain depths. O the madness of the senseless one, to which it were ridiculous to reply at greater length!"

St. Ephraim (306-373 A. D.), in his Syriac Prose Refutations, adopts the Greek word for this burning mass of defilement when he speaks about the souls of incorrigible sinners as follows:

"How do they (the Manichaeans) say that some of these souls who have sinned much and done much wickedness, have blasphemed much and been guilty of great unbelief, are found like dregs in the midst of that which they call BOLOS? As they say that 'when the Fire dissolves all, within it is collected every thing that is mixed and mingled in created things from the Lights; and those souls who have done much wickedness are assigned to the realm of the Darkness when he (i. e. "Satan" or "Bolos") is tortured.'"<sup>11</sup>

<sup>10</sup> [This citation is contained on an extra page, marked "add (May 6, 1925)."—C. J. O.]

<sup>11</sup> Ephraim, *Prose Refutations*, tr. Mitchell, 1. pp. lxxi-lxxii, combined with the translation by Burkitt, in vol. 2. p. cxxxix of this work (cf. also later, Burkitt, *Religion of the Manichaeans*, p. 66). Dr. Burkitt's translation departs from that by Mitchell only in certain minor details: I have ventured to combine the two in the version presented above, making some slight changes (chiefly punctuation) in so doing. . . . Regarding "he is tortured" Mitchell renders the pronoun as "he," referring apparently to "Satan," who is mentioned at the beginning of the paragraph; but in his marginal summary (*ad loc.*) he abridges the contents of the paragraph by "How can Light which formerly pleased finally torture Darkness?" Burkitt (*op. cit.*, 2. p. cxxxix) renders the pronoun by "it" (apparently Darkness).



St. Augustine (400 A.D.), in his writings against the Manichaeans, refers a number of times to this globular mass (*globus*), closely connecting it with the final conflagration. A characteristic passage is found in his *De Haeresibus*, ch. 46. The flesh lusteth against the spirit, and, the Manichaeans maintain:

"Nor will this vice ever be cured in us, as we (Christians) say that it will, but that substance of evil, having been separated from us and shut up apart, when the age is finished after the conflagration of the world, will live on in a sort of globular mass (*in globo quodam*), as in an everlasting prison. To which mass, they affirm, there will ever be added and adhere a sort of covering and coating of souls, good indeed by nature, but which nevertheless could not be cleansed from the contagion of the evil nature."<sup>12</sup>

In the same manner, in his *De Natura Boni* (ch. 42), Augustine alludes three times to Mân's doctrine that certain lost souls "are fettered forever in the horrible globular mass of darkness."<sup>13</sup> Again, when writing his *Epistle in Answer to Secundinus the Manichaean* (ch. 20), he mentions "the eternal punishments of that horrible globular mass."<sup>14</sup> Moreover, when refuting the blasphemy of Faustus (*Contra Faustum* 2.5), he exclaims: "You even say that Christ is not entirely liberated; but that some ultimate particles of His good and divine nature, which have been so defiled that they cannot be cleansed, are condemned to stay forever in the horrid globular mass of darkness." Still further (*Contra Faustum*, 13.6), "What has the wretched soul done, that it should be punished by perpetual bondage in the globular mass of darkness?" A moment later (13.18) Augustine scoffs at the Manichaean pious acts "for which you are rewarded by not being condemned to the mass of darkness forever (*in globo aeterno*

<sup>12</sup> Augustine, *De Haeres.* 46 end, ed. Migne, *Patrologia Latina*, 42 (8), col. 38 end. Cf. also Baur, p. 328.

<sup>13</sup> Augustine, *De Natura Boni*, ch. 42, *affligi in aeternum globo horribili tenebrarum*, ed. Migne, 42 (8) col. 565.

<sup>14</sup> Augustine, *Epistula contra Secundinum Manichaeum*, ch. 20, *horrendi illius globi aeterna supplicia*, ed. Migne, 42 (8) col. 506; cf. also Baur, p. 330. Alfarié, *op. cit.*, pp. 157 f., "un globe de feu immense," likewise includes most of these references.

*damnemini*), along with that (part of light) which cannot be extracted." Again arguing against Faustus (21.16) regarding the primordial conflict and the loss suffered by Primal Man in the conflict, he says: "A part of your god was sent to suffer hopeless contamination that there might be a covering for the mass in which the enemy is to be buried forever alive . . . The charge is proved in the case of your god, by that final mass in which his enemies are confined, while his own subjects are involved in it . . . If the issue of this great conflict is that the enemy gets some good by the cessation of hostilities in *Hyle*, while God's own subjects suffer the serious evil of being driven into the mass of darkness, we may ask who has got the victory."<sup>12</sup> Furthermore (32.22) in contrasting the teachings of the Apostles with regard to Christ and those of Mānī, he states: "Manichaeus preaches that God (i.e. Primal Man) immersed himself in the pollution of darkness, and that he will never wholly emerge, but that the part which cannot be purified will be condemned to eternal punishment."<sup>13</sup>

Yet, granting certain of Mānī's premises, he does concede (23.22, middle) that, in the case of wilful sinners, "They might perhaps justly be punished for heinous crimes by that torment of the globular mass";<sup>14</sup> and shortly afterwards (23.22, end) he alludes to this punishment as that of being "doomed to eternal confinement in the mass of darkness."<sup>15</sup> Probably this punishment in the globular mass is referred to likewise in Augustine's Disputation with Felix (*Acta cum Felice*, 2.16), when the Manichaean retorts by an allusion to "the part which has not cleansed itself from the pollution of the race of darkness."<sup>16</sup> One special passage in the Faustus (20.9) deserves particular attention because the *globus* or "globular mass" is directly associated with the end of the world, when the god Splenditenens, who holds the cosmos from above, and Atlas, who aids him from below, give up their tasks and the universal cataclysm ensues. The pas-

<sup>12</sup> Aug. *Contra Faust.* 21. 16, mid. and end.

<sup>13</sup> Aug. *O. P.* 32. 22.

<sup>14</sup> Cf. also Baur, p. 331 n.

<sup>15</sup> Aug. *Contra Faust.* 22. 22, mid. and end, see ed. Migne, 42, col. 414 end, 416 top.

<sup>16</sup> Augustine, *Contra Felicem*, 2. 16, see Baur, pp. 331-332, and cf. Reitzenstein, *Das Mandäische Buch des Herrn der Grösse*, p. 27 n. 1; Alfaro, *op. cit.*, p. 158 n. 2.

sage shows the devotion due to Atlas—"the mightiest Atlas who bears it upon his shoulders with him (i. e. Splenditenens), lest that one, becoming weary, cast it all away and thus your story, as in a piece at the theatre, be prevented from coming to the covering up (*calastolium*) of that final globular mass (*ad illius ultimi globi calastolium*)."<sup>20</sup>

Evodius, who was a friend of St. Augustine and corresponded with him, gives similar testimony in his *De Fide Contra Manichaeos*, ch. 5. Evodius presents to the Church Father the Manichaean view as to the fate in the globular mass of darkness awaiting the souls of such as persisted in evil-doing, by stating:

"They will not be able, therefore, to be received into those peaceful realms (of the World of Light), but will be embedded (*configentur*) in the aforesaid horrible globular mass (*in praedicto horribili globo*), over which also guard must be kept.<sup>21</sup> For which reason these same souls will adhere to these things in which they have found delight, being left in this same globular mass of darkness (*in eodem tenebrarum globo*), gaining this (punishment) for themselves by their own deserts."<sup>22</sup>

Theodoret, bishop of Cyrus, writing in Greek, between the years 451 and 458 A. D., against the Manichaean heresy, refers to the Bolos tenet.<sup>23</sup> Theodoret is believed to have had in his hands one of Mānī's own books.<sup>24</sup> [He says:]

"When all the nature of Light is separated from Matter, then, they say, God will give it over to the Fire and make one Mass (Lump, *βῆλος*) of it, and with it also the souls that do not believe in Manes."<sup>25</sup>

<sup>20</sup> Aug. *Contra Faust.* 20, 2. Cf. also Flügel, *Mani*, p. 222; Baur, p. 80.

<sup>21</sup> In the Petrograd Manichaean Fragment S. 9 a, lines 23-26, demons and fiends keep guard over the soul imprisoned in pollution (TPh). *msdā*. Cf. Jn. *Researches in Manichaeism*, p. 79 [published in 1932].

<sup>22</sup> Evodius, *De Fide*, ch. 5, ed. Migne, *Patr. Lat.* 42, col. 1141 f.; cf. also Baur, p. 328; Alfaro, *op. cit.*, p. 158 n. 1, 2; Burkitt, *op. cit.*, 2, p. cxxxviii.

<sup>23</sup> Theodoret knew Syriac, and in part of his Ecclesiastical History, at least, seems to have translated from a Syriac original.

<sup>24</sup> Alfaro, *Les Ecritures Manichéennes*, 2, 25, like Cumont, accredits Theodoret with the use of Mānī's *Kephalaia*.

<sup>25</sup> Migne, *Patr. Graeca*, 83, col. 380. I owe this reference to a translation of Theodoret's chapter on Mānī made for me by my pupil Mr. Ralph Marcus.

Thus much information regarding the lump, or residue mass, is given by the above-mentioned Christian writers on Manichaeism.

A Later Latin Mention of the Tenet. It is worth adding that a later Latin Christian document preserved in the Library of Milan—and probably based on Augustine's writings—makes mention of this tenet among the Manichaean heresies to be condemned. This document is recorded by Muratori in his *Anecdota*, 2. 112, in the year 1698, as "a very old fragment" (*fragmentum vetustissimum*), the anathematized sections of which he cites in detail. The eleventh section contains an allusion to "the globular mass of darkness (*tenebrarum globum*)."<sup>20</sup>

The Muhammadan writers show a full recognition of this Manichaean doctrine in its general bearing, but in an aspect slightly different and perhaps even more exact than that of the Christian writers indicated in the passages quoted above. These sources in Arabic relating to the disentangled, close-knit remnant of darkness that awaits final disposition need only be summarized here in brief. Thus an-Nadīm in the *Fihrist* refers to it as "the knotted portion (*mun'qid*) of the light which the Sun and the Moon cannot further separate."<sup>21</sup> Shahrastānī makes use of the same terms: "the small knotted portion which the Sun and the Moon cannot purify" until "the light contained in it is freed" by the 1468 years' conflagration.<sup>22</sup> And later still, Ahmad ibn Yahyā al-Murtadā (of South Arabia) similarly mentions "the knotted portions (plur.), the separation of which is not possible."<sup>23</sup> In each case the final separation is to be effected through the general conflagration at the last day.

The actual Manichaean Documents can now be turned to, and in two at least of the printed Turfan Pahlavi Fragments we find this doctrine referred to. One of these allusions occurs in M. 470 recto, lines 8-13—the long Fragment which describes the end of the world through the Great Fire. In contrast, as it seems, to the divine light in heaven and earth, which is more easily restored (lines 3-6), there still remains in Hell some luminous fraction to be redeemed at the last, and the text says:

<sup>20</sup> See now W. Bang-Kaup, *Le Muséon*, 38 (1925), p. 54.

<sup>21</sup> See Flügel, *Mani*, tr. p. 90; Kessler, *Mani*, p. 392.

<sup>22</sup> Shahrastānī, Germ. tr. Haarbrücker, I. p. 289; cf. also Flügel, p. 229.

<sup>23</sup> See Kessler, pp. 348 (text), 353 (Germ. transl.).

"That light<sup>20</sup> in yonder Hell will be drawn out therefrom, will become pure and led up to the Sun and Moon, and will become a God after the essence of the divinity Ōhrmēzd.<sup>21</sup> And they (i. e. the divine powers) will lead it on together from the Sun and the Moon to Paradise (š Vahistān)."<sup>22</sup>

The implication in this passage would be that all the primordial light is rescued.

The other Turfan Pahlavi Fragment is M. 2, which is thus far available only in a German version by Andreas.<sup>23</sup> The opening paragraph of this piece describes how the Gods make their appearance in the New Realm at the last day. Then immediately follows an extended reference to the portions of light which still remain closely commingled with darkness. As the text itself is not available, we must depend upon the published version, even if some points remain unclear. So far as can be gathered, this Fragment seems

<sup>20</sup> The word *bā* here certainly appears to mean "light," as derived from the common root Av. *bā-*, Skt. *bhā-* "to shine." It is so taken also by Müller (Mü. *Handschriften-Reise*, 2. p. 20), who translates by "Glanz." On the other hand, Bartholomae (*Zairueh*, p. 71 n., cf. p. 154, 220) renders, "exinde deus advenietur"; while Salemann (*Manichaica*, 3-4, p. 36) ultimately decided to regard *bā* as a "praeverb." It might be hazardous to compare the phrase *ā-šā bā āstāšā[d]* in our text with the fragmentary *ā-šāndor bā āstāšā* in S. 10 a, 5 (Salemann, *op. cit.*, p. 14). [Professor Jackson later changed his opinion regarding *bā* and adopted that of Salemann. In a study of Fragment T III 260 (a text published by Andreas-Henning, *Mitteliranische Manichaica aus Chinesisch-Turkestan I*, Berlin, 1932), on which he was working at the time of his death, he had tentatively rendered this passage, M. 470 recto, lines 3-11, as follows: "And that strength and power(?) of this light and goodness of the gods, which in earth's and heaven's entire quarters and (in) āz and the demons remained smitten and exhausted(?)—that (strength) through this Gehenna will come forth (*bā*) therefrom, [and] will become pure and to the sun and moon will ascend, and it will become a god in the likeness of Ōhrmīzd the divinity."—C. J. O.]

<sup>21</sup> From the *Fihrist* (cf. Flügel, p. 100) we may recall that, in the case of the Elect, the luminous force in the dead body is drawn out, "rises to the sun and becomes a god." So I believe TPh, *gārd bāzāš* is here to be interpreted.

<sup>22</sup> Mü. *HR.* 2. p. 20, top and mid.

<sup>23</sup> See Reitzenstein, *Das Mand. Buch*, pp. 26-27. [The complete text of M. 2, with a revised translation and notes, has since appeared in Andreas-Henning, *Mitteliranische Manichaica III* (Berlin, 1934), pp. 4-8.—C. J. O.]

to distinguish some portions of light that are unredeemable, as differentiated from that fivefold light lost by Ōhrmēd (Primal Man) in the conflict with darkness, which luminous element is to be recovered. The particular allusions in this Turfan Fragment ("Northern dialect") which bear upon these light-particles in question are here given, the content of the intervening sentences being indicated in the notes.

M. 2 recto, col. 1. "That element of light (Lichtkraft), which is so mixed with darkness that it cannot be separated, has nothing of kindred essence with it."<sup>64</sup> For that reason, it had considered(?) from the beginning, 'What is my creation?' And it was on this account not evoked by them (the Gods?) as of like origin with them. . . .<sup>65</sup> It had the knowledge, 'The original mixture with darkness is in my case a damage and burden so hard to overcome that I cannot be released (lit. unclothed) and separated from darkness' . . .<sup>66</sup> But the Gods will not be sorrowful on account of that little light, which is mixed with the darkness and cannot be separated (therefrom), because sorrow is not characteristic of them. They accordingly remain happy in mood, by reason of the happiness and joy which is theirs by nature, and also because Alramēn, together with Hostility (Feindseligkeit — Āz?) has been taken and bound."<sup>67</sup>

This latter Fragment differs in one respect from the preceding which implied, as Mānī himself must have taught, that all the light was finally liberated. As already stated, the present passage makes

<sup>64</sup> Apparently, of like nature with the light in the New Realm, as may be inferred from the paragraph which directly precedes this.

<sup>65</sup> The few lines which are indicated as omitted here in translation, relate to the fivefold light of Ōhrmēd (Primal Man), which by his promise is to be released. In their brief content they are to be compared with a fuller passage in the Petrograd Fragment S. 9 a, 31-34; b, 1-36. [See now *Jn. Researches*, pp. 70-81.] Only the text of the petition by the five luminous elements and Ōhrmēd's promise in M. 2 are thus far printed, in Müller's *Hermes-Stelle*, SPAW 51. 1081.

<sup>66</sup> The lines here omitted in translation refer to the faith which the fivefold light elements of Ōhrmēd have of their own rescue, which the God brings to pass.

<sup>67</sup> Translated after the German version by Andreas, in Reitzenstein, *Das Mand. Buch*, pp. 26-27.

a distinction by conceding that "a small portion of light" failed utterly of release; its foredoomed character appears to be indicated. It may therefore be interesting to speculate whether this latter difference of view may not be due to an early sectarian divergence regarding Mānī's original tenet. In the light of such a suggestion we may recall a statement in an-Nadīm's *Fihrist* (written 987-988 A.D.) which says that the sect of "the Māsīya among the Manichaeans assert that some of the light is still left behind in the darkness."<sup>28</sup> This tinge, at least in the attribution by St. Augustine (*Contra Faustum*, 2.5), appears in the words of Faustus concerning "some small particles of Christ's good and divine nature" which are doomed to "the horrid globular mass of darkness."<sup>29</sup> But enough testimony has been brought forward to prove how fully recognized was Mānī's general dogma concerning a residue of light to be finally disposed of.



<sup>28</sup> See Flügel, p. 60; and id. p. 242 n. 147; likewise Kessler, p. 303.

<sup>29</sup> See quotation above, p. 228.



## THE PERSONALITY OF MĀNĪ, THE FOUNDER OF MANICHAISM

† A. V. WILLIAMS JACKSON  
COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY

[PRELIMINARY NOTE.—Professor Jackson presented this paper by title at the meeting of the American Philological Association, December 27-29, 1928 but it was not published in the *Transactions*, being reserved for "his forthcoming book on Manichaeism," as stated in *TAPA* 59 (1928), p. iv n. 2.—C. J. O.]

IT IS ALWAYS interesting to have some idea of the personality of a famous religious leader, and the purpose of this paper is to throw possible light upon that of Mānī, the founder of Manichaeism in the third century of the Christian era.

With regard to portraiture it is thought that we may perhaps have a representation of Mānī's head in profile on some coins from Characene in southern Mesopotamia, which bear Mandaeen legends (one presumed to read "Mānī the appointed of Mithra"), and apparently on a couple of coins of the Kushān king Pērōz (3d cent. A. D.), who was favorably disposed towards Manichaeism.<sup>1</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> Regarding the Characene coins see the interesting article by M. Lidzbarski, "Die Münzen der Characene," in *Zt. f.ŕ Numismatik* (1922) 33, 82-96 (with Plates), cf. especially pp. 91-96. In a postscript (p. 96) Lidzbarski refers to an article in *The London Numismatic Chronicle*, 1920, part 2, pp. 122-140, by J. de Morgan, Allotte de la Fuye, and G. F. Hill, "Essai de lecture des légendes sémitiques des monnaies characéniennes," dealing with the same coins. Lidzbarski observes that de la Fuye reads the name on the reverse of a special coin as "Manu," instead of "Mani," and sees in it the name of an unknown man. [Addendum. After consulting the article in *The London Numismatic Chronicle*, Professor Jackson noted: "I feel that the legend here is to be read MANI.ASTAD.AI.MIHRA, 'Mānī the appointed of Mithra.' The form AI = 'i is the familiar 'i, 'of.' The reading and interpretation of *astād* 'appointed' are assured; both Andrus and Lidzbarski (*op. cit.*, p. 92) reject the idea of *ustād* 'Meister.' For the meaning of *astād*, compare the Avestan root *ā-stā* 'anstellen, (amtlich) bestellen,' Bartholomae, *AbWb.* 1502. We know well the high prestige of Mithra in Manichaeism, including the Turfan Fragments, in one of which (M. 38.1.2 = Müller, *Handschriften-Essai*, 2, p. 77) he is invoked just before Jesus and Mānī.")

For the name "Mānī" on the reverse side of two Kushān coins of Pērōz, consult O. G. von Wesendonk, "Zum Ursprung des Manichaeismus," in *Ephemerides Orientales*, No. 30, p. 3, September, 1926, publ. by Otto Harrassowitz, Leipzig; also idem, *Urmensch und Seele*, p. 116, Hannover, 1924; he refers likewise to Freiman, in *Rocznik Orjent.* vol. 2 (not available).

head on the reproductions of these coins faces to the right and is crowned by rich wavy hair that flows down to the back of the neck; the beard is somewhat pointed, and the straight nose rather handsome. Both Lidzbarski and Wessendonk, and I believe Herzfeld likewise, are inclined to accept the portrait as representing the founder of Manichaeism. I am not enough of a numismatist to give an opinion, but judging from the evidence in favor of it, the attribution seems to be reasonable.

It has furthermore been suggested that we may possibly have a fanciful representation of Mānī on a fragment of a large mural painting which was brought back by A. von Le Coq from Khojo in the Turfan Oasis.<sup>2</sup> The painting, though much broken, portrays the figure of a man of tall stature, his head surrounded by a large halo, made with the sun and moon, the face here being wholly Mongolian in type; while behind him stands a group of figures, male and female, but all much smaller in size. The style of the picture is entirely East-Asiatic, as Le Coq points out, and he himself showed hesitation when he placed in parentheses beneath it, with a question mark, the sub-title "(Portrait des Mani?)." To Lidzbarski (*op. cit.*, p. 95) the attribution seemed very doubtful. While there appears to be no inherent reason against regarding the aureoled figure as a fanciful representation of Mānī, it may be merely the picture of some noted high-priest. Thus much concerning the question of the portraiture of Mānī.<sup>3</sup>

---

See furthermore, as important, the noted work by E. Herzfeld, *Paikuli*, I, 46-47, cf. pp. 41, 47, Berlin, 1924. Herzfeld is inclined to accept the reading "Mānī," which he says was first recognized by Markoff.

<sup>2</sup> See Le Coq, *Die buddhistische Spätantike in Mittelasien: Zweiter Teil, Die manichäische Miniaturen*, Plate 1a, and cf. Text p. 34-36, Berlin, 1923. Cf. also the small reproductions in F. C. Burkitt, *The Religion of the Manichees*, Cambridge, 1925, facing pp. 1 and 82.

<sup>3</sup> Designedly I refrain from hazarding a suggestion that we might perhaps seek a representation of Mānī in a small Turfan painting (LeCoq, *op. cit.*, Plate 8h, miniature d, cf. Text p. 61). It represents a human pair, young man and woman, partly naked and both abashed at having been discovered together. Before them threateningly stands a stern person, with staff in the right hand and with the first finger of the left hand raised in reprimand of their guilty act. This menacing chastiser wears a long red garment or coat, with striped undersleeve of a greenish blue hue and belt to match, but the lower part of the figure has been destroyed. While we know Mānī's doctrines and commandments on the subject, we have no story or legend preserved which would help to identify him as represented in the scene. We may therefore best explain the admonishing austere figure as

We may now present a curious description of Mānī's appearance and dress as given in the *Acta Archelai*, chap. 14 (12), by its Christian author, Hegemonius.\* The passage is familiar to every one interested in Manichaeism, but it is worth while to reproduce it here. The scene is laid in the house of the wealthy Marcellus. He and Bishop Archelaus had already listened to a brief exposition of Mānī's tenets given by his disciple Turbo before the arrival of the Master himself, who made a long journey in order to meet Marcellus and to engage in a disputation with Archelaus, the Christian bishop. The description of Mānī's appearance is quite vivid, and seemingly drawn from life or from tradition.

"On the selfsame day, moreover, Manes (Mānī) arrived, bringing along with him Elect youths and virgins, to the number of twenty-two in all.<sup>1</sup> And first of all he sought Turbo at the house of Marcellus, and when he did not find him there, he went in to pay his respects to Marcellus. On seeing him, Marcellus at first was struck with astonishment at the habiliments of his attire. For he wore a kind of shoe that is wont to be called 'trisole'<sup>2</sup> in common parlance, he had also a parti-colored cloak of a sky-blue<sup>3</sup> appearance as it

---

some ecclesiastical judge imposing upon the culprits the Manichaean sentence of reprobation in the case.

\* See the edition of the Latin text [the Greek being lost from here onward] by C. H. Beeson, *Hegemonius, Acta Archelai*, pp. 22-23, Leipzig, 1906; cf. also the English translation by S. D. F. Salmond, in *The Ante-Nicene Fathers*, 6, 186, New York, 1899 (American reprint of the Edinburgh edition).

<sup>1</sup> Salmond (*op. cit.*) notes that the *Codex Bohniensis* gives the number as *duodecim* "twelve."

<sup>2</sup> Thus the text of Beeson, who records the manuscript variants *quadrisole* C, *tersole* M. Salmond, following the former reading, translates as "quadrisole." The allusion is to the sole of the shoe having three or four lifts of leather. This style of footgear (though not thus exaggerated) may perhaps be illustrated from the shoes in the large broken statue of the Sassanian King Shāhpūr I, near Nakeh-i Shapur, in southern Persia; see the drawings by Texier, C. F. M. Texier, *Description de l'Arménie, la Perse, et la Mésopotamie*, Vol. 2, Planches 149, 150, the former of which is reproduced in K. D. Kiash, *Ancient Persian Sculptures*, pp. 60-62, Bombay, 1889. It would probably be fanciful to see, in this allusion to the thickness of Mānī's sole, something relating to the tradition about his being lame, which is discussed below, but the text itself here makes no such mention.

<sup>3</sup> For this meaning of *aërinus* as denoting a bluish color, see the *Thesaurus Linguae Latinae*, Vol. 1, col. 1081, lines 59-60, cf. also *aërinus*, col. 1082.

were; in his hand he held a very stout staff of ebony wood; he carried a Babylonian \* book under his left arm; he also had his legs covered with trousers, each of a different color, the one being red, the other a sort of leek-green color; and his countenance was like that of an elderly Persian physician and war-lord."<sup>9</sup>

Certainly the bizarre color-scheme and fantastic effect of this description lend an element of grotesqueness, which it was probably not without intention to emphasize. In the delineation, however, there may be preserved certain features of truth. With all his religious austerity, Mānī, famed also as a painter and artistic calligrapher (see below), possessed an aesthetic sense for color, as we may judge from the Manichaean miniatures and illuminated manuscript Fragments found in Turfan. The *Acta*, it will be observed, makes no allusion to any physical defect in Mānī, nor do other Christian writers. This leads us to a discussion of the tradition of Mānī's lameness.

Tradition has it that Mānī was lame, according to two passages in the *Fihrist* of an-Nadīm (writing in 987 A. D.). This Arab compiler, whose general accuracy in recording from Manichaean sources is fully recognized, states in the first of these allusions, descriptive of Mānī's boyhood, that "he suffered from a crooked leg" (*aḥnaf ar-rijl*).<sup>10</sup> In a second passage, much farther on, an-Nadīm reverts again to Mānī's lameness in even more precise terms: "some say he was crooked in both legs; it is also said (only) the right leg."<sup>11</sup>

75 ff., with numerous quotations; also Du Cange, *Gloss. med. et infimae Latinitatis*, Vol. 1, p. 119. The kindred adjective *civius* in the Vulgate, *Euth.* 1.6; 8.15, is rendered by "sky coloured" in the Douai Version, and by "blue" in the Authorized Version. Perhaps simply "blue" would be a better translation above, since the Persian color for clothing is generally a dark blue, although a lightish blue is also (if somewhat less frequently) worn.

\* Recall that Mānī, though a Persian by blood, was born in Babylonia.

<sup>9</sup> For *artifex* = *medicus*, see *Thesaurus*, Vol. 2, col. 608, lines 58-76; cf. also Beeson, *op. cit.*, p. 115, 3, with references to other occurrences in the *Acta*.

<sup>10</sup> See Flügel, *Mānī* (1862) p. 83, lines 7-8, "Mit an einem einwärtsge-drehten Beine"; *ibid.*, text p. 49, line 6 = large edition, *Fihrist*, p. 328, 1.

<sup>11</sup> See Flügel, *op. cit.*, *tz.*, p. 100 top, with n. 282, and text p. 69, lines 10-11; cf. *idem*, large ed. *Fihrist*, p. 335, 5. For help in checking up ren-

The explicitness of these two traditional statements seems convincing, despite the attempt of Kessler, *Mani* (1889), pp. 332-333, cf. also p. 383 n. 4, to explain them otherwise. Kessler (p. 333) sought to interpret the Arabic phrase through the medium of a Syriac form, and translates "er war der verruchteste der Männer," repeating in similar manner (p. 383) "dass er der grösste Irrgläubige (Ketzer) unter den Menschen gewesen sei." He did, however, acknowledge (p. 333 mid.) that in this second passage an-Nadīm does refer definitely to the right foot, but he maintains that this was due to the continuation of an old misunderstanding ("Missverständnis"). The incorrectness of Kessler's view was promptly pointed out by Nöldeke, in *ZDMG* (1889) 43. 347, who showed that the proposed rendering and interpretation had no value. With Nöldeke's judgment we may fully agree, and accept an-Nadīm's statement that Mānī was lame in one or in both legs.

This fact leads me to an entirely new point, namely, to reconsider the meaning of the Pahlavi epithet *astak* or *zastak* (as it may be read), which is constantly applied to Mānī in a rather long passage in one of the Sasanian Pahlavi books that anathematize his teachings. The passage in question is found in the *Dēnkart*, 3. 200. 1-13, in a section relating to the so-called "Injunctions of Mānī," which I have translated with comments, in *JRAS* 1924, pp. 213-227.<sup>12</sup> In each successive paragraph the Zoroastrian priestly writer execrates Mānī as a "Fiend" (*druj*), always adding the opprobrious epithet referred to above, in whichever of the two ways the word may be transliterated and accordingly rendered.

I had previously (*op. cit.*, p. 218 n. 2) read and translated the opprobrious designation of Mānī as being *druj astak*, "the Fiend incarnate," giving reasons, which at that time seemed satisfactory, for deciphering the Phl. adjective as *astak* and thus rendering by "incarnate."<sup>13</sup> After studying the whole matter anew, however, my view has changed. I am now inclined to adopt the alternate transliteration (formerly rejected, *op. cit.*, p. 219 top) for the Fiend's epithet and to read it as *zastak*, lit. "broken," cf. NP. *zastan*

---

derings from the Arabic I was indebted to my assistant Dr. A. Yohannan (now deceased); later also for help from Dr. N. N. Martinovitch.

<sup>12</sup> [Reprinted, with some additions and a few slight changes, in Jackson, *Researches in Manichaeism*, pp. 203-217. See especially p. 209, where the "Postscript, 1930" adopts the view here set forth.—C. J. O.]

"to break" (cf. Av. root *zad-*), this attribute to be given in Mānī's case a more significant interpretation. In the light of what has been adduced above from the Fihrist, the Pahlavi epithet *zastak* throughout the Dēnkart passage means not simply "broken, broken down" or "wounded, sick, infirm,"<sup>12</sup> but is to be more precisely defined as meaning in this case "crippled." Thus the oft-repeated *draj zastak Mānī* is really "the crippled fiend Mānī"—in other words, that devil of a cripple Mānī. The Pahlavi Dēnkart would in this way lend new support to the twice-repeated statement in Arabic by an-Nadīm that Mānī was lame. Recall also the reference in the Acts to the "trisolet," as noted above (n. 6).

If this deduction be correct (as to me it seems), namely, that Mānī was somewhat crippled, it might help towards throwing further light upon his personality, his imaginative and refined nature. We know, of course, that Mānī had the exalted fervor of a religious leader and founder of a faith that was once a rival of Christianity and Zoroastrianism, opposition from which latter led him to suffer a martyr's death as an adjudged heretic. Throughout in his make-up, especially if born with a physical weakness, we can see a peculiar idealism and refinement, combined with rare vision. It has always been recognized that he had a poetic imagination as shown in his cosmogonic fantasies, and also in a few hymnic stanzas that have been preserved. Tradition assigns to him exquisite skill as an artist, so that his name became in Persia a synonym for painter.<sup>13</sup> His master hand as an adapter of a revised alphabet<sup>14</sup> and a presumed pioneer in calligraphy—the latter art being especially cultivated by his followers—all bespeak a highly ideal and creative mind. He cared particularly for music and allowed to his followers the enjoyment of perfumes as something refined. It would not be hard to guess that Mānī's lameness, apparently congenital, may have contributed to his sensitive and spiritual nature, which was above all religiously so creative. *Voilà tout!*

<sup>12</sup> See West, *SBE*, 37. 278, and cf. J. N. Unvala, in *Bull. School of Or. Studies*, 2. 648 note 6 (lines 1-2), London, 1923.

<sup>13</sup> Full references to Mānī as a painter and to his skill in drawing an absolutely straight line or a perfect circle have been collected, but are reserved for treatment elsewhere. So likewise are further details as to the items mentioned below.

<sup>14</sup> For remarks on Mānī's reformed script see H. H. Schaefer, *Urform u. Fortbildungen des manichäischen Systems*, pp. 147-160, Leipzig, 1927.



## BIBLIOGRAPHY OF A. V. WILLIAMS JACKSON

GEORGE C. O. HAAS

INSTITUTE OF HYPERPHYSICAL RESEARCH, NEW YORK

THE PRODUCTIVE scholarly activity of Professor A. V. Williams Jackson extended over half a century, from 1885 to 1936, and the number of individual books and articles published by him, including articles contributed to encyclopedias, exceeds 350. Despite his wide range of interests, Iranian studies always occupied the position of predominance: Persia, its antiquities, its literature, and its religions, constituted the principal theme throughout, with Manichaeism coming to the fore as a special subject of interest toward the last.

The chief portion of the present bibliography, the range and completeness of which are due to Dr. Jackson's own suggestions and memoranda, was compiled in 1925 and 1926 with a view to inclusion as an appendix in his *Zoroastrian Studies* (originally announced under the title *Zoroastrianism: Studies Old and New*),<sup>1</sup> but the pressure of other tasks prevented its completion and publication at that time. Revised and completed, it is now presented as a last tribute to Professor Jackson from a devoted former pupil.

It seems eminently fitting to make mention here of two publications relating to Dr. Jackson, both of which he valued highly and which he would be loath to see pass into complete oblivion.

In 1900 there was published on the campus of Columbia University, under the title *Imaginary Lectures*, a charming little volume which reprinted, in beautiful format and typography, a number of clever skits on Columbia personages which had appeared serially in the student monthly *The Morningside*. The seventh imaginary lecture was ascribed to Professor Jackson and dealt with the drama and the New York stage in a monologue of delicious absurdity.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See the announcement of Volume 12 of the Columbia University Indo-Iranian Series at the end of Pavry's *The Zoroastrian Doctrine of a Future Life*, New York, 1926, where the proposed inclusion of the bibliography is mentioned.

<sup>2</sup> *Imaginary Lectures, Reported by Walter Satyr, Anne Langdrew, and Walter Lavish Stander*, . . . , New York, 1900, pp. 57-63. The lecture, with the picture by Huger Elliott, originally appeared in *The Morningside*, 4, 147-150, in May 1899.



Prefixed to it we find this memorable note by the audacious 'reporter':

Words, mere words, are quite inadequate to do justice here; all the arts together would fail in endeavoring to give perfect expression to a style of lecturing that is as original and inimitable as it is winsome and delightful. Imagine the lecture chanted in sweet, high treble, with that "dying fall" the Duke would fain have heard again,<sup>3</sup> or loosed on the light wings of a melting melody, half laughter and half sigh, and you will come most near to that effect which must remain the joy and the despair of the imitator forever.

In more serious vein are the verses addressed to Professor Jackson a few years earlier by his colleague, the poet and essayist George Edward Woodberry. Written at the poet's home in Beverly, Mass., on September 30, 1895, they appeared in the *Century Magazine* in January of the following year.<sup>4</sup> Especially characteristic are the opening lines and a few near the end.

My Peralan, leave the Eternal Fire,  
And leave to read the scented scroll,  
Pâhlavi, Pali; nor desire  
Always that glory to unroll,  
Your bright Avesta; day and night  
God did divide with sun and star  
To show that equal in his sight  
Labor and rest, in mortals, are.<sup>5</sup>

\* \* \* \*

Then shall you go from out the gold  
October to your Star-leaved Book,  
And those gray manuscripts unrolled  
Whereon the learned Parsons look,  
And they forget these changing lights  
Of morn and even, here below;  
To eyes like yours, how must our Heights<sup>6</sup>  
Like God's eternal sunrise show!

<sup>3</sup> An allusion to the first lines of Shakespeare's *Twelfth Night*.—G. C. O. H.

<sup>4</sup> To A. V. Williams Jackson . . . on his return from abroad," *Century Magazine*, 51, 449.

<sup>5</sup> This admonition alludes to Dr. Jackson's habit of working in his study, night after night, until the early hours of the morning.—G. C. O. H.

<sup>6</sup> The reference is to Morningside Heights, where Columbia University had acquired its present site and where the first group of buildings was then being erected.—G. C. O. H.

## ABBREVIATIONS

*AJP* = American Journal of Philology.

*IF* = Indogermanische Forschungen.

*JAOS* = Journal of the American Oriental Society.

*JRAS* = Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society.

*PAPA* = Proceedings of the American Philological Association.

*TAPA* = Transactions of the American Philological Association.

## BOOKS AND ARTICLES

- On some Avestan superstitions and their parallels elsewhere. *JAOS* 13, Proc. pp. lix-lxi (1885).
- The style of Tibullus. New York, 1886. 27 sheets. [Manuscript.]  
Dissertation submitted for the degree of Ph.D. in Columbia University. Preserved at the University in the Columbian collection.
- On the ancient Persians' abhorrence of falsehood, illustrated from the Avesta. *JAOS* 13, Proc. pp. cii-ciii (1886).
- On Avestan similes: I. Similes from the realm of Nature. *JAOS* 13, Proc. pp. cxxxviii-cxi (1886).
- On Avestan similes: II. Similes from the animal world. *JAOS* 13, Proc. pp. cxxxv-cxxxvi (1887).
- The Afrigūn Rapithwin of the Avesta, translated with comments. *JAOS* 13, Proc. pp. cxxxvii-cxci (1887).
- On the significance of the Gāthās in the Avesta. Yasna 55. *JAOS* 13, Proc. pp. cccv-cxcv (1887).
- A HYMN OF ZOROASTER: YASNA 31, TRANSLATED WITH COMMENTS. Stuttgart: W. Kohlhammer, 1888. viii + 82 pages.
- A new reference in the Avesta to 'the Life-book' hereafter. *JAOS* 14, Proc. pp. xx-xxi (1888).
- On Avesta *f* = original *p*. *AJP* 10.86 (April 1889).
- On the 'Circle of Sovereignty' in the Avesta. *JAOS* 14, Proc. pp. cxxiii-cxxiv (1889).
- Avesta grammatical jottings. *JAOS* 14, Proc. pp. cxxiv-cxxvi (1889).
- On the sense of color in the Avesta. *JAOS* 14, Proc. pp. cxxii-cxxv (1889).
- Avestan grammatical notes. *JAOS* 14, Proc. pp. cix-cxvi (1889).
- Avesta *peiri-ōštrōuš* (sic), *nošōuš*, *ōštrōuš*. *AJP* 10.346-347 (Oct. 1889).
- THE AVESTAN ALPHABET AND ITS TRANSCRIPTION. With appendices. Stuttgart: W. Kohlhammer, 1890. 36 pages.
- Avesta contributions. *AJP* 11.87-89 (April 1890).
- On Skt. *Aradd'cakṣus*, RV. x. 95. 6. *JAOS* 15, Proc. pp. iv-v (1890).
- On Avestan *ayōkēhusta* 'molten metal,' *ayōh*, and its significance in the Gāthās. *JAOS* 15, Proc. pp. lviii-lxi (1890).
- Miscellaneous Avestan notes. *JAOS* 15, Proc. pp. lxi-lxii (1890).
- The genitive singular of *n*-nouns in the Avesta: a possible question of accent. *Beiträge zur Kunde der Indogermanischen Sprachen*, ed. Bezzenberger, 17. 146-152 (Feb. 1891).

Avestan etymologies. I. *AJP* 12. 67-69 (April 1891).

Where was Zoroaster's native place? *JAOS* 15. 221-232 (1891).

AN AVESTA GRAMMAR IN COMPARISON WITH SANSKRIT. Part I: Phonology, inflection, word-formation, with an introduction on the Avesta. Stuttgart: W. Kohlhammer, 1892. xlviii + 273 pages.

An anastatic reprint was issued in 1912.—48 pages of Part II, 'Sketch of the syntax,' were set up and printed, but this part was never completed or published. A copy of it is in the possession of the compiler of this bibliography.

Notes on Zoroaster and the Zartusht-Nômah. *JAOS* 15, Proc. p. clxxx (1892).

Brief Avestan notes. *JAOS* 15, Proc. pp. clxxx-clxxxii (1892).

AVESTA READER. FIRST SERIES: EASIER TEXTS, NOTES, AND VOCABULARY. Stuttgart: W. Kohlhammer, 1893. viii + 112 pages.

This selection of texts was reprinted by Darab Dastur Peshotan Sanjana under the title *The Avesta Texts prescribed for the Previous Examination of the University of Bombay, 1895-1896*, Bombay, 1896. See his preface, page i.

The doctrine of the resurrection among the ancient Persians. *JAOS* 16, Proc. pp. xxxviii-xxxix (1893).

Sanskrit-Avestan notes. *JAOS* 16, Proc. pp. xxxix-xli (1893).

Avesta, the Bible of Zoroaster. *The Biblical World*, (n. s.) 1. 420-431 (June 1893).

How plays were presented in mediæval England. *The Greenburgh Register* (Dobbs Ferry, N. Y.), Feb. 1894.

Herodotus vii. 61, or the arms of the ancient Persians illustrated from Iranian sources. In *Classical Studies in Honour of Henry Drisler*, New York, 1894, pp. 95-123.

Something about Parai names. *The Columbia Literary Monthly* (N. Y.), 2. 353-358 (May 1894).

Notes on Zoroaster and the Avesta. *JAOS* 16, Proc. pp. cxxvi-cxxix (1894).

1. Allusion to Zoroaster in the Sauria Edda preface.—2. Plutarch's Artaxerxes, ch. iii. 1-10.

The Sanskrit root *math-*, *math-* in Avestan. *JAOS* 16, Proc. p. clv (1894).

Hamlet's student home. *The Columbia Spectator* (N. Y.), 35. 222 (Dec. 20, 1894).

The Sanskrit root *math-* in Avestan. *JAOS* 16, Proc. p. cxxviii (1895).

Two ancient Persian names in Greek 'Araparns and Παρθας. *TAPA* 26 (1895), Proc. pp. xlix-l (June 1895).

Weighing the soul in the balance after death, an Indian as well as Iranian idea. *Actes du Dixième Congrès International des Orientalistes (Session de Genève, 1894)*, part 2, Leiden, 1895, pp. 65-74.

The Persian New Year's. *The Columbia Spectator* (N. Y.), 37. 90 (Dec. 18, 1895).

Gambling in ancient India. *The Columbia Literary Monthly* (N. Y.), 4. 177-181 (Feb. 1896).

Zoroaster's successor in the pontifical office, according to Mas'udî. In *Mélanges Charles de Harlez*, Leiden, 1896, pp. 138-139.

Translation into English of the Prolegomena to K. F. Geldner's edition of the Avesta, Stuttgart, 1896, pp. i-iv.

The ancient Persian doctrine of a future life. *The Biblical World*, (n. s.) 8, 149-163 (Aug. 1896).

Reprinted in revised form in 1922; see below.

The literature of Persia. In *Progress*, issued monthly by the University Association (Chicago), vol. 2, no. 1, pp. 34-55 (Sept. 1896).

The moral and ethical teachings of the ancient Zoroastrian religion. *International Journal of Ethics* (Philadelphia), 7, 55-62 (Oct. 1896).

Reprinted in revised form in 1927; see below.

On the date of Zoroaster. *JAOS* 17, 1-22 (Nov. 1896).

An abstract appeared under the title 'On the question of the date of Zoroaster' in *JAOS* 16, Proc. pp. cccxvii-cccxxviii (1895).

On Mahā-Bharata iii. 142. 35-45, an echo of an old Hindu-Persian legend. *JAOS* 17, 185-187 (Nov. 1896).

On the iterative optative in Avestan. *JAOS* 17, 187-188 (Nov. 1896).

Children on the stage in the Sanskrit drama. *TAPA* 27 (1896), Proc. pp. v-vi (1897).

Children on the stage in the ancient Hindū drama. *The Looker-On* (N. Y.), 4, 509-510 (June 1897).

Translation of several Hindu and Persian selections in *Stories from the Classic Literature of Many Nations*, ed. Bertha Palmer, New York, 1898, pp. 68-82, 91-98.

An Avestan word-arrangement, or a supplement to Strachan's rule for Indogermanic pro. *Zeitschrift für Vergleichende Sprachforschung*, 36, 149-151 (1898).

Thy heart. (From the Sanskrit.) [Poem of 8 lines.] *The Cosmopolitan*, 25, 457 (Aug. 1898).

Certain dramatic elements in Sanskrit plays, with parallels in the English drama. First series. *AJP* 19, 241-254 (Oct. 1898).

1. Notes on the use of a play within a play on the Sanskrit stage.—
  2. Restoration of the dead to life, employed as a dramatic element.—
  3. Scenes of intoxication on the stage as a humorous device.—
  4. The use of letters and epistolary correspondence in Kālidāsa's plays.—
- [No. 1 was reprinted in the translation of Harsha's *Priyadarśikā*, 1923, pp. cv-xli.]

A brief note on the Amshaspands, or a contribution to Zoroastrian angelology. *Archiv für Religionswissenschaft*, 1, 363-366 (1898).

Disguising on the stage as a dramatic device in Sanskrit plays. *PAPA* 29 (1898), pp. xviii-xix.

ZOROASTER, THE PROPHET OF ANCIENT IRAN. New York: The Columbia University Press (The Macmillan Company, agents), 1899. (Copyright 1898.) xxiii + 314 pages, with 3 plates and a map of Persia.

Reprinted in 1901, 1919, and 1928. A fifth printing is contemplated.

Cupid's fishing pond.—From the Sanskrit. [Poem of 8 lines.] *The Cosmopolitan*, 26, 276 (Jan. 1899).

Ormazd, or the ancient Persian idea of God. *The Monist* (Chicago), 9, 161-178 (Jan. 1899).

Indo-Iranian contributions. *JAOI* 20, 54-57 (March 1899).

Time analysis of Sanskrit plays. I. The dramas of Kālidāsa. *JAOI* 20, 341-359 (Dec. 1899).

Zoroaster: the Mugian priest. [Illustrated.] *The Cosmopolitan*, 28, 349-357 (Jan. 1900).

Notes on ancient Persian cosmology. [Abstract.] *PAPA* 30, p. ix (1900).

The dice: verses suggested by a Persian anecdote. *The Columbia Literary Monthly* (N. Y.), 8, 293-294 (June 1900).

A new Zaratoshī Namah: or an account of the life of Zoroaster, the prophet; being a translation of Prof. A. V. Williams Jackson's "Zoroaster, the Prophet of Iran," with explanatory notes by the translator Palanji Barjorji Desai. Bombay, 1900, 29 + 228 pages.

Also has a title in Gujarati: *Navud Zartoshī namah*.—A second edition, with title-page in Gujarati only, was published in Bombay in the same year.

Some Avestan lexical and grammatical notes. In *The K. E. Cassa Memorial Volume: Essays on Iranian Subjects*, Bombay, 1900, pp. 130-133.

1. Note on two Av. dvandva duals.—2. *Fragn. Farhang* 17.—3. *Fragn. Farhang* 24.—4. *Fragn. Tahm.* 65, *madāi mastema*.—5. *Fragn. Tahm.* 31, *vañkaresta*.—6. Notes on Yasna XI, 1-3.

Time analysis of Sanskrit plays. Second series. The dramas of Harsha. *JAOI* 21, 88-108 (Jan. 1901).

The religion of the Achaemenian kings. First series. The religion according to the inscriptions. With an appendix by Dr. Louis H. Gray. *JAOI* 21, 160-184 (Jan. 1901).

A special visit to a Parsi tower of silence. *The Nation* (N. Y.), 72, 440-450 (June 6, 1901).

Printed also in *The Evening Post* (N. Y.), June 8, 1901, p. 16.

Sketch of a visit to India. [Letter in] *Columbia University Quarterly*, 3, 385-389 (Sept. 1901).

Into the Khyber Pass. *Collier's Weekly*, vol. 28, no. 8, page 5 (Nov. 23, 1901).

Notes from India.—Letters to the Corresponding Secretary. *JAOI* 22, 321-332 (Dec. 1901).

Some suggestions for studying Shakspeare. *The Veltin School* (N. Y.), anniversary number, 1902, pp. 17-20.

Special introduction to *The Dabistān, or School of Manners . . .*, translated from the original Persian by David Shea and Anthony Troyer (Universal Classics Library), Washington and London (1902; copy-right 1901).

Reissued by another publisher, New York, 1936.

Notes from India, second series.—A visit to Ujjain.—Bhastrihari's cave.—Legends of King Vikrama.—Letters to the Corresponding Secretary. [With illustrations.] *JAOI* 23, 307-317 (Feb. 1902).

- Football in Shakespeare's day. *The Columbia Literary Monthly* (N. Y.), 11. 179-181 (March 1903).
- Benares, the sacred city of the Hindus: its temples, its holy river, and its burning ghats of the dead. [Illustrated.] *The Traveller* (N. Y.), 3. 22-26 (1903).
- By caravan and cavalcade. *The Evening Post* (N. Y.), Oct. 3, 1903, Saturday Supplement, p. 1.  
Reprinted in Chap. 10 of *Persia Past and Present*, pp. 108-114.
- The great Behistun rock and some results of a re-examination of the Old Persian inscriptions on it. *JAOS* 24. 77-95 (Oct. 1903).  
Reprinted, with some additions and minor corrections, in *Persia Past and Present*, as Chap. 14, pp. 186-212.
- DIE IRANISCHE RELIGION. In Geiger and Kuhn's *Grundriss der Iranischen Philologie*, vol. 2, 1896-1904, pp. 612-710 (Jan. 1904).  
A translation into German by Dr. Arthur F. J. Remy, of Columbia University, from the author's manuscript. For the English text see *Zoroastrian Studies*, 1928, below.—The first instalment, pp. 612-640, was issued in 1900.
- On Sanskrit I = Avestan d. *JAOS* 25. 175 (June 1904).
- Notes of a journey to Persia, I.—Letters to the Corresponding Secretary. *JAOS* 25. 176-184 (June 1904).
- The modern Zoroastrians of Persia. *The Homiletic Rev.* 48. 14-19 (July 1904).
- Light on a ruined shrine: the fire temple near Isfahan. *N. Y. Tribune*, Sept. 4, 1904, illustrated supplement, p. 10.
- Khshathra Vairya, one of the Zoroastrian archangels. In *Avesta, Poeticon, and Ancient Persian Studies in Honour of the late Ekame-ül-Ulama Dastur Peshotanji Behramji Sanjani*, first series, Strassburg and Leipzig, 1904, pp. 159-166 (1905).
- Avestan *zerištīgēn* curvato, Ya. 60. 7. *Ibid.* pp. 178-181.
- Bokhara the noble. [Illustrated.] *The Outlook*, 79. 319-326 (Feb. 4, 1905).
- The Magi in Marco Polo and the cities in Persia from which they came to worship the infant Christ. *JAOS* 26. 79-83 (July 1905).
- A visit to the great rock inscription of King Darius. *The Independent* (N. Y.), 29. 425-429 (Aug. 24, 1905).  
Reprinted in revised form in Chap. 14 of *Persia Past and Present*, pp. 186-196.
- Zoroastrianism and the resemblances between it and Christianity. *The Biblical World*, 27. 335-343 (May 1905).
- Textual notes on the Old Persian inscriptions. *JAOS* 27. 190-194 (Aug. 1905).
- A religion nearly three thousand years old: the so-called Persian fire-worshippers of Yazd. [Illustrated.] *The Century Magazine*, 72. 691-703 (Sept. 1906).
- PERSIA PAST AND PRESENT: A BOOK OF TRAVEL AND RESEARCH. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1906. xxxi + 471 pages, with over 200 illustrations and a map of Persia.

Some additional data on Zoroaster. In *Orientalische Studien Theodor Nöldeke zum siebenzigsten Geburtstag . . . gewidmet*, Göttingen, 1906, 2. 1031-1038.

1. Tradition of an archetype copy of the Avesta at Samarkand.—2. Isfandiar and Bactria.—3. Lohrasp builds Kain in Khorsan.—4. Viasasp and Zarir in Seistan.—5. Tur i Bratarush, the enemy of Zoroaster.—6. Zoroaster and the town of Amui.—7. Zoroaster from Muqan or Mughan.

Reprinted, with additions and some changes, in *Zoroastrian Studies*, New York, 1928, pp. 268-278.

An ancient fire-temple at Abarkuh near Yazd. Zartoshti, ed. B. T. Anklesaria (Bombay), 3. 240-249 (1275 A. Y.—1908).

Our interest in Persia and the study of her history, language, and literature. In *Publications of the Congress of Arts and Science at St. Louis*, Boston and New York, 1906 [publ. in 1907], 3. 357-366.

HISTORIC ACCOUNTS OF INDIA BY FOREIGN TRAVELLERS, CLASSIC, ORIENTAL, AND OCCIDENTAL, collected and arranged by A. V. Williams Jackson. Vol. 4 of *History of India*, London, The Grollier Society, n. d. (copyright 1907). [Actually publ. in New York.]

Some Persian references to Zoroaster and his religion. [In collaboration with Abraham Jönnhann.] *JAOS* 28. 183-188 (Sept. 1907).

On a Pahlavi bowl-inscription deciphered by the late E. W. West.—(Presented by A. V. Williams Jackson.) *JAOS* 28. 345-348 (Feb. 1908).

The native princes of India. *Munsey's Magazine*, 38. 774-783 (March 1908).

PHILOSOPHY: A lecture delivered at Columbia University in the series on science, philosophy and art, April 1, 1908. New York: The Columbia University Press, 1908. 30 pages. (Columbia University Lectures on Science, Philosophy and Art, 1907-1908, no. 21.)

A historical sketch of Raghā, the supposed home of Zoroaster's mother. In *Spiegel Memorial Volume*, Bombay, 1908, pp. 237-245.

Indo-Iranian notes. *IF* 25. 177-184 (1909).

A third journey to Persia, and the so-called fire temple at Baku. *Sasj Vartaman* (Evening News, Bombay), Sept. 13, 1910, page 4.

Brahmanism. In *The Unity of Religions: A Popular Discussion of Ancient and Modern Beliefs*, ed. J. H. Randall and J. G. Smith, New York, 1910, pp. 29-37.

The possible contribution of Oriental thought to present-day Christianity. [India and Persia.] In *Papers, Addresses, and Speeches of the Twenty-seventh Church Congress in the United States (1909)*, New York, 1910, pp. 96-105.

Notes on two passages in the Old Testament Apocrypha. In *Essays in Modern Theology and Related Subjects, published as a Testimonial to Dr. Charles A. Briggs*, New York, 1911, pp. 93-97.

1. A note on Ragau (Avestan Raghā, Old Persian Ragā) in Judith 1<sup>9</sup>, 16.—2. An Iranian parallel to the story of Bel and the Dragon.

The literature of India and Persia. In *Lectures on Literature*, New York, The Columbia University Press, 1911, pp. 43-66.

The Zoroastrian idea of archangels. [With a portrait of the author.] *The New Age: An Illustrated Monthly* (N. Y.), 14. 615-617 (June 1911).



- FROM CONSTANTINOPLE TO THE HOME OF OMAR KHAYYAM: TRAVELS IN TRANSCASPIA AND NORTHERN PERSIA FOR HISTORIC AND LITERARY RESEARCH. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1911. xxxiii + 317 pages, with over 200 illustrations and a map of Persia and Central Asia. A noble minaret of brick in Northern Persia. *The American Architect*, 101. 116 (Feb. 1912).
- The ancient Persian conception of salvation according to the Avesta, or Bible of Zoroaster. *Am. Journal of Theol.* 17. 195-205 (April 1913).
- Persian manuscripts. [On the Cochran collection in the Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York.] *The Nation* (N. Y.), 90. 627-628 (June 10, 1913).
- On a statue representing Zoroaster as one of the great lawgivers of the world. *Sanj Vartaman* (Bombay), Sept. 12, 1913, page 23.
- A CATALOGUE OF THE COLLECTION OF PERSIAN MANUSCRIPTS, INCLUDING ALSO SOME TURKISH AND ARABIC, PRESENTED TO THE METROPOLITAN MUSEUM OF ART, NEW YORK, BY ALEXANDER SMITH COCHRAN, prepared and edited by A. V. Williams Jackson . . . and Abraham Yahsuan . . . New York: Columbia University Press, 1914. xxv + 187 pages, 13 plates. (Columbia University Indo-Iranian Series, vol. 1.) Reprinted in January 1934.
- Notes on allusions to ancient India in Pahlavi literature and in Firdausi's *Shah-namah*. In *Festschrift Ernst Windisch* . . . *dargebracht*, Leipzig, 1914, pp. 209-212.
- Allusions in Pahlavi literature to the abomination of idol-worship. In *Sir Jamsetjee Jeejeebhoy Madressa Jubilee Volume: Papers on Indian Subjects*, Bombay, 1914, pp. 274-285.
- A Sasanian seal with a Pahlavi inscription. In *Aufsätze zur Kultur- und Sprachgeschichte, vornehmlich des Orients*, Ernst Kuhn . . . *gewidmet*, Breslau, 1916, pp. 215-216.
- The allegory of the moths and the flame, translated from the *Mantiq at-Tair* of Farid ad-Din 'Attar. *JAOS* 36. 345-347 (March 1917).
- Revised translations of Yasna 31 and of the inscription of Darius at Behistan, cols. 1 and 4. In *Sacred Books and Early Literature of the East*, ed. C. F. Horne, vol. 7, New York, n. d. (1917), pp. 16-21, 167-173.
- The etymology of some words in the Old Persian inscriptions. *JAOS* 38. 121-124 (April 1918).
- Notes on ancient Persian geography. [With a sketch map.] In *The Dastur Hoshang Memorial Volume*, Bombay, 1918, pp. 535-545.
- A visit to the Zoroastrians of Teheran. *Sanj Vartaman* (Bombay), Oct. 25, 1919, page 22.
- EARLY PERSIAN POETRY, FROM THE BEGINNINGS DOWN TO THE TIME OF FIRDÄUSI. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1920. xxii + 125 pages, 10 illustrations.
- To what place was King Jamshid's ancient fire-temple removed? *Sanj Vartaman* (Bombay), Sept. 10, 1920, page 5-16.
- The location of the Varnähg fire, the most ancient of the Zoroastrian fires. *JAOS* 41. 81-106 (April 1921).

Firdausi in a lyric vein. *Sanj Vartaman* (Bombay), Sept. 10, 1921, page 8-9.

A visit to the tomb of Bābā Tāhir at Hamadān. [With 2 illustrations.] In *A Volume of Oriental Studies presented to Professor E. G. Browne February 1922*, Cambridge, 1922, pp. 257-260.

The Persian dominions in Northern India down to the time of Alexander's invasion. Chapter 14 of *The Cambridge History of India*, vol. I, Cambridge (and New York), 1922, pp. 312-344.

The ancient Persian doctrine of a future life. In *Religion and the Future Life*, ed. E. Hershey Sneath, New York and Chicago, 1922, pp. 121-140.

Reproduces, with additions and changes, the article published under the same title in *The Biblical World*, Aug. 1898.

Foreword to Shigeru Araki's *Persian Literature* [a volume in Japanese], Tokyo, 1922, pages 1-3.

The tombs of the great Persian kings. *Columbia Alumni News*, 14, 270-271 (March 2, 1923).

Studies in Manichaeism. *JAOS* 43, 15-25 (June 1923).

1. Direct mentions of Zoroastrianism in the Manichaean Fragments.—2. Weighing the soul in the balance—a Manichaean idea from Zoroastrianism.—3. Reference to a life-account for the hereafter in Manichaeism.—4. A new allusion to the Zoroastrian *Spand Kunda*, *Kundag*, in Manichaean found in the Pahlavi books.

PRİYADARŚINĪ, A SANSKRIT DRAMA BY HARSHA, KING OF NORTHERN INDIA IN THE SEVENTH CENTURY A. D., translated into English by G. K. Nariman, A. V. Williams Jackson, and Charles J. Ogden, with an introduction and notes by the two latter, together with the text in transliteration. New York: Columbia University Press, 1923. cxi + 138 pages. (Columbia University Indo-Iranian Series, vol. 10.)

Contributions to the knowledge of Manichaeism. *JAOS* 44, 61-72 (March 1924).

1. Rāmrtākh as a designation of the Mother of Life.—2. The problematic 'Nahwahāh' as applied to the Mother of the Living in the Pihrist.—3. The Manichaean 'seals.'

The so-called Injunctions of Mani, translated from the Pahlavi of Denkart 3, 200. *JRAS* 1924, pp. 213-227 (April 1924).

The "Second Evocation" in the Manichaean system of cosmogony. *JRAS* Centenary Supplement, Oct. 1924, pp. 137-155.

A mausoleum erected in New York by a Parsi. *Sanj Vartaman* (Bombay), Sept. 9, 1925, pp. 14-15. [Illustrated.]

Issued also as a separate reprint, 8°, 7 pages.

The doctrine of metempsychosis in Manichaeism. *JAOS* 45, 246-268 (Oct. 1925).

Avesta unvātā and Old Persian vābādiēs. In *Indo-Iranian Studies . . . in Honour of Shams-ul-Ulema Dastur Darab Peshotan Sanjana*, London and Leipzig, 1925, pp. 17-20 (Feb. 1926).

The religious interest which Scistan has historically for Zoroastrians. *Sanj Vartaman* (Bombay), Sept. 9, 1926, pp. 29-30.

Reprinted, with some additions, in *Zoroastrian Studies*, 1928, pp. 279-286.

- Source of the Albigenian heresy. Chapter 32 in *An Outline of Christianity: The Story of Our Civilization*, New York, n. d. (1926), 2, 271-282 (London edition, 2, 249-259).
- An outline of Manichaeism and an account of its connection with Albigenian doctrine.
- On the Manichaean word *nāroš* in 'Turfan Pahlavi. *JAOS* 47, 193-197 (Sept. 1927).
- The ethics of Zoroastrianism. In *The Evolution of Ethics as revealed in the Great Religions*, ed. E. Hershey Sneath, New Haven Conn., 1927, pp. 143-155.
- Reprinted with additions and changes, from *International Journal of Ethics*, 7, 55-62 (October 1896).
- The "fifty-seven years" in the Zoroastrian doctrine of the resurrection. *JRAS* 1928, pp. 1-5 (Jan. 1928).
- ZOROASTRIAN STUDIES: THE IRANIAN RELIGION AND VARIOUS MONOGRAPHS. New York: Columbia University Press, 1929. xxxiii + 325 pages. (Columbia University Indo-Iranian Series, vol. 12.)
- Part I makes available, with many changes and additions, the English original work which appeared in a German translation, as 'Die Iranische Religion,' in the *Grundriss der Iranischen Philologie* in 1904. Part II deals with 'The Zoroastrian doctrine of the freedom of the will.' Part III comprises miscellaneous Zoroastrian studies.
- On Turfan Pahlavi *weysozdegtōčā*, as designating a Manichaean ceremonial offering. [With 1 plate.] *JAOS* 49, 34-39 (March 1929).
- The term *ročverōk* in a Turkish Manichaean fragment. *Language* 5, 97-99 (May 1929).
- Fundamentals of Zoroastrianism. *Appreciation* (London and N. Y.), vol. 1, no. 3, pp. 18-19 (July 1929).
- Three Indo-Iranian notes. In *Indian Studies in Honor of Charles Rockwell Lanman*, Cambridge, Mass., 1929, pp. 255-258.
1. A suggestion to connect Old Persian AG\**ṛ* [ ] with a Sanskrit word.—2. Turfan Pahlavi *dāšis*, a Sanskrit loan-word in the Manichaean fragments.—3. Can the word *sām* in a Turkish Manichaean hymn be of Indic origin?
- Tomb of the Moghul emperor Bābur in Afghanistan. [With a photograph and translation of the epitaph.] *Proc. of the Am. Philosophical Society*, 68, 195-205 (1929).
- Concerning the title "The Arvan Path." *The Arvan Path*, 1, 3-4 (Jan. 1930).
- On a passage in Bapa's Harṣacarita. *JAOS* 50, 129-131 (June 1930).
- A sketch of the Manichaean doctrine concerning the future life. [Presidential address, Am. Or. Soc.] *JAOS* 50, 177-198 (Sept. 1930).
- On an allusion to Māni in Dēnkart 9, 39, 13-16. In *Dr. Modi Memorial Volume: Papers on Indo-Iranian and Other Subjects*, Bombay, 1930, pp. 34-36.
- Voices that called Eastward ho! *Columbia University Quarterly*, 23, 151-158 (June 1931).
- Autobiographic reminiscences, with portrait of the author.
- Two notes on the Manichaean confession-prayer *š o' s t o' n y f t*. In *Studia Indo-Iranica: Ehrengabe für Wilhelm Geiger*, Leipzig, 1931, pp. 314-318.

- RESEARCHES IN MANICHAISM, WITH SPECIAL REFERENCE TO THE TURPAN FRAGMENTS. New York: Columbia University Press, 1932. xxxviii + 393 pages. (Columbia University Indo-Iranian Series, vol. 13.)
- The Manichaean Fragment S. 8 in Turfan Pahlavi: transliterated text, translation, and commentary. In *Oriental Studies in Honour of Cursetji Erachji Pavry*, ed. Jal Dastur Cursetji Pavry, London, 1933, pp. 163-171.
- The fourfold aspect of the Supreme Being in Manichaeism. *Indian Linguistics: Bulletin of the Linguistic Society of India* (Lahore), 5, 287-296 (1935).
- Traces of Biblical influence in the Turfan Pahlavi Fragment M. 173. *JAOS* 56, 198-207 (June 1936).

# ENCYCLOPEDIA ARTICLES

- In *The International Encyclopedia*, vols. 1 and 2, New York, 1892:  
'A,' 'Avesta.'
- In Johnson's *Universal Cyclopaedia*, new ed., New York, 1893-1896:  
New articles (signed): 'Afghan language and literature,' 'Armenian language and literature,' 'Avesta,' 'Avestan,' 'Baluchi,' 'Firdausi,' 'Groteland,' 'Iranian languages and literature,' 'Iranians,' 'Jamī,' 'Kurdish language,' 'Magi,' 'Mans,' 'Nizami,' 'Omar Khayyām,' 'Ormazd,' 'Ossetian,' 'Pahlavi,' 'Pamir dialects,' 'Persian language,' 'Psalms of Zoroaster,' 'Rūdagi,' 'Rūmi,' 'Rustam,' 'Seleucidae,' 'Towers of Silence,' 'Zoroaster.'
- Revisions of articles (signed): 'Anquetil du Perron,' 'Anvari,' 'Chardin, Sir John,' 'Georgian language and literature,' 'Hāfiz,' 'Isfahān,' 'Khosrū,' 'Mirkhond,' 'Mohl, Jules von,' 'Parsses,' 'Persian literature.'
- In *A Library of the World's Best Literature*, ed. C. D. Warner, New York, n. d. (1896-1897):  
'Alfred the Great,' 'Avesta,' 'Firdausi,' 'Hāfiz,' 'Jamī,' 'Jayadeva,' 'Kalidasa,' 'Nizami,' 'Jalāl-ad-dīn Rūmī,' 'Sa'di.'
- In *Harper's Dictionary of Classical Literature and Antiquities*, ed. H. T. Peck, New York, 1897:  
'Rhagae,' 'Zoroaster.'
- In *New International Encyclopedia*, New York, 1902-1903:  
Numerous articles; also editing of articles on Indo-Iranian subjects.
- In *Jewish Encyclopedia*, New York, 1902-1906:  
'Avesta,' 'Media,' 'Mure,' 'Persia,' 'Tehran,' 'Zoroastrianism.'
- In *A Cyclopedia of Education*, ed. Paul Monroe, vol. 4, New York, 1913:  
'Oriental studies' [in collaboration with Louis H. Gray], 'Persian education.'
- In *New International Encyclopedia*, 2d ed., New York, 1915-1916:  
New articles: 'Pasargadae,' 'Persepolis,' 'Persian art.'  
Revised articles: 'Indian art,' 'Old Persian,' 'Omar Khayyām,' 'Ormazd,' 'Pahlavi language and literature,' 'Pali,' 'Parsi,' 'Persian language,' 'Persian literature,' 'Persian mythology,' 'Tope.'
- In *Encyclopedia Americana*, revised ed., New York and Chicago, 1916-1919:  
'Avesta,' 'Hāfiz.'

- In *A Dictionary of Religion and Ethics*, ed. Shailer Mathews and G. B. Smith, New York, 1921:  
 'Gahara,' 'Manichaeism,' 'Mazdak,' 'Parisi,' 'Persia, religious of,' 'Sacred literatures: Pahlavi literature.'
- In *Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics*, ed. James Hastings, Edinburgh, 1908-1922:  
 'Afghanistan,' 'Ahrlman,' 'Amesha Spentas,' 'Architecture (Persian),' 'Art (Persian),' 'Ash-mounds (in Persia),' 'Avesta,' 'Breath,' 'Demons and spirits (Persian),' 'Images and idols (Persian),' 'Sun, moon and stars (Iranian).'

## REPORTS AND BIOGRAPHICAL AND OBITUARY NOTES

- Reports of meetings of the American Oriental Society. *IF*, Anzeiger, 2. 148-149 (1892); 3. 109-110 (1893); 4. 165-168 (1894); 5. 277-278 (1895); 7. 205-207 (1896); 8. 367-369 (1897).
- The bicentennial of Halle-Wittenberg. *The Critic* (N. Y.), 25. 146 (Sept. 1, 1894).
- The bicentenary of the University of Halle. *Educational Rev.* 8. 265-268 (Oct. 1894).
- A famous Persian scholar. [Obituary note on James Darmesteter.] *The Critic* (N. Y.), 25. 316 (Nov. 10, 1894).
- The late Professor Whitney's chair at Yale to be filled by an alumnus of Columbia [Prof. R. Washburn Hopkins]. *The Columbia Spectator* (N. Y.), 36. 41 (March 27, 1895).
- William Dwight Whitney and his influence upon American philological scholarship. *IF* 5, Anzeiger, pp. 275-277 (July 1895).
- Prof. Wilhelm Dörpfeld. [On his American lecture series.] *The Critic* (N. Y.), n. s. 28. 321-322 (Nov. 1895).
- Prof. Wilhelm Dörpfeld. *The Month in Literature, Art and Life* (N. Y.), 1. 55-57 (Jan. 1897).
- International Congress of Orientalists [1st Paris]. *The Nation* (N. Y.), 65. 258 (Sept. 30, 1897).
- The International Congress of Orientalists at Paris, September 5-12, 1897. *IF* 9, Anzeiger, pp. 164-169 (July 1898).
- Max Müller and his work. *The Forum*, 30. 620-629 (Jan. 1901).
- The Chinese chair as a new branch of Oriental study. *Columbia University Quarterly*, 4. 144-146 (March 1902).
- The Thirteenth International Congress of Orientalists at Hamburg. *East and West: A Monthly Review* (Bombay), 1. 1375-1378 (Nov. 1902).
- West, Edward William (1824-1905), Oriental scholar. In *Dictionary of National Biography*, 2d supplement, 3. 633-634, London, 1912.
- A French savant brings Buddhist lore. [On Prof. Alfred Foucher.] *Columbia Alumni News*, 7. 800-801 (April 7, 1913).
- Calvin Thomas. [Obituary note.] *Columbia Alumni News*, 11. 125-126 (Dec. 12, 1919).
- John Kendrick Bangs, '83, '85L. [Obituary note.] *Columbia Alumni News*, 13. 265 (Feb. 17, 1922).

- The centenary celebration of the Société Asiatique and the hundredth anniversary of Champollion at Paris. *Sanj Vartaman* (Bombay), Sept. 10, 1922, page 60.
- Death of Dr. Yohannan, Orientalist. *Columbia Alumni News*, 17, 180 (Nov. 20, 1925).
- A biographical sketch of Shams-ul-Illema Dastur Darab Peshotan Sanjana, B. A., J. P. [With a bibliography of his writings.] In *Indo-Iranian Studies . . . in Honour of Shams-ul-Illema Dastur Darab Peshotan Sanjana*, London and Leipzig, 1925, pp. lii-viii (Feb. 1926).
- In appreciation of Professor Tolman's Oriental work. In *In Memoriam Herbert Cushing Tolman*, publ. by Alpha of Tenn., Vanderbilt Chapter of Phi Beta Kappa, Nashville, Tenn., 1926, pp. 86-88.
- Personal recollections of the noted Pahlavi scholar Dr. West. [With a photograph.] *Sanj Vartaman* (Bombay), Sept. 10, 1928, pp. 12-13.
- Maurice Bloomfield. In *Dictionary of American Biography*, 2, 386-388, New York, 1929.
- A biographical sketch of Dasturji Saheb Cursetji Erachji Pavry. [With a bibliography of his writings.] In *Oriental Studies in Honour of Cursetji Erachji Pavry*, ed. Jal Dastur Cursetji Pavry, London, 1923, pp. xiii-xvii.

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS

(Except where otherwise noted, the reviews are signed.)

- A. Kaegi, *The Rig-Veda*, tr. R. Arrowsmith. *Science and Education*, 1, 64 (Dec. 24, 1896).
- W. W. Skeat, *Principles of English Etymology*, Second Series. *Educational Rev.* 2, 294-296 (Oct. 1897).
- L. Soumes, *An Introduction to the Study of Phonetics*. *Educational Rev.* 4, 90-92 (June 1897).
- W. Caland, *Zur Syntax der Pronomina im Avesta*. *Göttingische Gelehrte Anzeigen*, 1893, no. 20, pp. 823-824 (Oct. 1, 1893).
- S. A. Brooke, *The History of Early English Literature*. *Educational Rev.* 6, 385-390 (Nov. 1893).
- K. L. Bates, *The English Religious Drama*. *Macmillan's Literary Notes*, Jan. 1894.
- Selected Essays of James Darmesteter*. *The New World: A Quarterly Rev. of Religion, Ethics and Theol.* 4, 591-593 (Sept. 1895).
- J. R. C. Hall, *A Concise Anglo-Saxon Dictionary for the Use of Students*. *Educational Rev.* 11, 284-286 (March 1896).
- H. C. Warren, *Buddhism in Translations* (ROS. 3). *The Bookman* (N. Y.), 4, 67-68 (Sept. 1896).
- E. W. Hopkins, *The Religions of India*. *Int. Journal of Ethics*, 7, 121-123 (Oct. 1896).
- Paul Horn, *Asadi's Neupersisches Wörterbuch*. *AJP* 19, 98-99 (April 1898).
- Pahlavi Texts, Part V: Marvels of Zoroastrianism*, tr. E. W. West (SBE. 47). *The Independent* (N. Y.), 50, 692 (May 20, 1898). (Unsigned.)
- G. Brandes, *William Shakespeare: A Critical Study*. *The Bookman* (N. Y.), 7, 411-413 (July 1898).

- E. W. Hopkins, The Great Epic of India. *The Nation* (N. Y.), 73.232 (Sept. 10, 1901). (Unsigned.)
- E. W. Hopkins, India, Old and New, and The Great Epic of India. *The Bookman* (N. Y.), 15.179-172 (April 1902).
- B. ten Brink, The Language and Metre of Chaucer, 2d ed., tr. M. Bentinek Smith. *Educational Rev.* 23.528-530 (May 1902).
- L. H. Mills, The Gāthas of Zarathushtra (Zoroaster) in Metre and Rhythm, and A Dictionary of the Gāthic Language of the Zend Avesta. *Am. Journal of Theol.* 6.768-769 (Oct. 1902).
- E. G. Browne, A Literary History of Persia from the Earliest Times until Firdausi. *The Atlantic Monthly*, 91.275-278 (Feb. 1903).
- J. V. Prádek, Geschichte der Meder und Perser bis zur makedonischen Eroberung, vol. 1. *Am. Hist. Rev.* 13.119-121 (Oct. 1907).
- W. H. Ward, Cylinders and Other Ancient Oriental Seals in the Library of J. Pierpont Morgan. *The Literary Miscellany* (N. Y.), 2.54-56 (Oct. 1909).
- J. V. Prádek, Geschichte der Meder und Perser bis zur makedonischen Eroberung, vol. 2. *Am. Hist. Rev.* 16.102-104 (Oct. 1910).
- E. G. Browne, The Persian Revolution of 1905-1909. *Am. Hist. Rev.* 16.634-635 (April 1911).
- F. Sarre and E. Herzfeld, Iranische Felsreliefs. *The Nation* (N. Y.), 92.431-432 (April 27, 1911). (Unsigned.)
- H. R. James, Education and Statesmanship in India, 1797 to 1910. *Educational Rev.* 45.528-529 (May 1913).
- W. R. Rickmers, The Dumb of Turkistan. *The Nation* (N. Y.), 97.289-290 (Sept. 26, 1913). (Unsigned.)
- Kalidasa: Translations of Shakuntala and Other Works, by A. W. Ryder. *The Nation* (N. Y.), 98.138-139 (Feb. 5, 1914). (Unsigned.)
- E. B. Scans, Grammar of the Kormanji or Kurdish Language. *Educational Rev.* 49.420-421 (April 1915).
- E. P. Buffet, The Laymen Revato: A Story of a Restless Mind in Buddhist India at the Time of Greek Influence. *Journal of Philosophy, Psychology, and Scientific Methods*, 12.305-308 (May 27, 1915).
- G. Rosen, Elemente Persica: Persische Erzählungen mit kurzer Grammatik und Glossar. *The Nation* (N. Y.), 101.333 (Sept. 9, 1915). (Unsigned.)
- P. M. Sykes, A History of Persia, 2 vols. *The Nation* (N. Y.), 101.720-721 (Dec. 10, 1915). (Unsigned.)
- E. W. Hopkins, Epic Mythology (Grundriss der Indo-Arischen Philologie, vol. 3, part 1b). *Yale Rev.*, n.s. 6.444-446 (Jan. 1917).
- A. Yohannan, The Death of a Nation, and The Book of the Pearl. *Columbia Alumni News*, 8.374-375 (Jan. 19, 1917).
- Jātaka Tales, selected and edited by H. T. Francis and E. J. Thomas. *Journal of Am. Folk-Lore*, 31.279-280 (April 1918).
- The Mythology of All Races, vol. 6: Indian, by A. B. Keith; Iranian, by A. J. Carnoy. *Journal of Am. Folk-Lore*, 31.280-281 (April 1918). (Signed "A. V. W. J.")
- A. Berriedale Keith, The Samkhya System. *N. Y. Evening Post, Literary Rev.*, Aug. 21, 1920.



- E. G. Browne, A History of Persian Literature under Tartar Dominion (A. D. 1266-1502). *The Nation* (N. Y.), 111. 508-509 (Nov. 3, 1920).  
 The Thirteen Principal Upanishads, tr. R. E. Hume. *N. Y. Evening Post, Literary Rev.*, Aug. 20, 1921.  
 R. Reitzenstein, Das iranische Erlösungsmysterium. *Am. Hist. Rev.* 27. 130-140 (Oct. 1921).  
 P. M. Sykes, A History of Persia, 2d ed. *Asia*, 22. 237-238 (March 1922).  
 Rigveda Brahmanas, tr. A. Berriedale Keith (HOS. 25). *The Philosophical Rev.* 31. 409 (July 1922).  
 Memoirs of Babur, Emperor of Hindustan, tr. J. Leyden and W. Erskine, annotated and revised by Sir Lucas King. *N. Y. Evening Post, Literary Rev.*, Aug. 26, 1922, p. 898.  
 D. L. R. Lorimer, The Phonology of the Bakhtiari, Badakhshani, and Madaglashti Dialects of Modern Persian, with Vocabularies. *AJP* 43. 281-282 (Sept. 1922).  
 E. Geiger, Die Amosa Spantas: Ihr Wesen und ihre ursprüngliche Bedeutung. *JRAS* 1923, pp. 281-282 (April 1923).  
 M. N. Dhalla, Zoroastrian Civilization. *N. Y. Evening Post, Literary Rev.*, Oct. 13, 1923, p. 126.  
 R. Levy, Persian Literature: An Introduction. *JAOS* 44. 138-139 (June 1924).  
 E. G. Browne, A History of Persian Literature in Modern Times (A. D. 1500-1924). *The Saturday Rev. of Literature* (N. Y.), 3. 599 (Feb. 19, 1927). (Unsigned.)  
 The Lady of the Lotus, Rup Mati, Queen of Mandu, by Ahmad-ul-Umr, tr. L. M. Crump. *Art and Archaeol.* 24. 50-51 (Aug. 1927).

## SYLLABI

- The English language and its history. [10 lectures.] Syllabus 11, Univ. Extension Dept., Univ. of the State of N. Y. Albany, 1892. 15 pages. (Reprinted in Dec. 1900 in revised form as Syllabus 85 of the Home Education Dept., 16 pages.)  
 The English drama, its rise and development to the closing of the theaters (1640). [In collaboration with Thomas Randolph Price and George Edward Woodberry.] Syllabus 20, Extension Dept., Univ. of the State of N. Y. Albany, 1893. 19 pages.  
 Some masterpieces of English literature. [10 lectures.] Syllabus 26, Extension Dept., Univ. of the State of N. Y. Albany, 1893. 16 pages.  
 Some representative names in English literature. Introductory course of twelve lectures. Syllabus 10, Extension Dept. of Rutgers College. New Brunswick, N. J., 1893. 24 pages. (Second edition, 1897, 24 pages.)  
 The English drama: its rise and development until after the days of Shakspeare. Twelve lectures. Syllabus 18, Extension Dept. of Rutgers College. New Brunswick, N. J., 1894. 28 pages. (Second edition, revised, 1903, 29 pages.)  
 Ancient India and Persia: their literature and their civilization. A popular presentation. Syllabus 57, Extension Dept., Univ. of the State of N. Y. Albany, 1897. 21 pages.

Ancient India and Persia: their literature and their civilization. Twelve (or six) lectures. Syllabus 27, Extension Dept. of Rutgers College. New Brunswick, N. J., 1898. 32 pages.

## BIBLIOGRAPHICAL REPORTS AND EDITORIAL WORK

Annual bibliographical report on Iranian publications in *Indogermanische Forschungen*, vols. 5 to 23, Anzeiger für Indogermanische Sprach- und Altertumskunde, ed. W. Stralberg (1895-1905).

The bibliography of the year 1905 (published in 1906) was prepared in collaboration with George C. O. Haas.

Editor of the *Columbia University Indo-Iranian Series*, 13 volumes, 1901-1932 (New York: Columbia University Press):

Vol. 1. A. V. Williams Jackson and Abraham Yahannan, *A Catalogue of the Collection of Persian Manuscripts*. . . . 1914. 2d ed., 1934. (See above.)

Vol. 2. Louis H. Gray, *Indo-Iranian Phonology*. 1902.

Vol. 3. Montgomery Schuyler, Jr., *A Bibliography of the Sanskrit Drama*. 1906.

Vol. 4. Montgomery Schuyler, Jr., *An Index Verborum of the Fragments of the Avesta*. 1901.

Vol. 5. Justin Hartley Moore, *Sayings of Buddha: The Iti-vuttaka*. 1908.

Vol. 6. Maneckji Nusserwanji Dhalla, *The Nyaishes, or Zoroastrian Litany*. 1908.

Vol. 7. George C. O. Haas, *The Dasturpa, a Treatise on Hindu Dramaturgy by Dhananjaya*. 1912.

Vol. 8. Louis H. Gray, *Vāsevadattā, a Sanskrit Romance by Subandha*. 1913.

Vol. 9. George Payn Quackenbos, *The Sanskrit Poems of Mayūra*. 1917.

Vol. 10. G. K. Nariman, A. V. Williams Jackson, and Charles J. Ogden, *Prisyādarśikā, a Sanskrit Drama by Harsha*. 1923. (See above.)

Vol. 11. Jai Dastur Cursetji Parry, *The Zoroastrian Doctrine of a Future Life*. 1920. 2d ed., 1929.

Vol. 12. A. V. Williams Jackson, *Zoroastrian Studies: The Iranian Religion and Various Monographs*. 1928. (See above.)

Vol. 13. A. V. Williams Jackson, *Researches in Manichaeism, with Special Reference to the Turfan Fragments*. 1932. (See above.)

Editor of 'The Empire of the Persians,' by F. Justi, in *A History of All Nations*, New York and Philadelphia, 1905, 2: 167-253.

Editor of 'India,' by F. Justi, *ibid.* 2: 295-332.

Editor of *History of India*, in 9 vols., London, The Graelier Society, n. d. (1896-1907). [Actually published in New York.]

Editorial work on *Zoroastrian Theology from the Earliest Times to the Present Day*, by Maneckji Nusserwanji Dhalla, New York, 1914.

Editor of four published histories of the Class of 1883, Columbia College. These were privately printed for the class in 1895, 1911, 1923, and 1933 respectively.

A copy of each of these class histories is preserved in the Columbiana collection at Columbia University.

## SAMANID STUCCO DECORATION FROM NISHAPUR

M. S. DIMAND

METROPOLITAN MUSEUM OF ART

OUR KNOWLEDGE of early Islamic art in Iran has been greatly increased through the excavations of the Metropolitan Museum of Art, conducted since 1935 at Nishapur, in the province of Khurasan.<sup>1</sup> The importance of Nishapur for the Islamic culture is well known to every historian. The finds of ceramics and stucco, obtained from these excavations and divided between the Museum of Teheran and the Metropolitan Museum of Art, have established also the importance of Nishapur as one of the great artistic centers of the Islamic world before and during the Seljuk rule. The Nishapur potters created several varieties of fine ceramics unknown in Western parts of Iran. With the help of coins, the earliest of the Nishapur pottery may be dated to the Tahirid period, that is to the end of the eighth and the beginning of the ninth century. These finds add a new chapter to the history of ceramic art in the Near East.

Of equal importance for students of Islamic art is the stucco decoration of Nishapur, with an elaborately carved ornament originally painted in vivid colors such as white, yellow, blue, and red. Most of the stucco panels come from a building, possibly a palace, in the mound Sabz Pushan which also yielded many splendid pieces of early pottery. The most complete stucco panels of Sabz Pushan formed a dado of an iwan or niche on the southwest side of a courtyard. Adjoining the courtyard was a domed room which also had a dado of stucco. Above it was a painted decoration, remains of which were found both in the iwan and the domed room. This decorative scheme, which seems to have been in favor in Nishapur, was already known in the ninth century, for instance in Samarra<sup>2</sup> north of Baghdad, the temporary residence of the Abbasid caliphs.

The finest of the stuccos belonged to the iwan of the courtyard (see figure). They are decorated with palmette scrolls and devices

<sup>1</sup> "The Persian Expedition, 1933-1934," *Bulletin of the Metropolitan Museum of Art*, section II, December, 1934; "The Persian Expedition, 1934-1935," *Bulletin*, September, 1936, p. 176; "The Iranian Expedition, 1936," *Bulletin*, section II, October, 1937.

<sup>2</sup> Herzfeld, E., *Der Wanddekor der Bauten von Samarra und seine Ornamentik* (Berlin, 1923); *Die Malereien von Samarra* (Berlin, 1927).



Stucco Panel from Nishapur, The Metropolitan Museum of Art

which in the largest panels, rectangular and square ones, are placed within quatrefoiled or hexafoiled medallions, which were known in Samarra.<sup>3</sup> The abstract character of this ornament, which shows many arabesque features, is evident at first glance. The scrolls are purely geometrical and bear four or six offshoots. They are arranged around a central motive which is either an integral part of the scroll, as in the two right medallions of the illustration, or a separate one in form of a disc as in the third medallion on the extreme right. The offshoots describe either circles (the central medallion of the illustration) or are arranged in a whirl movement (the two outside medallions of the illustration), and end in various palmettes which may be divided into several types. There are half palmettes of the Sasanian type with five or six lobes, and simplified half palmettes without lobes, a type which occurs already at the end of the eighth century in the minbar of Kairwan.<sup>4</sup> These half palmettes are placed on top of larger ones with a ribbed surface. There are also split palmettes and heart-shaped full palmettes, well known in the early Islamic ornament. Other palmettes are of the trilobed variety or of a composite nature, five of which are seen in the illustrated panel. Here three different motives, a vine leaf overlaid by a half palmette and a comb-like leaf, form a composite palmette which goes back to the Umayyad period. In the early Abbasid era, such composite palmettes became very popular. We find them on the minbar of Kairwan, which dates from the time of Harun al Raschid (786-808 A.D.), and in the Samarra stuccos.<sup>5</sup> Such palmettes occur also in Iran, for instance in the stucco ornament of the Friday Mosque at Nayin.<sup>6</sup>

The Nishapur stucco decoration shows interesting features which throw a new light on the survival of Iranian animal style in Islamic art. In some of the medallions (the two outside ones of the illustration), the offshoots, instead of being linear, consist of a notched band ending in birds' heads and a palmette which is a continuation of the beak. We have here thus an abbreviated representation of the Sasanian motive of birds holding palmettes in their beaks,

<sup>3</sup> Herzfeld, E., *Der Wand Schmuck*, fig. 248, 363.

<sup>4</sup> Dimand, M. S., "Some aspects of Omayyad and early Abbasid Ornament," *Art Islamica*, vol. IV, 1937, pp. 295-337, figs. 11, 12.

<sup>5</sup> Dimand, op. cit., fig. 10-13; Herzfeld, *Der Wand Schmuck*, fig. 275-278.

<sup>6</sup> Flury, S., "La Mosquée de Nayin," *Syria*, vol. XI, 1930, pp. 43-68, fig. 1, 3-5, pl. X.

known from several silver vessels.<sup>7</sup> Instead of representing complete birds the Muhammadan artist used only the neck and the head, making them a part of geometrical scrolls. The use of animal parts in ornament is peculiar to the Iranians and may be traced back to the Seythian and Luristan metals. We find such combinations of birds and scrollwork also in Samarra,<sup>8</sup> which indicates that the Abbasid art borrowed many decorative forms from Iran. This combination of scrollwork and birds, as seen in the Samanid stuccos of Nishapur, reaches its full height in the Seljuk period. It is a frequent feature of Seljuk silver inlaid bronzes from Iran, Mesopotamia, and Syria. The Nishapur stuccos reveal also the survival of other Sasanian motifs, such as ribbons, worn by birds and animals and used frequently as decorative motifs. In one of the eighth century woodcarvings from Takrit, now in the Metropolitan Museum, such ribbons appear in the traditional Sasanian form.<sup>9</sup> In other cases, as in several marble capitals, in the mimbar of Kairwan, and in Samarra, the ribbons are transformed into triangular lotus-like motives. In this latter form they appear in the Nishapur stuccos, attached to the bird motives or to palmettes (seen in each corner of the illustration).

The Nishapur stucco decoration furnishes us with important material for the history of Islamic art after Samarra, that is of the tenth century. It is the least known period of Islamic art, as many monuments of this period are still underground awaiting the spade of excavators. Pre-Seljuk stucco decoration of Iran is known from the Imam Zadah Karrar at Buzun and the Friday mosque at Nayin. The stuccos of Buzun<sup>10</sup> have been assigned by Smith to the twelfth century because of the date Jumada II, 528 (April 1134 A. D.), which appears in the inscription of the mihrab. The ornament of the mihrab, however, is quite different from the rest of the Buzun stuccos, which I am inclined to date to the early Abbasid period, that is to the beginning of the ninth century. The decorative principles of the vine ornament at Buzun, with the exception of the Seljuk mihrab, are more in the spirit of Umayyad art, which continued in the early Abbasid period and is known from a number

<sup>7</sup> Orbelli, I. et C. Trever, *Orfèvrerie Sassanide* (Leningrad and Moscow, 1935), pl. 29.

<sup>8</sup> Herzfeld, *Der Wand Schmuck*, pl. XLII (192), LXX (215), LXXII (215).

<sup>9</sup> Dimand, *op. cit.*, fig. 5.

<sup>10</sup> Smith, Myron B., "Imam Zade Karrar at Buzun," *Archaeologische Mitteilungen aus Iran*, vol. VII, 1935.

of stuccos and woodcarvings.<sup>11</sup> Of the Samarra style there is no trace as yet in Buzun. In the Nayin stucco we find the traditional Umayyad ornament combined with the new Abbasid style. The vine scrolls are more schematically treated than in Buzun. The similarities between Samarra and Nayin might at first induce us to regard them as contemporary. A careful analysis of the Nayin ornament, however, reveals stylistic differences which indicate that they must be later than Samarra and should be assigned, as Flury already suggested, to the beginning of the tenth century.

The stucco decoration of Nishapur is related both to Samarra and Nayin but reveals new decorative principles and motives which represent a later phase of Islamic ornament and permit us to date them to the second half of the tenth century. A tendency towards overelaboration of the surface is characteristic of Nishapur. Frequently, the motives show, instead of the fine lozenge diapers of Samarra, a coarser pattern with triangles or lozenges. This new stylistic feature gives the ornament a certain restlessness, which is quite different from the restrained decorative character of the Samarra stuccos. The Nishapur stuccos are an important link between the Abbasid and Seljuk style of Islamic ornament.

The stylistic evidence for the dating of Nishapur stuccos to the second half of the tenth century is also substantiated by archaeological evidence. As Hauser has shown,<sup>12</sup> the Sabz Pushan building, containing stuccos, belongs to several periods. The building was at first constructed in the second half of the eighth century, under the Tabirids, and then rebuilt in the ninth century. The stucco decoration was added later, that is under the Samanids. Behind one of the stucco carvings in the domed room, the expedition found a painted inscription which formed a part of the pre-Samanid decoration. Coins found at Sabz Pushan permit us to establish a chronology of the buildings and the finds. The stuccos, which belong to the last period of rebuilding, may be dated through the coins to the time between 961-981, when Muhammad ibn Simjur was the governor of Nishapur under the Samanids, Mansur I and Nuh II.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>11</sup> Dimand, *op. cit.*

<sup>12</sup> Hauser, W., "The plaster dado from Sabz Pushan," "The Iranian Expedition, 1935," *Bulletin of the Metropolitan Museum of Art*, section II, October, 1937, p. 23.

<sup>13</sup> A more detailed study of Iranian stuccos, including those of Nishapur, will appear in a future issue of *Art Islamica*.



# ROME AND (?) ANTIOCH IN THE MAHĀBHĀRATA

FRANKLIN EDGERTON

YALE UNIVERSITY

IN EDITING the *Sahhā-parvan* (Book 2) for the first critical edition of the *Mahābhārata*, now being prepared at Poona under the general editorship of Dr. V. S. Sukthankar, I have discovered that the true version of the line ii. 1175cd Calc. = ii. 31. 72ab Bomb. contains matter of unusual interest.

The Calc. and Bomb. editions agree on the following version:

*ājavīṣ ca purīṣ ramyāṃ yavanāṇḍṣ purāṣ tathā.*

But of the forty to fifty manuscripts collated, only seven have the words *ca purīṣ ramyāṃ*. And, what is more important, six of these are very inferior manuscripts of the vulgate devanāgarī recension, which my experience (confirming Sukthankar's) has shown to have very minor value for the reconstruction. (The seventh is a ms. of the Kashmirian recension, K<sub>2</sub>, which here has obviously been contaminated from a vulgate source.)

I shall not in this article attempt a full statement of the mss. readings, which will of course be presented when the edition appears. Suffice it to say, first, that the Southern recension, S, has a reading so different that it helps us little, beyond confirming the existence of the line in the original:

*aparāṣ rocāmāṇṣ ca yāṣmāṇṣ purottamam (v. l. °tame).*

This is practically nonsense; there can be no doubt that the Northern versions come much closer to the original at this point. Except the seven referred to above, they all indicate that after the first word (of three syllables; vulgate *ājavīṣ*), there followed *caiva*, then an accusative form of two syllables followed by *ca*.

The line occurs in a list of towns conquered by Sahadeva in his *digvijaya*, and it is clear that it named three such towns, all belonging to the western (*yavana*) world: "(He conquered) [City A] and [City B] and likewise the City of the Yavanas." As to the last, there is no doubt of the reading, and equally little in my opinion that the "City of the Yavanas" must mean the same *Yavanapura* referred to in the *Bṛhatsaṃhitā*. In the introduction to his edition of that work, p. 54, Kern conjectured that it meant

Alexandria. This was based on computations of relative longitude, and I do not find Kern's arguments at all compelling. However, the question is of relatively little interest for us here, and I shall not discuss it further.

Returning to the first pāda, let us examine the mss. readings for City R. It contains, as stated, two syllables, placed between caia and the following ca. The most valuable testimony is that of the Kashmirian recension, represented by one old Śāradā ms., here called Ś, and four devanāgarī mss. (K<sub>1</sub>, 2, 3, 4). Of the latter, K<sub>2</sub> has been contaminated by the vulgate reading at this point, as I have said above. But Ś, K<sub>1</sub>, and K<sub>4</sub> read *romāṇi*; K<sub>3</sub> reads *romāṇś* [ca], and the same is found in two (out of four) Nepalese mss. One D(ēvanāgarī, vulgate) ms. reads *rāmāṇ*; *rāmāṇ* is read by two D, five B(engali), two Nepalese, and two Telugu mss. (which belong not to the Southern but to the Northern group of versions); and finally *dāsaṇ* is read by five D, three B, and one Telugu (northern) ms. This completes the list, except for the Southern recension and the vulgate, quoted above. It is obvious that *ramyāṇ* of the vulgate points to a form beginning with *r-*. Note also *rocāmāṇaṇ* of S; absurd as it is, with its initial *ro-* I think it is not rash to count it in support of the Kashmirian reading. Since Sukthankar has proved that the latter is on the whole probably the best Mbh. tradition, I do not hesitate to adopt the reading *romāṇ*. If this is the true reading, it obviously means the city of Rome. The interesting thing is that we find here for the first time in Indian literature the feminine form of the stem, *Romā*, which is just what we should expect, but which has been replaced in the late Indian texts where it has been heretofore found by a neuter *Roma*-(*pura*, etc.).

Incidentally, this is at present the only certain mention of either Rome or the Romans in the Mbh., and is probably the oldest mention of either in Indian literature. (The title of the Romakajātaka is of very doubtful significance; that Jātaka itself does not contain the name in its text, nor do its contents suggest any relation to Rome or the Romans, or any reason for the traditional title.) The only mention previously recorded in the Mbh. is the word *romakāṇ* of ii. 1837 Calc. — ii. 51. 17 Bomb.; but my edition will show that this reading is found only in inferior vulgate mss. and two Bengali mss., and is certainly to be rejected. (The most probable original reading, as it seems to me at present, is *śakukāṇ*,

with S and most of B; but certainly it was not *romakān* in any event.) Another possible occurrence is in ii, 1850 Calc. — ii, 51, 30 Bomb., where the vulgate has *romaśāḥ* (*śrīgīṇa nardāḥ*); this reading appears from the collation-sheets to be supported by S and K, and may well be original, although all Bengali and some Southern mss. read *romakāḥ*. Final decision must await a restudy of the original mss. which I expect to make during my approaching visit to India. If *romaśāḥ* is the true reading, of course it means "hairy" and has no bearing on our subject.

Coming to "City A" of the line I am discussing, I have to confess that a solution of its original form is far more difficult. In fact, I offer the following suggestion only with the utmost diffidence, and claim for it no more than that it might, possibly, turn out to be a lucky guess.

Most northern mss. read either *āṣṭavṛṇ* with the Calc. and Bombay editions, or *aṣṭavṛṇ* with short initial *a*. The latter is a Sanskrit word for "forest," and seems clearly a popular mouthing-over of an older form which seemed barbaric to copyists. The form with *a-* is indeed much commoner among the mss. than that with *ā-*. It is read in two K, seven D, five B, and two Telugu (but northern) mss.; *ā-* is read only in one K, three B, four D, and one Telugu ms., besides the two editions. Corrupt readings of little value occur as follows: *araṃbā*, one D ms.; *aṣṭavṛṇ*, two D mss.; *surabhiṃś* (intending *ara*°?), one K ms.; *āṣṭavṛṇ*, changed to *āṣa*°, one D ms. As stated above, all Southern mss. read *aparāṇ*, followed by *rocamaṇam* ca.

However, the one Śāradā ms. reads *avarṇ*; and the four Nepalese mss. read *aravṇ*, which looks as if based on the S reading with metathesis (were the scribes thinking of the Arabs?). The ms. S, as I said above, is a very valuable text. Note that *aparāṇ* of S looks as if it might go back to something of the same sort.

The proximity of *yavanādām puram*, not to mention *romām*, naturally led me to look to western geography for a possible original form of this word. I could not help thinking of Antioch—*Antiochea* on the Orontes; Arabic *Antākīyah*. I find no record in any Indic language of any form of this name, which has been recognized as such. However, Aufrecht, in *Cat. cod. mss. Bodl. (Oxf.)* 338b, reports the city name *Antākī*, among barbarian (western) city names; three lines below occurs *Roma* (with short *a*), and on the next page *Romaka*. It seems to me fairly obvious that *Antākī*

must intend *Antākhi* (or the like), and that this must mean Antioch. For Greek  $\chi$ , Indic *kḥ* is normal. It is perhaps not too bold to suggest that the corrupt forms of the Mbh. mss. may go back to a form somewhat resembling *Antākhi*. It is even possible that the ending *-vi(ṃ)* may contain a graphic corruption for *-kḥ* (possibly also *-ri* of *Ś?* since both *r* and *v* are easy graphic corruptions for *kḥ*).

Antioch was founded about 300 B. C. by Seleucus I and named for his father Antiochus. It became the capital and most important city of the Syrian kingdom, and remained, commercially and culturally, the most important city of western Asia down to the time of its destruction by the Persians in 540 A. D. No other city of western Asia would be so likely to have reached the ears of Indians.

If by any chance Kern should turn out to have been right in his guess that *Yavanapura* (to which our *yavanāṇḍam puram* obviously corresponds) indicates Alexandria, and if my conjecture as to Antioch should prove to be a good guess, then this single line of the Mbh. would claim for Sahadeva the conquest of the three most important cities of the Hellenistic-Roman world: Antioch, Rome, and Alexandria.

With the first three syllables doubtful, the line in question is to be reconstructed:

*antākhiṃ (?) coīva romāṃ ca yavanāṇḍam puram tathā.*

## THE TENSES OF UGARITIC

ALBRECHT GOETZE

YALE UNIVERSITY

THE DECIPHERMENT of the Ras Shamra alphabet is one of the recent achievements in the field of Oriental studies. Following the completion of this task,<sup>1</sup> the interpretation of the available texts will occupy Semitists for some time to come.

All interpreters, from the very outset, face the intricate problem of the meaning which is to be assigned to the different inflectional types of the verb in the new language. Both types so familiar from the other Semitic languages, *qtl* and *yqtl*, recur. But the student who approaches the Ugaritic epics with West Semitic, or even Hebrew, grammar in mind is startled by the fact that the long narrative passages they contain are for the most part in the "imperfect" (*yqtl*) and sporadically in the "perfect" (*qtl*). Furthermore, he finds the "perfect" (*qtl*) apparently also outside narration.

His amazement results from a wrong attitude. The new language, in spite of its close relationship to Canaanite, must be explained from within itself. The evidence of the texts, when evaluated without prejudice, warrants the conclusion (which in fact has already been drawn by others)<sup>2</sup> that in Ugaritic the theme *yqtl* serves as the preterite in the narration and that *qtl* is limited to

<sup>1</sup> The most recent sign list is that contained in H. Bauer, *Die alphabetischen Keilschrifttexte von Ras Schamra* (Lietzmann's *Kleine Texte* 168, 1936) p. 64. The following deviations from Bauer's method of transliteration should be noted: nos. 1, 2, 3 will be read d, f, & respectively; no. 23 will be rendered by *z* (see Albright, *JPOS* 12, 1934, 105 f.); no. 27 by *j* (again with Albright, *JPOS* 12, 1932, 188; cf. also Friedrich, *ZA NF* 7, 1933, 311); no. 29 by *ḫ* (see Baneth, *OLE* 1932 col. 705; Vignolleaud, *Syria* 13, 1932, 125; Ginsberg, *Orient*, 5, 1936, 173).

<sup>2</sup> Baneth, *OLE* 1932 col. 449; H. Bauer, *Das Alphabet von Ras Schamra* (1932) 96; Friedrich, *ZA NF* 7 (1933) 312. Albright (*JPOS* 14, 1934, 112 f.)—after some vacillation (*BASOR* 46, 1932, 15 ff. and *JPOS* 12, 1932, 196 ff.)—has so far taken an intermediate position; he regards the perfect as the normal narrative tense, but admits "a much more extended narrative use of the imperfect than in Biblical Hebrew." Most recently (*BASOR* 70 20 ff.) he has revised his standpoint. Cf. furthermore Ginsberg, *Orient*, 5, 1936, 176 (and addendum 181); 7, 1936, 2 f.; Harris, *JAOS* 57, 1937, 162 note 11.

special circumstances. If so, the question arises as to the means by which the idea of the present-future is expressed in Ugaritic. As a result several scholars have already been induced to ask whether there may have existed in Ugaritic, as in Akkadian, by the side of the theme *yqtl(u)* also the other theme *yqa(t)al(u)*.<sup>3</sup> Since the script is purely consonantal, it would be recognizable under special conditions only.

It is the purpose of this paper to clarify the situation by a comprehensive survey of the verbal forms that occur in the Ugaritic texts.<sup>4</sup> It goes without saying that any attempt of this kind is linked intimately to matters of interpretation. Despite the numerous translations<sup>5</sup> that have already been presented, or rather because

<sup>3</sup> Bauer, *Das Alphabet von Ras Schamra* (1932) 67 f.; *Die alphabetischen Keilschrifttexte von Ras Schamra* (1934) 67.

<sup>4</sup> The following abbreviations are used for the individual texts, published almost exclusively by Virolleaud:

1029: the texts contained in *Syria* 10 (1929) pl. 61-75.

I AB: "La lutte de Môt . . .," *Syria* 12 (1931) pl. 38-43, p. 193-224; an addition in *Syria* 15 (1934) p. 226-43. The addition has modified the numbering of lines in col. I: where a double numbering exists, the older numbering has been given between brackets.

I\* AB: "La mort de Baal," *Syria* 15 (1934) pl. 39-40, p. 305-36.

II AB: "Un nouveau chant du poème d'Alein-Baal," *Syria* 13 (1932) pl. 25-36, p. 113-63.

III AB: "La révolte de Koser contre Baal," *Syria* 16 (1935) pl. 11, p. 29-45.

IV AB: "Anat et la gémisse," *Syria* 17 (1936) pl. 24, p. 159-73.

V AB: "La déesse Anat," *Syria* 17 (1936), p. 335-45; 18 (1937), pl. 16, p. 85-102.

SS: "La naissance des dieux gracieux et beaux," *Syria* 14 (1933) pl. 18-19, p. 128-51.

1034: "Fragments d'un traité Phénicien de thérapeutique hippologique," *Syria* 16 (1934) 75-83.

SeL: "Proclamation de Seleg . . .," *Syria* 16 (1934) 147-54.

BH: "Les chasses de Baal," *Syria* 16 (1935) pl. 45, p. 247-60.

Nk: "Hymne Phénicien au dieu Nikal et aux déesses Kôsarôt," *Syria* 17 (1936) pl. 25, p. 208-28.

D: *La légende Phénicienne de Danel* (*Mission de Ras-Samra* I, 1936).

K: *La légende de Keret* (*Mission de Ras-Samra* II, 1936).

<sup>5</sup> A full bibliography is contained in Bauer's *Die alphabetischen Keilschrifttexte* 71 ff. Add, besides the editions of D and K, the books of L. H. Ginsberg, *מִלְחָמַת מוֹת* (1936), of R. Dussaud, *Les découvertes de Ras Shamra et l'Ancien Testament* (1936), and of D. Nielsen, *Ras Samra Mythologie und Biblische Theologie* (*Abh. für die Kunde des Morgenlandes* XXI 4, 1936). Furthermore, the following additional articles have come

of their existence, it must be emphasized that our knowledge of the new language is still in its beginnings. Easily understood passages alternate with others that defy interpretation. Investigations like the following can, of course, be based only on the passages that are well understood. It is to be hoped that the results thus obtained may help in clarifying the rest. Under these circumstances the evidence which is presented below will be subject to corrections and additions. Nevertheless I trust that, as a whole, it will prove to be sound.

### I. *qtl*

#### A. Connotation

The *qtl* forms which occur in the Ras Shamra texts can be arranged, according to their connotation, in a few definite groups.

The theme *qtl* indicates:

1. A continuous state. Neither beginning nor end is indicated; neither tense nor mood is implied. The state may prevail in the present as well as in the past or the future; it may be real or wished.\*

The examples I have collected are as follows:

*ārē* "he is long, wide" SS 34.<sup>7</sup>

*dqt* "she is fine" II AB I 42.<sup>8</sup>

---

to my knowledge; I AB: Gaster, *JRAS* 1936 225-35; III AB: Dussaud, *Syria* 17 (1936) 102 f.; Gaster, *Iraq* 4 (1937) 22 ff.; IV AB: Dussaud, *Syria* 17 (1936) 283-95; V AB: Albright, *BASOR* 70 10 f.; BH: Montgomery, *JAOI* 56 (1936) 226-31; Dussaud, *RHR* 113 (1936) 5-20; Ginsberg, *JPOS* 16 (1936) 138-49; NK: Gordon, *BASOR* 65 (1937) 29-33; Gaster, *JRAS* 1936 37-56 and *JBL* 57 (1938) 81-7; D: Montgomery, *JAOI* 56 (1936) 440-5; K: Albright, *BASOR* 63 (1936) 27-32, de Vaux, *RB* 1937 362-72, 526-55.

\* For the sake of uniformity, in the following list, the present tense is used for translation throughout.

<sup>7</sup> Here as in the following cases the functional difference between *qtl* and *qytl* is particularly instructive. The form *ārē* precedes *ārē* in SS 33:

*ārē-m qd ē k-ym*

*w-qd ē k-mdb*

*ārē qd ē k-ym*

*w-qd ē k-mdb*

"El's hand may expand like the sea,  
and 'El's hand like a flood!"

"El's hand may be wide like the sea,  
and 'El's hand like a flood!"

The difference between the two forms, which escaped Albright (*JPOS* 14 136 fn. 182), is apparently one of aspect.

<sup>8</sup> *dqt* must be feminine, because the parallel *skt* is. The masculine form of the subject, *q' ē*, therefore, is surprising. Since the word is confirmed



- h<sub>r</sub> "they (fem. dual) are impregnated" SS 51, 56.<sup>b</sup>  
 hwt "thou (f.) are cunning(?)" IV AB II 20.<sup>19</sup>

by V AB II 32, it must belong to the class of *utenalla* which have feminine gender in spite of their masculine form (Brockelmann, *Grundriss* I 423).

This passage from the beginning of II AB will be quoted so frequently in the following lines that it seems appropriate to give a full translation. The more so, since its general sense has been missed by Galling (*OLZ* 1936 col. 593-7) and by Gaster (*OLZ* 1936 col. 402), while Albright (*JPOS* 14 114) did not venture any translation and Ginsberg (*Turhis* 5 18) gave one in Hebrew only. The structure of the passage has been understood correctly by Harris, *JAOIS* 53 118.

kt il dt h <sub>r</sub> -m	"the smith's work* for 'El (was) of a brilliant (kind),
kt il nbt b-kap	the smith's work for 'El (was) overflowing* with silver,
dmrat bdm hr	it caused the gold to be copious(?) upon it(?).
kh <sub>r</sub> il ngt b-gr	The throne of 'El sank down* under the padded cushions;*
bdm il d-prdt b-br	the footstool of 'El which ..... of
	.....
a' l il d-gbtl	the shoe of 'El which .....,
'in gbl-bm hr	in addition gold was poured* upon them.
tlm il d-mld mm	The table of 'El which was full of
	.....*
ddbm d-mdt dr	{was} a ..... of the pillars of the earth.
x il <d>dqf k-lmr	The mattress* of 'El which was fine as a lamb
sknt k-hwt ymdn	was in good condition like a .... snake
d-b-k rmm l-rbbi	in which (are) buffaloes by ten-thousands."

a: Cf. Hebr. פֶּסֶל "forge"; the word is feminine either because it denotes some tool or implement, or (less likely) the feminine *t* has coalesced with the radical *t* of the root. b: Cf. Hebr. שֵׁן. c: The final *t* must belong to the root, since kh<sub>r</sub> is known as a masculine (II AB VI 51). d: Cf. Arab. *magirun* "grass, replet." e: Cf. Arab. *asaba* "rain heavily." f: perhaps "of everything." g: Cf. Hebr. בֶּטֶן "bel."

\*One wonders why the feminine *t* is missing which is exhibited by the parallel-identical *hwt*. Were this not the case, one could refer to the missing feminine *t* in the examples listed by Brockelmann, *Grundriss* I 416 f. Perhaps it is simply due to haplography, the sign *r* closing with the horizontal stroke which denotes *t*.

<sup>19</sup> hwt dht sm dr[*o*] "thou art cunning,\* my sister!

gru ddt-k btl' nt  
 And I am afraid  
 of the horns of thy strength,  
 Virgin 'Anat!"

ḥy	"he is alive" I AB III 2, 8, 20.
ḥyt	"thou art alive" II AB IV 43. <sup>11</sup>
ḥkmt	"thou art wise" II AB IV 41, V 65.
ḥmt	"they are pregnant" SS 51, 56; II D I 41, 42. <sup>12</sup>
ḥzt	"thou art fortunate" II AB IV 42. <sup>13</sup>
ḥlq	"he is lost" I AB I 42 (14), III 1; I *AB VI 10.
ḥsrē	"I am in want of . . ." I AB II 17. <sup>14</sup>
ḥb	"he is beautiful" V AB I 20.
lā	"he is glowing" I AB II 25; II AB VIII 22. <sup>15</sup>
lās	"he is dressed" BH II 47. <sup>16</sup>
lkm	"they are satiated (with food)" II AB VI 55. <sup>17</sup>

a: Cf. Arab. *ḥawad* "be cunning"; the connection with the root "live" (Ginsberg, *Oriental* 77) is precluded by the fact that this has a y as the middle radical. b: The *h* is restored, but seems to fit the traces. c: Cf. Virolleaud, *Syrie* 17 160; otherwise Dussaud, *ibid.* 288.

<sup>11</sup>The form is noteworthy. The orthography shows that there is a vowel between the y of the root and the suffix -ta. That is to say ḥy follows the rules which in Hebrew grammar apply to the median geminates (Bergsträsser, *Hebr. Gr.* 2 133 f.; Bauer-Leander, *Hiet. Gramm. der Hebr. Sprache* 430). In view of Amarna forms like *ḥattiti* (Ebeling, *Das Verbum der El-Amarna-Briefe* 56 ff.; Böhl, *Die Sprache der Amarnabriefe* 46) I vocalize *ḥayyēta*. The long *ā* compares with the corresponding vowel of the Akkadian periphrase (otherwise, but hardly correct, P. Haupt apud Brockelmann, *Grundriss* 1 638).

<sup>12</sup>With H. Bauer I restore a *se* before *ḥm* *ḥmt*; read probably *ḥsema* (inf. absol.) *ḥsemt*. For the meaning see Albright, *Rec. de travaux* 40 71 f. and *JPOS* 14 236 fn. 189.

<sup>13</sup>The meaning has been clarified by Albright, *JPOS* 14 165 fn. 27. The last radical has been absorbed in a diphthong which separates the middle radical from the suffix; read *ḥayzta*.

<sup>14</sup>Agreement seems to be established as to the meaning of the verb. The interpretation as a 1st person may be questioned however. The fact that *ḥert* is surrounded by clear 1st persons makes me prefer this rendering.—The view of Montgomery (*JAGS* 53 113) that the parallelism enforces an analogous interpretation of *ḥmt* (l. 18) also is, in my opinion, erroneous. The sequel *ḥmt dṣ* is so well attested to (I AB I 7 = I \*AB VI 24; II AB VII 52) that it cannot be disrupted.

<sup>15</sup>Cf. Ginsberg, *JPOS* 14 247.

<sup>16</sup>Contrast I D 205 l.: *ḥtḥt nṣṣ ḥer* "thou shouldst go in (and) take thy coat, ḥer!" Cf. also *ibid.* 208 (with 3rd person).

<sup>17</sup>*lkm* outside the perfect means "eat" (Akkad. *la'mam*): I AB VI 41; I \*AB I 20, 24; SS 72; II D I 3, 8 ff., 22; IV D I 6; *Daniel* p. 228.

- mt "he is dead" I AB I 6, 41 (13); I \*AB VI 9, 23; I D II 91.<sup>18</sup>
- mtt "thou art dead" I \*AB V 17.<sup>19</sup>
- mlā "he is full" II AB I 39; IV AB III 8; SS 76; BH II 45.<sup>20</sup>
- mlkt "thou art dominant" SS 7.<sup>21</sup>
- mtqt "she is sweet" SS 50, 55.
- abt "she is overflowing with . . ." II AB I 32.<sup>22</sup>
- sknt "she is in good condition" II AB I 43.<sup>23</sup>
- 'z "he is strong" I AB VI 16 ff.<sup>24</sup>
- 'kt "she is attached" V AB II 11.
- ḡmīt "thou (f.) art thirsty" II AB IV 34.

<sup>18</sup> Contrast II D VI 38:

[dn]mt kl dmt	"I shall die a common death,
u-dn mt-m dmt	and I certainly shall die."

<sup>19</sup> The orthography proves that the *t* of the suffix *-ta* is separated from the radical *t* by a vowel; read therefore *mitāta*. For Hebrew analogies see Bergsträsser, *Hebr. Gram.* 2 § 28 a and compare *mita-ta* EA 87 31.

<sup>20</sup> Contrast V AB II 25 f.:

ymīd b-b b-smḡt	"her heart filled with joy."
-----------------	------------------------------

<sup>21</sup> The passage reads *šm tmlk šm mlkt 'rbm u-ḡnm*. It seems to consist of three *Zweifelheb*; thus the assumption seems justified that *mlkt* is parallel to *tmk*, and that it is a different form of the same verb. I translate therefore: "thou shouldst become king. *šm*; thou wilt rule *šm*. . . ."

<sup>22</sup> See above fn. 8.

<sup>23</sup> For the context see fn. 8.

<sup>24</sup> The grammatical function of *'z* and *qī* has been well recognized by Hurley, *JAGS* 54 82. I scan the passage in a slightly different way:

yt'n k-gmr-m mt	"Mut burned like a hot coal."
'z b'l 'z	Superior proved Ba'l, superior. <sup>a</sup>
yḡḡn k-rām-m mt	Mut charged him like a buffalo.
'z b'l 'z	Superior proved Ba'l, superior.
yḡḡn k-bjn-m mt	Mut hit him like a snake.
'z b'l 'z	Superior proved Ba'l, superior.
yḡḡn k-ḡm-m mt	Mut kicked (?) him like a charger.
qī b'l qī	Inferior proved Ba'l, inferior.

a: For the translation see Albright, *JPOS* 12 204. The verbal form, here as in the following lines, cannot be plural, because the 3rd plural in Ugaritic has the prefix *t*. b: According to Ugaritic syntax the sentence should start with the verb; this also makes it necessary, from a purely grammatical standpoint, to assign *mt* to the preceding line. The resulting sense recommends itself; the passage describes the fight between Mut and Ba'l and motivates the intervention of Šapaa.

<i>pq</i>	"they are satisfied" II AB VI 56.
<i>prk</i>	"he is . . . . . " II AB I 36. <sup>25</sup>
<i>šhrrt</i>	"she is scorching" I AB II 24; II AB VIII 22; SS 41, 45, 48. <sup>26</sup>
<i>qblbl</i>	"he is . . . . . " II AB I 37. <sup>27</sup>
<i>ql</i>	"he is weak, inferior" I AB VI 21 f.; IV AB III 16 f. <sup>28</sup>
<i>rhnt</i>	"she is . . . . . " II AB V 67. <sup>29</sup>
<i>rġbt</i>	"thou (f.) art hungry" II AB IV 33.
<i>šbt</i>	"she is grayhaired" II AB V 66. <sup>30</sup>
<i>štt</i>	"thou (f.) art satiated (with drink)" I *AB I 25. <sup>31</sup>
<i>šty</i>	"they are satiated (with drink)" II AB VI 55.
<i>imt</i>	"she is complete" SS 67.

As a sub-group expressions for emotions and perceptions may be appended here:

<i>šnh</i>	"he sighs" II D I 18.
<i>ydt</i>	"she knows" I D 56.

<sup>25</sup> For the context see fn. 8.

<sup>26</sup> Cf. Ginsberg, *JRAS* 1935 36 fn. 6.

<sup>27</sup> For the context see fn. 8; also Ginsberg, *Tarbiz* 5 78 who does not consider, however, the word a verbal form. As to the formation, Obermann rightly reminds me of *qatalat* forms denoting particularly colors; see Bauer-Leander, *Hist. Gram. der Hebr. Sprache* I 482 f.; J. Barth, *Nominalbildung* § 146.

<sup>28</sup> See above fn. 24.

<sup>29</sup> The word is somewhat doubtful. The autography presents *rhnt .dX.*, where the two *x* raise suspicion. Furthermore the second word can hardly be correct, since the parallel line suggests *-k* (pronominal suffix) for the missing sign. The word in question, then, would contain only one radical. If the doubtful spot is disregarded, the passage reads:

<i>l-šknt</i>	"Verily, thou art wise.
<i>šbt dqn-k l-ter-k</i>	Gray is thy beard at they chin(!)
<i>rhnt Xd-[k] l-rt-k</i>	..... (is) thy ..... at thy chest."

One could think of Arab, *ršuma* "be soft." But the missing word makes verification of this assumption impossible.

<sup>30</sup> See the preceding note. All previous interpretations (cf. most recently Vroillemund, *Daniel* 225) have taken *šbt* as a noun and *l-ter-k* as a verb. This is not cogent, however, since the parallel verse is strictly contradictory.

<sup>31</sup> *šty* outside the perfect means "drink"! I AB I 10, VI 43; I \*AB IV 15; II AB III 16, 49, IV 35, V 110, VI 53, 58; SS 6, 72; I D IV 219; IV D I 7; *Daniel* p. 228.

yā't	"thou (f.) knowest" I D 51, 200. <sup>37</sup>
yā't	"I know" III D VI 16. <sup>38</sup>
pān	"he is aware" I AB VI 10. <sup>39</sup>
pā't	"I am aware, I have experienced" I AB V 13 ff. <sup>40</sup>
šāq	"he is amused, he laughs" II AB V 87, VII 21; II D VI 22. <sup>41</sup>
šmḥ	"he is glad, he rejoices" I AB III 14, 20; I *AB II 30; II AB II 28, V 82, 97, VI 35. <sup>42</sup>
šmḥ	"he hates" II AB III 17.
t'ḥ	"he is disgusted" I AB VI 30; I *AB II 7. <sup>43</sup>
yld	"he is born" II D II 14. <sup>44</sup>

The last-mentioned form deserves special notice, since it is apparently an internal passive.<sup>45</sup>

Outside the *qal*, to which belong all the forms that have been quoted so far, the following pertinent forms exist:

<sup>37</sup> It is difficult to decide whether *yā't* is feminine of the participle (as Vroelke suggests) or a finite form. I prefer the latter, because *yā't* is separated from its alleged antecedent *pā't* by an imperative (*ḥ*) in I. 51 and by an imperfect (*t*) in I. 200.

<sup>38</sup> *yā't-k* "I know you."

<sup>39</sup> According to the plausible suggestion of Z. Ben-Hajjim (W. Goldmann) *apud* Ginsberg, *Oriens*, 5 181 fn. 1.

<sup>40</sup> See Ginsberg, l. c.

<sup>41</sup> *šāq* denotes a state, but *yāq* an action. Thus, I AB III 16; II AB IV 28; II D II 10:

*yāq ḥb w-yāq* "he parted the ..... and started laughing."

BH I 12 f.:

*ḥ yāq ḥm ḥ* "El laughed in (his) heart  
*w-ygmḥ ḥm ḥ* and chuckled in (his) liver."

See also II D VI 41: *tāq 'at* "Anat started laughing."

<sup>42</sup> Contrast I AB I 39 (11) *tāḥ-ḥ* "do rejoice!"; *āl tāmḥ* "don't rejoice!" *Danel* p. 228. Also *yāmḥ* "he rejoiced" IV AB III 38 and *tāmḥ* II D II 9.

<sup>43</sup> For meaning and etymon see Ginsberg, *Oriens*, 5 170 fn. 1.

<sup>44</sup> The meaning of the sentence *yld bḥ ḥy* is clearly "a son has been born to me." The agent is not indicated. The parallel verse *ḥy dīḥn ḥ'ī* (I AB III 20) in identical context makes the interpretation as a perfect virtually certain. I read therefore *yelids* (not *yelidu*).

<sup>45</sup> The internal passive is characteristic for the West Semitic languages and seems to be an innovation there. It is significant that Ugaritic shares this feature.

## Ifta'al:

*táyt* "she is calmed down" V AB II 27.

Šaf'e'l: <sup>41</sup>

*šb'r* "he is made glowing" II AB IV 16.

*šmrst* "she is made . . . . . " II AB I 33.

*šnst* "she is made dangling" V AB II 13.

## Nifa'l:

*nš't* "he is made bent" II AB I 34.<sup>42</sup>

*nšb* "he is made around" II AB VI 35.<sup>43</sup>

2. A continuous state in which an acting person is placed by his own action.

Three larger groups may be distinguished within this division:

a. *glt* which expresses the idea of holding or having something. The examples are:

*šh'd* "he holds" II AB V 118; "VII 9; IV AB II 6; II D I 31.<sup>44</sup>

*šh'di* "she holds" II AB II 3.

*ylt* "they (f. du.) have given birth" SS 53, 60.<sup>45</sup>

<sup>41</sup> The *šaf'e'l* is, in my opinion, the only means of expressing the idea of the causative. Concerning the whole question see Harris, *JAGS* 58 103-11 who makes the *šaf'e'l* the normal causative of this language, but assumes traces of older 'af'e'l-hi'li forms.

<sup>42</sup> For the context see above fn. 8. For the meaning compare Arab. *šāḍa* "go down, contract, pounce down."

<sup>43</sup> Cf. below fn. 61.

<sup>44</sup> V 113 ff.

[š]š šāḥm š[n-m]

šš rmm šk[l-m]

šš šāḥm šn[n]

šš rmm šk[l-m]

š-tk šrt špm

šlp šd šh'd tr

šrt kmn šk

"Hurry(!), build houses!

Hurry(!), erect a palace!

Hurry(!), houses shall ye build!

Hurry(!), a palace shall ye erect!

Amidst the cliffs of the Šapān

— (by) the 1000 . . . . . — let him have (his) house.

— (by) the 10000 . . . . . — (his) palace!"

<sup>45</sup> Contrast the imperfect *yš'd* (see below p. 302) which denotes the action "catch, seize": I AB II 9, 30, V, 1; II AB VII 35; I D I 9; II D I 35; 1934 obv. 12, 17; Syria 17 p. 212; Daniel p. 224.

<sup>46</sup> Cf. Akkadian *māri ušlāḫar* "she has born children" CH Xr 28. The "imperfect" implies an action. Thus, SS 51 f., 58 *tqtān* *u-šlāḫa* means

- lqh* "he has received" I K 169, 163.<sup>47</sup>  
*lqh* "they have received" RS 8280 (*Syria* 18 169) 1.  
*šbyn* "we have captured" III AB 29, 30.<sup>48</sup>  
*lkmī* "she is bearing on her shoulders" I D 55.<sup>49</sup>  
*lkmī* "thou (f.) art bearing on thy shoulders" I D 50, 199.  
*tmh* "he keeps" I K I 30.<sup>50</sup>

b. *qtl* of verbs of movement which expresses a state of rest that results from the movement. The examples are:

- šwt* "she has arrived" II AB IV 32.<sup>51</sup>  
*bāt* "she has entered" I D 213 f.<sup>52</sup>  
*šr* "he has . . . . ." II D I 28, II 17.<sup>53</sup>  
*yšl* "he has left" III AB 6, 30; I D 75, 78 (twice), 113.<sup>54</sup>  
*yšlt* "she has left" III D I 36.  
*l-yrt* "thou shouldest have descended" I \*AB I 6.<sup>55</sup>  
*mšy* "he has arrived" II AB II 22, III 23, V 106; I D 211.<sup>56</sup>

"they knelt down and gave birth"; furthermore I \*AB V 22; IV AB III 2, 21; II D VI 40; Nk 5, 7.

<sup>47</sup> Contrast the imperfect *yqš* "he took": III AB 10; V AB I 16; SS 3a f.; I K 204; I D 145, 184, 217; II D VI 35 f.; III D I 27; *Syria* 17 p. 171 fn. 2.

<sup>48</sup> The *y* suggests a vocalization like *šabiyānu/i*. At any rate the suffix must begin with a vowel. Another example is *šdyn* (see below fn. 96), but there is also *mšny* (below fn. 57).

<sup>49</sup> In parallelism with *yqš*; for the syntax see above fn. 31.

<sup>50</sup> For those who would expect *hš* (II AB I 29) included in this list (cf. Virolleaud, ad loc. and Albright, *JPOS* 16 117 and fn. 58) it must be said that I take the word as a proper name (see Bauer, *OLZ* 1934 col. 245 and Ginsberg, *JRAS* 1935 49).

<sup>51</sup> In parallelism with *mšyt* (see below).

<sup>52</sup> Contrast *u-šd* "while she entered" I AB I 35 (8); identical II AB IV 23.

<sup>53</sup> The meaning of the verb is unknown; the preceding *šqdš* in both passages points to a verb of movement. Perhaps it may be compared with the element *štr* of several Amurritic proper names (Th. Bauer, *Die Ostkanaaniter* 81).

<sup>54</sup> Contrast the imperfect *yšl*, *lšl* "he (she) went" I K 85, 87, 100; II D II 9, 44; III D I 24.

<sup>55</sup> Vocalize *yarištu* < \**yariš-tu*. Contrast the imperfect *yrd* etc. "he descended" I AB I 7, 8, 63 (35); I \*AB II 4; I K 30, 171.

<sup>56</sup> Contrast the imperfect *ywš(y)* etc. "he reached" I AB I 59 f. (31 f.); I \*AB VI 28, 30; V AB II 17; BH I 26; I K 108, 210; I D 89, 150, 163, 170; II D II 24, V 25. Contrast particularly *šhr mšy šfr u-šsa šl dlp qdm-š mrd* "after K. had arrived, he had a fat ox placed before him"



<i>mgyi</i>	"she has arrived" II AB II 23, III 24, IV 31.
<i>mgi</i>	"I have arrived" I AB II 19.
<i>mgy</i>	"they have arrived" IV D II 6.
<i>mgy</i>	"we have arrived" I *AB VI 5, 8. <sup>87</sup>
<i>mzû-h</i>	"he has reached him" BH II 51. <sup>88</sup>
<i>nhi</i>	"he is downed" SS 37. <sup>89</sup>
<i>npl</i>	"he lies fallen" I *AB VI 8, 30; BH II 37, 54 f. <sup>90</sup>
<i>sb</i>	"he has surrounded" II AB VI 34. <sup>91</sup>
<i>sgr</i>	"he has surrounded" I K 96. <sup>92</sup>
<i>'d</i>	"he has come in turn" BH II 46.
<i>'dr</i>	"he has left" II AB VII 7. <sup>93</sup>
<i>'y</i>	"he is upon" II AB I 24; I K 165. <sup>94</sup>
<i>'rb</i>	"he has entered" I K 159; I D 171; II D II 26; SS 62. <sup>95</sup>
<i>'rbt</i>	"she has entered" Nk 18. <sup>96</sup>

(II AB V 106 f.) on the one hand and *šgr ymgy šgr w-ha šd dñl ym* *qit* ..... "when K. arrived, he gave the bow in Dan'el's hand" (II D V 25 ff.).

<sup>87</sup>The form calls for a remark, since *šdyn* and *šdyn* make us expect \**egyn*. It is difficult to say whether the transposition of the *y* is more than a single mistake on the part of the scribe.

<sup>88</sup>Contrast *ymgû* "he reached, found" BH I 37.

<sup>89</sup>In SS 40, 43, 47 the parallelism with *manu* favors the interpretation of *nhi* as a participle.

<sup>90</sup>Contrast *ypl* "he fell" III AB 5.

<sup>91</sup>VI 31 ff.:

<i>nû b-šb' y[m-m]</i>	"Behold, on the seventh day
<i>šd šd b-ššm</i>	the fire subsided in the house,
<i>n[šd]šd b-ššm</i>	the blaze in the palace.
<i>šd šgr šgr</i>	Silver surrounded the joints(!).
<i>šgr nû šb</i>	gold was made around the bricks."

<sup>92</sup>*šl-šm ygd šl-š agr* "Let all of them be around his house."

The corresponding action, in the second part of the same text, is expressed by the imperfect *ygr* (I K 184).

<sup>93</sup>This is suggested by the parallelism with *šb* (see below). Cf. Arak. *šodera* "leave desert," Hebr. *שָׁב* *šb* "he left behind." For Arak. *š* see Brockelmann, *Grundriss* I § 59 ca.

<sup>94</sup>The imperfect *y'* "he ascended" occurs II D I 15, 39 ("to his bed"); IV D II 4 ("to their chariot").

<sup>95</sup>Contrast the imperfect *y'rb* "he entered" I \*AB III 3.

<sup>96</sup>For the line in question I propose the reading:

*š-š' 'š' b-ššl-š* "has the girl entered his house?"

That is to say, I think that Vroilleaud's alleged *m* is in reality *š* followed by the word-divider.

- rkb* "he has mounted, is riding" I K 166,  
*škb* "he has lain down, is lying" I \*AB V 19.<sup>97</sup>  
*ʔb* "he has returned" II AB VII 8.<sup>98</sup>

*lʔte'al*:

- tkms* "he lies sunken" BH II 55.<sup>99</sup>

c. *qtl* which, with a different group of verbs of movement, denotes a continuous state of movement after a rest. The examples are:

- šfr* "he gets, keeps following" I K 94 f., 182 f.<sup>100</sup>  
*šk* "he gets on his way" I K 92, 94, 180, 182.<sup>101</sup>  
*ngi-ḥm* "he made them dance (on his knees)" BH I 40.<sup>102</sup>  
*ndd* "he gets busy" V AB I 8.<sup>103</sup>  
*ʔ* "he gets started" V AB I 21; I D 208; also II D II 9?<sup>104</sup>  
*ʔs[f]* "thou getst tramping about" II AB IV 34.<sup>105</sup>  
*qm* "he gets up" V AB I 4, 18; Syria 17 311.<sup>106</sup>

<sup>97</sup> Contrast *pškb* "he laid down" I K I 34; II D I 5, 16.

<sup>98</sup> Contrast *ʔib* "he returned" I AB VI 12; I \*AB I 9, II 13; II AB VII 42; I K 33; I D IV 181; II D V 6.

<sup>99</sup> Parallel to *apl*; Virolesaud (Syria 16 285) compares Akkad. *kaṣṣum*.

<sup>100</sup> *šfr*, parallel to *šk*, is certainly a verbal form in this passage, so that all speculations based on its identification with the tribe *ššer* are wasted.

<sup>101</sup> Contrast the imperfect *ʔib* etc. "he went, marched" I AB III 7; SS 10; I K 194, 207; I D 152, 157, 165; III D VI 27; IV D II 5.

<sup>102</sup> Akkad. *naḡḡum* denotes a continuous irregular movement, "be vagrant, sicker" also (German) "schaukeln" (Jensen, *EB* VI 1 471). The context suggests that Baʿl-Hadd legitimates his children by putting them on his knees.

<sup>103</sup> Note the construction with an asyndetic imperfect and compare the same peculiarity with *ʔ* and *qm*.

<sup>104</sup> It seems that we have to differentiate between *ʔ* and *ʔp*. The former is construed with the preposition *š-* (cf., besides V AB I 21, also the imperfect forms in I AB I 56 ff.; IV AB III 121, 30), the latter with *l-*. But the matter is complicated by the fact that the *šafel* of *ʔp* is also construed with *š-* (see I AB I 15; I D 185 f., 192). The "perfect" *ʔ* occurs with asyndetic "imperfect" in I D 208 and the same construction seems to be possible after *ʔʔ* (I \*AB IV 20; II D VI 7).

<sup>105</sup> This interpretation follows a suggestion of Th. H. Gaster contained in his treatment of the text in *JRAS* 1934 377 ff. 1935 1 ff. The sentence that begins with *u-* is a *bāl* sentence.

<sup>106</sup> Here, as with *ndd* and *ʔ*, an asyndetic imperfect follows. The imperfect *qpm* means "he arose" (II AB III 13; IV AB II 17); cf. also I K 34 f.: *u-ʔikb aḥmst u-qpm ʔʔ* "the excitement subsided, and *ʔʔ* developed."

- tā* "he gets moving" II AB IV 19; II D II 39, V 31, 32;  
 III D VI 17.<sup>17</sup>  
*tā't* "she gets moving(?)" I K 14.  
*tā* "they get moving" I \*AB I 9, II 13.  
*tā'* "he gets moving off" I AB IV 30.<sup>18</sup>  
*tā'* "they get moving off" I K 300.  
*tāt* "thou (f.) getst wandering" II AB IV 33.<sup>19</sup>

3. A continuous state which a person has effected by his action with regard to another person or an object.

The examples are:

- grād* "he has (something) . . . . . " II D I 30, 48, II 3.<sup>20</sup>

<sup>17</sup> I did not find any imperfect form in the available material. For *tā* see next footnote.

<sup>18</sup> The quoted passage reads as follows:

- |                       |                                |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>tā' ālāt 'at</i>   | "The Virgin 'Anat started off; |
| <i>'idā l-tā pām</i>  | she took the direction         |
| <i>'m nst l'm āpā</i> | to the gods' light Šapāš."     |

It should be compared with I K 300 ff.:

- |                       |  |
|-----------------------|--|
| <i>tā' wādkm l-yā</i> | "The messengers started off on the re- |
|                       | turn trip;                             |
| <i>'idā pām l-yā</i>  | they took the direction                |
| <i>'m-m pāi wā</i>    | to Pāi, the king."                     |

The comparison shows that *tā'* is not a feminine form. If not, it must represent the 'fite'al.

<sup>19</sup> Cf. fn. 75.

<sup>20</sup> The three quoted passages are closely related to one another. The text in question contains perfect forms in whole sets. This fact makes it advisable to translate in full at least one of the variants (I 28 ff.):

- |                         |  |
|-------------------------|--|
| <i>an-gān bn-ā b-bā</i> | "He should establish a son of his in the |
|                         | house,                                   |
| <i>ānā b-qān ālā-ā</i>  | an offspring within his palace,          |
| <i>nāp ānā (H5-ā)</i>   | (so that) he has the stela of his divine |
|                         | ancestors(?) set up,                     |
| <i>b-qān ntr 'm-ā</i>   | ..... to the temple to him,              |
| <i>l-āp m-āp qā-ā</i>   | causing his smoke to come out of the     |
|                         | earth,                                   |
| <i>l-pr ām āp-ā</i>     | conserving his trace in the dust;        |
| <i>pāp lāt nā-ā</i>     | (so that) he has the records of his      |
|                         | ..... piled up,                          |
| <i>grād 'āp lā-ā</i>    | has the offerings ..... for him;         |
| <i>(ā)hā pā-ā b-ānā</i> | (so that) he might hold his hand in a    |
|                         | drunkenness                              |

- dḥḥ* "he has (something) sacrificed" I K 168.<sup>83</sup>  
*ḏḥḥ* "he has (something) slaughtered" II AB VI 40.<sup>84</sup>  
*ḏq* "he has (something) piled up." II D I 29, II 2.<sup>85</sup>

<i>m'ma-h</i> [h] ḏḏ' yn	that burdens him like 70 wines,
<i>spḥ kam-h</i> bt ḏ'l	..... his ..... in Ba'l's house,
[.....] i-h bt ḥ	his ..... in 'El's house;
<i>tḥ</i> ḏḏ'-h ḏ-yn [ḥ]f	(so that) he might have his distress
	attended to on the day of despoise,
<i>rḥp</i> ḏḏ'-h ḏ-yn rī	have his coat washed on the day of
	....."

<sup>83</sup> This passage also contains a whole set of perfect forms. Its significance rests on the fact that the actions which the perfect indicates as performed have been commanded before in a corresponding set of imperatives (85 ff.).—The imperfect *ḏḥḥ* "he sacrificed" is found IV D I 1, 10.

<sup>84</sup> The imperfect *ḏḥḥ* etc. "he slaughtered" occurs I AB I 18, 20; II D II 29. Once more the perfect forms appear in large numbers in the quoted text; I therefore wish to give my interpretation of it (VI 38 ff.).

<i>ḏat</i> [h] ḏ'f y'ḏḥ	"Ba'l prepared his houses,
<i>Ad</i> ḏḥ [.....] t ḥḥ-h	Hadd had the ..... of his palace
	prepared,
<i>tḥ</i> ḏḥm [ḏp] ḡm	He had oxen slaughtered and also
	sheep,
<i>ḏq</i> ḡm [m] ḥḏ	he had a fat bull spitied.
<i>ḥ(m)</i> ḡm ḏ[ḥ] ḥḥ	Hams (and) calves, yearlings,
<i>ḥm</i> ḡm [ḥ] ḥm	sheep he had ..... (and) lambs.
<i>ḡ</i> ḏḥ-h ḥḥḥ-h	He had his brother invited to his house,
<i>ḏ[r]y-h</i> ḥ-ḡrḥ ḥḥ-h	his friend to his palace;
<i>ḡ</i> ḥḥ'm ḥn ḏḡr	he had the 70 sons of 'Aṭirat invited.
<i>ḏp</i> ḥm ḥm y[n]	He had the lamb gods satisfied with
	wine,
<i>ḏp</i> ḥḥ ḡrḥ [yn]	he had the lamb goddesses satisfied
	with wine;
<i>ḏp</i> ḥm ḏḥm y[n]	he had the ox gods satisfied with wine,
<i>ḏp</i> ḥḥ ḏrḥ [yn]	he had the cow goddesses satisfied
	with wine;
<i>ḏp</i> ḥm ḥḥḥm y[n]	he had the chair gods satisfied with
	wine,
<i>ḏp</i> ḥḥ ḥḥḥ [yn]	he had the throne goddesses satisfied
	with wine;
<i>ḏp</i> ḥm ḡḥḥ yn	he had the gods of the ..... satis-
	fied with wine,
<i>ḏp</i> ḥḥ ḥḥḥ [yn]	he had the goddesses of the .....
	satisfied with wine;
<i>ḏ</i> ḥm ḡy ḥ[m]	until the gods were satiated with food
	and drink,
<i>ḡp</i> ḡḡḡm ḥḥ[...]	and the sucklings satisfied by the
	breast .....

<i>ḥ</i>	"he has (something) attended to" II D I 33, II 6. <sup>82</sup>
<i>yblt</i>	"I have (something) brought, delivered" II AB V 89. <sup>83</sup>
<i>ysq</i>	"he has (something) poured out" I K 164. <sup>84</sup>
<i>mgntm</i>	"ye have (somebody) honored" II AB III 30. <sup>85</sup>
<i>mdl</i>	"he has (some animal) yoked" II AB IV 9. <sup>86</sup>
<i>nšb</i>	"he has (something) set up" II D I 27. <sup>87</sup>

<sup>82</sup> V 87 ff.:

<i>ḥḥ ḥll ḥt</i>	"The Virgin 'Anat was amused,
<i>ḥḥ ḡḥ w-ḥḥ</i>	she lifted her voice and said:
<i>tḥr ḥl ḥrt-k yblt</i>	'Be joyful, Ba'l, I have good news for you!'

The imperfect *ybl* etc. "he brought" is found II AB I 28, V 77, 79, 93, 100, 102; SS 52.

<sup>83</sup> The perfect is required by the context. Formally *ysq* could be imperfect also ("he poured out") which it actually is I \*AB VI 14; II AB I 26, 27, 28/9, 30; V AB II 31.

<sup>84</sup> The passage (III 23 ff.) is significant because of the change in tense which it exhibits. It reads ('Al'iyan Ba'l is speaking):

<i>ḥr mgy ḥlḥn ḥl</i>	"..... After 'Al'iyan Ba'l has arrived,
<i>mgyt ḥll ḥt</i>	the Virgin 'Anat has arrived,
<i>mgm rḥt ḥrt ym</i>	ye should honor the Lady 'Aṣrat of
	Sea,
<i>tḥgn gyt ḥm</i>	ye should adore the creatress of the
	gods!
<i>w-ḥn rḥt ḥrt ym</i>	And the Lady 'Aṣrat of the Sea re-
	splied:
<i>ḥ mgm rḥt ḥrt ym</i>	'Why should ye honor the Lady 'Aṣrat
	of the Sea?
<i>tḥgn gyt ḥm</i>	adore the creatress of the gods!
<i>mgm jr ḥl ḥpḥ</i>	Have the bull honored, 'El ḥpḥ!
<i>ḥm ḡym by bḥt</i>	have the begetter of the creatures
	adored!
<i>w-ḥn ḥll ḥt</i>	And the Virgin 'Anat replied:
<i>mgm [...] rḥt ḥrt ym</i>	'We honored ..... the Lady 'Aṣrat
	of the Sea,
<i>mgy(y) gyt ḥm</i>	we adored the creatress of the gods;
[.....] <i>mgm ḥrt</i>	..... let us honor him!
[ḡḡ] <i>ḥlḥn ḥl</i>	let us adore 'Al'iyan Ba'l!'

<sup>85</sup> For this passage see below in the text.—The corresponding actions are expressed by imperfect forms I D 57 ff.

<sup>86</sup> For the context see fn. 80.—The parallel passage II 16 presents *ḥb* instead. All the other verbal forms are unchanged however. The context, as far as I can understand, requires a third person. I assume, then, that *ḥb* is a scribal mistake for *nšb*, the difference between *ḥ* and *n* being minute. The interpretation of the form as a first person in the *qal* or the

nšā	"he has (something) lifted" I K 167. <sup>88</sup>
'šb	"he has (something) established" II AB IV 13, VI 39. <sup>89</sup>
ḡštm	"ye have (somebody) adored" II AB III 31. <sup>90</sup>
šb	"he has (somebody) invited" II AB VI 44 f. <sup>91</sup>
ḡmd	"he has (some animal) harnessed" II AB IV 9. <sup>92</sup>
qmš	"he has (something) . . . . . " II AB VI 43.
qš	"they have (something) cut" II AB VI 57; V AB I 8. <sup>93</sup>
rgmt	"I have (something) told" II AB VII 23; III AB 7. <sup>94</sup>
ršs	"he has (something) washed" II D I 34, II 7. <sup>95</sup>
šdyn	"we have (something) directed" I AB IV 42. <sup>96</sup>
št	"he has (something) placed" II AB IV 10. <sup>97</sup>
štt	"he has (something) placed" II AB II 8.
štt	"I have (something) placed" II AB III 14. <sup>98</sup>
št	"they have (something) placed" II AB V 107.
šql	"he has (something) spitted, impaled" II AB VI 41. <sup>99</sup>

'afel (Harris, *JPOS* 58 107) also meets with serious difficulties arising from its formation. According to the rules established below (p. 303 ff.) both \*šqutu (qal) and \*šqisu ('afel) should be reflected by \*šb in Ugaritic.

<sup>88</sup> Contrast *ḡš* "he lifted"; with the object *ḡš* "voice" passim with parts of the body IV AB II 10, 13, 26; SS 37, 49, 55; with other objects I AB I 14; I D II 58; I K 99, 187.

<sup>89</sup> See above fn. 82.

<sup>90</sup> See above fn. 85.

<sup>91</sup> The imperfect is very common in the phrase *ḡš ḡš w-ḡš* "he lifted his voice and said" and its variations.

<sup>92</sup> Contrast the imperfect *ḡmd* "he harnessed" SS 10; I D II 58; IV D II 3.

<sup>93</sup> *š-šb mšš qš mrd* "with a sharp(?) sword he had a fat (animal) cut."

<sup>94</sup> *I-rgmt l-k l-šlḡn š'l* "I have told thee, 'Al'iyan Ba'l, thou canst rely, Ba'l, on my word!"

<sup>95</sup> Contrast the imperfect *ḡrḡs* etc. "he washed" V AB II 32, 34, 38; I K III 151.

<sup>96</sup> Literally "casted"; Aram. *šāḡ*. Cf. H. Bauer, *OLZ* 1934 col. 242.

<sup>97</sup> Contrast the imperfect *ḡst* etc. "he placed" I AB I 15, 17; I \*AB III II, V 6; II AB IV 14, V 123, 126; VI 8, VII 15; III AB 27; SS 38; NK 34; I D 10, 59, 67, 74, 112, 120, 140, 167, 208 f., 221; III D I 17, 28, VI 18.

<sup>98</sup> The form is noteworthy. The two *t*'s are comprehensible only on the assumption that a vowel separates them. It is the "separating vowel" found with middle weak roots in Hebrew; cf. above fns. 11 and 19.

<sup>99</sup> For the meaning see Albright, *JPOS* 14 128 fn. 136 a.

- ʔn* "he has (something) repeated" II AB VI 3.  
*ʔnt* "I have (something) repeated" III AB 8.

Furthermore, outside the *qal*:

- ʔly* "he has (something) set up, erected" Syria 16 p. 178.<sup>100</sup>  
*ʔlyt* "she has (something) set up, erected" *ibid.* p. 177.<sup>101</sup>  
*ʔpq* "he has (somebody) satisfied" II AB VI 46 ff.<sup>102</sup>  
*ʔrd* "he has (something) brought down" I K 169.

It is of the utmost significance to note that the object forms an integral part of the respective phrases. They are exclusively descriptive and focused on what has happened, or is happening, to the affected person or thing.

It is not accidental that such perfects occur in clusters after corresponding imperatives; e. g. II AB IV 3 ff.:

- w-ʔ[ny l-tʔh rbt] ʔʔrt ym* "And it happened that the Lady  
 'Aṣirat of the Sea commanded:  
*[mdl 'r] ʔmd pʔl* 'Yoke the ass! Harness the stallion.'  
*[ʔt gpnm dt] ʔsp* put on the housings (?) of silver  
*dt yr[g nqbnm]* of gold the .....!  
*'db gpn ʔtni[-h]* Prepare the housing (?) of thy she-  
 asses!<sup>1</sup>  
*yʔm' qd[ʔ] w-ʔmr[r]* Qdš w-'Amrr obeyed.  
*mdl 'r ʔmd pʔl* He had the ass yoked, the stallion  
 harnessed;  
*ʔt gpnm dt ʔsp* he had the housings (?) of silver  
 put on,  
*dt yrq nqbnm* of gold the .....;  
*'db gpn ʔtni[-h]* he had the housing (?) of his she-  
 asses prepared.  
*yʔbq qdš w-ʔmr* Qdš w-'Amrr embraced (and)  
*yʔn ʔʔrt l-bmʔ 'r* placed 'Aṣirat upon the back of  
 the ass;  
*l-ymsmʔt bmt pʔl* upon the ..... of the back  
 of the stallion."

<sup>100</sup> *pqr d-ʔly 'zn l-dgn b'l-h* "a *pqr* which 'zn (male proper name) has set up for Dagān, his lord."

<sup>101</sup> *ʔkn d-ʔlyt tʔryl l-dgn* "a stela which Tʔryl (female proper name) has set up for Dagān."

<sup>102</sup> For the context see above fn. 82.



In this text we have first the command (imperatives), then the fulfillment expressed by a description of the effect it has on the affected objects (*qtl*), and finally the actions which logically follow (*yqtl*).

This use of the *qtl* seems very important. It makes us understand how, in West Semitic, the "perfect" could acquire its familiar connotation, namely that of a past action. The difference between "he has an ass yoked" and "he has yoked an ass, he yoked an ass" is very slight. It is primarily a difference in focus; the former expression is focused on the affected person or thing, the latter on the acting person. But the modification causes the description to become a narration. In this way the aspect shifts easily to a tense.

In a few cases we have apparently to deal with the speaker's state which was brought about by an outside agency or influence. It is the situation in which in Semitic the passive is appropriate. The passages exhibit the further peculiarity that the object precedes the verb.

These passages call for a fuller treatment:

a.) II AB VI 36. Ba'l is selected to become ruler. There is a serious obstacle, however; he has no palace of his own. 'Aṭirat, in a conference with 'El, obtains the order for erecting a house for Ba'l. The task is entrusted to Kuṣar who does the work promptly. The closing lines of the section reads:

<i>šmḥ ḏllyn b'l</i>	"'Alīyān Ba'l rejoiced:
<i>&lt;b&gt;ḥt-y<sup>100</sup> bnt dt ksp</i>	"Houses I got built that (are) of silver!
<i>ḥkl-y dt-m ḥry 'dbt</i>	a palace that is of gold I got established!"

In the whole passage Ba'l is never mentioned as the architect, he is inactive. The circumstance that the palace is built for him is characteristic in the situation. The context, then, precludes translating "I have built," "I have established." On the other hand, *bnt* can be nothing else than a 1st person singular, the 3rd person singular feminine being *ḥnyt*. Taking into consideration the

<sup>100</sup> The emendation is based on the parallel passage VIII 35.

unusual position of the object,<sup>104</sup> I venture to suggest the vocalization *bunttu/i*, *\*udibtu/i*.

b.) I AB VI 10, 14. During the combat between Mut and Ba'l the latter unexpectedly is assisted by the creation of (seventy) brothers:

<i>bn il-m ml pñ</i>	"El's son Mut realized:
<i>dhym yin b'l</i>	'Brothers Ba'l has been given!
<i>lpay bnm ñm-y kly-y</i>	Woe, my mother's sons (will be) my annihilators!'
<i>yñb 'm b'l srrt sñn</i>	He returned to Ba'l, to the cliffs of the Šapān,
<i>yñb gh w-yñb</i>	he lifted his voice and said:
<i>dhym ynt b'l</i>	'Brothers, Ba'l, thou hast been given!
<i>lpay bnm ñm-y kly-y</i>	Woe, my mother's sons (will be) my annihilators!'"

The interchange between *yñn* and *yñt* enforces the inference that the construction is personal, i. e. that *dhym* is the object. Even in this mythical world it is out of the question that Ba'l might give himself brothers who are sons of his (and Mut's) mother. We have to deal, then, with a clear passive; the proper vocalization is *yutina* and *yutintu/i*.

These passive forms, it must be added, have the force of real perfects also and thus differ from the corresponding internal passives of the West Semitic languages. They describe the condition in which Ba'l has been put by the erection of the palace and the creation of brothers.

The above lists exhaust the material as far as it is comprehensible to me. It may well be that progress in the interpretation will add new examples. Such additions will hardly affect the principal result of this investigation which may be formulated as follows: the *qñl* forms of Ugaritic have a descriptive stative connotation.

<sup>104</sup> Perhaps the fact is not entirely irrelevant that in both passages the preceding object *ñm-y* is not separated from the following word by the word-divider. The end of the word is regularly neglected wherever a close connection exists between two words (prepositions and nouns, conjunctions, *nomen regens* and genitive). The point cannot be pressed, however, since in example b (below) the word-divider is used.

The use of the Ugaritic *qtl* in group 1 (above p. 268 ff.) has its analogies in Hebrew (Bergsträsser, *Gram.* 2 § 6g). But it is atypical there, while the normal function of the Hebrew *qtl* is not represented at all in Ugaritic. As a whole, the Ugaritic *qtl*, as far as its function is concerned, may justly be compared with the Akkadian permissive.

#### B. Form (vocalization)

The conclusions reached in the preceding section impart an added interest to the question: how should *qtl* be vocalized in Ugaritic?

The purely consonantal writing system of Ugaritic does not indicate as a rule the vowels with which the consonants must be pronounced. The fortunate exceptions are those words which contain the radical alif. It is today a universally acknowledged fact that the alif appears in three different forms which vary with the vowel that follows.<sup>102</sup>

The question concerning the vocalization of the third radical can be settled quickly. Examples like *lā*, *mā*, *prā*, *lānā*; *bāt*, *ysā*, *māš*; *nāš* demonstrate uniformly that an *a* was pronounced after the third radical in the 3rd person of the singular. This means that, in this respect, Ugaritic agrees with the West Semitic languages, both northern and southern, as against Akkadian.

Much more important, but also infinitely more difficult is the question of the vowel which goes with the middle radical. It is a well known fact that the West Semitic perfect exhibits a variation between *a* (chiefly transitive) and *i/u* (chiefly intransitive),<sup>103</sup> while Akkadian shows uniformly *i/u* and always has stative connotation. The question arises: does Ugaritic agree with Akkadian in form also, as it does in function?

The investigator has two lines of approach open. He may examine the roots which contain alif; and he may, furthermore, refer to comparable forms in the related languages.

<sup>102</sup> Albright, *JPOS* 12 205 f.; Friedrich, *ZA NF* 7 305 ff. The variation may be phonetic, expressing three different timbres of the glottal stop. This has been Albright's opinion from the beginning. It also accounts for the fact that in closed syllables the alif may vary according to the preceding vowel, without being affected by Obermann's objection (*JAGS* 56 496) that it is incompatible with the very nature of sounds and syllables in Semitic speech that a consonant imply the preceding vowel.

<sup>103</sup> Cf. particularly J. Jolton, *Mémoires de l'Université St.-Joseph* 15 1-32, and previously *Mémoires de la Faculté Orientale Beyrouth* 5 350-62.

Unfortunately no verb with alif as middle radical occurs in our list, such verbs being very rare. But, verbs with alif as the third radical also have a bearing on the problem. For, where alif closes the syllable, the variant which is selected indicates the timbre of the glottal stop and thereby, indirectly, the preceding vowel.<sup>107</sup> A case in point is *šmli* "thou (f.) art thirsty" (list 1) which must be vocalized *šami'ta*. The vocalization with middle *i*, in this case, is confirmed by all related languages.

The other examples of list 1, all intransitive, can be approached only with the comparative method. But the fact that many of them are represented by *qatila* forms in one or more other Semitic languages<sup>108</sup> makes it virtually certain that in all of them the middle radical is to be vocalized with *i* (in a few of them possibly with *u*); in no case *a* is likely.<sup>109</sup>

As to the subdivision "emotions and perceptions," the remark will suffice that according to common Semitic concepts such verbs do not imply action; they are felt as qualities of the affected person and therefore belong properly to the theme *qafi/ula*. The words in this list are frequently found with this vocalization in the related languages.<sup>110</sup>

In list 2 there is likewise no verb with alif; the reconstruction of the vocalism, therefore, depends entirely on the evidence of the related languages. West Semitic, to be sure, vocalizes *'ahaga* with middle *a*. But this form denotes "he seized" and not "he holds" as in Ugaritic. Moreover, at least one West Semitic language,

<sup>107</sup> See fn. 105 and Harris, *JAOS* 67 151 ff.

<sup>108</sup> Hebr. אָרַח, Akkad. *ariḫ*; Arab. *daḡga*; Akkad. *eriat*, Hebr. אָרַח; Arab. *ḥayya*; Hebr. אָרַח, Arab. *ḥukama*; Akkad. *ḥaliq*; Hebr. אָרַח, Arab. *ḥasira*; Hebr. אָרַח, Aram. *ḥes*, Arab. *ḥabisa*, Akkad. *ḥabā*; Hebr. אָרַח; Hebr. אָרַח, Aram. *malā*, Arab. *mal'a*, Akkad. *maši'*; Akkad. *matig*; Hebr. אָרַח, Arab. *na'ima*; Arab. *'azza*; Hebr. אָרַח, Arab. *ḡami'a*, Akkad. *gami'*; Arab. *galla*; Hebr. אָרַח, Arab. *raḡḡa*; Arab. *ṭamma*.

<sup>109</sup> An additional remark is in order on the middle weak roots in list 1. Nobody will doubt that *ḡ* should be read *ḡaba*; cf. Hebr. אָרַח < \**ḡaba*, Aram. *ḡāḡ*, Arab. *ḡāḡa*, Akkad. *ḡāḡ*. For *mi* the reading *māḡa* is suggested by Hebr. אָרַח, Aram. *miḡ*, Akkad. *miḡ*, although Arabic presents *maḡa*; thus presumably also *ḡaba*, cf. Hebr. אָרַח (1st person) and Akkad. *ḡibum* "grayhaired, old man." The other cases (*ḡat*, *lā*, *uḡt*, *pa*) are complicated by the divergence of these verbs in the individual languages. In the present context it is immaterial whether *pa/iga* should be read *pa* or *pāga*.

<sup>110</sup> Hebr. אָרַח; Arab. *ḡāḡa*; Hebr. אָרַח; Aram. *ḡāḡ*; Arab. *ḡāḡa*; Hebr. אָרַח, Akkad. *ḡami/ḡāḡ*; Hebr. אָרַח, Arab. *ḡāḡa*; Arab. *ḡāḡa*.

namely Aramaic, possesses by the side of *'eḥaḏ* "he seized" the other form *'aḥiḏ* "(he is) holding." It coincides in form as well as in force with Akkadian *aḥiṣ*. In Ethiopic also a comparable form *'eḥiṣ* is extant.

In Akkadian the permansive *aḥiṣ* is a rather common type; also *walḏat* (ī. sgl.), *laḡi*, *tamiḡ*, directly comparable with Ugaritic forms in the above lists, actually occur. The peculiar meaning of these forms which may best be rendered by "he has"<sup>111</sup> makes inheritance from primitive Semitic virtually certain.

The same is obvious for Aramaic *'aḥiḏ* and its analogues, i. e. *ḥiḥ* and *ḥiḏq* "holding," *ḥiḥ* and *ḡaḥ* "possessing," *ḥiḥ* and *ḥiḥ* "carrying." From an inner-Aramaic point of view the discrepancy between form and connotation is so startling that the standard grammars—following apparently the traditions of the Arameans themselves—declare that these forms are passive participles (this the usual function of *ḥiḥ* in Aramaic) with active force.<sup>112</sup> Such a description fails to explain the form. It is explained, however, when we regard the examples as survivals of an older meaning of *ḥiḥ* that was a stative rather than a passive participle.<sup>113</sup>

Ethiopic *'eḥiṣ* further strengthens the argument; it is paralleled by *sewār* "carrying" and both are explained as passive participles with active force.<sup>114</sup>

Thus, the evidence enforces the inference that primitive Semitic possessed a stative *\*aḥiḏ(a)* "he holds" which even in West Semitic partly survived beside the active (and younger) *\*aḥaḏa* "he seized." There is no reason for denying its existence in Ugaritic. The form *aḥiḏ*, then, must be vocalized *'aḥiḏa*.

In Aramaic there exist more of these strange passive participles

<sup>111</sup> See Ungnad, *ZA* 31 277-81 where an excellent characterization of the form is given.

<sup>112</sup> Th. Nöldeke, *Syr. Gram.* § 280; Th. Nöldeke, *Mondäische Gram.* p. 390 f.; F. Schulthess, *Gram. des christlich paläst. Aram.* § 96; cf. G. Dalman, *Aram. Gram.* p. 283 f. It should be made clear that the forms in question occur exclusively as predicates.

<sup>113</sup> It is by no means surprising that *'aḥiḏ* is inflected as a predicative noun. The scarcity of *ḥiḥ* in Aramaic, and its peculiar meaning, had caused it to be felt as a participle, a fact which resulted in its nominal inflection.

<sup>114</sup> In Ethiopic *ḥiḥ* is the normal form of the passive participle. For the intransitive connotation cf. particularly Dillmann-Bezold § 108 where among others *ḥemem* "ill," *ḥezem* "sad," *meḥ* "full," *seḥ* "lying" are quoted.

with active force. Another group comprises verbs with the general meaning "put, place"; e.g. *ḥḡr* and *krk* "surrounding," *knš* "having deposited," *šm* "having placed," *smš* "laying down."<sup>115</sup> This group furnishes a striking parallel to the Ugaritic cases collected in list 3. Again, Akkadian duplicates the parallel. The same line of reasoning can be likewise applied, then, to this group and leads to the conclusion that we have to read in Ugaritic *dabih*, *yabiltu/i*, *naš'a* etc.

With the Ugaritic groups 2b (*šm* etc.) and 2c (e.g. *tb*) the situation is more complex. Again we have here Akkadian permissives like *wašiat*, *warid*, *ek*, *erib*; *alik*, *tebi* which can be directly compared with corresponding Ugaritic forms. But the Aramaic evidence is not so strikingly analogous for this group as for the others. I am tempted to compare it with Aramaic formations like 'azzil and 'alti "having come," yattih "having taken a seat," qarrib "having come close," 'arriq "having fled,"<sup>116</sup> all of them derived from verbs of movement and corresponding to the Ugaritic forms as far as function is concerned. The formation, it must be admitted, is not *fa'il* but *fa'il*; but this does not appear to be fatal to the assumption of a very close relationship.<sup>117</sup> Both formations are at least similar in function as in form; and, furthermore, it should be noted that adjectival formations like *dql*, 'z, *ql*, (*mt* (see list 1) are on the one hand paralleled by Aramaic *daggilā*, 'azzilā, *qalilā*, *tammimā* (*fa'ilā* being the most common form of Aramaic adjectives), and, on the other hand, also by Arabic<sup>118</sup> *daḡiḡan*, 'asizun, *qalilun*, *tamimun*.<sup>119</sup>

<sup>115</sup> See fn. 112.

<sup>116</sup> Th. Nöldeke, *Syr. Gram.* § 118; Th. Nöldeke, *Mosadische Gram.* § 100; F. Schulthess, *Gram. des christl. paläst. Aram.* § 103; G. Dalman, *Aram. Gram.* p. 162 f.

<sup>117</sup> Nöldeke, l. c., calls *fa'il* the verbal adjective, or perfect participle of intransitive verbs, i. e. the form which corresponds to *f'il* with transitive verbs. Cf. also Brockelmann, *Grundriss* I § 154 b.

<sup>118</sup> Cf. also *ḥakimun*, *ḥasirun*, *na'imun*, *ṣam'un*, *raḡibun* which compare with the intransitive verbs *ḥakuma*, *ḥasira*, *na'ima*, *ṣam'a*, *raḡiba*, all of them represented by corresponding Ugaritic words in list 1.

<sup>119</sup> The middle weak roots (cf. fn. 108) call for some special remarks. The *ḥat* of the list above is certainly to be read *ḥat*, as it is suggested unambiguously by Hebr. חָטַט and Arab. ḥatāt. Cases like *qm* and *fb* are more difficult, since the divergences of the individual languages obscure the common origin. In Hebrew (חָמַם, חָפַח) and in Aramaic (*qām*, *qām*) we find the vowel *a* uniformly throughout the paradigm; in Ethiopic, how-

Thus the vocalization with middle *i* (i. e. *'atīwat* etc. and *tab'ā* etc.) is also favored by certain circumstances in the groups 2b and 2c, although the result cannot claim the same degree of certainty as in the other groups.

Even if 2b and 2c are excepted (which, in my opinion, is unnecessary), the result obtained reveals that not only in function but also in form (vocalization), Ugaritic *qtl* is substantially closer to the Akkadian permansive than it is to the West Semitic perfect. Thus the inference which in the preceding section was based on a scrutiny of the function of the *qtl*, in the present section, is paralleled by a similar inference with regard to its form.

I do not wish to give the impression that I advocate the separation of Ugaritic from the western group of the Semitic languages. There are enough important features in the Ugaritic *qtl* to preclude this. It can rightly be said that *qtl* is further removed from the predikative noun (adjective) than is the Akkadian permansive, though it is not yet purely verbal to the same extent as the West Semitic *qatala*. It shares with the northern branch of West Semitic the *-t*-suffix of the 1st person singular (*ḥarī, yd't, ph't; mgt; šlt*) where the Akkadian displays *-aku*. Ugaritic also shares the internal passive which is possibly a West Semitic innovation, no matter how enigmatic its origin may be.

If it is permissible to interpret the situation in terms of history, one may say that Ugaritic reveals an older stage of development, in which the West Semitic *qtl* is still definitely closer to the Akkadian permansive in function as well as in form.

## II. *yytl*

In the preceding section of this paper it has been pointed out that in Ugaritic *qtl* has a stative connotation. It has nothing to do with tenses, and, more specifically, it does not serve as the usual tense in the narration. For this function *yytl* is generally em-

ployed, this vowel is *ā* throughout ( *qāra, pāra* ). Arabic, on the other hand, exhibits an alternation between *a* before vocalic suffix and *u* before consonantal suffix ( *qāma, qumtu* ).

As far as Ugaritic is concerned, the word *qī* (I K 88, 178) would be of utmost importance, if (as I am inclined to believe) it means "it amounts to . . ." (cf. Arab. *'āla*). It would prove that Ugaritic, like Ethiopic, employed *ā* (or *ō*) in the third person singular also. Unfortunately the interpretation is doubtful.



ployed, as has correctly been stated by Baneth,<sup>120</sup> Bauer,<sup>121</sup> and Friedrich,<sup>122</sup> but denied by others.<sup>123</sup>

Examples are so numerous that a full listing seems useless. It is necessary, however, to draw attention to the usage of the different moods of the theme *yqtl*. They are difficult to recognize because they are expressed by vocalic variations of the 3rd radical. Since the orthography is principally consonantal, clarification can be expected only from a careful study of those classes of verbs which, by vocalic variation of the 3rd radical, are also modified in their consonantal structure. Such classes are a. the *tertiae alif*,<sup>124</sup> b. the *tertiae y*,<sup>125</sup> c. the *mediae geminatae*.<sup>126</sup> Only forms of these classes will be treated here.

### 1. Indicative

- a. *ibā* "he entered" I AB I 35 (7); II AB IV 23.  
*ymlā* "he filled" V AB II 25.  
*yṛā*<sup>127</sup> "he feared" I AB VI 30.  
*yšā* "he lifted" I K 99, 187 and *passim*.  
*tšā* "she lifted" I D 59 and *passim*.  
*tšān*<sup>128</sup> "they spoiled(?)" I K 33.  
*yšā* "he rose" I D 31; II D V 6.

There are two forms which add an *-n* that is hard to explain.

<sup>120</sup> OLE 1932 col. 449.

<sup>121</sup> *Das Alphabet von Ras Schamra* (1932) 84.

<sup>122</sup> ZA NF 7 (1933) 312.

<sup>123</sup> The essentially different opinion of Albright (*JPOS* 14 112 ff.) will be implicitly criticized in the following presentations. For different views see also Ginsberg, *Oriental* 5 176, 181; 7 3 and Harris, *JAOS* 57 152 fn. II.

<sup>124</sup> See above fn. 105.

<sup>125</sup> Scheme: *yāny* indicative or subjunctive (i.e. *yānsi* or *yānsi* respectively); *yān* apocopate (i.e. *yānsi*). See Albright, *JPOS* 14 113.

<sup>126</sup> Scheme: *yql* indicative or subjunctive (i.e. *yqilā* or *yqilā* respectively); *yql* apocopate (i.e. *yqilā*).

<sup>127</sup> The editio princeps reads *yrd*; this also in Bauer's transliteration (*Lis alfab. Keilschrifttexte* p. 47). The parallel passage (see below fn. 129) makes me prefer Ginsberg's reading (*Oriental* 6 197).

<sup>128</sup> The sequence of two different *alifs* is worth noticing. Similar cases are *yšān* (see next fn.) and *mān* II AB VI 41/2.—As to the prefix *t-* it should be added that *taqtulāni* seems to be the normal form of the 3rd plural (see provisionally Ginsberg, *Oriental* 5 188 fn.).

- grdn* <sup>129</sup> "he feared" I \*AB II 6,  
*grdn* <sup>130</sup> "he feared" I \*AB II 22.
- b. *ybk* "he wept" I K 26; I D 147.  
*ibk* "she wept" I D 34.  
*ibkynh* "she bewailed him" I AB I 16.  
*lgl* "she left" I AB I 34; II AB IV 23; II D VI 48.  
*ldrynn* "she winnowed him" I AB II 32/33.<sup>131</sup>  
*ghdy* "he sent, directed" I \*AB VI 19.  
*lhd* "she directed" I AB I 3.  
*thdy* "she rejoiced" V AB II 24.  
*ydy* "he walked" I \*AB VI 18.  
*d[y]* "she walked" I AB I 2.  
*ymjy* "he came, he reached; it elapsed" I AB I 60  
 (32); <sup>132</sup> BH I 36; I K 210; II D II 46.<sup>133</sup>

<sup>129</sup> The passage reads as follows:

<i>grdn dlyn</i> <i>yt</i>	"'Al'iyān Ba'l became afraid;
<i>it'-an rkb</i> <i>'rpt</i>	the rider of the clouds was disgusted."

It must be compared with I AB VI 30 f.:

<i>grd</i> <i>bn il(-m)</i> <i>nt</i>	"Mut, 'El's son, became afraid;
<i>it' ydd</i> <i>il</i> <i>šr</i>	the beloved one of 'El, šr, was dis-
	gusted."

The word-divisor between *it'* and *an* does not necessitate the positing of a word *an*; in other places the suffixal cluster is also (e.g. III AB 31) separated by the word-divisor from the verbal form to which it is attached. There is, then, no reason to divide *grdn* in *grd* and *dn* against the tablet which, in this case, shows no sign of separation. Ginsberg's experimenting with the alleged words *an* and *dn* (*Orient*, 5 189, cf. 167) is altogether unsatisfactory.

<sup>130</sup> Virolleaud's autograph presents *ytr. dn* with a break immediately before the *y* and a point (word-divisor) in the indicated place. The context, as far as can be judged from its present state, suggests the reading given in the text; it should be regarded, however, as uncertain.

<sup>131</sup> It is still an unexplained problem why, with verbal forms that attach the pronominal suffix of the 3rd singular, we find sometimes *-a* and *-an*, in most cases however *-ah*.

<sup>132</sup> I 58 ff. (30 ff.):

<i>yš l-kāš dlyn</i> <i>h'l</i>	"He sat down on the throne of 'Al'iyān
	Ba'l;
<i>p'n-h l-tmšyn</i> <i>hdm</i>	his feet indeed reached the footstool,
<i>rš-h l-ymšy</i> <i>šp-h</i>	his head indeed reached its top(?)."

For *ymšy* see above p. 275 f.

<sup>133</sup> *grhm ymšy* "months elapsed."

<i>imḡyn</i>	"they reached" I AB I 59 (31). <sup>124</sup>
<i>lḡṣy</i>	"she adored" II AB II 11. <sup>125</sup>
<i>yṣly</i>	"he heated" I D 39.
<i>lḡny</i>	"she created" II D VI 41.
<i>lḡry</i>	"she met" V AB II 4.
<i>yṣgy</i>	"he gave to drink" II D I 11, 14.
<i>yṣḡynh</i>	"he gave him to drink" V AB I 9; II D VI 31.
<i>lḡynh</i>	"she gave him to drink" I D 317.
<i>lṣṣynh</i>	"I drank it" II AB III 16. <sup>126</sup>
<i>yṣny</i>	"he repeated" II AB VII 30. <sup>127</sup>

## Pi'el:

<i>āḥwy</i>	"I revealed" II D VI 32; III D I 27 (or present?)
<i>yḥly</i>	"he annihilated" III AB 27.

## Šafel:

<i>yš'ty</i>	"he brought up" I D 185. <sup>128</sup>
<i>lš'lynh</i>	"she brought him up" I AB I 15.
<i>lššgy</i>	"she made (them) drink" II D V 29.
<i>lštḥwy</i>	"she prostrated herself" I AB I 38 (10), IV 26.

In addition, with an "energetic" -n (attached to the indicative?):

<i>ymḡyn</i>	"he went" I D 170; II D II 24. <sup>129</sup>
<i>imḡyn</i>	"she went" V AB II 17.
c. <i>ymḥ</i>	"he subsided" III AB 17. <sup>130</sup>
<i>ymr</i>	"he blessed" II D I 36. <sup>131</sup>
<i>tmrn</i>	"thou bleaseth me" I D 195.
<i>yql</i>	"he prostrated himself" III AB 23, 25; <sup>132</sup> IV AB II 18; I D 124, 129.

<sup>124</sup> See fn. 132.

<sup>125</sup> For *ḡṣm* see above p. 281.

<sup>127</sup> For *ny* see above p. 282.

<sup>126</sup> For *lṣy* see above p. 272.

<sup>128</sup> For *lṣy* see above p. 282.

<sup>129</sup> The context warrants that we deal with singular forms:

*dnl šr-ā ymḡyn*

"Dan'el went to his house,

*yṣlql dnl l-ākī-ā*

Dan'el proceeded to his palace."

<sup>130</sup> For the context see below p. 297. I take the *l*- which precedes the form as an affirmatory particle corresponding to Akkad. *lā* (see Baneth, OLE 1932 col. 449 f.).

<sup>131</sup> The root is *mr* as it is demonstrated by I D 194 f. where the proportion *lḥkm* : *ḥkt* = *tmrn* : *mrri* is obvious.

<sup>132</sup> The meaning in these two passages is apparently "he sank down."

- tgł* "she prostrated herself" I AB I 37 (9); II AB IV 25; I D 3, 138, 143.  
*tgln* "they prostrated themselves" I D 109, 115.

In addition, with a suffixed *-n*:

- tmrn* "they blessed" II D I 25.

### 3. Subjunctive

The existence of a special subjunctive, however probable it may be *a priori*, cannot be proved as yet. One may expect that in the singular it would show a vocalic variation with the 3rd radical—very probably an *-a*—but no such form is known from *fertise alif* where alone a variation of this kind could be expressed in writing.<sup>143</sup> One may also expect pairs of forms which in the singular look like indicatives and in the plural like apocopates; such pairs are likewise unknown.<sup>144</sup> In the three categories which I proposed to treat, the following forms can be listed as subjunctives:

- a. No form known.  
 b. *ybkky* "(that) he wept" I K 39.  
*ymgy* "(that) he came" II D V 25.<sup>145</sup>  
*yyny* "(that) he created" I D 220 (?).  
     *Piel*:  
*yhwy* "(that) he revealed" II D VI 30.  
*tkly* "(that) thou annihilateth" I \*AB I 2, 28.  
 c. No examples known.

<sup>143</sup> Albright (*JPOS* 14 113) claims *l-yṣd* as such a form. It must be stated, however, that after *l-* the apocopate would be appropriate (see below p. 296). In my opinion *ṣd* is a perfect (see above p. 275).

<sup>144</sup> Attention should be called to SS 67 f.:

<i>ṣmt ṣmṣ ṣṣṣṣ</i>	"eight years were complete,
<i>'d ṣm ṣ'mm</i>	since the Gracious Gods
<i>ṣṣṣ ṣṣ</i>	roamed the plain,
<i>ṣṣṣ ṣṣṣ ṣṣṣ</i>	wandered over the confines of the desert."

Here plural forms with *s*-suffix are apparently in a dependent clause. On this evidence alone it would be too hasty to infer that Ugaritic kept the *s*-suffixes in the subjunctive.

<sup>145</sup> In a sentence dependent on *ḏḥr*; for imperfect forms in such clauses see also I AB V 20; Nk 32 f.

It need hardly be said that the subjunctive has its proper place in dependent clauses.

### 3. Apocopate

The existence of an apocopate (this term seems preferable to "jussive," since it is merely descriptive of the form) has first been pointed out by Friedrich (*ZA NF* 7 309 fn. 1) and has since been accepted by all scholars. In the three classes described above the following forms are found:<sup>148</sup>

- a. *yəl* "he shall leave" I K 85, 86, 100; II D II 9, 44(?)<sup>149</sup>  
*təl* "she shall leave" III D I 24.  
*yməl* "he shall reach" I AB V 4.  
*yməl* "he shall find" BH I 37.  
*ymrəl* "they shall fatten" II AB VII 50.  
*təl* "they shall lift" I \*AB II 16; I D 89.<sup>148</sup>  
*lɛp* "I will eat(?)" I \*AB I 5.  
*lɛnəl* "I will jealously watch" SS 21.  
*yqrəl* "he shall call" II AB VII 47.  
*lqrəl* "I will call" SS 1.  
     *Səfel*:  
*əlɛp* "I will cause to leave" III AB 2.

Add, with a suffixed *-ni*, possibly to be compared with Hebr. *šān*:

- tələn* "they shall lift" I K 303.  
*lqrən* "I will call" SS 23.

Outside the plural (*ymrəl*, *təl*, *tələn*) the final vowel (*i*, *ə* and *ə* occur) indicates the timbre of the alif and thus indirectly the preceding vowel.

- b. *yip* "he shall take" I K 83.  
*ibd* "I shall praise" Nk 1, 37/8.  
*ibb* "she shall weep" III D I 39.  
*ymj* "he shall go" I D 156, 163.  
*tmj* "she shall go" I AB VI 28.  
*y'n* "he shall answer" I AB I 49 (21) and passim.<sup>149</sup>

<sup>148</sup> For the sake of uniformity the apocopate is translated, throughout the following list, as if it were used with the force of a jussive.

<sup>149</sup> For *yq* see above p. 275.

<sup>149</sup> For *uā* see above p. 281.

<sup>149</sup> Most cases show the form after *u-* and then *-ni* (see below group 5). In three cases of this combination, namely I AB II 13; II AB VI 7; III

<i>t'n</i>	"she shall answer" I AB I 47 (19) and <i>passim</i> . <sup>100</sup>
<i>tšqyn</i>	"thou shalt give me to drink" I D 215.
<i>yšl</i>	"he shall drink" I D 219.
<i>tšt</i>	"thou shalt drink" I AB VI 43.
<i>nšt</i>	"let us drink" SS 72.
<i>šft</i>	"I shall . . . . .," I K 201. <sup>101</sup>

## Passive.

<i>ybn</i>	"it shall be built" II AB IV 62. <sup>102</sup>
------------	---

## Pi'el:

<i>škw</i>	"I will keep (him) alive(?)" I D 16.
<i>tkl</i>	"thou shalt annihilate" I D 202.
<i>škl</i>	"I will annihilate" I AB V 24.
<i>tkly</i>	"they shall annihilate" I AB II 36. <sup>103</sup>

AB 7, the text offers 'n, probably by mistake. In three other cases *y'n* lacks the preceding *w*: II AB III 10; V AB I 23; I K 21 f. Once *w-y'ny* is found: IV AB III 5. Finally, in two cases, the short form *y'n* is preceded by the subject which usually follows: I \*AB I 26; I D I 12.—Ginsberg, *Oriens* 5 176 thinks that the root is 'nm, and he explains *y'n* as *y'n'nm*, but the plural form *t'ny* (IV AB II 2; SS 12) is contradictory; cf. furthermore Rahlfs, 'np and 'np in the Psalms.

<sup>100</sup> Here too numerous examples after *w*- exist; in one additional passage *t'n* is after *i*- (V AB I 15), and in two others after *k*- (II AB II 14, 27).

<sup>101</sup> The passage, in my opinion, contains a vow:

<i>i šft šft grm</i>	"How can I . . . . . the 'Aširat of . . . . .
<i>w-šft šdgm</i>	and the 'Elat of . . . . . ?
<i>km šry št-y šqš</i>	If I take the lass into my house,
<i>ššrb šmst špr-y</i>	make the girl enter into my court,
<i>šn-š ksp-m šm</i>	double her (weight) in silver I will
	give,
<i>w-šft-š šry-m</i>	and three times her (weight) in
	gold!"

<sup>102</sup> IV 61 ff.:

<i>km šmš šft šbm šmš</i>	"If the maid 'Aširat moulds bricks,
<i>ybn šl l-š' km šl-m</i>	a house shall be built for Ba' as
	for 'El,
<i>w-špr k-bn šft</i>	a temenos as for the sons of 'Aširat."

<sup>103</sup> *He-š l-škl 'grm*  
*mt-š l-škl npr*

"so that the birds might eat his flesh,  
the . . . . . might annihilate his  
limbs(?)."

The noun *npr*, being in parallelism to *'grm*, must be taken as a collective and conditions the plural of the verb.

*ypt* "he shall seduce" SS 39.

Šaf'el:

*yššq* "he shall give to drink" II D II 30/1, 33, 35, 38.

Add, with a suffixed -n, perhaps to be compared with Hebr. שָׁנָה: <sup>154</sup>

*ibnn* "she(?) shall build" II AB V 115, VI 16.

*tmjyn* "they shall come" I D 89.

c. *yll* "he shall . . . . ." I D 41.

*tll* "thou shalt enter" I D 156.

*trmm* "she(?) shall find" II AB VI 17.

The apocopate is used under the following conditions:

1. With the force of a jussive. This is the normal employment of the form. Such occurrences of the above list as do not recur under the following headings belong here.

2. After *l-* that emphasizes the jussive force (cf. Arab. *li-*): *l-ymrk*; *l-šst*; *l-tn* (see fn. 150); *l-tšt*; *l-šw*; *l-klly*.

3. After *šl*, the prohibitive negation: *šl tšl*.

4. After *k-* "verily" (cf. Hebr. כִּי): *k-tn*; *k-ypl*.

5. After *w-* "and so, and then": *w-yšt*; *w-ympšd*; *w-lbk*; *w-tr*; *w-yn*; *w-tn*; *w-yššq*.<sup>155</sup>

Our discussion, so far, has not yet touched upon the question of how the idea of the present was expressed in Ugaritic. It can be said, at this early stage, that neither *qatila* nor *yaqtulu* (and its moods) could have served for such a purpose. Precisely for this reason the existence of the theme *yaga(i)tal(u)* has been surmised. There have been quoted cases like *mš šrín* "what do you (f. sg.) want?" (I AB II 14) and *k-yrdš* (1934 rev. 1) where the alif with the inherent *a* seems to indicate vocalization of the first radical with *a*.<sup>156</sup>

The problem must be dealt with on a broader basis, however, if it is really to be clarified. I propose here to approach it from several angles. The following four arguments will be set forth:

<sup>154</sup> From the standpoint of Hebrew grammar this type of apocopate may be described as "imperfectum consecutivum."

<sup>155</sup> H. Bauer, *Die alphabetischen Keilschrifttexte von Ras Schamra* 67.



1. Where the *n* of the verba primae *nūn* is preserved, *yaga(t)-talū* is indicated.

2. The *yagtalū* of verba primae *alif* begins with *yā-* etc.; where *yā-* etc. is found, we deal with *yaga(t)talū*.

3. The first person singular (*āqitalū*) of the *qal*, wherever the first two radicals are strong, begins with *t-*; where in such forms, *a-* is found, the corresponding form of *yaga(t)talū* must be assumed.

4. Forms of the type *yqll* (*qal* of verba mediae geminatae) which are not apocopate,<sup>122</sup> must be interpreted as present-future.

### 1. Verba primae *nūn*

The *nūn* is preserved in the following forms that may be contrasted at once with the corresponding forms which have assimilated it.

- |                 |               |            |            |              |
|-----------------|---------------|------------|------------|--------------|
| a. <i>tnjēn</i> | III AB 17, 26 | as against | <i>tjē</i> | II AB II 19. |
| b. <i>ynp'</i>  | I D 65        | " "        | <i>yp'</i> | I D 65.      |
| <i>tnp'</i>     | I D 72        | " "        | <i>tp'</i> | I D 72.      |
| c. <i>tnkēn</i> | I K 28        | " "        | <i>ytk</i> | I D 82.      |

Since the argument depends on details of interpretation, a fuller treatment of the respective passages is indispensable.

- a. *njē*. The *n* is preserved in the following passages:

III AB 17 f.:

\*s *ym l-ymk*  
*l-tnjēn pnt-h*  
*l-ydlp tmn-h*

"The force of the sea subsided indeed,  
 its crests<sup>127</sup> verily heave;<sup>128</sup>  
 its southern breeze(?)<sup>129</sup> moves  
 gently(?)."<sup>130</sup>

<sup>122</sup> See above fn. 126.

<sup>127</sup> So according to Virolleaud's interpretation which is based on the comparison with Hebr. נָנֶה

<sup>128</sup> Cf. Arab. *naḥḥa* "shake, totter, wag." The context seems to indicate that the movement of the sea became fairly gentle and smooth.

<sup>129</sup> This rendering is rather uncertain. Compare however Hebr. (poetic) נָנֶה "southern breeze."

<sup>130</sup> In Hebrew and Aramaic the root *dlp* means "drip," in Akkadian however "to be restless" (implying wandering up and down) (see Meissner, *Beitr. zum assyr. Wörterbuch* 1 40 f.; Landsberger, *ZA NF* 1 221 f.). The basic idea seems to be the intermittent rhythmical movement.

## III AB 25 f.:

<i>yprah ym</i>	"The sea became calm," <sup>141</sup>
<i>yqll-āry</i>	it settled to the earth.
<i>tnšsn pat-h</i>	its crests heave,
<i>w-ydlp tmm-h</i>	and its southern breeze (?) moves gently (?)."

The theory may be tempting that *tnšsn* is a pi'el or a nif'al of *nšs*. This must be rejected, however, because *nšs* with *pat* is actually found in the qal.

The form in question is in the following context (II AB II 12 ff.):

<i>b-nšl 'n-h w-i phn.</i>	"At once there recognized 'Attet (with regard)
<i>hik b'l šftrt</i>	to Ba'l's appearance:
<i>k-t'n hik bllt 'nt</i>	'Vezily, it corresponds to the appearance of the Virgin 'Anat;
<i>tdrq yhmt [lmm]</i>	to the ..... of the progenitress (?) <sup>142</sup> of the peoples."
<i>b-h p'um [tft]</i>	With him the legs .....
<i>[b-']dn ksl [tthr]</i>	gracefully <sup>143</sup> the (line of the) loins was broken,
<i>['ln p]n-h t[d']</i>	above his face was sweet, <sup>144</sup>
<i>tšs [pat ksl-h]</i>	the crest of his loins hove
<i>šnk dt zr[-h]</i>	and the muscles (?) <sup>145</sup> of his back."

The passage describes the beauty of Ba'l, when he appears naked.<sup>146</sup>

Whoever wishes to dodge the issue may assume a pi'el or a nif'al with approximately the same meaning as the qal. Though not very likely, the admissibility of this assumption cannot be denied.

<sup>141</sup> So with Virolleaud who refers to Akkadian *pišš*. Compare also Brockelmann, *Grundriss* I § 90.

<sup>142</sup> Cf. Albright, *RASOR* 70 19 fn. 6.

<sup>143</sup> Cf. Hebr. *šānā*.

<sup>144</sup> Cf. Arab. *wadū'a* "be quiet, tranquil."

<sup>145</sup> There may be mentioned tentatively Hebr. *נֶרְוָה* Gen. 32, 33 corresponding to Arab. *nusān*, pl. *'unūdū* "nervus ischiadicus."

<sup>146</sup> The supplementation is Virolleaud's; it is taken from an unpublished parallel text. For *hmm* see V AB II 23.

b. *wp.* I D I 61 ff.:*ydu il ysb pält-h*<sup>169</sup> 'El beat (and) . . . . . his flax<sup>170</sup>  
(saying):*bs-ql yph b-pält*<sup>171</sup> 'The byssus<sup>172</sup> provides flax,  
the byssus provides waste(?).'<sup>173</sup>*b[š-q]l yph b-yglm*He embraced the byssus and kissed  
(it) (saying):*bs-ql y[hb]q w-yušq*<sup>174</sup> 'I loosened the byssus.*hhl hu bs-[ql]*There will serve<sup>175</sup> as flax the byssus;  
if<sup>176</sup> there served as waste(?) the  
stalk,<sup>177</sup>*yap' b-pält bs-ql*the hand of 'Aqhat šzr shall gather  
thee in.*yp' b-g[šl] ʾwr*shall put thee into the granary.<sup>178</sup>*tšp-k yd šqlt šzr*He beat it (and) he . . . . . his  
grain<sup>179</sup> (saying):*tšt-k b-qrb-m šsm*<sup>180</sup> 'The spike provides grain,*ydu-h ysb šklit-h*the spike provides chaff(?).<sup>181</sup>*yph šblt b-šk<l>t**šblt yph b-šmdrt*

<sup>169</sup> I cannot see what *dn* "act as a judge, pass sentence" might mean in our context. It seems to me much more natural to derive *ydu* from a root corresponding to Arab. *wadana* "beat with a stick."

<sup>170</sup> *pält* and *bs-ql* are in the same relationship to one another as *šblt* "grain" and *šklit* "spike" (cf. Hebr. *תבואה*), that is to say *bs-ql* is a plant and *pält* its product. This leads inevitably to some variety of "byssus" and "flax." If so, *pält* corresponds to Hebr. *תבואה*. The peculiar form of the word offers considerable difficulty with regard to both vocalism and consonantism. This does not affect, however, the point under discussion.—It may be added that I am unable to accept Dussaud's view that II. 61 ff. and 68 ff. contain the same text in two different dialects (*Les découvertes de Ras Šamra* 92).

<sup>171</sup> On the byssus see Olck in Pauly-Wissowa, *Real-Encyclopädie* 3 vol. 1108 ff.; Benzinger, *Hebräische Archäologie* (3rd ed.) 136. It seems that *bs-ql* is some variety of the plant.

<sup>172</sup> Cf. Arab. *wasḡan* "scamp, parasite, thicket."

<sup>173</sup> Cf. Arab. *nafa'a bi* "be useful for."

<sup>174</sup> I take the following sentence as a conditional one without subjunction, both parts of the period being in the imperfect (or jussive), as it is familiar in Hebrew syntax. Cf. fn. 179.

<sup>175</sup> Cf. Dussaud, *Les découvertes de Ras Šamra* 91 who translates "plante."

<sup>176</sup> Cf. Hebr. *תבואה* "grain."

<sup>177</sup> For *šmdrt* Virolleaud has referred to Akkad. *šamadirātu* the meaning of which he gives as "dessèchement" in accordance with Beauld's glossary.

<i>šblt yḥ[ḏq] w-yušq</i>	He embraced the spike and kissed (it) (saying):
<i>šḥl šn i[šlt]</i>	'I loosened the spike.
<i>t&lt;n&gt;p' <sup>176</sup> b-škl šblt</i>	there will serve as grain the spike;
<i>tp' [b-...] šr</i>	if there served as ..... the stalk,
<i>šsp-k yd šqḥl ḡz[r]</i>	the hand of Aqḥat ḡzr shall gather thee in,
<i>ššl-k šm qrb-m šsm</i>	shall put thee into the granary. <sup>177</sup>

The sequence *ynp'-yp'* in identical phrases precludes the assumption of a pī'el or a nī'al in this case. Both forms must necessarily belong to the same conjugation, that is to say, both must be forms of the qal.

c. *ntk*. I K 26 f.:

<i>yḏky b-šn rgmm w-ydm'</i>	"He wept in repenting the words and shed tears;
<i>ntkn šdm't-ḥ</i>	his tears run down
<i>km ṯqlm šrḡḥ</i>	like sheqel pieces earthward."

The same phrase *ntk šdm't* recurs in an entirely identical fashion, only without preserved *n*,

I D 82 f.:

<i>w-l ytk dm[t-k]</i>	"And indeed his/her tears ran down
<i>[k]m rb't ṯqlm ṯṯq[ṯ]</i>	like quarter sheqels they weigh out."

The evidence requires claiming both forms for the qal.

## 2. Verba primae alif

A variation similar to that discussed in the preceding section may be observed with the primae alif. In this group of verbs we find the pair:<sup>178</sup>

---

This cannot be maintained, however, since new material (Matouš, *LTHA* 1 58 IV 15 f.) explains *ḥamadrum* as "cut, harvested grain" (cf. Meissner, *MAOG* IX 1/2 34 f.).

<sup>178</sup> The emendation is virtually certain. It is easily understood how the pair *šp'-tp'*, being read in successive verses, could be equalized to become *tp'* uniformly. The inverse process would be inexplicable.

<sup>179</sup> I had formerly regarded *pdk* Nk 39 and *ṯdk* SS 33 as a similar pair. I now prefer to analyze the former as *pdk*, i. e. as a form of 'p' "to be bright."

*lādm* I K 62; I D 204 as against *lādm* I D 204.  
*yādm* I K 156.

Among these passages, I D 203 ff. is of particular significance, since it contains both forms side by side. The lines read:

<i>trih[š] w-lādm</i>	"Thou (f.) shouldst wash thyself, so that <sup>178</sup> thou mayest be fresh.
<i>lādm b-šlp y[m]</i>	If <sup>179</sup> thou art fresh by (the use of) the <i>šlp</i> <sup>180</sup> of the sea
<i>d-šlp šd šu-h b-ym</i>	whose excrement <sup>181</sup> . . . . . <sup>181</sup> (is) in the sea,
<i>t[ʿ] tbbš npy šer</i>	thou shouldst start (and) put on (thy) coat, <i>šer</i> !"

The occurrence of both forms in one and the same line renders the assumption of mere writing variants<sup>182</sup> impossible. The difference in form must be correlate of a difference in notion.

The other occurrence of *lādm* (I K 62) is after *trihš* also; and *yrihš w-yādm* (I K 150) represents the same phrase in another person.

All these passages corroborate Bauer's explanation of *lādm* as a present form of the Akkadian type. Probably *yārš-ēm* (I K 42) can be also added. Other forms of the type do not exist.

Before the thesis that forms of the type *yādm* represent the present-future can be considered as proved, the other side of the

<sup>178</sup> Syndesis of different forms (here jussive and present linked by means of *w-*) has the effect of a hypotaxis as in Arabic.

<sup>179</sup> Conditional period without subjunction and with the imperfect (or jussive?) in both protasis and apodosis; cf. fn. 172.

<sup>180</sup> This must be an animal or a plant furnishing a dye. Perhaps Arab. *šalfus* "a tree used for tanning" is comparable.

<sup>181</sup> In *šlp šd* I see a corroborative formula; see above fn. 44.

<sup>182</sup> Cf. Hebr. *נָסַח*, Akkad. *šām*.

<sup>183</sup> Virolleaud, *Damel* p. 178: "une forme ou peu différente." Also Obermann, *JAOS* 56 497 is, in my opinion, mistaken.—The form *yādm* II AB V 103, claimed by Virolleaud l. c. as a variant of *yādm*, is not conceivable in this way. It seems to me that the line *yādm šer w-šas* refers to Kuṭar's appointment as the architect of Baʿl's planned palace. As a matter of fact the text continues: "after Kuṭar w-šas had arrived." One should assume then that he has been summoned before. The context therefore makes one think of Arab. *wakkala* "appoint." It is true, *yādm* points definitely to a verbum primae alif; but the reference to Middle Akkad. *aklu* "fore-man" may lessen these scruples to some extent.

problem must be also investigated; it must be shown that all forms of the type *yḥd* are forms of the imperfect. I have record of the following:

Imperfect indicative:

- yḥd* "he seized" II D I 35; *Syria* 17 p. 212.  
*tḥd* "she seized" I AB II 9, 30; I D I 9; *Syria* 17 p. 212.  
*tḥl* "she ate" II AB VI 24, 27, 29.  
*tḥln* "they ate" BH I 10.

Imperfect subjunctive:

- yḥd* "he seized, caught" 1934 obv. 12, 17.

Imperfect apocope:

- tḥd* 3rd pl. of *ḥd* "seize, catch" II AB VII 35.  
*tṣp-k* 3rd sg. f. of *ṣp* "ingather" I D 66, 73.  
*yṣp* 3rd sg. m. of *ṣp* "bake" I K 83.

Of uncertain description because of mutilation:

- yḥl* of *ḥl* "eat" BH II 14.  
*yḥm* of *ḥm* *Danel* p. 224 l. 2.  
*yṣp-ḥm* of *ṣp* "ingather" BH II 25.

A further fact is worth mentioning: the corresponding forms with inserted *t* invariably exhibit an *i*:

- yitdb* of *ḏb* I K 24.<sup>124</sup>  
*itlk* of *nlk* "go" I AB II 15.  
*yitṣp* of *ṣp* "ingather" I K 18.

Accordingly, I feel justified in vocalizing the forms in question <sup>125</sup>

<sup>124</sup> Cf. also *itdb* I K 8; imperative or infinitive?

<sup>125</sup> The two forms which have *d* after the prefix must not be passed by in silence. I have little doubt that they are forms of the passive (cf. Harris, *JAOS* 57 132). The following translations may be ventured:

II AB IV 16 f.:

*qḏṣ yḥḏ-m*  
*ḏḥ'r ḏmrr k-kḏḏḥ*

"Qadeḥ became affected with passion  
 there was 'Ḍmrr made glowing like  
 a star

*l-pum ḏḥr ḏḥḥ 'nd*

before . . . . . the Virgin 'Anat.

I \*AB V 18 f.:

*yḏḏḥ 'pṭ ḥ-ḏḥr*

"He became affected with love for a  
 heifer in . . . . .

as follows: *tdm* = *ta'a(d)da/um(u)*; *tdm* = *te'dum(u)*; *gidb* = *ye'tada/ib(u)*. The two last-mentioned forms are developed from *ta'dum(u)* and *ya'tada/ib(u)* respectively by a phonetic law which shifted *a* to *e* before tautosyllabic alif except at the end of the word. There is no need of repeating the evidence, since it has been anticipated by Harris, *JAOS* 57 151 ff.<sup>146</sup>

### 3. 1st person singular

To judge from the related languages, the 1st person singular of the *qal* should exhibit the prefix *ā-*. This is actually found, but in no few instances *i* also occurs.<sup>147</sup> It is necessary to establish the rule according to which the prefix varies.

The *ā-* is invariably present in the following groups:

#### a. with middle weak roots:

- āmt* of *m-t* "die" II D VI 38.  
*ānḥn* of *n-ḥ* "rest" I AB III 18; II D II 13.  
*āḡd* of *ḡ-d* "roam" I AB II 15.  
*āḡḥ* of *ḡ-ḥ* "cry" I \*AB II 21, III 9, 18, 25.  
*āḡr* of *ḡ-r* "sing" Nk 1, 38.

#### b. with verba primae *y* (< *w*):

- ābl* of *ybl* "bring" II D V 2.  
*ārd* of *yrd* "descend" I \*AB VI 25.  
*āḡbn* of *yḡb* "sit down" I AB III 18; II D II 12.

#### c. with such verbs as have old<sup>148</sup> two radical imperatives:

- ālk* of *ālk* "go" I D IV 194. Cf. *lk* I \*AB III 14, 20;  
 III AB 8; II D VI 42; III D I 17.

*pri ḡ-ḡḡ ḡḡlmt*

for a young cow in the field of

*ḡḡ 'mḡ-ḡ ḡḡ l-ḡḡ'm*

He was lying with her 77 times(?)

*ḡḡ × ḡḡ ḡḡ ḡḡ l-ḡḡ'm*

she..... 88 times(?)."

It should be noted that both passages deal with emotions which are most properly expressed by the passive (the form with unknown agents). At any rate I refuse to believe in mere orthographic variants. The choice among the various alif signs was not left to the scribe's predilections, it was regulated by definite rules.

<sup>146</sup> Cf. before *JAOS* 55 364.

<sup>147</sup> The variation has been observed as early as 1931 by Virolleaud who quoted examples of it in *Syria* 12 p. 355 fn. 1.

<sup>148</sup> The imperative *ḡḡ* "take" seems not to belong here (see below fn. 213).



Δn of n/n "give" Nk 22; I K 206; II D VI 27. Cf. in  
I AB I 45 (17), II 12; II AB V 70 and passim.

The correct vocalization, in these cases, is obviously 'amūt(u),  
'aštr(u), 'abīl(u), 'alīk(u) etc.

With all classes where the first two radicals retain their conso-  
nantic value, i also appears alongside Δ. The following examples  
contain i:

- šbδ "I exalted" Nk 1, 37/8 (apocope).<sup>128</sup>  
šbδ "I recognized" I AB III 8 (apocope).<sup>129</sup>  
šp'n-k "I pierced you" I \*AB I 26 (apocope??).<sup>130</sup>  
šlāk "I sent" II AB VII 45 (apocope).<sup>131</sup>  
šh'm "I ate" I \*AB I 20 (apocope).<sup>132</sup>  
šgk "I took" I K 204 (apocope).<sup>133</sup>  
šmḥš "I beat" I D 196 (apocope).<sup>134</sup>

<sup>128</sup> šār nāl

u-šbδ šrḥδ mīk gṛ

"Let me praise Nikkal

and exalt Ḥirihbi, the king of sum-  
mer!"

<sup>129</sup> I AB III 8 ff.:

šum šma šmṛw  
nḥm rīk nḥm  
u-šbδ k-ḥy šlāpn b'l  
k-ḥy šbī b'l dṛp

"The skies rained oil,  
the creeks flowed with honey;  
and so I recognized that 'Alīyān Ba'l  
is alive,  
that šbī, the lord of the earth, (still)  
exists."

For the syntax see above p. 296 and for the vocalization below fn. 213.

<sup>130</sup> p-nāt b'l

"And shouldst thou neglect, Ba'l, (to do  
so),

[p]n šp'n-k

I certainly will pierce thee!"

There precede forms of the imperative and optative. For the beginning  
of the line which so far has been untranslated the inference must be drawn  
that it implies an "if not."

<sup>131</sup> šl šlāk "I will not send"; for the construction of the prohibitive  
negation with the apocope see above p. 296.

<sup>132</sup> I \*AB I 18 ff.:

šm šmṛ šm  
u-šbδ šm ḥw

"How long, how long  
(shall) (my) soul (be) without

.....?"

šm b-kidī yd-g šm

How long shall I eat with both my  
hands!"

<sup>133</sup> The passage is quoted above fn. 121.

<sup>134</sup> I D 190 f.:

šmḥš šmḥš šp-y  
Δ[šl m]kīy 'l šmṛ-g

"I will kill my brother's killer,  
I will annihilate the annihilator of  
my ....."

- lspī* "I ate" I \*AB I 5 (apocope).<sup>196</sup>  
*lspr* "I recited" I AB V 20 (subjunctive).<sup>197</sup>  
*lqnū* "I watched jealously" SS 21 (apocope).<sup>198</sup>  
*lslh* "I sent" Nk 21 (apocope).<sup>199</sup>  
*lšynh* "I drank it" II AB III 16 (indicative).<sup>200</sup>

Of these forms *lspī* must be read '*espi*' and *lqnū* '*egnu*'; furthermore, *lspr* in all probability represents '*espra*', and *lbd* and *lšynh* perhaps '*ebdu*' and '*ēšty*....' respectively. The rest may contain the middle vowel *a*.<sup>201</sup>

<sup>196</sup> I \*AB I 5 ff.:

*lšk lpt šm*

"I should eat .....

*lšqm šmt-m*

....., I should even die

*l-yri b-upš bn-šm mī*

in order that thou mightst have descended to ....., 'El's son Mut!

*b-nkwt ydd š gsr*

to the ....., beloved one of 'El, *gšr*."

<sup>197</sup> *lšpr* w-yfb is apparently one of the "Regie-Bemerkungen" found in the Ras Shamra poems. The comparison with II AB V 104 makes it virtually certain that a form of *spr* must be read. Cf. also Bauer, *OLZ* 1934 col. 243.

<sup>198</sup> SS 21 ff.:

*lqnū šmt bn-šm*

"I will jealously watch the names of the king's sons;

*lqrū šm n'mm*

I will call the gracious gods!"

The parallelism enforces the interpretation of *lqnū* as a jussive; it suggests the root *šp*, literally "be red," but also "be passionate, jealous."

<sup>199</sup> Nk 21 ff.:

*lšlš šrm lqm*

"I will send jewels (and) lapis.

*šm šd-š šrm-m*

I will make her field cultivated land:

*šd šd-š šrm-m*

her breasts.....!"

The girl Nikkal is asked in marriage from her father; the bride-price is offered (see Gordon, *BASOR* 63 32). Then the promises contained in the quoted lines are given. The first of them refers to a present to the bride. The two others recall the proverbial saying that the unmarried woman is like an uncultivated field, which occurs e.g. in the Amarna letters (O. Weber apud Knudtzon, *Die El-Amarna-Tafeln* 2 1152 f.; Melseener, *Babylonien und Assyrien* 2 423 f.).

<sup>200</sup> II AB III 14 ff.:

*št [.....] b-šm-y*

"I had dirt(?) placed on my table.

*qlt b-ke lšynh*

disgrace I drank from the cup."

<sup>201</sup> This evidence makes it impossible to me to accept the view of Ginsberg who maintains that the variation of the prefix depends on the vowel of the second radical, *t* being used before *a* and *š* before *i/u* (Tarbiz 4 182). Ginsberg relies on the law posited by Barth, *ZDMG* 48 4 ff., which he thinks

Of forms with the prefix *š-* I have listed the following:

- ššky* "I shall bewail" I D 111 (indicative).<sup>202</sup>  
*ššpk-k* "I shall turn thee" I \*AB III 12 (context mutilated).  
*ššmr* "I shall sing" 1929 3 rev. 51 (indicative?).<sup>203</sup>  
*šmšk* "I shall be king" I AB I 62 (34) (indicative?).<sup>204</sup>  
*špt[š]* "I shall open" II AB II 30 (indicative?).<sup>205</sup>  
*šqbrnš* "I shall bury him" I D 111 (indicative).<sup>206</sup>  
*šqny* "I shall acquire" I K 57 (indicative).<sup>207</sup>  
*šqry-k* "I shall meet thee" II D VI 43 (indicative).<sup>208</sup>  
*šrgm-k* "I shall tell thee" II AB I 21; V AB III 18 (indicative).<sup>209</sup>

is substantiated by Ugaritic. It must be said Barth's position, based primarily on peculiarities of the Hebrew inflection and secondarily on single facts in Syriac and in Arabic dialects, is not particularly strong. Neither Akkadian nor classical Arabic bear out the theory. It seems to me, that the facts alluded to will better be accounted for by independent secondary development of the individual language. Ginsberg's best examples, *šd'* and *šqš*, will be discussed in fn. 213.

<sup>202</sup> This form and the others with retained *y* and *w* at the end cannot be apocopes. Neither can *šqbrnš* and *šrgm-k* since each is in intimate contact with one of these forms.

I D 111 f.:

- ššky w-šqbrnš* "I shall bewail and bury him."  
*šš b-šrt šm šry* "I shall place him in the holes of the gods of the earth."

<sup>203</sup> The context is mutilated.

- <sup>204</sup> *šmšk b-šrt špn* "Verily, I shall rule on the cliffs of Šapān."

- <sup>205</sup> *š mškr špt[š]* "I shall open the eye of . . . ."

The supplementation is that of Virolleaud and Bauer and seems inevitable.

<sup>206</sup> See fn. 202.

<sup>207</sup> The context is too mutilated as to allow for a translation.

<sup>208</sup> II D VI 42 ff.:

- š l-y w-šk [ . . . . . ] m* "Return to me and come to . . . . ."  
*š-qry-k š-nš pš* "Verily I shall meet thee on the road of . . . . ."  
*[ . . . . . ] š-nš gšn* " . . . . . on the road of . . . . ."  
*šqš-k ššt [ . . . . . ]* "I shall make thee fall down under . . . . ."  
*š-nš mšq nšm* " . . . . ."

<sup>209</sup> V AB III 17 ff.:

- šm š l-y* "I have the faculty of speech,  
*w-šrgm-k šwt* and I shall tell thee the story,  
*w-šry-k šm šy* and I shall relate thee the word of the tree  
*w-ššt šm* and the . . . . . of the stone."

*ššw* "I shall rest" I K 149 (indicative).<sup>210</sup>

*ššng-k* "I shall relate thee" V AB III 18 (indicative).<sup>211</sup>

Concerning the vocalization, it must be noted that *Apšh* should be read with middle *a* according to the evidence of the related languages. Since middle *a*, then, appears after *t-* as well as after *š-*, it cannot be made responsible for the variation.

The solution of the problem, it seems to me, is indicated by an observation which can be made from the list at the beginning of this section: in every single case the prefix *š-* constitutes a syllable of its own.<sup>212</sup>

This observation is confirmed<sup>213</sup> when the investigation is extended to forms outside of the *qal*. One finds on the one hand that all 1st persons of the *pīel* and of the *šafel* exhibit the prefix

<sup>210</sup> *ššw* *š-sp 'n-h* "I shall bask in the glances of her eye."

So according to Albright, *BASOR* 63 31 fn. 69.

<sup>211</sup> See fn. 209.

<sup>212</sup> I am somewhat hesitant to posit a phonetic law according to which 'a before tautosyllabic consonant becomes 'e. Words like *dip* "cattle," *dip* "thousand," *šrš* "cow," *šrš* "earth," *šfr* "place" have apparently preserved their *š-*. It is unlikely that this is due to the influence of the plural. One may ask, however, whether anaptyctic vowels (which finally lead to so-called Segolata) are already in play.

<sup>213</sup> *lqš* and *ld'* are only apparent exceptions.

*lqš* corresponds to Hebr. *לָקַח*; that is to say, the first radical *l*, by one reason or another, was assimilated to the second radical (*\*alqāš(u) > \*aqqāš(u)*). In historical Hebrew grammar the analogy of *nān* "give" is usually made responsible for this development, *\*anān(u) > \*attin(u)* forming the other part of a proportion. The assumed analogy cannot be true, however, in Ugaritic. Here the form which corresponds to *lqš* is *dn*, to be read either *\*ādn(u)* or *\*atin(u)*, the inflection being that of a middle weak as in the Assyrian branch of Akkadian. In Ugaritic the 1st person *lqš* is obviously independent from *dn*. It must be read *\*aqqāš(u)* with double *qq*; this double consonant is the reason for the employment of the prefix *t-*.

*ld'* is derived from a root whose first radical is an old *y* (cf. particularly the Ethiopic causative *'aida'u*). In Hebrew there is the corresponding *יָדַע*; its paradigm is to be classified with *i*-imperfects like *יָדַעְתִּי* and not with *a*-imperfects like *יָדַעְתָּ*. It must, therefore, be assumed that the *a* in *יד* is due to the influence of the laryngeal. Ugaritic, with its difference between *šš* and *ld'* seems to require an earlier form *\*aydi/a'u*. The vocalization of the second radical vacillates between *i* and *a* in Amurrite where *yadaš* exists by the side of *yadiš* (Th. Bauer, *Die Oathanaander* 70). If *yadiš* is the older form, as it is reasonable to assume, Old Akkadian which offers *yadaš* (i.e. *yada'*) must have had the same shift operating independently.

â-; and on the other, that all *t*-forms show invariably â-. The evidence is as follows:

## Pi'el:

- âḥwy of ḥwy "show, reveal" II D VI 32; III D I 27.  
 âḥw of ḥwy "revive(?)" I D 16.  
 âlmd-k of lmd "teach" III D VI 29.  
 âmlkn of mlk "make king" I AB I 46 (18).  
 ânšq of nšq "kiss" III AB 4.  
 âqrḇ-k of qrb "bring close to ..." Nk 27.  
 âšlt-k of šlt "rule" II D VI 27.

## Šafel:

- âšhlk of ḥlk "cause to go" Danel p. 225.  
 âšši of ys' "cause to leave" III AB 2.  
 âšspr of spr "cause to count" II D VI 28.  
 âš'rb of 'rb "cause to enter" I K 204.  
 âšql-k of qll "cause to bow down" II D VI 44.  
 âšrb' of rb' "cause to be fourfold" II D V 3.

*t*-form:

- âtḏb of 'ḏb I K 8.  
 âtlk of ḥlk "go" I AB II 5.  
 âmtḥs of mḥs "beat" II AB II 24.<sup>214</sup>

The principle thus established must also be applied to *âḥd* etc. and *âḥky* etc. That is to say, whereas in *âḥd* the *ḥ* belongs to the first syllable and must, therefore, be pronounced without a vowel (in other words whereas the form is 'aḥdu/i), the *â* of *âḥky* must be in a syllable of its own. This is possible only when a vowel is inserted after the *ḥ*, in other words, when the form is 'aḥa(k)kiyu. Thus, the prefix â- in *âḥky* and in the cases listed together with it testifies to the existence of a verbal form which coincides with Akkad. *aḥa(k)ki*. The translation of the respective passages which is contained in the footnotes will show that all these forms may well be considered as present-future.

4. *yql* where not apocopate

In Ugaritic the verba mediae geminatae are inflected in the Arabic fashion (see above fn. 126), that is to say the identical radicals are fused wherever a vowel follows, but both come regularly into appearance in the apocopate. There exist, however, a few

<sup>214</sup> Add perhaps *âtḥg* and *âtḥk* BH II 58, two forms which are incomprehensible to me.

forms of the type *ygl* which cannot be apocopate in their respective context. They are:

*yḥss-k* II AB IV 39.<sup>215</sup>

*t'rr-k* *ibid.*

Perhaps also

*y'rr* Nk 30.<sup>216</sup>

The context, as far as it can be understood, seems to allow for forms of the present-future. And the vocalization *yah(a)sas(u)* would indeed account for the persistence of the two radicals.

### Conclusions

The result of this investigation may be summed up as follows:

The Ugaritic language had three tenses:

1. A "perfect" *qatila*, which was limited to certain definite groups of verbs; its force was that of a stative. It possessed also a passive variety *qatila*.

2. An "imperfect" *yagtilu*, used primarily as past tense in the narration.

3. A "present-future" *yaga(t)talū*.

The significance of this result for Semitic linguistics is obvious. This statement must suffice here; the evaluation of our result would take us too far afield.

<sup>215</sup> II AB IV 35 ff.:

*lḥm ḥm tḥp-m*

*lḥ[m] ḥ-ḥlḥm*

*lḥm tḥp-m*

*ḥ-kpum ym*

*ḥ-k(x) ḥpḥ dm 'am*

*am yd ḥ mlk yḥss-k*

*ḥḥb t'rr-k*

"Eat and drink!

Food from the table!

Eat and drink!

From the jars the wine,

from the gold cup the blood of the trees!

The love of 'El, the king, will hold thee!

the affection of the Bull will arouse thee!"

Of the two verbs *yḥss* is hardly pl'el. As far as *t'rr* is concerned, this can not be denied so absolutely; *t'rr* seems to correspond to the Hebrew *piḥal* פִּיחַל (otherwise Albright, *JPOS* 14 122 fn. 105).

<sup>216</sup> Nk 29 f.:

*lḥ ḥb-a ḥḥ y'rr*

"The lion will awake the house of her father."

I do not understand what the sentence means in this particular context.

## YASNA LVII: AN ESSAY IN TEXT-RECONSTRUCTION

LOUIS H. GRAY

COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY

Le linguiste, comme l'historien de la religion zoroastrienne, doit critiquer sévèrement le texte de l'Avesta avant de l'utiliser.

ANTOINE MEILLET, *Journal Asiatique*, XI, 2 (1917), 214.

THE AVESTA as we possess it is a collection made at the command of the first Sāsānian monarch, Ardashir I (224/6-241), of fragments gathered at the order of the Arsakid Volagash (Volagases) which had survived the destruction of the original documents during the invasion of Alexander the Great (*Dēnkarī*, iv, 23-26, tr. E. W. West, *SBE* xxxvii, Oxford, 1892, pp. 413-414). This Arsakid was probably Volagases I (51-77/8) (J. Darmesteter, *Le Zend-Avesta* iii, Paris, 1893, pp. xxiii-xxiv; A. Christensen, *L'Iran sous les Sassanides*, Copenhagen, 1936, p. 34), although F. Justi (*Grundriss der iranischen Philologie* ii, Strasbourg, 1904, p. 510; cf. K. Geldner, *ib.* p. 34) thought that it was Volagases III (148-191).

The Avesta had evidently been reduced to writing at a very early date (cf. Christensen, pp. 509-512), but the present text is a transcription of an older alphabet. This transcription is highly imperfect, and many forms appear which are plainly incorrect and which should be disregarded in linguistic investigation. It becomes necessary, therefore, to reconstruct the text by a combination of linguistics and palaeography; and on such reconstruction I am at present preparing a detailed study.

In evaluating the forms, one must bear in mind that the Vulgate reproduction shows more or less an attempt at phonetic writing. The form *yasnam* — Sanskrit *yajñam*, for instance, implies that, as in later India, the original oxytone accent had been shifted, with the result that [jas'nam] had become ['jasnam]. In addition to these linguistic, phonetic, and palaeographic problems, the Avestan Vulgate shows countless interpolations which disturb the continuity of the hymns and which must be excised in the interests of a more exact knowledge of early Zoroastrianism. The result of such reconstruction will, in all probability, give a text much closer to the original than is the present Vulgate; and until this work is



done, it would seem that little real advance can be made in any serious investigation of either the language, the literature, or the religion of the Avesta.

All knowledge that the so-called Younger Avesta was originally in verse, at least so far as its oldest portions are concerned, had vanished before its Pahlavi commentary was written sometime in the Sāsānian period and revised in the reign of Khusrav I (531-579). This commentary follows word for word the present Vulgate text; and the Parsi priests had no suspicion that they were reciting highly interpolated poetry, and not mere prose. Neither the edition of the Avesta by N. L. Westergaard (Copenhagen, 1854) nor that by F. Spiegel (Vienna, 1853-58) indicates any verse except in the *Gāthās*, and even Darmasteter (*La Zend-Avesta*, i, Paris, 1892, p. xcix, note) could write: "On trouve dans l'Avesta proprement dit nombre de morceaux en prose rythmée, où domine le retour d'octosyllabes qui rappellent le pāda du cloka indien. C'est une tendance rythmique, rien de plus, et dont par suite on ne peut faire usage pour la critique du texte, encore moins pour sa restitution" (cf. his review of Geldner's *Über die Metrik des jüngeren Avesta*, Tübingen, 1877, reprinted in his *Études iraniennes*, ii, Paris, 1883, pp. 28-38). Yet Pliny (*Nat. hist.* xxx, 2), citing Hermippus (third century A. C.), spoke of *vicies centum millia versuum a Zoroastre condita*, and the Scholiast B on Hephaestion (ed. Westphal, p. 135<sup>o</sup>-<sup>r</sup>), who may have composed his commentary in the third century A. D. (K. Krumbacher, *Geschichte der byzantinischen Literatur*,<sup>2</sup> Munich, 1897, pp. 594-595), says that the Persians wrote in the ionic *a* *maiores* metre (ὁ ἀπὸ μείζονος ἰωνικός . . . ὁ καὶ Περσικός . . . δὲ τὸ τὰς ἰσοπλάς τὰς Περσικὰς τοῦτο τῇ μέτρῃ γυγράφει).

The first to call attention to the metrical nature of the Younger Avesta seems to have been R. Westphal in *Kuhn's Zeitschrift* ix (1860), 444-452 (cf. his *Allgemeine Metrik der indogermanischen und semitischen Völker*, Berlin, 1892, pp. 10-11, 40-55); and his example was followed by R. Roth (*ZDMG* xxv, 1871, 215-231), H. Toerpel (*De metricis partibus zend-avestae*, Halle, 1874; the projected continuation seems never to have appeared), K. Geldner (*Über die Metrik des jüngeren Avesta*, Tübingen, 1877), E. Wilhelm (*Actes du dixième congrès international des orientalistes*, II, ii, Leyden, 1897, pp. 45-53), and H. Lommel (*ZfV* i, 1922, 185-245). Reconstructions of the Vulgate have been essayed by Geldner (*Metrik*, passim; Ys. ix-x, pp. 120-162), C. Bartholomae (*Die*

*Gäthas und heiligen Gebete des altiranischen Volkes*, Halle, 1879; Yt. xix and i in *Arische Forschungen*, I, Halle, 1882, pp. 102-154; Yt. xiii in *ZDMG* xxxvi, 1882, 560-585), C. de Harlez (*De l'exégèse et de la correction des textes avestiques* Leipzig, 1883, pp. 197-244, especially Yt. xii and xvi, pp. 230-239), and T. Baumnack (*Haptanhōiti, Studien auf dem Gebiete des griechischen und der arischen Sprachen*, I, Leipzig, 1888, pp. 328-341, with an exhaustive commentary, pp. 342-461). The general problem of the Vulgate text has been discussed by H. Reichelt ("Zur Beurteilung der awestischen Vulgata," *WZKM* xxvii, 1913, 52-64) and by A. Meillet ("Observations critiques sur le texte de l'Avesta" and "Sur le texte de l'Avesta," *JA* XI, x, 1917, 183-214; xv, 1920, 187-203).

In this article I have endeavoured to make an approach to a reconstruction of Yasna lvii, the "Srōsh Yasht." I say "an approach" advisedly. I have kept the conventional transcription of the Vulgate. The character transcribed *v*, for instance, in such words as *aravahō* "of help" — Sanskrit *āraṇo* is now known to have been really *k* with the ordinary *k*-character added when the original value of what is transcribed *v* had been forgotten, so that *aravahō* should be read *aravāhō* (cf. H. F. K. Junker, *Das Awestalphabet und der Ursprung der armenischen und georgischen Schrift*, Leipzig, 1927, pp. 77-81). On the other hand, I have restored forms demanded by the metre, as *kūrō* "of the sun" for the meaningless *kā* (cf. Vedic *sūras*). In my translation I have used the conventional "Hiawatha" metre, which, as I hope to show elsewhere, I believe to have been true Indo-European. By the time of Hephæstion's scholiast, however, this would seem to have been shifted to one which sounded to Greek ears as an *ionic a maggiore*, i. e., —  $\bar{\sim}$  —  $\bar{\sim}$   $\bar{\sim}$ , where — and  $\bar{\sim}$  do not mean long and short in the Classical use of the term, but syllables of two morae and one mora respectively (e. g. "hīm I laud with | praise sōnorous," not "hīm I laud with praise sōnorous").

Out of 200 lines (comprising recognized verse and lines reduced to verse from passages written as prose in Geldner's edition) I have excised 97, retaining 103. My principles of excision have been (a) the dropping of lines not referring to Sraosha, (b) of those referring to Zoroaster and his ritual, (c) of general "epic tags," (d) of lines apparently borrowed more or less mechanically from other hymns, (e) of passages found word for word in the older Yasht x, and



- yō pas'ryō mazdā dāmaqn* Who was first of Mazda's crea-  
tures  
[*frastēriaat pa'ti barasman*]<sup>1</sup> [With a spreading of the barsom]  
*yazata ahurēm mazdqm* To adore Ahura Mazda,  
*yazata aməšō spəntō* To adore th' Amesha Spentas,  
[*yazata palyā θwōr[ō]ētāra* [To adore the Guard and Shaper  
*yā vīspa θwərasatō dāmaqn*]<sup>2</sup> That give shape to every creature].
- 3.<sup>3</sup> *ake rays a'ar[ō]nawāca* For his radiance and his glory,  
*a'ahc ama vərəθraynača* For his victory and power,  
*ake yasna yazatanqm* For his lauding of the Yazads,  
  
*təm yazdi s[u]runvata yasna* Him I laud with praise sonorous,  
*sraosəm aš[ō]yām zaoθrābyō* Pious Sraosha, with libations;  
[*āšimāca van[u]āim barazaitim* [*<Yes,> and Ashi, good <and>*  
lofty  
*na'rimāca sashəm huraōhəm*] Nairyosangha, too, the lovely;]  
*dācā nō janyāi avashe* May he come to us for aidance  
[*vərəθraji sraosō ašiyō*] [Srosh, victorious <and> pious].
- 4.<sup>4</sup> *sraosəm ašim yazama'de* Srosh, the pious one, adore we,  
[*ratūm barazantēm [yazama'de* [*<Him> the Judge <and him>*  
*yim*] *ahurēm [mazdqm]*] the high lord [Mazda adore we,]  
*yō ašahc apantōi[ō]mō* Who <is> loftiest of Rightness,  
*yō ašahc jaymāstēmō* Who <hath> most progressed of  
Rightness;  
[*vīspa sraosō zaraθuštri* [All the words of Zarathushtra  
[*yazama'de*] [adore we]  
*vīspača h[ō]vərəta šyaoθna* And all actions <that are> well  
[*yazama'de*] done [adore we]  
*varātaō var[ō]š[ō]yamnāca*]<sup>5</sup> <That have> been done and that  
shall be].

5 = 2

<sup>1</sup> Probably interpolated from Yt. x, 137 (cf. Yt. xv, 2; Afr. iv, 6; Vd. ix, 60); *barasman-* is disyllabic in Yt. xli, 3; trisyllabic in Yt. xvii, 61; and both in Yt. x, 138.

<sup>2</sup> Probably interpolated; cf. the simple *pāyāstō θwəroštārō* in Ya. xlii, 2.

<sup>3</sup> = Yt. xi, 8 (also in honour of Sraosha).

<sup>4</sup> = Ya. lxx, 7; lxxi, 24; Yt. xi, 9.

<sup>5</sup> An evident interpolation of the post-Zarathushtrian period.

6. yô paô'ryô har[s]ema      Who was first to spread the barsom  
     [fra]steronata\*  
 ôr<i>yarâtî[s]ô] panôa-yazîtîôa      With <its> three stems and <its>  
     five stems,  
 kapla-yazîtî[s]ô] nava-      With <its> seven stems <and>  
     yarâtî[s]ô] nine stems—  
 ârânû[s]ô] <â>[maô'dyôi-]      To the knee and thigh <it  
     pa'tiistânqôa      reacheth>—  
 [amîdânqm spentânqm]      For adoring and for joying,  
 yashaiôa vahmaôîa?        
 xânaôvraôia frasastayaôia      For delighting and for lauding  
     [the Amesha Spentas].
- 7 — 2
- 8.\* [yô paô'ryô gâôa [fra]srâvayaf      [Who was first to chant the Gathas,  
 yô panôa [spitâmahe âôonô]      <All> the five of Zarathushtra,  
     zarâbuitrahe  
 afman[i]vân vaôastaitiayaf      With <their> verses <and their>  
     strophes,  
 maô-âraôntî[s] [maô-]paôti-frasô      With the Zend <and> with the  
     answers,  
 [amîdânqm spentânqm]      For adoring and for joying,  
     yashaiôa vahmaôîa  
 xânaôvraôia frasastayaôia]      For delighting and for lauding  
     [the Amesha Spentas.]
- 9 — 2
10. yô driyaoôia ôrîv<i>yôôia      Mighty is the house he buildeth  
 amasaf nmânem hqm-lâôti      For the poor, or man or woman,  
 pasôa hûrô frâôimô-dâôim      <In the night-time> after sunset;
- [yô] aôôimem steroôwula smaô'ôia      Aeshma with his felling weapon

\* For *star-* without *fra* as a technical term for spreading the barsom cf. C. Bartholomae, *Altiranisches Wörterbuch*, Strasbourg, 1904, coll. 1595-1596.

\* Explanations of *vahma-* from *vaf-* "pray" or *van-* "gain" (Jackson, *Avesta Reader*, Stuttgart, 1883, p. 94; Bartholomae, *Wörterbuch*, col. 1404) seem unlikely. The word is better derived from the base \**ves-* "feast," finding a close analogue in Old Church Slavic *veselô* "happy" (cf. Walde-Pokorny, *Vergleichendes Wörterbuch der indogermanischen Sprachen*, I, Berlin, 1936, pp. 307-308).

\* This stanza an interpolation of the post-Zarathushtrian period.

- stirumantem x'arum ja'nti* A sore-bleeding wound he smiteth  
*[aŋa hē bāda kamaraðem]* [Even on his pate <so evil>];  
*jaγanē pa'ti x'auhayač'ti* Smiting, he doth drive him back-  
 ward  
*[gaθa zojā nā'd<i>gāðakam]* \* [As a mighty man a weaker].
11. *stūðem ašim [haraðem . . .* Stash, the pious one, adore we,  
*rašim] gazaṁa'de*  
*taxnem ašum aofanūvantem* Sturdy <he and> swift <and>  
 mighty,  
*daršim sūrem berazašim* Bold, of lofty insight, valiant.
12. *[yð] vīspaðhyð haða* From all battles <that he wagheth>  
*ar[e]xat'hyð*  
*naṁamēd pa'ti-jaṁa'ti* Having conquered, he returneth  
*vγaznēd 'maðanqoi spōntānqm* To the council of th' Amahaspanda.
13. *[sraoðem ašim [harmoðem . . .* [Sreah, the pious one, adore we,]  
*rašim] gazaṁa'de]*  
*yūnqm aofitō [yūnqm]* Of young men the strongest, [of  
*tančitō<sup>10</sup>* young men] sturdiest,  
*yūnqm θwaršitō [yūnqm]* Of young men most active, [of  
*asitō* young men] swiftest,  
*yūnqm parāka-taršitō* Of young men the furthest  
 dreaded.  
*[pa'tiṣata mazdayasna* [Seek ye, worshippers of Mazda,  
*masiaka aiγcha yasnem]* Landing of the pious Sraosha.]
14. *dūrāḥ haða ašmāḥ nāmāḥ* From this <pious> household far  
 go,  
*dūrāḥ haða a'pāḥḥ vīsaḥ* From this <pious> village far go,  
*dūrāḥ haða ašmāḥ tanīaot* From this <pious> clan-land far  
 go,  
*dūrāḥ haða a'pāḥḥ da'pāaot* From this <pious> country far go  
*ayd 'θyγēd vāγnā ge'nti* Evil woes <and> inundations

\* Borrowed from the Gothic *Ya. xxiv, 8.*<sup>10</sup> Ed. has accusative throughout because of the interpolated first line.





- [*pasā hūrō frāsmō-dā'tām*] [*<In the night-time> after sun-*  
*set*].
17. *yō nōit pasāsta huir'afe* Who hath never slept since that  
 time  
*yaf ma'nyū dāmaq dā'sitam* Spirits twain the world created  
 [[*yasā*] *spu'tō ma'nyū yasā* ['Th' Holy Spirit and the Evil],  
*asrō*] <sup>17</sup>  
*hādrō āshāe gat'hō* Watching over Asha's creatures.  
 [*yō vīspā's ayqu[ā] xāufnasā* [Who in sunshine and in darkness  
*yō'dye'ti [māsanya't'ōyō] ha'da* Ever battlcth with the [Ma-  
*dāva's'byō]* rainyan] demons.]
18. <sup>18</sup>*yō nōit tarōtō frānāmā'te* Who doth not in terror bow him  
*θwādānāf parō dāva's'byō* From affright before the demons;  
 [[*frā*] *āhmāt parō vīspē* [*<But before him all the demons>*  
*dā'ta*] <sup>18</sup>  
*amūō tarō'ta noman'te* 'Gainst their will in terror bow  
 they,  
*tarō'ta tawād'hya* <sup>19</sup> *θyavōnti* Terrified in darkness hurtling.
19. <sup>21</sup>*[eruo'sēm ašim [huruo'sēm . . .* [Sroch, the pious one, adore we,  
*ratūm] yarama'ide*  
*yim yara'ta* Whom worshipped  
*haomō frāsmi's hā'sās<i>yō* Haoma, prospering[?]<and> heal-  
 ing,  
*avirō xāwōryō av'ri-dā'ōrō* Beauteous, kingly, eyes <all>  
 golden,  
*har[s]zi'stē pa'ti bar[s]zāhi* On the <very> loftiest summit  
*har'ōyō pa'ti bar[s]zayō]* Of <the mount> Haraiti Barai]
20. <sup>22</sup>*[h<u>wādā [pāpō-wādā] pa'ri-gō-* [Good <his> words [protecting  
*wādā* words], on all sides sounding;

<sup>17</sup> Gloss-interpolation.

<sup>18</sup> = Yt. xl, 13 (cf. Yt. ix, 4 a-i); for the stanza as a whole see Geldner, p. 63.

<sup>19</sup> Apparently an interpolation to emphasise the preceding line.

<sup>20</sup> Ed. *tawād'hō*; for the reading here adopted see Schwyzler, p. 28.

<sup>21</sup> = Yt. ix, 17 (Drvaspa); x, 88 (Mithra); xvi, 37 (Ashi)—a stock stanza to enhance the dignity of the deities celebrated in their respective Yashts.

<sup>22</sup> Rather weak stanza; doubtful whether in the original.

- pa<sup>9</sup>θimnō vīspō-paē<i>gəm  
masīm gəm pa<sup>9</sup>ru-dāvntīm  
māθraheō pa<sup>9</sup>ruvādām]
- Wisdom hath he, all adorned,  
E'en a wisdom full of knowledge,  
And the <Holy> Word's quinte-  
sence.]
21. [sraōem ašim [huraōem . . .  
rašim] yazamaēde]  
yeuhe amānem vdr[a]θraγ<a>ni  
hasapō-sūpəm vīdām  
[bar[s]vīte pa'ti bar[s]vahi  
haraθyō pa'ti bar[s]vagd] <sup>22</sup>  
p<sup>9</sup>drauzīnem anāra-naēmāf  
stakrapāsem nīdara-naēmāf]
- [Srosh, the pious one, adore we,]  
His a mansion <all>-victorious,  
With a thousand pillars builded,  
[On the <very> loftiest summit  
Of <the mount> Haraiti Barzi,]  
Self-illumined on the inside,  
Star-adorned on the outside.
- 22.<sup>24</sup>[yeuhe ahunō vā'r<i>yō  
snaθiō vīata vərəθrajd  
yasnas[ā] haptauhā'tiā  
fīvīas[ā]  
māθras[ā] yō vdr[s]θraγ<a>nīd  
vīspāē yasnō-karāyō]
- [<In> whose <hand> th' Ahuna  
Vairya  
Served as weapon <all>-victorious,  
And the Yasna Haptauhaiti,  
And victorious Fshushas Manthra,  
And all chapters of the Yasna.]
23. [sraōem ašim [huraōem . . .  
rašim] yazamaēde]  
yeuhe anā[ā] vərəθraynāē  
hāuqθavāē vadē<i>yōē  
auyōn <sup>25</sup> amōš spēta  
aōi hapō-karāurīm qm]
- [Srosh, the pious one, adore we,]  
Through whose might and through  
whose conquest,  
Through whose knowledge and  
whose wisdom  
Came th' Amshaspands <down  
from heaven>  
Unto earth, the seven-climbed.
- 24.<sup>26</sup>yō dānō-disō dānagōi  
vāō-zāōrō fraōarō'i  
aōi gəm astra'tīm gāōgm  
[aye dānaya fraōrēnta  
by
- Who for faith of faith the teacher,  
Ruling as he will, doth fare forth  
Down unto this world corporeal.  
[That the faith which is professed  
by

<sup>22</sup> Interpolated epic tag.<sup>24</sup> Evidently a late addition from the post-Zarathushtrian period.<sup>25</sup> Ed. sedin: lines c-d and 24 a = Yt. xi, 14 c-e.<sup>26</sup> Lines c-b = Yt. x, 92 a-f.

<i>aḥwō mazdā ašava</i>	Ahura Mazda the holy,
[ <i>frā</i> ] <i>voḥa manō</i> [ <i>frā</i> <i>a</i> ] <i>šam</i> <i>vaḥištāu</i>	Vohuman, Asha Vahishta,
[ <i>frā</i> ] <i>xšaθraua va'rim</i> [ <i>frā</i> ] <i>xraut</i> [ <i>a</i> ] <i>ārmaiti</i>	Kshathrauer, Spenta Armaiti,
[ <i>frā</i> ] <i>ha<sup>o</sup>rcatōs</i> [ <i>frā</i> ] <i>aməratatōs</i> < <i>ia</i> >	Haurvatat, Ameretat, questions
[ <i>frā</i> ] <i>dhə'riš fraīnō</i> [ <i>frā</i> <i>dhə'riš</i> ] <i>škaēšas</i> < <i>ia</i> >	Of the Lord, and his <great> teachings].
25. <sup>21</sup> [ <i>frā</i> ] <i>aša</i> < <i>a</i> > <i>iaēbga aḥabya</i>	[For the two lives now <and hence- forth>.]
< <i>a</i> > <i>iaēbga</i> [ <i>nō</i> ] <i>aḥabya</i> [ <i>ni</i> ] <i>paγi</i>	For the two lives do thou guard us,
[ <i>āi</i> <i>srəoša ašya huraōša</i> <i>aḥmāiša aḥke ašmāte</i> <i>aḥmāiša aḥke manahyāi</i> ] <sup>22</sup>	[Srosh of lovely form and pious, For the life <that is> corporeal, For the soul's life, <Oh, protect us!>]!
<i>pa'ri dr&lt;a&gt;vataf mahrkāf</i>	Dev'lish Death, from <him protect us!>
<i>pa'ri dr&lt;a&gt;vataf ašmānāf</i>	Dev'lish Wrath, from <him pro- tect us!>
<i>pa'ri dr&lt;a&gt;vafbyō haēnōbyō</i>	Dev'lish Herdes, from <them pro- tect us!>
[ <i>yā as xrauram drašiam</i> <i>gərəwəga</i> <i>ašmāke parō draomōbyō</i> <i>yā ašmō dušdō draṇvayāf</i> <i>maf vištataf dācōvō-dāitāt</i> ]	[Tha! high hold their blood- stained banner; From assaults of Wrath protect us Wherewith evil Wrath assaults us With Vidhutu, made by devils.]
26. <sup>23</sup> [ <i>aša</i> [ <i>nō</i> ] <i>tām srəoša aš&lt;i&gt;ga</i> [ <i>huraōša</i> ] <i>ašaur</i> [ <i>e</i> ] <i>daγaš hītaēbyō</i>	[Do thou then [for us], O pious Sraoša [of lovely form], Strength grant to <our harnessed> coursers,

<sup>21</sup> Yt. x, 93.<sup>22</sup> Late glosses. In d-e Ed. reads *aḥōs aḥmāi pō ašmāš/yašmā ašmā* *manahyō*; for the reading here adopted see Schwyzler, pp. 99-100.<sup>23</sup> Stock verse also in Yt. v, 53 d-i (Ardvi Sura) and x, 11 c-b, 94 b-g (Mithra).

- dr<u>catatəm<ā> tanubhō* <Yea,> and health unto our  
bodies,  
*po'ru-sparit<i>yəm* [hišganlqm] Full perception of <our> foemen,  
*po'ti-ju'tim dušma'nyuqm* Striking down of evil-minded,  
*hušrā-nizā'tim kamarsθ[an]qm* Speedy conquest of the hostile,  
*a'rāušmaqm* [hišganlqm] Of <our> enemies <and> haters.]
27. [*eraōdēm aiīm* [kuraošēm . . . [Strosh, the pious one, adore we,  
*aiūm*] *yazama'de*]  
*yim caθ<u>wdrō a'rāantō* Who is borne by four swift cour-  
sers,  
[*a'rušā ruōšēna frādərura* [White <and> shining, seen afar  
off,  
*aronta vīhā'vohō asəya* Holy, wise, casting no shadow,  
*mā'nīnavauho vaaznti]*<sup>10</sup> Moving in the realm of spirits,]  
*sr<u>vōšēna ašlqm asfahō* With <their> hoofs <of> horny  
<hardness>  
*zaranga po'ti-θuarātūhō* <Inlaid with> gold damaskening.
- 28.<sup>11</sup> [*āz<i>yavōha aspaθ'b<i>ya* [Than two steeds they twain <are>  
swifter,  
*ās<i>yavōha vāraθ'b<i>ya* Than two winds they twain <are>  
swifter,  
*ās<i>yavōha vāraθ'b<i>ya* Than two rains they twain <are>  
swifter,  
*ās<i>yavōha māraθ'b<i>ya* Than two clouds they twain <are>  
swifter,  
*ās<i>yavōha vāraθ'b<i>ya* Than two [flying] birds they twain  
[*palorataθ'bya*] <are> swifter.  
*ās<i>yavōha h<u>vasaθ'bya*] Than two well-shot [hurled]  
<casts> are swifter.]
29. *yōi viəpē lē arəyēnti* Who <swift> overtakes all <foe-  
man>  
*yq are pašbōt <i>yēnti* After whom they <rush> pur-  
suing,  
*nōi are pašbōt āfəntē* But <themselves> ne'er overtaken;

<sup>10</sup> = Yt. x, 98 f. 4 (of Mithra's chariot).<sup>11</sup> The use of the dual after *caθ<u>wdrō* of the preceding stanza in itself renders this stanza suspect (cf. Bartholomae, *op. cit.* 342); in Hae I Ed. has *hvaatayē ašlēmānyā*.



- srəθši adəmahe zr(ū)vi-draod* Aeshma <with his> mace <all>  
 blood<-stained>.  
*srəθši mǝdza'nyangm* For to smite the fiends Mazdānyan.  
*daθv[an]qm*  
*srəθši vīspangm dādərangm* For to smite down all the demons.]  
 33.<sup>40</sup> [*srəθšēm ašīm* [kurəθšēm . . .] [Srosh, the pious one, adore we,]  
*rātūm*] *yazama'de*  
*idat[ā] a'nīdātā idat[ā]* Here and elsewhere, <even> here  
 <now>.  
*vīsparmōs a'pi imqm aqm* And o'er all this earth, all con-  
 quers  
*vīsp* *srəθšəhe aīyəhe* <Aye> victorious we worship  
*tarməhe hqm-vor[ə]tīvātō* <Wan hy> Srosh, the pious, sturdy,  
*tarməhe tanumqθrahe* Spell incarnate <he, and> sturdy,  
*bāzui-aojəakō rəθšəštō* Full of courage <for the battle>.  
*kəmerəθō-fənd dādərangm* Strong of arm, a warrior<mighty>,  
*[vənātō]* *vanat'it vana'tīvatō* [Conquering,] smiting <down>  
 the pates of demons;  
*ādaxnas[ō]* [*vənātō*] <Yea, and> holy, [conquering,]  
 <them> we worship.  
 [*vanat'it[ō]* <ā>] *yazama'de* [And the victories we worship  
*vana'it'yō uparātātō*<sup>41</sup> Of Uparatāt victorious;  
*yamōs srəθšəhe aīyəhe* That of Srosh the pious, and that  
*yamōs aritōis yazatəhe* Conquest of the Yazad Aršti].  
 34. *vīspə umāna* [*srəθšō-pātā*] Every household[Srosh-protected]  
*yazama'de* do we worship  
*yevhōda srəθšō aš(i)yō* In the which the pious Sroshs  
*fr(i)yō frīθō pātī-zantō* As a friend belov'd is welcomed  
 [And the righteous man of good  
*[nōcū āhuv* [*frīyō-*] *humatō* thought [rich],  
*frāyō-hūxtō* [*frāyō-humarētō*]<sup>42</sup> Rich in good words, rich in good  
 deeds].

<sup>40</sup> §§ 33-34 = Yt. xl, 19-20 (Srosha).

<sup>41</sup> E.g. *vanat'it vana'tīvatō uparātātōm yazama'de*; for *vana'it'yō uparātātō* see Yt. i, 8; Vsp. i, 8; Yt. viii, 12; xiv, 8. The reference here to Uparatāt seems to be a late addition.

<sup>42</sup> A formula recurring in Vsp. iii, 4; Vd. xviii, 64; apparently a late addition.

## OLD PERSIAN JOTTINGS

ROLAND G. KENT

UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA

SINCE THE writing of my article on "The Present Status of Old Persian Studies," which appeared in this JOURNAL in June, 1936, there have been a number of publications in this rather limited field, some of which give occasion for comment at this time.

For brevity, items in the appended Bibliography are referred to by their serial numbers.

I. The inscription of Darius about *The Restoration of Order in the Empire* (JAOS 54. 40-50), is dealt with in No. 11, pp. 210-1 with notes 23 and 26, and is the subject of Nos. 24, 25, 27, in which the Akkadian and the Elamite versions also are treated, as well as that composed in Old Persian.

36 ci[ā], my restoration to fill the gap, seems to me to be supported by the remarks of Harl (No. 6) as to the phonetic development of Avestan *čina*.

39 *tauviya* "stronger": this is the comparative to \**tauma-*, cf. the OP subst. *tauman-* "strength." For the formation, cf. not merely Skt. *stāra-* "strong," comp. *stāvīyas-*, but Av. *stāra-* "strong," comp. *stārayā-*, and *tazma-* "brave," comp. *tāsyā-*.

39-40 *sakaufim* (Bh. 4. 65 *śakauri[m]*): in addition to the references in No. 11, pp. 219-20 and note 62, mention should be made of Benveniste's earlier remarks (No. 1). The normalized form should perhaps be rather *skaufim*, Bh. *śkaurim*.

Two corrections to No. 25, p. 112, thanks to a card from Prof. Weissbach: (1) An "eleventh" OP fragment is reached by counting separately (JAOS 54. 41) the two sides of the fragment given by Scheil, *Mém.* 21, 61; there are eleven fragments of the text, but only ten fragments of tablets. (2) The second Akk. fragment, mentioned as unpublished, was in fact published by Weissbach in *AbkSGW* 29. 37-8 (1911) and in *Keilinsch.* xx and 99-101 (1911).

II. The Dairya-Inscription of Xerxes, found at Persepolis in 1935; see Nos. 7, 9-12, 14, 15, 18-20. The two OP copies are accessible in photographic reproduction (No. 20, p. 295), but the Akk. and Elam. versions are available only in Herzfeld's normalized transliteration (No. 19, pp. 56-61). This inscription is valuable



for new data on language, history, and religion; but even more so for its convincing evidence that when it was composed the reduction of OP to writing was still a living process, and not a matter of making a cento from old materials in the archives (No. 20, p. 304).

18-9 *dātām : tya : manā : avadiš : adāraya* "the law which was mine, that held them (the *daḥyāva* or lands) firm." NRe 21-2 has the same text, with the variant *adāriya* (cf. *JAOS* 35. 347 n.). The usual interpretation of NRe is "they maintained my law" or its equivalent: Tolman, "The law which (is) mine, that was established for them"; Weissbach, "Mein Gesetz, das ward gehalten" as his composite version, and for the Akkadian, "meine Gesetze wurden gehalten." For the Daiva-Inscription, Herzfeld has "mein gesetz das wurde von ihnen gehalten." But the accusative *-diš* can hardly be the agent, which is expressed by the genitive (Meillet-Benveniste, *Gram.*<sup>2</sup> § 363); the idioms *auramazdām : avaša : kāmā : āha* and *yaθā : mām : kāmā : āha* can hardly establish an accusative of the agent (cf. *Lg.* 9. 39), nor can the miswritten phrases *tya : mām : kartā* and *mām : upā : mām : kartā* in Art. Pers. a, b, in the face of *tyamaīy : kartām* and the like (cf. *TAPA* 55. 60-1). For these reasons I take *adāraya* as active, with *-diš* as direct object (*ava* — *dātām* is of course subject), as does Weissbach in his translation of NRe, given *AbkSGW* 29. 25, "mein Gesetz hielt sie (in Schranken)."<sup>10</sup>

38-9 *daivā : mā : yađiyaiša* "the daivas shall not be worshipped." The verb is a passive optative; the active personal ending *-ša* (varying with *-ha*; cf. Meillet-Benveniste, *Gram.*<sup>2</sup> p. 130) is justified by the presence of the passive suffix *-ya-*. This interpretation is to be credited to Dr. C. J. Ogden (personal letter, March 11, 1938). Previously I normalized *yađiyaiš* and translated "The Daivas thou shalt not worship!", but a general prohibition in the plural now seems to me more probable than one in the second singular.

47 and 48 *aḥaniy*, first singular subjunctive, "may I be": for an expected \**aḥāniy* (cf. No. 20, p. 302). Dr. Ogden suggests that the first person form has taken the short vowel by imitation of the short vowel which is regular in the other persons, e. g., in 3d sg. *aḥatiy*.

III. *šadayāmaiy*, occurring at the end of Dar. Susa a and of Scheil's No. 11 (*Mémoires* 21. 52), both mutilated inscriptions, but

with identical text. Brandenstein, WZKM 39. 20, correctly reconstructs the final sentence as follows (my version, JAOS 51. 215 n. and 217-8, was incorrect): *vainā : AMhā : adam : awa : akunavam : tya : a[kunavam : visa]hā : frašta : šadayāmaiy*. He translates thus: "Nach dem Willen des AM tat ich (jen)es; (durch das,) was ich tat, bin ich jeglichem als einer sichtbar, der (vorrwärts) ans Ziel gekommen ist."

Brandenstein, it is true, makes the point that *awa* always refers to the preceding; but in Bh. 4. 51 the adv. *awā* refers to a following *gaša*, and his objection to taking *awa* in our present passage as antecedent of *tya* therefore lacks validity. Thus *šadayāmaiy* may be an indicative of result depending directly upon the second *akunavam*, even as the subjunctive *kunavāmaiy* depends directly on *amanīya* in Scheil's No. 10 (*Mém.* 21. 51; cf. JAOS 51. 217, with ref.), and we should interpret, "By the grace of Ahuramazda I have done the following, namely that I brought about (that) to every one I seem exalted."

For the other passage with this verb, lines 5-6 of Scheil's No. 7 (*Mém.* 21. 46), I now accept Brandenstein's text and translation (WZKM 39. 45): *vainā : AMhā : hya [ : ima : hadiš : vainatīy : tya : manā : ka[rtam :] višahyā : frašta : šadayā[maiy]*, "Nach dem Willen des AM werde ich jedem, der diese Pfalz sieht, welche ich gebaut habe, sichtbar als einer, der an der Spitze steht."

IV. The long inscription of Xerxes dealing with his accession to the throne, found by Herzfeld at Persepolis in 1931 (*AMI* 4. 117-39; Kent, *Lg.* 9. 35-46; other ref. No. 11, p. 210, n. 19), has again been discussed by Herzfeld (No. 19, pp. 35-46), who no longer argues that in lines 33-4 *gāšand : ašiyava* "(Darius) went from the throne" means "abdicated," but accepts (p. 45) the view already urged by others that it means "died"; the reason for his change of view is a newly discovered Akkadian version of the same inscription (apparently as yet unpublished), from which he quotes the corresponding passage (his transliteration): *ultu muḫḫi ša abūja dāriyāwāš ina šī-im-it el-lī-i-ki* "from the time that my father Darius to his fate went." I venture to call attention to the fact that Professor Speiser suggested (*Lg.* 9. 42) this very idiom as one possibility of the Akk. equivalent.

V. The OP inscriptions whose authenticity has been called into question have received further discussion.

In No. 8, Herzfeld again discusses the inscription of the silver dishes of Artaxerxes I and that of Ariaramnes. In a personal letter, he interprets the second element of *bātugara* "Weinschale" (in the insc. of the silver dishes) as identical with *-gara-* in *\*pati-gara-*, from which comes Mod. Pers. *piḡāla* "drinking-cup" (cf. No. 3).

VI. The inscription treated by Dyen (*JAOS* 56. 91-3) has been the subject of lengthy discussion by Eilers (No. 16), who finds in the parts of the inscription which defied Dyen's efforts at interpretation, a moderately successful attempt by the forger to put into OP the Pahlavi formula for Artaxerxes and his titles. These comprise the first three lines, and the column of characters in the remaining lines except line 5, at the right of the tablet. In the following transcription, a dash indicates a gap filled by a figure in the design, and + indicates a possible additional character:

- 1 *ma-ta-du-i-ta-nu:-a-ra-di-ra-ša-tu-ru:-*  
 2 *:i-ta-du-na-i:-mi-na-ja-ta-ru-i:-mā*  
 3 *ra-ka-na:-mi-ra-ka-a:-a-i-ru-na:-vi:-da*  
 4 *:ma-u*      5 *nu+*    7 *ša*    8 *ra+*    9 *mu*  
 10 *vi:-a*    11 *gu-ru+*

The Pahlavi formula is *mazdēn bayē X šāhān šāh ērān u anērān kē ēhrē hač yasdān*, "the Mazda-worshipping God X, king of kings of Iran and Non-Iran, who (is) a scion from the gods." On this basis, Eilers reconstructs an original of the inscription, as follows:

- 1 *mazdēn Ardashēr* 2 *yasdān min ēhrē*  
 3-4 *malkān malkā ērān va anērān . . .* 10-11 *aguru*  
 "The Mazda-worshipping Ardashir, scion from the gods,  
 king of kings of Iran and Non-Iran . . . brick."

Note the change of order; the Semitic *min* for *hač*, *malkān malkā* for *šāhān šāh* with *l* changed to *r*, and *va* "and"; the Akk. *aguru* (whence Mod. Pers. *āgār*) as a label for the object on which it stands.

VII. The glazed tile from Saqqara, published by Sayce in *AfOF* 8. 225 (1933), is the subject of comment by Weissbach (No. 24, p. 87), who finds that by reading both sides from bottom upward he gets an intelligible text. The inscription is as follows:

	Obverse	Reverse
1	za-ra-ka	a-ma
2	XŠ- : -va	ya-a-na
3	: -u-ša	XŠ-XŠ

Weisbach reads (in my normalization) :

:uš(a) XŠ : varaka XŠ XŠyānām  
 " Uš(a), great king, king of kings."

He suggests that *Uš* or *Uša* might have been a nickname of Darius (*dārayavauš*), and declines to pronounce on the genuineness of the inscription.

But to me such an abbreviation of the royal name seems grotesque. Writing from below upwards would be without precedent in OP records. The inscription on the tile can have meaning only in connection with another tile, yet could not have been fixed on a wall because it was inscribed on both sides (as I wrote before, No. 11, pp. 215-6).

Another solution is possible. The maker and inscriber of the tile was accustomed to right-to-left writing, as in Arabic and Hebrew (cf. the engraver of the Daiva-Inscription, No. 15, p. 62, and No. 16, p. 293). He did not understand the OP syllabary, but had before him a copy of Scheil's *Mémoires*, Vol. 31, in which he found three inscriptions with almost identical text: 2, complete in one line; 7, the extant text of the first line (incomplete at both ends); 11, the first line and the beginning of the second:

- 2    adam : dārayavauš XŠ : varaka XŠ XŠyānām : (etc.)  
 7.1            ]ārayavauš XŠ : varaka XŠ XŠyānā[  
 11.1 adam : dārayavauš : XŠ : varaka : XŠ XŠyān-  
       2 ām : (etc.)

He realized that the slanting stroke was the word-divider, and believed that the characters were read from right to left; he used 7 as his model, but noticed by comparison that another character (*ma*) must have stood in the word, at the right. He began on the "reverse" side of the tile, inscribed three short lines there, went to the obverse and did the same, ending with a word-divider. A smear on Sayce's facsimile at the right end of line 3 of the "obverse" indicates that for a moment he was led by Insc. 11 into starting a divider, but obliterated it under the influence of 2 and 7.

And that this is what he did, is proved by the fact that nowhere else in all the facsimiles of OP inscriptions can there be found precisely this same omission of the divider, simultaneously in three positions: between -uš and XŠ, between varaka and XŠ, between XŠ and XŠyāndm.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

The following bibliography, which includes some items kindly furnished by Prof. Dr. W. Prinz of Halle, supplements that presented in "The Present Status of Old Persian Studies"; the same abbreviations, with a few obvious additions, are used:

## 1933

1. É. Benveniste, *JAs.* 223.244-5 (on šakšūm).
2. Albert Herrmann, "Die Saken und der Skythenzug des Dareios," *Festschrift Max Freiherrn von Oppenheim zum 79. Geburtstage gewidmet*, hrsg. von E. F. Weidner, pp. 157-69 (Berlin).

## 1936

3. É. Benveniste, *JAs.* 228.233-4 (on NP *pidia* "drinking-cup").
4. W. Ellers, "Eine mittelpersische Wortform aus frühachämenidischer Zeit," *ZDMG* 90, 160-200 (on *ša-pa-si-* in an Akk. letter of Darius).
5. Robert A. Hall Jr., "The Etymology of OP *varānam*," *Lg.* 12.297-9.
6. W. Hari, *KZ* 63.2 (on Av. *cinā* and Median *aspacons*).
7. E. Herzfeld, "Die Religion der Achämeniden," *Revue de l'Hist. des Religions* 113.21-41.
8. E. Herzfeld, "Die Silberschlüssel Ariaxerxes' des I. und die goldene Fundamenturkunde des Ariaramnes," *AMi* 8.5-51.
9. E. Herzfeld, "The Iranian Religion at the Time of Darius and Xerxes," *Religions* No. 15, pp. 29-28 (London, Society for Promoting the Study of Religions).
10. E. Herzfeld, "Iranische Kunst und Religion nach den Inschriften," *Oostersch. Genootschap in Nederland, Verslag van het 6. Congress.*, pp. 60-82 (Leiden).
11. R. G. Kent, "The Present Status of Old Persian Studies," *JAOS* 56.208-25.
12. E. F. Schmidt, *Illustrated London News*, Feb. 22 1936, p. 328 (photographs of inscriptional finds, and explanatory comment).
13. T. Hudson Williams, *A Short Grammar of Old Persian, with a reader, accompanied by a word-for-word translation, notes, and vocabulary*, pp. 51; Cardiff, The University of Wales Press Board. Reviewed in *BSLP* 37.4.34 (1936; Benveniste); *JAOS* 57.193-4 (1937; Kent).
14. *AJOP* 11.91 (comment based on No. 12).
15. *AJA* 40.355 (news notes on inscriptional finds).

## 1937

16. W. Eilers, "Eine gefälschte Inschrift in altpersischen Zeichen," *ZDMG* 91. 407-20.
17. Kurt Galling, "Syrien in der Politik der Achämeniden bis zum Aufstand des Megabyzes 448 v. Chr.," *Der alte Orient* 39. 3-4. 1-51 (esp. pp. 37-39, on Bh. § 14 and Daiva-Insc.). Reviewed in *OLZ* 41. 101-6 (1938; Schaefer; see esp. 105).
18. H. Hartmann, "Zur neuen Inschrift des Xerxes von Persepolis," *OLZ* 40. 146-60 (on *artācā brazmani*).
19. E. Herzfeld, "Xerxes' Verbot des Daiva-Cultes," *AMi* 8. 56-77.
20. R. G. Kent, "The Daiva-Inscription of Xerxes, *Lp.* 13. 292-305.
21. Purdoonjee D. J. Paruck, "The Persian Calendars," *JCOI* 31. 52-80.
22. Alexander S. Strelkov, "The Moscow Artaxerxes Cylinder Seal," *Bull. Amer. Inst. for Iranian Art and Arch.* 5. 1. 17-21 (seal of Art. III, not I; against Šileiko [1925]).
23. Josef Sturm, "Persepolis," *Pauly-Wissowa's Realencyc. d. class. Altertumswiss.* 19. 1. 1963-74.
24. F. H. Weissbach, "Achämenidisches," *ZDMG* 91. 80-7.

## 1938

25. R. G. Kent, "The Restoration of Order by Darius," *JAOS* 58. 112-21.
26. F. W. König, *Relief und Inschrift des Königs Darius I am Felsen von Bagistan*, xii + 97 pp.; Leiden, Brill.
27. F. H. Weissbach, "Die dreisprachige Inschrift Darius Sans c," *ZfAss.* 44. 150-69.
28. C. P. T. Winckworth, "Neo-Babylonian bu-gu-ur(-). I," *BSON* 9. 333-43 (against Eilers' view in No. 4).

# THREE TURFAN PAHLAVI ETYMOLOGIES: 𐬱𐬀𐬭𐬀𐬎𐬎𐬎 𐬰𐬀𐬭𐬀𐬎𐬎𐬎, MNWHMYD

CHARLES J. OGDEN  
NEW YORK CITY

## (1) 𐬱𐬀𐬭𐬀𐬎𐬎𐬎

IN THE Turfan Pahlavi Manichaean Fragment T III 260 (ed. Andreas-Henning, *Mitteliranische Manichaica aus Chinesisch-Turkestan, I*)<sup>1</sup> there is a mention of "that light of the gods, which from the beginning has been smitten by Āz and Ahmēn and the demons and the witches and which even now they hold . . ." (u-š nān-ē 𐬱𐬀𐬭𐬀𐬎𐬎𐬎 dārēnd, leaf a 2, verso 1, lines 25-26, ed. A.-H., p. 179). Andreas-Henning render 𐬱𐬀𐬭𐬀𐬎𐬎𐬎 by "gefesselt," probably because in another passage of this text of the same general tenor (a 1, verso 2, lines 11-12, *ibid.*, p. 186) the expression used is u-š nān-ē grift dārēnd, "and even now they hold it (the light) seized." Henning later, in his article "Das Verbum des Mittelpersischen der Turfanfragmente" (*Ztschr. f. Indologie u. Iranistik*, 9, 158-253), cites at p. 181 both this past participial form, which he transcribes as *kašird*, and a present stem *kašir*.<sup>2</sup> He still adheres to the meaning "fesseln," but admits that the word is of obscure origin ("unklarer Herkunft"), suggesting, however, that the forms may be analyzed as *hama* + \*šryā- or \*šrya-, with the *m* of the prefix becoming *f* before *š*.

A more plausible etymological connection can be made with the Iranian root *fšar-* "to be ashamed, abased," from which we have Avestan *fšarema-* and BkPhl. and NP. *šarm*, all meaning "shame," and, with metathesis, Soghdian *šh'r* (*šfar*). Benveniste<sup>3</sup> has further recognized that the TPhl. verb stems *šarz-* "be ashamed" (also in the Psalter Fragment), and *šrdsēn-*<sup>4</sup> "make ashamed, confound" (both listed by Henning, *ZII* 9, 191-192), are derived from (*f*)*šar-* with inchoative *s*. In *kašird* here we have now the TPhl. past participle of (*f*)*šar-* without any enlargement of the root, and in *kašir* the present stem in *ya-*, presumably with intransitive or passive force. The *f*, which is lost before *š* in

<sup>1</sup> *Sitzb. d. Preuss. Akad. d. Wiss., Phil.-Hist. Kl.* 1932, I, Berlin, 1932.

<sup>2</sup> From M 246 recto 2, a fragment apparently not yet published.

<sup>3</sup> *Mém. de la Soc. de Linguistique*, 23, 403-405.

<sup>4</sup> The stem *šrdsēn-* "overcome," which Henning, *ZII* 9, 192, assigns to a root \**srns*, is merely *šrdsēn-*, with the sibilants interchanged and an inorganic *s* inserted before *š*, as in *asšōz* and *asšōgā*, cf. *JAOS* 53, 392.



initial position in Middle and New Persian,<sup>8</sup> is preserved in the seam of the compound, while the *m* of the prefix *ham-* disappears before *fā* as *m* does before *ft* in such forms as *hangaft* and *frangft*, from the roots *gam-* and *nam-* respectively (Henning, *ZII* 9. 218-219). We may accordingly translate *ha/sird* as "abased" or "oppressed."

(2) 'ŠKRWST

The same Manichaean text (T III 260) contains a passage describing how, after the seduction of the male demons by the Light-Realm-God, there arose from the sea a hideous monster.<sup>9</sup> The text continues: ' *uḡ aḡ drayāh bā 'škrwst u-š n(i)wist andar šahr vīdāk kunān* "and it . . . forth from the sea, and it began doing sin in the world." Andreas-Henning, following the context, render the verb 'škrwst as "kroch," and in their glossary (p. 216) give the meaning "herauskriechen." Later Henning in *ZII* 9. 225, where he is discussing the prefix *u-*, merely mentions the form as "unklar." The nearest parallels, I suggest, are to be found in the Avestan adjectives *škarana-* "round," *škaruṣat.raḡa* "causing the chariot to turn" (Bartholomae, *AirWb.* 1587). These words presuppose a root *škar-* "to twist, turn," from which the meaning "crawl, wriggle," demanded in our text, might well enough arise. The change of initial *sk* to *šk* is regular in Middle and New Persian,<sup>8</sup> and the 'ayin here merely indicates the prothetic vowel which develops in Turfan Pahlavi before initial *s* or *š* followed by a consonant. The termination *wst* does present a difficulty, since the past tense of the verbs corresponding to the NP. verbs in *-istan* is regularly written *yst* in Turfan Pahlavi. The only recourse seems to be to regard the form here as written defectively and to vocalize it as '(i)škar(r)av(i)st, parallel to *var(r)avist* "believed," which is well attested for both Turfan and Book Pahlavi. The present stem which is to be inferred, *škarra-*, would be another example of the *su-* or *nav-* formation in Middle Persian, cf. Henning, *ZII* 9. 201-202.

<sup>8</sup> Hübschmann, *Persische Studien*, pp. 185-186.

<sup>9</sup> The beginning of the story, which must have told about the seduction, is missing by reason of the loss of a leaf at this point, but it can be completed from the accounts in other sources, especially Theodore bar Kioni, see A. V. W. Jackson, *Reveries in Manichaeism*, pp. 244-247.

<sup>10</sup> Andreas-Henning, *Mitteliran. Man.* I, p. 181, b 1, recto 1, lines 12-15.

<sup>11</sup> Bartholomae, *AirWb.* s. v. *skapta-*, *skand-*, 1586-1587; Hübschmann, *Pers. Stud.*, p. 219.

(3) *MNWHMYD*

Among the etymologies advanced for the much discussed Turfan Pahlavi word *MNWHMYD* (also written *MNHWMYD* and, defectively, *MNHYMYD*), which can best be rendered in English by "mind," in either the intellectual or the volitional sense,<sup>9</sup> the most plausible, despite those of Waldschmidt and Lenz<sup>10</sup> and of Nyberg,<sup>11</sup> is still that put forth by Schaefer,<sup>12</sup> who would read *manōhmyd*, from the genitive case of Old Iranian *manah-* (in Avestan *manušaō*) "mind," and *matī-* "thought." It seems unlikely, however, that the TPhl. compound would have arisen from a syntactic combination of a genitive and the substantive on which it depends; the once occurring Avestan phrase *manušaōca humaiti*, which Schaefer quotes,<sup>13</sup> is hardly sufficient evidence of the existence of such a fixed formula. The term seems rather to be a dependent compound of the ordinary type, *manah* + *matī* "thought of the mind," but is probably an old one, since even in the Avesta *matī-* is no longer found as an independent word. The appearance of *h*, and not *s*, before *m* may be justified by the analogy of such words as Av. *dušmainyu-*, Phl. *dušmān* "enemy," with *s* instead of *š*. That *h* is normally retained before *m* in Turfan Pahlavi has been shown by Benveniste.<sup>14</sup> The labial coloring of the vowel of the second syllable, indicated by the spelling with *w*, is doubtless caused by the following *m*, as in the superlative and ordinal suffix *-um*, from older *-ama-*.<sup>15</sup> We may vocalize the word accordingly as *manuḥmēd* or *manohmēd*, the precise quality of the second vowel, whether short *u* or *o*, being unascertainable. The spelling *MNHWMYD* probably represents *manahmēd*, with *HW* indicating a labialized *h*, just as in such a word as *PHYKR*, "picture" (NP. *paikar*), which is usually transcribed *paikar*, the prefix should be pronounced *palē* with palatalized *h* and not as a dissyllable.

<sup>9</sup> See Polotsky's discussion in Schmidt and Polotsky, *Ein Mani-Fund in Ägypten*, pp. 67-69 (*Sitzb. d. Preuss. Akad. d. Wiss., Phil.-hist. Kl.* 1953. I, pp. 68-70).

<sup>10</sup> *Man-uah-med* "die Gesinnung des guten Sinnes," in *Manichäische Dogmatik aus chinesischen und iranischen Texten*, pp. 82-90 (*SPAW, Phil.-hist. Kl.* 1933. XIII, pp. 860-507).

<sup>11</sup> *Man-ahōmēd* or *man-ahmēd* "Seelenwurzel," *Le Monde Oriental*, 23 (1929) 368-369.

<sup>12</sup> *Studien zum antiken Synkretismus* (1926), p. 209 n. 5.

<sup>13</sup> From *Parsakathā* 28; cf. Bartholomae, *AiWb.* 1833.

<sup>14</sup> *Bulletin de la Soc. de Linguistique*, 31. 76-79.

<sup>15</sup> Bartholomae, *Zum altiranischen Wörterbuch*, pp. 50-54.

THE HITTITE AND LUWIAN RITUAL OF  
ZARPIYA OF KEZZUWATNA

BENJAMIN SCHWARTZ  
THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

A — KUB 9.31      B — HT 1.

	A	B	
§ 1	1	1.	[UM-MA 'za-ar-p]i-ya <sup>1</sup> LA.ZU URU <sup>2</sup> ki-iz-an-wa-al-na
	2	2.	[ma-a-un MU.KAM-za] har-ra-un-za KUR-e-kán an-da ak-ki-ia-ki-it-ta-[ri]
	3	3.	[mám-mu-k]án ku-e-da-ni URU-ri EGIR-an har-ra-un
	4	4.	[nu BE-EL] É-TIM ki-ia-ia-an i-ya-zi
§ 2	5	5.	[ha-an-te-iz-s]i ki-e-lu-un ga-an-ga-sh-hi nu-aš-si hu-up- pa-li ZABAR
	6	6.	[ha-az-s]i-li-ia-si-it ŠA KUR.UR.MAH wa-ar-hu-wa-ya-aš
	7	7.	[ga-an-ki nam]-ma-ma ŠAKU-un-ku-un-az-zi-ya-aš ha-az-zi- ul-še-it-[ta?]
	8	8.	[har-tág-ga-aš] ša-ša-i da-aš-ša har-tág-ga-aš ša-ša-i
	9	9.	[ga-an]-k]-ma ša-a-lu-aš <sup>3</sup>
§ 3	10 <sup>2</sup>	10.	a-š-eš-ia ŠA SIG.GE, SIG.DIR URU <sup>2</sup> har-nu-wa-š-ia-aš SIG.SI[G, SIG,]
	11	4 11.	na UZU MĀS(1) UR.TOG me-un-ab-ha-an-da ša-ka-l- ša-a-un na-aš [ . . . ] Š-aš
	12	5 12.	ki-e-iz-ma i-an I-NA G <sup>12</sup> GAG KÁ i-an ki-e-iz-ma I-NA G <sup>12</sup> GAG G <sup>12</sup> MA.NU
	13	6 13.	ga-an-ki
§ 4	14	7 14.	pi-ra-an-un ha-an-te-iz-zi-ya-az I-NA KÁ G <sup>12</sup> GAG KÁ IGI-i-e-iz
	15	8 15.	wa-al-ab-zi na-aš-ta ŠA ZID.DA.ŠE [ku-ak-k]u-la-an ma- nu-wa-an-da-an <sup>2</sup>
	16	9 16.	ha-tal-ya-an-te-ya-aš ŠA [ZID.DA.ŠE ku-ak-k]-ku-la-an 1 DUOKU-KU-UB G <sup>12</sup> STIN
	17	10 17.	ga-an-ki ki-e-iz-ma [I-NA G <sup>12</sup> GAG G <sup>12</sup> MA.NU wa-al-ab-zi

<sup>1</sup> In resura.

<sup>2</sup> B begins here with line 3(7) showing G-har, perhaps better read URUhar.

<sup>3</sup> B so-so-wa-an-ia-an.

TRANSLATION.

1. Thus (speaks) Zarpiya, medicine-man of Keszuwatna,
  2. If the year (is) bad, and there is constant dying in the land,
  3. then, in what(ever) city (the pestilence) has struck,
  4. the Lord of the House does as follows:
- 
5. First I hang a ritual suspension (?). In it, in a bronze net (?),
  6. he hangs a handful of the shaggy mane of a lion.
  7. Next, moreover, with a *kassul* of diorite,
  8. he crushes *kurtaggas*, he crushes strong *kurtaggas*,
  9. and hangs up what-he-has-crushed (?).
- 
10. A fillet (?) of black wool, red wool, (and) Harnuwasilan yellow wool (is twined),
  11. then the meat of a goat (and) a dog cut to bits (?). Then . . . . . three;
  12. one on this side, one on the gate peg. But on the other side, on the gate peg,
  13. he hangs a twig of date-palm.
- 
14. First of all he knocks on the gate, before the gate peg.
  15. Then he hangs a cooked *kukkulax* of fine barley-meal
  16. on the gate bolts (?), (and with) the *kukkulax* of fine barley-meal one pitcher of wine.
  17. But on the other side he strikes the twig of date-palm on the gate peg,

## A B

- 18 11 18. nu-nš-tu ŠA ZID.DA.ŠE ku-uk-ku-la-an su-mu-wu-an-ta-an  
 19 12 19. lu-tul-ya-am-ti-ga-aš ŠA [ZID.DA.ŠE] ku-uk-ku-la-an U 1  
 DUGKU.KU-UB GËSTIN
- 20 13 20. ga-an-ki
- 
- § 5 21 14 21. <sup>GI</sup>GAG.HI.A-ma kat-tu bar-ga <sup>GI</sup>ha-ah-hal pa-aš-kán  
 22 15 22. kat-tu-aš<sup>1</sup> tak-na-aš [.....] aš kat-ta-am lu-an-ta-ša-  
 zi-ya-aš
- 23 16 23. Ki-e-*š*u>un ki-e-ia-zi-ya wa-aš-ši hu-wa-al-la-ri ŠUM<sup>2</sup>  
 24 17 24. ha-ri-ya-aš-zi nam-ma ki-e-lu-mu-aš kuš-da-mi  
 25 18 25. A-VA KÁ EGIR <sup>GI</sup>IG<sup>3</sup> hi-e-la-aš ga-an-ki pí-re-an  
 26 19 26. kat-tu-ma<sup>4</sup> ki-e-la-mu-wa-aš 1 <sup>GI</sup>BANŠUR AD.KID da-ni  
 27 20 27. še-ra-aš-ša-an a-te-aš-ša-an<sup>5</sup> ZABAR 1 NINDA a-a-an  
 28 21 28. 1 NINDA.KUR<sub>1</sub> RA GA.KIN.AG da-a-i še-ra-aš-ša-an<sup>6</sup>  
 a-te-aš-ša-an ZABAR  
 29 22 29. GIR ZABAR <sup>GI</sup>BAN hu-R-ti-ya-an 1 <sup>GI</sup>GAG.Ü.TAG.GA  
 da-a-i
- 
- § 6 30 23 30. pi-ra-an kat-tu-ma<sup>4</sup> A-VA <sup>GI</sup>BANŠUR AD.KID 1 DUGku-  
 up-pár GËSTIN  
 31 24 31. <sup>GI</sup>pu-u-ri-ya-aš da-a-i U 1 DUGKA.GAG.NAG <sup>GI</sup>pu-ri-  
 ya-aš da-a-i
- 32 25 32. nu A-VA DUGKA.GAG.NAG ša-tar-na 1 <sup>GI</sup>A.DA.GUR  
 tar-na-i
- 
- § 7 33 26 33. nu 1 MÁŠ.GAL u-mu-ni-ya-an-ši ja-an-kán EN R-TIM  
 34 27 34. PA-NT <sup>GI</sup>BANŠUR IS-TU GËSTIN A-NA D<sup>MAEDUS</sup>  
 ša-ja-an-ti  
 35 28 35. nu a-ti-šá-ša ZABAR pa-ra-a e-ip-zi nu ki-šá-ša-an me-ma-i  
 e-du D<sup>MARDUK</sup> kat-ti-ti-ma-ut-ta D<sup>mu-na-ra-u-wa-an-ta-šá</sup>  
 36 29 36. á-wa-*š*(an)-du e-šá-ša-nu-wa-an-ta ku-i-e-šá á-e-šá-ša-an-ta<sup>7</sup>  
 37 30 37. <sup>IS.MÁŠ</sup>hu-u-ša-ši-ya-aš-ša-an hu-up-ra-aš ku-i-e-šá šá-ši-ya-  
 an-ti-šá
- 
- § 8 39 32 39. IS-TU GIR ya-aš-ša-an ku-i-e-šá šá-ši-ya-an-te-šá  
 40 33 40. <sup>GI</sup>BAN.HI.A-aš-ša-an ku-i-e-šá hu-šá-ti-ya-an-ta

<sup>1</sup> B kat-tu-aš.<sup>2</sup> B DUMU ŠUM-ŠU.<sup>3</sup> B kat-tu-aš.<sup>4</sup> A aš-ta-šá-ša-an-aš.<sup>5</sup> B še-ra-aš-ša-an.<sup>6</sup> B kat-tu-aš.<sup>7</sup> B á-e-šá-ta-ša.

18. then hangs a cooked *kakkulan* of fine barley-meal
19. on the gate bolts(?), and (with) the *kakkulan* of fine barley-meal
20. one pitcher of wine.

- 
21. The pegs (are) broken to bits, (and) a *hakkal* set up.
  22. Down on the ground . . . . . beneath and in front of
  23. the ritual suspension(?), while on this side he pours(?) the ritual liquid,
  24. (and his) namesake prays(?). Next he hangs ritual suspensions(?)
  25. on the gate behind the door of the temple forecourt. Before
  26. and beneath the ritual suspensions(?) he places a wickerwork table.
  27. Upon the table he places a bronze platter(?), one hot loaf,
  28. one ordinary loaf, (and) cheese. Upon the bronze platter(?)
  29. he places a bronze dagger, a strung bow, (and) one arrow.

- 
30. Before the wickerwork table he sets one *huppar* of wine
  31. on a tray, and places a goblet on the tray,
  32. then puts one spoon into the goblet.

- 
33. Now they lead in a full-grown goat, and the Lord of the House,
  34. before the table, dedicates the goat to Marduk with wine.
  35. Then he holds forth the bronze platters(?), and says as follows:
  36. Come, Marduk, and, mark you, with you let the *Inmarawantes*
  37. come, who wear bloody (garments),
  38. the *Lulabhu-men*, who (are) wrapped in *huprus* garments,

- 
39. who (are) girt with daggers,
  40. who string (their) bows,

<sup>12</sup> H. H. H.



41. and hold (their) arrows, come ye and eat!  
42. And if, under oath, they say: He is finished (speaking),  
43. then he sets the bronze axe down upon the table  
44. and they slay the full-grown goat.
- 
45. He takes the blood, and (taking) the spoon which (had been)  
46. put into the goblet, anoints it with the blood.  
47. Then they bring the raw entrails and heart,  
48. and the Lord of the House offers these to the god.  
49. Next he takes a bite (of the entrails), (and) they perform the  
    *kimmam*.  
50. Then he takes the spoon from the tray,  
51. takes a sip (from the spoon), and says as follows:
- 
52. Lo, Marduk, and (ye) Innarawantes, we have taken oath!
- 
53. Since of the raw entrails have we eaten,  
54. and, moreover, from one spoon have we drunk. So henceforth,  
55. Marduk and (ye) Innarawantes, do not approach  
56. my gate. Then they cook the entrails and heart with fire,  
57. and cut up all the rest of the full-grown goat.
- 
58. When the meat fat comes, they set the entrails, the heart,  
59. and all the meat before the god.  
60. Along with these they bring twice nine ordinary loaves of half a  
    handful of fine barley-meal  
61. to (the god). He breaks nine ordinary loaves and over these they  
    place  
62. the entrails and heart, then he replaces these upon the table,  
63. and says as follows: O Sun of heaven above and below,  
64. eat. Let the deified fathers of (my) house (!) eat,  
65. Let the thousand gods eat.
-

## A B

- § 13 4 57 66. nu-za ki-a-da-zi li-in-ga-<sup>12a</sup> ku-ut-ru-e-<sup>12b</sup> e-<sup>12c</sup>ti  
 5 58 67. nu EGIR-en-da GESTIN 9-SU si-pa-an-ti PA-NI <sup>12d</sup>BANŠUR  
 6 59 68. <sup>12e</sup>in-na-ra-<sup>12f</sup>wa-an-da-aš<sup>12g</sup> nu-<sup>12h</sup>šá-an <sup>12i</sup>UZUŠAG.DIB <sup>12j</sup>UZUGAB-ya  
 7 60 69. da-ni nu 3-ai NINDA.KUR<sub>4</sub>.RA ar-ha pa-ar-ši
- 
- § 14 8 70. na-at-da-an <sup>12k</sup>ša-ah-hu-ri lu-<sup>12l</sup>ah-hi nu me-na-ah-an-da  
 9 71. GESTIN la-ah-hu-u-wa-i nu 8<sup>12m</sup> DUMU.MEŠ-<sup>12n</sup>šá wa-  
 da-an-zi  
 10 72. ŠAL-<sup>12o</sup>ni-šá-an ku-i-e-<sup>12p</sup>šá na-a-<sup>12q</sup>šá pa-an-zi  
 11 73. na A-NA i DUMU.NITA <sup>12r</sup>MAŠ.GAL wa-aš-šá-ya-an-zi  
 nu pi-ra-an a-pa-aš  
 12 74. i-ya-at-ta nu UE.BAR.KA-i-li ha-šá-šá-<sup>12s</sup>ti  
 13 75. nu <sup>12t</sup>BAN[ŠUR an]-da wa-ah-nu-an-zi nu <sup>12u</sup>UZUŠAG.DIB  
<sup>12v</sup>UZUGAB-ya  
 14 76. ar-ha a-šá(a-an)-zi
- 
- § 15 15 77. a-da-an-na-ma [a-ku-wa-an-na-ya, . . . . .] a-šá-da nu  
 QA-TAM-MA  
 16 78. a-da-i nu <sup>12w</sup>UZU[NIG.GIG <sup>12x</sup>ŠA ar-h]a a-da-an-zi  
 17 79. a-ku-wa-an-zi-ya [ . . . . .]  
 18 80. nu <sup>12y</sup>KA.GAG-ya a-ku-wa-[an-zi]
- 
- § 16 19 81. nu-za BE-EL Š-TIM <sup>12z</sup>ku-ru-ah-ha-aš <sup>12aa</sup>PA-an [har-zi]  
 20 82. na-aš-šá A-NA KÁ an-da ti-ya-zi nu lu-<sup>12ab</sup>šá-<sup>12ac</sup>ti  
 21 83. ki-šá-an hu-uk-ki-šá-ki-<sup>12ad</sup>ti
- 
- § 17 22 84. <sup>12ae</sup>ša-an-ta-<sup>12af</sup>šá LUGÁL-<sup>12ag</sup>šá Pa-an-na-ra-an-mi-an-zi  
 23 85. aš-hu-nu-wa-an-ta ku-in-zi wa-aš-šá-an-ta-<sup>12ah</sup>ti  
 24 86. <sup>12ai</sup>lu-u-la-bi-in-maš-tar hu-nu-pa-ra-m ku-in-zi hi-šá-bi-  
 ya-an-ti
- 
- § 18 25 87. pa-a-tar a-ap-ja za-aš-ta-an-na aš-tu-um-ma-an-ta-an-na-ta  
 Col. II  
 26 2 88. at-tu-wa-la-bi-ti ni-šá da-a-šá-da-wa-ar a-<sup>12aj</sup>šá-aš-ta-an  
 27 3 89. UDU-an-na GUD-in-na DUMU.NAM. GAL.LU-in-na ga-bi-in  
 28 4 90. šu-šá-bi-in ni-šá at-tu-u-wa-<sup>12ak</sup>ti
- 
- § 19 29 5 91. NINDA.KUR<sub>4</sub>.RA paš-šá-ya na-aš-ta lu-šá-<sup>12al</sup>ti an-da ki-šá-  
 šá-an me-ma-i

<sup>12a</sup> B li-en-ga-i.<sup>12b</sup> B in-na-ra-an-da-aš.<sup>12c</sup> B ku-ut-ru-e-<sup>12d</sup>ti.

66. And to this taking-of-oath be ye divine witnesses.  
 67. Afterwards he pours libations of wine nine times before the table  
 68. to the Innarawantes. Then he takes the thigh and the breast,  
 69. and breaks up the other nine ordinary loaves (over them).
- 
70. Then he sprinkles these (thigh, breast, etc.) on a sacrificial board  
 71. and pours wine over (it). Then they bring in eight boys  
 72. who do not yet know woman sexually.  
 73. They dress one boy in the hide of the full-grown goat, and this (boy)  
 74. steps forward and chants in Luwian.  
 75. Then they surround the table,  
 76. and eat up the thigh and the breast.
- 
77. And eating and drinking ..... propitious. And in the same  
     way  
 78. he brings in and they eat up the entrails and the heart.  
 79. And they drink.....  
 80. And they drink from the goblet.
- 
81. Now the Lord of the House holds (his) *suruḫḫas* staff,  
 82. takes his stand at the (ritual) gate, and, in Luwian,  
 83. conjures as follows:
- 
84. *Suntas*, king, (and ye) Innarawantes  
 85. who wear bloody (garments),  
 86. *Lulakḫu*-men, who are wrapped in *ḫupras* (garments),
- 
87. Come! Stand(?) back (from your wrath) and be propitious(?).  
 88. In good relationship(?) this offering eat.  
 89. In lieu(?) of (our) sheep, oxen, humans,  
 90. eat ye this offering(?).
- 
91. He breaks ordinary bread, then, in Luwian, conjures as follows:
-

## A B

- § 20 30 6 92. n-ra-az <sup>19</sup>UTU-az ta-ti-in-zi DINGIR.MEŠ-in-zi  
 31 7 93. <sup>20</sup>R.A-zi-ha pâr-na-an-za-ta<sup>16</sup> ku-wa-at-ti an-da hu-u-i-na-i  
 ma-an  
 32 8 94. in-lâ-an-ti pa-a n-za-zi a-da-ri-ta-an<sup>17</sup>
- 
- § 21 33 9 95. <sup>21</sup>E.A-zi-wa<sup>18</sup> hu-u-pal-zi-ya-ti-ya-za har-ša-an-za  
 34 96. a-pa-an ša-a-at-ta<sup>18</sup>
- 
- § 22 35 10 97. nu SISKUR.SISKUR U-NU-TE-MEŠ ša-ra-a da-an-zi  
 OŠIG-an-na  
 36 11 98. ha-at-ki nu-at IS-TU YÂ.DUG.GA ša-ki-ya-iz-zi<sup>19</sup>  
 37 99. nu ma-ma-i
- 
- § 23 38 12 100. i-da-lu-kân<sup>20</sup> pa-ra-a<sup>21</sup> ša-tap-du a-šâ-lu-wa-kân an-da  
 kur-ak-du
- 
- § 24 39 13 101. 1 IM.GID.DA QA-TI A-WA-AT <sup>22</sup>za-at-pi-ya <sup>23</sup>A.ZU  
 40 14 102. KUR <sup>24</sup>ki-iz-za-wa-at-na<sup>22</sup> ma-a-an MU.KAM-za<sup>23</sup> har-  
 ra-an-zi  
 41 15 103. KUR-a<sup>24</sup> an-da ak-ki-šâ-ki-it-ta-ri  
 42 16 104. nu SISKUR.SISKUR ki-šâ-ki-šâ ki-šâ-šâ-an<sup>25</sup> ša-pa-an-ti
- 

<sup>16</sup> B pâr-na-an-za-ta.<sup>17</sup> B a-ta-ri-ta-an.<sup>18</sup> B Dâ-a-zi-wa.<sup>19</sup> B ša-at-ta.<sup>20</sup> B šâ-šâ-šâ-zi.<sup>21</sup> B Hâ-lu-šâ.<sup>22</sup> B ša-ra-a.<sup>23</sup> B šâ-šâ-šâ-an-za.<sup>24</sup> B MU-an.<sup>25</sup> B KUR-a-šâ.<sup>26</sup> B ki-šâ-šâ.

92. Heavenly Sun, Deified Fathers,  
93. and (let) Ea, too, enter the house, if  
94. they are willing. Come! Eat ye what-has-been-brought-hither.
- 

95. And (let) Ea, upon the heads (of the divine assembly)  
96. press garlands(??).
- 

97. They pick up the sacrificial implements. He closes the door  
98. and anoints it with fine oil,  
99. then says:
- 

100. Let it (the door) shut out evil and keep in good.
- 

101. One tablet is finished. Word of Zarpiya, medicine-man  
102. of the country of Keszuwatna. If the year (is) bad,  
103. (and) there is constant dying in the land,  
104. he thus performs the ritual suspension(?).
- 
-

## NOTES AND COMMENTARY

This text includes three separate rituals directed against pestilence. The first (our present study), hitherto unattempted, contains an important 'quasi-bilingual' Luwian hymn which has been the subject of considerable attention, especially by E. Forrer ZDMG NF 1. 215 ff., and Hrozný, BoSt 5.36 ff. Friedrich has published a transcription of this hymn with its Hittite "parallel" in his *Kleinasiatische Sprachdenkmäler*, Berlin (1932), pp. 36-7. The last two rituals have been translated (without text), with the exception of a few lines, by Friedrich in *Der Alte Orient*, Band 25, Heft 2 (1925), pp. 10-13, and are therefore not included in this study. For an extensive account of Hittite religion, ritual, magic, etc., see G. Furlani, *La Religione degli Hittiti*, Bologna, 1936, especially for its bibliography and documentation, and the detailed review of this book in the *Columbia Review of Religion*, Vol. 2, no. 1 (Nov. 1937). Abbreviations, etc., are those made familiar by Hittite scholars, especially in the second edition of Sturtevant's *Hittite Glossary*, Phila., 1936. To Professor Sturtevant is also due the grateful appreciation of the author, for his criticism of this study has evoked whatever may prove sound in the treatment of this difficult text. In the transcription of Hittite words the diacritical mark under the *h* has not been used.

1. Restorations of the first two lines are from A 2. 39 f., B 2. 13 f. <sup>10</sup>A.ZU "medicine-man."

2. [ma-a-an MU.KAM-za] *har-ra-an-za*, "if the year is bad." Friedrich, *Der Alte Orient*, l. c., p. 11, fn. 3, translates this phrase "Wenn das Jahre widrig (ist)." The meaning is probably "when the year (or time of the year, i. e., season) is pestilential."

4. [nu BE-EL] *É-TIM*. The supplement is certain, cf. lines 33, 48, and 81 in this text (the missing space requires BE-EL rather than EN). Probably a temple official, in view of his activities, although these are not necessarily a sure indication when barbers' duties include the sweeping of the floors of temples (cf. KtF 1. 147 fn. 4), and members of the king's bodyguard take an active part in the ritual procession (cf. KBo 4. 9). The meaning might, however, be literally "householder" or the like, and the ritual directed against pestilence affecting the individual home in any stricken area. A division of the duties among the <sup>10</sup>A.ZU, the EN *É-TIM*,

and the ritual assistants would be desirable, but any such thorough-going attempt would be conjectural at best, since the text itself leaves few clear inferences.

5. The supplement is conjectural. For *ki-a-ju-an* the requirements of the context here and elsewhere in the ritual demand some such translation. It seems to receive some etymological support from Lat. *celsus*, *columen*, AS *heall*, Lith. *keliù*, *kiliù*, OCS *čelo*, cf. Walde-Pokorny, 1. 433, l. \**gel-* "ragen, hoch(heben)." For suspension rites might be compared the Hebrew Feast of the Tabernacles. *huppah* is dat.-loc. 6-7. The supplements are conjectural. Diorite is an igneous rock of crystalline character; its appearance recommended it for use by the ancients especially in the form of ritual weapons, cf. Carruthers, Lang. 9. 154-5; *hazzim* may therefore be a ritual weapon of some sort.

8. The supplement is suggested by its occurrence in the same line, in the same context, but there is no assurance that another word did not stand before the first *ši-ša-i*; the agreement, or lack of it, of neut. sg. *dassu* with an "animate" plural is not uncommon in Hittite. *ši-ša-i* seems to be a reduplicated form from the stem *šat-*.

9. The supplement is quite uncertain; perhaps a multiplicative number is required here, with *ša-a-ša-aš* taken as the predicate, a rather desperate solution, since a preterite verbal form would be altogether exceptional in this context. On the whole, since *ša-a-ša-aš* is in *rasura*, it seems better to exclude it from the text.

10. The translation attempts to meet the requirements of the context. GE<sub>9</sub> (transcribed MI in Sturt. Gloss.<sup>2</sup>, p. 102) = GIG, see Deimel, 427. 4, 7. The supplement is certain, cf. KUB 9. 31. 2, 47 = HT 1. 2. 20 and KUB 9. 31. 3, 31 = HT 1. 3. 10

11. UZU is not a determinative here. MĀŠ must be the reading of the third sign in this line, cf. the Delaporte sign list, no. 101. The translation suggested for *še-kal-ša-a-an* receives considerable etymological support from Gk. *σάλλω*, Thrac. *σάλλω* "sword," Skt. *śālā* "smallest portion" (The etymology is made, of course, on the assumption that the spelling of the Hittite word is an orthographic device for writing the initial consonant cluster *sk-*, cf. *sakkar*). With *menakhandu*, then, we have here a compound verbal form. The numeral emerging from the lacuna may refer to the disposition of three of the pieces of meat, or to three different locations.



12. *ki-e-iz-za-ma* shows that the second *I-an* goes with what precedes <sup>613</sup>MA.NU. Comparison of texts A and B shows that this must be the full word; for its meaning see Deimel 342. 50.

14. *IGI-i-e-iz* is for <sup>614</sup>*hantā*.

15. The supplement is certain in view of lines 16, 18, and 19 following, although the partial sign visible looks more like the end of *da* than *ku*; the collocation *kukkulan xanxantan* in line 18, however, assures the reading. The context requires a meaning of "measure" of some sort for *kukkulan*. The word occurs also in KUB 7. 1. 1. 22, 37 and 13. 35. 2. 12, where it seems to mean a copper vessel of some sort. It is tempting to see in this word a connection with Gk. κύπελον, Skt. *catrās*, AS *hwōl*; the meaning might then be a circular container of some sort which came in time to serve as a conventional measure.

16. *ka-lal-ya-an-to-ya-aš* "gate-bolts (?)" is an oblique plural. It is probably to be connected with *hal(t)alu*.

21. *katta hargā*. Another sign may well stand before *har-* in A, although the space in B shows this unlikely, unless the two texts differ at this point. *hargā* is to be connected with the stem *hark-* 'destroy'; its form is neuter plural. *paškan* is the neut. plu. sg. from the stem *pašga-* 'set upright.' *hahhal* is unknown.

23. For the reconstruction of lines 24 and 26 following. *ki-e-un* cannot be predicate; a preterite first singular would be altogether too exceptional in this context. *ki-e-iz-zi-ga*, therefore, does not mark the beginning of a new clause or sentence here, but rather indicates another direction; perhaps there was a *ki-e-iz* in the lacuna in line 22. For *wassi* the suggested translation (or the like) fits the context here as well as in KBo 5. 2. 4. 25 *nu ki-e wa-aš-si ta-an-ga-ra-an-za e-ku-zi*, "and this *wassi* he drinks thirstily (?)" ; KBo 5. 2. 4. 40 <sup>615</sup>DUGGAL-ma *ku-ūš šu-u-wa-an-za na-at A-NA wa-aš-si-HI.A da-a-i* "But which bowl having been filled, he takes it from the *wassi*"; ib. 41 *nu wa-aš-si-HI.A ku-ūš-ku-ūš-ša-an-zi* "And they keep mixing the *wassi*"; ib. 46 *wa-aš-si-HI.A-ma ma-aš-ha-an I-NA UD-MI MAH-RI-I e-ku-zi na-at I-NA UD.7.KAM QA-TAM-MA-pit ak-ku-ūš-ki-iz-zi* "But even as he drinks the *wassi* on the first day, he continues to drink it in just the same way to the seventh day." Witzel, HKU 114. 25; 116. 40, 41, because of its apparent resemblance to the root *was-*, *wes-* "clothe," translates this word by "Kleider," a translation which seems extremely improbable in view of the contexts in which it is found. With the

meaning of liquid or drink of some sort established for *wassi*, some light is thrown on the probable meaning of *hucullari*, and Skt. *gôlati* "trüfeli ab," Gk. *βαλερός* "bather," and *βαλασίος* "bath" suggest the translation indicated, or the like.

24. *SUM ha-ri-ya-az-zí*. In Text B we have the fuller phrase *DUMU ŠUM-ŠU* literally "son of his name." The religious significance of one's namesake, one's "Name," and especially the perpetuation of the Name in one's descendants is still a living force in religion today. From KUB 9. 4. 3. 20 *SUM-an hat-za-i*, ib. 4. 18 *SUM-qa te-i-zí* we require a verb of speaking, calling, or the like in this context. Etymological considerations, cf. Skt. *argati*, Lat. *orare*, Gk. *ἀρά* demand the transcription *hariyazzi* instead of the equally possible *hatulyazzi*. *-ki-e-la-mu-uš*! Note the spelling *ki-e-la-u-wa-aš* in line 26; for this interchange of *m* and *w* see SHG § 47.

25. *ku-e-da-ni I-NA KÀ* literally "on which gate." Note the similarity in construction with Lat. *qua loco*.

27. *še-ra-aš-ša-an* is to be resolved into *šer* plus the enclitic *-a* plus the enclitic *-sua*. *a-le-šš-ša-an* is not composed of *ates* plus *-san*, but is neut. sg., as the neut. pl. form *atissa*, line 35 below, shows; the translation is based upon that of *ates* by Hrozný, CH 122. 1, 124, 14, 16.

30-31. *piran katta . . . . . dāi*. This verb with the ablative usually means 'take,' but this would yield little meaning here; it is better taken as compounded with the preverbs *piran* and *katta*, cf. Sturt. Gloss.<sup>2</sup>, p. 147, and the ablative is here ablative of place, a function more usually reserved for the dative-locative.

<sup>DUG</sup>KA.GAG.NAG. For this ideogram see Deimel 15. 186 and his *Nachträge und Verbesserungen*, no. 137, p. 1120.

34. *ši-pa-an-ti* "dedicates." We should expect the translation here to be, 'he pours a libation with wine,' but the verb has a pronominal object in line 33 which can only refer to the goat. While this verb with an animal object usually has the meaning 'sacrifice a victim' to some divinity, the actual slaying of the goat does not occur until line 44 below; the probable action was that the wine was poured on the goat, and the animal consecrated or dedicated to Marduk.

36. The next three lines are the Hittite version of lines 84-6 below of the Lawian hymn. *kat-ti-ti-ma-at-ta* is to be resolved into *kattī-ti-ma-ta*, apparently with two enclitic second person pronouns

separated by *-ma*; but *-ta* 'tibi' is here little more than an enclitic particle serving as an ethical dative, cf. Sturt. Gloss.<sup>2</sup>, p. 146 (where the reference to HQ 99 should be stricken out). <sup>2</sup>*innearmantas* is plural, as the Lawian version shows. These were probably deities of manly vigour, cf. Kretschmer, Kf 1.302 f., Madd. 95, Chrest. 118.

37. *á-wa-[an]-du*. The reconstruction is required by the plural subject.

38. *lu-u-la-ki-ya-aš-ša-an*. The corresponding Lawian form in line 86 is prefixed with the god-sign. For a discussion of this term cf. Landsberger "Habiru und Lulahi" in Kf 1.321-34.

42. *li-ku-wa-an-ni* is the dative of the verbal noun *leakwar*. The meaning of the sentence must be: If those present at the ritual take oath, i. e., make the ritual response, at the conclusion of the invocation of the Lord of the House by saying, "He is finished (*amea*!?)", then, etc.

45. *šakar*. Blood did not play as all-important a rôle in Hittite ritual as it did almost everywhere else in the Ancient Near East. Its use was principally for the lustration of sacrificial implements, as here, in the anointing of the spoon; for a detailed account, see Furlani, p. 299 f.

49. Despite the lack of a connective particle here, two clauses are indicated. *šimman* has the appearance of a cult word (Hattic?), probably a hymn which derived its name from beginning with this word; its meaning is unknown.

50. This line truly a *locus desperatus*, with not even the meaning of *dāi* sure. Perhaps it is best analyzed as "he takes the tray for (i. e., as regards the) spoon," hence the translation in the text. For this somewhat pregnant use of *ANA* cf. Bezold, *Babylonisch-Assyrisches Glossar*, Heidelberg, 1926, esp. pp. 46-6.

51. *pa-a-ši* is pra. sg. 3 from the root *pas-* "to swallow."

54. *1-za-ma-kán*. *1-za* is ablative in agreement with <sup>3</sup>1A.DA. GUR-az.

57. *pittalwan*. This word occurs also in KBo 5.2.1.12, 28; 5.2.2.8, 15, 16, and its gen. sg. (or acc. pl.?) in the same text 1.27, *tar-na-aš pit-tal-wa-aš*. Although the meaning in our text is clearly guaranteed by the context, it does not offer too much assistance for the solution of the meaning of this word in KBo 5.2. The form here is sg. acc., as is shown by the accompanying adjective

kūmantan. Note the *pit* value for the BE sign here; cf. Sturtevant, *Lang.* 13, 285-91.

60. *ka-ti-iš-ma-aš-ši* is to be resolved into *katfi* plus the enclitic possessive pronoun *-amas* (SHG § 245) plus *-si* "ei," with *-si* referring to the god.

63-4. *še-ir kat-ta ne-pi-ša-aš* DUTU-*uš az-zi-ki*. We may have here a conventional reference to two of the three manifestations of the sun god (sky, earth, and water, see Furlani, p. 39), with *ser katta* perhaps meaning "above and below"; the probability is larger, however, that we have here a compound verb, *ser katta el* "eat one's fill." *az-zi-ki* is imperative sg. 2. *È-aš ad-da-aš* DINGIR.MEŠ. Can there be a reference to ancestor-worship here? The more conventional rendering of the collocation *addas* DINGIR.MEŠ is "gods of (our) fathers," cf. Furlani, pp. 47, 199.

67-8. Note the position of the verb in the middle of this sentence.

69. *9-at*. The phonetic complement is the enclitic demonstrative. *pa-ar-ši* is the pres. sg. 3 of *para-* "break, divide."

70-1. *nu me-na-aš-ka-an-da* GĒŠTIN *ka-aš-hu-ma-i*. Literally "and he pours wine against (the *lakkuri*)." 8 DUMU.MEŠ-*uš*, in view of lines 60, 61, 67, and 69 above, must be a scribal error for 9 DUMU.MEŠ-*uš*.

74. UR.BAR.RA-*i-zi* equals *lawili*, see A. Ungnad, ZA NF 1, 1-8, who makes Lawian equal Lycian because of this ideogram and its Hittite equivalent.

81. *sarukkas* recalls Lat. *sarvus* "branch, twig, shoot." The word is obviously the material of which the ritual staff or wand is made; it occurs in KBo 4.9.3.38 *an-da-ya-za-kán* <sup>G15</sup>*šu-ru-uk-ha-aš* <sup>G15</sup>PA-*an* (39) *har-zī*, and in the same text, 4.9.4.30 *Ū 3* <sup>G15</sup>PA <sup>G15</sup>*šu-ru-uk-ha-aš har-kán-zi*. The word is gen. sg. in all three cases, genitive of material. The supplement is virtually certain, in view of the predicate in the contexts of KBo 4.9 cited.

84-6. These three lines correspond to lines 36-8. Santas was a deity of Western Asia Minor; Furlani, p. 45, makes him the chief deity of the Lawian pantheon, equivalent with the Hittite weather god IM (whose Hittite name was Zashapunas?), and with the Hurrian Tešup and Lawian (?) Dattaš. LUGAL-*uš* does not occur in the Hittite version. Lawian *anararamenzi* is of threefold interest: a) Lawian *a* for Hittite *i/e*, cf. Forrer, ZDMG NF 1, 217 (although his strictures regarding vowel quantity in Hittite may safely be disregarded). b) Lawian *m* for Hittite *w* may throw

some light on this interchange in Hittite (was the *m* "lenited"?), cf. SHG §§ 47, 110. c) The Luwian plural in *-lari*, which seems to have been extended to all types of substantival and pronominal inflection. *ashannuanta* equals Hittite *ashannuanta*, again with *a* for Hittite unaccented(?) *e*; like the Hittite word it is a neut. pl. ptc. *kwinzi* is, of course, the plural of the relative pronoun; it is of interest to note that Luwian, apparently, made no distinction between its nominal and pronominal inflections. *waszantari* could just as well be Hittite. In *ḫālakūza-sar* we have the plural plus an enclitic connective *-(s)ar* corresponding to the Hittite enclitic *-san*. If the Hittite complex is equal in meaning to the Luwian, a fair assumption under the circumstances, some light may be thrown on Hittite *-san*, whose meaning is still uncertain. Thus it will be observed that the Luwian particle seems to stand in etymological relationship with Hitt. *-(s)la* (PIHitt. *-lar* with weak sounding of the final *r*?), hinting at an early temporal connotation for Hitt. *-san*. *ḫūpparaza* is readily identified with Hitt. *ḫupras*, and like the Hittite word must be acc. pl., object of the verb *ḫiḫiyanti*, which is a pres. pl. 3, see Hrozný, BoSt 5.38 fn. 4 (probably with a primary medio-passive ending, cf. Hitt. *lakkatti*). The word is to be identified with *ḫiḫiyantes* in the Hittite version (the Hittite word is, however, a participle), and seems to preserve an initial archaic laryngeal stop already lost in Hittite.

87. *pa-a-tar* is composed of the verbal stem *pa-* "go, come," equal to Hitt. *pa(i)-*, and the Luwian enclitic connective particle *-tar*. The verbal form is a second singular imperative (can this be the form to which Sommer and Delaporte make reference? See SHG p. 277 fn. 120), although, like Hitt. *ḫāu*, it can scarcely have more than interjectional force. Hrozný, BoSt 5.37, suggests that this word might be a vocative(!) with accentual lengthening of the first syllable, and compares it with Gk. *παῖς*. *a-ap-pa* equals Hitt. *appa*, and like the Hitt. preverb, forms a verbal compound with *zastanza* (whose meaning is conjectural); the form is a plural participle in agreement with the subject of the verb in line 88. *astummananza-la* is another plural participle plus an enclitic connective.

88. *aituwalahiti* contains two suffixes, *-wala* and *-hiti*, of which the former appears also in Hittite, while the latter, according to Forrer, ZDMG NF 1.222 is a Luwian abstract forming suffix. The suffixes may well be attached here to a primary noun of rela-

tionship, cf. Hitt. *attas. nis* (För. l.c., p. 221) is a neuter demonstrative pronoun. *dāduwar* is certainly the verbal noun of a reduplicated form from the stem *da-* "set, place." *azzasian* is the ipv. pl. 2 of the verb meaning "to eat," cf. Hitt. *et-*.

89. Förer divides as DUMU.NAM.GÁL.LU-*in za-ga-ni-in*, as does Hrozný. Friedrich, *Kleinasiatische Sprachdenkmäler*, p. 37, writes DUMU.NAM.GÁL.LU-*in-za-ga-ni-in*. There seems to be an echo of this line in KUB 9. 31.3. 49-50 = HT 1. 3. 43-4 = KUB 9. 32. 1. 29, hence the suggested translation for *ganis* as "substitute, stead, lieu," or the like.

90. *du-á-i-ni-in*. This word is the object of the verb, hence its meaning must be something edible. *aztāwari* is a second person plural medio-passive form from the stem connected with Hitt. *et-* "eat." The ending (a prosoposeme like that in *nassantari*) is identical with the once cited Hittite *-tumari*, showing that Luwian, unlike almost all other IE languages which continued to make use of the *r*-seme for the medio-passive, did not attempt to avoid the awkward collocation resulting from IE \**ākwemr*. Note again the interchange of *m* and *w* between the Luwian and the Hittite forms.

91. *anda kissen memas* stands in the same context as *kissen kukkiskuzzi*, line 83, and seems equally entitled to the translation "conjure" or the like. For instances of the compound verb cf. KBo 4. 1. 1. 6 f. = KUB 2. 2. 1. 4 f., *na EGIR-an-da iS-TU GISNIG.GUL AN.BAR wa-al-ah-zi na-aš-ta an-da ki-iš-ka-an ma-ma-i* "Afterwards he strikes with an iron hammer, then conjures as follows" with *nasta* proving that the conjuration is not simultaneous with whatever ritual action is being performed; KBo 5. 2. 2. 21 *na-aš-ta LUŠMAŠ an-da hur-ši-š ki-iš-ka-an ma-ma-i* "and then the wizard conjures, in Hurrian, as follows"; KBo 4. 1. 1. 27 = KUB 2. 2. 1. 32 *na-kán an-da ki-iš-ka-an ma-ma-i* "and he conjures as follows"; and in the Ritual of Anniwiyannis, Chrest. p. 114, 3. 35 f., *na ā-i-e-eš-ki-iš-zi an-da-na-kán ma-mi-iš-ki-iš-zi*, which Sturtevant translates "She prays and, within (the house), speaks thus." There is, however, no justification for the parenthesis anywhere in the text, while translation as a compound verb removes the necessity for the supplement. For the distinction between the compound *anda mema-* and the simplex *mem-* might be compared Lat. *incanto* beside *canto*.

92. *araz DUTU-aš*. Cf. the Hittite version in lines 63-5. This corresponds to *ne-pi-ša-aš DUTU-aš* (so Friedrich, *KIF* 1. 371

fn. 2) with *was* therefore meaning "heaven, heavenly," and the case form, with <sup>D</sup>UTU-as, nominative singular, *lat(w)zi* DINGIR. MEŠ-*wa*zi corresponds, of course, to Hitt. *addas* DINGIR. MEŠ-as, and gives us the Luwian word for father, with good cognates throughout the IE continuants for this *Lallwort*; for the probable meaning of the phrase, see the note to line 64 above.

93. <sup>D</sup>Ē.A-*ai-ha*. Friedrich, loc. cit., sees in this word the genitive of a formalized expression for "house," taking -*ha* as a Luwian genitive singular case ending. Forrer, ZDMG NF 1. 218, citing a Luwian pronominal form *ku-ū-ha*, sees in the Luwian -*ha* an enclitic particle equal in force to the Hitt. -*ki* and compares the form with Hitt. *kwiški*. Text B reads <sup>D</sup>A-a-*ai-wa* in line 95, perhaps a genuine dialectal variation, and making it more probable that the god name is intended here (no one has claimed that the Hittite version coincides with the Luwian), a view confirmed by the very next word in our text. It is suggested that we have here an enclitic connective etymologically related to the Hittite enclitic connective -*a*, preserving a laryngeal stop lost in Hittite, cf. Luwian *aišhiyanti* beside Hitt. *išhiyantes*. For *pār-nā-an-za-ta* Text B reads *pār-na-an-za-as-ta*, indicating that we have here again the familiar connective -(*s*)*ta*. *paranza* is readily identified with Hitt. *parna*; the form is plural, and like many Hittite plurals, serves as an oblique case form. *kuwatti* invites an ultimate connection with the relative stem; the word is perhaps adverbial. *anda hawinaš* might well be Hittite. *man* I take to be equal to the Hittite "particle of unreality." Hrozný and Forrer transcribe *ku-u-i-na-i-ma-an*, which would then give us a first personal plural, and would violate what little meaning may be gleaned from the context.

94. *lalanti*. This predicate seems to be a reduplicated form from a root *la-* "let, allow" or the like, cf. Gk. *λάω*. Forrer, Hrozný, and Friedrich all transcribe *la-la-an-ti-pa-a*, which yields no meaning whatsoever. *pā* this time stands alone, cf. line 87. *was* contains the familiar proclitic preverb *w-* plus a nominal form from a root seen in Hitt. *da(i)-* "set, place," cf. Hitt. *uda-* "bring." *adaritan* is a 3pv. pl. 2 from the stem meaning "to eat." The form is an *r*-extension (a semato-prasopic of the type Skt. *duhré*, *duhrātim*) of *et-*, *at-*.

95. <sup>D</sup>Ē.A-*as-wa*. From the fact that Luwian and Hittite seem to interchange *m* and *w* mutually, see *annarummenzi*, *astuwari*



above, beside *innarawantes* and the middle ending *-tumari*, it is not too unwarranted an assumption to see in this complex the divine name plus an enclitic connective equal to Hittite *-ma*, especially since the complex stands at the head of its clause. *karsanza* (cf. Hitt. *karssan-*) is the plural of the word for "head." *hapalsiyatiyaza*, cf. *hupparaza* line 86 above, is probably the object of the verb, making *karsanza* an oblique case form. The meaning assigned is purely conjectural.

96. *apan* is better taken as equal to Hitt. *appan*, forming a compound verb with *atta*, which seems to be from *sa-*, cf. Hitt. *sa(i)-* "press," etc. The form is sg. 3 present(!), morphologically a medio-passive (prosepic) like Hitt. *ya-ta*, *ya-ata*. A preterite concept is forbidden by the context, indicating that in Luwian as well as in Hittite this class of "medio-passive" might require the diagonal wedge (the "Glossenkeil," a paper on which, by the present author, will appear in the next number of *Archiv Orientalni*) to indicate a preterite.

100. This line translated in Starcky-Becht, *Chrest.* p. 121. l. 44.

103. Note KUR <sup>DRU</sup>*kezzuwatna* here. The first line of this ritual omits KUR.

# LATE MUGHUL ILLUSTRATIONS TO THE IQBĀL- NĀMAH'I JAHĀNGIRĪ

MUHAMMED A. SIMSAR AND W. NORMAN BROWN  
UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA

A MANUSCRIPT of the second volume of the well known Iqbāl-nāmah'i Jahāngirī by Muḥammad Sharif (otherwise known as Mu'tamad [Mu'tamid] Khān),<sup>1</sup> illustrated with fifty-four paintings, belongs to the John Frederick Lewis Collection in the Free Library of Philadelphia, and has been described in the catalogue.<sup>2</sup> The complete work consists of three volumes: the first contains the history of Akbar's ancestry, the second gives an account of Akbar's reign from his accession to his death, and the third is devoted to the reign of Jahāngir. The first two volumes are extremely rare; the third is commoner.

The author of the Iqbāl-nāmah, in his preface to the first volume, mentions the following works as his sources: the celebrated *Akbar-nāmah* of Abū al-Faḍl, the *Tabaqāt-i-Akbarī* of Nizām al-Dīn Aḥmad, and the *Tarīkh-i-Akbar Shāhi* of Khwājah 'Aṭā Beg Qazvīnī, the last having been left unfinished. He also states that he completed his work (volume 1) in Kashmir in 1029 A. H. (1619 A. D.).<sup>3</sup> But since the third volume covers the entire reign of Jahāngir (1605-1627), the date of completion of the final volume must have been considerably later.

The author entered the services of Jahāngir as a young man. He was made a military commander and received the title of Mu'tamad Khān in 1608, the third year of Jahāngir's reign. He was later attached as *Bakhshī*, or Paymaster, to the services of Prince Khurram (Shāh Jahān), whom he accompanied in the

<sup>1</sup> Persian text published in the *Bibliotheca Indica*, Calcutta, 1865; translated in part in H. M. Elliot and J. Dowson, *The History of India, as told by its own Historians* (8 vols., 1867-77), vol. 6, pp. 393-438. There is a Lucknow edition of the text, published 1286 A. H.

<sup>2</sup> Muhammed A. Simsar, *Oriental Manuscripts of the John Frederick Lewis Collection in the Free Library of Philadelphia*, Philadelphia, The Free Library, 1937, pp. 56-63.

<sup>3</sup> Joseph Aumer, *Die persischen Handschriften der Kaiserlichen Hof- und Staatsbibliothek in Muenchen*, Munich, 1866, pp. 92-95; and C. Rieu, *Catalogue of the Persian Manuscripts in the British Museum*, London, 1879-83, 2, 922.

Deccan campaign. On his return from the Deccan in 1633, he was appointed to the post of Official Chronicler of the Court. He rose to higher ranks under Shāh Jahān, attaining the office of Mīr Bakshī, or General Paymaster, in 1637, and, according to Rieu,<sup>4</sup> died in 1049 A. H. (1639 A. D.).<sup>5</sup> There is an old mosque, still standing in the city of Agra, which is supposed to have been erected by him.<sup>6</sup>

The manuscript in the Lewis Collection (MS 44) consists of two hundred and ninety-five folios, measuring 14½ by 7½ inches. It is written in a large Nasta'liq, twenty-one lines to a page. Folio 1b has an illumination in gold and colors, and thirty-nine other illuminations appear in the volume. The fifty-four miniatures illustrate important events recorded in the manuscript, are nearly all full-page in size, and appear to be the work of the same artist.<sup>7</sup>

Two seals and a short note in a bold handwriting are the only indications which the manuscript contains of its history. The circular seal impressions appear on folio 1a, near the center of the left hand side of the page. The smaller seal, above the larger one and a little to its right, reads: 'Ināyat Khān, fadawī-i-khānah-aūd-i- ("a devoted servant born in the house"), pādīshāh-i-'ālam ("of the Emperor of the World"), ghāsi ("the Conqueror"), 'Ālamgīr. Underneath this seal and just above the impression of the larger seal a memorandum in Persian reads: *dar hign-i-hayāt-i-khūd 'ināyat kard*, which means: "He bestowed (it) during his lifetime." The larger seal impression reads: *Anjād 'Alī Khān fadawī-i-pādīshāh-i-ghāsi* ("the devoted servant of the Warrior King"), *Muhammad Shāh, sanah 8* ("the eighth year of the reign").<sup>8</sup>

As the *Iqbāl-nāmāh* was not completed until after the death of Jahāngīr, the present manuscript could not have been copied before the reign of Shāh Juhān (1627-1658), and not later than the reign of Aurangzīb (1658-1707), for it still bears the ownership seal of 'Ināyat Khān while a courtier of the latter monarch. How and

<sup>4</sup> Rieu, *op. cit.*, I. 255.

<sup>5</sup> For other details consult *Mu'aththarāt-Umarā*, *Tadhkiratu'l-Umarā*, and *Tazuk-i-Jahāngīrī*.

<sup>6</sup> T. W. Beale, *An Oriental Bibliographical Dictionary*, new edition revised and enlarged by H. G. Keene, London, 1894, p. 284.

<sup>7</sup> See Simsar, *op. cit.*, pp. 57-62.

<sup>8</sup> The correct readings of these seals, as given here, should be substituted for the readings in Simsar, *op. cit.*, pp. 62-63.

when this manuscript came into 'Ināyat Khān's possession cannot be definitely determined, for the original binding, the front flyleaf, and the last portion of the manuscript, which might have contained the seal impressions and autographs of its former owners, are missing.

To establish the identity of 'Ināyat Khān, we should consider three prominent courtiers who bore the same title of distinction at the Mughul Court.\* All three were eminent historians and patrons of letters, as well as successful statesmen.

The first, 'Ināyatullāh Khān of Lahore, better known as Shaykh 'Ināyatullāh, was the patron and teacher of Muhammad Ṣāliḥ, who was the author of a historical composition called *'Amal-i-Ṣāliḥ*, commonly known as the *Shāh Jahān-nāmah*, or a history of the reign of Shāh Jahān. According to some authorities, Shaykh 'Ināyatullāh was a co-author of this last-mentioned work.<sup>10</sup> Its author Ṣāliḥ, however, calls himself only a pupil of the Shaykh and speaks of him as a writer of utmost elegance, and as the author of a history of Shāh Jahān and his predecessors entitled *Tārīkh-i-Dilkushā*, and of the well-known collection of tales *Bahār-i-Dāniṣh*.<sup>11</sup> According to the *'Amal-i-Ṣāliḥ*, Shaykh 'Ināyatullāh died in 1080 A. H. (1670 A. D.), when he was sixty-five years old.<sup>12</sup>

The second 'Ināyat Khān, whose real name was Muhammad Tāhir son of Zafar Khān, was Governor of Kabul and of Kashmir. He was raised to the rank of Khān in the twenty-third year of Shāh Jahān's reign, and filled in succession the offices of Dārūghah'i Huzūr, or the Overseer of the king's household, and Dārūghah'i Kutub-Khānah, or the Keeper of the Imperial Library. He was appointed to this last post in 1068 A. H. (1657 A. D.). He was the author of *Mulakhkhas*, a history of the first thirty years of the reign of Shāh Jahān. He was also a poet, writing under the pen-name *Ashuā*, and has left a *Diwān* and a *Mathnawī*. He retired from the service in the first year of Awrangzib's reign, and died in Kashmir in 1077 A. H. (1666 A. D.).<sup>13</sup>

\* Courtiers bearing the same title during the reign of Jahāngir, and those who received the title after the reign of Awrangzib, are not considered here.

<sup>10</sup> Rieu, *op. cit.*, 1, 263.

<sup>11</sup> *Ibid.*, 3, 929.

<sup>12</sup> Muhammad Ṣāliḥ Kambo, *'Amal-i-Ṣāliḥ*, or *Shāh Jahān Nāmah*, edited by Ghulam Yāsḍani, *Bibliotheca Indica*, Calcutta, 1923, 1, 10.

<sup>13</sup> Rieu, *op. cit.*, 1, 261, 3, 1083; Beale, *op. cit.*, p. 179; *Mir'at al-'Alam*, *Mir'at al-Jahānnam*, and *Tārīkh-i-Muḥammadi*, Persian texts; A. Sprenger,

The third, known as 'Ināyatu'llāh Khān of Kashmir, was the son of Mīrzā Shukrullāh, a descendant of Sayyid Jamāl of Nishapur, and an Iranian by birth. His mother Hāfizah Maryam was the tutor of Princess Zīb al-Nisā Begum, daughter of the Emperor Awrangzib, and through her influence her son 'Ināyatu'llāh was raised by degrees to the rank of 2500, and was appointed by Awrangzib as his special secretary. In the twenty-eighth year of the reign, in 1686, he was raised to the rank of *Vaqāyī' Nigār* "Court Chronicler." During the reign of Farrukh Siyār, in 1717, the rank of 4000 was conferred on him,<sup>14</sup> and in the reign of Muhammad Shāh, in 1721, the duties of minister were entrusted to him.<sup>15</sup> He was the author of *Aḥkām-i-'Ālamgīrī* and *Kalimat-i-Fayyihāt*, both of which consisted of collections of letters and notes written by Awrangzib.<sup>16</sup> During the reign of the latter emperor he was successively appointed *Dīwān-i-Khālīṣah* or Accountant-General of the king's revenue, *Khānsamān* or Overseer of the Court, and *Šūbahdār* or Governor, and, according to *Tārīkh-i-Muhammadi*, died in Delhi in 1139 A. H. (1723 A. D.).<sup>17</sup>

This 'Ināyatu'llāh Khān seems to be the 'Ināyat Khān of the seal on this MS. The shortened form of the official title is in keeping with the frequent Muslim practice of making such abbreviations.<sup>18</sup> 'Ināyat Khān, or 'Ināyatu'llāh Khān, was perhaps the most remarkable of the three, and was, to all indications, the owner of the manuscript at the Free Library. He joined Awrangzib's court at an early age, where he was educated and succeeded in gaining that monarch's favor. He was a devoted servant and apparently was born and raised in the palace of the Emperor Awrangzib, as the legend on the seal states. His mother was the tutor of the emperor's daughter, and this fact probably gave him an opening for success. But he must also have had great personal

*A Catalogue of the Arabic, Persian and Hindustani Manuscripts of the Libraries of the King of Oudh*, Calcutta, 1854, p. 339.

<sup>14</sup> *Cambridge History of India*, Vol. IV, *The Mughal Period*, 1937, p. 337.

<sup>15</sup> *Idem*, p. 340.

<sup>16</sup> These letters were printed, without the editor's preface, in Lucknow in 1200 A. H., under the title of *Ruq'at-i-'Ālamgīrī*, and in Lahore, in 1281 A. H., under the title of *Ruq'at-i-'Ālamgīrī*.

<sup>17</sup> Rieu, *op. cit.*, 1. 270, 1. 401, 2. 1683, and Beale, *op. cit.*, p. 179.

<sup>18</sup> Cf. abbreviations of names in al-Dīn cited by M. Aga-Oglu, *Are Islamica*, V, 3 (1936), 118 f., and allusions to similar practice with official titles mentioned in that same article.

tact and ability to meet the rivalry, competition, animosity, and intrigue of the nobles, not to mention the emperor's own disposition and whims at a given moment, and to serve so bigoted and suspicious a ruler as Awrangzib for fifty years without falling into disgrace, and later to obtain consideration and command admiration during the reigns of Farrukh Siyār and Muḥammad Shāh.

Two recorded incidents of his life, one of which occurred during Awrangzib's lifetime and the other after his death, bear witness to the integrity of his character and to the high esteem in which he was held at the court. During Awrangzib's march to Pānā in January 1704, 'Ināyat Khān had pitched his tents in Wazīr As'ad Khān's quarters, and on account of this there seems to have been some sort of disagreement between the two. Niccolao Manucci, a contemporary Venetian traveler, says of the incident: "The wazīr's servants, observing this unaccounted boldness, never resorted to by anyone else, protested in a modest manner. But since the noble would not listen to reason, the servants of As'ad Khān cut the intruder's tent-ropes and put his men to flight by a hearty use of their staves. When the king heard of the affair he seemed put out, and sent a message to the wazīr directing him to visit the quarters of Mirzā Wafā<sup>19</sup> and make him excuses. The wazīr pretended he did not understand; but the king did not desist from sending order after order. Thus the wazīr was forced to obey, to his great chagrin and much against his will."<sup>20</sup>

The second incident is reported by Muḥammad Sāqī Mustafīd Khān, author of the *Ma'āthir-i-'Ālamgiri*, a history of the reign of Awrangzib. He says in his preface that in the reign of Shāh 'Ālam he was directed by his noble patron 'Ināyat Khān to complete a history of the last forty years of the reign of Awrangzib, which, owing to that emperor's prohibition, had not been included in the *'Ālamgīr-nāmah*.<sup>21</sup> This attempt on the part of 'Ināyat Khān proves that he was not only an ambitious courtier, but also a conscientious scholar with a love of truth that led him to cause

<sup>19</sup> Mirzā Wafā appears to have been the real name of 'Ināyat Khān. See Niccolao Manucci, *Storia De Mogor*, translated by William Irvine, London, 1907, 3. 493, n. 2. For a different account of this incident see *Ma'āthir-i-'Umarī*.

<sup>20</sup> Niccolao Manucci, *op. cit.*, 3. 493.

<sup>21</sup> The *Ma'āthir-i-'Ālamgiri* is published in the *Bibliotheca Indica*, Calcutta, 1870-71.

important annals of his adopted country to be recorded. It is in keeping with this character of his that he should have owned a copy of a historical document like the *Iqbāl-nāmah*.

The line of Persian below the seal of 'Ināyat Khān, reading *dar hiya-i-hayāt-i-khūd 'ināyat kard* "he bestowed it during his lifetime" may raise a question as to whether it refers to a gift of the MS. by Awrangzib to 'Ināyat Khān or to a gift of the MS., or perhaps only this single volume, by 'Ināyat Khān to Amjad 'Alī Khān. The latter alternative seems the more probable. In the first place, one would expect a more detailed record of a gift from the emperor, indicating the place, the occasion, and the date of the presentation. 'Ināyat Khān would not have been likely to consider such an honor as a casual incident worthy of only so brief a note. In the second place, according to Oriental usage, the seal, except that of a king or an emperor, appears below and not above the writing. Further, the pun on the word *'ināyat*, which is the title of the owner of the first seal, and appears with *kardān* as a compound verb, looks intentional, as though Amjad 'Alī Khān, the owner of the second seal, had ingeniously used the name of the donor in its primary meaning in this memorandum. Finally, the date on Amjad 'Alī Khān's seal, "the eighth year of the reign of Muḥammad Shāh," corresponds with year A. D. 1727, by which time 'Ināyat Khān had been dead for three years. It is quite possible that Amjad 'Alī Khān had neglected to add his own seal to the manuscript when he received it from 'Ināyat Khān, but afterwards wished to note that 'Ināyat Khān had given it to him during his lifetime, and so added this notation.

The identity of Amjad 'Alī Khān we have not established. He seems to have been a lesser official of the court of Muḥammad Shāh.

The date of execution of this volume and its miniatures may reasonably be assumed to be between the year 1686, when 'Ināyat Khān became *Vaqūyī Nigār* "Court Chronicler," and the year 1707, when Awrangzib died. Since we cannot be precise, we may state the time roughly to be about 1700. The place of execution is more difficult to determine. During the years 1681-1707 the center of Awrangzib's interest and the Mughul empire was in the Deccan, where he was waging wars, and it is of course barely possible that the manuscript was made there. Other outlying regions of the empire might also conceivably have been the place of manufacture, but Delhi seems more likely. The style of these paintings



does not conform well to Deccani painting,<sup>22</sup> nor to 18th century Gujarati and Kashmiri paintings.<sup>23</sup> It is likely that the copy of the *Iqbāl-nāmah* would have been made from some copy in the royal archives or collection at Delhi; and more than that the style of paintings conform well to those considered to be Mughul of Awrangzib's time.<sup>24</sup> Those that come nearest in style and in manner of treatment to the paintings of the Lewis manuscript, are contained in a series of sixty-nine miniatures painted in Delhi for Niccolao Manucci, the Venetian traveler, for some time the court physician to Prince Dārā Shikuh. These miniatures, which now form part of the collection of the Cabinet des Estampes at the Bibliothèque Nationale in Paris, are found in a separate volume and are classed as O. D., No. 45 (réserve). The volume is labeled on the outside *Histoire de l'Inde depuis Tamerlan jusqu'à Orangzeb, par Manucci*, and bears the date 1712.<sup>25</sup> This volume of miniatures originally formed a part of three volumes of Manucci's History, which he sent to Europe for publication. Manucci's own account of these pictures is as follows:

"Before I left the Mogul dominions," (that is, before 1686), "to satisfy my curiosity I caused portraits to be painted of all the kings and princes from Taimur-i-Lang to Aurangzeb, including the sons and grandsons of the last-named, together with the portraits of the rulers over Bijāpūr and Gulkhandah, of some of the chief Hindū princes, and of other famous generals. The artist was a friend of mine, Mīr Muḥammad, an official in the household of the

<sup>22</sup> See examples in Stella Kramrisch, *A Survey of Painting in the Deccan*, London, India Society, 1937, Plates X ff.

<sup>23</sup> Examples in unpublished photographs belonging to W. Norman Brown.

<sup>24</sup> See examples in Ivan Stchoukine, *La Peinture indienne à l'époque des grands Mogols*, Paris, E. Leroux, 1929, Plates LIV, LV, LVIII, LXII, and others. See also F. R. Martin, *The Miniature Paintings and Painters of Persia, India, and Turkey*, London, 1912, Vol. 2, Plates 186, 193, 197, 207, 208; A. K. Coomaraswamy, *Indian Drawings*, Vol. 1, Plate 8; Laurence Binyon, *The Court Painters of the Grand Moguls*, Oxford University Press, 1921, Plate 25; W. Schulz, *Die persische-islamische Miniaturmalerei*, Vol. 2, Plate 193, and Percy Brown, *Indian Painting Under the Moghals*, Oxford, 1924, Plate 30.

<sup>25</sup> In the *Revue des Bibliothèques* for 1898, 1899, and 1900, E. Blochet published an "Inventaire et Description des Miniatures des MSS. Orientaux dans la Bibliothèque Nationale à Paris." See also an article by Blochet entitled: "Miniatures des MSS. Musulmans," in the *Gazette des Beaux Arts*, 1897, p. 281.

prince Shāh 'Alam, and all were copied from originals in the royal palace. So far as I know, no one has yet imparted such portraits to the public; or if any ingenious person has so done, this collection of mine has nothing in common with such, mine being the veritable, which the others cannot be. Meanwhile to get them I have spared no expenses, and have given many presents; and the whole was carried out under great difficulties, it being incumbent on me to observe profound secrecy as to my having the copies. I do not bring forward any portraits of queens and princesses, for it is impossible to see them, thanks to their being always concealed. If anyone has produced such portraits, they should not be accepted, being only likenesses of concubines and dancing-girls, etc., which have been drawn according to the artist's fancy. It should be remembered that all portraits showing a nimbus and an umbrella over the head are those of persons of the blood royal."<sup>18</sup>

As far as can be judged from the black and white reproductions of these miniatures,<sup>19</sup> they have characteristic features of draughtsmanship which are also found in the paintings of the Lewis manuscript. Aside from obvious features of craftsmanship, such as the identity of treatment in the arrangement of the figures, landscape, trees, flowers, birds, and animals, and similarity in details of costumes, textiles, and of the draperies, there is a notable resemblance of technique and manner of representation used in portraying the leading figures. Compare for instance, one of the paintings in the Manucci series, which shows Akbar riding on an elephant, with any one of the paintings of the Lewis manuscript depicting the same scene.<sup>20</sup> From the treatment of Akbar's face and costume it can be inferred that his portrait in both series was copied from original likenesses of the emperor which appeared in older works, and this fact is confirmed by Manucci's own statement.<sup>21</sup> Both sets of pictures are clearly from the same school, possibly even by the same hand or under the direction of the same painter. Manucci gives us the name of his artist,<sup>22</sup> Mīr Muḥammad, who was attached to the court of Shāh 'Alam, the second son of Awrangzib. We know that Manucci's paintings were painted before 1686,<sup>23</sup> the year

<sup>18</sup> Manucci, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, Introduction, p. liv.

<sup>19</sup> Fifty-six of these miniatures are reproduced in the four volumes of Irvine's translation of *Storia De Mogor*.

<sup>20</sup> Manucci, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, Plate 8.

<sup>21</sup> See above, note 26.

during which 'Ināyat Khān was appointed Court Chronicler by Awrangzib, and it is, therefore, possible that 'Ināyat Khān, who possessed or was having made a fine copy of the *Iqbal-nāmah* with blank spaces for illustrations,<sup>30</sup> decided to have the paintings done by a court artist, not improbably Mir Muḥammad or other painters who worked under this artist's supervision. It is also not improbable that the paintings were done with the knowledge of the emperor himself, whose son at the time dared to retain a court painter. Although Awrangzib was opposed to painting,<sup>31</sup> it may be, as Percy Brown suggests, that after riper judgment and later in life, he gave his royal assent to continuance of the painter's art.<sup>32</sup> We may conclude then that Northern India, specifically Hindustan, and probably Delhi itself, was the place where the paintings were executed.

The subject matter of these miniatures consists of important events and scenes from Akbar's life. He appears in almost every one of them, being shown from youth to old age, and the portraits are somewhat depersonalized representations based upon pictures drawn by the principal artists of his own court, and the courts of Jahāngir and Shāh Jahān. In spite of the difference in the style of painting, the portraits of Akbar and of his court officials have certain similarities to their well-known prototypes, but with some signs of failure, as weak drawing of the eyes, the chin, and the jaw.<sup>33</sup>

<sup>30</sup> A careful examination of some of the paintings will reveal that their upper and lower borders are in many instances indented so as not to overlap the text.

<sup>31</sup> Awrangzib has often been described as an orthodox Muslim who detested all sorts of art, and there is evidence that he discouraged miniature painting. Yet it is a fact that the lack of encouragement on the part of the state had already set in during the reign of Shāh Jahān. The descriptions of contemporary travelers, such as Bernier and Tavernier, show that in those days the painter was losing much of the prestige which he had gained during the reigns of Akbar and Jahāngir. Had Prince Dārā Shikuh, the eldest son of Shāh Jahān, not taken a keen interest in painting and cultivated an artistic taste for it, the court artists would probably have been discontinued long before. During the second half of the seventeenth century many paintings were produced including portraits of the emperor himself, a fact which proves that he was not altogether hostile to the miniature painters of his time.

<sup>32</sup> Percy Brown, *op. cit.*, p. 102.

<sup>33</sup> Compare the portraits of Akbar, drawn during his lifetime, which appear in an early copy of the *Akbar-nāmah* and in the famous Album of Jahāngir.

Portraits can be identified of some eminent nobles, among whom may be mentioned Aṣaf Khān, Akbar's foster-brother Khān-i-A'zam, Bāyram Khān, and his son 'Abd al-Rahmān Khān-i-Khānān. In general, however, portraiture is giving away to the use of types, according to indigenous Indian tradition, which shows its influence. Some scenes also appear to have been inspired by earlier paintings.<sup>24</sup>

While the portraiture and the grouping of the miniatures are not markedly original, their coloring departs strongly from that of the Mughul paintings of Akbar's and Jahāngīr's time. There is less of the gleam of Mughul coloration, and more approach to the so-called Rajput style of the 17th and 18th centuries, especially when a more varied palette was being used than was employed by the early Western Indian school.<sup>25</sup> There are many shades of *lājuward* "lapis lazuli" and *qirmāz* "red," with the well-known Indian yellow and various dark and light tones of brown and green skilfully blended. Faults in drawing and line composition are often palliated by the color composition. Frequently solid color backgrounds are used, as in "Rajput" styles (imitating earlier Western Indian). The attraction of the paintings lies in the combined effect rather than in the treatment of individual figures. Horses, elephants, lions, and other animals are not naturalistically perfect or proportional as in the time of Jahāngīr, nor are action

which are now in the possession of Mr. Chester Beatty of London. Reproductions of these paintings are found in the three-volume work *The Library of Chester Beatty, a Catalogue of the Indian Miniatures*, by Sir Thomas W. Arnold, revised and edited by J. V. S. Wilkinson, Oxford, Clarendon Press, 1936; see particularly Vol. 2, Plates 15, 36, 37 and 63. The first three plates are from the *Akbar-nāmah*, and the last from the Album of the Emperor Jahāngīr. The miniature reproduced on Plate 15 is the joint workmanship of Farrukh, Manohar, and Anant, that on Plate 36 is by Nar Singh, that on Plate 37 by 'Ināyat, and that on Plate 63 by Bichitr. Compare also a portrait of Akbar painted under the direction of Muḥammad Faqrullāh Khān, Head Artist at the court of Shāh Jahān (c. 1650), now in the collection of M. Curtier, Paris, reproduced in Percy Brown, *op. cit.*, Plate 20. For other portraits of Akbar see Schulz, *op. cit.*, Vol. 2, Plate 193; and C. Stanley Clark, *Victoria and Albert Museum Portfolios, Indian Drawings, etc.*, in the *Wentage Bequest*, London, 1922, Plate 6.

<sup>24</sup> Compare, for instance, the hunting scene painted on folio 167a, reproduced in Simsar, *op. cit.*, Plate 11 (facing p. 62), and the same scene from an early Akbar-nāmah, now in the British Museum, for a good reproduction of which see Laurence Binyon, *op. cit.*, Plate 12.

<sup>25</sup> See W. Norman Brown, *Story of Kalaka*, Washington, Smithsonian Institution, 1933, p. 10.

and movement so skilfully shown. Architectural settings, such as the interior or the exterior of a palace, are reduced to indications rather than being full in detail, again approaching 17th and 18th century Rajput treatment rather than the 16th century Mughul.

The paintings are good examples of the late Mughul type. The emphasis has by then shifted from the elaboration of composition and minute detail to simplification and suggestion, as in the 17th century Rajput and earlier indigenous Indian styles. It is a much Indianized type of Mughul art.

#### PLATES

##### I and II. *Celebration of the Fourteenth Anniversary of Akbar's Accession and of the Birth of Prince Salim (Jahangir)*

The scene is on two facing folios, of which the righthand folio is first in order in the MS. and shows Akbar.

The action takes place in the palace courtyard. Akbar is seated on his throne surrounded by his bodyguards. The throne, which is bedecked with jewels and precious stones, is set on a platform under a tent supported with four decorative pillars. Other structural features of the tent, such as gold ornamented fences and richly embroidered red and blue velvet curtains, add to the splendor of the throne. The architecture is of Shāh Jahān's time, not Akbar's. Akbar's turban is covered with jewels, and he wears a gold brocaded lavender coat. His left hand holds a flower, the right rests on his lap. On a lower platform or garden court officials and eminent nobles dressed in richly colored costumes stand arranged by rank. The carpet (or garden) has the floral design on a rose background with narrow blue borders. Below, farther down in the yard, on the grass, are barefooted women dancers shaking castanets to the beating of the drum and tambourines, and to the hand-clapping of a female chorus.

On the lefthand folio, in the upper of four panels, under a covered platform is a group of eight musicians—five trumpeters, two drummers, and a cymbalist. Below is a group of two dancing dervishes, two sword-duelists, and two wrestlers. In the third panel are five richly harnessed Arab horses, each led by a groom, with three head-grooms at the head of the procession. The lowest panel shows a procession of five state elephants with highly embroidered coverings, their mahouts with hands raised in salute to Akbar. In the foreground are two royal standard bearers and musicians.

In these two Plates the use of panels is distinctly a device of early Western Indian painting,<sup>24</sup> which was carried thence into the earliest Rajput painting.<sup>25</sup>

<sup>24</sup> Cf. W. Norman Brown, *Mixture Paintings of the Jaina Kalpasutra*, Washington, Smithsonian Institution, 1934, Figures 1, 6, 13, 18, 19, et passim.

<sup>25</sup> Cf. W. Norman Brown, *Art Islamica*, 4 (1937), Figures 13, 14 (facing p. 172).



*Celebration of Fourteenth Anniversary of Akbar's Accession and of Birth of Prince Salim*



11. Celebration of Fourtieth Anniversary of Akbar's Accession and of Birth of Prince Salim



و از کز این ترک مشی و بند جمی آوردند و چون یک بود شاهزاده را شش ساوه و جوش کوفته



حضرت عاقالی تمکیر شده و رسیدند و غافل ازین که شاهزاده را از گرد و بجهت خمر تم بر او شسته اند و

III. Prince Daryel subdued as prisoner in the Royal Harem

ایام شاهزاده افغان که با بیست و هفت نفر از خدمت در بیرون آمد و به مسجد کبود



دیگران نیز آمدند و او را و از او بارها سوز و پشیمانی می‌خواستند. مجبور شد که به مسجد کبود

19. The Persian Altar on the Floor

III. *Prince Dānyāl subdues an intruder in the Royal Harem*

During the thirty-eighth year of Akbar's reign, late one night after a festival at the palace, one of the lesser officials, being in liquor, intruded in the harem and attacked some of the women. He was found and subdued by Prince Dānyāl, the third son of the emperor. The painting shows the Prince fighting with the intruder, while six of the Hindu, Abyssinian, and Turkish inmates (so designated in the text) armed with sticks, and Akbar himself with a drawn sword, rush to his aid. Dānyāl is ready to use his gold-inlaid *katar*, a dagger with a heavy triangular blade. In order not to be struck in the dark by his father or by the women, he warns them by shouting that he has subdued the intruder.

Around the border of the painting on three sides are the various private apartments surrounding the courtyard, within which no less than five thousand women dwelt at one time.<sup>35</sup> At the top, in the typical Rajput style, is shown the exterior of the harem with two towers and a central gate.

IV. *The Emperor Akbar on his Throne*

During the forty-first year of the emperor's reign a blind man arrived at court who claimed that by putting his hand under his armpit and moving it he could produce not merely a sound but actually words, and could carry on conversation and recite poetry thus. (Boys in India frequently amuse themselves by making a noise in this fashion, but such a claim as this blind man's is naturally unusual.) Akbar had him summoned to his presence to perform this feat. The man is shown in this picture, standing barefooted in Akbar's presence, performing this act (by ventriloquism?). Although the scene is not a formal *Darhār*, Akbar is shown seated on a magnificent throne leaning against a brocade-cushion. The back of the throne recalls the spirled throne of personages in Jain paintings of the 13th century on.<sup>36</sup> Above him is an umbrella sign of royalty, as in India from early times. This type of throne or seat and umbrella with curved stem is common in Indian paintings from the late 16th century on.<sup>37</sup> Behind the emperor stands a whisk-bearer, who is also barefooted. Two middle-aged court nobles are standing behind the performer, as though fascinated by the unusual performance. In their dress they imitate the monarch. The throne room, only part of which is shown in this picture, is carpeted with a long, narrow, rose rug in floral design with yellow borders. The background of this painting, like that of the scene in the preceding plate, is painted in black.

<sup>35</sup> Vincent A. Smith, *Akbar the Great Mogul*, Oxford, Clarendon Press, 1919, p. 359.

<sup>36</sup> Cf. W. Norman Brown, *Kōloko*, Plate II et passim.

<sup>37</sup> Examples to be shown in an article by W. Norman Brown on "Shaiva Paintings in the Early Western Indian Style," to be published in the *A. O. Woolner Commemoration Volume*.

## ARABIC MAGIC BOWLS II: AN ASTROLOGICAL BOWL

H. HENRY SPONGE

New York City

THE *tāsa* described here is the one referred to as No. IV in my previous article "Arabic Magic Medicinal Bowls" in this JOURNAL.<sup>1</sup> It is of yellow bronze and of good workmanship. The letters are deeply and, on the whole, carefully incised. In some instances the words are, for lack of space, crowded together. Diacritical points are for the most part absent. The figures of the zodiac and planets are distinct and well engraved. Both the interior and exterior of the bowl are completely covered with inscriptions and the usual interlocking ornamentations.<sup>2</sup> There are no magic letters or signs, nor does the Most High Name of Seven Symbols<sup>3</sup> or any of its symbols occur on it. The *tāsa* has a diameter of 6¾ inches and a depth of 2 inches. The rim is about ¼ inch wide.

*Maker.* The inscription in the center of the bottom on the outside of the *fāsa* states that "It was made by Ibrahim Naqqās." The absence of the article before Naqqās indicates that he was a Persian. This is also borne out by the Persian phrases which surround the maker's name:

May the world be the custodian of thy praise!

According to thy wish may also be thy deed!

May God be thy protector!

May thy world be pleasing to the Lord of the Universe!

INTERIOR OF THE *lisa*.

On the rim is the *ḡyātā l-kursī* (Sur. 2, v. 256) followed by Sur.<sup>a</sup> 108, to which *yā fattāḥ*<sup>a</sup> *yā rabb* is added. Directly below the rim, along the top of the interior, is Sur. 48, vv. 1-5 to *al-ʿaḥḥār*.

<sup>1</sup> Vol. 66, 237 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 927-929.

<sup>a</sup> Ibid. 249.

\* Translation by Prof. Chas. C. Torrey. I wish to make grateful acknowledgment here of the great help received from Prof. Torrey and Prof. Macdonald in the decipherment of certain words and phrases difficult to make out. And I also take this opportunity to thank Prof. Macdonald for his generosity in placing his Arabic library at my disposal.

<sup>b</sup> *ɣ* has 'obtained full knives last. of 'a'afaiŋdɛŋ si-kwɛtara.

\* Throughout the inscriptions on this stele there is a play upon the verb *šatāh* and its nominal in its double meaning of "to open" and "to give victory," etc.

The Moon-Stations *al-manzil*.<sup>1</sup>

Below this inscription there are 27 small circles formed by a narrow ribbon, skilfully winding in and out, so as to produce a chain without beginning or end.<sup>2</sup> All the circles are inscribed. With



Interior of *Bas. IV.*

few exceptions, each inscription begins with one of the "beautiful names" of Allah. The language of the inscriptions connects with the Qur'ān but the phrases are not qur'ānic.

1. Praise be to Thee! There is no God but Thou, O Lord of everything and its Inheritor!

<sup>1</sup> Cf. J. Wellhausen, *Rechte Arabischen Heidentums*, 2. ed. p. 210, note 3, re: moon-stations among the ancient Arabs.

<sup>2</sup> *JAOS* 55. 249.

2. O God of gods, the Exalted One! To Him belongs Majesty.
3. O God, the Praised One in all His work!
4. O Compassionate One of everything and its Compassionator!
5. O Living One! There is no duration of time in the continuation of His kingship and its duration.
6. O Self-Existing One! Nothing escapes His knowledge or His Gentleness.
7. O Only One, the Enduring One, the First and the Last of everything!
8. O Abiding One! There is no turning and no ceasing to His Kingship.
9. O Eternal One, without desire! And there is nothing like Him.
10. O Just One! There is neither anything to equal His judging nor is there a possibility to describe Him.
11. O Great One! Thou art He who guideth \* the wise ones to describe His Grandeur.
12. O Creator of Souls, without pattern, independent of any other!
13. O Pure One! The Undeiled in His Holiness by any taint!
14. O Thou who art the Sufficient One of the believers because of what He has created of gifts of His grace!
15. O Unsullied One by any violence! Thou neither delightest in it nor mixest Thyself in its workings.<sup>12</sup>
16. O Thou who art bands of auxiliaries to us, who has taken charge of the affairs of a people in mercy and knowledge!
17. O Most Bountiful One, the Lord of Benefices! Surely all creatures (receive) from Him.
18. O Rewarder of the worshippers! All shall rise fully restored, for the fear of Him and the desire of Him.
19. O Creator of everything that is in the heavens and the earth, unto Him is its return! (cf. Sur. 28 v. 85)
20. O Compassionate One of every distress and grief, its Liberator and its Refuge!
21. O Perfect One! Tongues cannot describe all the majesty of His kingdom and His power!

---

\* *jdac* has *id* before *fabredz*.

<sup>12</sup> I.e. evil happens by His will but not by His good will and He does not allow it to pass into His works.

22. O Creator of the marvels! He has not taken advice of a helper from among His creatures in their creation.
23. O Thou who knowest the unseen! There are no souls without His care.
24. O Forbearing One, Lord of Patience! There is nothing in His creation that is comparable to Him.
25. O Restorer of what He has devised,<sup>11</sup> when the creatures shall appear at His call because of fear of Him.
26. O Laudable One, the Doer, the All-favorable One to all His creation by His kindness!
27. O Mighty One, the Unapproachable One, the One exalted over His command, and there is nothing besides His creation!

The circles are evidently intended to represent the moon-stations, as may be inferred from other astronomical representations on this *ḥṣa*. There is however one difficulty which requires some explanation. While the Arabs count 28 moon-stations, there appear on this *ḥṣa* only 27. Al-Bīrūnī<sup>12</sup> states that the Hindus count 27. Already Steinschneider<sup>13</sup> accepted 27 as the original number. Although Al-Būnī<sup>14</sup> says that the 28 letters of the Arabic alphabet correspond to the exalted number of the 28 moon-stations, there appear in the drawing of the *dāṭra*<sup>15</sup> only 27 stations, but the 28 letters, in the order of the *ḥurūf al-fūṣṣal*, are used in such a way that the 24th station *al-farḡ al-muqaddam* has the two letters *dāl* and *ḥā* assigned to it. In consequence of this, the station *al-ṣābiya*, to which the letter *dāl* belongs, was omitted. However, in his explanation of the *mandrūl* Al-Būnī<sup>16</sup> accounts for 28 stations. Is it assuming too much to say that we have in Al-Būnī's *dāṭra* (lithogr. edition) a reminiscence of the older, Indian conception of the number of moon-stations as 27, and that the maker of this *ḥṣa*, who was a Persian, followed the older Indian view which probably continued to be the guide in the making of utensils used for magico-medicinal purposes? The greater antiquity of the Indian *dāṭra*

<sup>11</sup> I. e. the Judgment Day.

<sup>12</sup> *Kitāb al-taḥṣīm fī aḥwāl yunās al-taḥṣīm* "Book of Instruction in the Elements of Astrology," text and trans. by R. R. Wright, § 164.

<sup>13</sup> *DMG* 18. 118 ff.

<sup>14</sup> *Ṣams al-ma'drif al-kubrā*, lith. ed. Cairo, 1322 A. H. part 1 p. 9. Printed ed. (n. d.), Cairo, Maṭba'at Muḥammad 'Alī Ṣabīḥ, p. 10.



would undoubtedly be considered to have its own peculiar mystic value and would therefore recommend itself to the adept.

As the circles are not accompanied by *ḥurūf ʿummal*, or by any



daʿira from Al-Būnī's *ʿilm al-maʿārif*.

sign or designation, the engraver would not be disturbed by having to account for 28 letters, each attached to its moon-station. He followed the old Indian design.<sup>17</sup> It was, however, a different

<sup>17</sup> *Ibid.* part I p. 15/18.

<sup>18</sup> *Ibid.* part I pp. 15 ff. / 18 ff.

<sup>19</sup> Modern *ḥisāb* reveal at once that the makers had not the faintest idea that the circles represent moon-stations, or the cartouches the zodiac. All these have gradually degenerated into simple, though mysterious ornaments, and, so far as the maker is concerned, the number of these astronomical symbols depends primarily upon space and the commercial value enhanced by an increased number of these ornaments. One of my modern *ḥisāb* has 16 and another only 4 cartouches. But the original form and figure are retained, though by no fault of the maker, but by ancient and inviolable custom.

matter when Al-Būnī had to account for 28 letters. He overcame the difficulty by referring to it in the text in its proper place.<sup>18</sup>

The order of the names of the moon-stations in the *dā'ira* and text of Al-Būnī, both lithographed and printed Cairo edition,<sup>14</sup> and the list in the *Encycl. of Islām* practically agree up to No. 22, *su'ada*. There are a few minor differences. Al-Būnī has for the first station the name *šaraḥain* while Tilimsānī<sup>15</sup> and *E. of I.*<sup>16</sup> have *šaraḥān*. Tilimsānī has for the eighth moon-station *suma'a*, "lions," and the *E. of I.* calls the eleventh moon-station *subra*, neither name occurs elsewhere. Al-Būnī and Al-Birūnī name the thirteenth station *'awwā* for *sawwā* in *E. of Islām*. The arrangement of the remaining six names in Al-Būnī's *dā'ira* differs greatly from that of the text, printed edition, *E. of I.* and Tilimsānī. Also a few names occur only in Tilimsānī and *E. of I.* Al-Būnī and Tilimsānī agree in the use of the names *muḡaddam* and *mu'atḥḥar*, *E. of I.* has in their stead *al-fargh al-awwal* and *al-fargh al-ihānī*. Al-Birūnī<sup>17</sup> admits that both names are used to designate the same m-stations, as well as *riḥā* for which *E. of I.* has *baṭn al-ḥāt*. Tilimsānī's names for m-st's No. 26 and 28, *ḡawda'*, and *naḥḥ*, the name of a star in Aries, do not occur elsewhere. His order and list of names seems to have been derived from another source than that of Al-Būnī while that of the *E. of I.* list is related to Al-Būnī's. The letters in Tilimsānī's list do not follow the system of the *ḥurūf ḡusmāli*.

The order of the *manāzil al-qamar* according to Al-Būnī's *dā'ira* and text, the list in the *E. of I.* and Tilimsānī.

Al-B's <i>dā'ira</i>		Al-B's text	<i>Enc. of Islām</i>	Tilimsānī	
1. <i>šaraḥain</i>	h	<i>šaraḥain</i>	<i>šaraḥān</i>	<i>šaraḥān</i>	ḡ
2. <i>buṣain</i>	h			<i>dabarān</i>	y
3. <i>ṭaraḡa</i>	ḡ			<i>dabarān</i>	k
4. <i>dabarān</i>	d			<i>han'a</i>	l
5. <i>haḡ'a</i>	h	<i>han'a</i>	h	<i>dhira'</i>	m

<sup>18</sup> Reference may be made here to the fact that, according to the Gilgamesh Epic, the Zodiac seems to have had only 11 pictures, as the shears of the Scorpion were regarded as being the Libra. Even in Plato's time Greek astronomy knew only eleven pictures of the Zodiac. Libra was added later. Cf. Franz Boll: *Sternkunde und Sterndeutung*, 4th ed. pp. 7, 92.

<sup>14</sup> Ibn al-Ḥaḡḡ al-TILIMSĀNĪ, *Summa al-'amār waḥidat al-'aḥd al-ḥudūd*, Cairo, Maṭba'at al-'Amīra al-Šarāfiyya (n. d.) p. 51.

<sup>15</sup> Art: *manāzil*.

Al-R's <i>dhira</i>		Al-R's text		Kur. of Islām	Tilimsani	
6. <i>han'a</i>	w	<i>haq'a</i>	w		<i>naṭra</i>	n
7. <i>ḡabba</i>	z	<i>dirā'</i>	z	<i>dirā'</i>	<i>tarfa</i>	s
8. <i>ḡirā'</i>	h	<i>naṣra</i>	h	<i>naṭhira</i>	<i>sumā'a</i>	c
9. <i>naṭra</i>	ṭ	<i>tarfa</i>	ṭ	<i>tarf</i>	<i>ḡarṭā'a</i>	f
10. <i>tarfa</i>	y	<i>ḡabba</i>	y	<i>aḡabba</i>	<i>'awwā'</i>	ḡ
11. <i>ḡarṭā'a</i>	k			<i>zuḡra</i>	<i>sīḡāk</i>	q
12. <i>naṣra</i>	l				<i>ḡhafr</i>	r
13. <i>'awwā'</i>	m			<i>saṣwā'</i>	<i>zabūna</i>	ḡ
14. <i>sīḡāk</i>	u				<i>iklil</i>	t
15. <i>ḡhafr</i>	s				<i>ḡalb</i>	ṭ
16. <i>zabūna</i>	c				<i>ṣawla</i>	b
17. <i>iklil</i>	f				<i>na'ā'im</i>	d
18. <i>ḡalb</i>	ṭ				<i>balḡad</i>	d
19. <i>ṣawla</i>	q				<i>ḡābīh</i>	z
20. <i>balḡad</i>	r	<i>na'ā'im</i>	r	<i>na'ā'im</i>	<i>bulā'</i>	ḡh
21. <i>na'ā'im</i>	s	<i>bulā'</i>	ḡ	<i>bulda</i>	<i>swād</i>	a
22. <i>swād</i>	t	<i>ḡābīh</i>	ṭ	<i>ḡḡābīh</i>	<i>aḡbīḡa</i>	b
23. <i>aḡbīh</i>	ṭ	<i>bulā' ʔ (read ṭ)</i>		<i>bulā'</i>	<i>muḡaddam</i>	ḡ
24. <i>muḡaddam</i>	d; h	<i>swād</i>	h	<i>swād</i>	<i>mu'akḡar</i>	d
25. <i>mu'akḡar</i>	d	<i>aḡbīḡa</i>	d	<i>al-ḡḡīḡa</i>	<i>baṭa</i>	h
26. <i>bulā'</i>	z	<i>muḡaddam</i>	ḡ	{ <i>al-farḡh</i> <i>al-awwal</i> }	<i>ḡawḡā'</i>	w
27. <i>riṣā</i>	ḡh	<i>mu'akḡar</i>	z	{ <i>al-farḡh</i> <i>al-ḡḡāni</i> }	<i>kaṭān</i>	z
28. *****	*	<i>riṣā</i>	ḡh	<i>baṭa al-hāt</i>	<i>naḡh</i>	b

INSCRIPTION BETWEEN THE MOON-STATIONS AND THE TWELVE  
CARDINALS

"O Victor, Lord of the mighty, the Strong One! Thou art He whom it is impossible to oppose. O Near One! The Exalted One over everything, Highest in respect of rank. O Holy One! The one pure of all evil. Nothing equals Him among His creation. O Near One! The Answerer of Prayer. The One who approaches closer than anything else in His nearness. O Creator of the creatures and their Restorer (to life) by His power, after their passing away! O Majestic One! The Great One above everything, and the Justice of His word and the Truth of His promise. O Praised One! Not even imaginary thoughts (can) approach every measure

of His praise and His glory. O Merciful One! The Forgiver, the Absolute Just One, Thou art He who filleth everything."

The Twelve Cartouches or Zodiac *ḥalāk al-burūġ*.<sup>21</sup>

The twelve cartouches are in appearance exactly like those on *ḥām* I, described in a previous article,<sup>22</sup> with the difference that each one of those was designated by the name of one of the signs of the zodiac. Although no name is attached to any of the cartouches found on the *ḥām* described here, I feel confident that they are intended to represent the 12 signs of the zodiac. This view as to the character of the cartouches seems to me to be confirmed by the seven medallions, symbolizing the planets, which form the next circle. All the cartouches are inscribed.

Inscriptions

No. 1. The Basmallah. O God! Open to us the gates of Thy goodness, of Thy mercy and of Thy sustenance by Thy Grace and Longsuffering. O Most Merciful One of the merciful. "And when they meet those who believe" (Sur. 2. v. 71)

No. 2. Continues Sur. 2. 71 "they say: 'We believe,' but when one goes aside with another they say, 'We will talk to them of what God has opened unto you.'" (Follows part of Sur. 2. v. 83) "but previously they had prayed for victory over those who disbelieved" those who lay in wait for you. And if there is to you

No. 3. "An opening from God." Perhaps that God will give the victory" (Sur. 5. 57). "And when they forget what they were reminded of, we opened for them the gates of everything" (Sur. 6. 44). "And with Him are the keys of the unseen. None knows them" (Sur. 6. 59)

No. 4. Continues Sur. 6. 59 "save He." "And they magnified themselves against them. The gates of heaven shall not be opened to them" (Sur. 7. 38). "Upon Him is our reliance. O our Lord! Open between us and our people in truth. Thou art the best of openers" (Sur. 7. 87). "If the people of the town had only believed" (Sur. 7. 94)

<sup>21</sup> Al-Birūnī, op. cit. 150 says that the common people call *gemīnī al-ḥawā* inst. of *al-tawānūn*; *virgo al-sūbūh* inst. of *al-adrā*; *sagittarius al-qawc* inst. of *er-rāmī*; *pisces al-ḥāt* inst. of *al-ḥamūk*; *aquarius al-dalā* inst. of *ashīb al-mā*.

<sup>22</sup> JAOS 55, 250 f.

No. 5. Continues Sur. 7. 94 "and had shown godly fear, we would have opened up for them blessings from the heavens and from the earth." "If ye desire an opening, an opening has now come unto you; but if ye desist, it is better for you" (Sur. 8. 19). "And when they opened their goods" (Sur. 12. 65)

No. 6. Continues Sur. 12. 65 "they found their possessions." "And asked for an explanation; and every rebel tyrant was disappointed" (Sur. 14. 18). If (*law*) "we had opened for them a door with grievous punishment" (Sur. 23. 79), "until Yâgug and Mâgug are let out, and from every sand-drift" (Sur. 21. 96)

No. 7. Continues Sur. 21. 96 "they shall run forth." "Until we opened for them a door of grievous punishment, then they were in despair" (Sur. 23. 79). "Open between me and them an opening and rescue me and those of the believers who are with me" (Sur. 26. 118). "And they shall say, 'When shall this opening be?' (Sur. 32. 28).

No. 8. Continues Sur. 32. 28 "If ye are truthful, say, On the Day of the Opening their faith shall not profit those who disbelieve, nor shall they be respited" (Sur. 32. 28 f.). "Say, Our Lord shall assemble us together; then He shall open between us in truth, for He is the Opener, the Knowing One" (Sur. 34. 25). "What God opens (Sur. 35. 2)

No. 9. Continues Sur. 35. 2 to mankind of His mercy there is none to withhold it; and what He withholds there is no one who can send it forth after Him, for He is the Mighty, the Wise" (Sur. 35. v. 2). "And remember Ishmael and Elisha and Du'l-Kifl, for all are of the best ones" (Sur. 38. v. 48).

No. 10. Show favor to Him, O Mighty One! Possessor of Praise, the Helper,<sup>23</sup> the Lord of Might; and to Him is the glory and the grandeur. His might does not change. How wonderful are (His) works! And the tongues cannot utter all His benefits and His glory. O my Sufficiency

No. 11. In all my anxieties and afflictions, in every calamity; and my Answerer to every invocation! I ask of Thee, by the truth of these names, that Thou bless Muhammed and the family of Muhammed. And I ask of Thee

No. 12. Faith and the highest degree of forgiveness in the present world and the hereafter. And that Thou turn away from

<sup>23</sup> I. e. *al-qârib*; it might also be *al-qârib* "the Near One."

me injury, injustice of those who wish mischief against me; and that Thou turn away their hearts from the evil which they have kindled against what is good. O! there is no kingdom except Thine.

The Planets *al-kawākib al-ṣūfiyya*

Below the cartouches are the figurative representations of the seven planets,<sup>24</sup> arranged in the Ptolemaic order, the sun being in the middle. The figures are separated from one another by short inscriptions.

The broad human face, covered with a beaddress, enclosing both sides of the face and forming a knob on the top of the head, represents the Moon, *al-qamar*. To its left is a scribe with a stylus in his hand. This is Mercury, *ʿuṭrūd*, in astrology *al-mundafiq* "the deceitful one." Then follows a woman playing on a harp. Her hair is done up in two thick braids. This is Venus, *al-zuhara*, in astrology *al-ṣaʿad al-ṣaḡīr* "star of little good fortune." Her neighbor is the rising sun. In front of it stands a lion. This combination is the Sun, *al-kams*, in its *manzil*. This figure resembles one on a mirror reproduced by Reinaud.<sup>25</sup> The Sun is followed by the figure of a man holding a staff or lance over his right shoulder. His left hand rests on what appears to be a large jar, but in view of the fact that this is the image of Mars, *al-mirrth*, it is more probably a shield of which the lower part is not visible. This is not a usual representation of Mars. This planet exercises a sinister influence and is called in astrology *al-naḥs al-ʿuṣṣar*, the star of "lesser misfortune" in relation to Saturn, the star of pre-eminently sinister influence, *al-naḥs al-ʿakbar*. Upon Mars follows Jupiter, *al-muṣṭārī*, enthroned, holding in his left hand what appear to be two sticks laid across one another, perhaps thunderbolts. Jupiter is known in astrology as *al-ṣaʿad al-ʿakbar wa yaḍall ʿala al-salāḥ*, the star "of greatest happiness that leads unto peace."<sup>26</sup> And finally there is Saturn, *al-ṣuḥal*, having the figure of a man

<sup>24</sup> When the sun and moon were first counted with the planets, probably to make up the "perfect" number seven, is not known. This combination existed already in 650 A. C., cf. Böhl, *op. cit.*, p. 4.

<sup>25</sup> *Description des monuments musulmans du cabinet de M. le duc de Blacas*, vol. II, plate X.

<sup>26</sup> *Tilimsānī*, *op. cit.* 50. The characteristics of the planets and their indications are described by Al-Bīrūnī, *op. cit.* §§ 396 to 421; Al-Būnī, *op. cit.* 50; Al-Qazwīnī, *ʿAḡāṭ al-maḥlūḡāt*, ed. F. Wüstenfeld, 22 f.

with six arms, resembling the many-armed Siva. He is seated in the manner of a Buddha. In his upper right hand he holds an object resembling a spearhead or a pointed bud of a flower. In the corresponding left hand he holds an object of a triangular form with a rounded top. From his second arm there seems to flow a stream of water, while the hand of the corresponding left arm holds an object of a triangular form on a long stem. The remaining two arms hold nothing in their hands. The two sets of lower arms are attached to the middle of the body. This figure resembles fundamentally the representation of the Moon in its domicile *saraṣān*, cancer, as it appears on Reinaud's mirror.<sup>27</sup> There, a human head, enclosed in a crescent, is substituted for that of the crab, whose six stretched-out legs produce the same appearance as the six arm-like protuberances on the body of the human figure for Saturn on this *ḥisa*.

The human figures on the *ḥisa* are engraved only to about the end of the rump. The figures of the planets on Reinaud's mirror are represented as being in their domiciles, and where the conjunction is that of a representation of a human and animal figure, the person is depicted as being seated upon the animal (or as standing behind it?) without showing the legs. The engraver of the *ḥisa* may have had before him a design similar to that on the mirror from which he copied such parts as he needed. As the human figures appeared as if squatting, he produced them in that form. In a book by Abu Ma'sar al-Balḥī<sup>28</sup> we have a somewhat crude conventionalized representation of the figures of the planets in their *burūj*; here also only the upper parts of the human figures are depicted. This seems to point to a recognized tradition.

#### Inscriptions between the Planets

Saturn and Moon: "O God, I invoke Thee by Thy Name!"<sup>29</sup>

Moon and Mercury: This is a reminder! And verily, for those who fear God there is an excellent place to which to return,

<sup>27</sup> Cf. footnote 25.

<sup>28</sup> *Kitāb fah al-mawḍiʿ li-l-rigāl wa'l-niḥ* 'ala'l-ḥurūf wa jawāb'ihā 'ala fahāḥ waḡḡā, Cairo, n. d. (printed at the expense of Ṣaḥ 'Abd al-Mun'im, pp. 12; 15 et al. Another work by the same author: *Kitāb al-muḥaqqiq al-muḍaqqiq al-yuḍaḥ al-faḥḥ al-ḥāḥ bi-rabī Ma'sar al-Falaki al-Kabir* (Cairo, maḥḥa'at al-Husayniyya, n. d.) has the same kind of illustrations as the other book.

<sup>29</sup> Undoubtedly the Most High Name of Seven Symbols, cf. *JAOS* 55. 239.



Mercury and Venus: Gardens of Eden of which are opened the Venus and Sun: gates. (Sur. 38. vv. 49-50.) And those who disbelieve shall be driven

Sun and Mars: unto Gehenna in troops. And when they arrive there, then shall be opened

Mars and Jupiter: its gates. And its keeper shall say to them (Sur. 39. vv. 71 f.) Peace be upon you!<sup>20</sup>

Jupiter and Saturn: Ye have done well! Enter therefore into it to dwell there" (Sur. 39. v. 73).

### The Boss

It seems to me, that the same intention is underlying the arrangement of the planets around the boss of this *ḥṣa* that is found expressed in the appendix to the Talisman of the Woman who washes the Dead.<sup>21</sup> In it the seven planets are invoked to surround the subject of the invocation, so that he may be protected against violent death and every kind of evil.

"The Sun is to his right and the Moon to his left; Venus before his face and Saturn behind his back, and Mars in front of him. Jupiter is looking toward him, Mercury is under his feet. He shall neither be killed nor taken prisoner. Neither adversity nor evil shall reach him ever."

The Boss is surrounded by the seven *sigārāt*. It is inscribed with an invocation in favor of the one who, by means of this *ḥṣa*, seeks a solution of his problems. The inscription is as follows:

In the section opposite Saturn, *ṣaḥal*: "O Living One! O Eternal One! O Lord of Majesty, and the Most Merciful One! O Lord,

In the section opposite Mars, *al-mirṭā*: I implore Thee by Thy known Name, The holy one, the one that promises happiness,

In the section opposite Venus, *al-sukara*: the blessed one, that Thou mayest forgive me my sins and judge my con-

In the section opposite Mercury, *al-ʿuṣārīd*: -dition, and give me victory over my enemies. Have mercy upon us, O Merciful One of the merciful ones."

<sup>20</sup> The engraver's eyes must have wandered from v. 71 to v. 73, with the result, that now the unbelievers are made welcome with the salutation reserved for believers, and are commended for having "done well!"

<sup>21</sup> Winkler, op. cit. II, 14, quoting Cod. Par. 2732 fol. 30a to 31b.

The astronomical character of the *ḥasa* is maintained throughout. The Boss represents the earth, the four divisions the four cardinal points. It may also represent the inferior world and its four elements fire, air, water and earth. It is surrounded by the planets, above which are the twelve cartouches symbolizing the 12 signs of the zodiac, and above these are the 27 (28) moon-stations. The whole represents a kosmos of a geocentric conception, such as Ptolemy's.

#### EXTENSION OF *ḥasa*.

The inscription on the underside of the rim is composed of *surdāt* 109; 112; 113 followed by the *basmallāh* and the beginning of Sur. 114.

The circular inscription below this one completes Sur. 114 and is followed by Sur. 110, the *basmallāh* and "I have taught (or: known) evil and have wronged myself (cf. Sur. 3. v. 129) and confess my guilt. And forgive Thou me my sins, for in truth sins are forgiven" (cf. Sur. 39. v. 54).

In the circular space below this one are the symbolical figures of the twelve zodiac signs. Only *ḡadī*, *ḥamal* and *ḡor* are accompanied by their names. The figure of *ḡor* is that of the hump-backed cattle of Asia. Sagittarius is a minotaur. In front of Virgo, a squatting female figure, there are, standing upright, four separated stalks of wheat. The right arm of the figure is stretched across two of the stalks, thus creating the impression of a harpist playing upon a harp. This is actually the representation of Virgo on the mirror described by Reinaud.<sup>22</sup> The Twins are of the Siamese kind. The figures are separated from one another by the "Beautiful Names,"<sup>23</sup> following the usual order. The Names are preceded by the *basmallāh* and "He is God; there is no other God but God, the Merciful." The engraver has interpolated among the Names a few additional words and phrases. Thus in the space between *al-ḡadī* and *al-ḥamal* the word *fōg* is introduced between *al-muta'ālī* and *al-barr*. It may be a corrected mistake, as a line is drawn through it. At the end of the same section occurs the additional name *al-muḡ'im* "the Generous One."

The enumeration of the Names continues in the circular inscription below this one. It begins with *al-mustaqīm* "the Avenger"

<sup>22</sup> Op. cit., vol. II, plate X.—Venus plays the guitar, Winkler, op. cit., 109.

<sup>23</sup> Some of the words are abbreviated in the text. Three of the divine

and, ending with the 99th Name *al-sabir* "the Patient One," it is followed by "There is nothing like Him; and He is the Hearer and the Seer. God doeth what He willeth, with power and wisdom, what He desireth. *Basmallah*. In the Name of God, in His Name of *al-mubtadi*" the Beginner (or: *al-mabdi*? the Creator), the



Exterior of *qasr* IV.

Lord of the future and the former life. He has no extreme or end. O, the high heavens!

The astrological character of the *qasr* is maintained by twelve inscribed cartouches, like those on the interior wall of the *qasr*, representing the zodiac.<sup>124</sup> The inscription begins in the cartouche

Names have been omitted: *al-'aṣīr*; *malik al-mulk* and *al-muṣṭi*. The name *al-mubtadi* or *al-mabdi* is new.

<sup>124</sup> See note 22.

formed in the space below the two figures *taurus* and *gemini* continuing in the regular order.

1. *taurus* and *gemini*: "Praise be to Him who is mighty over what He wishes, almighty. Praise be to God the praiseworthy King, the Possessor of the glorious Throne; Who doeth what He wisheth, the Lord of lords, and Cancer<sup>33</sup>

2. *gemini* and *cancer*: of the causes, and the Creator of the creatures. Praise be to Him who is mighty over what He wishes, almighty; and the Mighty One of the mighty ones; the Victor of the victorious;

3. *cancer* and *leo*: And just in the Day of Judgment and Resurrection; God of gods, the Assembler of the Inevitable Day with fire; forgiving, merciful, knowing, thankful. And the praise<sup>34</sup> be to God

4. *leo* and *virgo*: The Lord of the Worlds; and the praise be to God the praiseworthy King, the Possessor of the glorious Throne! He doeth what He willeth, the First and the Last, the Apparent and the Innermost, the Everlasting, who giveth sustenance to the creatures

5. *virgo* and *libra*: And beasts. The Master of gifts. The Keeper-away of trials. O Thou, who healest the sick, and forgivest the sinners and pardonest those who are leading in the right way! And Thou lovest the upright,

6. *libra* and *scorpio*: And Thou givest good tidings to those who repent, and concealest the sinners; and those who fear (God) are safe. Praise be to Thee! There is no God but Thou, the Merciful, the Protector, the Forgiver of sins and the concealer of faults.

7. *scorpio* and *sagittarius*: Thankful, clement, knowing the bounds (of everything) and causing the seeds and trees to grow; and the Cleaver of the grains (*cf.* Sur. 6, v. 95). Thou art He to whom adoration is due, and the darkness of the night and the light of the day and the shining of the moon

8. *sagittarius* and *capricornus*: And the rays of the sun finely spread out and holding the water. And Thou art He to whom there is no likeness of anything; and He is the Hearer, the Seer. And Thou art powerful over that! And

<sup>33</sup> Reading on *ḥas* looks like *ḥasid*, should be *ḥasidim*.

<sup>34</sup> *ḥas* has *al-hasid* i. e. *seer* inst. of simply *ḥasid*.

9. *capricornus* and *aquarius*: Having witnessed, Thou art He who knoweth the hidden and the revealed and what is in the graves. Thou art He who pardoneth those who lead in the right way and who saveth after a man abandoneth his sins.

10. *aquarius* and *pisces*: And God bless His creature, Muhammed, and his entire family; and (grant him) peace, much abiding and eternal peace. O God, grant forgiveness to the multitude of believing men and women, *muslimata* and *muslimati*.

11. *pisces* and *aries*: The Merciful One directed Himself toward the Throne. O Mighty God, abiding in benefits, conquering enemies. The Merciful One, being gracious unto the khalifas, kind with His sustaining provision;

12. *aries* and *taurus*: Known by His Graciousness, just in His judgment; learned in the mercy of the merciful ones; Seer of those who see; Forgiver of those who forgive. The Master of the prophets.

The great popularity which astrology enjoyed during the early Christian centuries is demonstrated by an imaginary astrological dialogue between Plato and the Egyptian Peteësis written on papyrus, belonging to the 3rd century.<sup>88</sup> Plato asks the question: "What is the case with these phenomina?" To which Peteësis answers: "Listen! The sun is the right eye; the moon the left; the tongue, smell and hearing belong to Mercury; the viscera to Jupiter; the chest to Mars, the spleen to Venus, the kidneys to Saturn, the head to Aries, the neck to Cancer, the belly to Leo, the cheeks and loins to Virgo, the buttocks to Libra, the seat to Scorpio, the ... to Sagittarius, the nails to Capricorn, the calf of the leg to Aquarius, the extremities to Pisces." It is noteworthy that in this planetary and zodiacal division of the body no mention is made of Mars and of the two zodiac signs Taurus and Gemini. Each astral body is assigned to only one part or member of the body with the exception of Mercury to whom the rule over tongue, smell and hearing is given, and of Virgo to whom the cheeks and loins are assigned. This is already an expansion of an earlier planetary division of the human body which, according to Boll,<sup>89</sup>

<sup>88</sup> *Catalogue of the Greek Papyri in the John Ryland's Library*, vol. II 24.

<sup>89</sup> Franz Boll, *op. cit.* 138.

goes back to Nechepso.<sup>37</sup> According to it Saturn rules head and neck, Jupiter the shoulders and the breast, Mars the diaphragm and the sinews, the Sun heart, lung and liver, Venus the vulva, Mercury the shanks and the knees, the Moon rectum and abdomen.

In the course of time a more detailed division of the human body was recognized and, as a natural consequence, its distribution to the rule of the planets and the signs of the zodiac became still more detailed than in the earlier writings.<sup>38</sup> The writers, however, often differ as to the exact group of parts or single parts of the body to be thus assigned. The Arab period offers a good example of this development in the writings of Pseudo Mağrifi.<sup>39</sup>

Although faith in astrology and magic observances of various kinds had become a firmly established belief among Moslems, fostered by a flood of books dealing with these subjects, there was also strong opposition to these superstitious practices on the part of orthodox Islām.<sup>40</sup> Thus 'Abd al-Mu'min al-Iṣfahānī in his *aṭḥāq ad-dakab* opposed astrology in the words: "People who praise and adore God do not pay homage to a belief in astrology."<sup>41</sup> Ibn Khaldūn declares it to be inimical to both religion and the State.<sup>42</sup> The pretensions of astrologers are ridiculed even in popular writings by facetious stories, as e.g. in the "Story of the First Brother of the Barber" in the Arabian Nights.<sup>43</sup> The Šāh, receiving in return for his good wishes for a happy marriage from the enraged bridegroom only vituperations, says serenely: "Thy star does not suit her star. If thou wishest it, I will change for thee the horoscope of thy marriage contract, so that thy star and hers may suit one another better." An amusing anecdote is told about Abu

<sup>37</sup> *Catalogus Codicum Astrologorum Graecorum* vol. VI 83, 9 ff. For a complete list of references to classical and later literature dealing with astrology in one form or other see Boll, op. cit. 138 ff.

<sup>38</sup> Boll, op. cit. 138.

<sup>39</sup> *Qāḍiyat al-ḥakīm waḥḍayy al-natiqatayn al-tagāwiz al-mansūb ila 'sāi l-Qāsim Maḥmūd ibn Ahmad al-Mağrifi* "The Aim of the wise Man and of that which of the two Advantages is worthier of Precedence, attributed to Abu l-Qāsim etc." ed. by Hellmut Ritter, vol. I Arabic text pp. 150 ff.; 157 ff.

<sup>40</sup> Cf. Boll, op. cit. chapter III, Die Astrologie in Ost und West etc.

<sup>41</sup> *maqāma* 23. p. 40, transl. by O. Reuchler, *Beiträge zur Mağāma-Literatur*, Heft 7.

<sup>42</sup> *Prolegomena, De Slave* I. 232-240.

<sup>43</sup> *Alf lila wa lila*, Cairo ed., vol. I, p. 77.

Ma'sar<sup>38</sup> by a witty Mesopotamian judge.<sup>44</sup> Being once outwitted by an "impostor," Abu Ma'sar cried out in great fury: "If I do not find out whence the impostor got his true forecasts, I shall go mad, shall tear up my books, declare that astrology is vanity." The "impostor" gave a satisfactory explanation and Abu Ma'sar's amour-propre was saved, so that he could say with quiet satisfaction *haraġ 'anni*. And then there is the very expressive current Arabic saying, evidently the fruit of bitter disappointment on the part of former gullible believers, *kull munaġġim kaġib* "All astrologers are liars."



<sup>44</sup> *The Table-Talk of a Mesopotamian Judge*, being the first part of the *Nishwār al-Muḥāḡarrah* or *Jāmi' al-Tawārīkh* of Abu 'Alī Al-Muḥassin al-Tanūkhī, ed. and transl. by D. S. Margolionth, pp. 555-577.



THE WORDS *san i fên shên* IN THE INSCRIPTION ON THE  
NESTORIAN MONUMENT AT HSI-AN FU

RUFUS SUTER  
LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

INTRODUCTION

IN THE INSCRIPTION on the Nestorian Monument at Hsi-an fu the following passage occurs: 我三一分身景尊彌施阿毘隱異威同人出代 *Wo san i fên shên ching tsun Mi-shih-ho ch'i sui chên wei t'ung jên ch'u tai.*<sup>1</sup> It is a brief description of the Incarnation and means: "Thereupon, our *san i fên shên*, the brilliant and reverend Messiah, veiling and hiding His true majesty, in the likeness of a man went forth into the world." The words *san i fên shên* have not been translated here, as their ambiguity furnishes a problem which has divided the best authorities since the first translation of the tablet in 1625.

The problem lies in the fact that, if certain of the proposed translations are correct, the words are compatible with Catholic teaching. If others are correct, *san i fên shên* state the doctrine wherein Nestorianism is traditionally supposed to have deviated from Catholic dogma.

By way of introduction let us comment briefly on the nature of Nestorianism and the history of the Persians who carried it into China. For several centuries the leaders of thought of the ancient church in the Roman Empire were concerned with elaborating an unambiguous and precise conception of Christ, whom they regarded as God and man. The church at three ecumenical councils—Ephesus (431), Chalcedon (451), and Constantinople (553)—established a particular dogma. At these same three convocations a Cilician named Nestorius (d. circa 451) was condemned. This Nestorius, it was alleged, taught that in Christ were two persons, one divine and one human, brought into union with each other merely in the performance of psychological acts. The authoritative doctrine, on the other hand, which was defined the more clearly by being brought into contrast with this divergent statement, was that while in Christ two natures or substances existed,

<sup>1</sup> *Variétés sinologiques*, No. 7, Table xxii, col. 4, to table xxiii, col. 2 (all references to *Var. sin.* are to Havret's masterful study, *Le siècle chrétienne de Si-ngan-fou*).

one divine and one human, these were moulded, in an ontological sense, into one person, so that it was accurate to say that God was born of a woman. Since the publication in 1910 of a copy of an ancient Syriac version of Nestorius's *Book of Heraclides*, which had been lost in Europe, some doubt has been cast on the justness of this condemnation of Nestorius. The Greek word *hypostasis*, the equivalent of the *persona* of the Latin Fathers, which has come into English as *Person*, is apparently used by Nestorius in an older sense of "nature" or "substance." His dictum, accordingly, that in Christ were two *hypostases* may not have differed from the Catholic doctrine, and the conflict between the ecumenical councils and Nestorius may have been verbal. (See the last paragraph of my Conclusion.)

However this may be, the church of Persia, or the Syriac church, so called because it used the classical Syriac in its rituals and sacred writings, in 483 rejected formally the decisions of the councils of Ephesus and Chalcedon and deliberately espoused the teachings which Nestorius had championed. Its action is not surprising since the Christian communities in the region between the Euphrates and the Tigris had long been well disposed towards Nestorianism, not only in the area under the sovereignty of the Persian Sassanids, but also in Edessa, the modern Urfa, then under Roman control, where a famous theological school was the principal seat of Nestorian learning in the Roman Empire until the emperor Zeno closed it in 489. At another school, in Nisibis, subject to the Persians at this time, Theodore of Mopsuestia (d. 428), who was the originator of the doctrine of Nestorius, was held in extreme veneration. The result was that before the end of the fifth century the bishop of the Sassanid metropolis, Seleucia-Ctesiphon, declaring himself patriarch of the East, along with the whole Persian church entered into permanent schism from Rome.

While more than a century was passing, the Syriac Christians alternately suffered persecution and patronage from the priests of the state Zoroastrian cult, according as the political expedencies of the Sassanid kings dictated. Finally, when the Arabs, bringing Islam, conquered the whole region, many of the Persian Christians sought safety in flight. One party, led by the monk Olopên, escaped into China. This group in 635 established the community afterwards celebrated in the inscription on the Nestorian Monu-

ment at Hsi-an fu, then Ch'ung-an, the capital of the Tang dynasty. In 762 the patriarch of the East moved to Baghdad, which had been established as the seat of the more tolerant and enlightened Abassid caliphate. There the Nestorians enjoyed extraordinary favor from the Moslem rulers, and missions to China, traversing the land routes on either side of the Tien range, were probably quite numerous. The Nestorian Monument was erected nineteen years later (781) under the patriarchate of Hananishu.

#### PROPOSED TRANSLATIONS OF *san i fên shên*

##### 1. *Translations compatible with Catholic Doctrine, and rendering fên shên as a noun.*

We now return to the words *san i fên shên*. The oldest extant translation (of 1625), which has already been mentioned, is in Latin and is preserved in Rome. It is the work either of Father Nicolas Trigault (1577-1628), probably the first European to see the tablet, or of Father Jacques Rho (1593-1638), whose penmanship, if not authorship, is evidenced in the manuscript.<sup>2</sup> Here *fên shên* is taken as a single expression, a noun meaning "part," and *san i* as a compound noun meaning "Three and One," a reference to the Trinity. *San i* is rendered as an adjective phrase modifying *fên shên*. The passage as a whole reads: "Then behold, a part of our Three and One, the noble and great Messiah, hiding His true majesty, from one generation was born."<sup>3</sup>

Several other early translations exist. Among them the first printed one, in French, is of about a quarter of the total inscription. It appeared in 1628.<sup>4</sup> While the meaning it extracts from our sentence is essentially the same as that of the Trigault or Rho

<sup>2</sup> A. C. Moule, *Christians in China before the Year 1550*, London, 1930, pp. 34-34, footnote no. 10.

<sup>3</sup> Var. sin., No. 20, p. 67, last paragraph: "Tunc ecce nostri Trini et uni pars nobilis et magnus Messias, abscondita vera maiestate, ex una generatione natus est."

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, No. 12, pp. 325-327, footnote 3. Reference to: Inscription d'un marbre gravé l'an de N. S. 382 (782) en la province de Xansi au royaume de la Chine et découverte le 23<sup>e</sup> d'Août 1625 (in Advis certain d'une plus ample découverte du Royaume de Catal. Avec quelques autres particularités notables de la Coste de Cocincina et de l'Antiquité de la Foy chrestienne dans la Chine Tirées des lettres de PP. de la compagnie de Jésus de l'Année 1626, Paris, 1628, beginning with p. 20. Bibl. nat. 0<sup>e</sup> m. 31).

version, there are some differences in grammatical interpretation. *San* is read as an adjective modifying *fên shên*, and the whole expression *san fên shên* is related to *i* as an adjective phrase. Our sentence thus becomes: "Then One of three Persons called Messiah covered His true majesty, and making Himself a man, went into the world."<sup>5</sup>

The earliest complete printed translation, in Italian, appeared in Rome in 1631<sup>6</sup> and it renders *san i fên shên* as does the French version.<sup>7</sup>

If we cross the centuries, we come in modern times to a translation by a Japanese scholar, P. Yoshio Saeki (1881-), who follows the ancient renditions. For him *san* is a noun, "Trinity," and as an adjective phrase modifies *i fên shên*: "Of Trinity, one Person."<sup>8</sup>

The significant point about these early translations and that of Saeki is that they treat *fên* as part of a noun, and they represent unambiguously the words *san i fên shên* as a reference to the Logos who becomes incarnate. Nothing suggestive of the Nestorian heresy is in these renditions, in the sense that in Christ were two persons, a divine and a human. Nor is there any intimation of another doctrine, occasionally attributed to the Nestorians (not to Nestorius himself), that in the sufferer on the cross were all three Persons of the Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

## 2. *Translations compatible with Catholic Doctrine, rendering fên as a verb*

Another type of translation is compatible with Catholic dogma. An interesting example is in the work of the Jesuit father, Michel

<sup>5</sup> *Op. cit.*, No. 26, p. 73, article 26, 27: "Adonc une des trois personnes nommée Messia couvrit sa véritable Majesté et se faisant homme vint au monde."

<sup>6</sup> *Op. cit.*, No. 12, p. 43, footnote 1. Havret speaks of a copy at the library at Zi-ka-wai. The title is: *Dichiaratione di una pietra antica, scritta e scolpita con l'infrascritte lettere, ritrovata nel Regno della Cina*. It is bound in with the *Lettere annue del Giappone degl'anni MDCXXV, MDCXXVI, MDCXXVII, 1632*. Cordier (*Bibl. sin.*, col. 325) mentions a French translation.

<sup>7</sup> *Op. cit.*, No. 29, p. 79, article 3. "Alhora una Persona divina della Santissima Trinità, chiamata il Messia, restringendo e coprendo la sua Maestà, accomodandosi alla natura humana, si fece huomo."

<sup>8</sup> P. Y. Saeki, *The Nestorian Monument in China*, London, 1916, p. 163, line 24; p. 190, line 12.

Boym (1612-1659). Boym prepared a Latin version of our inscription for Father Athanasius Kircher (1602-1680), volcanologist, mathematician, Egyptologist, orientalist, and inventor of the stereopticon, who was anxious to prove the orthodoxy of the East Syriac Christians. Kircher printed Boym's translation with a paraphrase.<sup>9</sup> In this version there is a new interpretation. *Fên* is read as a verb, and *shên* as the reflexive object of this verb. Otherwise the translation does not differ basically from its predecessors. *San* is treated as an adjective phrase modifying *i*, and *i* is regarded as the subject of *fên*. The rendering is: "One of three Persons communicated Himself to the most brilliant and venerable Messiah . . . as a man He entered the world."<sup>10</sup>

Afterwards a Catholic apologetic writer and orientalist, Eusebius Renaudot (1648-1720), used this very Boym-Kircher translation to prove that the Syriac Christians at Ch'ang-an were guilty of the Nestorian heresy! In so doing he was the first scholar to suppose that the tablet contained an allusion to the peculiarly Nestorian conception. The fact is that the Boym version of the sentence, which states that one of three Persons communicated Himself to the Messiah, might imply the "indwelling" of the Logos in the man Jesus Christ as a separate divine self united loosely with the human self, which doctrine was traditionally regarded as the teaching of the Nestorians. The sentence, however, need not be interpreted this way, if read without preconceptions. The paraphrase, moreover, certainly does not have this shade of meaning. We are probably justified in asserting with Havret<sup>11</sup> that Renaudot's theory was not supported by the evidence he had, although this of itself does not necessarily imply that Renaudot's theory was incorrect. (See below Section 3.)

Shortly after the appearance of Boym-Kircher version, Father Joseph Henri de Prémare (1666-1736) suggested that *fên* is a

<sup>9</sup> *Athanasii Kircheri e Soc. Jesu China monumentis, quâ sacris quâ profanis, nec non variis naturæ & artis spectaculis, aliarumque rerum memorabilium argumentis illustrata*, Amstelodami . . . 1667, pp. 22-28.

<sup>10</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 23, col. 1, line 13: "Personarum trium una communicavit seipsam clarissimo venerabilissimoque Mixio . . . simul homo prodit in sæculum." The paraphrase (p. 29, paragraph III) runs: "Tunc una de Divinis personis sanctissimæ Trinitatis dicta Messias restringendo legendoque Majestatem suam, & se humanæ naturæ accommodando homo factus est." Cf. *Ver. sin.*, No. 20, p. 36, starting with 6th line.

<sup>11</sup> *Ver. sin.*, No. 20, p. 36, paragraph 2.

transitive verb and *shên* its object, but not grammatically reflexive. The subject of *fên*, instead of being *i*, is *san i* taken together as "Threefold Unity," an allusion to the idea that although in the Godhead are three Persons they constitute one Substance. Our passage would then read: "Threefold Unity separated off a Person. . . ." <sup>12</sup>

James Legge gives the same rendering. He remarks: "I must take *fên shên* actively as expressing the act of the Tri-une." His version, accordingly, is: "Hereupon our Tri-une (Eloah) divided His Godhead, and the illustrious and admirable Messiah, veiling His true majesty, appeared in the world as a man."<sup>13</sup> He continues: "The peculiar dogma of Nestorius underlies the expression . . . the dogma of two persons in Christ. . . ." What Legge means by this remark is not clear, but possibly the passage suggests to him, as it did to Renaudot, the idea of the "indwelling" in the man Jesus Christ of the Logos. Elsewhere Legge says that at the place in the tablet where an unambiguous reference to the East Syriac Christology would naturally have been expected (*fên shên*) "the great crux of the Nestorian doctrine was avoided, and very wisely avoided by those who composed the Inscription."<sup>14</sup>

The translation of Father Henri Havret belongs to this second type. He gives a reason for rendering *san* and *i* together as "Threefold Unity" or "Trinity." The author of the inscription, he says, used an expression already found in the native Chinese histories, although without the distinctive Christian flavor. He points to an example in the *Shih chi*, and defends his interpretation of this example by another example from the K'ang-hsi dictionary.<sup>15</sup>

Of more interest for our purpose is Havret's reason for reading *fên shên* as a verb. The expression means, he says, "was, as it were, multiplied," and the words, with this signification, were in common use among the Buddhists, for whom they were an allusion to a process also known among the ancient Catholic Fathers, "multilocation," the supernatural presence of a body or spirit at

<sup>12</sup> *Op. cit.*, No. 20, p. 37, beginning with line 17: ". . . notre Unité Trine sépara une personne, afin qu'elle fût l'adorable Messie et . . . qu'elle naquit semblable aux hommes." Havret refers to: *Lettres édifiantes*, éd. Aimé-Martin, Tom. III, p. 584.

<sup>13</sup> J. Legge, *The Nestorian Monument at Hsi-an Fu*, London, 1888, p. 5.

<sup>14</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 42.

<sup>15</sup> *For. sin.*, No. 20, p. 15, last paragraph and footnote.

different places at the same time.<sup>16</sup> Our four words Havret translates; "Trinity was, as it were, multiplied"—then the rest of the sentence: "the illustrious and venerable Messiah, veiling and hiding. . . . [etc.]"<sup>17</sup>

One more example of this second style of translation is that of a recent Chinese scholar, Ignatius Ying-ki. Ying-ki sees in the passage a meaning too perfectly in accord with Catholic teaching. "It was then," he reads, "that our Messiah, who is a person proceeding forth from the Trinity and who is the object of the veneration of the Luminous (i. e. Religion), having concealed His true majesty, became man and entered this world."<sup>18</sup>

### 3. *Translations not compatible with Catholic Doctrine, rendering shên as a participial adjective*

The third and final type of translation differs radically from everything which has preceded, not only in respect of the grammatical interpretation of *san i fên shên*, but especially in regard to the meaning extracted. Alexander Wylie offers two translations, one less, the other more, literal. In the former, *fên* is taken as a participial adjective meaning "divided" and modifying *san i*, or rather standing to *san i* in the relation of attribute complement to subject; *shên* is an adverbial phrase qualifying *fên*. The less literal translation as a whole is: "Trinity being divided in nature, the illustrious and honorable Messiah. . . . [etc.]"<sup>19</sup>

At first this version does not appear to differ from that of Legge or Havret; but in the more literal rendering, although *shên* remains an adverbial phrase modifying *fên*, *san i*, taken together, and *fên* both qualify "Messiah": "Our Triune, Divided-in-nature, Illustrious and Honorable Messiah."<sup>20</sup> In this rendering the meaning is commendably unambiguous and precise. It is explicitly

<sup>16</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 38 (last paragraph) 39.

<sup>17</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 35, small type at head of text: "Cependant notre Trinité s'est comme multipliée, l'illustre et vénérable Messie, voilant et cachant son auguste majesté, se rendant tout semblable aux hommes, est venu en ce monde."

<sup>18</sup> "A New English Translation of the Nestorian Tablet," *Bulletin of the Catholic University of Peking*, No. 5, Oct., 1928, p. 91 f.

<sup>19</sup> A. Wylie, "On the Nestorian Tablet of Se-gan Foo," *JAOS* 6 (1856), 281, line 10 (reprinted from the *North China Herald*, No. 283, Dec. 20, 1855).

<sup>20</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 325, line 28.



stated that the Messiah is "divided-in-nature," by which Wylie intends to express the idea of the two persons in Christ, divine and human, attributed to the Nestorians. But he is confused in his theology, since he says "nature" instead of "person," whereas the orthodox Catholic view was, and is, that Christ was divided in nature. Furthermore, the notion, which we have mentioned once before, that for the Nestorians the sufferer on the cross was identical with all three Persons of the Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, is implied, though not explicitly stated, for strictly speaking in the Nestorian inscription no mention of the Crucifixion occurs. Wylie's rendering, thus, certainly is not compatible with Catholic doctrine.

The interpretation of *fên shên* by Édouard Chavannes and Paul Pelliot falls into this third group. Their argument for treating *fên* as a participial adjective modifying *shên* is, first, that in a Manichaean text the expression 五分明身 *wu fên ming shên* occurs, which in its context plainly means "five divided luminous bodies."<sup>21</sup> While it is not clear why this parallel should be decisive and the Buddhistic parallel of Havret should not be, their second argument leaves no room for doubt. It is that previously in the Nestorian inscription itself is the passage: 我三一妙身 *wo san i miao shên*,<sup>22</sup> which cannot mean anything other than "the mysterious body (or person) of our *san i*," and since the parallel construction is common in old Chinese, it is inevitable that the *fên shên*, being parallel with *miao shên*, should read, "the divided body." Chavannes and Pelliot render our passage: "The divided body of our Threefold Unity, the brilliant and venerable Messiah."<sup>23</sup> These two authors, accordingly, attach a Nestorian value to the words *fên shên*, and again, like Wylie, they see in the words an allusion to what could be construed as patripassianism, if there were any mention of the Crucifixion in our tablet.

The most recent translation which has yet appeared is that of Arthur Christopher Moule. He follows Chavannes and Pelliot.<sup>24</sup>

<sup>21</sup> E. Chavannes and P. Pelliot, "Un Traité Manichéen retrouvé en Chine," *JA* 10<sup>e</sup> sér., Vol. 18, 1911, p. 313, footnote.

<sup>22</sup> *Var. sin.*, No. 7, Table xvi, col. 4, to table xvii, col. 1.

<sup>23</sup> *Un Traité Man.*, p. 314, "le corps divisé de notre Unité trine, le brillant et vénérable Messie."

<sup>24</sup> A. C. Moule, *Christians in China before the Year 1550*, London, 1930, p. 38, last paragraph.

## CONCLUSION

We may be convinced, in view of the parallel between *wo san i miao shên* and *wo san i fên shên* pointed out by Chavannes and Pelliot, that the *fên shên* in the latter expression should be read "the divided person," and that the passage therefore really contains a reference to the Nestorian doctrine of the two persons, divine and human, in Christ. We may object, however, to the further implication of the Wylie-Chavannes-Pelliot rendering, that the "divided person" was the divided person of the "Threenfold Unity"—in other words that Christ was the whole Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. Our objection might be for two reasons: first, that this idea must result in patripassianism, as soon as the Christ is pictured as suffering, an idea which has not commonly been associated with Nestorianism; and second, that the implication of patripassianism can easily be avoided, simply if the "in" in "Three in One" be changed to "is." If this change were made, the Chavannes-Pelliot translation would read: "The divided person of our 'One of Three,' namely, of the Son, who is one of the three Persons of the Trinity. The Nestorianism would still remain in the more usual acceptation of the term, but the added allegation of what, to the orthodox Christian, must seem a vastly more intolerable distortion of doctrine, would vanish.

This alternative reading, however, will lead us off on the wrong path, for we have evidence from elsewhere that the Nestorians, and particularly the Nestorians who wandered eastward from Persia in the latter part of the eighth and the ninth century, spoke in terms of patripassianism. For this evidence we must travel from Hsi-an to St. Thomas's Mount, near Madras, in southeast India. There an inscription on a cross discovered in 1547 contains the following words, according to the translation of Arthur Coke Burnell: [In Syriac] "Let me not glory except in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ"; [in Pahlavi] "Who is the true Messiah and God above and Holy Ghost."<sup>25</sup> Here we certainly have the same identification of Christ with the other two Persons of the Trinity which we found suggested by the Wylie-Chavannes-Pelliot rendering of the passage on the monument at Hsi-an fu, and if previously we had doubts about the patripassianism of the East Syriac Christians,

<sup>25</sup> A. C. Burnell, "On some Pahlavi inscriptions in South India" (reprinted with additions), *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. 3, 1874, p. 314.

we can entertain them no longer. Athelstan Riley, in the article about Nestorians in the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* (11-th ed.), not only speaks of the "semi-patipassianism" in the Indian inscriptions (he refers to an earlier translation of Burnell), but of the semi-patipassianism "which marked the Nestorian teaching."

Riley is conservative, using the term *semi-patipassianism* and speaking only of *apparent* identification of the sufferer on the cross with the three Persons of the Trinity. In this his instinct is sound. The Nestorians, who wished to emphasize the presence of a divine as well as human person in Christ, could have used simply the language of patipassianism for rhetorical purposes, to make emphatic to the utmost the full significance of their attribution of divinity to Christ. They need not have held literally, as an article of theological dogma, that the first Person of the Trinity suffered with the incarnate Logos on the cross.<sup>26</sup>

One point remains to be mentioned. In view of the doubts which have been cast on the justness of Nestorians' condemnation, since the re-appearance in the west of his *Book of Heraclides*, is it accurate to translate *fên shên* as "divided person"? Could Wylie have accidentally been correct in reading "divided in nature"? Venance Grumel,<sup>27</sup> in a study in the theology of Babai the Great Patriarch of the East from about 500 until 628 (thus until within seven years of the time when Olopên and his group started for China), claims that, although in their own technical vocabulary the East Syriac Christians did indeed, like the Catholics, say that in Christ are two natures and one person, they meant by "nature" precisely what the Catholics meant by "person." Perhaps the wise course, until scholars agree on what the Nestorians meant, is to translate *fên shên* as "divided hypostasis," or "divided *qnāmê* (the Syriac equivalent for hypostasis)." What "divided *qnāmê*" means could be left for the students of East Syriac Christian doctrine to determine.

<sup>26</sup> Burnell says (*op. cit.*, p. 314): "This statement appears to be intended to contradict the Manichaean doctrine that the crucified Messiah was the son of a poor widow, and not Jesus." One must confess to some bewilderment at the attitude of the Nestorians. In India they were anxious to insist that the crucified Messiah was God, in the fullest sense of the term. In Europe, on the other hand, they objected to the Catholic idea that God was born of a woman, and took pains to avoid what seemed to them a blasphemy by positing the dual personality of Christ.

<sup>27</sup> V. Grumel, "Un Théologien Nestorien, Babai le Grand," *Échos d'Orient*, Constantinople, beginning with 26th yr., no. 130, April-June, 1923, p. 163

NOTES ON THE ARAMAIC CONTRACT PUBLISHED  
BY BAUER AND MEISSNER<sup>1</sup>

CHARLES C. TORREY  
YALE UNIVERSITY

THE FOLLOWING notes were originally intended to be sent to Professor Bauer, but were laid aside because of his untimely death in March, 1937. It is in expanded form that they are now offered for publication.

The document, in 19 lines, is written on the two sides of a badly damaged sheet of papyrus. The script is generally legible where it is preserved, but the interpretation is difficult at many points. The editors have deciphered and explained the document so admirably and so completely that it is almost impossible to add any useful comment. The publication includes two photographed plates and a table showing the very interesting forms of the letters.

1. The contract concerns a lease of land under cultivation in the vicinity of Memphis.<sup>2</sup> The main features of the transaction are clearly set forth, but a few minor difficulties remain. The two technical terms in line 15 present an especially interesting problem. The one, deciphered by the editors as either פססס or פססס, denotes gain of some sort accruing to (?) the lessee of the field; the other, read as either חרר or צר, denotes loss of some sort falling upon (?) the owner. The editors saw in the former word nothing Semitic and rendered it doubtfully by "Extrasgabe(?)," referring to the (apparent) occurrence of the same word in line 12, where a preliminary payment of two shekels is recorded. For the other word the equally doubtful rendering "Schuld(?)" is proposed.

I would offer the reading פססס, which, *as far as the photograph can show*, is preferable to either of those proposed. Every portion of the פ can be seen, and the form is in all respects typical. The long vertical line which runs across it does not look like ז; it is

<sup>1</sup> *Ein Aramäischer Pachtvertrag aus dem 7. Jahre Darius I.* Von Hans Bauer und Bruno Meissner, *Sitzungsber. der Preuss. Akad. der Wiss.*, Berlin, 1936, pp. 414-24, with two plates.

<sup>2</sup> The editors read the name as חז, but the shaft of the first letter (the head is missing) suggests rather ח; compare the example two lines below. May it not even be possible to read חזחז, by supposing the stem of a ח to have been destroyed by the crack in the papyrus?

probably a mere smudge, as the editors regarded it when they proposed † as the final consonant. What is more important, the reading as *nun* ignores the stroke which appears plainly just after the **נ**. **נננ** (evidently a conventional term) is good Aramaic, however it may be interpreted, and a good example of an Aramaic compound. It might be noun with attributive adjective, meaning simply "agreement" (cf. **ננ** **ננ**, etc.); or even abbreviation of the phrase **ננ** **ננ** **ננ**, "according as it prospers," which might naturally apply to this variety of speculation, in which the success of the venture is largely dependent on the unpredictable forces of nature. The term would then have some such meaning as "favorable agreement" or "promising venture."

The other term, corresponding antithetically to **נננ**, is certainly written **ננ**, not **ננ**. The whole word is very distinct on the papyrus, with no sign of fading or erasure, and the first letter is a typical **נ**. The stroke on the right ends clearly below, just as the reed pen finished it. The doubtfully supposed "Biegung nach links" is the discoloration of the papyrus which appears in precisely the same form before the foot of the next-following letter, the **ל**. The root **ננ** is well attested in Syriac, but has not hitherto been found in Western Aramaic. The best illustration is from the Arabic, in which several stems and derivatives of the root denote misfortune, disaster, calamity, etc. The Syriac verb, with the meaning "approach, arrive, meet," stands close to the Arabic, "befall, reach, hit," and it is easy to see how the Aramaic **ננ** came to designate an ill turn of fortune.

Note that in line 15, **ננ** **ננ** **ננ**, the two nouns are in the *absolute state*, not definite. This is a contract according to which the resulting crop of grain<sup>2</sup> is to be shared equally by owner and lessee. Is the latter here guaranteed against eventual loss: "You have a fair bargain, and any loss (catastrophe) falls on me"? The text in line 12, where the payment of 2 shekels is mentioned, **ננ** **ננ** **ננ**, is almost certain; and the unknown word seems here to mean "contract *for*," the 2 shekels

<sup>2</sup> The variety of grain is specified, but the reading is uncertain. The editors read **ננ** (constr. plur.) in line 6, but have no explanation of the word. Is not the true reading **ננ** in line 6, and **ננ** in line 13? The scribal error in the former case, the extra **נ**, is very easily accounted for; **נ** and **נ**, in this alphabet, may be practically identical; and "barley" is the grain by far most often mentioned in the Egyptian papyri.

sealing the bargain; but the explanation of the technical terms in the two lines must be left to those who are more familiar than I with such transactions.

2. The editors of the document hesitate strangely over the word **ܬܡܬܐ** at the end of line 5. They render, with a query, "in richtiger Weise(?)," and say of the word that its form is "nicht ganz klar; vermutlich wird es eine femininische Form im Stat. absol. sein, wofür im Syrischen dann ein scheinbarer Stat. constr. eintritt," etc. (p. 418). But this is merely an unexpected example of the typical Aramaic adverb (which the grammarians have been slow to give its full due), namely the fem. absol. form of the adjective. There are similar examples in Biblical Aramaic, thus in Dan.: **עלם, ארעא, יתירח, יציבא, עלם**; also in the Elephantine papyri: **עלם, יתירא, כותא**,<sup>4</sup> **כלם** (1).

An important further example, if I am not mistaken, is to be found in the word **ܬܡܬܐ** (recognized as an adverb) at the end of the second line of the Carpentras Aramaic inscription (CIS, 141). After reviewing the former conjectures, including my own published in this *JAOS* 46 (1926). 241-247, it seems to me extremely probable that the word is to be read as **ܬܡܬܐ**, the adverbial form of the adjective **ܬܡܐ**, "complete," an adjective almost unrecognized hitherto in Aramaic, though well known in Hebrew. The phrase in the inscription, **ܬܡܬܐ . . . ܐܠ**, means in any case "not at all." The fem. n. pr. **ܬܡܬܐ**, Tammâ, frequently occurring in Palmyrene inscriptions, must exemplify this same adjective, as already conjectured by Lidzbarski, *Handbuch*, p. 386. (Even the longer form of the adjective, **ܬܡܝܬܐ**, appears to have been little used in Western Aramaic.)

The great majority of the Syriac adverbs are likewise feminine adjectives in form, though here the absol. ending is with the consonant *t*.

3. The phrase "in the city Memphis," in line 3, contains the reading **ܒܩܪܝܗ**, in which the final **ܗ** is regarded by the editors as certain ("scheint sicher zu sein," p. 7, footnote). If this may be accepted as the original reading, it gives us an important example, apparently unique, of a form which we had already had reason to postulate. A scribal error at just this point is unlikely; and besides, there is good ground for believing that the form **ܩܪܝܗ**, meaning "the city," represents some genuine early usage.

<sup>4</sup> See the article by J. A. Montgomery, *JAOS* 43 (1923), 391 ff.



This feminine noun is truly protean in its various Semitic forms; see especially Nöldeke, *Beitr. zur sem. Sprachwissenschaft*, 51 f., and *Neue Beiträge*, 131 f. An early Aram. form of the stat. absol. sing. is קרי, which appears in the Targums in distributive expressions, e. g. Is. 19:2, קרי בקרי, "city against city." This implies at least an occasional use of קריא (or קריה) as the stat. emph., "the city"; whether this was ever the regular Aram. use, or even a legitimate use, is immaterial. The form קרי went out of circulation (except in the distributive repetition) at an early date; and all through the later history of this noun the tendency to attach the fem. ending to an original collective plural, or to add a plural termination, is in evidence. It is not difficult to believe that at the time when this document was written (6th century B. C.) קריה, the form found here, was still surviving as stat. emph. sing., and we probably shall do well to accept it.

In the Elephantine papyri, the word occurs only in the phrase בעל קריה, "free citizen," here evidently stat. abs. sing., like קריא in Ezr. 4:15.

In this connection, it may be well to call attention to the much misunderstood קריה in Ezr. 4:10, as another illustration of the occasional survival of early forms of this noun. The word has been badly treated on almost all hands. The English Revised Version renders בקריה די שומרון "in the city of Samaria"—as though recognizing an example of the form found in our Egyptian papyrus! Siegfried, in Nowack's *Handkommentar*, translates in the same way. The Brown-Driver-Briggs *Lexicon* declares the word to be abs. sing.—quite impossible in this context, for the plural number is evidently required (see 2 Kings 17:24, 26), and thus the ancient versions all render. According to Kittel's *Biblia Hebraica*, 3rd. ed. (and so previously the *Handwörterbuch* of Gesenius-Buhl), the Greek of Esdr. β indicates the reading קריה. This is not the case, however; the Grk. reads ἐν πόλεσιν τῆς Σαμαρίας not ἐν ταῖς πόλεσιν. That which the context in fact requires here is an undetermined plural: "in (various) cities of (the province of) Samaria." In view of Theodotion's<sup>2</sup> habit of exact translation, and

<sup>2</sup> For the proof that the canonical Greek version of Chron.-Ezra-Neh. is the work of Theodotion, I may refer to *Ezra Studies*, pp. 60-82. The way in which he sticks closely to his original is illustrated in this passage by the transliteration Σαμαρειας, where any ordinary translator would have written Σαμαρειας.



the occurrence of 𐤒𐤓𐤕 in vs. 15 as the stat. abs. sing., the probability becomes very strong that we have here the old collective plural, *qōryā*, familiar in Syriac and postulated by the best authorities for the oldest Western Aramaic.

Even if the form in Ezra 4:10 stood quite alone, there would hardly be justification for abandoning the Massoretic text. We know, however, that the form remained in regular use among the next-door neighbors of the Jews of Palestine at least as late as the second century A. D. The bilingual *Tariff of Palmyra* furnishes the important example. For the following references, see Lidzbarski, *Handbuch*, I, 468, 473; Cooke, *Text-Book of North Semitic Inscriptions*, 319, 329.

The Greek text in IV, a, 49 ff. reads as follows: τοὺς δὲ εἰς χωρία ἢ ἀπὸ τῶν χωρίων κατακομίζοντας ἀνελαις εἶναι, ὡς καὶ συνεφώνησεν αὐτοῖς, "Whoever exports to villages or imports from them is not liable to a tax, as also they agreed." The corresponding Aramaic in II, c, 13 f. reads: 𐤓 𐤓𐤕 𐤕𐤒𐤓𐤕 𐤀 𐤓𐤕 𐤕𐤒𐤓𐤕 𐤓𐤕 𐤕𐤒𐤓𐤕 𐤕𐤒𐤓𐤕 𐤕𐤒𐤓𐤕, agreeing exactly with the Greek. Here, beyond question, is the absol. (indefinite) plur. 𐤕𐤒𐤓𐤕, the same form which the Syriac would have used; and we may without hesitation read 𐤕𐤒𐤓𐤕 in Ezra 4:10, as was proposed in *Ezra Studies* (1910), p. 186. The definite singular, which appears frequently in the Aramaic of Ezra, is 𐤕𐤒𐤓𐤕, and the def. plur., if it occurred in Bibl. Aram., would have been 𐤕𐤒𐤓𐤕.

Thus certainly in Ezra 4:10, and probably in our papyrus of the year 515 B. C., we see the survival of old Aramaic forms of unusual interest. There is gain here for the grammars and dictionaries of the language.

## NOTES OF THE SOCIETY

## LUNCHEON OF THE ISLAMIC GROUP

In connection with the meeting of the American Oriental Society, a group interested in Islamic studies met for luncheon in the Normandie Hotel, Philadelphia, on April 21st, 1938, at 1 p. m. The following were present:

Albright, W. F.	Johns Hopkins University
Brown, W. N.	University of Pennsylvania
Calverley, E. E.	Editor, <i>Moslem World</i> , Hartford, Conn.
Paris, N. A.	Princeton University
Glidden, H. W.	Institute for Advanced Study, Princeton, N. J.
Gordon, C. H.	Johns Hopkins University
Hardy, E. J., Jr.	General Theological Seminary, New York City
Jurji, E. J.	Institute for Advanced Study, Princeton, N. J.
Hitti, P. K.	Princeton University
Lybyer, A. H.	University of Illinois
Lichtenstädter, Miss	Society of Oxford Home Students
Montgomery, J. A.	University of Pennsylvania
Matthews, L. G.	Crozer Theological Seminary
Nathan, E. J.	Monterrey, Mexico
Obermann, J. J.	Yale University
Santesson, H. S.	New York City
Simsar, M. A.	Proc Library, Philadelphia
Smith, M. B.	Library of Congress
Stinespring, W. F.	Duke University
Wolfe, R. E.	Tufts College

Professor Hitti was asked to take the chair and Professor Matthews was asked to act as recording secretary. At the close of luncheon, Dr. Hitti introduced the question of finding ways and means for the promotion of Arabic and Islamic studies in America. A lively discussion followed in which Albright, Montgomery, Stinespring, Obermann, Lybyer, Nathan, Glidden, Simsar, Calverley, and Santesson took part. It was stated that while in several universities some attention was given to Arabic and other Islamic studies, it was necessary to develop centers for such studies which should include Turkish and Persian. The value of Arabic for students of Romance languages, medieval and Byzantine history, art, and comparative religions, also for the history of philosophy as well as for the history of science, was emphasized. It was further suggested that steps be taken in collaboration with the American Council of Learned Societies to arrange for lecturers who could visit the various universities that might be interested and present publicly as well as individually the claim of such studies on the curriculum.

A resolution was adopted to the effect that those interested constitute themselves a committee within the American Oriental Society, for pro-

motion of Arabic and Islamic studies, both as subject of instruction at colleges and universities and as subject of research and scientific publications; and that Professor Hitti be asked to act as the chairman, and Professor Obermann as the secretary, of that Committee.

---

## NOTES OF OTHER SOCIETIES

---

The University of Michigan announces the second season of its Institute of Far Eastern Studies to be held at Ann Arbor, June 27-August 19, 1938. Courses will be offered in the Chinese, Japanese, and Russian languages, and in Far Eastern civilizations. All inquiries should be addressed to the Director, Professor Robert B. Hall, 11 Angel Hall, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Michigan.

---

The first number of a new magazine on the Far East appeared in January. It is *Leaves from a Western Garden*, edited by Helen B. Chapin, of the faculty of Mills College, California. The first number contains some interesting material, all of it apparently by the editor.

---

The American Council of Learned Societies expects to continue in 1938 assistance to the publication of a limited number of meritorious works in the field of the humanities written by American scholars. It invites its constituent societies to propose books they deem suitable for assistance, but reserves the right to consider works submitted by others if the Executive Committee has accepted them for consideration.

Works proposed for publication should ordinarily be complete in themselves, preferably the results of constructive research presented in the form of volumes of conventional size. Important books of reference and critical editions of valuable texts may also be submitted. Applications for aid in the publication of doctoral dissertations will not be considered save in exceptional cases. It is expected that few dissertations, in the form in which they are presented in candidacy for the degree, will be approved by the committees of the constituent societies and by the jury.

Plans for the manufacture, publication, and distribution of each assisted work, and for the disposition of any proceeds, must be approved by the Executive Committee.

Applications for the next awards of grants in aid of publication, on forms provided for the purpose, must be received in the Executive Offices of the Council, 907 Fifteenth Street, N. W., Washington, D. C., on or before November 1, 1938. Applications must include descriptions and critical appraisals of the works proposed, together with full manufacturing specifications and estimates of cost. No work can be considered of which the manuscript is not available for examination in completed form.

This announcement supersedes that of January 15, 1938.

The American Council of Learned Societies is prepared to extend assistance, through the Committee on Research and Publication in the Fine Arts, in the publication of a limited number of meritorious works in the fine arts by American scholars.

Works proposed for publication should be complete in themselves. Preferably they should be the results of constructive research in the history or the theory of the fine arts; but this does not exclude the consideration of works whose appeal is to the general reader as well as to scholars.

Plans for the manufacture, publication, and distribution of each assisted work, and for the disposition of proceeds, must be approved by the Committee on Research and Publication in the Fine Arts. Ordinarily the subventions are intended as partial contributions toward the cost of publication of works, a definite demand or need for which is indicated by a willingness on the part of publishers or other persons to assume a certain risk, rather than as complete subsidies.

Applications for grants in aid of publication, on forms provided for the purpose, should be received in the Executive Offices of the Council, 907 Fifteenth Street, Washington, D. C., on or before November 1, 1938, to be acted upon in December. Applications will include descriptions and critical appraisals of the works proposed, together with manufacturing specifications and estimates of cost, including illustrations. No work can be considered of which the text is not available for examination in completed form ready for publication.

This announcement supersedes all earlier announcements.

Washington, D. C.,

June 1, 1938.

The following communication has been received and is reprinted here verbatim:

Deutsche Orient-Gesellschaft  
Eingetragener Verein

Der Schriftführer  
Prof. Dr. W. Andrae

Berlin-Nikolassee  
Cimbernstr. 4

Fernsprecher 80 58 61

Den 25. Mai 1938

*An die Mitglieder der Deutschen Orient-Gesellschaft.*

Um den Fortbestand der Deutschen Orient-Gesellschaft zu sichern, muss der Arbeitsausschuss gemäß § 8 Absatz d der Satzungen denjenigen Mitgliedern, die im Sinne der Nürnberger Gesetze als Juden gelten, nahelegen, binnen 14 Tagen ihren Austritt aus der Deutschen Orient-Gesellschaft zu erklären.

Der Arbeitsausschuss der Deutschen Orient-Gesellschaft

gez. Dr. F. Schmidt-Ott  
Stellv. Vorsitzender  
gez. Dr. W. Andrae  
Schriftführer

## ORIENTAL STUDIES IN THE PRESENT WORLD PICTURE\*

LEROY WATERMAN  
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Emphasis upon the larger significance of Oriental studies is a matter of more than academic interest today, and is in line with a trend of thought to be found in other scholarly associations, notably the physical science groups, which are already fully conscious of a relationship of physical science to society as a whole, and have for some considerable time in Britain<sup>1</sup> and more recently in America been thinking in terms of a world picture of science and its responsibility to mankind.

Certain conditions in the present world tend to make such evaluations more or less inevitable, calling for reappraisal of human effort in many directions, with ever lessening assurance that because a thing has been, its continuance is therefore to be relied on.

We live in an age approaching apocalyptic expectancy. It is a dictum of the historian<sup>2</sup> that the ancient Greeks and Romans conceived of humanity not universally but only in terms of nationalities. It was accordingly an Oriental philosophy that gave to the West its first world outlook, appraising the world not as an asset to be treasured, but an absolute liability soon to liquidated by Divine fiat.

The western nations, having inherited this view as a kind of sacred philosophy, have at the same time gradually come to make one of their major objectives the possession of as much as possible of these doomed resources of the world. A measure of success in so doing, plus the scientific exploitation of resources in hand have largely dispelled that earlier view. The world can be regarded as good, indeed as excellent, if one can only get possession of enough of it. This idea has never suggested the remaking or improvement of the world in any significant particular, but only its possession,

---

\* Presidential address delivered at the Society's Annual Meeting, Philadelphia, April 19, 1938.

<sup>1</sup> James H. Jeans Presidential Address, Report of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, 1934, 1-16 ff.

<sup>2</sup> H. Steinthal, *Geschichte der Sprachwissenschaft bei den Griechen und Römern*, pp. 7, 12.

an achievement that has always presumed a large amount of the dispossession of others.

Such is the dominant working philosophy of the Occident, with ardent imitators in the rest of the four quarters. Its ultimate success on any large scale would require that there be only a few, perhaps as few as two or three large units seeking possession, and all the rest of mankind fairly well content to be dispossessed. But if the world should be broken up into numerous major groups in such a way that each one should have this same acquisitive urge, regardless of its presence in others, and if each in order to retain its present holdings, as well as to acquire more, should be enabled by means of applied science to unleash ever vaster forces and instrumentalities for the wholesale destruction of all opposers, then the age of apocalyptic expectation would be bound to return. These conditions having been met, it is not too much to assert that it has already returned.

With such disturbing prospects before the larger human units, how fares the individual in this picture? For still in many quarters, the individual does count, or at least so believes. In the past, personal interest in the larger world has usually meant concern about human affairs and peoples so remote as to be regarded as wholly external to the life of the individual, whether as moved to lend succor to those in need or even more often, perhaps, to thank God he is not as other men.

As a result of present world conditions a striking change is taking place in this feeling of smug insularity. A directly contrary note touched by universal social implications more nearly expresses a widespread and growing attitude. It has been recently said: "Never was a species more perilously poised than ours at the present time." The prospect of any sure salvation in human affairs for a chosen few is more and more recognized to be an illusion, but while all experience is seen to have a bearing on the outcome, there is as yet no effective means in sight to assure our generation against apocalyptic catastrophe, not by Divine fiat, but through the deliberate choices and instrumentalities of men.

As a group, ours, in the main, is the double responsibility of recovering and specifically identifying, in space and time, the lost and forgotten minutiae, found in a certain area of man's higher cultural life, and at the same time of seeing them as coherent parts of a larger whole.

These minutiae, coming from the niches of individual investigation, yield an ever increasing volume, so ramifying in range and extent, so far flung and diverse that no man can correlate them all. Yet without organization they are meaningless, mere flotsam and jetsam of past experience. Their coordination and integration are as essential as the minutiae, and a necessary test of the genuineness of the latter and their ability to convey truth. Such data are like the electrons that constitute the atom of oxygen, if one is separated from the whole, we are told, it is no longer even an electron.

It is similar with the integrations themselves. They are in a measure tentative and provisional. Their true significance and appraisal are in turn put to the test by the place they take in larger wholes.

The largest unity that can be formulated when all the available parts have been assembled, though still incomplete, should nevertheless show the kind of an entity that is at present being formed. In it the values, the goals, and the significance of the whole as now grasped should appear, though not too precisely or absolutely stated, since scientific thought has recently taken great pains to affirm what the Orientalist has generally assumed, namely, that we are a part of a mysterious and unfathomed universe. There are however times and circumstances when certain accumulations of data, in favorable perspective, yield comprehensive visions of a larger whole that are exceptionally striking and greatly inspiring. These must always be cherished and perpetuated like all true glimpses of great realities, since such moments and such combinations cannot be produced at will. Nevertheless the need for renewed grasps of a rapidly developing field of knowledge in a swiftly changing world is sufficiently insistent to assure frequent efforts to gain them, even as this is regularly occurring for the smaller units.<sup>2</sup>

From time to time the insight of outstanding leaders like a Salisbury, a Whitney, or a Breasted have given new meaning to the whole picture of our Oriental studies. This was perhaps preeminently true of the last named, in no small measure because of the splendid implementation which he was able to give to his ideas.

---

<sup>2</sup> Superbly illustrated by the current publication of The Haverford Symposium on Archaeology and the Bible.



It was one thing to admit that the religious ideologies of the west and much of its higher culture had come from the east. It was quite another to realize that this inheritance was but a climax of a larger civilization, which covered the farthest connected bourne of the history of the higher life of man, and led at the same time directly onward to our own day. Something of deeper kinship of the spirit, of solidarity and upward thrust of experience was here, that went far beyond mere physical or racial ties and has given to the concept of our humanity a breadth of outlook, a depth of meaning, and a panorama of unfoldment, that have added immeasurably to the sense of dignity, achievement, and the inherent potentiality of man.

Nor can we overlook the far reaching effect of that enlarged perspective upon those religious ideals that were the first incentive to western orientation. Traditionally they seemed to spring forth mechanically at certain points without regard to the life process and were scarcely saved from further detachment by being labelled divine. The drawing back of the time curtain and the prolongation of connected history have had the effect of naturalizing those idealisms as a product of the life stream, so as to permit us to see them as resting upon and growing out of a vast substratum of accumulated human experience. At such points we pass beyond the range of Oriental studies to a glimpse of their relationship to the whole of man's higher life. There has thus emerged the task of a kind of planned humanity of the past, which falls quite largely within the scope of Oriental studies. If the framing of the idea was imposing and inspiring in itself, there is a better right to expect even more from its actual reconstruction in detail, for to begin with and until more recently the gaps and uncertainties were such as seriously to challenge both the unity of the whole and consequently many sequences in those very items that were more nearly understood.

At the outset Oriental studies could be likened to isolated points of light in a vast obscurity. They may more properly be described today as a connected fabric gradually unfolding the patterns of man's measured experience on the time loom, apparently turning biologic time backward and never more swiftly than in the immediate past.

One of the most fascinating factors in this process is the pottery

time shuttle. Of all the worn out and cast off equipment of early man's life, discarded pottery is apparently the most worthless and useless, yet as is well known, when all other data and available clues fail, the lowly potsherd furnishes the surest and most unfailing source of time sequence and cultural spread. And as if to make doubly sure that far off future ages should not be able to lose sight of this indispensable guide, the makers of the marvelous polychrome pottery, of the fourth millennium *B. C.*, spread its warm colors across the world from the Syrian coast to the Indus valley, and within a decade the realization of this fact has changed the whole time perspective of the near and middle East.\* More particularly, with its help has the last season's work at Tepe Gawra, under joint auspices of the American Schools and the University Museum of this city, and led by Dr. E. A. Speiser, clarified the chronology to the beginning of the fourth millennium *B. C.*, and with the aid of monochrome wares beneath, pointed the way well into the fifth. But what is even more striking and significant are the accompanying remains of the acropolis in stratum XIII, with its intricate and highly artistic religious architecture, viz., its red, white, and purple temples, which were apparently even more richly spread with color within than without, thus showing the same artistic feeling for color exhibited in the pottery and revealing a higher cultural development, commensurate with the evidence from the pottery, but wholly unsuspected hitherto. However little uniform or unified that culture may have been, when compared with the uniformity of the pottery (a thing which only vastly more investigation will be able to show), the range of higher development as thus far illustrated lifts the culture of these people to a new and surprisingly high level.

Within the current year further studies and syntheses dealing with the Ghassulian pottery have definitely carried back the culture of Palestine to the fourth millennium *B. C.*, with other evidence suggesting possible connections with Halafian culture of the fifth millennium. In that far off age so enormously separated from us, we can nevertheless see how far removed its life was from the truly primitive. There is here one of the major remaining gaps, which it will be the task of archaeology to span. In fact the "catwalk" for that bridge may lie almost ready made at the base of Tepe

\* *BSOR* 66, 121.

Gawra. When that task is accomplished, the historic time sounding apparatus will probe no farther, but even then we shall be far from the human beginnings in one of the best known areas of the Oriental field, viz., Palestine, for it has also proved to be a rare treasure house of prehistoric man and the crossroads of his wanderings, forcefully set forth by a distinguished scholar of the prehistoric field as "The gateway of Prehistoric human migrations."<sup>5</sup>

Thus the external limits of this problem seem to be fast coming into view. On the other hand the internal gaps are still extensive not merely as measured in time, but also in relation to literary and archaeological materials already in hand. Some of these are beginning to close. The Old Testament is a case in point. In spite of the maximum of intensive study and the application of cognate languages and related literatures, positive and assured progress has been slow and fluctuating in character. A main difficulty has been the slight amount of outside contemporary and closely related literature with which to compare. The discovery and rapidly developing elucidation of the North Canaanite Ras Shamra texts of the second millennium *a. c.*, mark a new epoch in this situation. Already the gains from a study of grammatical forms and thought content of this literature promise to rival the similar help to be gained from all other cuneiform literature; not only has the immediate horizon of the Old Testament been pushed back half a millennium, but the world of Syria-Palestine, in the second millennium before our era, into which Israel was about to enter, takes on a concreteness of cultural ideas that is indeed challenging, envisioning this region even in that remote period, as the center from which there was a great cultural spread, both east and west, of religious and especially of god ideas, that can only remind us of the one familiarly known, nearly 2000 years later, but at the same time furnishing added background and explanation of the latter event.

Upon the early part of the same millennium a new light has broken as a result of the excavation of ancient Mari on the Euphrates, and it bids fair to rival in brilliance and perhaps in extent that of the Amarna-Letter literature.

Far eastern studies, while dealing with other phases of eventually the same great complex of early human culture, will probably always have a different connotation and motivation in the west and

<sup>5</sup> Miss Garrod in *AJSL*, July, 1937.

especially for the dwellers on this continent. For one thing, although the farther Orient is geographically most remote, modern communication has actually made it in reality our next door neighbor.

Historically its past deepens with investigation, and is indeed ancient when compared with the Occident, but the continuous stream of its culture from the remote past down to the present, in a peculiar sense calls for a clear understanding of its present status as the prerequisite to fully appreciating its past phases. Nevertheless its deepest significance and impact upon the west is bound to be its contemporary character. Here the great barrier to understanding has been language, without which any contemporary culture remains a sealed book. We of the west have been glad and probably flattered to be teachers of Indians, Chinese, and Japanese. But western students have shown no corresponding zeal to explore eastern thought. There are signs of a change in this respect. The striking phenomena in the last summer session of the Linguistic Institute of America, at Ann Arbor, of seventeen students beginning Sanskrit, eighteen studying Japanese, and twenty American students giving their entire time to the study of Chinese marks a milestone in these fields and is a welcome harbinger of a changed attitude that may result in a two-way bridge of thought across the Pacific.\*

Near Eastern studies have dealt primarily with the past. Far Eastern investigations compel us to deal with present-day realities as well. At this point the larger significance of Oriental studies emerges and becomes inescapable. Our west has insisted on an open door in China not necessarily for China's good but for our goods. Similarly we have insisted on exchanging wares with the Nipponese. For good measure in both instances we have thrown in our religion and our political and scientific techniques. Neither one has accepted all our offerings. Where our religion and politics have been favored, science has been denied. Where science has been accepted, religion and politics have been shunned. To those who have adopted our religion we have also bequeathed our divisions, our empty rivalries, and our mental and moral confusions. To those who have appropriated our practical science there have gone

\* The enrollment in Chinese and Japanese in the Linguistic Institute of 1938 was 61.

few or no moral controls. The result is chaos in the Far East today that may well engulf the world.

Have Oriental studies any responsibility for such a situation?

It is the statement of a great engineer and past president of the British Association,<sup>1</sup> that the command of nature has been put into man's hands before he has learned to command himself, and this statement is made the basis of a warning comparison with certain extinct species which perished through the very amplitude of their apparatus for attack and defense. The leaders of scientific thought are fully aware of these implications and frankly admit that the prostitution of scientific truth may lead to world catastrophe. Their main counsel, however, is to continue to invent and construct ever more deadly instruments for the mass destruction of human beings, with the faint hope that these will become so devastating in character that men will ultimately fear to unleash them. If history teaches anything it is that this hope is vain.

The highest idealism of the western world has its primary expression in an Oriental literature. An adequate scholarship today knows of no sufficient grounds in that literature for the manifold sectarian breakup of Christendom and its consequent loss of possible moral leadership in the very areas where its formal supremacy is most fully acknowledged. This was therefore due for one thing to an inadequate Oriental scholarship in the past.

The West as a whole has never forgotten or successfully denied that its higher spiritual guidance came from the Orient. Yet neither institutionally nor theoretically has scholarship thus far been able to release from the trappings and encumbrances of outgrown traditional thought the highest ethical contribution of this source for the guidance of society. This might seem strange were it not necessary to remind ourselves that the most disinterested scholarship has been compelled to labor in an atmosphere of traditional institutionalism, that could scarcely fail to be a deflecting influence in certain kinds of conclusions. Nor is this by any means the most serious aspect of the problem.

The lacunae in our exact knowledge in connection with most problems of spiritual values in the remote past are still so extensive that experts and specialists will often differ widely in their practical conclusions, which means that, whether because of faulty

<sup>1</sup> Sir Albert Ewing, Presidential Address, RBAAS, 1932.

method or equipment or of scantiness of material, such tasks are not yet mastered.

It is also necessary to emphasize that the Jewish-Christian movement has been in what I venture to call a state of mental confusion for more than twenty centuries. I mean that, assuming an ethical ordering of the world, that movement has presumed to satisfy the highest claims of life, by means of words and gestures, regarded as more efficacious than deeds, by claiming its adherents to be the chosen of the Lord on other grounds than conduct, and by professing withdrawal from the world and so disclaiming all responsibility for it and yet claiming all the prerogatives and benefits of direct partnership with it.

As long as its representatives constituted only a struggling minority, it mattered little to the world at large, but when it became the representative and claimant of the highest truth of a world dominant civilization, the accumulated product of such age-long inward confusion could not fail to manifest itself in the outward life. To be sure, as long as the major political aggregates remained separated by vast stretches of inhospitable lands and dangerous seas, with slow and infrequent communication, the full import of these inward contradictions was not apparent, but in our own day with distance annihilated, with modern industrialism fully operative and thus accentuating and aggravating every unsolved problem of social relations, the wonder is that our human world has not sooner begun to disintegrate from its own thought contradictions.

Abolition of civil rights, physical violence, and mass slaughter of human beings are but natural concomitants, when these antinomies reach world-scale proportions in their operations, as at present manifested.

Deliverance from this unfolding catastrophe calls as yet for no new formula of higher truth. It is not lack of truth but lack of clear apprehension and application of what is already given in experience that threatens a return to chaos. Indo-European scholarship once rejuvenated an oriental faith by opening its original springs that had been clogged by the debris of later ages. It may seem fantastic to assume that clarity of thought could be injected into the present world situation in time to save it from catastrophes of the first magnitude, and more especially so, that

this could be accomplished through the agency of Oriental studies. Nevertheless one thing seems clear, the present threatening turmoil of the world is the direct outcome of confused and self contradictory mental concepts, and without clarity of thought in the highest realm of the spirit there can henceforth be no assured salvation in human affairs.

It is also a fact that responsibility for this problem in a peculiar sense lies within the domain of Oriental studies, since within that realm are to be found the highest spiritual contributions of the race. This task can no more be left to institutional and sectarian thinkers than the pure scientists can leave the theories of matter and the physical universe to engineers and architects.

We are the custodians not only of a museum of historical human culture, but also of a laboratory of the highest human values and the method of their achievement and preservation. We may be derelict in linguistic acumen, historical precision, or chronological accuracy, and no one living be the worse for it and few the wiser, but if we fail to clarify, wherever possible, the spiritual thought inheritance within our field as it applies to the most pressing problems of human life on this planet, we may well be responsible for irretrievable loss in which all men will unwittingly be forced to share. I sense in this assertion no indication that this Society should change its character or methods, nor that any member should do less than develop his specialty to the utmost. Rather by the sum total of individual contributions such a well-knit fabric of the past should eventually be reconstructed that not only the historical content, but its application to the ongoing life should become clear and unmistakable. Thus the most significant experience of the race shall at last become an assured and unequivocal asset in building an orderly, neighborly, and enduring humanity of the future.

Even if the present turmoil and confusion cannot be stayed from producing sweeping disaster, Oriental studies have every right to be zealously cherished as one sound hope of a better day, a Shangri-la indeed, and no matter how long hidden, as in some sheltered valley of Blue Moon.





ADOLF ERMÄN

## ADOLF ERMAN, 1854-1937

L. BULL and W. F. EDGERTON

Adolf Erman, an honorary member of this Society since 1903, died on June 26, 1937, in the eighty-third year of his age.

The name Erman was originally Ernatinger, from Ernatingen on the Bodensee, and the family were living in northern Switzerland as early as the fifteenth century. Adolf Erman's ancestors moved to Geneva in the seventeenth century where the name assumed its present French form, and French blood first entered the family through the marriage of Jean Erman with the daughter of a protestant refugee. In 1721 Jean Erman and his family moved to Berlin where there was a considerable colony of French protestants with its own school. Both his son and grandson married within the French colony so that the French atmosphere continued to be preserved. Jean Erman's son was a glorer. His grandson, Jean Pierre, was one of the leading protestant pastors of Berlin. Jean Pierre's son, Paul, Adolf Erman grandfather, married soon after 1800, a daughter of the Jewish *Stadtrat* Elias Itzig of Potsdam. As it happened, the Itzig family had been drifting away from Judaism, and they all adopted Christianity about this time. However, since Adolf Erman's grandmother was not baptized until 1802, Erman himself, in his old age, fell under the ban placed on those of Jewish blood by the National Socialist régime. Erman's grandfather was the first professor of physics at the University of Berlin, and Erman's father, who spelt his name Adolph, had the same post. His mother's father was the well-known astronomer, Bessel. Adolf Erman, the son, like all his forebears since the family had lived in Berlin, attended the French Gymnasium. He took his doctorate at the University of Berlin. Erman returned to the tradition of his ancestors and married a descendant of French refugees, Käthe d'Heureuse, in 1884. Five children were born to them and they lived together in great happiness till his death fifty-three years later. Erman has left a charming record of his forebears and of his own life in his *Mein Werden und mein Wirken* (Leipzig, 1929).

After two years as an assistant in the library of the Royal

Prussian Museums, Erman became an assistant in the numismatic cabinet in 1877, the same year in which he received the doctor's degree. A notable percentage of his earliest publications dealt with numismatics. In 1881 he became an instructor in Egyptology in the University of Berlin. In 1884 he succeeded Richard Lepsius as Director of the Egyptian Section of the Royal Museums and also as Professor of Egyptology in the University. He held the directorship until 1914 and the professorship, as Extraordinarius and as Ordinarius, until 1923. In 1895 he became a member of the Prussian Academy of Sciences. From 1881 to 1884 he was an assistant editor and from 1889 to 1906, at first with H. Brugsch and later with G. Steindorff, he was one of the editors of the *Zeitschrift für ägyptische Sprache und Altertumskunde*. During the last forty years of his life, his scholarly activities centered in the great *Wörterbuch der ägyptischen Sprache*, a work which Erman himself called into being, in which he enlisted the aid of successive generations of Egyptologists of diverse nationalities, and which he personally planned and guided through all its stages from the initial copying and collating of texts in European museums and in Egypt, to the completion of what we may hopefully call the "first edition" of the Dictionary itself.

It would be hard to overestimate the importance of Erman's work. The whole course of Egyptological scholarship since 1880 could be described in terms of his clear, bold, wise, and eminently well-rounded mind and of the long process by which that mind ultimately remade the field in which it operated. What passed for Egyptian grammar in Erman's student days was a welter of guesses; what passed for Egyptian archaeology was the reckless destruction of ancient monuments to obtain inscriptions and works of art. There were others besides Erman who understood and deplored this situation. But the actual substitution of proven fact and proven methods of investigation for guesswork in Egyptian grammar has been brought about almost exclusively by Adolf Erman and by those who learned directly or indirectly from him, while in the parallel improvement of Egyptian archaeology Erman's influence, though less obvious and less exclusive, has not been less real.

Interested in grammar from the first, Erman was a pioneer in the recognition of the marked changes in the Egyptian language in its development over the centuries, and in marking off "Neu-

ägyptisch" or Late Egyptian as a definite phase of the language, represented by letters, records and literary compositions of the period from about 1600 to about 700 B. C., and to a lesser extent in monumental inscriptions after about 1300 B. C. Erman's *Neu-ägyptische Grammatik* appeared in 1880 and more than half a century later, in 1933, when he was 79, he brought out an enlarged and completely revised second edition.

The breadth of Erman's scholarship and of his interest in the ancient Egyptians is shown in that remarkable book, *Ägypten u. ägyptisches Leben*, published in 1885, in which the whole of Egyptian civilization is presented to the reader in a series of brilliant chapters dealing with various aspects of it. A second edition, fully revised by Prof. Hermann Ranke, appeared in 1923.

The *Ägyptische Grammatik*, based on the classical phase of the language, first appeared in 1894, and its 4th edition in 1928. Previously, in 1889, on joining Heinrich Brugsch as an editor of the *Zeitschrift für ägyptische Sprache*, Erman had had much to do with the introduction in the first issue of that year, of the system of transliteration of Egyptian now in universal use.

Amid his grammatical and lexicographical work, Erman was also collecting material for a book on religion. His *Ägyptische Religion* appeared in 1905, and a new edition was needed only four years later. He continued to collect material, and finally in 1934, when he was 80 years old, he brought out a greatly enlarged edition under the title of *Die Religion der Ägypter*. In 1937 this work appears in a French translation.

Precisely because his methods and results were so far in advance of theirs, Erman in his youth aroused the hostility of some other Egyptologists—even of some who themselves possessed distinguished scholarly abilities. One of these men used to say that it was a pity the ancient Egyptians had not had the opportunity of studying Prof. Erman's grammar! The phrase "Berlin school," which bulks large in the Egyptological literature of the generation following 1880, was invented as a term of opprobrium to characterize Erman and his students. The words are hardly more than a memory today, but if they were now used they would be universally understood as a term of honor. This history of a phrase may serve in some slight degree as a measure of the difficulties which Erman once encountered, and of the overwhelming success with which he patiently and laboriously faced them.

A bibliography was compiled in 1935 in honor of Erman's eightieth birthday by Hermann Grapow who has recently succeeded Sethe in Erman's old chair at Berlin. This enumerates 284 titles without counting reviews and lectures. Two further titles would have to be added today, marking the sixty-first and sixty-second years of his uninterrupted scholarly productivity. Notwithstanding their great number, his publications were never hasty and never ill-considered; many of them marked epochs in the history of Egyptology; many of them have been superseded, but only after the labor of years and only by scholars who incorporated Erman's results in the foundations of their own work. His first article, a small but completely original observation on a point of Egyptian morphology, appeared in 1870, some months before his twenty-first birthday, and contains no positive statement which is not accepted as true today. His last books, written under the handicaps of blindness and physical weakness and made possible only by the selfless devotion of his wife and his friends, still show in the octogenarian the same intellectual independence which characterized the youth.

Our colleague and former fellow-member, Dr. Caroline Ransom Williams, who knew Erman more intimately than any living American, having studied under him for four semesters, frequently visited the Ermans and constantly corresponded with them, and she has given us recollection of his family life. The Ermans, in Dr. Ransom's student days, lived in a suburb of Berlin, where it was easy to get into the country. They often invited Egyptological students to their house, and Dr. Williams recalls an occasion when the party experimented in the garden with facsimiles of ancient Egyptian throw-sticks. Expeditions were made in the Grinewald and summer Sundays were sometimes spent rowing on the Havel. On such expeditions, the father took pains to instruct his children in the architectural merits of the old country churches. "Erman," writes Dr. Williams, "in true German fashion, completely dominated his household. His library was the quietest, largest room, his word law in all matters large or small. It was not, however, a severe régime, for affection, the gay spirits of the wife, and the homely never-failing humor of the husband prevented any suggestion of tyranny. In University seminars, one of the master's characteristics especially to be respected was his intellectual honesty. He would denounce a former opinion of his own as a 'black thought,' and

this being his attitude toward his own mental processes, he was severe with any student who showed signs of too much satisfaction with his own translations. He took delight in many things, both serious and light, outside his own field. He could repeat with gusto German student songs and English limericks. In his later years, the family lived in the village of Dahlem, and it was in the nearby church, of which Martin Niemoeller was until recently the pastor, that the Ermans' daughters were married and their own golden wedding anniversary was celebrated. Erman's sturdy independence is illustrated by the fact that after the outbreak of the World War, he refused to sign the famous professional letter which so irritated scholars in other countries. Always his creed was that, in scientific pursuits, there should be international amity, whatever political or military conflicts might be going on. This principal he maintained, in spite of the loss in the war of his beloved elder son Peter. Once, before Americans were actively involved, and when feeling against even the German language ran high in this country, a letter from his wife mentioned a little granddaughter sitting at her side studying her French lesson. Through many years the family read the *Atlantic Monthly*, and especially the stories in dialect pleased this specialist in language. I often heard that they read the magazine from cover to cover, that even the advertisements gave them an idea of our ways. None of the Ermans ever crossed the Atlantic, although the two older daughters attended school in England, and the family thereafter, drank afternoon tea, not coffee. In his letters, Erman often introduced phrases in hieroglyphic writing, and not a letter failed to contain some racy or droll passage.

"My last glimpses of Erman were in April, 1936, only a little more than a year before his death. He was then an octogenarian, at the time desperately ill, a touching, endearing, somewhat stooped figure in his velvet house jacket, for, with indomitable will, he insisted on being up for a part of each day. With all his old-time dignity and alertness of mind, he plied me with questions about the past fruitful season of 1935 to 1936 in Egypt, having had many letters concerning the newest discoveries, but as yet no visitor who had been in the midst of them. Almost blind, he yet drew rapidly and well various hieroglyphs to illustrate his interpretation of puzzling objects found only a few weeks earlier at Sakḥāreh by Walter B. Emery. More than ever I sensed the greatness, the

essential sweetness, and the strength of his personality. And I came away from Berlin comforted that, as he had lived, so in his last days he could remain in his own familiar surroundings, finding his books by their position on shelves, still the center of his family, engaging constantly their loving solicitude and care. The last letter written to me before his death told that he reverted often to French, the language of his boyhood, and that, from the storehouse of his remarkable memory, he repeated long passages of the finest poetry."





A VEDIC HYMN TO THE SUN-GOD SŪRYA  
(TRANSLATION AND EXEGESIS OF RIG-VEDA 1. 115)

SAMUEL D. ATKINS  
PRINCETON UNIVERSITY

RIG-VEDA 1. 115 is important in any consideration of Sūrya's Vedic character and aspect. No attempt is made here to interpret and define fully even the Rig-Vedic character of the deity. Such a definition is the subject of an investigation that is now being carried on by the author. This investigation is, in turn, but a small portion of a larger plan of research that aims at a treatment of the solar concept from an Indian, Indo-Iranian, and Indo-European point of view.<sup>1</sup> It will be apparent that the views expressed in this study should not be considered conclusive. It will be noted that the explanations presented depend primarily upon Vedic usage as determined by parallel passages in the Rig-Veda itself and in the Atharva-Veda. Upon this particular hymn the ritualistic literature throws little light. For the most part we have to rely upon the evidence of the Samhitas themselves.

Our hymn is one of the most important and most difficult hymns in the Rig-Veda and many attempts have been made to solve it. Of the hymn's six stanzas, Nos. 1, 3, and 6 offer no difficult problems. It should be noted, however, that almost everyone has overlooked the significance of the first line of stanza 1 which says: "The brilliant countenance of the gods *has risen*," and of the first line of the last stanza which entreats: "This day, O Gods, *at Sūrya's rising*, deliver us from misfortune, from evil." The invocation opens and closes with emphasis upon the *rising* aspect of the sun. As we shall see later, the entire song is an invocation to, and description of, the *rising* sun. The failure to observe that point has led many into error in their interpretations of stanzas 4 and 5. The misinterpretations of the last two lines of stanza 2 are to be explained by the fact that some scholars have failed to realize that all of the Vedic hymns were written, in their present form at least, primarily for the sacrifice.

Taking up the difficult stanzas, 2, 4, and 5, in order of occurrence,

<sup>1</sup>The author is grateful to the American Council of Learned Societies and to Baylor University for grants in aid of these researches.

we shall consider first the various renderings of No. 2, paying particular attention to the last two lines: *gatrā nara devaganto yugāni/vitanvate prāṇi bhadrāṇa bhadrām*.

H. H. Wilson<sup>2</sup> gives a translation of the whole stanza reading: "The sun follows the divine and brilliant Ushas—as a man (follows a young and elegant) woman—at which season pious men perform (the ceremonies established for) ages, worshipping the auspicious (sun), for the sake of good (reward)." H. Grassmann<sup>3</sup> translates somewhat differently:

"Der Sonnengott, er folgt der Morgengöttin,  
der strahlenden, so wie der Braut der Freier;  
Dort wo die Frommen ihre Wagen schirren,  
von einer Seligkeit zur andern fahrend."

Still another interpretation is that of Sayana, K. Geldner-A. Kaegi,<sup>4</sup> and R. Roth,<sup>5</sup> which may be paraphrased thus: "The sun pursuing and the dawn pursued go forward to that place where pious men extend their generations, adding life to life, each new one happier than the previous, that is, to the highest heaven where the righteous enjoy eternal happiness." Similar is Ludwig's<sup>6</sup> translation which reads: "wie der bräutigam der jungfrau, so geht Sūrya der Uṣas, der strahlenden göttin, von rückwärts nach, wo fromme männer ausbreiten ihre geschlechter unter des glückbringenden augen glücklich." R. Griffith<sup>7</sup> renders the stanza in accordance with Ludwig. T. Benfey's<sup>8</sup> interpretation has much in common with the interpretations just described but differs in that it views the sun and dawn hastening to the house of the sacrificer, "where godfearing men extend their generations, one glorious after the other."

P. Peterson<sup>9</sup> is unique in that he leaves lines *cd* blank in his translation and says in a footnote that he prefers to mark an omis-

<sup>2</sup> *Rig-Veda Saṃhita*, London, 1866, p. 304.

<sup>3</sup> *Rig-Veda, übersetzt*, Leipzig, 1877, zweiter Teil, p. 117.

<sup>4</sup> *Siebzig Lieder des Rigveda*, Tübingen, 1876, p. 65.

<sup>5</sup> See his *Beiträge zu Siebzig Lieder of Geldner-Kaegi*, p. 56.

<sup>6</sup> *Der Rig-Veda, übersetzt*, Prag, 1876, erster Band, p. 142.

<sup>7</sup> *The Hymns of the Rig-Veda*, Benares, 3 ed., 1920, vol. 1.

<sup>8</sup> *Orient and Occident*, vol. 3, p. 181.

<sup>9</sup> *Hymns from the Rigveda*, Bombay Sanskrit Series, 4th ed., 1917, pp. 368, 83.

sion than give a translation which could only be conjectural. He gives a rather long discussion of the problem in his exegesis but comes to no conclusion.

K. Geldner<sup>10</sup> translates as follows, rendering lines *cd* obscurely; "Sūrya geht hinter der glänzenden Göttin Uṣas her wie der Jüngling hinter einer Maid, während die gottergebenen Männer die Jochs auflegen, je ein glückbringendes zu glücklichem (Tun)." In his notes he explains lines *cd*: "An jedem Morgen beginnen die Frommen einen neuen Zeitabschnitt oder ein neues gutes Tagewerk."

Apparently following E. Windisch's article in *Festgrüss an Böhtlingk*, p. 118 ff., A. Hillebrandt,<sup>11</sup> H. Oldenberg,<sup>12</sup> A. A. Macdonell,<sup>13</sup> and E. J. Thomas<sup>14</sup> present translations that correctly construe *yatrā . . . vitanvate* as referring to the place where pious men begin the sacrifice, but they all are rather sparse in their presentation of proof and do not discuss sufficiently the significance of their translations. None of them, moreover, seems to understand the function of *prāti* or the meaning of *bhadrāya bhadrām*. Hillebrandt's version<sup>15</sup> may be taken as generally representative of this particular interpretation. It reads: "Sūrya folgt der göttlichen Uṣas, der strahlenden, nach, wie ein Mann der Frau sich ihr nähernd folgt; dorthin, wo fromme Männer die Jochs auflegen (ihr Opferwerk beginnen), dem Heilbringenden entgegen zu unserm Heil."

Concerning stanza 4<sup>16</sup> there are two main schools of thought to be distinguished. The first and by far the largest group of scholars, disregarding the lead given by the fact that invocation is made to the rising sun and that stanzas 2 and 3 describe the action of a rising sun, overlooking other parallel passages in the Rig-Veda, and misconstruing the language of the passage in question, views the stanza as a reference to the setting sun. Although there are many differences in the various treatments of the passage, the interpretation of this group may be summed up generally, as follows: "The

<sup>10</sup> *Der Rig-Veda, übersetzt*, erster Teil, Göttingen, 1923, p. 138.

<sup>11</sup> *Lieder des Rigveda, übersetzt*, Göttingen, 1913, p. 8.

<sup>12</sup> *Rigveda, Textkritische und exegetische Noten* [Abhandlungen der Königlichen Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften zu Göttingen, Philologische-Historische Klasse, Neue Folge, Band XI, Nro. 5] p. 107.

<sup>13</sup> *Hymns from the Rig-Veda*, London, p. 29.

<sup>14</sup> *Vedic Hymns*, London, 1923, p. 41.

<sup>15</sup> *Loc. cit.*

<sup>16</sup> For Sanskrit text see below.

godhead and power of Sūrya is this: In the midst of his operations he withdraws the daylight. When he has unyoked his steeds from the solar car, then Night spreads her garment over all<sup>27</sup> (or, even less happily, "then Night spreads out her garment for him"). The members of this school number such scholars as Wilson,<sup>27</sup> Griffith,<sup>27</sup> Grassmann,<sup>27</sup> Geldner-Kaegi,<sup>27</sup> Hillebrandt,<sup>27</sup> Macdonell,<sup>27</sup> Zimmer,<sup>28</sup> Benfey,<sup>28</sup> and Ludwig.<sup>28</sup>

The second group, represented chiefly by Geldner,<sup>29</sup> Peterson,<sup>29</sup> Thomas,<sup>29</sup> and M. Winternitz,<sup>29</sup> has the correct impression of a rising sun and a web of darkness that is rolled up at dawn, but either mistakenly understands that it is Night who rolls up the web or erroneously takes *śinasmāi* (in line *d*) as referring to Sūrya instead of Night, or as meaning "all."

In handling stanza 5 the majority of Vedicists, including Wilson,<sup>28</sup> Griffith,<sup>28</sup> Grassmann,<sup>28</sup> Geldner-Kaegi,<sup>28</sup> Benfey,<sup>28</sup> Thomas,<sup>28</sup> Peterson,<sup>28</sup> Oldenberg,<sup>29</sup> Bergaigne,<sup>29</sup> and Geldner,<sup>29</sup> misunderstand lines *cd*, and conceive of a sun that brings the light of day and also a sun that brings the darkness of night, i. e. a day-sun and a night-sun. The truth, as we shall see below, is that the lines in question partially repeat the description given in stanza 4 and speak of the rising sun as possessing everlasting light and having the power, by means of his steeds, to roll up the web of darkness. Both Hillebrandt<sup>29</sup> and Macdonell<sup>29</sup> have translations that very nearly suit the correct interpretation, but I am almost certain that neither of them had it in mind, for both interpret *stanza 4* as though it referred to a *setting* sun which rolled up the *daylight* at eventide. Therefore they could not have seen in this passage a *rising* sun

<sup>27</sup> *Loc. cit.*

<sup>28</sup> *Altindisches Leben*, Berlin, 1879, p. 363.

<sup>29</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 158.

<sup>30</sup> *Op. cit.*, vol. 1, p. 142 and vol. 4, pp. 131-132.

<sup>31</sup> *Loc. cit.*, and *Vedische Studien*, vol. 2, p. 189.

<sup>32</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 85-87.

<sup>33</sup> *Loc. cit.*

<sup>34</sup> "Ein Hymnus an Savitar," *Archiv Orientalni*, 25, p. 298.

<sup>35</sup> *Loc. cit.*

<sup>36</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 88, 308.

<sup>37</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 108.

<sup>38</sup> *La Religion Védique*, vol. 3, p. 119.

<sup>39</sup> *Der Rig-Veda*, p. 138, footnote to 5. *cd*.

<sup>40</sup> *Loc. cit.*

which rolled up the darkness at dawn. Furthermore, Hillebrandt, in his revised edition of *Vedische Mythologie*,<sup>21</sup> makes it apparent that in both stanzas 4 and 5 he sees a twofold sun that is the creator of light and darkness, bringing day at one time and night at another.

No scholar, then, appears to gain the picture which I should like to give in a freely paraphrased summary as my own impression of Rig-Veda 1.115:

Sūrya, the eye of Mitra-Varuṇa, has risen and has filled the whole universe with his radiance. With the dawn he comes to the place of sacrifice where the priests prepare auspicious sacrifices for the fortunate sacrificer. His splendid steeds have mounted skywards encompassing the world in a day (that is, Sūrya has risen). His power is this: Upon rising he lifts the web of darkness from the world. When he yokes up his steeds in the morning, then Night covers herself with the web of darkness that she has woven and vanishes. Sūrya shines so that Mitra and Varuṇa may see. The everlasting daylight belongs to him. His steeds roll up the darkness and make it disappear. This early morn, deliver us, O Gods, at Sūrya's rising, from misfortune and evil.

There follow a translation and commentary which endeavor to present in detail a solution of the outstanding difficulties and problems encountered in the hymn.

1. citrāṃ devānāṃ ūd agād āṅkam  
cākṣur mitrāya varuṇasyāgnēh  
āprā dyāvāprthivī antārikeaṃ  
sūrya ātmā jagatas tasthūśaś ca

The brilliant countenance of the gods has risen, the eye of Mitra, Varuṇa and Agni. He has filled heaven and earth and atmosphere, Sūrya, soul of that which moves and that which is stationary.

a. Cf. *agner āṅkam varuṇasya* in 7.88.2.

d. *jagatas tasthūśaś ca*: "of that which moves and that which is stationary." This is a juxtaposition of frequent occurrence in the Rig-Veda and is usually made by combining some form of *sthā* or *sthātṛ* with some form of *jagat* or *caratha*. A precise definition of the combination appears difficult. Its appearance cannot be related to any particular god or gods. In 7.60.2 Sūrya is similarly

<sup>21</sup> Vol. 2 (1929), p. 354, footnote 3 and p. 107, footnote 2.

invoked as "lord of all that is stationary and that moves" (*vishvasya sthātūr jagatāś ca gupā*). Two other solar deities are addressed in like manner. In 4.53.6 appeal is made to Savitar as "thou who art ruler of both that which moves and that which is stationary" (*jagatāś sthātūr abhayaṣya ga raśi*), while in 1.89.5 Pūshan is called "lord who reigns over that which moves and that which is stationary" (*tīdnam jagatas tashusas pati*). Almost the same mode of address is applied to that indefinite group of luminous deities, the Ādityas, in 2.27.4 where we read "Ādityas, upholding that which moves and that which is stationary" (*dhārayanta ādityāso jagat sthā*).

In 7.101.6, a stanza addressed to Parjanya, we meet the very same phrase that we have here in 1.115.1, and in 6.49.6 Parjanya and Vāta are asked to "procure (for the singer of the hymn) that which is stationary and that which moves," i. e. perhaps "all kinds of property" (*sthātūr jagad ā kṣoudhcam*<sup>22</sup>).

In several passages Agnī is closely associated with "what is stationary and what moves." In a description of him as the irresistible forest fire it is said that "that which is stationary, that which moves fears him in his flight," i. e. possibly "all plant and animal life" (1.58.5: *sthātūś carutham bhayate patatṛpaś*). He is said to have "uncovered that which is stationary, that which moves" as he attained to heaven (1.68.1: *sthātūś carutham aktān ay ūrat*). He is called the "embryo of the waters, of the forests, of what is stationary and of what moves"—again, perhaps, "all plant and animal life" (1.70.3: *garbha yo apām garbha vanānām garbhāś ca sthātām*<sup>23</sup> *garbhāś carathām*). He, the god that is invested with cosmic law, is strengthened by many manifold nights and days, by that which is stationary, and that which moves (1.70.7: *vardhān yaṁ pūrviś kṣapo rirūpāś sthātūś carutham śtapracitam*). He is invoked to "protect the cattle and those things that are stationary, and that which moves," i. e. perhaps "every kind of property" (1.72.6: *pāśūn ca sthātūn carutham ca pākī*). And finally he is named the creator of "that which travels by wings, that which is stationary and that which moves" (10.58.4: *sa palatṛtvanam sthā jagad yac chedātram agnir akṛnoj jātavedāś*).

<sup>22</sup> For a discussion (but not a satisfactory solution) of this passage, see Oldenberg, *op. cit.*, pp. 329-400.

<sup>23</sup> *sthātām* is proposed by the St. Petersburg Lexikon s. v.

In several other passages this phrase seems to serve merely as a conventional mode of expression for "everything that exists" (as may be the case in some passages cited above). In 1.159.3 it is said that Heaven and Earth in accordance with the will of the sun watch over or preserve the true station of that which is stationary and that which moves (*sthātus ca satyam jagataś ca dharmaṃ putraya pāthak padam advayāvinaś*). In 6.50.7 the Waters are called "the creators of everything that is stationary and that moves" (*viśvasya sthātur jagato janitriḥ*). In 10.63.8 the All-gods are spoken of as "governors of all that is stationary and that moves" (*viśvasya sthātur jagataś ca mantavaś*). Finally, in 1.80.14 that which is stationary and that which moves trembles at Indra's thundering (*abhiṣṭane te adrico yut sthā jagac ca rejatē*).

In three other passages Indra is associated with the "moving" but not the "stationary." He is called "lord of all that moves and breathes" (1.101.5: *go viśvasya jagataś prāṇataś patir*), "king of that which moves and of men"<sup>24</sup> (6.30.5: *rājābhāto jagataś carṣṇiṇām*) and "eye of all that moves and sees" (10.102.12: *tvam viśvasya jagataś cakṣur indrāśi cakṣuśaś*).

On the basis of the evidence in the Rig-Veda then, the phrase under consideration is apparently, in many cases, a conventional formula with the meaning "all that exists."<sup>25</sup> In other cases it seems to have the more particular connotation of "every type of property." And in still other cases the meaning may very well be "all plant and animal life." At all events, I do not believe that we should use the translation "all that is animate and inanimate," for that distinction is not made in the Sanskrit. Everything that is stationary is not necessarily "inanimate."

In connection with the meaning "plant and animal kingdoms" it should be remarked that in AV. 8.5.11 *jagat* "domestic animal" is differentiated from *śvapaś* "wild animal" and that in AV. 1.31.4, though the cow is mentioned separately, the word *jagat* is used to designate the other domestic animals.<sup>26</sup> It is to be admitted, on the other hand, that there is no direct evidence to indicate that *sthā*

<sup>24</sup> There may be a distinction here between animals and humans.

<sup>25</sup> C. R. Lanman in *JIOS*, 10, p. 422, calls it "a loosely formulized expression for 'all beings.'"

<sup>26</sup> Cf. Zimmer, *op. cit.*, p. 150, and also Macdonell and Keith, *Vedic Index*, vol. 1, p. 268.



or *sthāle* possesses the specific meaning of "plant, plant world" in the Vedas. It is interesting to note, however, that in the Upanishads and also in later Sanskrit we meet the word *sthāvara*, one of whose meanings as an adjective is "vegetable, belonging to the vegetable world" and as a noun "any stationary object such as plant, mineral, etc." <sup>27</sup> There is also the noun *sthāvaratā* "the state of a vegetable or mineral." <sup>28</sup>

2. *sūryo devīm usāsam rōcamānām*  
*māryo nā yōṣām abhy ēti paścāt*  
*yātrā nāro devayānto yugāni*  
*vitanvatē prāti bhadraṣya bhadraṣm*

Coming later, Sūrya pursues the gleaming dawn-goddess, as the young bridegroom his bride, [to the place of sacrifice] where god-fearing men yoke (prepare) the sacrifice, where, for the fortunate [sacrificer] they yoke (prepare) a fortunate [sacrifice].

b. *māryo nā yōṣām*: "as the young bridegroom his bride." For the conception of the sun as a bridegroom and the dawn as his bride, see RV. 1. 123. 10, 11; 1. 124. 7; 10. 3. 3; 7. 10. 1, etc.

*paścāt*: "coming later." The orb of the sun, as distinguished from its rays, rises after the break of dawn.

c. *yātrā* etc.: "where, etc." Due to a misinterpretation of lines c and d many scholars, as we have noted above, have been vague as to the locality designated by *yātrā*. Understanding *yugāni* as "generations" they have made it refer to far-away land, something like Pindar's "Islands of the Blest," where godly men extend their generations and forever enjoy a blissful life. But we must not forget that these hymns were written for the sacrifice. It is to the sacrifice that Ushas and Sūrya come.

d. *yugāni vitanvatē*: "prepare the sacrifice." For the identification of *yuga* with the sacrifice we have RV. 10. 101. 3ab, 4ab which read: *yunakṣia strā vi yugā tanudhram/kṛte yonau vaputeha bījaṃ* "Yoke up the plows, spread the yokes [over the oxen,] sow the seed in the womb that has been prepared," *strā yuñjanti kavayo/yugā vitanvatē prthak* "The seers yoke up the plows, they spread the yokes severally [over the oxen]."

These lines, incorporated in a hymn that invokes the priest to the performance of the sacrifice, refer metaphorically to the prepa-

<sup>27</sup> See Monier-Williams s. v. and the St. Petersburg Lexikon s. v.

ration for the sacrifice. The language and image are agricultural (See Ernst Windisch's article in *Festgrüss an Böhtlingk*, p. 118). Obviously the phrase-type *yugā tan + vi* has the figurative meaning of "prepare the sacrifice."

Here in 1. 113. 2 we have almost the same phrase, namely *yugāni vitāsvate*, in the same figurative sense of preparing the sacrifice. The expression has nothing to do with man's extension of his generations or lives. Moreover, it should be remarked that *vi + tan* is a particularly appropriate combination for the meaning "begin" or "prepare" a sacrifice because of its frequent association with *yajña* in the sense of "make ready (prepare, proffer) the sacrifice." Such a combination is to be found in RV. 5. 13. 4, 5. 47. 6; AV. 2. 35. 5, 4. 14. 4, 9. 6. 28, 17. 1. 18, 18. 4. 13.

d. *prāti* is a preverb that qualifies *vitāsvate*. Hillebrandt, in the vocabulary of his *Vedische Chrestomathie* under *tan + prati*, has proposed that we supply some form of *tan*, perhaps *tanute* or *tatam*. He makes this suggestion: "*prāti vitānute bhadrām yugam yugāya* (breitet sich ein glückliches Geschlecht einem glücklichen entgegen)." I see no reason for that.

In speaking of the combination of two preverbs with a verb Delbrück<sup>38</sup> says: "Das Gewöhnliche ist, dass entweder die erste [Präposition] selbständig und betont bleibt, und die zweite unbetont sich dem Verbum anschliesst, oder dass beide unbetont mit dem Verbum verbunden werden." Since *prāti* is the second preverb and does bear an accent, it would seem that we must take it as a preverb modifying *vitāsvate* with an intensifying force rather than modifying *tanute* conjointly with *vi*.<sup>39</sup>

*bhadrāya bhadrām*: "for the fortunate [sacrificer] a fortunate [sacrifice]." *Bhadrāya* may be taken as the dative singular of a masculine noun meaning "the fortunate one (i.e. sacrificer or patron)."<sup>40</sup> From *yugāni* a *yugam* is to be supplied for *bhadrām*. The sense of the whole stanza is this: Sūrya and Ushas, the one pursuing the other as the bridegroom his bride, come to the place of sacrifice where the priests prepare sacrifices, where, for their fortunate patron, they prepare a sacrifice that brings good fortune.

<sup>38</sup> *Altindische Syntax*, Halle, 1886, p. 48.

<sup>39</sup> For a similar suggestion see Oldenberg, *loc. cit.*, footnote 2.

<sup>40</sup> There is also the possibility that *bhadrāya* may refer to Sūrya.

3. bhadrā ūśvā haritāḥ sūryasya  
 citrā etagvā anumūdyāsah  
 namasyānto divā ā prēthām astbuh  
 pāri dyāvaprthivī yanti sadyāḥ

Sūrya's shining golden steeds, resplendent, gleaming, meet for jubilant greeting, bearing adoration, have ascended the summit of heaven; they encircle heaven and earth in a day.

a. The *haritāḥ* "steeds" are the sun's rays, for they precede the orb itself and are conceived as drawing it. So also in stanzas 4 and 5. Cf. 4.13.3 and 1.50.8, 9. See Nāigh. 1.15 where the *haritāḥ* are defined as *haritavarṇā rūpmayāḥ prātar ādityasya* and Yaska, Nirukta 4.11, who calls them *ādityasya rūpmayāḥ*.

b. *etagvā*: "gleaming." See W. Neisser, *Zum Wörterbuch des Rigveda*, pp. 194-5 for a discussion of this word. He accepts the usual meaning "buntgeartet." See also M. Bloomfield, *AJP*, 17, p. 422 ff., who translates (p. 427) *haritāḥ sūryasya etagvāḥ* "the steeds of the sun consisting of bright rays."

4. tāt sūryasya devatvān tām mahitvām  
 madhyā kārtor vitatam sām jabhāra  
 yadéd āyukta haritāḥ sadhastbād  
 ād rātri vāsas tanute simāsmai

This the divinity of Sūrya, this his might: In the midst of the work [of Night] he has rolled up what had been spread out (i.e. the darkness). As soon as he has yoked [his] golden steeds from out [their] stall, then Night spreads her mantle over herself.

abcl. This stanza clearly refers to the sun's rising. With his divine power Sūrya interrupts the work of Night and rolls up the web of darkness that she has stretched over the earth. When he yokes his steeds from out of their stalls,<sup>42</sup> that is, when he rises, then Night takes from Sūrya the web that he has rolled up and wraps herself up (*tanute simāsmai*) in this mantle (*vāsas*) of darkness and retreats.<sup>43</sup> For similar, very illuminating passages that

<sup>42</sup> Cf. 7.60.3 *ayukta sapta haritāḥ sadhastbād yā im vāhanti sūryaḥ gṛhṇācīḥ*.

<sup>43</sup> There is no contradiction here. In lines ab Sūrya's divinity and might are explained as his ability to suspend Night's activity by rolling up the web of darkness that she has spread over the world. In lines cd Night, with the rising of the sun, spreads this web of darkness over herself like a cloak and withdraws.

reveal the sun in his rôle of dispeller of darkness and sustain our interpretation we may compare 2. 38. 4abc *punaḥ sam avyad vīlataṁ vayanāṁ madhāḥ kartar eṣ adhāc chakma dhīrah/ut samhāyāsthād* etc. "The Weaver (i. e. Night) has rolled together again what was extended; in the midst of [her] work the Wise One (i. e. Savitar) suspended her activity. Coming up, he has risen etc."; 4. 13. 3 *yaṁ śīm akruvan tamasa vipre* "whom (i. e. Sūrya) they made to cleave the darkness" and 4. 13. 4 *vāhīṣṭhebhīr vīharan yāsi tantum atavyayann asitam deva paśma/davidhato rāmayāḥ sūryasya carmedāvādhau tamo apav antaḥ* "With thy swiftest steeds thou dost go along, dividing (ripping) the web [of darkness], removing, O God, the dark-hued garment (i. e. the darkness). Sūrya's rays, shaking off [the darkness], have dipped the darkness, like a skin, in the waters"; also 7. 63. 1 *ud e eti subhago vīracakāḥ sādharāṇaḥ sūryo mānuṣāṇām/caḥṣur mītrasya varuṇasya devaī carmena yaḥ samarivyaḥ tamāṁsi* "Lovely, all-seeing, common to mankind, now does Sūrya rise, eye of Mitra and Varuṇa, the god who rolled up the darkness like a skin"; and finally 2. 17. 4cd where the reference is to an Indra endowed with solar attributes. Lines *c* and *d* read *ad rodast jyotiḥ vahnir ātanot śiṣyan tamāṁsi dūdhitā sam avayayat* "then the carrier (charioteer?) overspread heaven and earth with light; tying together the grim darkness, he rolled [it] up."

We have seen that this stanza has been difficult for almost every Vedicist. Geldner-Kaegi,<sup>41</sup> Hillebrandt,<sup>42</sup> Grassmann,<sup>43</sup> Ludwig,<sup>44</sup> Wilson,<sup>45</sup> *et al.* appear to have gone astray entirely. Peterson,<sup>46</sup> although correct in most details, has missed line *d*, rendering (p. 308), ". . . Night was spreading her garment over all." Oldenberg<sup>47</sup> is correct in his assumption that the subject of *sam jābhāru* can be no-one else than Sūrya, but his interpretation of the stanza as a whole is faulty. He translates (p. 95), "Das ist Sūrya's Göttlichkeit, das seine Grösse: mitten in Tag zog er sein ausgespanntes (Gewebe wieder) zusammen. Wenn er seine Rosse von ihrem Standort hinweg, angespannt hat—herreicht darum doch nicht ewiger Tag, sondern—die Nacht arbeitet ein Gewand für ihn." To this he appends the note "In *b* das vīlataṁ des Lichts, in *d* das der Finsternis.—Der Satz von *cd* sagt in der Tat fast: wenn die Sonne aufgegangen ist, wird es Nacht. Vermutlich gewollte Bizarrität." I let my translation and the parallel passages presented above speak for themselves against this view.

<sup>41</sup> *Op. cit.*<sup>42</sup> *Op. cit.*

K. Geldner in his *Vedische Studien*<sup>42</sup> offers a good translation save that he makes Night the subject of *sam jabhāra*, putting too much stress upon 2. 38. 4a.<sup>43</sup> In his *Der Rig Veda*, p. 138, he changes his mind and makes Sūrya the subject in his translation of the stanza, but in a footnote suggests that it may be Night. Furthermore, in his commentary to the stanza, he vitiates the generally good impression that his translation makes by saying: "4. Die Nacht muss bei Ankunft des Sūrya ihre Arbeit am Webstuhl der Zeit einstellen und es wird jetzt das Tagesgewand für Sūrya selbst ausgepannt. . . . d. Wohl eine ähnliche Ungenauigkeit wie in 1. 108. 4b für: Sie lässt den Sūrya für ihn selbst das Gewand ausbreiten. Oder *rātri* tritt hier ganz allgemein für den Zeitbegriff ein." In my opinion, a "loom of time" or a "day-garb" for Sūrya is not necessary for an understanding of our stanza, nor do I see any reason why line d should be considered an "inaccuracy" (it seems clear enough!). *Rātri* as a general usage for a "time-concept" also appears questionable.

In his translation of the Rig-Veda that is to be published in the

<sup>42</sup> Vol. 2, p. 189.

<sup>43</sup> It is true that in 2. 38. 4a it is not the sun but Night, the Weaver, who rolls up the web of darkness. However, if we glance at the last line of the preceding stanza (2. 38. 3d) which concerns the arrival of Night, we find *omv vrotay savitar mokṣa agat* "In accordance with the will of Savitar, the Releaser (i. e. Night), has come." On the basis of this declaration I believe it to be implied in line a of 2. 38. 4 that it is in accordance with the will of the sun that Night rolls up the web of darkness. That is, the sun causes the web of darkness to be rolled up by Night. In 2. 38. 4a the poet naturally makes Night the immediate agent because of the association of 2. 38. 3d; but in the final analysis the causation is solar. In 1. 115, however, there has been no mention of Night in the first three stanzas. Therefore, if we make Night the subject of *sam jabhāra* in 1. 115. 4b we must look some distance below to *rātri* in line d of this stanza. It is more reasonable that *sūryasya* of line a should supply the subject. Moreover, if that be so, then line b is directly and closely linked with line a, for we can take it as describing the operation and might of the divinity mentioned in line a. Furthermore, returning to line b of 2. 38. 4, we see that it is the sun who interrupts Night in the midst of her work (*madhṃ kartor*) just as here in 1. 115. 4b he interrupts her in the midst of her work (*madhṃ kartor*) by rolling up the darkness that she has spread over the earth. Finally, in our other parallel passages it is the sun who removes the darkness (4. 13. 4), who rolls it up like a skin (7. 63. 1), who ties it together and rolls it up (2. 17. 4).

Harvard Oriental Series<sup>47</sup> Geldner errs even more with the following two notes: "4c. *ayukta sadhasthāt* 'er hat vom Platze geschirrt' ist s. v. a. 'er hat umgeschirrt' (Sieg GGN. 1929 S. 5). Hier bezieht sich der Ausdruck auf das Umspannen am Abend, in 7. 60. 3 auf das am Morgen" and "4d. Die Nacht hüllt jetzt den Sūrya in ihr Gewand, d. h. in Dunkel; sie macht die Tages- zur Nachtsonne." On the basis of 1. 115. 1, 2, 3, 5, 6 and 7. 60. 3a there can be no doubt that 1. 115. 4c refers to the sun's activity at dawn. In his *Der Rig Veda*, loc. cit., Geldner says: "c kann nach 7. 60. 3 nur auf die Morgenzeit gehen." I agree with that view. In addition, everyone of the parallel passages cited above indubitably speaks of a rising sun.<sup>48</sup>

d. For *simā* Geldner<sup>49</sup> establishes the meaning "self." Oldenberg<sup>50</sup> concurs, in general, with Geldner's view. Wackernagel<sup>51</sup> accepts this meaning. To explain its place here in 1. 115. 4d in the light of the fact that the form is masculine and that only masculine forms of it occur, Geldner, *Der Rig Veda*, loc. cit., says in a footnote: "Mask. Dekl. statt fem. wie bei *śaś* in Bedeutung 'selbst.'" Also, in his proof sheet containing the translation of this hymn, I find Geldner saying: "Will man *simāśmai* auf die Nacht beziehen, so ist *simā* Subst. und wie *śaś* oder *ātman* Mask., auch wenn es sich auf ein Fem. bezieht." It is a reasonable explanation. One would be going out of one's way to make the line difficult by taking *simāśmai* with anything else than the subject *rātri*. Finally, it should be remarked that *tanute* is 3rd sing. middle.

5. *tān mitrāśya vāruṇasyābhicākṣe*  
*sūryo rūpān kṛṇute dyōr upāsthe*  
*anantām anyād rūśad asya pājah*  
*kṛṇām anyād dharitah sām bharanti*

So that Mitra and Varuṇa may see, Sūrya manifests this brilliant form in the midst of heaven. The imperishable one (i. e. day) [is] his bright light; his golden coursers roll up the other, the dark one (i. e. night).

<sup>47</sup> Professor C. R. Lanman very kindly loaned me some of the proof sheets.

<sup>48</sup> The original suggestion for this interpretation of the stanza was given to me by Professor H. H. Bender of Princeton.

<sup>49</sup> *Vedische Studien*, vol. 2, pp. 188 ff.

<sup>50</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 94-95.

<sup>51</sup> *Altindische Grammatik*, Göttingen, 1920, 3, 2, Teil, p. 578.

a. In stanza 1 of this hymn Sūrya is called "the eye of Mitra and Varuṇa" (as well as of Agni). He is similarly designated in 6.51.1, 7.63.1, and 10.37.1. In this passage he is described as manifesting himself so that Mitra and Varuṇa may see.

cd. We have already enumerated above the large number of scholars who seem to believe that the last two lines of this stanza concern the endless succession of bright daylight, at one time, and dark night, at another, brought by Sūrya's golden steeds. Ludwig<sup>22</sup> translates the verse thus: "dies des Mitra und des Varuṇa gestalt schafft Sūrya in des himels schoß, dasz man sie beschaue, unendlich ist die eine seine helle kraft, (und) die andere die dunkle; die falben schaffen es." Since the time of the *Siebenzig Lieder* Geldner has changed his mind about the translation and, in *Der Rigveda*, loc. cit., has the following: "Zum Sehen für Mitra und Varuṇa nimmt Sūrya diese Form im Schoße des Himmels an. Seine eine (Form) ist endloses weisses Licht, die andere schwarze legen die Falbinnen zusammen." In the proof sheet, which has been mentioned above, he has changed the wording of the whole stanza and his conception of the first two lines in this way: "Diese Farbe des Mitra, des Varuṇa läßt Sūrya im Schoße des Himmels schauen. Endlos weiss ist seine eine Erscheinung; die andere, schwarze legen die falben Stuten zusammen." His footnote in the proof sheet does not alter but merely enlarges the footnote, regarding the last two lines of the passage, in *Der Rigveda*, loc. cit. His interpretation is very much like that of the other scholars. He deduces that Sūrya has a double form. On the one hand he is the bright day-sun, and, on the other, he is the dark night-sun. One of his forms belongs to Mitra, the "Tagesgott" and the other to Varuṇa, the "Nachtgott." Hillebrandt and Maedonell appear to come closest to the mark, but, as has been demonstrated above, neither has the right interpretation in mind. Hillebrandt's version<sup>23</sup> is: "Unvergänglich ist das eine, seine strahlende Helle; das andere, das Dunkel, falten die Rosse zusammen." Maedonell<sup>24</sup> translates:

"One glow of his appears unending, splendid;  
His bay steeds roll the other up, the black one."

<sup>22</sup> *Op. cit.*, vol. 1, p. 142.

<sup>23</sup> *Lieder des Rigveda*, loc. cit. See also *Vedische Mythologie*, Breslau, 1929, vol. 2, p. 89 where he says that *śamśas* . . . *pāśas* refers to Aditi.

<sup>24</sup> *Hymns from the Rig Veda*, loc. cit.



The contrast of light and dark expressed by *anyad rūṣad* . . . *kṛṣṇam anyad* is evident. However, it does not seem to me that the reference is to a bright and dark aspect of the sun. I do not look upon *rūṣam* as the antecedent of *anyad* . . . *anyad*. An expressed antecedent appears not to be necessary. I suggest that *anyad* . . . *anyad* refers to day and night, light and darkness, and that this stanza, particularly these two lines, continues the theme of the preceding stanza. Sūrya's radiance is the bright daylight (cf. 6.49.3b); his steeds draw the darkness together. For the contrasting *anyad* . . . *anyad* "day . . . night" compare 10.37.3cd *prācinam anyad anu vartate raja ud anyena jyotiṣā ytsi sūrya* "In the east flees the one, the darkness; with the other, the radiant [day], thou dost rise, O Sūrya," i. e. as the sun appears in the east, the darkness disappears. We should note that the first line of the next stanza 10.37.4a is *yena sūrya jyotiṣā bādhase tamo* "With this radiance, O Sūrya, thou dost banish the darkness." (The Vedic bard does not hesitate to repeat his theme.) There is also to be compared 1.123.7 *apānyad ety abhī anyad eti viśurūpe āhanī sam carate/parikṣitoṣ tamo anyā guhākar adyoud ushā śokucātā rathena* "One (i. e. darkness) goes away, the other (i. e. day) comes; with their different hues, day and night come together (i. e. meet). The one of the two encompassers (i. e. day and night) removed the darkness. With gleaming chariot Ushas shone." (Here *anyā*: "the one" may be Ushas or, more probably, may be "day" conceived of as one of the two daughters, 6.49.3a, or one of the two sisters, 3.55.11c.—With regard to *parakṣitoṣ*: "of the two encompassers," despite 3.7.1 and 10.65.8 cited by Oldenberg, *Rigveda Noten*, p. 127, I do not believe that heaven and earth are meant. In my opinion the word designates the duality, day and night. Consider the immediately preceding dual *viśurūpe āhanī*.)

It should be remarked that the neuter *anyad* . . . *anyad* is quite common, almost conventional, for "day . . . night." Such is the case in 1.123.7 cited above. In addition, while day and night are called "sisters" in 3.55.11c, in 11b we read *tayor anyad vacate kṛṣṇam anyat* "of these two, one [is] hidden, the other [is] manifest." In most of these passages that have been listed, it will be noticed that, expressed or implied, there is the conception of the darkness disappearing as the daylight appears. I propose that we bear this in mind in our consideration of 1.115.5cd as well as of

1.113.4. Finally, as negative evidence in support of my interpretation of this verse, there might be adduced the fact that nowhere else in the Rîg-Veda does *anyad* . . . *anyad*, or any combination thereof, describe a dark and light form of the sun.

d. For the meaning of *saṃ bharaṇti* see *saṃ jabhāra* in the preceding stanza.

6. adyā devā ūditā sūryasya  
nir ānhasaḥ pīptā nir avadyāt  
tān no mītrō varuṇo māmahaṇtām  
āditiḥ sindhuḥ pṛthivī utā dyaūḥ

This day, O Gods, at Sūrya's rising, deliver us from misfortune, from evil. Let Mītra, Varuṇa, Aditi, Sindhu, Earth and Heaven, grant us this prayer.

cd. These lines are a conventional entreaty appearing 17 times elsewhere in the first book and once in the fourth book.



## THE VICTORY OF HAN CONFUCIANISM

HOMER H. DUBS

DUKE UNIVERSITY

IT WAS DURING the Former Han period that Confucianism developed from being the teaching of a few pedants in semi-retirement, at the end of the Chou period, to become the official philosophy of the government, which had to be adopted by anyone who hoped to enter public life. This victory set Confucianism on its way to become the dominating feature of Chinese culture and to affect profoundly a large portion of humanity. It is consequently interesting to determine just how and why this victory came about.

Professor Fung Yu-lan declares that this victory came about at the beginning of Emperor Wu's reign. In the "Memoir of Tung Chung-shu," the *History of the Former Han Dynasty* says, "When Emperor Wu had newly ascended [the throne], the Marquises of Wei-ch'i, [Tou Ying], and of Wu-an, [T'ien Fen], became his [Lieutenant] Chancellors, and Confucians flourished. When moreover [Tung] Chung-shu made [his famous] replies to the [examination] questions [set by Emperor Wu, he advocated] promoting and making known [the teachings of] Confucius and of repressing and degrading [the advocates of] other philosophies. The establishment of a government university and schools and the recommendation of [persons with] Abundant Talents and of Filially Pious and Incorrupt [persons to the imperial government] by the provinces and commanderies all arose from the proposals of [Tung] Chung-shu."<sup>1</sup> The Confucian victory can not however be fixed at any one particular date, nor did it occur in the reign of Emperor Wu. Rather it was a slow process of increasing completeness, which began with the Emperor Kao-tsu and was not complete until the time of the Emperor Yüan, more than a century and a half later. The *History of the Former Han Dynasty*, with its detailed reports concerning the intellectual and political life of the period, gives us a fairly complete account of the way this victory was achieved.

<sup>1</sup> *Han-shu*, Chapter 51, folio 20 verso, 21 recto, in Wang Hsien-ch'ien's edition, the *Ch'ien-Han-shu Pu-shu*, abbreviated HS 51: 20b, 21a. D. Bodde, in his translation of Fung Yu-lan's *History of Chinese Philosophy*, p. 17, has failed to translate exactly this condensed passage.

I have previously given a report of Emperor Kao-tsu's attitude towards Confucianism.<sup>2</sup> He began with a violent prejudice against Confucians but with an intimate younger half-brother who had a thorough Confucian education. The Confucians had opposed and criticized the First Emperor of the Ch'in dynasty, and the latter had repressed them violently, burning the *Book of Odes* and the *Book of History* and driving outstanding Confucians into flight or retirement. Because of the Ch'in dynasty's attitude, Confucians naturally assisted Kao-tsu. The Ch'in dynasty maintained seventy learned men at court, giving them the title of *Erudit* (*Po-shih*). One of them, Shu-sun T'ung, was captured and surrendered in turn to Hsiang Yü and to Kao-tsu. He later arranged Kao-tsu's court ceremonies. In his conflict with Hsiang Yü, Kao-tsu received valuable advice from Confucians, who pointed out to him the great advantage of employing the Confucian doctrine of Heaven's Mandate against the tyranny of the Ch'in ruler. Kao-tsu, at the instance of his Chancellor of State, Hsiao Ho, seems first to have asked his Administrators in the provinces to recommend persons with excellent reputations and manifest virtue to the imperial government for positions in the bureaucracy, which procedure initiated the examination system, so influential in promoting Confucianism.

Li Yi-chi and Lu Chia, two of Kao-tsu's paladins, were sincere Confucians. The latter wrote a thoroughly Confucian book at Kao-tsu's request, and was highly praised and rewarded for it. Thus Kao-tsu, beginning with an antipathy to Confucians, ended by giving them high position and favoring them.

Under the next two rulers, Kao-tsu's son and wife, Emperor Hui and the Empress Dowager née Lü, Confucianism suffered a set-back. Ts'ao Ts'an, the outstanding Lieutenant Chancellor (*Ch'eng-hsiang*, the highest minister) during this period, was a Taoist; the Confucians opposed the Empress Dowager's usurpation of the imperial power and went into retirement.

With the Empress Dowager's death and the accession of Emperor Wen, Confucians again became influential. Lu Chia was important in enthroning this Emperor. The new Emperor encouraged learning and continued many Confucian practices. But he felt that he must be impartial towards all the various philosophies

<sup>2</sup> *JAOS* 57 (1937), 172-180.

current at the time; hence he established Erudits to be specialists upon these various philosophies, until he is said to have had seventy Erudits. Yet Emperor Wen was probably more influenced by Confucianism than by any other single teaching. Later Confucians have considered him a saint. Chia Yi, who was more a Confucian than a Taoist, influenced Emperor Wen greatly. Emperor Wen moreover extended the examination system by having the commanderies send capable persons to the imperial court, among whom the Emperor selected officials by setting examinations for them at the capital. In his questions, the Emperor invited the candidates to give him advice upon governmental policies. Thus Confucianism was merely one of the most influential of the many tendencies in Emperor Wen's government.

In the imperial examination of 165 B. C., Ch'ao Ts'o took the first place. He had been a favorite of the Heir-apparent, the future Emperor Ching, had become his Household Steward, and was known as the "bag of wisdom." In his youth he had studied the legalist philosophy and that of names and circumstances; when someone was needed to receive from the aged Master Fu the Confucian tradition concerning the *Book of History*, Ch'ao Ts'o was sent. Like Chia Yi, he was thus conversant with several philosophies, in this respect perhaps typical of the age. The future Emperor Ching favored Ch'ao Ts'o greatly, and when he came to the throne, gave Ch'ao Ts'o high office. As a whole, Emperor Ching, however, was not as favorable to Confucianism as his father had been.

In 141 B. C., the youthful Emperor Wu came to the throne. He was only in his sixteenth year, and had been given a good classical education, which had naturally included a study of Chinese literature, the Confucian classics. His Junior Tutor had been Wang Tsang, a disciple of Shen P'ei, the famous Confucian authority on the *Book of Odes*. The Emperor was greatly interested in learning, literature, and poetry; he himself later wrote some very creditable poetry. He was somewhat imperious and very ambitious. After having been given such an education, he was naturally much impressed by Confucianism, so much so that at first, at the suggestion of Tung Chung-shu, he seems to have wanted to make Confucianism the sole philosophy of the government. In this resolve, he was probably swayed very largely by his advisers,

especially by Wang Tsang, for in later years the Emperor altered his attitude to Confucianism greatly. The most serious obstacle to this plan was the fact that the Emperor's grandmother, the Grand Empress Dowager née Tou, was a devotee of Lao-tzu. Because of the current exaltation of filial piety, her influence at the court was quite as strong as that of the Emperor. The Confucian party hence compromised by attacking only the philosophy they considered most dangerous and most opposed to the Confucian tradition, namely the Legalist school, which had been that espoused by the Ch'in dynasty, from whose institutions the Han dynasty had taken its governmental organization. Hence they induced the aged and faithful but incompetent Lieutenant Chancellor Wei Wan to memorialize the throne that all those officials and candidates should be dismissed who had specialized in the lore of Shen Pu-hai, Shang Yang, Han Fei, Su Ch'in, and Chang Yi, all of whom were Legalists. Emperor Wu naturally ratified and enacted this proposal.<sup>2</sup> Pan Ku says plainly that the intention of this edict was to eliminate all non-Confucians from the government service.<sup>3</sup>

Half a year later, Emperor Wu dismissed Wei Wan for incompetence and appointed in his place Tou Ying, a son of a first cousin of the Grand Empress Dowager, who had distinguished himself by putting down a serious rebellion in the preceding reign, but had not previously been given high civil office because of his outspokenness and pride. The Emperor's maternal half-uncle, T'ien Fen, was made Grand Commandant (*T'ai-wei*), a position only inferior in power to that of the Lieutenant Chancellor. The Grand Empress Dowager was induced to suggest this arrangement.<sup>4</sup>

Tou Ying favored Confucianism highly; T'ien Fen had in his youth studied the works of a certain P'an Yü, an eclectic philosopher who combined the doctrines of the Confucians, the Mohists, legalists, and the school of names. The greatest ministers thus all favored Confucianism. They made a clean sweep of the previous officials, and selected for the third most influential court position, that of Grandee Secretary (*Yü-shih Ta-fu*), Chao Wan, another disciple of the Confucian authority Shen P'ei. Wang Tsang was Chief of the Gentlemen-at-the-Palace (*Lang-chung-ling*), a position that enabled him to come into intimate contact with Emperor Wu. Thus Confucians controlled the government.

<sup>2</sup> HS 6: 1b.<sup>3</sup> HS 6: 39a.<sup>4</sup> HS 52: 4a.

They proceeded to introduce Confucian practises, and proposed the establishment of a *Ming-t'ang*, a ceremonial building said to have been used in Chou times for sacrifices and court receptions. Emperor Wu liked ceremonies and pomp; Confucianism emphasized such ceremonials. Chao Wan and Wang Tsang needed expert aid in this project, so they persuaded Emperor Wu to send for their teacher, Shen P'ei. A messenger was sent with presents of silk and jade circlets (*pi*), and with a comfortable chariot with seats, with its wheels bound with rushes, and a team of four horses, to invite the eighty-odd year old Confucian authority to court. His two outstanding disciples followed him in a one-horse chariot. When he arrived at court, Emperor Wu asked him to state the source of good and bad government. The old man replied, "The person who governs well should not speak much, and should merely pay attention and strive hard at what he does." The young emperor thought highly of his own literary ability, so that he was much displeased by the old man's reproof. The Emperor had however summoned Shen P'ei, so made him a Grand Palace Grandee (*T'ai-chung-ta-fu*), a high honorary position, and installed him in the hostel at the capital for the King of Lu. He then ordered the discussion of a *Ming-t'ang*.

Meanwhile the Confucian clique at the court had found itself hampered by the influence of the nobles at the capital. The Confucians accordingly revived a law enacted by Emperor Wen under Confucian influence to the effect that nobles, especially marquises, should reside at their estates in order to guide and care for their people. Most of the nobles had however established themselves at the center of civilization and luxury in the imperial capital, did not wish to leave it, and concerned themselves only with receiving the taxes from their estates. On account of the fear of rebellion, the administrators of noble estates were all appointed by the imperial government, so that the nobles could have had little influence upon their people. Emperor Ching had consequently rescinded Emperor Wen's law. Most of the marquises had moreover married imperial princesses, hence they took their cause to their relative, the Grand Empress Dowager née Tou, and slandered Tou Ying to her. Tou Ying also offended his own clan by discriminating among its members, erasing from the family record the names of those who were not upright.



In order to check the influence of the Grand Empress Dowager, the Confucians now asked for the enactment of a law to the effect that government affairs should not be brought to the attention of an Empress Dowager, i. e., that female influence should be excluded from the government. Thus the issue was joined. Tou Ying and his party were trying to exalt Confucianism and suppress Taoism as well as legalism; the Grand Empress Dowager was an ardent Taoist. When the Grand Empress Dowager heard of the Confucians' request, she was furious; Emperor Wu, who had probably become somewhat tired of the Confucians, sent Wang Tsang and Chao Wan to jail, where they were compelled to commit suicide; Tou Ying and T'ien Fen were dismissed. The Confucians could not withstand the Emperor's grandmother.\*

She died in 134 B. C., four years later, a few months after which Emperor Wu, possibly at the suggestion of T'ien Fen, who had again become influential, established Erudits who specialized in each of the five Confucian classics. The next year T'ien Fen became Lieutenant Chancellor. He appointed several hundred Confucians to office and degraded Taoists.<sup>7</sup> Yet there continued to be Taoists in the court, for there had been no ban put upon them—Chi Yen had been an outsider to Emperor Wu when the latter had been Heir-apparent and continued by his frank criticism to inspire the Emperor with respect and even with fear. Szu-ma T'an and his son, the historian Szu-ma Ch'ien, were both Taoists and kept their posts as Grand Astrologer (*T'ai-shih*). The Mohist school seems to have exercised little influence, if it still existed, which is doubtful, for no adherent of this school is mentioned among the Emperor Wu's officials, although it is mentioned by Szu-ma T'an in his survey and comparison of the six philosophical schools.<sup>8</sup>

Through his liking for scholarship and literary men, Emperor Wu next came into touch with the Confucian Kung-sun Hung. The latter was a poor boy who had studied the various commentaries on the *Spring and Autumn*, and was recommended to the imperial court by his home state. His examination was placed in the lowest class by the Grand Master of Ceremonies (*T'ai-ch'ung*); when Emperor Wu reread the replies, he was much

\* *HS* 52: 1a-4b.

<sup>7</sup> Cf. *HS* 88: 35.

<sup>8</sup> Cf. *Shih-chi*, abbreviated *SC*, ch. 130; *HS* 92: 6a-7a.

struck by the literary quality of Kung-sun Hung's reply, promoted it to the first reply of the first class, and summoned him to an audience. He proved to be a Confucian who knew how to clothe displeasing speech in tactful language, and thereby secured the Emperor Wu's favor. Tung Chung-shu called him a flatterer. He was gradually advanced until Emperor Wu made him a marquis and the Lieutenant Chancellor.

Tung Chung-shu had previously suggested to Emperor Wu the establishment of a government university; sometime during the time that Kung-sun Hung was Lieutenant Chancellor in 124-121 B. C., the latter renewed the suggestion and drafted the memorial which was approved by the Emperor and became the charter of the Imperial University (*T'ai-hsüeh*). It was located seven li northwest of the capital. The masters were the Erudits; they or their Disciples did the teaching.\* The Grand Master of Ceremonies was ordered to select fifty persons who were in their 18th year or over, in good health and upright in character. They were entitled the Disciples of the Erudits (*Po-shih Ti-tzu*) and were exempted from taxes and service. The Administrators of Commanderies (*Chün T'ai-shou*) and Chancellors of Kingdoms (*Kuo Hsiang*) were ordered to select suitable students who showed a love of learning and good character and to send them to the Grand Master of Ceremonies at the imperial capital with the persons who brought the yearly accounts to the capital; these students were to study at the Imperial University for one year like the Disciples, whereupon they were to be examined. Those who showed themselves expert in one classic or more were entitled Literary Scholars (*Wen-hsüeh*) or Authorities upon Ancient Matters (*Chang-ku*). Those who did not attain such a high rank might be made Gentlemen-of-the-Palace (*Lang-chung*), who were imperial attendants and might be selected for office. The name of a person who showed abundant talent to an extraordinary degree (*Hsiu-ts'ai yi-leng*) might be reported to the throne for a substantial office. Those

\* It is quite likely that there were only five Erudits at this time, namely those for the five Confucian classics. It was customary for a great scholar to do most of his teaching through his more advanced disciples; Tung Chung-shu is said to have shut himself up to study and to have helped only his more advanced disciples; his more recent disciples could only get help from the more advanced ones, so that some of his disciples did not even see his face. Cf. HS 56: 1a.

who had not applied themselves to studying or had shown themselves of such small ability that they could not even become expert in one Classic were immediately dismissed. Literary Scholars or Authorities upon Ancient Matters might be given minor positions in the official bureaucracy.<sup>10</sup>

There was thus established in the capital an institution for the training of officials, capable graduates of which automatically entered the government service. The curriculum and teachers of this institution were all Confucian, so that, as Szu-ma Ch'ien says, "From this time on, most of the minor officials in the offices of the ministers and officials at the capital were Literary Scholars." Confucian learning thus became the means whereby most of the lower positions in the bureaucracy were filled, and so in time permeated the government.

Yet Emperor Wu was far from being a thorough-going Confucian. Indeed, in many respects he acted contrary to Confucian ideals. His widespread military expeditions were un-Confucian. His heavy taxes and legal oppression of the people were un-Confucian. His establishment of the salt and iron government monopolies, the monopoly on fermented liquors, and the Bureau of Equalization and Standards, whereby the government speculated in goods, were specifically Legalist measures. His cultivation of magicians, his seeking for supernatural beings, his erection of buildings for magical purposes, such as the Fei-lien Lodge, the Yi-yen-shou Lodge, and the T'ung-t'ien T'ai (the Terrace that Communicates with Heaven) and his indulgence in superstitious sacrifices were Taoist measures.<sup>11</sup> His elaborate development of laws was a measure stressed by the school of names and circumstances (a Legalist school). In many ways, in his conquests, in his tours of the empire, in his ascent of Mt. T'ai, and in his severe government, he seems deliberately to have imitated the First Em-

<sup>10</sup> Cf. *HS* 88: 35-6a.

<sup>11</sup> Taoism in the time of Emperor Wu was far from being merely the atheistic philosophy of Lao-tzu. Szu-ma Tan, one of Emperor Wu's officials, in his "Discussion of the Six Schools," states the following as the essential Taoist doctrine, "The spirits [and gods] are the fundamental factor in life. . . . How could [anyone] be successful [in government] who fails first to determine [who] are its spirits [and gods, and treat them properly], and yet says, 'I have the means whereby to govern the empire well!'" *SC* ch. 130; *HS* 62: 8a.

peror of the Ch'in dynasty, who was a Legalist. In 110 B.C., when the fifty-odd Confucians he had summoned could not agree on what should be the ceremonies and utensils for the sacrifices *feng* and *shan*, chiefly because these Confucians restrained themselves by historical principles and were unwilling to go beyond what ancient texts declared, Emperor Wu dismissed them all and himself fixed the rites for these sacrifices.<sup>12</sup> Thus Emperor Wu was in reality influenced by all the current doctrines, and did not hesitate to depart from Confucian principles. While his reign marks the beginning of strong Confucian influence in the government, that influence was far from being victorious at this time.

The next step towards the Confucian victory occurred in the reign of Emperor Hsüan, who came to the throne almost by accident in 74 B.C., thirteen years after Emperor Wu died. This boy had been disinherited because of his grandfather's rebellion against Emperor Wu, and had been brought up by some faithful officials. He had been given a good education, which naturally included a study of Chinese literature, so that he had studied the *Analects*, the *Classic of Filial Piety*, and the *Book of Odes*. Thus he had been indoctrinated with Confucianism, because Confucians had taken to themselves the exposition of the best Chinese literary treasures and had made those treasures into Confucian books. After he began to rule, he chose Confucians for his officials and advisers. Each of his Lieutenant Chancellors had made a special study of some Classic, although they were not primarily scholars. When calamities, such as earthquakes, occurred, he did the typically Confucian thing of sending for those Confucians who professed to be able to interpret such visitations as indicating the will of Heaven. Because his grandfather had been interested in the *Ku-liang Commentary* on the *Spring and Autumn*, the Emperor Hsüan revived its study and summoned its teachers to the Imperial Palace, where he ordered ten of his gentlemen to study it, which they did consecutively for more than ten years. Comparison of it with the then authoritative *Kung-yang Commentary* (the *Tso-chuan* had not yet become popular or studied by important scholars), led to a realization of the discrepancies be-

<sup>12</sup> Cf. *Mémoires Historiques* (abbreviated *MA.*) III, 498; *HS* 25 A: 35b; 58: 12a, b, 13a.

tween different interpretations of the various classics. Emperor Hsüan accordingly summoned to the capital all the outstanding authorities upon the Confucian classics to discuss the meaning of these classics in the imperial presence. The discussions began in the Palace Hall and were transferred to the Shih-ch'ü Pavilion, under the presidency of the Grand Tutor to the Heir Apparent (*T'ai-su T'ai-fu*). Hsiao Wang-chih, who was famous for his scholarship in all five classics. The discussions lasted two years; twenty-two persons are mentioned in various places as having participated as authorities in this famous discussion. In cases of otherwise irreconcilable disputes, Emperor Hsüan seems himself to have decided upon the correct interpretation. The decisions of this Confucian council were memorialized to the Emperor and were ratified by him in 53 a. c. They are listed among the books in the Private Imperial Library. In this way an official interpretation for the classics was reached. Other interpretations were not proscribed, but the official interpretation was doubtless taught in the Imperial University and learned by all candidates for official position, for use in the examination. Consequently it monopolized men's minds in the same way that Chu Hsi's interpretation became dominant at a later period. At the same time, the number of Erudits and Disciples, i. e. the teachers in the Imperial University, was doubled and Erudits were established for special interpretations of certain classics.<sup>12</sup>

Thus at the end of Emperor Hsüan's reign, the occupants of the high government posts had all had a Confucian training, the Imperial University was continuing to fill the bureaucracy with Confucian scholars, and a Confucian council had fixed the official interpretation of the Classics, which became authoritative for the government. Yet Emperor Hsüan was not a thorough-going Confucian and did not wholeheartedly approve of this doctrine. He was primarily a practical man who had lived among the common people before he came to the throne, and knew the danger of idealistic impracticality inherent in Confucian teaching. Hence he took as his own ideal of government, not merely Confucian principles, but also the conduct of the very un-Confucian practical statesmen during *Spring and Autumn* times. He was in-

<sup>12</sup> Cf. *HS* 8: 23a; 88: 23b, 24a; 38: 7a; 36: 7a; 73: 8a; 30: 7a, 12b, 17a, 20a, 21b.

terested in the penological terminology discussed by the legalist school of names and circumstances, and most of his high officials used these legalist principles as well as Confucian principles in their government. Pan Ku represents him as telling his Heir-apparent that the institutes and laws of the Han dynasty had been taken from both non-Confucian and Confucian teachings and that the Confucian principle of using merely moral suasion to bring about conformity to right principles was utterly impractical; the Confucian love of the ancient and disapproval of the present results in confusion.<sup>14</sup> This drastic criticism of Confucianism, found today in the writings of a Confucian historian, indicates well the attitude practical men then took towards Confucianism.

Yet Emperor Hsüan had so well prepared the way for the victory of Confucianism that this victory could not be delayed. He had given his son and Heir Confucian tutors. This Emperor Yüan was brought up in the Palace and had had little contact with the outer world, so that Confucianism did not appear impractical to him. When he came to the throne, he proposed immediately to make Confucian reforms. The influence of the Emperor's maternal relatives, who were in control of the army, and of the Emperor's favorite eunuch, was able to check the Confucian influence for a time. Emperor Yüan knew little of government, depending upon this eunuch to decide government matters, and spent most of his time enjoying himself in the imperial harem. This eunuch was even able to trick the Emperor into sending the outstanding Confucian, Hsiao Wang-chih, to his death. The criticism that resulted, however led this eunuch to favor other famous Confucians, and so, during most of the Emperor Yüan's reign, Confucian influence was allowed to make important reforms in the government. In this period it became the practise for the Superintendent of the Imperial Household (*Kuang-lu-hsün*) yearly to rank the various members of the imperial retinue according to the standards of a group of four Confucian virtues. Since the commonest way of entering government service was by spending a period as a member of the large imperial retinue, in order that the emperor might have a personal acquaintance with his officials, it was natural, when the bureaucracy and consequently the imperial retinue became so large that an emperor could not know individually all the

<sup>14</sup> *CL HS* 9: 1b.



prospective candidates (it included as many as a thousand persons) that a second and moral test should have been added after the first and literary examination.<sup>16</sup> In the next reign, that of the Emperor Ch'eng, Confucian influence was equally important. His cousin Wang Mang, who sought to usurp the throne, found it advisable to adopt all sorts of Confucian practises. He indeed endeavored to secure public approval by being more Confucian than even the Han emperors had been, and kept reforming the imperial administration to give it more and more Confucian features. His outstanding reforms were merely Confucian ideals translated into governmental practises. In thus attracting the approval of educated men, Wang Mang was so successful that the leaders of the Later Han dynasty largely followed his example. The rulers of that dynasty were even more Confucian than the last emperors of the Former Han dynasty and Confucian influence dominated the whole Later Han period.

Thus the victory of Confucianism was a gradual process. It began when Kao-tsu found Confucians assisting him in overthrowing the anti-Confucian Ch'in dynasty. The early Han emperors encouraged all the various philosophies of the time. Emperor Wu had a Confucian education, and, in a fit of youthful enthusiasm, endeavored to make Confucianism the philosophy of the government. This attempt was frustrated by the Emperor's grandmother, while the Emperor himself lost his first enthusiasm for Confucianism and became influenced by various other doctrines. His love for literature and literary men, however, continued to attract him to Confucians, and Kung-sun Hung induced the Emperor to establish a Confucian Imperial University, which gradually distributed Confucian literati among the minor offices in the government. Emperor Hsiao likewise had had a Confucian education; he favored Confucianism highly, enlarged the Imperial University, and fixed upon an official interpretation to the Confucian Classics. But he considered Confucian principles impractical for government, and so checked their influence by legalist principles. The final victory of Confucianism did not come until the reign of his son, Emperor Yüan. Thereafter Confucian doctrines became the sole guide for princes. The usurper Wang Mang and the revived Later Han dynasty both honored these doctrines,

<sup>16</sup> Cf. *HS* 2: 7a & b, 7, 5; also 5: n. 9, 9.



and they continued to dominate the government until the end of that dynasty.

We can now see the causes that brought about the victory of Confucianism. In the first place, Confucianism was admirably adopted to be the official philosophy of an imperial government. Confucius was himself a government official and his pupils were young men whose future lay mostly in official life. Consequently he stressed and taught ideals of good government. His ethics was aristocratic, that of the ruler who should be kind (*jen*) to his people, and of the subject who should be filial (*hsiao*), loyal (*chung*), and decorous (*hi*) to his ruler. In the second place, Confucius, as a good teacher, was himself a learned man, and those of his disciples who did not enter political life became the teachers of China. Confucius taught the literature of his people; the Confucians made themselves the scholarly authorities and teachers of that literature. Thus ancient Chinese literature, especially the best of it, became the literature of Confucianism, and was interpreted to teach Confucian lessons. Hence anyone who became interested in literature or scholarship naturally gravitated to the Confucians, for they possessed the scholarly traditions of the country, and anyone who acquired a scholarly education was inevitably given a Confucian indoctrination. In times of warfare, such as that towards the end of the period of Contending States, scholarship was unimportant, and Confucianism declined; but when peace was restored, so that scholarship became useful, Confucianism revived. Because Confucians inevitably became the tutors of the Heirs to the throne, rulers became indoctrinated in Confucian ideals. Even though a particular ruler might not be altogether Confucian, his son, who was affected by both his father's example and the influence of his Confucian tutor, was likely to be more Confucian, until the dynasty became Confucian.

In the third place, certain governmental institutions put a premium upon Confucianism. In the time of Emperor Wen, it became the practise for the Emperor periodically to invite the provinces to send to him able persons; he selected among them by requiring them to write essays on various subjects connected with government. The examination system, even in this early form, thus put a high premium upon literary ability, and hence upon a Confucian training. It was thus natural that the government

should have been led to establish schools, in particular the Imperial University, graduates from which filled the bureaucracy with learned Confucians. Since Confucians were learned men, they naturally graded the examinations, and kept non-Confucians out of the bureaucracy, not by any proscription, but by the simple device of ploughing non-Confucians.

In the fourth place, after the advantages of Confucianism had been recognized, the advantage of unifying the country intellectually by making one system of thought current among all educated men led to the elevation of Confucianism. Shortly after Emperor Wu ascended the throne, in 141 B. C., Tung Chung-shu, in his reply to the Imperial examination, presented his famous memorials concerning statecraft. One of the principles he advocated was that there should be an intellectual unification of the country by destroying all the non-Confucian philosophies.<sup>16</sup> These memorials seem to have made a deep impression upon Emperor Wu, for he immediately acted upon them, proscribing Legalism and elevating Confucians to be his highest officials. An intellectual unification had been previously attempted by Li Szu, the famous minister of the First Emperor, when in 213 B. C. he recommended the burning of the books and the punishment of any one who criticized the Ch'in régime. The Confucians had roundly condemned this procedure. Emperor Wu was ambitious to equal the First Emperor in greatness; he was probably not loathe similarly to unify the thought of his own time. While Emperor Wu later became lukewarm towards Confucianism, Emperor Hsüan was undoubtedly reminded of Tung Chung-shu's proposal and certainly recognized the advantages of this policy.

These four factors first demonstrated their effectiveness in Former Han times. They have undoubtedly continued to operate throughout Chinese history. At the end of the Later Han period, there seems to have been a collapse of Confucianism because sincere and long-continued attempts to put it into practise had failed to prevent the collapse of the dynasty; the ensuing long period of disorder naturally also brought about the decay of Confucianism. When peace was restored in the T'ang period, these four factors again brought Confucianism to the front, although the dynasty's

<sup>16</sup> Cf. Feng Yu-lan, *History of Chinese Philosophy*, trans. D. Bodde, p. 16 f.; W. Seufert in *Mitteil. d. Seminar f. Orient. Sprache*, 1922, pp. 1-50.

supposed descent from Lao-tzu kept it from becoming Confucian. In the next great dynasty, the Sung, there was naturally another peak of Confucian influence. That ascendancy continued as long as peace enabled scholarship to be prized. Only in the modern period, when literature and learning have ceased to be synonymous with Confucian teaching and China has ceased to be an empire, has there been a marked break in the influence of Confucianism. In China, as in Europe, not until the advent of modern science put into man's hands another tool for reaching truth, has the power of the ancient authoritarian world-view been broken.



# NOTES ON PRE-HURRIAN TEXTS FROM NUZI<sup>1</sup>

JULIUS LEWY

HEBREW UNION COLLEGE

FOLLOWING the excavation of considerable parts of the ancient Hurrian city of Nuzi by the joint expedition of the Harvard Semitic Museum, the Fogg Art Museum, and the American School of Oriental Research in Baghdad, Professor Pfeiffer, Director of the expedition during the season of 1928, proceeded to make soundings below the Hurrian level, the excavation of which had proved so successful. These soundings yielded but a few cuneiform tablets; their content, however, was so different from that of the usual Nuzi texts that a careful investigation of the lower strata down to virgin soil was indicated. It was carried out during the season of 1930-31 by Mr. Richard F. S. Starr of the Fogg Museum, as director, and Professor Meek as epigrapher. The epigraphic results fill this new volume of the Harvard Semitic Series, and Professor Meek will be heartily congratulated by all Assyriologists for its prompt presentation. His task as editor was difficult, since the content of the new inscriptions raises many new questions, which he approached with remarkable courage and success. If we disagree in comparatively many cases, and sometimes suggest different conclusions, we wish to say at the outset that we are greatly indebted to the stimulating remarks of the editor of these perplexing inscriptions.

With the exception of the last text (no. 231) all inscriptions are business records or letters dating from the third millennium B. C. By far the largest part (nos. 1-222) belongs indeed to the Old Akkadian period. Judging from the external features of the editor's very elegant copies—they "are naturally clearer than the originals" (p. ix)—one might assume at first sight that these records are not so old, and attribute them (with Weidner, *Archiv für Orientforschung* VII. 135) to the time of the Third Dynasty of Ur. In his valuable general introduction (pp. vii-xxvi) and in more detailed notes on the contents of the tablets (pp. xlii-lxii),

<sup>1</sup> *Excavations at Nuzi*. Conducted by the Semitic Museum and the Fogg Art Museum of Harvard University, with the Coöperation of the American School of Oriental Research at Baghdad. Volume III: *Old Akkadian, Sumerian, and Cappadocian Texts from Nuzi*. By THEOPHILE JAMES MECK. (Harvard Semitic Series, Vol. X.) Pp. lxx with xciv plates. Cambridge, U. S. A.: HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS, 1935. \$6.00.

Professor Meek proves, however, that his first remarks concerning the age and the character of the texts (*BASOR* 42. 7 ff., 48. 2 ff.) were correct: The few month-names appearing in one or the other of the business notes recur, at least in part, in Old Akkadian texts from Babylonia. Some (in part fragmentary) letters (nos. 5-12), most of them from a certain *Da-da* to one *Ni-ni* (Meek prefers the reading *I-I*), show the unmistakable characteristics of the Old Akkadian epoch.

The content of the various commercial, or rather administrative, notes and lists is rather uniform, since most of them record the receipt or the disbursement of barley, emmer, wheat, malt, and other products to workers in public service. Their historical value is nevertheless considerable, because they contain a great number of proper names. We note especially the repeated references to *Aššur* (nos. 160 IV 5; 169, 15) and *Aḫ-ṭab* of *Aššur* (*A-ḫu-ṭab A-šūr<sup>ki</sup>*; see particularly no. 153 X 1 f.). These references are of interest not only as the oldest occurrences of the name of that important city, but also because the name *Aḫ-ṭab* points to the presence of Semites in *Aššur* in centuries from which historical inscriptions from *Aššur* are still lacking. This corroborates the view of those who hold that *Aššur* was never a Sumerian city and that the Assyrian dialect and the other characteristics by which the Assyrians of the second and first millennia are distinguished from their Babylonian neighbors result from an early separation of the Assyrians from the Akkadians of northern Babylonia. Another city name, *Ga-sūr<sup>ki</sup>* (*Ga-SAG + GUNU<sup>ki</sup>*, once written *Ga-SAG<sup>ki</sup>*) occurs so frequently that Meek considers it as the pre-Hurrian name of Nuzi. He also noticed at once (p. x) that the same name recurs as *Ga-SAG<sup>ki</sup>* in the oldest so-called historical inscription from *Aššur*, the alabaster tablet of Ilti. This important observation, to which we shall return below (p. 460), has recently (*Revue d'Assyriologie* 34, 65) been supplemented by his statement that *Ga-sūr<sup>ki</sup>* appears also in an old tablet from Tello, published as early as 1903 by Thureau-Dangin, where, as Gelb has seen, a ruler of this city is mentioned.

Most of the personal names are Semitic, thus showing that Yalghan Teps (Nuzi) had been Semitic or Semitized from early times. If Meek is inclined, as appears from p. xiv, to see therein the achievement of Sargon of Akkad who transformed Lugal-zaggisi's mighty empire "almost over night from a Sumerian to a

Semitic realm," he overlooks the fact that Lugalzaggisi, too, has left Akkadian inscriptions, a fact that points, of course, to an early Semitization of large parts of Mesopotamia even before the triumph of the great Sargon. (Cf. ZA 38. 260 ff.) It is therefore quite possible that the Semitic element in the Gasur district goes back to pre-Sargonic times. On the interesting question as to whether Western Semites (Amorites) made up any considerable part of the population, Meek inclines towards a negative answer (p. XIV). Such characteristic West Semitic names as *Sá-lim-be-lí* (no. 153 IV 9 and elsewhere) point, however, in the opposite direction. His new interpretation of the names *I-da-be-lí* and *I-da-ilí* (AN), in the first compound of which he sees an Old Akkadian form \**idá* (as the equivalent of later *idī*), is not convincing, since it does not account for the later names in which the compound *i-da* occurs either as *a-da* or as *ed-da* and *e-da*.<sup>2</sup> Moreover, the close relations between the Old Akkadian names in the Obelisk of Manishtusu and the new onomastic material from Nuzi are not as conclusive in this respect as is assumed by the author; for many of the names in question recur in the Old Assyrian tablets among the writers of which there was doubtless an Assyrianized, but demonstrably Amorite element.<sup>3</sup> To be sure, the strength of the Amorites in the Eastern provinces of the Akkadian empire during the time of the Akkad and the Ur III Dynasties has not been determined by any

<sup>2</sup> Cf. ZA 38. 263 ff. Incidentally it may be noted that Meek contradicts himself when he assumes, on the one hand, the occurrence of a perfect (or present?) from *idá* in Old Akkadian names, but denies, on the other hand, in his above-quoted more recent "Notes on the Early Texts from Nuzi" the possibility that the element *i-di* of Old Assyrian and Old Akkadian names may come from *undūm* (*idá*) "to know," mainly because he misses an Old Assyrian equivalent of such later names as *Iddin-Aškur*. Without insisting on the correctness of our explanation of the various Old Assyrian and Old Akkadian names composed of *i-di* + divine name, or divine name + *i-di*, attention may be called to the fact that *Iddin-Aškur* has an unmistakable Old Assyrian correspondence in *E-di-is-Ašur* and *Id-na-Ašur*, see *MVAOG* 33. 220 note b.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Revue de l'Histoire des Religions* CX (1934) pp. 39 ff. We should like to submit, at this occasion, that the remarks of Meek (p. xv) on "the use of prefixed surname elements" like DAM "wife of" must be corrected in so far as the Old Assyrian tablets are concerned. We refer, e.g., to *ETHaAn* 35, 1 ff. where one reads "out of the 9 sacks (and) 1 jar of barley(?) ... they gave 3 jars to the wife of Buzazu [i. e., so to speak, "Mrs. Buzazu"], 1 jar to the wife of Ikū(n)-pi-Aškur ...".

conclusive investigation of the respective groups of names, but to deny a priori that these eastern districts, too, were always exposed to the infiltration of Amorites would be inadmissible.

Of equal importance is the question as to whether some of the personal names of Gasur are related to the Hurrian names of the middle of the second millennium as revealed by the much-discussed archives of Tehipilla. Professor Meek is certainly right when he denies any outstanding similarities in the two onomastic groups and concludes that the immigration of the Hurrians who rebuilt the city as Nuzi "occurred not earlier than the beginning of the second millennium." For reasons to be discussed in another connection we are, however, convinced that certain place names, e. g., Arrapha (which occurs in the text no. 224)\* are to be attributed to a cognate population which had been settled in this district as well as in the neighboring countries since pre-Sargonic times. It is quite possible that remnants of these early Hurrians survived the Sargonic and Old Babylonian periods until the settlement, probably toward the end of the 18th century, of those Hurrians whose life is reflected in the Tehipilla archives.

Before leaving the Old Akkadian texts from Gasur, a few words may be said about tablet no. 1. It is the so-called map known from previous communications by the editor in *BASOR* 42 and 48 and in Vol. XIII of the *AASOR*. In accordance with one of the short inscriptions in the center, viz. "180 + 180 — 6 iku of cultivated field," Meek now assumes correctly (p. xvii) that "it was prepared to indicate the location of some estate." For the next signs which are separated from this first central inscription by a small circle, he proposes a reading *ša-at A-za-la* "belonging to Azala." This is, however, out of the question because it is grammatically impossible for the so-called genitive particle *ša* to be replaced by *āt*. The photographs (pl. xciii and in Meek's previous communications) show indeed that the supposed second sign is not *āt* but A.ŠA, i. e., *eqlum* "field." The photographs leave also no doubt that Meek's tentative reading [*Gu-zi*]-*ad* on the fragmentary inscription in the left hand corner of the east side of the sketch must be abandoned in favor of A.ŠA, as suggested by Weidner, loc. cit., soon after Meek's first publication of this interesting tablet.

Tablets 223-227, which the editor describes as Cappadocian texts

\* Cf. Albright *apud* Meek, loc. cit. 63 f.



from Nuzi, come from a level 1.27 meters below the first Hurrian stratum, i. e., 2.86 meters above the topmost stratum in which the tablets of the Old Akkadian period began to appear. These stratigraphic facts bespeak the outstanding value of these few tablets and fragments at the end of the volume. A more detailed analysis and discussion of nos. 224 and 223 than is given by Meek (p. xxiv-xxvi) will help to illustrate their significance and to stress the questions with which we are confronted by this important discovery at Gasur-Nuzi.

Although a complete restoration of the damaged passages is not possible, the subject of no. 224 is fairly clear. Like nos. 225-227, the tablet records minor transactions of traveling merchants, as shown particularly by the occurrence of *ša ellitim* "of the caravan" (ll. 9 and 15; cf. no. 225, 3: *a-na ellitim*<sup>10</sup>), similarly also no. 227 rev. 16 and fragment E l. 2). The beginning of the obverse (?) mentions transactions carried out in Arrapha: <sup>1</sup>[i]-na A-ra-á[p]-hi-[im] <sup>2</sup>a-na Ti-šá, . . . . .<sup>3</sup> MAN-A-šur i-di-[i]n [ . . . . . šamnam (?) ] <sup>4</sup>ri-š-lám (l) [ú x karpátim<sup>4</sup>] <sup>5</sup>da-me x-ri-[ni] áp-q[i] (l)-da-šum (?) . . . . .<sup>6</sup>[x] mi-at . . . . i-na A-ra (l)-áp-hi-im-[ma] <sup>7</sup>a-na Si-in-rabi [MAN<sup>7</sup>]-A-šur i-di-in [ . . . . . ] <sup>8</sup>gave (= sold) Puzur-Aššur <sup>9</sup>to Tiš . . . . .<sup>10</sup>[a]t Arra[p]bu[m]. <sup>11</sup>[ . . . ] <sup>12</sup>first class <sup>13</sup>[oil (?) ] <sup>14</sup>[and x jars of] <sup>15</sup>ceda[x] blood I ha[nded over to him (?) ] . . . . .<sup>16</sup>[x] hundred . . . . <sup>17</sup>gave [Puzur]-Aššur <sup>18</sup>[also] at Arraphum, <sup>19</sup>to Sin-rabi." At the end of the reverse (?) the text deals with the following items: <sup>20</sup>10 šigli ša-na-tim 64 k[arpátim<sup>20</sup>] <sup>21</sup>a-la-ni 64 karpátim<sup>21</sup> bu-r[a-šá]<sup>22</sup> 64 karpátim<sup>22</sup> da-mi [e-ri-ni<sup>23</sup>] <sup>24</sup>[MAN-A-šur] i-na . . . . . " <sup>25</sup>10 shekels of denticles <sup>26</sup>64

<sup>10</sup> Is the first compound of this proper name Tišpak?

<sup>11</sup> So according to l. y + 11; cf. also no. 227 rev. 11 and fragment D.

<sup>12</sup> So according to l. x + 3.

<sup>13</sup> So according to the Old Babylonian letter BM no. 80685 (= VAB V1 no. 226) ll. 11 and 24; cf. below p. 455 note 11.

<sup>14</sup> So according to l. x + 6.

<sup>15</sup> A plural *šamnam* occurs sometimes in the Kültepe tablets. We refer particularly to the following passage of the unpublished letter VAT 9236: <sup>16</sup>dí-pu-ra-ku-nu-ti I bíltam annakum <sup>17</sup>dé-na-ma ša-na-tim <sup>18</sup>ša-ma-nim šu-ma <sup>19</sup>ša-na-tim ta-dí-a-ma-nim <sup>20</sup>šubūt(š) ká-lá-šu-nu á ša-na-tim <sup>21</sup>a-na I-š-we-da-ku <sup>22</sup>pi-šá-da-ma <sup>23</sup>ša-ra-an Dur, bu-mi-id <sup>24</sup>li-is-ri-dam <sup>25</sup>annakum 64 Pu-šu-ki-in <sup>26</sup>li-ni-dí á šu-ma <sup>27</sup>ša-na-tim lá ta-dá-a-ma <sup>28</sup>annakum ku-lu-šu-ma 64 Pu-šu-ki-in <sup>29</sup>li-ni-dí "I sent you (a message to this effect)

j[ars] <sup>9,13</sup>(of resin from) terebinths,<sup>11</sup> 64 jars (of resin from)

<sup>9</sup>give away (= spend) <sup>1</sup>1 talent of lead and <sup>2</sup>buy me *šannātum*. <sup>3</sup>In case <sup>4</sup>you bought me *šannātum*, then <sup>5</sup>hand over <sup>6</sup>to Il-wēdāku <sup>7</sup>all the cloth and the *šannātum*, <sup>8</sup>and (then) <sup>9</sup>let him drive (the pack-asses) here <sup>10</sup>(on) the Durhumid-road, <sup>11</sup>let <sup>12</sup>(the remainder of the) lead <sup>13</sup>be stored <sup>14</sup>(in) the house of Pōšu-kēn. <sup>15</sup>But in case <sup>16</sup>you did not buy the *šannātum*, then <sup>17</sup>let <sup>18</sup>all the lead <sup>19</sup>be stored <sup>20</sup>(in) the house of Pōšu-kēn. While the texts *TuM I 17a* (= *MVAeG* 33 no. 152) and *Oxford 425* (Driver, *Analecta Orientalia* VI pl. IV f. no. 15) tell us only of the prices paid for a single *šannum*, the recently published letter *TC III 97* (ll. 3 ff.) makes it clear that a *šannum* was made of copper. The same text (l. 13) and a passage of *OCT II 29* (ll. 28 f.) mention the "pulling" (*šāpum* and *šaddūm* respectively) of a *šannum*. On the other hand, we read in l. 6 of the Old Babylonian letter *VS XVI 114* (discussed by Kraus *MVAeG* 30, I pp. 34 f. and recently by Landsberger, *Die Serie aus itilū*, p. 162 f.) of the "riding of the *šannum* (over the fields)," i.e., the cutting of the soil with "the tooth" of the ploughshare. If, then, Old Assyrian *šannum* is to be considered the equivalent of Old Babylonian *šannum* "tooth," "ploughshare" (as for the different vowel, cf. Ethiopic *saw*), it is easy to see that the *šannātum* of *FAT 9236* as well as of our text from Gasur-Nuzi were not real ploughshares but small imitations of metal shaped like the teeth of a ploughshare. In other words, the *šannātum* were "teeth" or "denticles" and served the same purposes as the well-known small sickles (*šiggaššū*), axes (*paššū*), hammers (singular: *naqqupum*) and small spears (*šipardūm*) mentioned so frequently in the Kültepe texts. Cf. *MVAeG* 33, 69 note b, 238 note a and *MVAeG* 35, 3, 187 note 1.

<sup>11</sup>The plural *a-lā-ni* recurs in the Old Assyrian texts from Kültepe rather frequently. There, too, *karpātum* "jars" are sometimes the (probably standardized) containers in which the *a-lā-nu* were preserved. See particularly *TC II 62*, 8: *1 karpāt a-lā-nu*; *BIN IV 160*, 45: [...] *2 karpātum a-lā-ni*; *TC II 209*, 24 ff.: *3 karpātum a-lā-nu ša Puzur-Ašur a-ša-ma 1 karpāt a-lā-nu e-ma Aš-Ša-lim* "3 jars of *a-lā-nu* of Puzur-Ašur, in addition 1 jar of *a-lā-nu* (ars) for Aš-Ša-lim." A clue to the meaning of the word is contained in *TC 97*, 3 f., where the accusative *a-lā-ni* is followed by the adjective *ar-šu* (1)-*šim* (so according to a collation of the original in the Louvre Museum); accordingly, *a-lā-nu* designates here a fragrant substance. Since it was not unusual to denote the fragrant product of a tree by the same word as the tree itself (cf. particularly the Old Babylonian letter *BM 80685* = *VAB VI* no. 226), our word is obviously nothing else than the name of the tree which, according to the list *K 4415* (*II R* 51 no. 1), was characteristic of Mt. Ribbu (cf. Delitzsch, *Paradies* p. 101 f.; Meissner, *MVAG* 15, 5, 5). This is further confirmed by a remarkable correspondence between this list and our text from Gasur which is hardly accidental: as *K 4415* enumerates—a few lines after *šad e-ri-ni*—the various *šad a-lā-nu* as well as the various *šad buršā*, so in our fragment the item *64 karpātum a-lā-ni* is followed by the item *64 karpātum du-r[a-šim]*. A further corroboration of this explanation of Old Assyrian *a-lā-nu* as a fra-

cypresses,<sup>12</sup> 7+1164 jars of [cedar] blood 7+12 [Pazur-Aššur] [gave] at ..... [to .....]."<sup>13</sup>

The better preserved text no. 223 runs as follows: [a-na] Wa-ar-  
dā-lī-sū<sup>2</sup> [qī]-bī-ma um-ma ū-tu-lī-[m]a<sup>3</sup> [a-n]a a-i-tim<sup>4</sup> a-na  
a-ḥa-im ū me-er-u-im<sup>5</sup> [ā]š<sup>14</sup> e-ka i-ir-da-ka<sup>6</sup> [ḥ]a<sup>15</sup> ru-āš-ma<sup>7</sup> [a]  
ma-lī na-āš-pā-ar-lī-a<sup>8</sup> [ū] me-ēḥ-ri-im ša tup-pi-šu-nu<sup>9</sup> i ka-ḥa-at  
A-du-ta-a<sup>10</sup> [i-z]i-ia-ma<sup>11</sup> [gī-mi]-lam<sup>16</sup> i šē-er<sup>12</sup> [bī]t<sup>14</sup> bī-lī-a  
[šu-ku]-un (!)<sup>18</sup> šu-ma (four lines for the most part destroyed<sup>17</sup>)  
[x ma]nē kas-pam āš-qāl<sup>19</sup> [ā]š<sup>18</sup> si-nu-um qā-ta-tum<sup>20</sup> [i]<sup>19</sup>  
amāram ša'am<sup>21</sup> a-na i-a-lī<sup>22</sup> A-du-ta-a i-dī-[nam]<sup>23</sup> [ū] ša-ni-a-  
am<sup>24</sup> [ā-l]ā<sup>25</sup> al-qī<sup>23</sup> [a]-na ū-ra<sup>26</sup> [šē'um]<sup>21m</sup> i-na bīti-kā<sup>27</sup> i-ma-

grant product of the alōnu tree is to be found, of course, in the last item of our text, inasmuch as here the tree-name e-ri-ni is preceded by dā-mi "blood, juice," which leaves no doubt that our passage deals with the aromatic products of different trees. For the same reason, alōnu should not be rendered as "oak," but as "terebinth." For it is the terebinth whose semi-liquid resin, the *terebinthine* or *turpentine*, was known to and appreciated by the ancient peoples of the Near East and the Mediterranean area. —The recent explanation of alōnu by Gelb, *Inscriptions from Alishar and Vicinity* pp. 25-27 is based upon two insufficiently edited passages (TO 97, 3 f. and Gelb no. 8, 5 f.; cf. above and JAOS 57, 437 respectively) and neglects the invaluable indications of K 4415 which make it evident that alōnu designates a tree growing on mountains, and not a small plant found around human settlements.

<sup>12</sup> So with Zimmern, *Freunde des Orients* 53. Since the cypress and the spruce produce resin, it seems impossible to decide whether or not Ungnad's rendering of būrāšū by "Fichtenharz" (VAB VI 180) is to be rejected.

<sup>13</sup> So according to the photograph on pl. xciv.

<sup>14</sup> According to the photograph this reading seems possible.

<sup>15</sup> So according to such Old Assyrian passages as COT IV 5b, 11 f. (i šē-er A-šūr-ma-līk gi-mi-lam ta-dā-ku-u[n]) and BIN IV 14, 16 f. — TO 51, 30 f. (gi-mi-lam i šē-ri-a šu-ku-un).

<sup>16</sup> So according to the photograph. See also the preceding note.

<sup>17</sup> Whether the ends of ll. 16 f. contain the adjective pā-ni-im—or rather the well-known Old Assyrian expression [i] pā-ni-im-[ma]—and a form of alōnu, is not certain; [i]-lī-k, as Meek proposes, does not fit into the context.

<sup>18</sup> The ād remains, of course, conjectural. The dimension of the gap at the beginning of the line and the vertical wedge before ād recommend, however, this restoration. At any rate, either a professional name or a proper name is required by the context.

<sup>19</sup> Space and context (see l. 23) exclude any other numeral.

<sup>20</sup> According to the photograph, 14 is rather probable; whether it was preceded by 4 is less certain.

<sup>21</sup> The signs before i-na are not clear on the photograph, but the context favors this restoration.

da-da-am " [T]o War(a)d-ilīšu <sup>3</sup>[s]peak: Thus (said) Utulli: <sup>3</sup>[F]or what (purpose) <sup>5</sup>[h]ave I chosen you <sup>4</sup>to (be for me) brother and son? <sup>22</sup> <sup>5</sup>Your servant <sup>22</sup> <sup>6</sup>has been [re]tained.<sup>24</sup> Thus, <sup>7</sup>[in] accordance with my message, <sup>8</sup>[and] the copy of their tablet, <sup>10</sup>be [pr]esent <sup>9</sup>at the action of Adutāa <sup>25</sup> and (in this way) <sup>18</sup>do <sup>11</sup>a favor to <sup>12</sup>[the house] of my lord.<sup>26</sup> <sup>13</sup>In case . . . . . (four lines destroyed) <sup>14</sup>I paid [x mi]nas of silver. <sup>19</sup>The [je]weller <sup>27</sup> (is) the guarantor. <sup>20</sup>[1] homer of grain <sup>21</sup>to me <sup>22</sup>Adutāa gave ([me]).<sup>28</sup> <sup>23</sup>[But] the second (homer) <sup>24</sup>I did [not] take. <sup>25</sup>[W]ithin twenty (days) <sup>27</sup>he will measure for me <sup>26</sup>[the grain] in your house."

There cannot be much doubt about the circumstances under which this letter was written: Utulli expected, within 20 days, (l. 25), the delivery (l. 27) of grain by a certain Adutāa (ll. 9 and 22), with whom he had made a contract (cf. l. 8: "their tablet").<sup>29</sup> He foresaw that he would be prevented (l. 5 f.) from being personally present at the delivery of the grain. So he asked Warad-ilīšu to supervise the fulfillment of the contract (ll. 10-12). Warad-ilīšu, evidently a close friend, neighbor, or business asso-

<sup>22</sup> This is a rhetorical question made in order to remind Warad-ilīšu of his cordial relations with, and his moral obligations to Utulli. For the form a-ḥa-im see below p. 459; for Old Assyrian mer'am "son" cf. *Archives de l'Histoire du Droit Orientale* Vol. II p. 137.

<sup>23</sup> For Old Assyrian irdam "servant" see Thureau-Dangin, *Archiv Orientales* I 271; for the auxiliary a-vowel before the possessive suffix see Lewy *ZDMG* 84. \*71<sup>4</sup>. The humble "your servant" refers to Utulli.

<sup>24</sup> Literally "has been made retained." For ḥarruṣum (= Babylonian ḫurruṣum) "to retain, to delay" see Jensen *KB* VI 1 p. 495.

<sup>25</sup> This means "watch Adutāa during his action." Cf. particularly ll. 3 ff. of the Kültepe tablet *Contenus* 12: a-na-kum i-na ḫa-ḫa-at pū-ḫa-ri-kā a-ri-iṣ-ma a-ḫi-id-ma ki-ma ku-a-iṣ i-pu-pū-am ḫa ḫi-bi, da-nu-tim aṭ-qi-a-kum "Here I was present at the action of your boys and was attentive and took out for you, in place of you, a tablet of 'firm' witnesses."

<sup>26</sup> Literally "put a favor upon the back of the house of my lord," i. e., "be kind enough to act on behalf of my principal's people."

<sup>27</sup> Uncertain; cf. above note 18.

<sup>28</sup> The expression of the dative "me" by both the suffixed form of the verb (iddi[saw]) and the independent pronoun idī is not unparalleled. Cf. such emphatic passages of the Kültepe tablets as *TC* 82 (= *MVAG* 23 no. 250) ll. 19-23.

<sup>29</sup> The plural of the possessive pronoun is used because the contract was made not only with Adutāa but also with a guarantor (l. 19). Cf. the next note.

ciate of Utulli (cf. ll. 3 f.) and the latter's "lord" (l. 12), was in a position to comply with this request without difficulty; for an earlier relevant message from Utulli (l. 7) and a copy (l. 8) of Utulli's contract with Adutāa were in his hands.<sup>20</sup>

It is obvious that this letter cannot have been sent from Cappadocia, as believed by Meek. The purchase and delivery of grain was a local matter, the sellers of grain being, of course, peasants who lived in the neighborhood of their customers. The assumption that Utulli, while travelling in Cappadocia, was anxious to secure a supply of grain for the time of his return to Gasur<sup>21</sup> is out of the question. We know from many Old Assyrian letters exchanged between Aššur and Kaniš that it was customary to instruct a member of the family or a proxy at home to take care of the necessary arrangements with the purveyors. In our case it is, however, evident that Utulli was present first when the contract with Adutāa was made and then when a part of the grain was delivered, and that he had expected to be at home again in time for the delivery of the second instalment.

On the other hand, it cannot be doubted that the writers of the texts 223-227 were quite as much Old Assyrian merchants as those whose correspondence and documents have been found at Kültepe and other mounds of Cappadocia. As has been shown in the notes to our restorations and translations of nos. 224 and 223, many characteristic expressions and such un-Babylonian forms as *šannadum* "teeth" and *merum* "son" are unmistakable features common to both groups of texts. It may be added at once that there appear in the Kültepe texts one or two merchants who were from Gasur.

<sup>20</sup> Since it follows from l. 18 that the grain had been paid in advance, we will not be wrong in assuming that the contract mentioned in l. 8 was an abstract promissory note of the same, or a similar, type as the well-known Old Assyrian promissory notes found at Kültepe. In other words, the contract appears to have stated that Adutāa owed to Utulli a certain amount of silver and that he would pay his debt at a fixed term, or rather two successive terms. For ll. 26 ff. indicate that one homer had been given by Adutāa to Utulli personally, and that only the delivery of a second homer was still due during Utulli's absence. L. 19 shows that the contract contained the usual guarantee clause *NN qd-ta-tum* "NN is guarantor."

<sup>21</sup> We imply here that no. 223 is the original of Utulli's letter. It is, of course, not impossible that it is his copy of a letter sent by him from Yağhan Tepe-Gasur to another, not too distant place (as, for instance, Arrappā or "the City" [Aššur] which, as Meek has noted, is mentioned in no. 227). This possibility is, however, irrelevant in this connection.

We refer to the passages *TC* III 173, 6 f. (*iš-ti me-er-a l-lš-ra-ni Ga-sú-ri-[i]m*) and *TC* III 262 B, 4 f. (*ša šu-Ba-lim m[ar] Ga-sú-r[i-im]*).<sup>22</sup> In a letter sent from Assur to Kanīš (*CCT* IV 2\*, 32) a *šubātum Ga-sú-ri-um* is mentioned, an indication that cloth manufactured at Gasur may have been among the many textiles which, apart from lead, were the most important export goods of the Assyrians in their commerce with Eastern Anatolia.<sup>23</sup>

Nevertheless, the expression *Cappadocian texts from Nuzi* should have been avoided by the editor. Not only because this name is misleading—it has often been emphasized that many of the letters found at Kültepe were written in Assur—but also because nos. 223-227 date from a period earlier than the Kültepe tablets. While the scribes of the Kültepe tablets were so much emancipated from the Sumero-Babylonian sexagesimal system that, with one dubious exception among thousands of texts,<sup>24</sup> the vertical wedge never denotes the figure 60, the scribe of our text 244 still used it repeatedly in writing the numeral 64. Whereas in the Kültepe tablets the genitive of *ašum* "brother" is always *a-ši-im*, we find in Utulli's letter (l. 4) the older form *a-ša-im*.<sup>25</sup>

The chronological conclusions suggested by such linguistic and

<sup>22</sup> Since it was common that grandchildren were named after their grandfathers and since *BIN* IV 103, 39 mentions a certain *III-ašrami mār šu-Bēlim*, it is not impossible that "III-ašrami, the Gasurian" is the same person as "the Gasurian" who appears in *TC* III 262 B as the father of a certain *šū-Bēlum*.

<sup>23</sup> Since the "Gasurian cloth" appears in a context which deals with *ikrāš ša A-lār š dīštar* (cf. *Revue de l'Histoire des Religions* CX [1934], 42 note 25), and since the presence of Old Assyrian merchants so far in the north of Asia Minor cannot be proved, *Ga-sú-ri-um* can hardly be the nisbe-form to Gazura on the Iris, the later residence of the Pontian kings, or to Hittite *Gaz-zi-š-ru-uš* (*KBa* III 6 obv. l. 73). Besides this, we cannot assume that Gazura would appear as Gazura as early as the 20th century B. C.

<sup>24</sup> Cf. *MVAEG* 33, 36 note c. The correctness of Golénischeff's autography is all the more questionable since so large a number of *šamātum* as 70 is not found in other promissory notes nor in similar passages of the letters.

<sup>25</sup> Although evidently older than *a-ši-im*, the form *a-ša-im* is not quite as strange as is assumed by Meek, p. XXIV f. It corresponds to such forms from *ašum* "father" as *a-ša-ú-šu-nu*, *a-še-e-šu-nu*, etc. which are still current in the Kültepe texts; see *ZA* 38, 247. Cf. also the frequent *a-ša-ma* "together, in addition" and particularly *a-ša-iš* "together" which occurs even later in the Middle and Late Assyrian periods.



graphic peculiarities of the Old Assyrian texts from Gasur-Nuzi<sup>24</sup> are in full accordance with the dates which can be gathered from the Kültepe texts on the one hand and the royal inscriptions from Assur on the other. Since the dated Kültepe tablets belong to the rule of Šarrum-kēn, and since the Kültepe tablets embrace only three generations, the Assyrian expansion into Cappadocia cannot be placed before the reign of Šarrum-kēn's great-grandfather Ilušumma, whose great successes, as reflected by the well-known Babylonian chronicle and his own building inscriptions, explain the subsequent enormous extension of the Assyrian sphere of influence into Asia Minor.<sup>25</sup> But the terminus post quem for Assyrian trading and settling at Gasur is to be fixed in an earlier period. For the passage in *sa-la-ti GA.SAG*<sup>26</sup> "out of the booty of Gasur" in the above-quoted Ititi tablet from Assur points to an Assyrian victory over Gasur which is separated from Ilušumma by a minimum of three generations, possibly by a much longer interval.<sup>27</sup> To a certain extent at least, this political development is reflected even in our business documents. In the administrative records of the Old Akkadian period, the city of Assur is quoted, like Akkad (no. 168, 15) and other places, under its name (nos. 160 IV 5; 169, 15; see above p. 451). In the later texts, the external features and the dialect of which are so typically Assyrian, it appears as the city par excellence, as later on in the Kültepe texts (no. 227; see above p. 458 note 31).

<sup>24</sup> Another peculiarity of the new texts, the measuring of grain by homers (no. 223, 20) has been noticed by the editor (p. xxvi). Also the spelling *Ši-in-rašē* (no. 224, x + 8) is very interesting, since this spelling of the name of the moon-god appears in the Kültepe texts only twice in the rare name *Ši-in-š-me-a-ni* (Oxford no. 249, 5 and *TC* III 124, 1). Thus the spelling *ZU*<sup>28</sup> or *ZU*<sup>29</sup>, formerly so much discussed, which is characteristic of the Kültepe texts, seems to be an innovation. Incidentally, it may be mentioned that the recently published text *TC* III 31, when compared with *TC* 17, proves anew that *ZU*<sup>28</sup> equals *EN.ZU*.

<sup>25</sup> For the details see *OLZ* 29 (1926), 758 ff. and *Revue Hittite et Asiatique*, fasc. 17 (1934), 2 n. Cf. also below.

<sup>26</sup> The fact that the oldest reference to Gasur in Assyrian sources involves a military success of an Assyrian ruler, supports, of course, the view of those who hold that the penetration of Cappadocia by Assyrian merchants was due to the military strength of Assyria. It should not be forgotten that in ancient days, as in modern times, defeated rulers were compelled to grant concessions and privileges to the merchants of their victorious adversaries, as is illustrated also by such biblical passages as I Ki. 20, 34.



The last text of the volume, apparently the fragment of a stone tablet, is a vetive inscription of a king of Arrapha. The name of its author which ended in Teššup,<sup>39</sup> and its Middle Assyrian monumental script and style leave no doubt that it comes from the better-known period when Gasur had become the Hurrian city of Nuzi.



<sup>39</sup> Meek restores it, on the base of an unpublished seal inscription, to [It-ḫi-T]e-čš-du-up [mār Ki-bi-T]e-čš-du-up.

# NUZI NAMES \*

PIERRE M. PURVES

UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

THE MATERIAL employed by Mr. Gustavs for his series of lists of personal names<sup>1</sup> is drawn from NI and H I. On this basis the author distinguishes some of the ethnic groups in the Nuzi region during the Hurrian period. As his lists show, the preponderant group comprises the Hurrians or, as Mr. Gustavs would call them, the Mitannians. A list of Kassite<sup>2</sup> names attests the presence of the people who dominated Babylonia during the second millennium. There is also a list of certain names,<sup>3</sup> designated by Mr. Gustavs as Old Akkadian, which are also to be found in the so-called Gasur tablets from the pre-Hurrian levels at Nuzi. There are, finally, names of uncertain ethnic origin which Mr. Gustavs suspects to be Hittite, and others for which he suggests an Indo-European origin.<sup>4</sup>

The main emphasis of this work is placed on the overwhelming

\* *Namenreihen aus den Kerkuk-Tafeln, eine Studie zum Bau der Mitanninamen.* By ARNOLD GUSTAVS. Leipzig, MITTEILUNGEN DER ALTORIENTALISCHEN GESELLSCHAFT, vol. X, part 3, 1937.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> To be abbreviated NKT. Other abbreviations: G = C. J. Gadd, *Tablets from Kirkuk*; H I = E. Chiera, *Excavations at Nuzi I, Harvard Semitic Series V*, Cambridge, 1929; H II = R. H. Pfeiffer, *Excavations at Nuzi II, Harvard Semitic Series IX*, Cambridge, 1932; M V A G = *Mitteilungen der Vorderasiatisch-Aegyptischen Gesellschaft*; N = E. Chiera, *Joint Expedition with the Iraq Museum at Nuzi, I-III*, Paris, 1927-31; IV-V, Philadelphia, 1934; N D A = M. Berkooz, *The Nuzi Dialect of Akkadian, Orthography and Phonology*, Language Dissertations, published by the Linguistic Society of America, No. 23, Philadelphia, 1937; Nu = unpublished documents from Nuzi now stored at the Oriental Institute of Chicago; E H A = *Revue Hittite et Asiatique*. In the genealogies which will be used to sustain some of the reviewer's interpretations, b. = "brother of," a. = "son of," f. = "father of."

<sup>2</sup> NKT 47, where it is designated as Series C. Cf. also p. 63.

<sup>3</sup> NKT 65 ff. Cf. also pp. 62 f. where reference is made to Meek's list of the so-called Gasur names in *Harvard Semitic Series X*, p. xxvii.

<sup>4</sup> NKT 63. On p. 61 attention is drawn to what may be "East Canaanite names." On p. 8 there are listed some of the rare occurrences of names beginning with r. One of these ru-ur-ti-lu, N 17: 26, was found by Dr. Gelb to be a miscopy for what the tablet showed to be a-ur-ti-lu. Another difficulty noticed by Gustavs, NKT 14, note 1, is that provided by ba-ki-ip-sarri, N 94: 11, which is a miscopy for ba-ip-sarri.

number of Hurrian names, the aim being to single out their elements for the purpose of analyzing their structure and the various grammatical implications. These elements are divided into two categories, e. g., so-called formative elements and "stems." Thus names having a given formative element in common are grouped in a list called a "Querschnitt." Names having a given stem in common are grouped in a list called a "Langschnitt." Twenty-one Querschnitte comprise Series A and thirteen Langschnitte Series B.<sup>6</sup>

In some of the interpretations of the meanings and grammatical characteristics of these formative elements and stems thus deduced, Gustavs proposes views which find their support mainly in the limited material in N I and H I. The reviewer, who is now preparing for publication a more comprehensive list of Nuzi names,<sup>7</sup> has at his disposal the personal names from all the published documents and the unpublished documents temporarily kept at the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago. The purpose of this review is to examine Gustavs' conclusions in the light provided by this extensive material.

In the names written *ar-ta-se(en)-ni*, *ar-ti-ir-wi*, *a-ki-ti-ir-wi* and in names ending in *-se* and *-te(y)a*, Gustavs sees the presence of a verbal element with a so-called future formative *-i*. The first of these examples is read *arta-se(n)ni*, with the first element taken as a derivative of \**ar-ti-a* "he will give." However, as Gustavs himself observes,<sup>7</sup> the Nuzi texts present a place-name *tašs(n)ni*<sup>8</sup> and this consideration provides the possible reading *ar-tašs(n)ni* which finds a good parallel in *ar-nam/war*, A 4: 2-5.

Two factors enter into *a-ki-ti-ir-wi* and *ar-ti-ir-wi*; one concerns

<sup>6</sup> References to the Querschnitte will be preceded by the symbol A; those referring to the Langschnitte will be preceded by the symbol B.

<sup>7</sup> *NET* 1; *BASOR* 63, 34; *AASOR* 16, p. 6. The publication consists of a list from the published material as well as the unpublished material compiled by the late Dr. Chiera and his associates at the Oriental Institute. Another list was compiled by the students working in Dr. Speiser's Nuzi seminar at the University of Pennsylvania. The reviewer, who worked in this seminar, is using both lists as a basis for this publication.

<sup>8</sup> *NET* 66.

<sup>9</sup> [Perhaps preserved in modern *Ti'e'ia*, 2 miles north of Kirkuk, a small mound with Hurrian surface remains. Popular etymologizing ("Ninety") is obvious in this case. E. A. S.]

the Hurrian deity Tirwi who was worshipped at Nuzi,<sup>8</sup> and the other involves the probability that the east Hurrian word for "king" was *erwi* rather than *irwi*.

Such names as *qur-ti-be-er-wi*<sup>10</sup> (for *kartip-erwi*), *AASOR* 16 51:32; 57:12, 32, *ri-li-be-er-wi* (for *zilip-erwi*), *H II* 152:9 and *zu-lu-ge*<sup>11</sup> *-er-wi* (for *zulub-erwi*), *A 7*:28 provide a basis for reading *-erwi*. Furthermore, *ir-wi-a-ri*, *N 10*:16 is to be read *er-wa/i*<sup>12</sup> *-a-ri* on the basis of *e-er*<sup>13</sup> [*-wa/i-a-ri*], *N 86*:17, since both names stand in corresponding order in two witness-lists in which the names follow each other in practically the same sequence.<sup>14</sup>

<sup>8</sup> On the deity Tirwi, cf. *AASOR* 16.47.7; 50:8 and also pp. 99, 101. The correction vocalization *e/i* is supplied by *du-ut-tir-me*, Clay, *Personal Names of the Cassite Period* 81, quoted by Oppenheim, *A/O* 12.31, note 5.

<sup>10</sup> *IR* has the value *er*, cf. Thureau-Dangin, *Syllabaire accadien*, 23, 58. Attention is drawn to the absence of any other sign in Kerkuk writing to express this value.

<sup>11</sup> On the use of GI in Nuzi writing for a sound consisting of a palatal stop plus *e*, cf. *NDA* 10 f. To escape diacritical confusion GI will be transcribed *ge*, although it is understood that it can represent *ke* and *ge* equally well. It is probable that among some of the scribes who wrote during the generation of Puhî-Senni and Winnicki, the parents of Tehip-tilla, GI had the values *gi*, *ki* and *gi*. This is a problem that the reviewer hopes to treat more fully at some later time.

<sup>12</sup> Probably pronounced *erw-a-ri*. Similarly, the puzzling name *it̃hapĩhe/i* may have once been *it̃h-abĩhe/i*, with the final element referring to Mount Ebĩh. In making the normalization *it̃h-abĩhe/i*, the reviewer retracts *it̃hapĩhe/i*, *AASOR* 18, p. 154. Oppenheim, *A/O* 12.36, arrives at a different conclusion and sees in it a derivative of *\*it̃h-a-pĩhe/i*. In view of *it̃h(i)-apu* and *it̃h(i)-awerri*, a form *it̃h-a* is anomalous. The Pennsylvania and Chicago lists do not reveal any form *it̃hap*.

Oppenheim, *RHA* 26.58, 66-68, draws attention to the possible reading of *-a-tal* for names ending in *-a-ri*. In our article the reading *-a-ri* is made with the full knowledge that future findings may justify *-a-tal*. Oppenheim's reading *ir-wa-a-tal* on the basis of what he reads as *ir-wa-tal-ma* seems improbable, for the former seems to be *erw(i)-ari/atol*, while the latter seems to be *erwi-talma*; cf. the name *da-al-wa*, *H I* 63:12.

<sup>13</sup> The copy shows *e-ne*[.....] for this name. Collation of the tablet reveals *e-er*[.....].

<sup>14</sup> Although a stroke of good fortune enabled the reviewer to discover these identical witness sequences and the others which will be discussed further on, he should like to state that the late Professor Chiera's publication of the same discovery, made some years before, was prevented by his lamented death.

Thus a verb in *-t* plus the word for "king" as a final element, which, in all probability, is *erwi*<sup>15</sup> would be confirmed by spellings something like *ar-te-er-wi*, *a-ki-te-er-wi* or *a-ki-it-(e)-er-wi*, which would permit *art-erwi* and *akit-erwi* respectively. So far no such spellings have appeared. The Pennsylvania and Chicago lists only show *ar-di/ti-ir-wi*, *a-ki-(it-)ti-ir-wi* and *a-ge/gi-ti-ir-wi*, which present, as the most obvious interpretations, *ar-tirwi* and *aki-tirwi*, names consisting of a verbal root, without a *t-* formative, plus a well-attested theophoric element.

In the ending *-te(y)a*, Gustavs sees the presence of the verbal formative *-t* plus a third personal singular ending inherent in the writing *-ia*. The lists of personal names at Chicago show that *-te(y)a* follows the same roots that *-tesup* does. Some of those roots are *akku-*, *ar-*, *astar(i)-*, *ehel/ehli-*, *kel-*, *mat-*, *muš-*, *naī-*, *pai-*, *pal-*,<sup>16</sup> *šar-*, *šur-*, *wa-*, and *zū-*. This leads one to suspect that *-te(y)a* is a hypocoristic variant of *tesup*. That such is the case is shown by *astar-tesup* which varies with *astar-teya* in the same text.<sup>17</sup> Furthermore the names *muš-tesup* and *muš-teya* with the same paternity (*ar-šeni*) occur in witness lists in which the names follow more or less the same sequence.<sup>18</sup> Additionally, there are certain

<sup>15</sup> In *JAOI* 55.437 f., Speiser reached the conclusion that the west Hurrian for "king" was *ewri/eyri*, instead of what up to then was taken as *ip/wri*. The findings in this article tend to show that the only difference between the west Hurrian and the Nuzi or east Hurrian word is the change in position of *r* and *w/u*, while the initial *e* in the Nuzi variant apparently remains unchanged.

A name *šu-i-[ip]-er-bi*, N 265: 3 varies with *šu-(i)-ip-er-wei*; cf. Berkooz, *NDA* 49, who also quotes *er-bi-šarri* alongside of *er-wei-šarri*. In view of this the reviewer retracts the doubts about vocalization implied by transcriptions in *-er-wa* and normalizations in *-er-wa* in his list of personal names in *AASOR* 16.

<sup>16</sup> In view of the variation of *h/pal-te-ia* and the *bal-is-a-a*, and the lack of genealogical confirmation for *pal-teya* as a variant of *pal-tesup*, the use of *pal* as an illustration for what is to follow is to be regarded with due caution.

<sup>17</sup> Cf. *ai-tar-te-ia*, *AASOR* 16.63: 19 and *ai-tar-te-sup*, seal line 32.

<sup>18</sup> Cf. *mu-te-šu(p)* s. *ar-še-ni*, N 58: 20 and *muš-te-ia* s. *ar-še-ni*, N 44: 18; 51: 19; 70: 21. The two variants occupy a corresponding rank in identical witness sequences. Cf. also *muš-te-ia* s. *ar-še-ni*, N 5: 20; 71: 24; 94: 23; 96: 21; 202: 24; 418: 21, which is the fifth name in identical witness sequences, while the variant *mu[š]-te-sup* s. *ar-še-ni*, Nu 390: 29, is the seventh name in a witness list in which the same names follow the same sequence.

genealogies indicating that some others of these roots in combination with *-tešup* take *-te(y)a* as well.<sup>19</sup>

Gustavs, furthermore, suggests that *bal-te-e*, *ha-aš-te-e* and *ša-ar-te-e* embody the *-t* formative;<sup>20</sup> and yet, later on he expresses some doubt and proposes *bal-te-e*, *ki-il-te*, *ha-aš-te-e*, *mu-uš-te-e* and *ša-ar-te-e* as probable shortened forms of names in *-tešup*.<sup>21</sup> An examination of the Chicago and Pennsylvania lists shows that *-te* occurs after some of the roots which take *-te(y)a* and *-tešup*. They are *ar-*, *aštar-*, *ehli-*, *muš-*, *nai-*, *nan-*, *pai-*, *pal-*, *šar-*, *šahul/šahlu-*, and *sil-*. Thus the second alternative of Gustavs seems to be favored. More conclusive support is provided for this view by the instances in which *-te(y)a* varies with *-te* in the same document when in combination with some of the initial elements listed above.<sup>22</sup>

with the exception of this two-line shift which also involves *šum-mi-ia* s. *a-ri-qa-na-ri*, the name immediately preceding it.

<sup>19</sup> *ar-te-ia* s. *te-eš-šu-ia*, G 42: 18, and seal, and *ar-te-šup* s. *te-eš-šu-ia*, N 69: 21. *ar-te-ia* f. *pu-ši-šeni*, N 33: 26 and *ar-te-šup* f. *pu-ši-šeni*, N 91: 2, 8; Nu 963: 33. *ar-te-ia* f. *ia-a-a*, G 39: 26; *ar-te-e-a* f. *ia-a-a*, AASOR XVI 68: 3 and *ar-te-šup* f. *ia-a-a*, N 203: 20; 382: 2; 392: 2; 530: 1, 22. *ge-ei-te-ia* s. *ar-si-ia*, H I 21: 14, 23; Nu 531: 96 and *ge-ei-te-šup* s. *a-ar-ei-ia*, H I 77: 1; *ša-ar-te-e(a)* s. *še-šē-el-te-šup*, G 47: 2, 11 and *ša-ar-te-šup* s. *še-šē-el-te-šup*, TCL 9. 10: 19, 23.

<sup>20</sup> NKT 59.

<sup>21</sup> NKT 81.

<sup>22</sup> Thus *ar-te-e*, N 207: 2, 5, but *ar-te-e* in line 7; *mu-uš-te-e-a*, Nu 848: 2, but *mu-uš-te-e* in lines 8, 9, 37, 43; *pal-te-e-a*, N 542: 2, but *pal-te-e*, lines 8, 17; *ša-ar-te-e*, G 47: 2, but *ša-ar-te-e-a*, line 11. The father of *šar-te(a)*, in this reference, is *šešē-el-tešup*. Cf. also *šar-tešup* s. *šešē-el-tešup*, TC 19: 19, 23.

For other genealogies note *na-an-te-e* s. *šu-di-qa*, Nu 916: 31 and *na-an-te-e* s. *šu-di-qa*, G. 66: 8. Collation of the original in the British Museum shows the latter reading to be quite clear. Cf. also *ša-aš-lu-te* s. *mu-še-e*, N 292: 34; [*ia*]-*aš-lu-te-e* s. *mu-še-[e]-e*, Nu 799: 8 and *ša-šu-si-te-šup* s. *mu-še-ia*, N 300: 35. In the N publication this last example was miscopied *a-šu-si-te-šup* and utilized as such by Oppenheim, A/O 12. 38, along with *a-šu-pu-tu-bi*, N 514: 9 to exemplify a formative in *-t*. Again N 514: 9 is a miscopy for what the reviewer prefers to read *a-ri-pu-um-bi*. (Cf. *a-ri-[i]-ip-um-bi*, N 243: 8 beside *a-ri-pu-um-bi*, lines 13, 15 in the same document. There is also a divinity *\*u-um-pu* from Boghaz-köi, cf. *Keilschriftkunden aus Boghazköi* 25.46, rev. iii: 15.) Among other examples used by Oppenheim, loc. cit., are *e-te-el-te-šup*, a miscopy for *e-ni-el-te-šup* and *a-kal-še-en-ni-ia* which seems more convincing if read *a-rip-še-en-ni-ia*. In view of this comedy of errors, the proposed formative in *-t* finds itself seriously impaired.

A minor difficulty arises from *ḥa-aš-te-e*, H I 81:6, which Gustavs presents as one of his illustrations. There is no genealogy to provide us with a clue to its connections. It may be a variant of *ḥaš-teya*. Since a form *ḥaš-tešup* has not come up so far, one is moved to consider that the *ḥa-aš-te-e* and *ḥaš-teya* like *ḥaiš-te*, TCL 9.41:2, could be variants of *ḥaiš-tešup*. As the matter stands, it will remain a moot problem until additional information can shed some light on it.

The form *ki-il-te*, another illustration presented by Gustavs, may be a variant of *ki-il-te-ya*. That both these forms may be read *kil-te* and *kil-teya* respectively and be considered as variants of an underlying *kel-tešup* is indicated by a genealogy suggesting *kū-tešup* as a variant of *kel-tešup*.<sup>27</sup>

To sum up, it is quite apparent that the *t*-formative proposed by Gustavs has many obstacles to overcome before it can be accepted without question. All the illustrations presented by him as evidence for its existence are opposed by considerations which, while some are not so conclusive as others, go together in casting a shadow of doubt on the whole speculation.

Another theory of Gustavs which encounters difficulties is the one concerning the ending *-ya*. That he is inclined to interpret it as a potential stem for verbal roots is shown by the following query and the way he answers it. "Ist nun diese Endung (*-ia/-ya*), weil sie nur an kürzeren Gebilden vorkommt, lediglich ein hypokoristisches Suffix, das zu dem vorangehenden Komplex in keinem näheren grammatischen Verhältnis steht?"<sup>28</sup> His answer shows that he is not inclined to believe so, "da dies *-ia* fast ausnahmslos nur an Verben sich anfügt. . ."<sup>29</sup> A survey of the Pennsylvania and Chicago lists reveals its occurrence with a considerable number of roots having no apparent verbal characteristics. Some of them are *alki*, *alpu*-, *tup/kki*-, *ete*-, *ḥišme*-, *ḥurpi*-, *kip(i)*-, *milki*-, *milku*-, *uḫri*-, *puḫi*-, *šeḫli*-, *šeḫwi*-, *šwi*-, *šummi*-, *teššu*-, *tirwi*-, *tulpi*-, *urḫi*- and *waḫri*-.<sup>30</sup> Among these there is *tirwi*- which, as we have seen, appears to be definitely substantival. There are also *urḫi* and *waḫri*- which, in the light of the present knowledge, are probably

<sup>27</sup> *ki-il-te-šup* s. *it-ḥa-pu*, H I 71:48; *ge-el-te-šup* s. *it-ḥa-pu*, N 20:24, 32.

<sup>28</sup> NKT 67.

<sup>29</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>30</sup> This element is transcribed as *wi-ḫi-ri* by Gustavs, A 9:109-111. But see NDA 64 and A 9:108.



adjectives. The element *tup/ki* occurs in the final position after verbal forms as *-tukki/e* and therefore assumes the guise of an adjectival or substantival form.

In addition to the roots listed above there are others, like *šēli/ēhli-* and *tarmi-*, which, while they have variants in *-p*, nevertheless may possibly be adjectival or substantival forms that can be made verbal by the affixing of the appropriate formatives. This latitude of possibility makes Gustav's view seem somewhat premature.

Later on <sup>21</sup> Gustav states that a hypocoristic ending can only be one which does not permit of a satisfactory grammatical interpretation. Thus, in his opinion, names of the *a-ri-ia* type cannot be considered as hypocoristica, for *a-ri-ia* is too much like *ar* (verbal root) plus *i* (potential stem) plus *a* (third person singular ending), "he may give." On the other hand, he says, the ending written *-a-a* must be hypocoristic, and hence a diminutive, for it has no resemblance to any grammatical form. Furthermore, he believes that this writing expresses an underlying *ā* or *ai*. As illustrations of the occurrence of such a form, he proposes *ki-ba-a-a*, *ši-il-ua-a-a*, *ū-na-a-a* and *zi-ra-a-a*.

How do these views stand in the light of the information which can be gathered from the rest of the Kerkuk material? To begin with, there is *-ia/-ya* to consider. It occurs in the name *tarmiya*, written *tar-mi-ia*. Now there is a form *tarmip-taš(n)ni*, A 9:90, which, according to an accepted view, shows that the root *tarmi-* may possibly have verbal affinities. Thus *tarmiya* would seem to fall into Mr. Gustav's *a-ri-ia* category. But a differing interpretation is indicated by at least four genealogies suggesting *tarmiya* as a variant of *tarmi-tēšup*. In one of them the names *tarmiya* and *tarmi-tēšup* are written over the same seal-impression.<sup>22</sup> The inescapable conclusion, postulated by genealogy and glyptic, is that *tarmiya* and *tarmi-tēšup* are names of one and the same person.

In addition to this there are genealogies which, although unfortunately lacking the glyptic evidence to sustain or refute them, present the possibilities of interpreting *akiya* as a hypocoristicon

<sup>21</sup> NKT 80.

<sup>22</sup> Cf. *tar-mi-te-šup a*, *šē-li-te-šup*, N 104: 21 and *tar-mi-ia a*, *šē-li-te-šup*, N 148: 18. The names are written over identical seal impressions in both cases. *tar-mi-te-šup a*, *e-ši-el-te-šup*, N 109: 16 is written over the same seal impression.

not only for *akip-šenni*, but also *akip-tilla*.<sup>20</sup> There are many instances of this sort, e.g., *puhiya* for *puhi-še(n)ni*<sup>21</sup> and so on down the list, which the limited scope of this article prevents the reviewer from quoting.

This leaves for investigation the writings in *-a-a*. It is to be noted that in the examples cited by Gustavs, and also in any number of other examples, this writing occurs after signs ending in *a*. Thus we have the written combination *a-a-a* which is universally read *aya*. That Kerkuk writing is no exception to this convention is attested in an interesting manner. A conclusive genealogy shows clearly that the writing *a-ri-iq-qa-a-a* expresses the hypocoristic form of *ari-kamari* (written *a-ri-qa-ma-ri*).<sup>22</sup> A pair of identical witness lists shows that *a-ri-iq-qa-a-a*, Nu 759:22, with the paternity *ariya* occurs in a position corresponding to *a-ri-ge-ia*, N 58:23 which has also the same paternity. This identity shows that *ari-ke/ya* may be used as an additional illustration of the variation between *a* and *e/i* discussed by Berkoos.<sup>23</sup> What is more, *ari-ke/ya*, under these conditions, implies an underlying *ari(k)-kaya* for the writing *a-ri-iq-qa-a-a*. The name *arikaya* when compared with *ari-kamari* assumes the rôle of a hypocoristicum formed by the addition of *-ga* to a name cut down to *arikka*. A striking illustration of this process is provided by the variation of *šekaya* and *šekar-tilla* in the same text.<sup>24</sup> Circumstantial evidence of such hypocoristic formation

<sup>20</sup> *a-ki-ia* f. *šuk-ri-te-šup*, H I 59:29 and *a-ki-p-še-en-ni* f. *šuk-ri-te-šup*, H II 15:12; G 43:23. Cf. also *a-ki-ia* s. *tu-ra-ri*, N 487:24 and *a-ki-p-ti-la* s. *du-ra-ri*, N 4:21, 27 and *passim*. The reader is warned that Akiya's seal does not resemble that of Akip-tilla. The texts at present at the Oriental Institute show instances where the same person uses two different seals. The scribe *Baifu-kadid* makes extensive use of two different seals. The reviewer presents genealogical evidence of this sort as nothing more definite than suggestions.

<sup>21</sup> Cf. *pu-ši-ig* f. *še-qa-ru(n)*, N 1:23 with *pu-ši-še-ni* f. *še-qa-ru*, H I 65:11 and *pu-ši-še-en-ni* f. *še-qa-ru*, H II 116:10.

<sup>22</sup> Cf. *a-ri-iq-qa-a-a*, b. *ni-nu-a-ri* and s. *še-ma-hul*, N 368:4, 9, 16, 25; N 376:2, 11, 13, and *a-ri-qa-ma-ri* with the same brother and the same father, N 97:2, 11. All three documents refer to land in the same locality and there is a probability that N 368 is a lawsuit concerning the land transferred to Tehip-tilla in the *mārūtu*, N 97.

<sup>23</sup> Cf. *NDA* 26 f. Of particular interest in this connection is the variation *a-ri-iq-qa-na-ri/a-ri-iq-ge-na-ri* (transcribed *a-ri-iq-gi-na-ri* by Berkoos, *NDA* 27).

<sup>24</sup> *še-qa-a-a*, TCL 9, 41:16, 25 and *še-qa-ar-ti-la*, lines 7, 39.

is also provided by genealogies suggesting *akaya* as a hypocoristic formation of *akap-še(n)ni*<sup>34</sup> and *ipšaya* for *ip-šahalu*.<sup>35</sup> Again the limited space does not permit a list of remaining possibilities inferred by genealogies.

This interpretation of names in *(-)a-a-a* makes it evident that there is a hypocoristic formation in Hurrian consisting of the addition of *-ga* to a name cut down to one of its vowels. The findings presented here do not preclude the possibility that *-(y)a* may have other functions.<sup>36</sup> However, a conclusive demonstration of its possibilities as a potential stem promises to be a delicate and exacting task.

The translation "lady, mistress," proposed for the element *tilla* is based on the early misreading *NINNI-ki-til-la*, CT 2 21:2, 8, 18, which led to an interpretation *šaušī-til-la*, the name actually being *šur-ki-til-la*. The confusion arises from a variant writing of ŠUR in which four wedges surmount the "Winkelhaken" instead of three. It has recently been shown that *Tilla* is both the name of a deity and also of a city.<sup>37</sup> However, the sex of this divine being still remains to be determined.

The list A 15 contains names having in common an element which Gustavs reads *-u-si* and normalizes as *-usi*. Such a reading was made during the time when no one was in the position to know that GUR was written in some instances like SI. Other signs like IP and UR, as Gustavs observes,<sup>38</sup> are written ambiguously. A 15:8 contains two names both with the sign in question. One of them *ú-gur-a-ri* is read correctly while the other, owing to the ambiguous writing of the last sign, is misread *wa-an-ti-nu-si* instead of the correct *wa-an-ti-nu-gur*. However, out of the eleven examples presented as illustration, eight have perfectly good GUR-signs, while the three ambiguous writings include only one that definitely looks

<sup>34</sup> *a-ga-a-a a. šuk-ri-ia*, N 190: 19, 21 and *a-kap-še-en-ni*, scribe, *a. šuk-ri-ia*, N 470: 38.

<sup>35</sup> Cf. *ip-ša-a-a a. ar-te-ia*, N 283: 20 and *ip-ša-ša-ia a. ar-te-ia*, N 69: 18.

<sup>36</sup> The reviewer should like to acknowledge his debt to Professor Speiser at whose suggestion he has undertaken the study of the hypocoristic nature of *-(y)a*. Ungnad from the very beginning saw *-ya* as a hypocoristic formative, *Beiträge zur Assyriologie* VI/5, p. 10. Oppenheim, *WZKM* 44, 194, sees in it a "Zugehörigkeitssuffix" when following an element which is a divine name.

<sup>37</sup> *ASOR* 15, 49: 3 and pp. 99, 101. For the city *Tilla*, cf. op. cit., 47: 23, 48: 34; 50: 20.

<sup>38</sup> *NKT* 9, n. 1; 16, n. 3; 38, n. 2.

like SI.<sup>38</sup> That the element in question is *-ugur* and refers to a well-known deity is attested by the name written *it-ki-ip-u-gur*<sup>39</sup> which has been noticed both by Berkooz and Oppenheim.

Among other minor features worthy of consideration, is the probable fragmentary nature of *a-ri-ig-ge*, which makes its rôle as an illustration of a verbal form in *kk* rather dubious.<sup>40</sup> It may also be mentioned that while Mr. Gustavs has rightly pointed out that the sign, formerly read *tuk*, really has the value *háb/p*, examination of the additional material would have revealed that it also has the value *túl*.<sup>41</sup>

There are many other problems raised in Gustavs' work which have a relatively minor importance and there are also some which, in view of today's insufficient knowledge of Hurrian linguistics, promise to remain moot questions. Such points are left undiscussed in this attempt to elucidate, in so far as the available evidence permits, some of the important views presented by Gustavs in his latest work. An explanation of the more obscure features of the formation and structure of Hurrian names awaits the clues which future investigations in the very extensive Kerkuk material may provide. In conclusion, the hope is expressed that such research will be established on a basis firm enough to bring about ultimately a more precise knowledge of the Hurrian language.

<sup>38</sup> The good writings of GUR are N 28: 38; 51: 21; 58: 22; 67: 32; 87: 36; H I 36: 23; 38: 12; 84: 27. The ambiguous writings are N 12: 3; 28: 36, but cf. the perfectly good writing on line 38. The one bad writing is H I 15: 64. That *ugur* is generally accepted is shown by Berkooz, *NDA* 16 and Oppenheim, *A/O* 12.33.

<sup>39</sup> Cf. *NDA* 16 and *A/O* 12.30, where both comment on the absence of the god-determinative elsewhere before theophoric elements in Hurrian names. There are two exceptions which are interesting since they occur in what is probably an earlier Nuzi text. They are *ar-te-šup*, N 414: 2, 8, 12 and *šul-ki-te-šup*, line 23 of the same document.

<sup>40</sup> *a-ri-ig-ge* [...] f. *ku-ur-su*, N 61: 34 and *a-ri-ig-ge-el-be* f. *ku-ur-su*, H II 19: 41.

<sup>41</sup> Thus *túl-bi-is* instead of *háb-bi-is* in A 6: 64. Cf. also the various writings of *Tulpu-naga*, *AASOR* 16, p. 164 f.

A hitherto unknown sign value in Nuzi writing is that of *mat* for MUD. This sign occurs in the name *a-ri-mat(MUD)-ga*, N 42: 16 and transcribed *a-ri-gi?de*, A 4: 17. This new value finds its support in *a-ri-im-ma-at-ga* a. 46-[aš], Nu 269: 12 and *a-ri-mat(MUD)-g[a]*, seal, line 23. The seal impression is the same as that of *a-ri-im-ma-at-ga* a. 46-[aš], N 429: 25. Line 22 of Nu 1023, published by Licheman, *JAOR* 55, pl. I after p. 431 is to be read [...] *már a-ri-mat(MUD)-ga*.

## BRIEF COMMUNICATIONS

### Dravidian "bone"

TAMIL has the words *elumpu* and *enpu* (bone); these are derived from \**elnap* thru \**elamp* and \**ennap*. KANARA has the forms *elu*, *elabu*, *elubu*, *eluvu*; *elu* is a reduction of *eluru*, and the longer forms correspond to Tamil *elumpu*, having lost the nasal in accord with *eraḍu* = Tamil *iraṇṇu* (two). TELUGU has the forms *emike*, *emuka*, *emmu*, *bomike*, *bōke*, and the plural *makkelu*. Evidently *emmu* corresponds to Tamil *enpu*: cp. *pōmu* = Tamil *pāmpu* (snake). Old plurals are represented by *emike* and *emuka* from \**embikkol*; cp. the Tamil plural-ending *-kal*. The form *bōke* is a reduction of \**bōmke* = *bomike*, the nasal being lost after a long vowel as in *mādu* = Tamil *māṇḍu* (three). The form *bomike* is an old plural like *emike*. The radical portion *bom-* comes from a reduplicated \**embemb* thru \**embomb* and \**bomb*; cp. *pamp-* (send) from reduplicated \**amppampp*, corresponding to Tamil *anupp-* (send). The plural *makkelu* is a reduction of a plural resembling the form \**embikkol*. As Telugu regularly has *e* for *i* before *a*, we may assume *makkelu* < \**makkal* < \**mikkol* < \**embikkol*, with displacement of vowels as in *reṇḍu* < \**areṇḍu* < \**eraṇḍu* < \**iraṇḍu* = Tamil *iraṇṇu*.

GŌNDI has the form *panēkā*; KUI has *prēnu*, pl. *prēka*. Evidently the Gōndi form is a plural used for the singular; we may assume *panē-* < \**prnē* < \**prēn*. Kui *prēnu* can be explained as representing \**prēn* < \**pern* < \**pernap* < \**napernap* < \**napernapel* < \**napelnapel*, a reduplicated \**napel*, corresponding to basic \**elnap* with the order of the elements reversed. Thus it appears that \**elnap* is a compound of two synonyms, \**el* and \**nap*. In Gōndi-Kui they were compounded in the order \**napel*.

The element \**el* is perhaps represented by *-ol* in Kurukh *ṣōtṣol* (bone).

EDWIN H. TUTTLE.

Washington, D. C.

*Addenda to the Bibliography of A. V. Williams Jackson*

At the time of final revision of the bibliography of Dr. Jackson (*JAOS* 58, 241-257) I was unaware that two articles by him were to be printed posthumously in the *Journal*. To make the bibliography rigorously complete, therefore, the following two entries should be added after the fourth entry on page 252.

The doctrine of the Bolos in Manichaean eschatology. *JAOS* 58, 225-234 (June, 1938). [Posthumous.]

The personality of Mînt, the founder of Manichaeism. *JAOS* 58, 235-240 (June, 1938). [Posthumous.]

It should also be noted that the article "On the date of Zoroaster," *JAOS* 17, 1-22 (Nov. 1896), was reprinted, with a few additions and corrections, in Dr. Jackson's *Zoroaster, the Prophet of Ancient Iran*, as Appendix II, pages 150-178, with the pagination of the original article indicated to facilitate reference.

GEORGE C. O. HAAS.

Institute of Hyperphysical Research,  
New York

*Note on the review of A Propos des Voyages aventureux de  
Fernand Mendez Pinto*

I admit that I turned Pinto's vindication into a vindication of Charignon. When I saw that Pinto offered me no opportunity to speak of Java, I did not hesitate to add an Introduction, the subject being familiar to me.

Charignon having died in 1930, he could not have known of N. J. Krom's *Hindoe-Javaansche Geschiedenis*, which was published in 1931. I myself live in comparative isolation. Therefore I am grateful for the information concerning this book, and also that concerning the two Javanese historical works, the *Nāgara-Kṛtāgama*, and the *Pararaton*.

Charignon wrote: "We do not deny that most of the toponyms found by preceding writers in modern Javanese names are derived from the names given in the *Yüan-shih*; for example, Majpahit

<sup>1</sup> "La Grande Java de Marco Polo en Cochinchine," *Bull. de la Société des Etudes Indochinoises*, n.s., Tome IV, No. 4, Oct.-Dec., 1929.

. . . But this does not justify us in concluding that these names are given to the same localities today as in the time of the Mongols. . . . We believe that these names are due to migrations from Cochin-China, of which we know little, although they must have been by way of the Malay Peninsula and Sumatra, where certain of these toponyms can still be found.<sup>2</sup> These migrations cannot have occurred earlier than the T'ang period, for the references in the T'ang histories to countries of the South Sea, and more particularly to Ho-ling and She-po, apply only to Indo-China. When authors of the Ming period apply to localities in Indonesia names which, by authors of the T'ang and Sung periods, are given to places in Indo-China, they often transfer to them details given in earlier histories, although such details may not be suitable to the new location. For this reason we have relied, as far as possible, upon material earlier than the Yüan period." (pp. 316-17.)

"If Marco Polo referred to Java, why did he use the term *major* in mentioning an island much smaller than Sumatra, which he called *minor*?" (p. 195.) Marco Polo said that the islands of Sandur and Candur were south of Java Major. No one will deny that they were south of Cochin-China, but not south of the modern Java. Charignon confirms this by a reference to Ibn Batuta, (p. 198), and concludes (p. 345) that the Great Java of Marco Polo was Cochin-China.<sup>3</sup>

The *Nagara-Kṛtāgama* and the *Pararaton* can prove only that the Javanese of today are descended from inhabitants of Cochin-China. I personally am convinced that some day Pinto will be rehabilitated.

M. MEDARD

Peking

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Djiring, in the basin of the Donnai river; Juring, on the Malay peninsula east of Patani; the names Djambra and Jarabi in Cochin-China; and Korintji in Sumatra.

<sup>3</sup> A Mongol expedition was sent against Chao-wa in 1293. Charignon holds that Chao-wa was the She-po in Cochin-China; one of the three Chan-po. The other two were Lin-yi in Annam, the present Kuang Nam, mentioned by Hsüan Tsang (T. Watters, *Yuan Chwang's Travels in India*, II, p. 188); and Piao or T'u-lo-chu She-po, in Burma, the present Ava.



## REVIEWS OF BOOKS

---

*La Religione degli Hittiti.* By GIUSEPPE FURLANI. Bologna: NICOLA ZANICHELLI, 1936. Pp. xx + 431. L. 20.

It is gratifying that Furlani presents in this book a counterpart to his study on the religion of the Babylonians and Assyrians published in the same series several years ago. He collects for a larger public the facts of Hittite religion that have been regained by the decipherment of the clay tablets from Boğazköy through the labors of a generation of scholars.

The subject is fascinating. Every student of Near Eastern cultures will be eager to learn about the religion of a nation which, for most of the second millennium B. C., played a part at least as significant as that of the Egyptians and the Akkadians.

Furlani deals with his subject in 25 chapters. On the whole he proves to be well informed. It is the author's merit to have collected for his readers' convenience whatever has been said before in various (and sometimes hidden) places. Particularly extensive use has been made of the pertinent chapter in my *Kleinasien* which was the first attempt to outline Hittite religion by an evaluation of the primary sources. The author has apparently refrained from utilizing the large body of religious texts which are available only in cuneiform. The great danger of all compilations, to bring mutually exclusive interpretations of the same facts, has not been entirely avoided. As a whole, the book is more retrospective than prospective.

The Hittite civilization is the product of an extensive mixture of different races. This fact is of particularly important consequence as far as religion is concerned. The situation makes an interpretation of the material difficult and forces the historian to make sharp discriminations, a principle not always sufficiently observed by the present author. The picture he draws is therefore in some respects incoherent. Above all, one gets the erroneous impression that there is really not very much difference between the religious attitude of the Akkadians on the one hand and that of the Hittites on the other.

I have noted a number of details which need correction. I do

not want to dwell on them unduly, and therefore limit myself to a very small number: After Ebelolf's article in ZA NF 9 170 ff. (quoted p. XII), the author should not have stated (p. 27) that *karimniš* and *šinanniš* are the Hittite terms for "god"; the Hittite word is *šin-*, *šina/i-*. It may very well have an Indo-European etymology (cf. Götze-Pedersen, *Muršili's Sprachlähmung* 73 f.).—The epic of Kumarpi cannot be "la vera epopea degli Hittiti" (p. 82), since Kumarpi is a Hurrian god.—The complex written *HU. HAR. RI* is interpreted correctly as *MUSEN HUR. RI* "uccello della caverna" on p. 160, but a few pages later (166) read *HU. HAR. RI* and understood to be "qualche specie di sorteggio." The sections on p. 186 commented upon by notes 24 and 25 respectively refer to one and the same text; Bo 2062 is published as KUB VII 53.

In spite of such shortcomings Furlani's book, I trust, will increase the interest in Hittite religion. I feel certain that not only the historian of culture but also the comparative student of religions will find the information which he can obtain from the Hittite sources of great significance. And most of these sources still wait for an interpreter. Here lies open a wide field for scholarly activity!

ALBRECHT GOETZE

Yale University

*Altbabylonische Personenmiete und Erntearbeiterverträge.* By JULIUS GEORG LAETNER. *Studia et documenta ad iura orientis antiqui pertinentia*, volumen I. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1936. xx + 262 pp.

In the interpretation of the source material for the study of ancient Babylonian culture, the work of scholars trained in the science of deciphering and translating the cuneiform tablets must often be supplemented by the efforts of specialists trained in other fields. As cuneiform studies have benefited in the past by the work of mathematicians, astronomers, and lawyers, so now we have in the present volume another fine contribution to the study of Babylonian legal practices of about 2000 B. C. by a scholar particularly well trained for such a task.

We now have enough examples of Old Babylonian business docu-

ments to know that they fall into certain well established groups. Just as modern business documents may be grouped according to their forms, so Babylonian documents had their definite stereotyped phraseology. The problem of this book centers around one such well defined group of documents, known as the "harvest-worker contracts." While it was this special type of contract which started the author's investigation along these lines, he found it advisable to discuss also all related types of contracts dealing with the hiring of human labor.

His major results may be briefly summarized as follows. Classified according to their key words, there are four principal types of contracts dealing with the hiring of labor: (1) the *agārum* ("to hire") contracts, (2) the *šubanti* ("he received") contracts, (3) the *išā* ("to hold") contracts (*Verpflichtungsschein*), and (4) the mixed forms. The *agārum* formula is the regular one used for all contracts of hire, whether of the hiring of persons, or the renting of movable property in general. The leasing of immovable property is expressed by the formula *šūšū* ("to cause to go out"). The *agārum* contract is drawn up by the employer of the laborer, and is held by the owner of the slave who is hired out, or, in case of self-hiring, by the hired person himself. The legal nature of the *agārum* contract is that of a real contract (against Boyer), because the actual delivery of the hireling for service takes place at the same time as the drawing of the contract. The persons hired out may be slaves, family dependents, free-born persons temporarily under the authority of a creditor to whom they are indebted, or free persons who hire themselves out. Contrary to the views of Boyer, the wages were not paid to the hireling (unless he had hired out himself), but to his owner or controller. The employer had to clothe and feed the hireling. Often part or all of the wages was paid in advance. Failure of the hireling to complete the contract because of conditions for which the employer was not responsible brought a penalty on the owner of the hireling of the forfeiture of all the wages. Contracts were drawn for definite periods of time, usually a month, the extremes being 10 days, and 2 years. Against the opinion of a number of scholars, there was no such thing as hiring for an indefinite time with the privilege of ending the contract by giving notice.

The harvest worker contracts with the *šubanti* formula are not

contracts for the hiring of specific individuals, but contracts for furnishing labor in the abstract. The arrangement embodied in the contracts is that the prospective employer makes an advance payment to the contractor, who in turn agrees to furnish a certain number of laborers at harvest time. The contractor may appear for work himself, or he may send a substitute; and, in case a number of workers are required, the rest go unnamed. These contracts are the reverse of the *agdrum* contracts in that they are drawn up by the contractor and not by the employer of the laborers. There are two groups of such *šubanti* contracts, according to whether the number of laborers is one or many. They are not contracts made with employment agents, who had a large clientele from which to select their workers, but contracts made with individuals, or foremen of small gangs of workers. The contracts are made effective by the *šimdāt šarrim* clause. Contrary to the view of a number of scholars, this clause does not give the employer the power to force the laborers to work, but rather provides for a money payment to the employer by the contractor as a penalty for the nonappearance of the laborers.

There are a few harvest worker contracts in the form of promissory notes (*išā* contracts). They do not show that the person obligated had borrowed workers who were to be returned, but that he was indebted to the creditor for some other reason, and thus agreed to meet his debt by furnishing labor for the harvest. These contracts are also for labor in the abstract, and not for individual hirelings.

There were certain conditions which did not fit the form of any of the types of hiring contracts, as for example, the case in which a specific person is to be hired for future work, but is not to begin at once. In such cases the scribes met the situation by combining elements from different types to form the "mixed forms." The case just mentioned calls for a *šimdāt šarrim* clause in an *agdrum* contract.

In the main the above stated theses of the author are likely to stand, but we may expect that in details they will later be modified. In many cases this is probable because of the limited number of documents on which he was forced to build his case. The volume is a silent call for the publication of more Old Babylonian contracts, for although the number of such published texts is already

quite large, when our author attempts to study certain specific types of contracts he often finds the number inadequate for assured results. A list of Sumerian and Akkadian words and phrases discussed would have added to the usefulness of the book. A number of such words appear in the "Sachregister," but there are many more discussed in the book which do not appear in the "Sachregister."

The following comments and criticisms on detailed points may be considered by the reader.

p. 11. The personal name (m) AN . UD-a-a-tum is read (m) (il) *Sama-a-a-tum*. Such a reading is doubtless based on the common occurrence of the phonetically spelled name *Ša-ma-a-a-tum*. If the final consonant of the name of the god *Šamaš* is indeed to be dropped in this personal name, a note would have been in order to explain its justification.

p. 13, note 39. The proposed interpretation of YBT V, 253: 6 is possibly correct, but it assumes a scribal error in the sign GA<sub>2</sub>. A collation of the original tablet shows that the final upright stroke of this sign, missing in the copy, is also missing on the tablet. The only improvement that could be made in the copy would be to place the BUR a little nearer the preceding wedges.

p. 42 ff. Leo Oppenheim's *Untersuchungen zum babylonischen Mietrecht*, apparently was not available to the author when he wrote, for he takes no account of Oppenheim's discussion of *kīšrum* and *īdum*. Lautner argues that the exchange of the two words in GCD p. 15 is due to a careless scribe, because of other inconsistencies which he points out. But, following Oppenheim, the difference in meaning of the two words may have justified the way in which both are used in this document. The penalty for breach of contract may have been intentionally named as loss of daily wages rather than the whole year's compensation. The same may be true for VAT 967 (HG 538). On the other hand, contrary to Oppenheim's views, *īdum* is used for yearly income, and seems really to be interchanged with *kīšrum* in CT VIII, 15 (91-5-9, 1016). Lautner's conjecture that *īdum* is a later term for wages than *kīšrum* does not harmonize with the fact, pointed out by Oppenheim, that *Ā* — *īdum* was the only word for wages in the III-Ur Dynasty.

p. 49. The name read in transliteration *Warad-sá* might perhaps better be read *Waras-su*, since *Warad-sá* does not show the assimilation

lated consonant. The same name is spelled out phonetically *Wa-ra-aš-zu* in *TCL* I, 160:22. On the sibilant see now Goetze, "The Sibilant in Old Babylonian *naštrum*," *Orientalia* N. S. VI, 12 ff.

p. 74. The error of omitting a hyphen from the word *wa-ar-a-ma-ti-su* is apparently repeated from *MDP* XXIII, p. 102.

p. 82. The Sumerian expression read *šag-l-bi-ta* here and elsewhere, where the same tablet is quoted, is the same expression as that read *šā-bi-ta* on p. 117. The latter reading is correct; see Poebel *GSG* sec. 39.

p. 103. The interpretation of *GT* IV, 47a is very doubtful. The difficulty hinges on the translation of lines 11-13, *a-na šu-ri-nim la Šamaš da-ia-nu B a C a-na A id-di-nu-šu-ma*. Lautner would translate: "(nachdem) die Richter den B und den C gegen A dem Wahrzeichen des Šamaš übergeben haben. . . ." He understands that B and C were required to take oath to establish the guilt of A. To justify his translation he assumes a scribal error in omitting a syllable from *\*id-dināšunāma*. For such a translation one must really assume the omission of two syllables, for the correct form of the accusative third person plural suffix in Old Babylonian is *-šundā*, not *-šunā*. Moreover, a translation along the lines proposed by Schorr *U&ZP* 305 is possible without emendation: "The judges, B, and C, with regard to A, delivered him over to the emblem of Šamaš." The use of *ana* in this sentence is strange in Old Babylonian; one might perhaps point out the very similar uses in the Middle Assyrian law code (*KAV* 1, III:12; V:13). Lautner objects to Schorr's interpretation of this text on the ground that if A, the defendant in this case, had had a chance to take the oath, he would have been glad to do so, instead of avoiding it by making a settlement for 16 shekels before they came to the *šurinnam*. Since an oath was a sort of ordeal, we can easily understand why the defendant would shrink from it. His only ground for fighting the case, as Lautner says, would have been that the plaintiff's property had been lost for reasons which he could not control. The defendant may have been willing to claim such an excuse, but unwilling to take the consequences of swearing to such a claim, when it may not have been fully true. In any case the document is an evidence for *Verschuldenshaftung*, whichever interpretation is adopted; hence it is not necessary to resort to Lautner's forced interpretation to gain the point he desires.

p. 117. Objection may be raised to the interpretation given for CT IV, 42b, on the ground that ša-bi-ta (line 3) is not correctly rendered. The phrase means literally, "from its midst." It is regularly used in the sense of, "out of the aforesaid amount." It does not mean, "out of the following amount." The phrase is found in VS XIII, 92, and is correctly rendered by Lautner on p. 82. He, along with previous translators of CT IV, 42b, is forced to take it in the opposite sense, because the first mentioned amount of grain appears to be smaller than the second. The numeral in line 1 has been read: 1 + 2(PI) + 3(ban) še-gur; but the wedges designating the number of PI should be written as vertical strokes, while these are written horizontally. We may not, therefore, read: 3 + 3(ban) še-gur, for in this case the wedges for the number of gur would be written in one continuous line. The amount as it stands is probably to be read: 63 + 3(ban) še-gur. The 8 gur mentioned after ša-bi-ta is part of the amount mentioned first. This allows ša-bi-ta its proper meaning, but makes a revision necessary in the interpretation of the text. It is simply a receipt for a large amount of grain, of which 8 gur was considered as the recipient's wages for the year.

p. 162. There is confusion in the manner of writing the singular and plural Semitic forms of the word for "harvest worker." The word *awel* should appear as a determinative, in the same form, whether its noun is singular or plural.

p. 188. On the phrase, "hellfarbige Sklaven" see Speiser, *Mesopotamian Origins*, pp. 102 ff., where it is argued convincingly that the word "hellfarbige" should be given up in such passages for something like "sound," or "healthy."

p. 214. In F 12 (HG V 1374), line 11, the true reading is probably nam-10 rather than GIR-10. In the same text, line 20, the title may better be read nar (see Deimel *SL* II, 355, 11) instead of lul. Pohl reads now, for this sign, šattam (see *Texte und Materialien der Frau Professor Hilprecht Collection*. . . N. F. I/II, p. 28).

FERRIS J. STEPHENS.

Yale University.



*A Social and Religious History of the Jews.* By SALO WITTMAYER BARON. Vol. I, pp. xiii-377; Vol. II, pp. ix-462; Vol. III, pp. xi-405; COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY PRESS, 1937.

Professor Baron's three volumes are a notable achievement in scholarship and historical imagination. Of the three volumes the last is the one for which scholars will be particularly grateful. It consists of the footnotes to the text of the other two volumes, along with the references to the authorities upon whom the statements in the text are based, and of a bibliography which mentions practically every book and article bearing upon Jewish History down to the date of publication. It is not a criticism of Baron's selective powers to say that he included books and articles whose scientific value is not particularly great. His aim was completeness, and anyone using his bibliography will know how to discriminate. An index brings the third volume to a close.

The space allotted in the first two volumes to the various periods of Jewish History is as follows: 245 to the formative period, the so-called First and Second Commonwealths; the rest of volume I, about 130 pages, is devoted to the Jews in the East under Persia and Islam; the mediæval period in Europe gets only 86 pages; the Ghetto period about the same number; the period of Emancipation, from the middle of the eighteenth to the end of the nineteenth centuries, 100 pages; and Nationalism, that is the last fifty years, as many more; finally, another 100 pages are devoted to a survey of the current situation in Jewish life and the author's views as to how this situation may be ameliorated. Thus, fully a third of the text deals with modern and contemporary events. The last section suffers from the inevitable mixture of the author's personal views with legitimate descriptive material, and it would have been better and have strengthened the entire work if this section had been published as a separate book.

From beginning to end Professor Baron defends the thesis of a struggle in civilization between Nature and History, that is between the territorial group which is primarily earth-bound and the ideological group which has freed itself from the need of physical boundaries. No clear-cut distinctions are possible and Professor Baron would no doubt be the last to deny that there are few territorial groups without ideological elements, just as he claims that in the Jewish group there has always been a need for and a pull

toward a territorial basis. Professor Baron's theory is not merely a restatement of the old antithesis between body and soul, physical and spiritual, in the life of nations. He goes beyond this distinction and identifies the antithesis as one between those peoples who accept Nature and Nature's claims, and those who would rise above Nature and therefore fight against it. It is pagan to accept Nature and to deify it; it is Jewish to see in the flow of human history a challenge to Nature and a rising above it. The Jews have therefore been a historical people in a special sense. Their religious traditions embody historical memories and their hopes are centered in a Messianic Age in which Nature will finally be overcome. This conquest cannot come, however, through the unaided efforts of Nature-bound man; it will have to come through the direct intervention of God. Thus religion and Jewish History are inseparable.

The modern counterpart of this struggle is between jingo-nationalism and spiritual nationalism. Professor Baron traces through the Jewish institutions of the Middle Ages that type of nationalism which in recent years has expressed itself in cultural Zionism. When, however, he attempts to explain here, as he did in articles elsewhere, that the expulsions of the Jews during the Middle Ages were due to nationalism in European lands, Professor Baron is not on equally safe ground. A growing sense of kinship within certain geographical areas existed during the Middle Ages, but this of itself was hardly responsible for the expulsions. Local economic forces, allied with the ambitions of rulers to unite their provinces, had far more to do with it than the still underdeveloped sense of national loyalty. At this point and elsewhere in Baron's condensation of a long history, the generalization does not cover every possibility. Professor Baron has written a philosophical survey of Jewish History, and under the circumstances cannot be blamed if occasionally he gives too brief a presentation of a subject which to the mind of the reviewer or the reader deserves a longer treatment, for example Jewish Literature in its sociological aspect. It is likewise inevitable that in such a work one will find details with which one is in disagreement. One example of this is the early relations between Jews and Christians. There is no doubt, however, that everyone will read Professor Baron's book with interest and profit, and will find the third volume immensely useful.

SOLOMON GRATZEL.

Graetz College, Philadelphia.

*The Wall-Paintings of India, Central Asia, and Ceylon.* A comparative study by BENJAMIN ROWLAND, JR. With an introductory essay on *The Nature of Buddhist Art* by ANANDA K. COOMARASWAMY, a foreword by A. TOWNSHEND JOHNSON, and color plates by F. BAILEY VANDERHOEF, JR. Boston: THE MERRYMOUNT PRESS, 1938. Pp. xiv + 94, with 30 plates in full color. \$45.

This portfolio of Indian and Indian colonial wall paintings truly deserves the characterization of magnificent, and commands the attention of Indianists and students of art alike. Without actually comparing on the spot a wall painting and its printed reproduction no one can assess exactly the accuracy of the copy; but to one who has seen a number of the originals of the works illustrated in this volume these plates are convincing representations of their famous and inaccessible originals. Every praise is due the authors of the color-photography project and the financial sponsors who made the photography and the publication possible.

The paintings chosen for the book lie at Mīrān (1), Bāmiyān (2-14), Ajantā (15-19), Bāgh (20-23), Sigiriya (24-27), Polonnaruwa (28), Ming-Öi in Khotān (29), and Bezaklik in Turfan (30). Their time is from the 3rd to about the 14th century A. D. It would have been easy to mention other sites from which examples would have been welcome, such as Sittanavassil, but the authors are not to be reproached for failing to be complete: the work as it stands represents a great expense of time and money. It seems to have been a bit ungenerous, if not actually unsympathetic to science, for the Hyderabad State government to deny the free use of material in the Ajantā and Elūrā caves (p. xii), which until recently were for many decades open without restriction to all visitors.

The discussion in Mr. Rowlands' text is in its largest part given to aesthetic criticism, and that is its most important and successful part. In interpretation of the subject matter he adds little to the conclusions of previous authors; in dating he makes contributions from a good use of pigment analysis. Mr. Rowlands means his discussion to constitute notes on the illustrations rather than an historical exposition. There is an unfortunate eclecticism and considerable minor inexactitude in the application of diacritics on

oriental words and Sanskrit form (Śakti, p. 66; Rudrāyāna, p. 68; *apsaras* as a plural, pp. 64, 84, 85). It is not clear why (p. 54) the jars as bases of some columns at Rāmiyān should be of Sasanian origin rather than Indian. It might have been noted (p. 78) that hybrid animals are known in India from the time of the Harappa culture in the 3rd millennium B.C. The kind of inaccuracies I have mentioned are entirely minor and no serious detractors from his work.

In a lengthy introduction Dr. Coomaraswamy, writing on the nature of Buddhist art, again states that to understand Indian art it is necessary to understand the ideas which it is used to symbolize, and that since these ideas are all mystical the understanding of the art is beyond the competence of the rationalist. "Aesthetic appreciation" is not enough. As the motif of the art was religious, its study must be religious also, if not actually a religious exercise.

The plates being the finest reproductions ever made of Indian wall paintings, every user of the book is bound to be delighted with them.

W. NORMAN BROWN.

University of Pennsylvania.

---

*The History of the Former Han Dynasty: Translation, Vol. I.*  
Translated by HOMER H. DUBS. Baltimore: WAVERLY PRESS,  
for the AMERICAN COUNCIL OF LEARNED SOCIETIES, 1938.  
339 pages, one map.

This is the first fruit of the greatest task yet undertaken by American sinology, the translation of the second of the Chinese dynastic histories. Even though it is only a beginning, the translator and the Council's Committee on Far-Eastern Studies are to be congratulated upon an excellent piece of work. When Professor Pelliot suggested to the committee the translation of the histories, he had in mind only a rough piece of work. The committee wisely decided to undertake the task thoroughly, and was fortunate in the selection of Professor Dubs, who has been able to devote three years to the work. The undertaking was made possible by a grant from the Carnegie Corporation. Two companion volumes are now being prepared for the printer, a prolegomena, and an onomasticon. There

will also be two other volumes of translation, which will complete the translation of the Imperial Annals, the first section of the history.

It is unlikely that the members of the committee realized the enormous task they were undertaking. The Chinese dynastic histories are really encyclopedias dealing with definite periods. The Imperial Annals form little more than the chronological background of the period, and in the case of the *Ch'ien Han shu* make up only a twentieth of the whole text. Some of the later sections will be much more difficult to translate, and the material of the present volume parallels sections of the *Shih chi* translated by Chavannes. Professor Dubs has begun at the beginning, which happens also to be the easiest place to begin. But it would be unfair to him, or to whomever completes the work, not to point out that only a beginning has been made, even when the first five volumes have been published, and that a tremendous effort must yet be made, involving the collaboration of experts in special fields, before the whole task can be completed. Such a completion will not come for a long time.

The work of Professor Dubs is careful and critical. While the translation does not always conform to the Chinese syntax, and is inconsistent at times, the reviewer has not noticed mistakes that need weaken the confidence of scholars without a knowledge of Chinese in the general reliability of the translation. Variations from the *Shih chi* are noticed, while the notes give various readings and the opinions of commentators. Of these commentators, Yen Shih-ku is given the most weight, and his interpretations are usually followed. The American Council of Learned Societies is to be congratulated upon its generosity in printing the Chinese text in parallel columns with the translation, and it is to be hoped that this method will be continued in future volumes, for it makes the book much more valuable to the sinologist, who is enabled immediately to check the translation with the original. Professor Dubs has had Chinese assistants, and the advice of Professor Duyvendak. He has also been aided in his chronological work by Dr. J. K. Fotheringham, of Oxford. But such a task is necessarily a collaboration to some extent, and the major portion of credit should go to the indefatigable translator.

The Imperial Annals are not a history in our sense of the word,

but only a framework for history. The details are furnished by other sections of the work, and particularly by the memoirs. Until these are translated, we will not have a full picture of the period. For example, the close of the struggle at the beginning of the dynasty is described in these terse sentences.

"In the twelfth month they surrounded Yü and Kai-hsia. At night Yü heard the army of Han on all sides singing the songs of Ch'u. He knew that [Han] had gotten all the land of Ch'u. Yü left with several hundred horsemen; therefore [his] troops were greatly defeated. Kuan Ying pursued and beheaded Yü at Tung-ch'eng." (This translation is slightly different from that of Professor Dubs, and illustrates his relatively unimportant departures from a strict reading of the text.)

These few words—forty syllables in Chinese—summarize one of the most romantic and heroic incidents in all history. A western reader unfamiliar with the details—which are known to every Chinese schoolboy—would miss the devilish cleverness of Liu Pang and his advisors, the pathetic homesickness of the army of Ch'u which destroyed their morale, the deception of Hsiang Yü, the relentless pursuit, and the last stand and death of a great hero. Professor Dubs has endeavored to supply a little of this by changing "know" to "thought," and "left" to "fled." But a real knowledge of this incident cannot be obtained until the various memoirs are translated.

Unfortunately the memoirs appear late in the history, and will not be translated for an indefinite period. This is also true of the *Shih chi*, which was left unfinished by Chavannes, with the greater number of memoirs untranslated until this day. This defect in the two translations is not due to either Chavannes or Dubs, but it should make us remember that we will not have a history of the two periods until the translations are finished. The *Han shu* also contains important, but exceedingly difficult, monographs upon various general subjects, and these also must remain unknown for a long time. Knowing this, Professor Dubs has provided introductory chapters which summarize material given in the memoirs, but although these are admirable, they are not a substitute for the memoirs themselves. Every effort should be made to permit the work of translation to continue.

In these introductions Professor Dubs is obliged not merely to

summarize, but to make judgments. Such judgments are generally sound and in accord with common-sense. But when he says (p. 18), in arguing for a considerable Confucian influence at the beginning of the period, "This conception of imperial rule as limited by consultation with the high ministers . . . was specifically Confucian," he is proving a little too much. The conception was not merely Confucian; it was common to all Chinese schools. The *Po shih* of Ch'in Shih-Huang advised him in much the same way as the ministers of Han Kao-Tsu, and when he decided on the burning of the books, the initial suggestion came from Li Ssu. No one would maintain that this showed a Confucian influence at the court of the First Emperor. Nevertheless Professor Dubs appears correct in emphasizing that there was a stronger Confucian influence at the beginning of the Han period than has generally been supposed.

An excellent map is provided, on which one may follow the course of the campaigns between Han and Ch'u, and it is interesting that the field of battle is roughly that of the recent Japanese campaign in Central China along the Lung-hai railroad. The Japanese high-command doubtless recalls with some discomfort that the ancient struggle was decided in favor of the army from inaccessible western strongholds, which was able to exhaust and cut off the supplies of its opponent, although that opponent was invariably successful in the field.

In general, it may be said that western historians owe a great debt to Professor Dubs, the American Council of Learned Societies, and to all who have contributed to this fine volume.

---

*A History of Chinese Philosophy.* By FUNG YU-LAN, translated by DEREK BODDE. Peiping: VETCH, 1937. 454 pages.

*China's First Unifier; A Study of the Ch'in Dynasty as seen in the Life of Li Ssu.* By DEREK BODDE. Leiden: BRILL, 1938. 270 pages.

*A History of Chinese Philosophy* is a translation of the first volume of a two volume work. The first volume was originally published as a separate work in 1931. In 1934, it was reissued, together with Vol. II. The first volume traces Chinese thought to about 100 B. C., while Vol. II continues the history until the present day. The author, Fung Yu-lan, is generally considered in China



as the leading contemporary student of philosophy, although in America he is not so well-known as Hu Shih and Liang Ch'í-ch'iao. He is a doctor of philosophy of Columbia University, and at the time this translation appeared, was professor of philosophy at the National Tsing Hua University, Peiping.

It may be said at once that Dr. Bodde is to be thanked for giving us the best work on the history of Chinese thought that has yet appeared in English. That in itself is not such high praise, since there has been so little serious material published, but both the original and the translation are achievements of a high order. The reviewer has at hand the text issued in 1931, which was probably revised before it was reissued in 1934. Judging by the 1931 edition, Dr. Bodde has taken considerable liberty with the text, and indeed he acknowledges this, occasionally mentioning it in notes, as well as in the preface. But as the translation has been read and approved by Professor Fung, there can be little objection. There are also translations from ancient sources which may be questioned, while phrases and sentences have been omitted without any indication that this has been done. For example, in the quotation from the life of Hsün Tzu, from the *Shü ch'í* (p. 279), the clause explaining why Hsün Tzu lost his position has been deleted without remark. The reviewer has not noticed anything of this sort which would seriously affect our confidence in the translation, and here again Dr. Bodde is protected by the approval of Professor Fung.

The book is typically Chinese. After a general sentence or two follows quotation after quotation, until it is difficult at times to remember what thesis the quotations are illustrating. Occasionally one wishes that there was more of Professor Fung, and less of the classics. But on the other hand, the richness of the quotations is often a great asset, especially the quotations from untranslated authors like Han Fei and Shen Tzu. Dr. Bodde is mistaken in listing the *Chia yü* as an untranslated source, for most if not all of it was translated by A. B. Hutchinson in early numbers of the *Chinese Recorder* (Vols. IX and X).

While there is little that will be startling to sinologists, scholars who deal with Chinese culture at second-hand in courses in history, religion, and philosophy may be surprised to find what the opinions of modern critical Chinese scholarship are: that Confucius was the

first real philosopher in China, and did not compose the *Spring and Autumn Annals*; that the *Tao tek ching* probably dates from the fourth century B. C., etc. The author assumes a knowledge of Chinese critical scholarship which westerners do not possess, and Dr. Bodde has wisely added explanatory paragraphs from time to time. It should be remembered also that Professor Fung's opinion is not necessarily final. For example, his view that the trigrams of the *Book of Changes* were not in existence during the Shang period (p. 379) is questionable, and the supporting argument that the Shang used only the tortoise-shell in divination is weak.

An American student of philosophy would probably find Forke's *Geschichte der alten chinesischen Philosophie*, which ought to have been mentioned in the bibliography, more convenient to use, but Professor Fung's work is more inclusive, more accurate, and more critical. One is especially thankful for the sections dealing with the legalists, with the "Hundred Schools," with the dialecticians, and with the writings and compilations of the Han period.

The use of the word philosophy in the title may be somewhat misleading to technical philosophers in the west. Much of the material consists of judgments on politics, moral questions, and even ritual and music. Filial piety and the feudal system of government would hardly be considered technical philosophy in the west. Hu Shih has attempted to show the underlying philosophic basis for these things more thoroughly than Fung Yu-lan, and to correlate and compare them with western categories. He compares the "Rectification of Names" with Plato's theory of ideas, and brackets Kung-sun Lung with Zeno. Professor Fung has largely abandoned this method, and as a result might be more difficult for a western scholar unacquainted with Chinese culture to handle. But there is compensation in the fact that he gives us a purely Chinese approach. This is the way an eminent Chinese scholar, with modern training, looks upon the history of the thought of his nation, and Dr. Bodde has performed a great service in offering it to the English-speaking world.

*China's First Unifier* is a critical historical study of an important but neglected period, that of the brief Ch'in dynasty, in which the Chinese states were first molded into an empire, and foundation laid for all future dynasties. The volume does not pretend to give a complete picture of this period, but views it primarily through the medium of the life of its greatest statesman,

Li Ssu. As a result, while all the material dealing with Li Ssu is carefully considered, there is naturally other material, particularly that to be found in untranslated biographies of the *Shih chi*, which might affect the final judgment upon the Ch'in dynasty, and either has not been used, or has been used only to sketch in the background. However, this is in no sense a criticism of the study, but merely indicates its necessary limitations. And although more work remains to be done before we can be even approximately satisfied with our knowledge of the Ch'in, Dr. Bodde has given us a survey which is far superior to anying previously existing in western languages, and particularly the exhaustive study of a man whose life would have been significant in any civilization.

The greatest defect of the book is a natural result of the emphasis upon its hero. Li Ssu was a minister of Ch'in Shih-huang. In this volume he completely overshadows his emperor, who is described as "impetuous, easily swayed in his emotions, and grossly superstitious, a temperament often characteristic of the powerful but uncultured conqueror." This sweeping characterization is unfair to a man who may have been cruel, vicious, and immoral, but was certainly great. The relation between the emperor and his minister was not that between Louis XIII and Richelieu, but rather that between Napoleon and Talleyrand. The able minister offered advice, but it was the emperor whose judgment accepted or rejected that advice, and who must take the responsibility. In the Burning of the Books, for example, the policy opposed by Li Ssu was ably presented to the emperor, but rejected. The sources for the period were written by men who hated both Ch'in Shih-huang and Li Ssu, even though they tried to be fair, and a true picture of the emperor must be inferred from the facts, rather than from the judgments of the historians. Li Ssu succeeded because he was supported by a great ruler, and he fell when that ruler was succeeded by a weakling. Li Ssu made a mistake in putting that weakling on the throne. Ch'in Shih-huang made no mistakes in applying his principles politically, and surrounded himself with many able men whose capacities were a tribute to his own greatness. And it is not altogether fair to emphasize the stories of "superstition," for the adepts whom the emperor patronized were the scientists of their day, even though history has proved them to have been wrong. There is no evidence for the emperor being un-

cultured, as there is for Liu Pang, and we may assume, on the contrary, that he was an educated man. This appears to be the only serious defect of a fine piece of work, but one slight error may be noticed. On page 7, Dr. Bodde says that Ch'in probably introduced cavalry into China, and cites Maspero as his authority. The generally accepted opinion is that this was done by the state of Chao, in which Hunnic influences were particularly strong (Hirth, *Ancient History of China*, p. 273).

As a whole, the book is a valuable study, and Dr. Bodde has shown himself to be a capable and a critical scholar.

J. K. SHAYOCK.

Philadelphia.

---

*The Chinese Kinship System.* By HAN YI FENG. (Reprint from *Harvard Journal of Asiatic Studies*, Vol 2.) Philadelphia: 1937. 129 pp.

This is the first systematic treatment of Chinese kinship terminology. It is a comprehensive presentation of the terminology (found in literary sources) through the long history of Chinese civilization, and can be used by those interested in the Chinese family along lines of their own interests.

Feng, in his dissertation, has done a piece of research which is commendable from many aspects. The volume contains material which is usable. It is presented clearly and concisely. Unfortunately, he has combined the theoretical aspects of the study with a presentation of the data. They should have been kept distinct.

He has fallen into the trap so many have before him, of treating China as a single culture, when in reality the periphery, if not the center, has many variations. Feng mentions this factor but fails to see its significance (p. 159): "alternative terms are those that can be used synonymously with the prevalent forms. The adoption of the one or the other depends entirely upon local customs and individual proclivities."

Instead of explaining the systematic working of kinship over time—and China is the best place we can ever hope to find so full a source material to test the dynamics of culture—he has taken the traditional working found in the stereotyped sources and explained

away the variants (p. 179): "The specifications of these grades have fluctuated much from period to period; certain grades have been dropped or added in conformity with the eccentricities of particular periods. Although the specifications may thus have changed, the fundamental principles which underlie these specifications have remained constant." It is in this manner that Feng has made his mistakes. It is just these fluctuations and "eccentricities" which, when analysed, will give us the key to the solutions. The correlations, wherever possible, between the fluctuations and the changing institutionalizations are the important things once the "constants" have been established. But he throws out the fluctuations and adheres to the central theme without seeing that the central theme is basic and exists through time, and that the fluctuations are due to changing conditions.

He presents some outstanding correlations with the marriage practices through time in a superficial manner (p. 195): "The various connotations of the term *ch'iu* in Period I are perfectly intelligible from the point of view of cross-cousin marriage, as discussed above. In such marriage, the mother's brother and husband's father is the same person, so also the mother's brother and the wife's father. In period II the cross-cousin marriage was dropped, and consequently the meaning of *ch'iu* became confined to mother's brother." If he had pushed this part of the investigation further, he would have achieved some additional correlations; but every time he establishes some correlation between the forms of marriage and the kinship terminology, he endeavors to show that marriage had no place in the Chinese Kinship system. This is due to his thinking of marriage as a causal factor in kinship systems, along the lines set down by Lewis H. Morgan instead of as biological relationship, as it is thought of today.

His discussion of marriage historically in relation to the kinship terminology is full of contradictions. He omits the functional correlations at specific times. He states that marriage between individuals who are related brings about conflict in the usages of the terms. This means that there is a conflict between a past marriage (the terms resulting from the biological relationships) and this present marriage (the terms resulting from the new relationship). On p. 183 he states: "Cross-cousin marriage is permitted, but not encouraged, in modern China. On the other hand, how-

ever, it is desirable, because it increases the number of relationships and knits the bonds more closely." Here Feng is stating that biological relationship, sexual mating, marriage, or whatever one calls it, is the means of denoting relationships. He says that on the basis of the marriage the relatives will be closely bound by relationship ties. Again on p. 190: " . . . a feudal lord was not allowed to marry the noble women of his own estate, because, theoretically, everyone within his feudal estate was his subject, and if the lord were married to any women in his own state, her parents would automatically be a generation higher than he and thus could no longer be his subjects." This is an example of how marriage is a causal factor in kinship.

He cites the practice of the marriage of a man to his wife's brother's daughter, sororate, levirate, cross-cousin and other forms of marriage with the correlating terminology and social usages. He states that all social theorists acknowledge the importance of affinal terminology for analysis. Then he fails to see the importance and to make use of these advances in kinship work. In other ways also he shows an acquaintance but not a familiarity with the kinship theorists.

On p. 189, he calls the marriage of a man to his wife's sister or wife's brother's daughter "legalized incest" when in reality there is no blood relationship between a man and the members of his affinal family (unless the relationship existed before the marriage). If such a union were incestuous, it would also be incestuous to marry your wife. She is just as distant a relative as her sister or brother's daughter.

After definitely establishing many cases of correlations of marriage with the kinship terminology through history, he finally gets to the discussion of teknonymy. In order to make a strong case for teknonymy as a cause of the Chinese kinship system, the other aspects of the subject are neglected, warped, or scanted. Granted that teknonymy is important in the Chinese kinship system, which terms are used for wife's brother, wife's sister, husband's brother, and so on, before they are married and especially before they have any children? How did these terms come about? Teknonymy is based upon the recognition of biological relationships, and without sexual mating there would be no biological relationships. His emphasis upon teknonymy *per se* is unwarranted.

One of the best sources for information about China is the district gazeteers. Feng failed to cite from any of these. If a gazeteer had been used, and only one, and the practices through the ages had been correlated with the social usages such as marriage, inheritance, teknonymy, etc., it is possible that a continuous picture portraying the functioning of the culture and the interrelational causes for the changes could be presented.

In his historical work and the bringing together of the terms, he has shown real ability; in his interpretations there is a lack of understanding of the many theoretical views of today and a failure to apply the latest insights to his study.

It is hoped that Feng will proceed further with work on the structure of Chinese society. He has done a real job and with this beginning, it is hoped he will present additional data, with the variants. His interpretations should then have more far-reaching results.

BERNARD W. AGINSKY.

Columbia University.

*Monumenta Nipponica: Studies on Japanese Culture, Past and Present.* Semi-annual periodical, edited by Dr. J. B. KRAUS. Tokyo: SOPHIA UNIVERSITY. Vol. I, no. 1; January, 1938. Plates, illus. Annual subscription Yen 10.00.

In the "Aims and objectives," the editor states: "Primarily the Journal hopes to lay open to a wide circle, chiefly composed of American and European readers, the typical values of the Japanese tradition. At the same time it desires to unite those scholars, who may be interested in the many aspects of Far Eastern culture." The Journal is to be of a purely scientific character, and all contributions and papers must somehow bear reference to the Far Eastern cultural problem, preferably in so far as it pertains to the Japanese. In addition to original research, much space will be given to the translation of valuable source material. A special feature of the *Monumenta Nipponica* is to be the most careful consideration of the history of the century A. D. 1550-1650 in Japan.

The first issue of the Journal more than fulfills the editor's aims and objectives. Dr. Karl Florenz's translation of a *No* play un-



titled *Manjū* or *Nakamitsu* by Seami Motokiyo (1363-1444) brings out pathos and sufferings of a soul torn between the loyalty to his lord and his own paternal love, which the previous translators failed in handling. It is most appropriate that Dr. Florenz's work should head the list of distinguished scholars in Japanese studies. In 1880 he was invited to the Tokyo Imperial University as lecturer in German literature, and at once his personality and scholarship attracted a group of young Japanese about him who became strong exponents of German literature. Japanese culture, however, converted this youthful German scholar into the most ardent student of Japanese, and for almost half a century Dr. Florenz has devoted his energy to introducing the Japanese classics to the West. English readers have been fortunate in having Basil Hall Chamberlain as an interpreter of Japan, and Germans as well as Japanese are greatly indebted to Dr. Karl Florenz.

Georges Bonneau's "*Le Problème de la poésie Japonaise: technique et tradition*" touches upon such interesting topics as alliteration, assonance, and various patterns of poetic forms. Alfons Kleiser's "*P. Alexander Valignanis Gesandtschaftsreise nach Japan zum Quambacudono Toyotomi Hideyoshi, 1588-1591*" and Henri Bernard's "*Les Débuts des relations diplomatiques entre le Japon et les Espagnols des îles Philippines (1571-1594)*" are of utmost importance to students of Japanese history and culture. Sir George B. Sansom raises in his article some fundamental problems in the study of Japanese history. He maintains, and justly so, that Western approach and methods must be different from those of Japanese scholars. The mere physical difficulties of palaeography and epigraphical studies are enough to discourage a foreign student who wishes to do original work in those branches. The same is true of textual criticism. Accepting the results of Japanese research, Western scholars with their different habits of thoughts and minds, can delve into the Oriental culture deeper than otherwise. Every student of Japanese should read the present article by this eminent scholar.

The Journal is divided into Articles, Translations, Brief Notes, and Reviews of Books and Periodicals. The list of addresses of the collaborators in the issue on the inside of the back cover is very useful.

SHIO SAKANISHI.

*Complete Course of Japanese Conversation-Grammar: A New and Practical Method of Learning the Japanese Language.* By ORESTE VACCARI and ENKO ELISA VACCARI. Tôkyô: The Authors, 1937. Pp. xxx + 508.

A textbook is ordinarily reviewed before it has been tried out in the classroom and consequently it is apt to be over- rather than underestimated. This review is based on a semester's use of the book in the beginning Japanese class for Occidentals of the Oriental Institute, University of Hawaii.

Hitherto most Japanese grammars have used *Rômaji* or *Rōmaji* and *kana* during the early stages of the language. All too often the student is led to believe that he has the elements of Japanese when he has acquired a minimal vocabulary and can write it in *Rōmaji* and the two Japanese syllabaries. The other common approach is almost equally bad, that is, when the Japanese primary-school readers are used as the basic texts. It lies in the nature of things that the reading matter is infantile in the earlier volumes. Later after a fair reading knowledge of Japanese has been obtained from the Vaccari grammar, every student should go back and read through the *tekujon* for background, for historical and nursery allusions will often be lost on the foreigner who has not done this. The authors of this grammar have met the first criticism by never introducing a Japanese word without its *kana*, *kansî*, and *Rōmaji* forms. This applies not only to the vocabularies but also to the exercises and the grammatical explanations. One who does not care to learn the characters may complete the course without learning a one, but a reading knowledge of a few thousand may be obtained by a serious student with a minimum of effort. They are taught naturally, as words or parts of words, and not as things-in-themselves with such strings of English equivalents after them as must surprise any student who learns characters as characters: 經 "warp, meridian, larger blood vessels, menses, nerve, rule of conduct, rule, law, classical book, canon, sūtra, prayer; regulate, follow a path, pass along, pass; past, already."

The vocabulary is ultra-modern. A student completing this book will be better equipped to understand current conversation and literature than users of any earlier work. The authors have not hesitated to use *kango* in greater numbers than in any Japanese

textbook to date. During the first twenty lessons characters and *katakana* are used; during the remaining forty lessons characters and *hiragana*. Each exercise consists of three parts: The same sentences are given in *Rōmaji* in the first part, in *kana-maziribun* in the second, and in English translation in the third.

There are five major defects in the book in addition to too little care in the proofreading. The Romanization adopted is the so-called Hepburn system most in use. The differences between it and the *Nipponsiki* (Japanese) and the *Kokutei* (Official) should have been explained. The reviewer feels that the *Kokutei* (officially approved by the Ministry of Education in June, 1936, after six years' study) should have been adopted outright, since it has the main advantages of both the other systems. It agrees with the Hepburn (English) system in being based on the Tōkyō dialect and with the *Nipponsiki* in being based on a Japanese rather than a bastard English-Italian analysis of the phonemic system.

One of the worst features pedagogically is the inconsistent *kana* spelling. Some of the confusion no doubt has been brought about by the tendency in Japan in recent years to experiment with a phonetic *kana* orthography. The change was so drastic that the opposition forced a compromise and the nation is now thoroughly confused. The authors should have kept the traditional *kana* spelling until these matters have been settled in Japan, since a page of explanation and tables is all that is required to convert the *Rōmaji* into phonetic *kana* spelling. There are numerous inexcusable cases of inconsistency such as 云々 and 云々 side by side on page 51. A new edition of this grammar should by all means employ a consistent orthography.

The Japanese grammatical system is analyzed from without rather than from within. The various Japanese means of translating one ("indefinite pronoun") are all classified as indefinite pronouns. Similarly, *wa* and *ga* (pp. 1 and 141 ff.) are both said to "indicate the nominative case" since, when translated into English, the nominative of pronouns and the quasi-nominative of nouns usually correspond to *wa* or *ga*. If the word "case" must be used here, there should be a terminology based on the forms of Japanese, in other words, a *ga*-case (subjective?) and a *wa*-case (absolute?). The *ga* and *wa* "cases" are just as distinct as the *no*, *de*, *ni*, (*wo*) and other cases are from each other and from *wa*. The verbs

require a complete reanalysis and reinterpretation. The authors have done better, however, within the conventional alien bounds than most of their predecessors.

No rules are given for the writing of characters or for the counting of strokes for the purpose of dictionary consultation.

Except as illustrations in the grammatical section of each lesson, isolated sentences should give way to connected reading very early in the course and not wait till the sixtieth lesson has been reached.

More emphasis has been laid on the book's defects than on its virtues in the hope that a second edition will have the improvements mentioned. If one wishes to acquire a reading knowledge of Japanese by himself, this book is easily the best available. It can be finished in one year in college, three hours a week, two devoted to the lessons proper and one to writing, dictionary practice, and theoretical problems.

DENZEL CARR.

Oriental Institute,  
University of Hawaii.

*China and the World War.* By THOMAS EDWARD LAFARGUE. Hoover War Library Publications, No. 12. STANFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS, 1937. x + 278 pp., map.

The story of China's relation to the World War of 1914-1918 is worth telling. As all the world knows, the developments in China were among the most important of that tragic and stirring era and led directly to the Washington Conference and contributed to the subsequent crisis in the Far East. The story had repeatedly been told. Indeed, another book exists, by W. R. Wheeler, with precisely the same title. However, none of these accounts is definitive. Mr. Wheeler's book was completed a few weeks before the armistice and so could not include the Paris Conference or the Treaty of Versailles or take account of many important pertinent documents not then accessible. Other accounts are mere summaries or are detailed studies of particular phases. A real need exists for a sober, critical inclusive work which is based upon all the documentary evidence now available.

It is this study which Dr. LaFargue has given us. His book is comprehensive. It begins with the outbreak of the war and ends,

as is proper, with the settlement reached at Paris. It is primarily a history of the diplomatic side of the story. To military operations it devotes only a minor part of its space and it tells only enough domestic politics to place the diplomatic developments in their setting. It has practically nothing to say of the striking new intellectual and literary movements which were appearing in the China of that day. This concentration, however, is commendable, for the story as Dr. LaFargue has set himself to narrate it belongs together and can easily and properly be segregated in the fashion in which he has told it. Moreover, this is what the title very properly leads us to expect.

Dr. LaFargue has based his account squarely upon original documents. Among these he has included material in Japanese as well as that in Western languages. Naturally some documents are not yet available to scholars. The author has, however, been diligent in examining whatever can now be opened to him.

Dr. LaFargue writes objectively. He has no particular thesis which he wishes to prove. He presents no revolutionary interpretations. He sees the Japanese position and presents it fairly, but he does not argue for it. His judgments are temperate and conservative. The choice of documents for the appendices is judicious and the bibliography and index excellent. Only one minor mistake has caught the reviewer's eye. On p. 181 C. T. Wang should have been put down as graduating from Yale in 1910 and not in 1911. Dr. LaFargue is to be congratulated on a monograph which is not only useful in itself, but which also gives promise of a fruitful scholarly career. Here is one more evidence of the rising tide of American Far Eastern scholarship.

K. S. LATOURETTE.

Yale University.

---

## NOTES OF THE SOCIETY

---

Since the last meeting of the Society the following have been elected to corporate membership in it:

Mr. Paul H. Gebhard.	Mr. Mayer Newman.
Mr. H. L. Goodhart.	Mrs. Jean Reischauer.
Mr. Wayne A. Kalenich.	Mr. Frank G. Williston.
Rev. W. A. Mather.	Dr. Karl A. Wittfogel.
Prof. Edward D. Myers.	

Not all of those elected have as yet qualified for membership.

Dr. Truman Michelson died in Washington July 26, 1938.

The Society will be represented at the Twentieth International Congress of Orientalists at Brussels in September by Professors W. F. Albright, J. J. Obermann, Henry Field, and Nathaniel Reich.

The Society will be represented at the meeting of the Society for Old Testament Study, Oxford, September 20-23, by Professor W. F. Albright.

By action of the Executive Committee Mr. Bernhard Knollenberg, who succeeded Professor Andrew Keogh as librarian of Yale University on June 30, has been elected the librarian of the Society for the year 1938-39.

---

PROCEEDINGS  
OF THE  
**American Oriental Society**

AT THE MEETING AT PHILADELPHIA, 1938

---

The One Hundred and Fiftieth Meeting of the Society was held at Philadelphia, Pa., on April 19, 20, 21, 1938, at the occasion of the Fiftieth Anniversary of the Philadelphia Oriental Club upon the invitation of the Club, the University of Pennsylvania, the University Museum, Haverford College and Dropsie College. Sessions were held at each of the inviting institutions. The following were among the members who participated in the sessions:

C. Adler	M. S. Enslin	H. F. Jayne
W. F. Albright	K. C. Evans	E. J. Jurji
L. C. Barret	N. A. Faris	A. E. Kane
G. R. Berry	B. M. Gale	G. A. Kennedy
C. J. Blair	Miss G. E. Gaakill	R. G. Kent
S. H. Blank	Miss M. J. Gates	A. Keogh
H. Borton	H. S. Gehman	E. Klein
G. W. Briggs	H. L. Ginsberg	W. C. Klein
R. S. Britton	H. W. Glidden	C. H. Kraeling
Mrs. N. L. Brookens	A. Goetze	E. G. Kraeling
W. N. Brown	L. C. Goodrich	H. M. G. Labatt-Simon
L. Bull	C. H. Gordon	T. E. LaFargue
M. Burrows	W. C. Graham	W. R. Leete
E. E. Calverley	M. Graves	K. F. Leidacker
Miss M. E. Cameron	Miss L. W. Hackney	J. Lewy
D. A. J. Cardozo	Miss E. A. Hahn	F. K. Li
Y. Z. Chang	A. S. Halkin	Miss I. Lichtenstädter
W. E. Clark	Miss A. R. Hall	A. H. Lybier
A. K. Coomaraswamy	R. B. Hall	W. S. McCullough
Miss D. Cross	C. H. Hamilton	W. M. McGovern
I. H. DeLong	D. G. Haring	I. G. Matthews
P. E. Dengler	Z. S. Harris	T. J. Meek
Mrs. A. S. DeWitt	L. Hartman	Mrs. B. C. Merrill
H. H. Duba	G. Herzog	T. Michelson
P. E. Dumont	P. K. Hitti	G. C. Miles
G. S. Duncan	P. E. Huffman	J. A. Montgomery
I. Dym'	A. W. Hummel	R. N. Montgomery
Miss E. S. Eaton	H. P. Hurd	H. A. Moran
P. Edgerton	Miss M. I. Hussey	J. Morgenstern



V. Müller	A. Sachs	W. F. Stinespring
J. K. Musgrave, Jr.	Miss S. Sakanishi	E. H. Sturtevant
E. J. Nathan	H. S. Santesson	Miss N. L. Swann
A. A. Newman	G. Sarton	G. R. Taylor
J. J. Obermann	N. Schmidt	M. Titiev
C. J. Ogden	B. Schwartz	C. C. Torrey
H. M. Orlinsky	O. Shimizu	G. Vernadsky
C. H. Peake	J. K. Shryock	J. Wach
T. C. Petersen	M. A. Simsar	J. V. Walsh
S. Phelps	S. L. Skoss	J. R. Ware
H. I. Poleman	Miss L. P. Smith	L. Waterman
E. H. Pritchard	Miss M. W. Smith	Miss E. Weil
J. B. Pritchard	E. A. Speiser	W. G. Williams
N. J. Reich	A. Sperber	G. E. Wright
J. Reider	Miss D. Stehle	J. K. Yamagiwa
Mrs. D. J. Reisman	F. J. Stephens	H. B. Young

## THE FIRST SESSION

The first session of the meeting was called to order by President L. Waterman at 10 a. m., April 19, in the Auditorium of the University Museum.

### A. BUSINESS MEETING

Prof. I. G. Matthews reported on behalf of the Committee on Arrangements concerning the plans made for the Society's entertainment.

### REPORT OF THE SECRETARY

After certain remarks of an informal nature the Secretary presented his report as follows:

1. The Society was officially represented in the past year at the Centenary Celebration of Mt. Holyoke College, at the 100th anniversary of the birth of Daniel G. Brinton, at the 150th anniversary of Franklin and Marshall College, at the Ninth All-India Conference at Trivandrum, India, at the 50th anniversary of the University of Allahabad, and at the recent meetings of the American Philosophical Society and the American Academy of Political and Social Science.

2. Our membership has risen in the past year from 658 to 713. Since the last meeting 102 persons have qualified for membership in the Society, but no less than 47 were lost by death, resignation and removal from the rolls due to non-payment of dues.

3. We mourn the death of four honorary members and 14 distinguished corporate members of the Society. The following are the names of those of whose loss we have been apprised.

## Honorary Members:

Prof. Adolf Erman  
Prof. Hermann Jacobi

Père M. J. Lagrange  
Prof. Louis de la Vallée Poussin

## Corporate and Life Members:

Prof. R. Butin  
Dr. F. C. Eiselein  
Dr. Eva Piesel  
Mrs. John B. Gillfillan  
Prof. A. V. W. Jackson—a  
member since 1885  
Capt. Samuel Johnston  
Sir Reginald P. Johnston

Mr. Robert H. McCord  
Dr. Alphonse Mingana  
Dr. Ellen S. Ogden  
Prof. E. Delavan Perry—a  
member since 1879  
Rev. Dr. S. Prentice  
Dr. Robert K. Reischauer  
Mr. Felix Warburg

4. The present year marks the 50th year of the membership in the Society of two persons:

Prof. George A. Barton

Prof. John Dyneley Prince

CARL H. KRAHLING.

It was voted that the report be received.

It was voted that the Secretary be instructed to send the Society's greetings to Professors G. A. Barton and J. D. Prince at the occasion of the fiftieth anniversary of their membership in the Society.

## MINUTES ON THE DEATH OF MEMBERS

Dr. L. Bull presented a minute on the death of Prof. A. Erman, which is printed in the *JOURNAL*, Vol. 58, p. 413.

Dr. C. J. Ogden presented the following minute on the death of former President A. V. W. Jackson:

A. V. Williams Jackson died at his home in New York City on August 8, 1937, after several years of gradually failing health.

He was born in New York on February 9, 1862, and throughout his career was connected with Columbia University. After being graduated from the college, he pursued advanced studies, receiving the Ph. D. degree in 1886, and thenceforth served as a member of the teaching staff. In 1893 he became Professor of Indo-Iranian Languages, retiring as Professor Emeritus in 1935.

His special field was Persia, Zoroastrianism, the Parsis, to which in later years he added Manichaeism. His reputation was international. India and Persia were well known to him from seven journeys of study and exploration, some of which extended into Central Asia. His climb up to the great inscription of Darius on the Rock of Behistan was the first made to study it since the time of Rawlinson, its original copier and publisher. The Parsi communities in India showed him high honors. The Shah of Persia conferred upon him a decoration. The University at

Teheran awarded to him an honorary degree. Again and again Parsia came to New York to study with him as a master of their own field.

He was the author of several important volumes of research and travel, his most celebrated work being probably his *Zoroaster, the Prophet of Ancient Iran*, and of many articles and reviews on Iranian and other topics. He belonged to many learned societies and associations and was an honorary member of the Royal Asiatic Society and of the Société Asiatique. He became a member of the American Oriental Society in 1885, and for half a century participated actively in its work. From 1908 to 1915 he was Corresponding Secretary, for many years he served on its Board of Directors, twice he was its President (1915-16, 1929-30). But eminent as he was in the scholarly field, he will be remembered equally well as the exponent of humane culture. None met him but recognized his personal charm; none enjoyed his converse even briefly but felt for him a real affection. His death is a loss both of a leader in scholarship and of a treasured and beloved friend.

CHARLES J. OGDEN,  
ROLAND G. KEST.

The minute was adopted by a rising vote and the Secretary instructed to send a copy of it to Mrs. Jackson.

Prof. M. Burrows presented the following minute on the death of Mr. Warburg:

Felix M. Warburg had been a life member of the American Oriental Society since 1921. He was a well known banker and philanthropist, but was also greatly devoted to the cause of education, of higher learning, of the fine arts and of music, and particularly in recent years he interested himself in Palestinian archaeology and notably supported the work of the American School at Jerusalem.

He was born in Hamburg on January 14, 1871, and died in New York on October 20, 1937.

His loss is deplored by this Society and by all those who loved the fine and noble things in life.

C. ADLER,  
M. BURROWS.

The minute was adopted by a rising vote.

#### REPORT OF THE EDITORS

Prof. W. N. Brown presented the following as the report of the Editors of the Society's publications:

During the year 1937-38 the editors have published parts 2, 3, and 4 of Volume 37 of the Society's JOURNAL, and part 1 of Volume 58. The total number of pages is 537. The current issue (Volume 58, number 1)

is issued in honor of the Fiftieth Anniversary of the Oriental Club of Philadelphia, and is financed jointly by that Club and the Society.

The editors have also published volumes 10 and 11 of the American Oriental Series: *Movable Property in the Nuzi Documents*, by Dorothy Cross; and *The Study of Human Abilities: The Jen yü chih of Liu Shao*, by John K. Shryock. The latter volume was published with the aid of a subvention from the American Council of Learned Societies. Volume 12 of the American Oriental Series is now in process of publication: *A Census of Indic Manuscripts in the United States and Canada*, by Horace I. Poleman. It also is being published with the aid of a subvention from the American Council of Learned Societies. Other volumes have been submitted for the Series, and are under consideration.

W. NORMAN BROWN,  
E. A. SPEISER,  
J. K. SHRYOCK.

It was voted to receive the report.

#### REPORT OF THE LIBRARIAN

Prof. A. Kaogh presented the following as the report of the Society's Librarian:

During the year 1937-38, 144 volumes and 292 numbers of periodicals have been added to the Library. Of the periodicals, 263 were in continuance of sets already in the Library; 29 represent titles new to the Library. Four new titles have been added to the list of exchanges: Canton University Library Quarterly, Adyar Library Bulletin, Annual Report of the Director of Archaeology of Baroda (State) and the Gaekwad's Archaeological Series. Fifty-eight volumes have been forwarded to the Editors of the JOURNAL for purposes of review. One hundred eighteen volumes, representing for the most part sets in frequent use and important monographs have been bound. In addition to this routine work, the official letters and correspondence of Doctors Jackson and Gotthell, recently deposited in the Library, have been sorted, indexed, and filed with other archives of the Society.

The cataloguing of books, pamphlets and periodicals is up to date.

The following is the list of accessions for the year:

- Abū Sa'īd Manṣūr ibn al-Ḥusain. Arabian wit and wisdom [by] C. A. Owen. 1934. (Publ. of the American Oriental Society. Offprint series, no. 3.)
- Adyar Library, Madras. Adyar library bulletin. [1937]
- Alekseev, V. M. La littérature chinoise. 1937. (Annales du Musée Guimet. Bibliothèque de vulgarisation, t. 52)
- All-India oriental conference, 9th, Trivandrum. [Three addresses] 1937. 3v.
- American philosophical society. Catalogue of manuscript and printed documents, chiefly Americana. 1937.

- Amsterdam. Koloniaal instituut. Bulletin of the Colonial Institute of Amsterdam. v. I, no. 1-2. 1931-32.
- [ʿAḏūn iḥḡ] Stories of the holy fathers. Comp. by Athanasius, Palladius, Saint Jerome, and others. Now tr. out of the Syriac with notes and introduction by Sir E. A. W. Budge. 1934.
- Annuario di studi ebraici, diretto da Umberto Cassuto. v. I, 1934. 1935.
- Appayya Dikṣita. The Siddhāntaleśasaṅgraha. Ed. by S. S. Suryanarayana Sastrī. v. II. 1937. (Madras Univ. Publ. of the Dept. of Indian philosophy, no. 4)
- Athār-é Irān; annales du Service archéologique de l'Iran. T. 1, fasc. 1. [1936]
- Bareda (State), Director of archaeology. Annual report, 1934-35. By Dr. Hirananda Sastrī. 1936.
- Bessult, L. de. President Trujillo. [1936]
- Bhismaparwa. Aantekeningen bij het Oud-javaansche Bhismaparwa door dr. J. Gonda. 1937. (Bibliotheca Javanica, 7a)
- Bible. The Old Testament, tr. by a group of scholars under the editorship of J. M. P. Smith; the New Testament, tr. by E. J. Goodspeed. [1935]
- Bibliographie marocaine, 1923-1933. [1934]
- Binyon, L. Chinese art and Buddhism. [1936] (British academy. Annual lecture on aspects of art. Henriette Hertz trust)
- Blachère, R. Un poète arabe du IV<sup>e</sup> siècle de l'hégire. Abou-ʿṬayyib al-Muṣaḥḥib. 1935.
- Boucheman, A. de. Une petite cité caravannière: Suḡné [1937] (Documents d'études orientales de l'Institut français de Damas. [t. VI])
- Brandstetter, R. Wir Menschen der indonesischen Erde. XI. Die Verwandtschaft des Indonesischen mit dem Indogermanischen. 1937.
- Brierre-Narbonne, J. J. Exégèse talmudique des prophéties messianiques. 1934.
- Burstein, A. Religious parties in Israel. 1936.
- Canton university. Library. Library quarterly. [1937]
- Celebration of the eight hundredth birthday of Moses Maimonides, 1135-1935-4895-5095. [1935]
- Christensen, A. Les gestes des rois. 1936. (Université de Paris. Conférences Rezanai Katrak III)
- L'Iran sous les Sassanides. 1936.
- [Clay, A. T.] Bibliography of Morris Jastrow. [Comp. by A. T. Clay and J. A. Montgomery, 1910.
- Contemporary Manchuria. v. I, no. 1, 4. 1937.
- A Coptic gnostic treatise contained in the Codex Bezae Cantabrigiae. A translation from the Coptic: transcript and commentary by C. A. Baynes. 1933.
- Coyajee, J. C. The future of Zoroastrianism. [1936]
- Cruss, D. Movable property in the Nuzi documents. 1937. (American oriental series, v. 10)
- Davidson, D. S. A preliminary consideration of aboriginal Australian decorative art. 1937. (American philosophical society. Memoirs, v. 9)

- Davidson, D. S. Snowshoes, 1937. (American philosophical society. Memoirs, v. 6)
- Deshpande, K. The child in ancient India. 1936.
- Ellade, M. *Alchimia asiatica*. I. 1935.
- *Yoga*. 1936. (Bibliothèque de philosophie roumaine)
- Fêng, Hün-chi. Black magic in China known as ku [by] H. Y. Fêng and J. K. Shryock. 1935. (Publ. of the American oriental society. Off-print series, no. 5)
- Firdausi. *DASTANI CAND AZ SAHNAMAJE* [ed. by M. A. Manaf-Zadeh.] 1935.
- Fish, T. ed. & tr. Letters of the first Babylonian dynasty in the John Rylands library, Manchester. 1936.
- Frahang i pahlavik, ed. by H. F. J. Junker. 1912.
- Friedmann, H. Birds collected by the Childe Frick expedition to Ethiopia. Pt. 2. 1936. (U. S. National museum. Bulletin 153)
- Fyfe, A. A. A. The Ismaili law of wills. 1933.
- Gâmi 'al-Haṣṣā 'iq bi-Taḡrīḍ al-'Ala 'iq. Origen y texto por M. J. Casas y Manrique. 1937.
- Goldberg, L. Das samaritanische Pentateuchtargum. Eine Untersuchung seiner handschriftlichen Quellen. 1935. (Bonner orientalistische Studien, Hft. 11)
- Goodenough, E. R. By light, light. 1935.
- Grant, J. C. B. Anthropometry of the Beaver, Sekani, and Carrier Indians. 1935. (Canada. Dept. of mines and resources. Bulletin no. 81. Anthropol. series, no. 18)
- Gravely, P. H. An outline of Indian temple architecture. 1936. (Madras. Govt. mus. Bull. New series. General section, v. 3, pt. 2)
- Gr. Brit. India office. Library. Catalogue of the Arabic manuscripts. v. II. [Pt.] II. Sôlam and ethics, by A. J. Arberry; v. III Fiqh, by R. Levy. 1936-37. 2v.
- Halkin, A. S. The Ḥashwiyya. 1934. (Publ. of the American oriental society. Offprint series, no. 3)
- Humbly, W. D. Skeletal material from San José ruin, British Honduras. 1937. (Anthropol. series, Field museum of natural history. v. XXV, no. 1. Publ. 389)
- Source book for African anthropology. Pt. I-II. 1937. 2v. (Field museum of natural history. Publ. 394, 396. Anthropol. series, v. XXVI)
- Henning, W. Ein manichäische Bet- und Beichtbuch. 1937.
- Höfner, M. Die Inschriften aus Glassers Tagebuch XI (März). [1937]
- Hölcher, G. Syrische Votivkunst. 1932. (Leipziger semitische Studien. N. F., Bd. 5)
- An index to Biblical passages cited in the writings of Julian Morgenstern 1903-1936. 1937.
- Indian cultural conference, 1st, Calcutta. Proceedings and addresses, 1936. [1936]
- Indian research institute, Calcutta. Presidential address, rules & reports, August, 1936. [1936]

- K. Instituut voor de taal-, land- en volkenkunde van Nederlandsch-Indië. Literatuur-overzicht samengesteld door F. H. van Naeasen. d. I, 1937. [1937]
- Iraq. v. 3, pt. 2. [1936]
- Jabagi, M. ed. Textes populaires ingus. 1935.
- Jacobsen, T. Sennacherib's aqueduct at Jerwan, by T. Jacobsen and S. Lloyd. [1935] (University of Chicago Oriental institute publ. v. XXIV)
- Jassinowsky, P. Symphonic poema. English and Hebrew lyrics. English renderings by A. Burstein. 1936.
- Jenness, D. The Indian background of Canadian history. 1937. (Canada. Dept. of mines and resources. Bulletin no. 86, Anthropol. series no. 21)
- The Sekani Indians of British Columbia. 1937. (Canada. Dept. of mines and resources. Bulletin, no. 84. Anthropol. series, no. 20)
- The journal of history of Chinese Buddhism. v. 1, no. 1-2. [1937]
- Kaplan, J. The reduction of the Babylonian Talmud. 1933.
- Kent, R. G. The present status of Old Persian studies. 1936. (Publ. of the American oriental society. Offprint series, no. 7)
- Kephalaia, Lfg. 5/6, ed. by H. Böhlig. 1936. (Manichäische Handschriften der Staatlichen Museen, Berlin, Bd. 1)
- Khasbha, A. R. Akademik N. I. A. Marr o iazyke i istorii Abkhazov. 1936. (Akademiia nauk, Leningrad. Gruzinskiĭ filial, Tiflis. Institut abkhazskoi kul'tury. Trudy, v. 4)
- Knowles, F. H. S. Physical anthropology of the Roebuck Iroquois. 1937. (Canada. Dept. of mines and resources. Bulletin, no. 87. Anthropol. series, no. 22)
- Kobranov, E. Istoricheskoe i kul'turnoe znanenie Anan. 1927.
- Koerber, H. N. von. Morphology of the Tibetan language. [1935]
- Kohut, A. Additamenta ad librum Aruch completum fassu et sumptu G. A. Kohut. Congessit, scripsit, edidit S. Krauss. 1937. (Publ. of the Alexander Kohut memorial foundation, v. VIII)
- Koffink, J. M. K tak zvanému thráckému nápisu na pratezu ezarovském. 1935.
- Kowalski, T. Les tures et la langue turque de la Bulgarie du nord-est. 1933. (Prace Komisji orientalistycznej Polakiej akademji umiejctwosci, nr. 16. Mémoires de la Commission orientaliste, no. 16)
- Kramer, S. N. The Sumerian prefix forms be- and bi- in the time of the earlier princes of Lagash. [1936] (Oriental institute of the University of Chicago. Assyriological studies, no. 8)
- Kroeber, A. L. Archaeological explorations in Pers. Pt. III-IV. 1937. 2v. (Field museum of natural history, Chicago. Anthropology, Memoirs. v. II, no. 3-4)
- Kurz, R. F. Journal of Rudolph Friedrich Kurz, tr. by M. Jarrell, ed. by J. N. B. Hewitt. 1937. (Smithsonian Institution. Bureau of American ethnology. Bulletin 115)
- Kyoto university economic review, v. 12, no. 1. 1937.



- Latron, A. La vie rurale en Syrie et au Liban. 1936. (Mémoires de l'Institut français de Damas)
- Law, B. C. The Buddhist conception of spirits. 1936. (Law's research series, Publ. no. 3)
- Lee, Shao-chang. China: ancient and modern. 1937. (Univ. of Hawaii occasional papers, no. 33. Univ. of Hawaii bulletin, v. 16, no. 7, 1937)
- Lentz, W. Ein Lateinalphabet für das Paschtö. 1937.
- Liao-tze. Rasskazy o ljudikh neobychnykh. 1937.
- Liu Shao. The study of human abilities; the Jen wu chih of Liu Shao, with an introductory study by J. K. Shryock. 1937. (American oriental series, v. 11)
- Lyon, D. W. The past decade in Chinese literature. [1934]
- Mahābhārata. The Virāṭaparvan being the fourth book of the Mahābhārata. 1936.
- Majumdar, R. C. Ancient Indian colonies in the Far East. v. II. Suvargadvipa. Pt. 1. Political history. 1937.
- Makrizi. Chronicle of Ahmad ibn 'Alī al-Makrizi. Ed. by M. Mustafa Zinda. v. 1, pt. 1. 1934.
- Marnkuev, A. V. Platselstyf olen' v kitalskoi farmakopee. 1935.
- Marcus, J. R. An Index to Jewish Festschriften, by J. R. Marcus and Rabbi A. Bilgray. 1937.
- Michelson, T. Fox miscellany. 1937. (Smithsonian Institution. Bureau of American ethnology. Bulletin 114)
- Modi, J. J. The Naojode ceremony of the Parmeen. [1936]
- Monumenta sinica. Ed. by Chu Hsi-Tsu [et al.] v. 1. 1935.
- Nankai social & economic quarterly. v. 9, no. 1-2. 1936.
- Narayana Ayyar, C. V. Origin and early history of Saivism in South India. 1936. (Madras university historical series, no. 6)
- Nelson, H. H. Work in western Thebes, 1931-33, by H. H. Nelson and U. Hölscher, with a chapter by S. Schott. [1934] (University of Chicago, Oriental institute communications, no. 18)
- Obermann, J. Political theology in early Islam. 1935. (Publ. of the American oriental society. Offprint series, no. 6)
- Orton, E. F. Links with past ages. [1935]
- Potsebluevskii, A. P. Dialekty turkmenskogo iazyka. 1936.
- Fonetika turkmenskogo iazyka. 1936.
- Ramón y Cajal, S. Recollections of my life. Tr. by E. Horne Craigie, with the assistance of Juan Cano. 1937. 2v. (American philosophical society. Memoirs, v. 8, pt. 1-2)
- Reich, S. Études sur les villages araméens de l'Anti-Liban. [1937?] (Documents d'études orientales de l'Institut français de Damas t. VII)
- Rettig, D. Memar Marqa. 1934. (Bonner orientalistische Studien, Hft. 8)
- Review of religion, v. 1, no. 1, 3, 4; v. 2, no. 1-2. 1936-38.
- Romanoff, P. Onomasticon of Palestine, with a preface by Professor C. C. Torrey. 1937.

- Ross, Sir E. D. Dialogues in the eastern Turki dialect on subjects of interest to travellers. Collected and ed. by Sir E. D. Ross and R. O. Wingate. 1934. (James G. Forlong fund. [Publ. v. XI])
- Royal Asiatic society of Great Britain and Ireland. Malayan branch, Singapore. Journal. 1923-26. 4v.
- Ruben, W. Studien zur Textgeschichte des Rāmāyana. 1936. (Bonner orientalistische Studien, Hft. 19)
- Saklatwalla, J. E. The voice of Omar Khayyam. 1936.
- Sarachek, J. Faith and reason. 1935. (Oriental series)
- Sastri, H. The Asokan rock at Girnar. 1936. (Gaekwad's archaeological series, no. 2)
- Indian pictorial art as developed in book-illustrations, with an introduction by Sir V. T. Krishnamma Chari. 1936. (Gaekwad's archaeological series, no. 1)
- Semenov, A. F. A travers les ruines de la Transcaspie. 1928.
- South Manchuria railway company. Japanese spirit in full bloom. 1937.
- — — — —. Dairen library. Classified catalogue of books in European languages. 1937.
- Speck, F. G. Oklahoma Delaware ceremonies, feasts and dances. 1937. (American philosophical society, Memoirs. v. 7)
- Spiegel, J. Die Erzählung vom Streite des Horus und Seth in Pap. Beatty I als Literaturwerk. (1937) (Leipziger Ägyptologische Studien, Hft. 9)
- Srinivasa Dikṣita. Svayambhāntacandrikā. Ed. by K. A. Sivaramakrishna Sastri. With a foreword by S. Kuppuswami Sastrigal. 1936. (Annamalai university Sanskrit series, no. 4)
- Streeter, B. H. The Buddha and the Christ. 1933. (The Hampton lectures for 1932)
- Sturtevant, E. H. A Hittite text on the duties of priests and temple servants. 1934. (Publ. of the American oriental society. Offprint series, no. 4)
- al-Suhrawardī, Yahya ibn Bahash. Mu'nis al-Ushahāq. Ed. by Otto Spies. 1934. (Bonner orientalistische Studien, Hft. 7)
- Syed, M. A. The origin of the Khojās and their religious life today. 1936. (Untersuchungen zur allgemeinen Religionsgeschichte, Hft. 8)
- Tallqvist, K. L. Die assyrische Beschwörungsserie Maglū. [1895] 2v. In I. (Acta Societatis scientiarum fennicae, t. XX, no. 6)
- Torrey, C. C. Aramaic graffiti on coins of Demashur. 1937. (Numismatic notes and monographs, no. 77)
- Trewartha, G. T. A reconnaissance geography of Japan. 1934. (University of Wisconsin studies in the social sciences and history, no. 22)
- Tripathi, R. S. History of Kanauj to the Moslem conquest. 1937.
- Türkmenekli gosudarstvennyi nauchno-issledovatel'skii institut, Ashkhabad. Izvestia. 1935.
- Umesha Mishra. Conception of matter according to Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika, with a foreword by MM. Dr. Ganganatha Jha, and introduction by MM. Pandita Gopinath Kaviraj. 1936.

- Upanishads. The ten principal Upanishads; put into English by Shree Purohit, swāmi, and W. B. Yeats. 1937.
- Väisänen, A. O. ed. Wogulische und ostjakische Melodien. Phonographisch aufgenommen von A. Kannisto und K. F. Karjalainen. 1937. (Suomalais-ugrilainen seura, Helsingfors. Toimituksia, LXXIII)
- Vijayanagara sixcentenary commemoration volume. Pub. under the auspices of the Vijayanagara empire sixcentenary association and Karnatak historical research society, Dharwar. 1936.
- Waseda university, Tokyo. Institute of oriental thought. The Tōyō-Shisō Kenkyō. Annual report of the Institute of oriental thought. no. 1. 1937.
- Welter, G. Stand der Ausgrabungen in Sichem. [1932]
- Wintzenberg, W. J. Roebuck prehistoric village site, Grenville county, Ontario. 1936. (Canada. Dept. of mines and resources. Bulletin no. 83. Anthropol. series, no. 19)
- Yano, J. A history of the post-bellum diplomacy of China after the Sino-Japanese war. 1937. (Memoir of Tōhō-bunka-gakuin Kyōto kenkyō-sho, v. 9)
- Young men's Christian association, Harbin, Manchuria. Club of natural science and geography. The annual, v. 1. 1934.
- Zajaczkowski, A. Études sur la langue vieille-osmanlie. 1934. (Prace Komisji orientalistycznej Polskiej akademji umiejetności, nr. 17. Mémoires de la Commission orientaliste, no. 17)
- [Zhi-chin] Miscellany of personal views of an ignorant fool. Gukwanahō, chapter 2-6. Appendix; Shōgyokushō, Gwanmon. Tr. by J. Rahder. [1937?]

ANDREW KEOGH.

It was voted that the report be received.

It was voted that the Society take this occasion to express to Prof. Keogh its appreciation of the important services which he has rendered to the Society as its Librarian since 1935.

#### REPORT OF THE AUDITORS

Prof. M. Burrows presented the following as the report of the Auditors:

We hereby certify that we have examined the accounts of the Secretary-Treasurer and that we believe them to be correct and in accord with the report submitted.

M. BURROWS,  
F. J. STEPHENS.

It was voted to receive the report.

## REPORT OF THE TREASURER

The Treasurer submitted the following report upon the Society's finances for the fiscal and calendar year 1937:

## I. CERTIFICATE OF HOLDINGS

This is to certify that as of December 31, 1937, Yale University is holding for account of the American Oriental Society the following securities:

\$6,000 mortgage on 686-90 Dixwell Avenue, New Haven, Conn.
2,000 Morris & Essex 3½s of 2000
2,000 Pacific Gas & Electric 4s of 1964
2,000 Terminal Railroad Association of St. Louis 4s of 1953
2,000 Eastern Gas & Fuel Associates 4s of 1956
1,000 Niagara Falls Power 3½s of 1964
1,000 American Telephone & Telegraph 3½s of 1961
20 shs. Chicago, Rock Island & Pacific preferred
10 " Bankers Trust Company
10 " First National Bank of Boston
15 " American Telephone & Telegraph Company
10 " Chemical Bank & Trust Company
5 " Union Pacific Railroad

The cash balance as of December 31, 1937, is \$2,327.50.

Yale University.

By H. J. OUTLANDER, *Cashier*.

## 2. GENERAL BALANCE SHEET—ASSETS AND LIABILITIES

	Book Value Dec. 31, 1936	Book Value Dec. 31, 1937	Market Value Dec. 31, 1937
<b>Assets</b>			
Investments .....	\$20,435.08	\$21,957.39	\$19,067.50*
Cash Balance.....	2,993.72	2,327.50	2,327.50
<b>Total.....</b>	<b>\$23,433.80</b>	<b>\$24,284.89</b>	<b>\$21,395.00</b>

\* (Market Value of Investments, Dec. 31, 1937)

	Dec. 31, 1936	Dec. 31, 1937
<b>Liabilities</b>		
Trust Funds.....	\$12,772.12	\$13,294.73
Life Membership Fund.....	4,200.00	4,320.00
Reserve Fund.....	2,000.00	2,000.00
JOURNAL Balance.....	43.01	360.91
Monograph Balance.....	2,976.97	3,135.21
Held for Publ. AOS X.....	110.00	
Com. on Research Balance.....	41.00	26.00
Credit Monog. Purchase.....		.95

Credit JOURNAL Purchase.....		1.50	
Credit JOURNAL Author.....	1.50		
Due Offprint Author.....	.50	.50	
Due Yale Press (Barton).....		3.00	
Due Waverly Press (Emmesu).....		28.11	
Total.....	\$22,145.10	\$23,180.91	\$23,180.91
Surplus.....	1,288.70	1,103.98	
Deficit.....			1,785.91
Total.....	\$23,433.80	\$24,284.89	\$21,395.00

## 3.

## INVESTMENTS

	Date of Purchase	Book Value	Market Value	Yield
<i>Mortgage</i>		\$0,000.00	\$0,000.00	0%
<i>Bonds</i>				
1 Amer. Tel. & Tel.	Oct. 16, '36	1,011.00	1,012.50	3½%
2 East. Gas & Fuel	Mar. 31, '36	1,936.07	1,330.00	4 %
2 Morris & Essex	July 9, '35	1,900.68	1,420.00	3½%
1 Niagara Falls Power	June 25, '36	1,001.47	1,060.00	3½%
2 Pac. Gas & Elec.	July 9, '35	2,096.39	2,190.00	4 %
2 Term. R. R. St. Louis	July 9, '35	2,120.12	2,175.00	4 %
<i>Stocks</i>				
10 Amer. Tel. & Tel.	June 3, '36	1,000.35	1,445.00	\$9.00
5 Amer. Tel. & Tel.	Mar. 29, '37	855.53	722.50	9.00
20 Chic., R. I. & Pac.	Dec. 16, '12	920.00	40.00	default
5 Union Pac. R. R.	Feb. 26, '37	656.78	407.50	\$6.00
10 Chem. Bk. & Trust	Oct. 16, '36	667.50	435.00	1.80
10 Bankers' Trust	June 11, '36	605.00	490.00	2.00
10 First Nat. Bk. Boston	June 11, '36	405.00	340.00	2.00
Total.....		\$21,057.39	\$19,007.50	
<i>Interest Collected</i>				
On Cash.....		\$ 88.75		
On Investments.....		930.50		
Total.....		\$1,019.25		
Index Figure on Investments.....				4.23%

## 4.

## CAPITALIZED FUNDS

*General*

Charles W. Bradley.....	\$ 3,000.00
Alex. F. Cothran.....	1,500.00
William D. Whitney.....	1,000.00
I. M. Castaneda.....	150.00
Justin K. Abbott to Dec. 31, '36.....	\$7,122.12
Completed May 3, '37.....	522.01
	<hr/> 7,644.73
	<hr/> \$13,294.73

*Life Membership Fund*

Total to Dec. 31, 1936.....	\$4,200.00
Added to Dec. 31, 1937.....	130.00
	<hr/> 4,330.00

*Reserve Fund.....*

2,000.00

(James B. Nies Fund, \$10,000.00, held in trust, unproductive)

## 5.

## GROSS INCOME AND EXPENDITURES

Cash Balance, Dec. 31, 1936.....	\$2,998.72
----------------------------------	------------

*Income*

Dues.....	\$2,856.46
JOURNAL Sales.....	652.44
Author Charge Collect.....	119.77
Offprint Sales.....	7.42
Monograph Sales and Payments.....	571.93
Subvention (AOS XI).....	750.00
Interest.....	1,019.25
Abbott Bequest.....	522.61
Life Memberships.....	130.00
Library Catalogue Sales.....	6.66
Discount on Bill.....	.14
Addressograph Service Charge.....	4.00
	<hr/> 9,540.68
Total.....	<hr/> \$9,539.40

*Expenditures*

Secretary-Treasurer's Expenses.....	\$ 798.53
Secretary-Treasurer's Honorarium.....	200.00
JOURNAL Publication.....	2,573.44
Editors' Expenses.....	70.92
Editors' Honoraria.....	400.00
Expended for JOURNAL Authors.....	127.97

Offprint Postage and Refunds	4.57
Librarian's Account	206.89
Monograph Costs	1,241.63
Purchase Securities	1,322.31
Committee on Research	15.00
Committee on Membership	31.64
Middle West Branch	100.00
ACLS	25.00

Total	7,311.90
-------	----------

Cash Balance, Dec. 31, 1937	\$2,327.50
-----------------------------	------------

# 6. JOURNAL ACCOUNT

## Income

Balance, Dec. 31, 1936	\$ 43.01
Per Budget (Printing)	2,165.17
Per Budget (Mailing)	150.00
Per Budget (Honoraria)	400.00
Sales (Yale Press)	421.57
Sales (Office)	230.87

---

\$3,410.62

Transferred from Offprint Account	2.85
Held, Advance Payment of JOURNAL Authors	1.50
Refunds, Journal Authors	119.77

Total	\$3,534.74
-------	------------

## Expenditures

Vol. 56, 4	Printing, Mailing	\$855.35	
	Review copies	4.90	
	Cuts	55.41	
			\$ 715.66
Vol. 57, 1	Printing, Mailing	\$835.24	
	Cuts	40.58	
			681.82
Vol. 57, 2	Printing, Mailing	\$586.87	
	Review Copies	6.75	
	Cuts	30.45	
			623.07
Vol. 57, 3	Printing, Mailing	\$528.95	
	Review Copies	8.32	
			537.27
Vol. 57, 4	Cuts		15.62

Total Publication and Mailing Cost	\$2,573.44
------------------------------------	------------



Editors' Expenses.....	42.27
Office Postage.....	18.06
Purchase JAOS, Vol. VI.....	2.50
Addressograph.....	3.10
	<hr/>
	\$2,644.36
Editors' Honoraria.....	400.00
Expended for JOURNAL Authors.....	127.97
	<hr/>
Total Expenditures.....	\$3,172.33
	<hr/>
Remainder.....	362.41
Credit to JOURNAL Purchase.....	1.50
	<hr/>
Balance, Dec. 31, 1937.....	\$ 360.91

## I. MONOGRAPH ACCOUNT

## Income

Balance Dec. 31, 1936.....	\$2,976.97
Held for Publ. AOS X.....	110.00
Subvention AOS XI.....	750.00
Payment on AOS IX.....	25.00
Net Sales, Barton.....	12.83
Gross Sales AOS I-XI.....	538.15
Advance Payment on Sale.....	95
	<hr/>
	\$4,408.90

## Expenditures

Costs AOS X.....	\$ 288.37
AOS XI.....	802.55
	<hr/>
	1,090.92
Reader's Fee (AOS XI).....	20.00
Storage (AOS IV, VII, VIII).....	17.50
Transfer to Yale Press (Barton).....	3.00
Advertising.....	58.81
Postage and Express.....	46.74
Supplies.....	4.60
	<hr/>
	1,241.63
Remainder.....	\$3,167.27
Less Credit on Advance Payment.....	\$ .00
Due Yale Press (Barton transfer).....	3.00
Due Waverly Press (Emeneau).....	28.11
	<hr/>
	32.05
Balance, Dec. 31, 1937.....	\$3,135.21

## SALES, AMERICAN ORIENTAL SERIES

Volume	Author	Copies Sold	Gross Income	Add. Income
I	Blake	9	\$36.78	
II-III	Edgerton	2	13.09	
IV	Emeneau	8	19.76	
V	Albright	20	22.10	
VI	Pfeiffer	10	32.06	
VII	Emeneau	18	33.75	
VIII	Harris	91	260.46	
IX	Barret	16	44.82	
X	Croas	34	34.69	\$ 5.70
XI	Särvöck	24	29.04	
			<hr/>	527.45
				<hr/>
				\$ 533.15

Outstanding Dec. 31, 1937:

In hand	\$ 2.97
December Sales	35.60
November Sales	21.65
October Sales	12.90
	<hr/>
	\$73.02
Overdue	25.97
	<hr/>
	\$98.99

## 8. SECRETARY-TREASURER'S ACCOUNT

## Income

Per Budget	\$1,000.00
Addressograph Service Charges	4.00
Discount on Bill	.14
	<hr/>
	\$1,004.14

## Expenditures

Clerical Assistance	\$418.00
Travel	82.45
Postage, Telegrams, Express	76.92
Supplies	17.69
Cost of Cleveland Meeting	132.60
Upkeep Addressograph List	24.27
Program Com. (Cleveland Meeting)	6.70
Program Com. (Philadelphia Meeting)	4.20
Honorary Member Committees	4.50
Membership Committee (1936-37)	10.00

Auditors' Expenses.....	1.20	
Accountant Services (1936).....	10.00	
Accountant Services (1937).....	10.00	
Honorarium .....	200.00	
		<u>998.53</u>

Remainder (returned to General Account)..... \$ 5.51

9. OFFPRINT SERIES ACCOUNT

Income

Held for Refund to Author, Dec. 31, 1936.....	\$ .50	
Sales .....	7.42	
		<u>\$7.92</u>

Expenditures

Postage .....	\$ .37	
Refunds to Authors.....	4.20	
		<u>4.57</u>

Remainder .....

\$3.35

Transferred to JOURNAL Account..... 2.85

Held for Refund to Authors (Dec. 31, 1937)..... \$ .60

10. LIBRARIAN'S ACCOUNT

Income

Per Budget.....	\$200.00	
Catalogue Sales.....	6.66	
		<u>\$206.66</u>

Expenditures

Postage .....	\$ 1.02	
Binding .....	187.95	
Supplies .....	12.02	
		<u>\$200.99</u>

Remainder (returned to General Account)..... \$ 5.77

11. COMMITTEE ON PROMOTION OF ORIENTAL RESEARCH

Income

Balance, Dec. 31, 1936.....	\$41.00	
Per Budget.....	50.00	
		<u>\$91.00</u>

*Expenditures*

Postage and Expenses.....	15.00
Remainder .....	\$76.00
Returned to General Account.....	50.00
Balance .....	\$26.00

## 12. COMMITTEE ON MEMBERSHIP

*Income*

Per Budget.....	\$150.00
-----------------	----------

*Expenditures*

Postage, Stationery, Supplies.....	31.64
Remainder (returned to General Account).....	\$118.36

## 13. BUDGETARY ASSIGNMENTS AND EXPENDITURES

*Income*

	Estimated	Actual
Dues .....	\$2,950.00	\$2,859.46
Interest on Cash.....	100.00	88.75
Interest on Investments.....	904.25	930.60
Total.....	\$3,954.25	\$3,878.71
Surplus, Dec. 31, 1936.....	1,288.70	1,288.70

Total Available for Assignment.....	\$5,242.95	\$5,164.41
-------------------------------------	------------	------------

*Expenditures*

	Authorized	Actual*
JOURNAL Printing.....	\$2,165.17	\$2,165.17
JOURNAL Mailing.....	150.00	150.00
Editors' Honoraria.....	400.00	400.00
Secretary-Treasurer's Account.....	1,000.00	994.39
Committee on Research .....	50.00	
Committee on Resources .....	200.00	
Committee on Membership .....	150.00	31.64
Librarian's Account.....	200.00	194.23
Middle West Branch.....	100.00	100.00
ACLS .....	25.00	25.00
Total.....	\$4,440.17	\$4,960.43
Surplus .....	802.78	1,103.98
Total.....	\$5,242.95	\$5,164.41

\* Additional expenditures were met by extra-budgetary income. See separate accounts above.

CARL H. KRAELING,  
Treasurer.

The Treasurer submitted the following as the report upon the finances of the Middle West Branch:

Jan. 1	Balance on hand:	Income	Expenditure
	Cash .....	\$ 95.58	
	Credit .....	3.60	
	Total .....	\$ 99.18	
Jan. 20	Remittance from Treasurer, American Oriental Society .....	100.00	
Dec. 20	Stationery .....		\$ 11.65
	Petty cash (stamps—phone) .....		2.00
			\$ 13.65
Dec. 31	Cash balance on hand .....		185.53
		\$199.18	\$199.18

ALLEN D. ALBERT, Jr.,  
Treasurer.

This is to certify that the above has been audited and found correct.

F. W. GESS,  
GEORGE R. HUGHES,  
GEORGE G. CAMERON,

It was voted to receive the reports. Auditors.

#### REPORT OF THE EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE

The Secretary reported upon the actions of the Executive Committee as follows:

The Executive Committee, which has taken action repeatedly during the past year by means of Mail Votes, met last evening at the Penn Athletic Club to consider the reports of officers and committees responsible to it, to transact the business entrusted to it by the constitution, and to make certain recommendations to the Society.

It was voted to elect to corporate membership in the Society at this time the following persons:

Mrs. Rose Andrews	Miss Vivian R. Jacobs
R. P. Beaver	M. F. Kanga
E. I. Burdock	G. W. Miller, Jr.
Miss Lillian C. Canfield	J. G. Reid
J. M. Conant	C. B. Sargent
D. Daghlilan	C. F. Sheriff
J. O. Farrell	G. C. Stelle
Miss Grace Fox	J. V. Walsh
E. E. Gries	Mrs. Edith M. Young
Mrs. John Hayward	

It was voted to recommend to the Society for election to Honorary Membership the following:

R. P. LOUIS HUGUES VINCENT, D. D., member of the Dominican Order, professor in the Ecole biblique et archéologique française of Jerusalem, editor of the *Revue Biblique*. Born August 31, 1872. Author of many works dealing with the archaeology and history of Palestine. Address: P. O. Box 7, Jerusalem, Palestine.

ALAN HENDERSON GARDNER, M. A., D. Litt., sometime Research Professor in the University of Chicago (1924-34), Honorary Fellow of Queen's College, Oxford. Born March 29, 1879. Author of numerous publications dealing with Egyptology in many aspects—archaeology, history, language, literature, religion—and with the general science of linguistics. Address: 9 Lansdowne Road, Holland Park, London, W. 11, England.

ARTHUR BERNIE DALE KEITH, D. C. L., D. Litt., Hon. LL. D., Barrister-at-law and Advocate; Regius Professor of Sanskrit and Comparative Philology in the University of Edinburgh. Born April 5, 1879. Author of numerous publications dealing with Indic literature, languages, religion, philosophy, and history, and with British law. Address: 4 Crawford Road, Craigmillar Park, Edinburgh, Scotland.

VISHNU SITARAM SUKTHANKAR, M. A., Ph. D., editor-in-chief of the Critical Edition of the Mahābhārata, and Honorary Secretary of the Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute. Born May 4, 1887. Author of many works on Indic archaeology, history, and literature, and especially editor of the definitive edition of the Mahābhārata. Address: Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute, Poona 4, India.

It voted to write off from the list of the Society's financial assets the stock of the Chicago, Rock Island and Pacific R. R., purchased in 1912.

It considered the matter of the celebration of the Society's one hundredth anniversary in 1942 and authorized the incoming President to appoint a committee of not less than seven to make plans for the celebration of this anniversary.

It considered the matter of the formation of a Pacific Coast Branch, the data collected by the Secretary from members of the Society resident on or near the Pacific Coast, and the report of a special committee of Pacific Coast members appointed to give its judgment in the matter. In accordance with the uncertainty of the Pacific Coast members and the judgment of the special committee it voted to table the matter of the formation of the Branch.

It voted to adopt the following budget for the fiscal and calendar year 1938:

Estimated Income:

Dues .....	\$3,000.00
Interest .....	1,000.00
	<hr/>
	\$4,000.00

## Budgetary Expenditure:

JOURNAL Publication.....	\$2,023.82
JOURNAL Mailing.....	100.00
Editors' Honoraria.....	400.00
Secretary-Treasurer's Account.....	1,000.00
Middle West Branch.....	
Membership Committee.....	100.00
Committee on Research.....	50.00
ACLS.....	25.00
	<hr/>
	3,698.82

Estimated Surplus of Income over Expenditure..... \$ 301.38

CARL H. KRAELING,  
Secretary.

It was voted to receive the report.

It was unanimously voted to elect to Honorary Membership in the Society Père L. H. Vincent, Prof. A. H. Gardiner, Prof. A. B. Keith, and Dr. V. S. Sukthankar.

#### REPORT OF THE DELEGATES TO THE AMERICAN COUNCIL OF LEARNED SOCIETIES

Prof. F. Edgerton presented the following as the report of the Society's delegates to the American Council of Learned Societies:

The twentieth meeting of the Council was held in New York City, on January 28 and 29, 1938. The sessions were held at the Harvard Club. In addition to the delegates, the Oriental Society was unofficially represented by a number of its members who were present in other capacities.

Minutes were read in memory of Charles Homer Haskins, A. V. Williams Jackson, John Franklin Jameson, George M. Whicher, and Robert K. Reischauer. The treasurer's report showed that receipts from all sources during 1937 had amounted to \$124,641.68; that there was a balance on hand of \$84,637.17, and that during 1938 funds anticipated and receivable would amount to nearly \$190,000.00. It was announced that the Permanent Secretary, Mr. Leland, had been elected president of the U. A. I. New officers were elected, the most noticeable change being the retirement of Mr. Blake as Chairman of the Council. He was succeeded by Mr. Lingelbach, Professor of History at the University of Pennsylvania. There were a number of interesting reports of committees, which were printed as annexes to the proceedings. The Committee on Chinese Studies reported the approaching publication of Dr. H. G. Creel's *Studies in Early Chinese Culture*, and of the first volume of Dr. H. H. Dubs' translation of the *Ch'ien Han shu*. Mr. Langdon Warner is acting as temporary chairman.



of the Committee on Japanese Studies, succeeding Mr. Hirschman, whose two volume work, *Early Japanese History*, appeared shortly before his death. The Committee on Indian and Iranian Studies reported on the work of Dr. Emeneau and Dr. Mandelbaum in India. Unfortunately the site at Chanhu-daro has been lying unworked this year because of the lack of funds. The Committee on Mediterranean and Near Eastern Studies recommended the formation of a new committee on Islamic culture. It also recommended the improvement of scholarship in three fields: late ancient and medieval Jewish sources, Armenian historical sources, and Central Asian sources. It reported that the subvention for grants in aid of research had been discontinued, but that subventions for aid to publication in the humanities, and for study-aids, would still be available. A committee of which Mr. Edgerton is chairman has been set up to administer the study-aids, which will be granted chiefly for the purpose of developing personnel in the under-developed fields of the humanities. These include most of the fields in which our Society is interested.

Mr. Hummel, the retiring chairman of the Committee on Chinese Studies, was given a vote of thanks for his work. He will remain a member of the Committee, but will be succeeded as chairman by Professor Goodrich of Columbia University. Mr. Lessing of the University of California has been made a member of the Committee, succeeding Mr. Latourette of Yale.

It was announced by the Committee on the History of Religion that a series of lectures by Professor Martin Nilsson would be given during the academic year of 1939-40.

JOHN K. SHRYOCK,  
FRANKLIN EDGERTON,

It was voted to receive the report.

#### REPORT OF THE REPRESENTATIVE ON THE CORPORATION OF THE AMERICAN SCHOOLS OF ORIENTAL RESEARCH

Prof. N. Schmidt presented the following as the report of the Society's representative on the corporation of the American Schools of Oriental Research:

As the representative of this Society on the Corporation of the American Schools of Oriental Research and its Board of Trustees I have the honor to present the following report. The annual meeting of the Corporation was held in Union Theological Seminary, New York City, December 28, 1937. The Trustees met in the same place, December 27 and 28, 1937, and also at the University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, April 18, 1938. These meetings I attended. Professor Nelson Glueck of the Hebrew Union College continues to be Director of the School at Jerusalem. During the last year he has managed its affairs skillfully and with marked success. Especially noteworthy is his conduct of the excavations at Khirbet et-Tannur, carried on jointly by the School and the Transjordan Department of

Antiquities, in March and April, 1937, and concluded in December, 1937. In the *Bulletin* (Feb. 1938) he has given an extensive account of the ruins of a Nabataean temple discovered in this locality, apparently on the border line between ancient Moab and Edom. In the trying circumstances of Palestinian life at the present time Dr. Glueck has maintained cordial relations with the authorities, the learned institutions, and the various elements of the population. Professor S. Vernon McCasland of Goucher College is the Annual Professor for 1937-38. He has delivered public lectures and conducted private seminars. Together with the Two Brothers Fellow, Mr. William L. Reed, and Mr. C. S. Steinbeck, another student, he also assisted the Director during most of the supplementary campaign in December at Khirbet et-Tannur. Professor Clarence S. Fisher as Professor of Archaeology continues the preparation of his great *Corpus of Palestinian Pottery*. A number of scholars have been in residence at or have visited the School. The Hostel is well filled. The Library has been increased by new accessions. Professor Henry J. Cadbury of Harvard University has been appointed Annual Professor for 1938-39.

Professor E. A. Speiser, of the University of Pennsylvania is Director of the School at Baghdad. He is in charge of the excavations at Tepe Gawra, a joint enterprise of the School and the University of Pennsylvania. His published accounts indicate the extraordinary importance of this site. Professor A. T. Olmstead of the University of Chicago was the Annual Professor for 1936-37. It was understood that he was to devote the year to extensive travels in the Near East for the purpose of enriching a forthcoming historical work with the results of fresh observation of this region. He has published in the *Bulletin* (Feb. 1938) an itinerary including approximately one hundred places in Turkey, Syria, Palestine, Transjordan, Cyprus, Egypt, Iraq, and Iran. The Annual Professor of 1937-38 is Professor Elihu Grant of Haverford College, who has carried on research, lectured in Baghdad, and traveled in Iraq. The School greatly needs a house of its own in Baghdad. Such an educational centre is warranted by the extent and importance of American scientific interests and achievements in the land of the two rivers.

N. SCHMIDT.

It was voted to receive the report.

#### OTHER BUSINESS

Prof. J. A. Montgomery spoke of the work of the Society's Committee for the Promotion of Oriental Research.

Upon the motion of Prof. W. F. Albright it was voted that we send to the American Philosophical Society, the oldest and most catholic of America's learned societies, our sincere greetings at the occasion of our simultaneous meetings at Philadelphia.

Upon motion of Prof. F. Edgerton it was voted that the Secretary telegraph the Society's greetings to our oldest member, Prof. C. R. Lanman.

The President announced the appointment of the following committees:

Committee on Resolutions: Dr. C. J. Ogden, Prof. A. H. Lybyer,

Committee of Auditors for 1938: Prof. E. H. Starrevant, Prof. F. Edgerton.

## B. PRESENTATION OF COMMUNICATIONS

The following communications were presented:

Prof. J. A. MONTGOMERY (*University of Pennsylvania*): The Contribution of the Orient to the Concept of Universal History.

(1) The central position of the Near Orient, between the Euphrates and Nile valleys, the Mediterranean and the Indian Ocean, with complication of races and commerce; (2) the Empires and their ecumenical scope; (3) Hebrew and later Arabian monism; (4) the appeal of Oriental religions and cults, ignoring racial and political bounds; their cosmic problems of good and evil; eschatology; (5) Oriental science; (6) the historical philosophy of Ibn Khaldun.

Prof. L. C. GOOSMICH (*Columbia University*): Early Prohibitions of Tobacco in China and Manchuria.

Tobacco appears in Southeastern China about 1620, and about the same time in Manchuria. Shen Han-kuang (1619-77) writes of having seen an edict forbidding the use of tobacco while at Peking in 1637. Other prohibitions are for the years 1638, 1641, and 1643. The first edict by the Manchus in Mukden, still extant, was issued on July 26, 1639. It includes the phrase: "The board has prohibited (tobacco) several times already." The Manchu emperor of the K'ung-hsi period (1662-1722) tells his sons of not smoking himself because of the current ban. In the 1676 code there appears an order against smoking in the forbidden city (Peking), public granaries, altars, temples, and like places. The first regulation against smoking in a library is mentioned in the writings of Wu I-feng (1742-1812) in his description of the famous T'ien I Ko of Ningpo.

Dr. H. L. POLEMAN (*Yale University*): Aspects of Caesarian Section in India.

The earliest description of Caesarian section in medical texts. Iconographic and mythological suggestions. The use and survival of the practice in Hindu ritual.

Prof. G. VERNADESKY (*Yale University*): On the Origins of the Antae.

The Antae are generally considered the ancestors of the Eastern Slavs. The name itself is apparently not Slavic. There seems to be sufficient evidence for looking for its origins to the Sarmatian tribes, in particular to the Alani. According to Chinese sources the Alani were known originally as An-to'ai. In the Middle Ages the Alani were referred to as As (*Jasy* in Russian chronicles). The branch of the Slavs known as Antae might have received its name from a Sarmatian ruling clan. The identification of Antae as *Jasy* of the Russian chronicles, if recognized as valid, will throw considerable new light on the early background of Russian history.

The session was concluded at 1 p. m., when those present adjourned to the Hotel Normandie where they were entertained at luncheon by the University of Pennsylvania.

## THE SECOND SESSION

The Second Session of the Society was called to order at 2.30 p. m. of the same day by Prof. W. C. Graham, President of the Middle West Branch, who presided.

The following communications were presented:

Prof. A. H. LYNN (*University of Illinois*): The Foundations of Mohammed the Conqueror.

Three documents are known, two Arabic and one Turkish. The longer Arabic *Waqfiyyeh* describes the dozen institutions founded; lists the towns, villages, farms, khans, bazars, baths, mills and houses assigned for revenue (about 850 items); and specifies officers and rules of administration. Provisions for Fatih's own mosque with its eight colleges, eight schools, hospital, and guest-house include 100 servants of the mosque, with daily pay from 30 *aqchah* for the preacher to two for a Koran reciter. Each college had a professor at 50 *aqchah*; a tutor at 5; and 15 students, a porter, and two attendants at two each.

Prof. R. G. KENT (*University of Pennsylvania*): Old Persian Jottings. Published *JOURNAL* 58, 324.

Prof. J. MORGENTHAU (*Hebrew Union College*): The Date, Historical Background and Cultural Implications of Psalm 48.

Psalm 48 has generally been interpreted as referring to the traditional destruction of Sennacherib after the siege of Jerusalem in 701 B. C. or else as a processional psalm recited by pilgrims coming to Jerusalem from the far south (perhaps even from Upper Egypt). This paper will endeavor to show that the psalm is composite, that vv. 2-4, 9-15 are the utterance of a body of pilgrims to Jerusalem coming from Galilee, or even from Phoenicia,

during the period 516-500 B. C., while vv. 5-8 are an interpolation referring to a historic event of 480 B. C. of great significance to the Jews of Jerusalem.

Prof. C. H. GORDON (*Johns Hopkins University*): Seals of Western Asia in Walters Art Gallery (Illustrated).

There are about sixty seals and seventy seal impressions in the Walters Art Gallery, Baltimore. Of these only the famous Tarkondemos seal has been published. Many periods are represented, ranging from the Jemdet Nasr Period at the close of the fourth millennium B. C. to the Sassanian Period terminated by the Islamic Conquest in the seventh century A. D. The seals come mainly from Mesopotamia, Syria and Asia Minor. The inscriptions on the seals are written in Sumerian and Accadian cuneiform, Hittite and Egyptian Hieroglyphs and Aramic and South Arabic alphabetic characters. The script and language of one inscription are not yet identified with certainty. The collection is rich in North Syrian seals of the second half of the second millennium B. C.

Dr. G. E. WRIGHT (*American Schools of Oriental Research*): Some Phoenician Art of the Persian Period and the Origin of the 'Megarian' Bowl (Illustrated).

Certain objects of art, especially bowls, ladles, and jewelry, the significance of which has not been grasped, have been turning up in Palestine and Syria in deposits dating from the Persian period. Comparative study of material from Persia, Egypt, Greece, and Italy indicates that they are Phoenician art. It is from this art that the 'Megarian' bowl of the Hellenistic period, hitherto commonly considered of Egyptian origin, received its immediate inspiration.

Miss A. R. HALL (*Boston Museum of Fine Arts*): Miniature Copper Objects of the 3rd Millennium B. C. from Chanhu-daro, India (Illustrated).

Two copper carts and a miniature figure found at Chanhu-daro, Sind, India, by the Joint Expedition of the American School of Indic and Iranian Studies and the Museum of Fine Arts, 1935-36.

Prof. C. C. TORNEY (*Yale University*): South-Arabian Antiquities at Yale University (Illustrated).

Yale University possesses a collection (20 pieces) of small alabaster fragments from Southern Arabia. These include sculpture in the round as well as inscriptions.

Prof. J. J. OHRMANN (*Yale University*): The Archaic Inscriptions from Lachish (Illustrated).

A re-examination of the reading of the individual symbols, together with an attempt to interpret the legends of (a) the ewer, (b) the bowl, (c) the dagger found at Tell ed-Duweir. Critique of the assumption of proto-Sinaitic influence. Consideration of the general alphabetologic significance of these inscriptions.

The Session was concluded at 5.30 p. m. and the members present were transported in busses to the campus of Haverford College. Here they examined the collections of Palestinian Pottery and Artifacts in the Haverford Archaeological Museum, Sharpless Hall. Supper was served by the courtesy of the College in Founders Hall. After supper those present adjourned to the Union where they were welcomed by President W. W. Comfort of Haverford. President Waterman expressed the gratitude of the Society for the hospitality extended to it by the College.

Upon the motion of Prof. J. A. Montgomery, who commented appropriately upon the long-established relation between Haverford College, the Oriental Society, and the Oriental Club of Philadelphia and upon the significance of Prof. J. Rendel Harris in this connection, it was voted that the Society send it cordial greetings to Prof. Harris at the occasion of its meeting at Haverford.

Vice-President L. Barrel presided while Prof. L. Waterman delivered the Presidential Address upon the subject, "Oriental Studies in the Present World Picture" (see this issue of the JOURNAL, p. 402).

The meeting adjourned at 9.15 p. m., the members of the Society returning to Philadelphia by bus.

### THE THIRD SESSION

The third session was held at Dropsie College, beginning at 10.00 a. m. on Wednesday, April 20. It consisted of two simultaneous Group Meetings in the Near Eastern and Far Eastern fields respectively in which communications on stated topics were presented by special invitation. The Near East Group Meeting had as its theme: Linguistic Contacts in the Near East in the Period of the Great Migrations. The Far East Group Meeting had as its theme: Problems in Far Eastern Linguistics and Philology.

In the Near East Group Meeting, over which President L. Waterman presided, the following communications were presented:

Prof. Z. S. HARRIS (*University of Pennsylvania*): Development and Differentiation of the Canaanite Dialects.

The Syrian-Palestian area was settled at an early date by people who spoke Northwest Semitic (specifically Canaanite). In the course of centuries linguistic forms spread over various parts of the area, gradually

building linguistic boundaries across it, and eventually dialects. This investigation seeks to determine the date and geographic diffusion of the more important linguistic developments in that general area, and so to reveal the formation of the historical Canaanite dialects.

Prof. A. GOETZE (*Yale University*): Indo-European Elements in the Ancient Near East.

The paper contained a critical report on recent research concerning the rôle played by the Indo-Europeans in Ancient Near Eastern cultures. It dealt successively with the Indo-Europeans in Asia Minor (Luwians, Hittites) and those among the Churrians. The problem whether Indo-European influence is recognizable among the Kassites and among the Urartians was discussed.

Prof. W. F. ALBRIGHT (*Johns Hopkins University*): Northwest Semitic in the Light of Accadian and Egyptian Evidence.

The material comes mainly from the *Achtungstexte* (2000 B. C.) and from the names and words of Canaanite origin in New-Egyptian documents (1500-1200 B. C.) as well as in Accadian tablets from Babylonian and Mari (c. 2000-1600 B. C.) and from Egypt and Palestine (1500-1300 B. C.). The results of my analysis are important particularly for South-Canaanite and East-Canaanite phonology, for the verb (imperfect and future tenses in indicative, subjunctive, and jussive moods, perfect and stativ), and for the noun (declension of masculine plural and dual; formation of masculine participles as nouns of occupation and feminine participles as kennings of objects).

Prof. E. H. STURTEVANT (*Yale University*): The Evidence of Anatolian Languages for Indo-European Laryngeal Consonants.

The theory that the Indo-European languages have lost certain consonants more or less similar to the Semitic laryngeals receives strong support from Hittite and certain other Anatolian languages, namely Luwian, "Hieroglyphic Hittite," and Lycaon. I think that we can plausibly assume four Indo-European lost consonants: (1)  $\text{h}$ , a glottal stop of palatal color, does not change the quality of a neighboring  $\text{e}$ ; it is not recorded in Hittite. (2)  $\text{h}$ , a glottal stop of velar color, changes a neighboring  $\text{e}$  to  $\text{a}$ ; it is not recorded in Hittite. (3)  $\text{x}$ , a velar or laryngeal voiceless spirant, changes a neighboring  $\text{e}$  to  $\text{a}$ ; it is represented in Hittite by  $\text{h}$ , which is normally written double where the cuneiform system makes that possible. (4)  $\text{p}$ , a velar or laryngeal voiced spirant, does not change the quality of a neighboring  $\text{e}$ ; it is represented in Hittite by  $\text{p}$ , which is never written double.

There was considerable discussion in which the following participated: Messrs Albright, Edgerton, Reich, Stephens.

In the Far East Group Meeting, over which Prof. L. C. Goodrich presided, the following communications were presented:



Mr. J. E. YAMAGIWA (*University of Michigan*): Wants in Japanese Language Teaching.

This paper began with a description of the courses in Japanese offered at the University of Michigan; named certain aids found useful in the teaching of vocabulary; proceeded to a general consideration of grammars used, especially those of Rose-Innes and the Vacaris, as regards phonology, idiom, use of Japanese characters, vocabulary, use of connected discourse, statement of grammatical rules, the order in which they are presented, and terminology used; and suggested what ought probably to be the characteristics of an improved grammar which will serve not only as a guide to spoken Japanese but as an introduction to the written language.

Prof. J. R. WAKE (*Harvard University*): A Difficult Phrase in Liu Tao's Memorial on the Yellow Turbans.

In Liu Tao's memorial one finds (*Hou Han shu* 87.4b) the phrase *niao sheng shou hsin sui kang ming hu* which may be translated literally as "bird sounds and animal hearts secretly share their cries." Since the writer has found the real significance of this phrase quite obscure, he will present some parallels from the literature in an attempt to arrive at a solution.

Prof. R. S. BRITTON (*New York University*): Directional Value in Chinese Paleography.

Under the *chih-shih* category, a familiar device is the making of a distinct character by inverting, reversing, or otherwise changing the direction of a sign, without morphographic change of the sign within itself. This paper suggested that such directional value is more highly developed in the early Chinese than in comparable scripts, and is one of the resources of ideographic versatility by which the Chinese escaped syllabary and alphabet and developed a system embracing both the phonetic and ideographic principles.

Prof. F. K. LI (*Yale University*): A Type of Folk-Song in Wu-ming.

The form of the folk-song in Wu-ming, a Tai community in the Province of Kwang-si; the rime pattern and the intonation pattern; comparison with Siamese poetry seems to indicate a common Tai tradition in the form of these songs.

Prof. G. A. KENNEDY (*Yale University*): Some Uses of Three Classical Particles in Chinese.

Though many of the uses of these particles are well understood, there remains in each case a function that has been vaguely labelled 'rhythmic' or 'emphatic.' This paper attempted to get a little closer to a positive definition of these functions, chiefly through a study of the comparative effect of retaining or eliminating the particles in concrete cases. All three particles are seen then to have bearing on the highly important 'equation-type' of sentence structure in Chinese.

There was considerable discussion of each of the communications, in which Messrs. Borton, Chang, Dubs, Gale, Goodrich, Hummel, Kennedy, Labatt-Simon, Li, McGovern, Shimizu, Shryock, Ware and Yamagiwa participated.

The session was concluded at 1.00 P. M., when the Society was entertained at luncheon by Dropsie College.

#### THE FOURTH SESSION

The fourth session, also held at Dropsie College, began shortly after 2.30 P. M. of the same day. It consisted of three simultaneous Group Meetings in the Near Eastern, the Middle Eastern, and the Far Eastern fields respectively.

At the Near Eastern Group Meeting, over which Prof. T. J. Meek presided, the following communications were presented and discussed:

Prof. N. J. RAISSA (*Dropsie College*): On Grammatical Exercises in the Schools of Ancient Egypt.

Prof. F. J. STUPPNER (*Yale University*): The Oath Formula in Sumerian Texts of the Third Dynasty of Ur.

A Sumerian unpublished private contract from the Third Dynasty of Ur, unique because of the form of its oath clause, was presented in cuneiform text, transliteration, and translation. The oath formula in this text reads: *ma-na i-na-ran*. The attempt to interpret the new oath formula led to a discussion of the oath formulae of over 100 selected documents of this period.

Prof. J. LEWY (*Hebrew Union College*): Remarks on a Newly Published Contract from Ras Shamra.

A brief discussion of certain relations of the contract published in *Syria*, XVIII, 248, with the Middle Assyrian Laws and other contemporary sources.

Prof. J. REINER (*Dropsie College*): Biliteralism in the Light of the Ras Shamra Texts.

This paper reviewed the problem of biliteral roots in Semitic languages and endeavored to prove the existence of such disputed roots from the Ras Shamra texts of the middle of the second millennium B. C. Using the same method, an attempt was made to justify also the existence of uniliteral roots, remnants of which are found in the Bible.

Prof. E. A. SPEISER (*University of Pennsylvania*): Fallacies of the Theory of Polarity.

The object of this paper was to demonstrate that the term "polarity" as used by many Semitists is misleading. This alleged linguistic principle covers in reality several different linguistic phenomena.

Prof. H. S. GUNMAN (*Princeton Theological Seminary*): The John H. Scheide Papyri of Ezekiel.

The Scheide papyri of Ezekiel, recently published by the Princeton University Press, date from about 200 A.D. and belonged originally to the same codex as the Chester Beatty Papyri. This text has more agreements with B than with A and Q, but in many passages it departs from B and agrees with the Masoretic text, A, Q, and minuscules of various groups. This new text rather confirms the view that long before the time of Origen there were two strata in the LXX: the AQ-type and the B-type, which is also represented in the Syro-Hexaplar.

Prof. E. A. HARR (*Hunter College*): Hittite Mahhan.

Mahhan is both comparative and temporal. The comparative use seems the earlier; the points raised by Pedersen as possible objections are not cogent. Postpositional mahhan — 'after the manner of.' Adverbial mahhan has been translated 'zurzeit, schon' (Ungnad), 'zunächst' (Goetze), 'in the meantime, immediately' (Sturtevant); 'then' fits as well as any of these in every case, better in some cases, besides accounting better for the conjunction's meaning 'when.' Moreover, the meaning 'then' renders smoother two involved passages in which mahhan has been taken as 'when.' Conjunctional mahhan = 'as' or 'when'; the meaning 'where' offered by Goetze in one passage seems unnecessary.

Mr. B. SCHWARTZ (*New York Public Library*): The Diagonal Wedge is not a "Glossenkeil" in Hittite.

In every instance where the diagonal wedge stands before a word in the Hittite texts, it can be demonstrated that the word thus stigmatized presented some punctual, lexical, or morphological difficulty to the scribe. It is proposed that this sign merely calls attention to a following word, marking it as unusual (and thus indicating that the scribe is a faithful copyist), and is therefore roughly equivalent to our *sic*!

At the Middle East Group Meeting, over which Vice-President L. C. Barret presided, the following communications were presented and discussed:

Prof. P. E. DUMONT (*Johns Hopkins University*): The Meaning of Samprasti in Apastamba-Srauta-Sûtra VI. 4. 2 and Other Passages.

Galand explains na stande samprasti by saying "Nachdem durch das Kalb die Milch zum Fließen gebracht ist, berührt er nicht, wie im gewöhnlichen Treiben, mit der befeuchteten Hand, die Zitzen." This

interpretation seems to be untenable. In this and in other passages *asmyapāti* means "to touch together."

Dr. T. MICHELSON (*Swedish Institution*): Once more Nātaputta.

When I pointed out before the American Oriental Society at the previous meeting at Philadelphia that the dental N of Nātaputta was due to the Māgadhian form of the word, because in Asokan Māgadhian palatal ñ is replaced by dental n, I was unaware of the fact that Jacobi, *Indian Antiquary*, 1880, pp. 158, 159 had previously come to this same conclusion.

Prof. W. N. BROWN (*University of Pennsylvania*): Some Notes on Old Gujarātī.

Discussion of intrusion of vowel between dissimilar consonants in the seam of Sanskrit compounds when borrowed by Old Gujarātī; and of aspiration in OG of some unaspirated Sanskrit stops, and deaspiration of some aspirated stops.

Prof. F. EDGESTON (*Yale University*): Rome and (?) Antioch in the Mahābhārata. Published JOURNAL 58. 262.

Dr. A. K. COOMARASWAMY (*Boston Museum of Fine Arts*): Svayamā-tṛtṛṇa.

The "self-perforated stones" *svayamā-tṛtṛṇa śarkarā*, SB. VIII. 7. 4. 1) of the Fire Altar, representing the Three Worlds, being "for the passage of the breaths and for a sight of heaven" (TS. V. 2. 8. 1 etc.), were evidently "ringstones," like those annular stones of which examples surviving in India are called "doors of liberation" (*mukti-dvāra*), and like those which have been found in large numbers on Indus Valley sites. The three openings form a way by which the Deva, and now likewise the Sacrificer, ascend and descend these worlds, using the "Universal lights" (*svasajyotis* bricks) as stepping stones: cf. Jacob's Ladder. In the "cotton-bale" symbol of the punch-marked coins, the three "self-perforates" are "strung like gems on a thread" (*śūdrīman*). The uppermost "self-perforate" corresponds to the luffer of a circular hut, the opening of a hypæthral temple, the eye of a dome, and the "eye of the needle"; remarkable parallels can be adduced from Siberia and China (*jade pi*), and from the Zoro, and other sources.

Dr. C. J. OGDEN: Three Turfan Pahlavi Etymologies: Hēstēn, 'Skewer,' Mēwēmtō. Published JOURNAL 58. 331.

At the Far East Group Meeting, over which Prof. L. C. Goodrich presided, the following communications were presented:

Prof. C. H. FRAZER (*Columbia University*): On the Limitation of Interest Rates in China.

From the Han dynasty on the government of China has attempted to limit interest rates. From the Han to the Tang the regulations were not consistently enforced. The result was a frequent resort to release from

long-standing public obligations and an occasional release from private obligations. From the Tang dynasty on when the codification of laws and regulations governing the interest rates became more definitely fixed, this practice apparently died out. In the Yuan dynasty the regulations received their modern form in the expression *i pen i li* (一本一利) providing that interest should not exceed the capital no matter how long the loan remained unpaid though this principle emerges centuries earlier. Furthermore it was ordered that the interest rates should not exceed 3% a month. In the Ming these regulations became a fixed part (10) of the code which remained unchanged in form in subsequent codes to the end of the monarchy in 1911.

Prof. Y. Z. CHANG (*University of Michigan*): China's Contribution to Western Civilization.

In contrast to the hellion ideological conflict of the modern world, the exchanges of ideas and cultural influences of former ages based upon the individual needs and free choice of the nations concerned, supply to the peoples of today a most significant lesson. China's contribution to western culture forms an important chapter in a history of the cultural relations of the east and the west.

That silk, porcelain, tea, gunpowder, and compass came from China is common knowledge. Some scholars believe that paper and printing also originated in China. Recent investigations conducted in Nanking, Washington, Chapel Hill, and Ann Arbor seem to indicate that a modern contribution, the merit system, has had far reaching effects in the social and political life of Europe and America.

Mr. H. S. SANBORN (*India Political Council*): The Japanese and the Preservation of China's Antiquities. A Record of Achievements.

A brief discussion of the attitude of the Japanese Army of Occupation to the relics of China's past found in the territories under their control. In Jehol special efforts have been made to preserve the antiquities neglected under the rule of the war-lords. In the Liaotung Peninsula the investigation of the megalithic vestiges is proceeding under semi-official auspices. The attitude of the Japanese in the course of their present activities in northern and middle China was likewise discussed.

Prof. H. H. DUNS (*Duke University*): The Victory of Han Confucianism. (Printed in this issue of the JOURNAL, p. 435.)

Miss N. L. SWANN (*West Oriental Library*): Pan Ku's Preface to the Han Shu.

Tradition based upon incomplete accounts is most probably responsible for attribution to Pan Ku (A.D. 32-92) of sole authorship of the *Han Shu* of the Pan family, father, son, and daughter. Other hands contributed at least to some degree to the book. Credit, however, does belong to Pan Ku for the structure of the record and for the organization of the material, both that inherited from his father, and that assembled and composed by himself.

A very convincing documentary evidence for the striking part played by Pan Ku in the history is found in his preface, occupying the second of the two parts of the last chapter of *Han Shu*. This consists of a series of ninety-nine rhythmic riming verses, in the order of the one hundred chapters of the book, that in turn epitomize—with but one exception, when one verse is assigned to two chapters—one chapter after the other.

MISS M. E. CAMERON (*Western Reserve University*): The Public Career of Chang Chih-tung (1837-1909): A Brief Survey.

Chang Chih-tung (1837-1909), one of the most distinguished Chinese officials in the service of the Manchu dynasty in its closing decades, was noted both for his ardent Confucianism and for his pioneer activity in introducing such occidental devices as railways and factories. This biographical sketch was based on Chinese biographical studies of Chang plus information from occidental sources, and was meant as a preliminary to a full-length study of Chang's official career, based on his papers.

DR. H. A. MORAN (*Cornell in China*): The Astrological Elements in Early Chinese Writing.

A communication on the astrological elements underlying the Chinese ideographic system, indicating the predominant part which the Ten Stems, the Twelve Branches, the Twenty-Eight Signs of the Lunar Calendar, and other astrological forms play in early Chinese writing. Comment on the relationship of the Twelve Branches with the Twelve Signs of the Zodiac as found in ancient India, Babylon, and other contemporary civilizations. Amplification of the suggestion, already made by the speaker at a previous meeting of the Society, of a possible connection between the lunar signs and the phonetic alphabet.

PROF. W. M. MCGOVERN (*Northwestern University*): The Hsiung-nu Kingdoms in Northern China.

Much light has been thrown in recent years upon the nomadic Hsiung-nu Empire which flourished in Central Asia from the third century B. C. to the second century A. D., but much less is known regarding the Kingdoms established in North China during the fourth century A. D. by the descendants of the old Southern Hsiung-nu. The present paper attempted to outline the history of the two most important of these Hsiung-nu dynasties, viz., the Early Chao and Later Chao Dynasties. Especial emphasis was laid upon the racial and linguistic peculiarities noted in the Chinese Dynastic Histories.

In the discussion of these communications the following participated: Messers Dubs, Gale, Goodrich, Hummel, La Fargue, McGovern, Moran, Shimizu, Swann, Vernadsky, and Ware.

At 7.00 P. M. of the same day the members of the Society in attendance upon the sessions, their friends, and certain invited guests including President and Mrs. W. W. Comfort of Haverford

College, Dean and Mrs. H. L. Crosby of the University of Pennsylvania, Mrs. Max L. Margolis, and Mrs. Morris Jastrow, met at the Penn Athletic Club for the annual Subscription Dinner.

After the dinner Dean H. L. Crosby conveyed to the Society and to the Philadelphia Oriental Club at the occasion of its Fiftieth Anniversary, the greetings of the University of Pennsylvania, expressing the University's pride in its Orientalists and its interest in Oriental studies. President Waterman responded for the Society.

Prof. G. Sarton delivered the address upon the subject, "The Oriental Origins of Western Science."

President C. Adler of Dropsie College, the sole surviving charter member and founder of the Club in America (the only other surviving charter member being Prof. J. Rendel Harris, now of Manchester, England), spoke informally of the beginnings and the early memberships of the Philadelphia Oriental Club and of the Club's desire to interest the laymen in the study of the Orient. President Waterman expressed the Society's felicitations to the Club at the occasion of its Fiftieth Anniversary and called attention to the debt of gratitude which Oriental studies in America owe to the Club, members of which are now scattered over a large part of the United States and Canada.

## THE FIFTH SESSION

The fifth session of the meeting was held in the auditorium of the University Museum, beginning at 10.00 A. M. on Thursday, April 21. President Waterman presided.

### A. BUSINESS MEETING

Prof. R. G. Kent presented the report of the Nominating Committee and the Society proceeded to elect, each by a separate vote, the following officers and representatives. The term of office is one year unless otherwise indicated:

*President*—Prof. LeRoy C. Barret

*Vice-President*—Dr. Ludlow Bull

*Secretary-Treasurer*—Prof. Carl H. Kraeling

*Editor*—Prof. W. Norman Brown



*Associate Editors*—Dr. John K. Shryock

Prof. Ephraim A. Speiser

*Librarian*—Prof. Andrew Kaogh

*Member of Executive Committee*—Prof. Albert T. Olmstead, to serve for three years

*Delegate to the American Council of Learned Societies*—Prof. James R. Ware, to serve for four years

*Members of the Nominating Committee*—Professors William F. Albright, L. Carrington Goodrich, Dr. Charles J. Ogden, each to serve for two years

It was voted to appoint Prof. E. H. Sturtevant chairman of the Nominating Committee for the year 1938-39.

The Secretary reported that the Executive Committee had accepted the invitation of The Johns Hopkins University, and that the next meeting of the Society would be held at Baltimore, Md., in Easter week of 1939.

President Waterman announced the appointment of the following as the Committee on Arrangements for the Baltimore meeting: Professors W. F. Albright (chairman), P. E. Dumont, W. Rosensau, and Mr. A. J. Sachs.

Dr. C. J. Ogden presented the following as the report of the Committee on Resolutions:

The American Oriental Society hereby places on record its pleasure in holding its one hundred and fiftieth meeting in Philadelphia on the occasion of the fiftieth anniversary of the Philadelphia Oriental Club, and it expresses to the Club its hearty thanks for the courteous invitation and for the dinner tendered to the members of the Executive Committee.

It also deeply appreciates the kindness of the administration of the University Museum in granting the use of its commodious lecture hall for the sessions on Tuesday and Thursday and in arranging the exhibits of Near and Far Eastern antiquities.

The University of Pennsylvania has earned our thanks by extending again its accustomed hospitality and by its cordial greeting through Dean Crosby. President Comfort and the authorities of Haverford College provided a most enjoyable evening by displaying especially for us the archaeological collection of the College and by entertaining us in the beautiful surroundings of its campus. The Dropsie College made us feel at home through supplying rooms for our sectional meetings, through its invitation to luncheon, and above all through the presence of President Adler, without which no meeting in Philadelphia would be complete.

The courtesy of the Penn Athletic Club in extending the use of its facilities is gratefully acknowledged. The local members, especially those belonging to the Committee on Arrangements, have been unfailingly

thoughtful. Philadelphia in its relations with this Society has indeed shown brotherly love.

It was voted to accept the report.

It was voted to appoint Prof. N. Schmidt as the Society's representative on the Corporation of the American Schools of Oriental Research.

Prof. W. C. Graham presented the following motion:

Resolved that the Executive Committee be requested to take such action as it may deem desirable and effective to call to the attention of the authorities of American institutions of learning, wherever it may seem advisable and necessary, the immediate and pressing importance, both from the standpoint of the origins and history of western culture, and from that of contemporary human relationships, of intelligently promoting Oriental studies both at the undergraduate and graduate levels.

After comment by several members it was voted to adopt the resolution.

Miss E. Weil reported upon the projected inauguration of an archaeological department by the periodical *Asia*.

It was voted that the incoming President be authorized to appoint a committee to discuss the matter further with Miss Weil, the editor of *Asia*.

## B. PRESENTATION OF COMMUNICATIONS

The following communications were presented and discussed:

Prof. M. BURROWS (*Yale University*): Law and Custom in the Book of Ruth.

The forms of marriage, inheritance, and redemption reflected in the book of Ruth and their interrelations do not correspond to anything else in the Old Testament. Do the laws and the book of Ruth respectively represent different stages in Israel's social evolution? Does Ruth give an imaginary picture of bygone times, while the laws reveal actual practices? Or does Ruth reflect living custom, and the laws merely picture unrealized ideals? These questions are vitally related to the problems of the date and literary character of the book.

Prof. S. H. BLANK (*Hebrew Union College*): Divergent Tendencies and Party Conflicts in Early Post-Exilic Judaism.

Histories of Post-Exilic Judaism tend to oversimplify the religious and political situation. The century following the advent of Cyrus appears in reality to have been one in which many divergent currents of thought and political philosophies struggled with each other for supremacy, a fact

which has been obscured by the circumstance that our biblical records were composed largely under the influence of the party which eventually prevailed. This paper was an attempt to indicate briefly the complicated character of that period.

Prof. H. L. GINSBERG (*Jewish Theological Seminary*): The Aramaic Original of Dan. 1-2: 4a; 8-12.

That the Hebrew is translated from an Aramaic original is borne out by a more extensive and conclusive body of evidence than is submitted by Charles. Besides many moderate Aramaisms remarkable only by their abundance, there are several crude barbarisms, some only intelligible through retroversion, and—the decisive proof—a few phrases that clearly reflect corrupt, misread or misunderstood Aramaic expressions. The Maecabeian Daniel was written in Aramaic because the earlier work, substantially chs. 1-6 and probably of Babylonian origin, was known as an Aramaic book. Charles's assumption of three Hebrew translators is unwarranted.

Dr. H. M. OBLINSKY (*Johns Hopkins University*): Hāšēr (hšr 'enclosure, court'; bšr 'settlement, village') in the Old Testament.

Brown-Driver-Briggs, *Hebrew Lexicon*, does not give us the correct etymologies of, and Gesenius-Buhl, *Handwörterbuch* 17, does not differentiate between the two distinctly separate roots and meanings of Hebrew hāšēr. Ras Shamra hšr provides conclusive evidence. An attempt was made to account for the confusion in the Bible as regards the gender of hāšēr 'enclosure; court.'

Prof. T. J. MEEK (*University of Toronto*): Problems concerning the Levites.

This paper discussed such questions as the following: Were the Levites originally a secular tribe? Were they ever in Egypt? How were they related to Moses? How and when did they become Yahweh worshippers?

The session adjourned at 1.00 p. m., when separate luncheon conferences of those interested in Far Eastern and in Islamic studies respectively were held at the Hotel Normandie.

## THE SIXTH SESSION

The sixth and last session was called to order at 3.00 p. m. of the same day by President Waterman at the University Museum. The following communications were presented and discussed.

Prof. E. C. EVANS (*Trinity College, Toronto*): The "Herod" as Herod. On various grounds the "Herod" in Josephus' *Jewish War* I, 203-673, is to be viewed as a fair reproduction of the "Herod" in Nicholas' "Uni-

versal History." Nicholas is responsible for the patterning of Herod's life upon that of King David. Josephus' purpose in prefacing his *War* with an account of Herod was, by a slight change, to correct this view of Herod. Since Herod's brothers and sisters all bear Semitic names it is not unreasonable to suppose that Herod is a name assumed so as to express the character in which his court historian, Nicholas, was to cast him.

Prof. E. J. JONES (*Institute for Advanced Study, Princeton*): *Suñ-Shr'ite Affinities*.

Illuministic Suñism is studied in relation to the Nuṣayrīs, a Shr'ite sect clinging to the practices of ancient Semitic cults, who in the eyes of Syriologists are the direct descendants of paganism. Islamic Illumination, steeped in the syncretic philosophy of Hellenism which reached the Hither Orient in the form of Neo-Platonic, Hermetic and allied speculations, was blended with Persian and other ideas. Parallels between the Nuṣayrī and Illuministic systems fall under the headings of (a) initiation, (b) theory of revelation, and (c) cosmogony and eschatology. The commonly expressed view that Shi'ism and Suñism are divergent must, therefore, be made to conform with these considerations.

Dr. H. W. GLIDDEN (*Institute for Advanced Study, Princeton*) and Dr. N. A. FARIS (*Princeton University*): *The Development of the Meaning of Koranic Ḥanīf*.

This study undertook a reexamination of the use of the word *ḥanīf* in the Arabic sources, as well as a reconsideration of the corresponding terms in Aramaic and Greek, the two most important cultural languages of the environment of early Islam.

We find Arabic *ḥanīf* and Syriac *ḥanpō*, *ermōpō* used as the equivalent of Greek *Hellen*, which denotes either a follower of Hellenistic paganism or simply a person of Hellenic culture. In hitherto unused Harrānian and Nabataean sources we find *ḥanpō* and *ḥanīf* used respectively for a member of the Syro-Hellenistic cultural circle and as a proper name with the same relative significance. Pre-Islamic poetry describes the *ḥanīf* as abstaining from wine; since this is found both among the Nabataeans and the Muslims the conclusion is that *ḥanīf* was borrowed from the Nabataeans in pre-Islamic times and then passed into the Koran.

Miss I. LICHTENSTADT: *Muḥammad Ibn Ḥabīb and His Kitāb al-Muḥabbar*.

Although Muḥammad Ibn Ḥabīb al-Hāshimī al-Baghdādī, the author of the *kitāb al-muḥabbar*, was a well-known scholar, only very scanty information on his life and personality has reached us; the only date we know for sure is that of his death on the 23rd Dhu'l-Hijja 245 A. H. (March 21, 860 A. D.). He was a great authority on ancient Arabic poetry and is the *ṣaḥīḥ* of many *diwāns*; he was also well versed in Arabic history and genealogy of which fact his principal work gives ample proof. Strange to say he is nevertheless but rarely quoted in Arabic sources; most notable is the absence of his name in the work of al-Taḥṣīrī.

Internal evidence shows that the *kitāb al-muḥabbar* must have been composed in or before 232 A. H., and it is therefore one of our earliest sources on Islamic history. The only extant manuscript is in the possession of the British Museum and consists of 172 folios; the manuscript, however, is not complete, for it breaks off in the middle of a chapter. The work is an encyclopedia of pre-Islamic and Islamic history, legends and genealogy; much of its material is entirely unknown or rarely found in other sources. It contains also much poetry a great part of which is unknown too. The question of Ibn Ḥaṣīb's sources offers some difficulty, as, with only a few exceptions, he does not state his authorities. The few *isnāds* which he gives include the names of scholars whose identity it is difficult to find out or whom I was unable to identify so far. His teacher Ibn al-Kalbī, however, seems to have been his main authority as a comparison between the latter's work and the chapters of the *kitāb al-muḥabbar* shows.

The following communications were presented by title:

- Prof. G. W. BRIGGS (*Drew University*): *Caṣṣāla and Dom.*  
 Prof. F. R. BLAKE (*Johns Hopkins University*): *The Origin and Development of the Hebrew Dagheesh.*  
 Miss H. B. CHAPIN (*Mills College*): *Bodhidharma, Slim and Hairless.*  
 Mr. M. GRAVES (*American Council of Learned Societies*): *Remarks on Oriental Studies in the Soviet Union.*  
 Prof. H. N. HOWARD (*Miami University*): *The Libraries and Archives of Istanbul, Turkey.*  
 Prof. W. S. MCCULLOUGH (*University of Toronto*): *Addenda and Corrigenda for J. A. Montgomery's "Aramaic Incantation Texts from Nippur."*  
 Prof. R. MARCUS (*Columbia University*): *Phoenician Origins.*  
 Prof. C. D. MATTHEWS (*Birmingham-Southern College*): *The Kitāb Aḥmān al-'Arab of an-Najrānī.*  
 Dr. G. C. MILES (*American Numismatic Society*): *Mint Towns of the Ilkhanids of Persia.*  
 Prof. H. A. RIGGS, JR. (*Western Reserve University*): *The So-called Caucasian Linguistic Relationships.*  
 Rev. A. R. SIEMENS: *Disorder in Deuteronomy and the Oriental Mind.*  
 Mr. F. E. SOMMER (*Cleveland Public Library*): *Chinese for Enjoyment.*  
 Prof. W. R. TAYLOR (*University of Toronto*): *Light from Ras Shamra on the Agencies of Wisdom-teaching in Early Israel.*

The meeting adjourned at 4.15 P. M.

Respectfully submitted,

CARL H. KRAELING,  
*Secretary.*

PROCEEDINGS  
 OF THE  
 MIDDLE WEST BRANCH  
 OF THE  
**American Oriental Society**  
 AT THE MEETING AT CHICAGO, 1938

---

The Middle West Branch of the American Oriental Society held its Twenty-Second Annual Meeting on Friday and Saturday, April 1st and 2nd, in Chicago, Illinois. The members of the Society and nominees were guests of the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago, of the Field Museum of Natural History, and of the New Orient Society.

In addition, the Branch joined with the Chicago Society of Biblical Research, whose sessions were held Saturday afternoon, April 2nd, immediately following the adjournment of the Oriental Society's sessions.

Headquarters of the Branch were the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago. Friday Morning's session and those on Saturday were held in James Henry Breasted Hall at the Oriental Institute. Friday Afternoon's session was held in the Small Lecture Hall of the Field Museum of Natural History.

The following members were present at one or more of the sessions:

Abbott, Miss	Craighton	Hallock, R. T.
Albert	Debevoise	Hines
Blank	Dubberstein	Hoyos, Miss
Bohrinskoy	Edgerton	Hughes
Bowman	Engberg	Irwin
Boyes	Feigin	Jacobsen
Branden	Frye	Johnson, S. E.
Brookens, Mrs. N.	Geers	Johnson, Mrs. S. E.
Bruz	Gelb	Kelley
Buttenweiser	Gossens	Kraft
Cameron	Graham	Lewy
Chang	Grant	Lybber
Cook	Grice	McElwain
Creel	Gruenthaner	McGovern

MacNair, H.	Price	Templeton
MacNair, Mrs. H.	Purves	Thomas
Martin	Putcamp, Miss	Totten, Miss
May	Robinson	Walther
Maxwell	Rudolph	Waterman
Mihelie	Safar	White
Moore	Saater	Wilbur
Morgenstern	Seele	Wilkins, Miss
Munson	Scherer	Willett
Olmstead	Sellers	Wilson
Parker	Shapiro, Miss	Young
Perkins, Miss	Skier, Miss	
Petersen	Smendon, Miss	TOTAL 81
Puebel	Stefanski, Miss	

There were present also the following nominees for membership in the Society: Mr. Taha Baqir, Mr. Burr Cartwright Brundage, Dr. Floyd V. Filson, Dr. Alexander Heidel, Dr. Thorkild Jacobsen, Dr. N. W. Land, Mrs. W. M. Mackenson, Mr. Harry F. Mist, Jr., Dr. A. O. Sarkissian, Dr. Henry Schaeffer, Mr. A. D. Tushingham—Total 11.

The following members of the Chicago Society of Biblical Research were also present at one or more sessions: O. J. Baab, E. C. Colwell, P. E. Davies, A. H. Forster, E. J. Goodspeed, A. A. Hays, P. E. Keen, John Knox, E. F. Krauss, L. F. W. Lesemann, L. L. Mann, P. S. Minear, A. C. Zenos—Total 13.

Baron von Heine Geldern was the guest of the Branch and gave an illustrated paper. Professor Fleming James of Berkley Divinity School was also a guest.

Members of the New Orient Society were also guests and a number were present at several of the sessions.

At every session there were present students, wives of members, and others interested in the programs.

#### THE FIRST SESSION

At 9.30 A. M. on Friday, President Sheldon H. Blank called to order the first session of the meeting in James Henry Breasted Hall of the Oriental Institute.

Reading of the minutes of the meeting in Cleveland in 1937 was omitted, since they were already in print. The report of the Treasurer was then given (see above, p. 531).



The Auditing Committee then reported (see above, p. 521).

The President appointed the following as members of the Committee on Resolutions: Professors Braden (Chairman), Lybyar and May.

The Branch elected Professor Sellers (Chairman), Dr. Dubberstein and Dr. Albert as the Committee on Nominations. On motion, it was voted to dispense with the usual order of business and receive the report of the Nominating Committee at the close of the morning session.

There followed the reading of papers.

Professor O. R. SELLESS (*Presbyterian Theological Seminary*): Chiasmus in Egyptian.

Some ancient Egyptian texts show a chiasmic arrangement of words and of sections; e. g., the funerary stela of *Nb-pw-Snswrt* (Gardiner's *Grammar*, pp. 168-9); PT 587. The same words may be repeated in reverse order, or the idea repeated may be expressed synonymously. The use of chiasmus in Egyptian was only occasional, but some of it seems to have been by design.

Dr. SAMUEL I. FRIEDMAN (*Oriental Institute, University of Chicago*): The Creation of Woman.

On the seventh day God cut off (*bttr* "a side" (*psia*)) of the bicorporal man and formed woman, as he had hewn the universe into a masculine heaven and a feminine earth in the beginning. "Image of God" refers to bicorporality. Because the earth was *takd wabshd*, namely, water and air, creation took place in two cycles, in three orders, heaven, air and water, and earth.

Dr. ALEXANDER HEIDEL (*Oriental Institute, University of Chicago*): The Problem of *Mummu* in the Babylonian Epic of Creation Reconsidered.

*Mummu* is a Sumerian appellative, derived from *mud-mud*, and denotes "one who gives birth to many" (*Tiamat*); "one who begets many" (*Apsû*); "one who forms, fashions, or creates a plurality of things" Ea, Marduk, and *Mummu* the *sukkalu* of *Apsû*. The *mummu* meaning "thunder" (*rigmu*) is an entirely distinct homonym.

President J. W. CASTLETON (*Hastings College, Hastings, Nebraska*): Does Mana Offer an Acceptable Explanation of the Beginnings of Pantheism, Polytheism, and Monotheism?

At 11.00 A. M., Director John A. Wilson of the Oriental Institute delivered an address of welcome to the Branch and its guests.

This was followed by the Presidential Address of Professor Sheldon H. Blank, of Hebrew Union College, Cincinnati, Ohio, "The Voice of the Laity in Early Post-Exilic Judaism."

Following the address of President Blank, Professor O. R. Sellers read the report of the nominating committee as follows:

Your committee nominates the following persons to hold office for the year 1938-39:

President—Professor W. C. GRAHAM, of the Oriental Institute, University of Chicago.

Vice-President—Professor JOSEPH WARD SWAIN, of the University of Illinois.

Secretary and Treasurer—Dr. ALLEN D. ALBERT, JR., of Seabury Western Theological Seminary.

Members of the Executive Committee—Professor SHELDON H. BLANK, of Hebrew Union College, and Dr. SHERMAN E. JOHNSON, of Nashotah House.

Signed O. R. SELLERS,  
WALDO H. DUBSERSTEIN,  
ALLEN D. ALBERT, JR.

On motion of Professor Price, seconded by President Morgestern, the report was accepted and the secretary instructed to cast a white ballot for the nominees. President Blank then declared them elected as nominated.

The Branch then adjourned to the Field Museum of Natural History, where it had its luncheon in the Cafeteria of the Museum.

At 1.30, under the guidance of Mr. Richard Martin of the Field Museum staff, a visit was paid to the new Kish Room.

## THE SECOND SESSION

President Blank called the second session to order in the Small Lecture Hall of the Museum at 2.00 P. M.

Director C. C. Gregg of the Field Museum of Natural History delivered an address of welcome to the members and guests. This was followed by the resumption of the reading of papers.

Professor C. S. BRADEN (*Northwestern University, Evanston, Illinois*): Japanese Imperialism and Religion.

However much economic factors may lie at the basis of the present imperialistic expansion program of Japan, it is to religion that the government looks in no small degree as one of the strong motivating forces in getting people to support the program. Shintoism, the native religion of Japan, is invoked in support of four basic beliefs which are fundamental to Japan's present program.

(1) The Japanese people are in a peculiar sense a chosen people—God's people.

(2) They are therefore a unique and a superior people.

(3) Their government, that of a direct descendant of the Sun-goddess, is worthy of absolute obedience.

(4) Japan consequently has a world mission to perform.

All these are supported in the paper by direct quotation from eminent contemporary Japanese writers.

Professor MOSES BUTTENWEISER (*Hebrew Union College, Cincinnati, Ohio*): Are the Stories of Elijah on Mount Horeb and Michiah ben Imlah's Predicting of Evil to Ahab Authentic or Legendary?

Mrs. HARLEY MACNAIR (*Chicago*): The Chinese Cult of Pattern Men (Illustrated).

BARON VON HEINE-GELDERN: Illustrated Lecture.

The Branch then adjourned to a tea held in its honor by the Field Museum of Natural History.

At 7.00 P. M. was held the Annual Dinner of the Branch at the Hotel Sherry. Following dinner, the two visiting professors to the American Schools of Oriental Research, Professors Olmstead and Graham, delivered addresses to the members and guests on their experiences in the Near East.

### THE THIRD SESSION

Because of the number of papers, it was found necessary to hold the third session in two divisions, contrary as this is to the practice of the Branch. The first of these was held in James Henry Breasted Hall of the Oriental Institute and was called to order by Vice-president Cameron at 9.00 A. M. The reading of papers was resumed.

Dr. WALDO H. DUBBERSTEIN (*Oriental Institute, University of Chicago*): Agriculture and Land Tenure in Later Babylonia.

Greek sources ascribe unbelievable fertility to later Babylonia. Native sources indicate that barley and dates were the most common and the cheapest agricultural products; garlic the most popular vegetable. The State, the temples and wealthy landowners controlled most of the acreage. Feudal tenure existed in a complicated form. A decrease of independent farming is discernible.

Dr. ALLEN D. ALBERT, JR. (*Seabury-Western Theological Seminary, of Evanston, Illinois*): Water Supplies and Drainage in the Ancient City.

Since the key to life in Mesopotamia was largely water, it is not surprising to find the ancient dwellers of that region giving a great deal of attention to water supplies and drainage. Some of the structures they erected were worthy of comparison with those of any except the present period. When these were neglected for any of several reasons Mesopotamia's prosperity disappeared with them.

Dr. I. J. GELB (*Oriental Institute, University of Chicago*): Ishtar and Shamash.

The current belief among scholars is that Ishtar was masculine and Shamash was feminine among all the ancient Semites and especially among the pre-Islamic Arabs, but that among the Assyrians and Babylonians the genders of these two divinities were exactly the reverse. On the basis of hitherto unknown or overlooked sources an attempt is made to prove that originally also among the ancient Akkadians Ishtar was masculine and Shamash was feminine.

Dr. A. O. SARKISIAN (*University of Illinois, Urbana, Illinois*): The Authenticity of Moses of Khorene's History.

Professor LEROY WATKINSON (*University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Michigan*): The Unpublished Assyrian Letters in the British Museum, A Reconnoitre and Report. (Illustrated.)

Professor HERBERT MAY (*Graduate School of Theology, Oberlin, Ohio*): Some Scattered Archaeological Notes. (Illustrated.)

Mycenaean, Egyptian, and Mesopotamian analogies are invoked to demonstrate that we may interpret as a symbol of the mother goddess the palm tree design on Palestine painted pottery, belonging to the late Hyksos and subsequent periods, and at times depicted with accompanying goats, stags, gazelles, birds, and doves. The Megiddo pottery offering stand of the Late Bronze Age is an especially good example of the tree with streams and of the symbolism of the bunches of dates as the breasts of the goddess. Canticles 7: 7-8; 8: 5, and Genesis 35: 8 are important biblical passages throwing light on our problem. The Stele of Baal with the Sprouting Lance from Ugarit, the pottery model chariot wheels, and the ivory inlay representation of the Canaanite king on the cherubim throne are also discussed briefly.

Miss WINIFRED SKEATON (*Oriental Institute, University of Chicago*): Evidence for Tattooing in the Ancient Near East. (Illustrated.)

Professor JULIUS LEVI (*Hebrew Union College, Cincinnati, Ohio*): The Assyrian Calendar.

A linguistic analysis of the specific Assyrian month names found in the Old and Middle Assyrian sources (about 2000 to 1100 B. C.) from which it follows (1) that a part of these month names have the same

meaning as the corresponding Old Babylonian month names which still today are used in the Jewish calendar. (2) That these month names originate from the Amoritic elements of Assyria and Babylonia. (3) That they refer to events invariably returning at the same time of each year. (4) That they presuppose the knowledge of a year of 365 days. Discussion of corroborating evidence to this effect.

Professor ARNO POMER, (*Oriental Institute, University of Chicago*): Remarks on the Elamite Tablets from Persepolis.

President Sheldon Blank called the second division to order in Room 208 of the Oriental Institute, likewise at 9.00 A. M., and the reading of papers was resumed in that division also.

Dr. SHERMAN E. JOHNSON (*Nashotah House, Nashotah, Wisconsin*): Gospel Material in the Pauline Epistles.

A reexamination of the Synoptic Gospels and Pauline epistles suggests that Paul may have known and used some of the materials underlying the gospels, viz. the Sermon on the Mount, the mission charges, apocalyptic discourses, etc. There are indications that in I and II Thess. Paul employs the same order found in gospel sections.

Mrs. SHERMAN E. JOHNSON (*Nashotah, Wisconsin*): Some Notes on The Translation of Job.

Miss ELIZABETH STEPANSKI (*Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago*): The Coptic Oath, "By this Holy Shrine."

Mr. C. MARTIN WILBUR (*Field Museum of Natural History, Chicago*): Legal Aspects of Slavery in the Han Period in China.

Han law code lost; evidence assembled from contemporary edicts, memorials, legal cases. Enslavement legal by sale and for major crimes. Emancipation by purchase and imperial edict. Emancipation movement weak and non legal-philosophic. Owners right over slave's life countered by cases of officials prosecuted for killing slaves. Evidence shows slaves had disadvantageous position in criminal law.

Professor G. V. BOBRINSKOY (*University of Chicago*): The Daily Rites of the Hindus.

Dr. PIERRE M. FURVES (*Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago*): An Early Scribal School at Nuzi.

Certain business archives from Nuzi reveal four generations of scribal development. The first generation documents present a style distinctly differing with the later style typical of most Nuzi tablets. The transition between the style of this early school and the later one takes place during the second generation.

Professor W. A. IRWIN (*Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago*): A Note on Hosea's Wife.

Dr. THORKILD JACOBSEN (*Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago*): *The Assumed Conflict between Sumerians and Semites in Early Babylonian History.*

At 12.30 the University of Chicago entertained the Members and Nominees of the Branch at Luncheon in the University Coffee Shop in Mandel Corridor. Director Wilson of the Oriental Institute again delivered an address of welcome, this time on behalf of the university.

#### THE FOURTH SESSION

At 1.30 President Blank called the fourth session to order in the James Henry Breasted Hall and the following papers were read:

Professor WILLIAM M. MCGOVERN (*Northwestern University, Evanston, Illinois*): *The Tungghu or Eastern Barbarians-Ancestors of the Mongols.*

Professor A. H. LYSTER (*University of Illinois, Urbana, Illinois*): *Kemalism: The System of New Turkey.*

Mr. HARALD W. JACOBSON (*Oriental Institute, University of Chicago*): *Significance of the Silk Trade in Central Asian History.*

Professor Braden then read the report of the Committee on Resolutions as follows:

During the year death has taken one of the members of the Mid-west Branch of the American Oriental Society, known to most of us if not from personal acquaintanceship, then from his writings in the Biblical field. I refer to Dr. Frederick Carl Eiselin, who was for 36 years a member of the Society and president of this branch in 1922-23.

Dr. Eiselin did his doctoral work in the field of Oriental studies and achieved distinction as a teacher of the Hebrew and Assyrian languages. He is best and most widely known, however, for his work as a popularizer of Biblical Scholarship in such works as *The Books of the Pentateuch*, *Prophets and Prophecy* and *The Writings*. His latest important work was as editor of and contributor to the Abingdon One Volume Commentary on the Bible.

Known as a stimulating teacher, he became in later years an administrator, first as president of Garrett Biblical Institute and still later as secretary of the Board of Education of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Preoccupation with the numerous responsibilities imposed upon him by these important positions made it difficult for him to keep up scholarly work in his field, and he was not so frequently in our sessions in later years. However, he never got over a nostalgic longing for the leisure to continue the work of scholarship to which he had given so many years of his life. He did maintain a lively interest in the Bible and served actively

almost to the last on the Lesson Committee of the International Sunday School Association. He was also one of the members of the committee now working on a version of the American Standard Version of the Bible.

Resolved that the Society spread this brief memorial on its minutes and that the Secretary send a copy of it together with a word of sympathy to Mrs. Eiselin.

CHARLES S. BRADEN, *Chairman*,  
ALBERT H. LYBYER,  
HERBERT G. MAY.

Resolved that the Society express its hearty appreciation of the hospitality extended to it by its hosts, the Oriental Institute, the Field Museum, and the New Orient Society; that in particular we thank the staff of the Museum for the delightful tea which they served, and the University of Chicago for the luncheon which they so graciously offered us.

Resolved that we thank the officers of the society and the local committee of arrangements for a smooth running, well-ordered Conference, and especially for the very enjoyable dinner and program at the Hotel Sherry, Friday evening.

Resolved further that in planning the next year's program sufficient time be allowed for the reading of all papers before the entire Society, rather than dividing into sections. If this should necessitate the extension of the meetings through another afternoon or evening, this should be done.

In case this should not seem feasible, then it would be preferable to shorten the time allowed for each paper to be read.

CHARLES S. BRADEN,  
ALBERT H. LYBYER,  
HERBERT G. MAY.

After discussion this report was accepted as read.

On motion of President Morgenstern, seconded by Professor Buttenweiser, it was voted to leave the time and the place of the 1939 meeting in the hands of the executive committee.

There being no further business, the twenty-second annual meeting of the Branch adjourned to join with the Chicago Society of Biblical research.

Respectfully submitted,

ALLEN D. ALBERT, JR.,  
*Secretary.*



## AN ECHO-WORD MOTIF IN DRAVIDIAN FOLK-TALES \*

M. B. EMENEAU

YALE UNIVERSITY

IN THE *Indian Antiquary* 14 (1885), 79-81, S. M. Natesa Sastri Pandit published an English translation of a Tamil folk-tale which is built around a word-play. Linguistic work in South Indian has provided me with versions of this tale in three separate Dravidian languages, Kota, Coorg, and Toda, and the material now at hand is sufficient for a presentation of the motif employed in these stories and an analysis of the stories themselves.

The motif I shall call the "Echo-word motif," borrowing the term "echo-word" from a discussion of certain noun-formations found in many, if not most, of the languages of India, Indo-Aryan, Dravidian, and Munda, a discussion which was published in the Circulars of the Linguistic Society of India in 1928. The term did not originate there, but its origin is relatively unimportant and need not be traced further in this connexion. Such echo-words are well-known for the major Indo-Aryan vernaculars, e. g. in Hindi *jal-ul, hāth-uth*, in Bengali *jal-fal, hat-fal*, in Gujarati *hāth-bāth*, in Marathi *dzal-bil, ghoda-bida*. Prof. S. K. Chatterji, *ib.* 3 (14 May, 1928), pp. 7-8, states that the function of the formations is to express "[the thing denoted by the basic noun] and things similar to or associated with that," in much the same terms that he had used previously in *Origin and Development of the Bengali Language* (Calcutta University Press, 1926), p. 176.

In the Dravidian languages such formations are also well-known as a feature of the vernaculars, e. g. Tamil *tanai-kinnai*, Telugu *gurramu-girramu*, Kannada *kudure-gidure*. Since they are vernacular forms and found rarely, if at all, in the literatures of the literary languages, they have been almost totally neglected in the grammars. Work on the Toda, Kota, and Coorg languages has enabled me to state the method of formation and the functions of these words in an exact form. For Toda the formation is as follows.

\* This paper represents a small part of the work done in South India under the auspices and by the aid of the American Council of Learned Societies in 1935-6 and the American Philosophical Society (Pearse Fund) in 1936-7.

All Toda nouns may be schematized by the formulae CVX and CV:X, in which C is the initial consonant, V or V: the first vowel or diphthong, and X all the remainder of the word. The following formulas then represent the method of formation:

CVX > 'CVX-ki-X and CV:X > 'CV:X-ki:-X.

The formation is reduplicative with a substitution morpheme -ki/-ki:- replacing the CV/CV: part of the basic noun. Details concerning the vowels and diphthongs represented by V and V: and the sandhi and other phonetic changes involved are to be found in my paper "Echo-words in Toda" read at the Ninth All-India Oriental Conference held at Trivandrum in December 1937 and later published in *New Indian Antiquary* 1, 109-17. It needs only to be pointed out here that the formation is evaluated phonetically as a compound and that the second member of the compound, viz. ki-X/ki:-X, while it may be isolated as a separate word in certain circumstances, is entirely meaningless; if it should coincide with a real noun, this is accidental. The function of the formation is to denote a specimen which the speaker does not care to identify from among a hypothesized collection of identical discrete entities of infinite number or from a hypothesized infinite extension of a non-discrete handleable entity. The formation may be used in negative statements, prohibition, commands, questions, and hypothetical clauses, but not in affirmative statements except when ['ofodj] "all" is added to the formation. In some cases the infinite extension includes by implication all other entities that might replace the expressed entity in the situation stated in the utterance. This is the usage stated by Chatterji for the Indo-Aryan forms; these forms are used in general somewhat differently from the Dravidian forms. Examples of the Toda forms and their usage are: ['no:j'kyɑ:u,xi:'θuɟfuzk] "let the dog not eat any carrion (['kyɑ:u,xi:])," ['mæ:ntɕ,xi:ntɕ'θu:x] "hang yourself on some tree or other (or on anything else on which one can hang oneself)."

In Kota the same formulas will apply, with replacement of -ki/-ki:- by -gi/-gi:-. In Coorg also we can use the same formulas, with replacement of -ki/-ki:- by -gu/-gu:-. In these languages the function of the forms is the same as in Toda. From the meagre accounts in the grammars of other Dravidian languages and from my observations on Tamil and Kannaḍa, it appears that the Toda

formulas will serve unchanged for Tamil. For Kannada we may use the Toda formulas with substitution of -gi-/gi:- for Toda -ki-/ki:-. In Telugu and Kuvi, the Toda formulas are to be applied with the substitution morpheme appearing as -gi-/gi:-. For Kui, Winfield's grammar does not mention the formation, but it is probable, since it is found in Kuvi, a closely related dialect, that it is found in Kui as well. Malayalam appears not to possess the formation; the books do not mention it, and I am informed by Prof. L. V. Ramaswami Ayyar that he does not know it for this language. Brahui appears not to have the formation, its place being taken by other types. For Tulu, and Kurukh, Gondi, and other central Dravidian languages, I have no information, except for Kolami, which has the formation with the morpheme -gi-/gi:-. I cannot state the function of the formation in the languages that are not known to me from direct study of the living speech; the books do not discuss the matter, but it may be suspected that Toda, Kota, and Coorg represent the general type.

Other types of formation are probably to be found in some of the languages. In fact, in the Tamil story as reported by Natesa Sastri the formation is *bāu:ta-ku:ta*, in which *ku:ta* is meaningless. Details of this formation are not given by Natesa Sastri.

In the four stories to be analyzed the same linguistic basis forms the motif. A man says aloud to himself or to his flock that precautions must be taken against any tiger or demon that may come to do mischief. In each case the tiger or the demon is represented by an echo-word. A tiger or a demon overhears and, in accordance with the general stupid nature of these creatures in the folk-lore, misunderstands. It knows that it is itself the tiger or the demon, but does not know what the meaningless second member of the compound denotes and fears that it is something even more terrible than itself. Some unexpected event then happens to it, and it is outwitted, thinking that the agency of this event is the fearsome creature denoted by the meaningless word.

The Tamil story given by Natesa Sastri is reproduced here from the *Indian Antiquary*, with a very few omissions and condensations.

In two adjoining villages there lived two famous men. The one was called Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth—one that could accomplish wonders with words alone. The other was called Mr. Mighty-of-his-hands—one who could make no use of the tongue, but was able to bear burdens, cut wood, and perform other physical labor.

It so happened that they agreed to live together in the house of Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth, to try and see which of them was the superior. They accordingly kept company for several months, till the great feast of nine nights (*navarātri*) came on. On the first day of the feast Mr. Mighty-of-his-hands wanted to sacrifice a goat to the goddess Kālī. So he said to Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth: "My dear friend, we both are mighty in our way, and so it would be shameful for us to buy with money the goat that we want to sacrifice. We should manage to get it without payment." "Yes, we must do so, and I know how," replied Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth, and he asked his friend to wait till that evening.

Now there lived a goatherd<sup>2</sup> at one *ghaṭikā's* (hour's) distance from their house, and the two friends resolved to go to his fold that night and steal away one of his goats. Accordingly when it was dark they approached his fold. The goatherd had just finished his duties, and wanted to go home and have his rice hot. But he had no assistant to watch the herd, and he must not lose his supper. So he planted his crook before the fold, and throwing his blanket over it, thus addressed it: "My son, I am hungry, and must go for my rice. Till I return watch the herd. This wood is full of tigers and goblins (*bhūtas*). Some mischievous thief or *bāṭa*—or *kūta*—may come to steal away the goats. [The echo-word *bāṭa-kūta* is used here.] Watch over them carefully." So saying the goatherd went away.

The friends had heard what the goatherd said. Of course, Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth laughed within himself at this device of the goatherd to impress upon would-be robbers that he had left someone there to watch his goats, while really he had only planted a pole and thrown a blanket over it. Mr. Mighty-of-his-hands, however, did not see the trick, and spoke thus to his friend: "Now what are we to do? There is a watchman sitting in front of the fold." Thereupon Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth cleared away his doubts by saying that it was a mere stick, and entered the fold with his friend.

It had also so happened that on that very night a *bāṭa* had come into the fold to steal away a goat. It shuddered with fear on hearing the goatherd mention the *kūta*, for having never heard of the existence of *kūtas*, it mistook this imaginary being to be something superior in strength to itself. So thinking that a *kūta* might come into the fold, and not wishing to expose itself till it knew well what *kūtas* were, the *bāṭa* transformed itself into a goat and laid itself down among the herd. By this time the two Mighties had entered the fold and begun an examination of the goats. They went on rejecting animal after animal for some defect or other, till at last they came to the goat that was none other than the *bāṭa*. They tested it, and when they found it very heavy—as, of course, it would be

<sup>2</sup> In Nāṭam Sastri's account the word "shepherd" occurs here and so throughout the remainder of the episode. After this sentence he speaks of the herd as a flock of sheep and of the friends wanting to steal a sheep. I have tacitly corrected this to "goat" at each occurrence. Sheep are not sacrificed in South India, nor are they reared, except in the hills and there they are a recent innovation; the flock in the story must be one of goats.

with the soul of the *bāṭa* in it—they began to tie up its legs to carry it home. When hands began to shake it the *bāṭa* mistook the Mighties for the *kūṭas*, and said to itself: "Alas! the *kūṭas* have come to take me away. What a fool I was to come into the fold!" So thought the *bāṭa* as Mr. Mighty-of-his-hands was carrying it away on his head, with his friend following him behind. But the *bāṭa* soon began to work its devilish powers to extricate itself, and Mr. Mighty-of-his-hands began to feel pains all over his body and said to his friend: "My dear Mighty, I feel pains all over me. I think what we have brought is no goat!" Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth was inwardly alarmed at the words of his friend, but did not like to show that he was afraid. So he said: "Then put down the goat, and let us tear open its belly, so that we shall each have only one-half of it to carry." This frightened the *bāṭa*, and he melted away on the head of Mr. Mighty-of-his-hands, who, relieved of his devilish burden, was glad to return home safe with his friend.

The *bāṭa* too went to its abode and there told its fellow-goblins how it had involved itself in a great trouble and how narrowly it had escaped. They all laughed at its stupidity and said: "What a great fool you are! They were no *kūṭas*. In fact there are no *kūṭas* in the world. They were men, and it was most stupid of you to have got yourself into their hands. Are you not ashamed to make such a fuss about your escape?" The injured *bāṭa* retorted that they would not have made such remarks had they seen the *kūṭas*. "Then show us these *kūṭas*, as you call them," said they, "and we will crush them in the twinkling of an eye." "Agreed," said the injured *bāṭa*, and the next night it took them to the house of the Mighties, and said from a distance: "There is their house. I cannot approach it. Do whatever you like." The other *bāṭas* were amazed at the fear of their timid brother, and resolved to put an end to the enemies of even one of their caste. So they went in a great crowd to the house of the Mighties. Some stood outside the house, to see that none of the inmates escaped, and some watched in the back-yard, while a score of them jumped over the walls and entered the courtyard.

Mr. Mighty-of-his-hands was sleeping in the verandah, adjoining the courtyard, and when he heard the noise of people jumping, he opened his eyes, and to his terror saw some *bāṭas* in the court. Without opening his mouth he quietly rolled himself along the ground, and went to the room where Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth was sleeping with his wife and children. Tapping gently at the door he awoke his friend and said: "What shall we do now! The *bāṭas* have invaded our house, and will soon kill us!" Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth told him quietly not to be afraid, but to go and sleep in his original place, and that he himself would make the *bāṭas* run away. Mr. Mighty-of-his-hands did not understand what his friend meant, but rolled his way back to his original place and pretended to sleep, though his heart was beating terribly with fear. Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth now awoke his wife, and instructed her thus: "My dearest wife, the foolish *bāṭas* have invaded our house, but if you do what I say we are safe, and the goblins will depart harmlessly. Go to the hall and light a lamp, spread

leaves on the floor, and then pretend to awake me for my supper. I shall get up and enquire what you have ready to give me to eat. You will then reply that you have only pepper-water and vegetables. With an angry face I shall say: 'What have you done with the three *bāṭas* that our son caught on his way home from school?' Your reply must be: 'The rogue wanted some sweetmeats on coming home. Unfortunately I had none in the house, so he roasted the three *bāṭas* and gobbled them up.' Thus instructing his wife Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth pretended to go to sleep.

The wife did as her husband said, and during the conversation that followed, the fact that his son had roasted three *bāṭas* for sweetmeats was conveyed to the *bāṭas*. They shuddered at the son's extraordinary ability, and thought: "What must the father do for his meals when a son roasts three *bāṭas* for sweetmeats?" So they at once took to their heels. Then going to the brother they had jeered at, they said to him that indeed the *bāṭas* were their greatest enemies, and that none of their lives was safe while they remained where they were. They therefore all resolved to fly away to the adjoining forest, and disappeared accordingly. Thus Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth saved himself and his friend on two occasions from the *bāṭas*.

The friends after this went one day to a nearby village and were returning home rather late in the evening. Darkness came on them before half the way was traversed, and there lay before them a dense wood infested by beasts of prey; so they resolved to spend the night in a high tree and go home next morning, and accordingly got up into a big pipal. Now this was the very wood into which the *bāṭas* had migrated, and at midnight they all came down with torches to catch jackals and other animals to feast upon. The fear of Mr. Mighty-of-his-hands may be more imagined than described. The dreaded *bāṭas* were at the foot of the very tree in which he had taken refuge for the night. In his agitation he lost his hold, and came down with a horrible noise. His friend, however, was, as usual, ready with a device, and bawled out: "I wish to leave these poor beings to their own revelry. But you are hungry and must needs jump down to catch some of them. Do not fail to lay your hands on the stoutest *bāṭa*." The goblins heard the voice which was already familiar to them, for was it not the *bāṭa* whose son had roasted three *bāṭas* for sweetmeats that spoke? So they ran away at once, crying out: "Alas, what misery! Our bitter enemies have followed us even to this wood!" Thus the wit of Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth saved himself and his friend for the third time.

The sun began to rise, and Mr. Mighty-of-his-hands thrice walked round Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth and said: "My dear friend, truly you only of us two are mighty. Mere physical strength is of no use without skill in words. The latter is far superior to the former, and if a man possesses both, he is a golden lotus having a sweet scent. It is enough for me now to have arrived at this moral! With your permission I shall return to my village." Mr. Mighty-of-his-mouth, after honoring his friend as became his position, let him return to his village.



The Kota story forms part of a much longer tale. The first section describes a hunting party of seven Kota brothers of the village [ˈpəɾɑːɾ], of whom five were men of sense, the sixth was a fool, and the seventh was a lame man. Both the latter are despised persons in the Kota community, but on the hunting expedition the lame man, by throwing finely ground chilli-powder into their eyes, overcame successively a demon [ˈɑːtɑːmunjɪ], a tiger and a python, which the elder brothers then killed. The use of chilli-powder or a bamboo syringe full of pepper-water for this purpose seems to have been usual in former times when the Kotas engaged in hunting as a normal part of their life, but in this particular story the lame man's use of the powder is said to be an instance of his cleverness and resource.

The [ˈɑːtɑːmunjɪ], which is mentioned above and also plays a large part in what is to follow, is a demon in human shape, with coal-black skin, a huge mouth with projecting tusks, and long matted hair like rope. Its size seems to vary at will, sometimes it is only as big as a small child, sometimes it is gigantic, even as much as twenty feet tall. In one story a one-eyed, Cyclopean [ˈɑːtɑːmunjɪ] occurs, but this is not a usual characteristic. It eats men and all sorts of domestic animals. Usually it goes quite naked, not wearing even the perineal cloth which the Kota always wears for decency, but occasionally it puts on human skins. Like men these demons have wives and children. The Kota name is puzzling. The demon may be referred to also as [munjɪ], as will be seen below. This word denotes a glutton who crams food into his mouth by handfuls. The meaning of the first member of the compound [ˈɑːtɑː-], is unknown; its form suggests that it is the attributive form of the negative of a verb (what is usually called in grammars of Dravidian languages the negative relative participle), but my informants cannot suggest any verb that it might plausibly be derived from. The next episode is united to the first by the father of the seven men giving to his lame son a wife, in order to curb his recklessness, and at the same time giving the fool a wife. The lame man was provided with a diligent woman who could work and make up for his physical disabilities, the fool with a clever woman who could think for him. The fool, then, unable to provide a good living for his wife, proposed to make a living by stealing buffaloes, cattle, goats, and fowls from those who possessed them. This he did and



the plan worked admirably until he was one day caught. By his wife's cleverness he was got off. From this point I translate the story.

When they arrived home, the fool said: "Nowhere have I seen a woman as clever as my wife," and husband and wife that night were full of joy. Then the wife said: "Husband! in our village [*porɣa:ɾ*] the people shut up all their buffaloes, cows, and goats at night in sheds near the village. Here you will be caught by someone. But the people of [*'kina:ɾ*] drive their animals to the high pastures far from the village and shut them up in the cattle-shed there. So if you go only to the [*'kina:ɾ*] pasture, no one will find you out at all. You may drive here all we need." When she said that, the fool remembered that his younger brother, the lame man, had taken chilli-powder formerly when they went hunting, and accordingly he also took a small measure of chilli-powder as well as food tied up in a cloth and a rope, and went off to the high pastures of [*'kina:ɾ*].

At this time the headman of [*'kina:ɾ*] had fifty or sixty goats, buffaloes, and cows, and had got a sensible boy to watch the animals. In the district of [*'kina:ɾ*] in those days there were many tigers and demons ([*'u:to:munjv*]) which daily were destroying and eating the domestic animals. So, that young herdsman every evening when he shut up the shed, before he went off, used to bow down to the four directions and say: "I am going. Cows! goats! buffaloes! Be very careful! Take good care in case any tigers or demons come." (Here the echo-words [*'puʂ,gi*] and [*'u:to:munjv gi:to:munjv*] are used.) And every evening before he put the cattle in the shed a tiger on one side and a demon on the other used to be watching. If you ask what each of them thought, the tiger was thinking: "I only am the tiger ([*'puʂ*]). But what is that which he calls a [*gi*]?" And the demon was thinking: "I only am the demon ([*'u:to:munjv*]). But what is that which he calls a [*'gi:to:munjv*]?" So for ten or fifteen days they thought and did not enter that shed.

Finally on this night the tiger thought: "Whatever will come, let it come!" and opened the door and entered. But the demon still thought: "I must not enter," and stayed outside. Just on this night after it became dark the fool also, with his rope and chilli-powder and food tied in a cloth, opened the door and entered that shed. He thought: "Only if I take away a big male-goat will my wife be pleased with me," and felt about in the dark in all corners of the shed. On the side opposite the door he felt a goat that seemed to be the biggest and put the rope round its neck and dragged it outside. The tiger (for that was what he had found) was afraid and thought: "That young herdsman was right in what he said. This is the [*gi*] that he talked about. Today I have been caught. How can I escape? That [*gi*] will certainly kill me," and when the fool pulled, it followed him. When they were outside, the fool said: "I cannot pull it along," and took the rope which he had tied around its neck and put it over its face with a slip-knot like reins. Then he mounted it like a horse and hit it on the hindquarters with his stick and rode it along as one rides and guides a horse.

Since it was night, the poor fool could not see the way to ['porgu:r]. So it happened that riding it along and struggling to guide it he came just above the village ['kina:r]. It was then becoming a little light before dawn. He looked to see how big a goat he had brought, and behold! its body was all striped and felt smooth and sleek. He examined it well and thought: "This is a tiger. When it finds out that I am a man it will kill me." So he took a handful of the chilli-powder that he had and threw it into the tiger's eyes. The tiger's eyes burned and it shut them and jumped about, and this man held on by the rope. The tiger jumped up and came down thud, and its hind-leg was broken. It jumped again and its fore-leg was broken. While the fool was holding tight to the tiger and struggling with it, the sky became fully light and the priests came to the water-channel to wash before they worshipped. They heard the noise of thudding and crashing on the hill above and when they went to see what it was, they saw the fool from ['porgu:r] struggling with a tiger. They asked: "Fool! what are you doing?" and he answered: "As I was coming on the way to ['kina:r], the tiger came out of the forest and walked slowly along in front of me on the way I had to go and I came behind. It entered the ['kina:r] headman's cattleshed and seized a goat. So I thought: 'It is destroying the headman's animals,' and I caught and beat it and have driven it here. Come, let us kill it." The tiger had both eyes closed and was unable to open them and was thrashing about with two legs useless, so the priests neglected to go to the temple to worship but shouted and all the ['kina:r] people came. They stood around the tiger and saw what the fool had done and felt like people in a dream. Then all the people struck the tiger with stones and killed it.

Afterwards the headman took the fool to his house and enquired about the whole affair and said: "I will do something for the man who did me so great a favor." He called his servants and said: "Make five bullock-loads of the millet in the two storage-baskets in our house and take them to ['porgu:r] and return." Just as he ordered, they unloaded the five bullock-loads of grain at ['porgu:r] and returned. When the ['porgu:r] people asked the fool how he got the millet, he said: "It was just because of my heroic deed that he gave it to me."

Afterwards his wife being pleased with him said: "Husband! do you realize that I brought it about that we got so much millet without work?" He answered: "Things come to me just because I always listen to the words of my clever wife." That night, after they had slept, in the morning she said: "Husband! only if we have meat to eat with the millet that we have now, will we be well off. So tonight also you must go to the same place where you went yesterday and get a good, fat male-goat." He replied: "Good! my wife! I will do so. Grind for me a small measure of chilli-powder." She ground the chilli-powder into good fine flour and sent him off with it. He took that powder and a rope and his stick and went to that same place.

Just as on the previous night that young guatherd said: "Cows! goats! buffaloes! be well on your guard lest some demon or some thief should

come." (The echo-words ['a:ta:munjv gɪ:ta:munjv] and ['ka(ŋ)gɪɪa] are used.) And he shut the door and went off. Before the fool came, the demon heard the goatherd's words and thought: "How long shall I wait? What comes, let it come," and when it was getting dark, it stealthily opened the door and entered. For a little time its heart was beating violently: "[tɪk tɪk]," and then the fool in the darkness opened the door and entered and shut the door. Then the demon thought: "Oh! at last the [gɪjv] has come. Today I shall die. So whatever the [gɪjv] tells me to give, I will give and save my life." The fool then went around feeling in the dark all the goats there, and the demon was the biggest goat of them all. When he felt it in the dark he seized its top hair and pulled. As the demon pulled one way and he the other, the tuft was pulled out of its head. Then the demon said: "Father! I came not knowing that you, the ['gɪ:ta:munjv], would come. If you let me go and do not kill me, I will give you a big pot of gold that is at my house. Do not kill me! I prostrate myself at your feet; I call you god. Let me go!" The fool replied: "Only if you give me the jar of gold will I let you go; otherwise, I will kill you. Listen well to what I say!" Then the demon said: "Oh my god! ride upon me! I will carry you to my house and give you that jar of gold." He answered: "Well then! carry me!"

Accordingly that demon put him on its shoulder and in a moment carried him to its house and put him down on the ground before the house. It went inside and brought a jar of gold and gave it to him. He said: "I cannot carry it from here. Only if you carry me and the gold to where I say and put me down, will I let you go; otherwise, I will swallow you," and he opened his mouth and snarled. When the demon heard that noise, it said: "Oh my god! don't do that! I gave you the gold and was obedient." The fool said: "You must also carry me and the gold." Accordingly the demon quickly put him on one shoulder and the jar of gold on the other and came to the clay-pit at ['pɔrɔ:ɾ] and put him down. He said: "Be off in a hurry without looking to one side or the other." When it heard that, it thought: "I will run and save my life," and said: "Oh ['gɪ:ta:munjv]! Hereafter do not come to that cattle-shed. I gave you gold and satisfied you. Every day I will seize one goat and so feed my children. Do not trouble me again!" This fool said: "So be it!" and the demon went off running to save its life.

There follow other episodes. The lame man went off to get a pot of gold as the fool had done and was killed by the demon. The fool killed the demon and married his lame brother's widow. The fool also acquired a third wife ['kɔ:ɾni:ɕ] by rescuing her from a Kurumba.<sup>2</sup> This happened when he had set off a third time at his

<sup>2</sup>The Kurumbas are a tribe or a set of tribes (they have never been investigated intensively by an ethnologist and even this elementary point is quite uncertain) who inhabit the lower parts of the Nilgiri plateau as well as other jungle parts of South India. The Nilgiri tribes, Kotas, Todas, and Badagas, attribute to the Kurumbas great powers as sorcerers.

first wife's bidding to see if he could be again successful in getting something at the ['kinc:ɾ] cattle-shed. Translation follows.

When he went to the ['kinc:ɾ] cattle-shed taking ['ka: rni: ɕ] with him, it was midnight. Whatever time it was, would the fool forget what his wife had told him? He did not forget, nor did he think that he had got a new wife also. He remembered only that he must finish the thing for which he had come, and said: "Wife! sit outside. I will go and bring out a big goat." He opened the door and after making her sit outside he went in. She thought: "It is probably his shed." In a few minutes she heard a noise of people dragging one another about. If you ask what it was, the wife of that demon which he had caught previously had come and entered that shed. That she-demon had thought previously: "The boy who shut up the cattle told the cattle: 'Cattle! be careful lest some demon ([s: to: munjv] [i: to: munjv]) should come,' and said: 'Oh ['qɪ: to: munjv]) kill the demon which comes to seize the goats.' This ['qɪ: to: munjv] is only that fool." Now when she was caught by the fool she said: "God! do not kill me! I will bring from my house everything that you want and will give it to you." He said: "You came here not knowing that I am the ['qɪ: to: munjv] that ate your husband the demon. I will not release you. Ah! I will bite you." The she-demon thought: "He is really a ['qɪ: to: munjv]," and begged him saying: "God! I will give you all the property that is in my house. We have gold and silver and do not do anything with it. I will give it all to you. Don't do anything to me." He replied: "Bring it quickly." Then when the she-demon was about to go, he said: "I know that you thought that you would deceive me and get off, so I will not let you go." Then the she-demon took from her mouth a thing like a stick and said: "Here! hold this! I will come in a moment with all that gold and silver." He asked: "What is this?" and she replied: "Father! this is my life-stick." When he asked: "What do you do with this?" she said: "My life is inside this. You cannot see the stick since it is dark here, but feel for it in the dark and see its power. Bend the stick and feel its shape. Then feel my shape." When he did so, her body was the same shape as the stick in his hand. Then he said: "All right! go and return quickly."

He came outside and sat talking with ['ka: rni: ɕ]. Before they could wink, the she-demon returned with a big jar full of gold and silver and stood before them. He said: "Carry us and the jar and set us down at the clay-pit of ['porɕu:ɾ]," and in a moment she set them down there. Then the she-demon prostrated herself at his feet and said: "Give me my life-stick, or I shall die." According to the maxim which says: "It is not right to injure a woman," he said: "Because you are a female, I will let you go. But if you promise that from today you will not go to that cattle-shed and do any harm, I will give you your life-stick. If you were a male, I would kill you." She replied: "There is no going against what god says. I give you my oath that from today I will not touch the ['kinc:ɾ] animals,"

and she touched his hand and prostrated herself at his feet.\* The fool gave her the life-stick and told her to go.

She saw the beauty of ['ka: rni: ɕ] and said to him: "Why should I not also become the wife of you who have this beautiful woman as wife? It is just right that a male should become the husband of a female." He answered: "Not so, demon! If I want to marry you, a year must pass. Then I must leave my wives and become a demon like you. While I have my wives, I must not marry you. So do not feel a vain desire. I am a [giŋjv] and you are a demon ([munjv]). If you become my wife, you cannot support my weight in sexual intercourse. Only a goat can mate with a goat, and only a horse can mate with a horse. If a stallion mates with a goat, will the goat be able to support the stallion's weight? A she-demon ([munjv]) cannot support the weight of a [giŋjv]. Do not feel such a desire. Be off quickly!" The she-demon said: "It is enough that by the grace of god you have let me go without killing me," and before he could wink she was off over the hills. Then the fool and ['ka: rni: ɕ] took the gold and silver to his house in seven or eight loads, and when they had finished the sky began to get light before dawn.

The remainder of the story describes how the father of ['ka: rni: ɕ] rejoiced because his daughter had been rescued from the Kurumba and how the fool had many children and became headman of his village. It is obvious from the last paragraph translated that the Kotas receive a peculiar pleasure from the word-play and it is probable that the incident has been added merely to elaborate on the words. The whole story illustrates excellently the Kota habit of narrating story-motifs which are clichés of Indian story-telling as events which happened to Kotas of former times. The informant declares that they are all historical events, and in fact the Kota language has no word for an imaginative story or fable, but only for a narrative of events that really happened. Even the well-known fable of the mongoose that killed the serpent and saved the child but was itself killed in ignorance by the angry parent because of the blood on its mouth is told as an event that happened to people who are still living.

The following Coorg story, on the other hand, an instance of the echo-word motif, is told as an imaginative story and has very little in it that is specifically Coorg in flavor. The most obvious Coorg touches are minor details, e. g. the sash that the man unties from his waist and ties on the tiger's neck, and the plantain-grove near the house, a typical feature of the Coorg country.

---

\* This is a Kota method of swearing an oath.

In a certain city a man and his wife were making their living by tilling a small piece of ground and working hard. To that city came a band of thieves who caused much trouble to the people, by getting into the houses of the wealthy people and stealing gold, silver, money, clothes, and all sorts of property. Being unable to endure the ravages of these thieves all the people went to the king of that country in that city and complained. The king said to his minister and all his officials: "Whoever catches these thieves, to him I will give a great gift," and he sent them off. Then everyone in obedience to the king's order made great efforts to catch the thieves, but by no means could anyone catch them.

Now this man that we mentioned, who was living there with his wife, had no learning. He was not a sensible man nor a man of knowledge; he was a very stupid man. But he was a big man with a very strong body. His wife however was a very sensible woman. The king saw this strong man and his body and became joyful. He sent a servant to him and had him summoned and said to him: "If you catch and hand over to me the thieves who have come to our city, I will give you a great gift; otherwise, I will imprison you." When he heard that, the stupid man feared and said to the king: "So be it!" and returned to his house. He told his wife of the matter, saying: "It appears that we must catch these thieves and hand them over to our king; otherwise, he will imprison us." Then husband and wife felt great sorrow, and stayed in their house, doing nothing, and not eating or drinking.

Then the wife of that stupid man had to defecate and went out to their plantain-grove and aquatted down. At that time the thieves came and were talking among themselves, saying that that night they would go to that stupid man's house to steal. The stupid man's wife overheard them, unseen by the thieves. She returned to the house stealthily without being discovered. Without her husband's knowledge she killed a cobra and taking its poison mixed it into rice-flour, and fried cakes. Then she put them on a plate and placed them so that smell would go well through the house. Shutting the door she and her husband went outside and sat hidden in the plantain-grove. At midnight the thieves came. They broke the lock of the house and having entered and looked around they found in the house no money or gold or silver or anything good. As they were searching they saw in the kitchen on a plate the cakes that she had fried. One thief picked them up and smelt them and they smelt very good. When he perceived that, he called his companions and said: "Even if we go away without getting money, it doesn't matter. Here are some cakes. Even their smell is good and fills the belly. Come along. Let us each eat one." So all of them came and ate the cakes on the plate. In a short time the poison that she had added affected all the thieves and they all died. Soon it dawned. The husband and wife left the plantain-grove and came to the house and when they looked, there were all the thieves dead. When she saw that, the wife said to her husband: "You go and tell our king that you have killed the thieves," and sent him off. So the husband went and told the king. The king was much pleased and gave him a thousand rupees. So for a little time everyone was happy.



After a little time a tiger came to this country. It caught and ate the cattle and calves and then caught the dogs and the pigs and when all these were finished, it began to catch and eat men. After that it caught the king's state-horse. Then the king became very angry and said: "Somehow this tiger must be shot. If we go on without killing it, it will get us one by one and kill us." But for all their efforts the tiger was not caught. After that the king announced to all the inhabitants of the country and the people of that city: "Whoever kills this tiger or catches it and hands it over to me, to him I will give half of my kingdom." All the inhabitants of the country made great efforts day and night to kill the tiger, but for all that the tiger could not be caught by anyone. So that tiger went on causing much trouble.

When it went on like that, the king sent a servant and had that stupid man summoned and said to him: "If you kill this tiger or catch it and hand it over to me, I will give up to you half of my kingdom; otherwise, I will shoot you." That man could not oppose the king's words but said: "So be it!" and went to his house and told his wife of the matter. Then the wife said: "It will be impossible for us to shoot or catch that tiger. So before dawn let us start from here and without the king's knowledge let us go to another country." So in the evening they ate their meal and lay down. Just before dawn the wife called her husband and said: "Before I prepare food, you go and look among the king's horses for the biggest and bring it here. By that time I will have prepared rice and curry. Then after eating our meal we will mount the horse and go." So her husband went to the king's stable to bring a horse.

As he went he was in fear of the tiger and went along, feeling his way in the darkness and saying: "Is there any tiger anywhere?" (Here the echo-word [*nori gurī*] is used.) That night the tiger had gone to the king's stable to seize a horse. At that time this man came talking like this. In the darkness he could not see the horses but put his arms round the necks of all the horses and looked for the biggest. As he went along, the necks of the horses seemed small. In the darkness the tiger was sitting in a corner. He came not knowing that it was a tiger and put his arms around its neck also. He thought: "This is the biggest horse," and untied the saah on his waist and tied it around the tiger's neck. At that moment the tiger was thinking: "This man says: 'Is there any tiger (*[nori gurī]*) here?' When he says 'tiger' that is myself. But when he says '*[gurī]*,' what is bigger than I?" and it was afraid and did nothing. This man thought that the tiger was a horse and came with it and tied it up in the fuel-shed in front of the house. After that he went into the house and by the time he and his wife had eaten their meal dawn came.

Then his wife came outside and looked. When she saw the tiger tied up in the fuel-shed, she called her husband and asked who had tied the tiger there. Her husband came running out quickly and looked. When he saw the tiger, he became terrified and fell down in a faint. His wife brought a little cold water and rubbed it on his head and face and made him get up. In a few moments he regained his senses and she said to him: "In this



affair god has protected us. Go quickly and tell our king about it," and she sent him off. So he went quickly to the king's palace and told the king about the matter. Then the king came and saw the tiger and felt great joy. He gave him half of his kingdom and plenty of money and from that day he honored him and everyone lived happily, it appears.

The Toda story, like all Toda stories, displays the sketchiness and almost taciturnity of the Toda story-telling technique. This is in remarkable contrast with the manner in which stories are told by other South Indian communities. There we find abundance of circumstantial detail, retelling of long conversations, reporting by the characters in full detail of events that have happened to them although the events have already been described in the narrative, and other typically verbose characteristics of unlettered literature. The contrast is so remarkable that some explanation seems called for, and I have hinted at an explanation in "The Songs of the Todas" (*Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society* 77, 543-560), pp. 543-4. The art of extempore lyric song has been developed in the Toda culture to an extraordinary degree. It is exercised on all possible occasions by all the members of the tribe. Furthermore, when many Todas are gathered together and sit unoccupied, their long silences are broken (if not by singing) by the ridiculing of one of their number. This (called [kyuɕɕuɕ]) usually is a good-natured recalling of some amusing incident; e. g. on one occasion when I was present, a young man was jested with because he had become drunk at a funeral and reeled about, quarrelling, as he thought, with the man whose funeral ceremony was going on. Some of the more ready-witted Todas carry the sport to a great length, inventing ridiculous detail around a small nucleus of fact and building up a towering edifice of chaff. This may be reverted to again and again at successive meetings of the same individuals, and occasionally nicknames arise as a result. These two interests, songs and ridicule, seem between them to fill up the Toda field of spare-time verbal activity, and story-telling is neglected so that the expected technique is absent. In comparison with Kota or Coorg stories, the Toda ones, whether told to children or meant for adult audiences, are crude and amateurish efforts. What I have written here is of course merely descriptive of the Toda situation; to explain the neglect of story-telling as an art is an impossible task, of the order of the proverbial "proving a negative." The Toda story, as it would be told to a child, is as follows.

A certain Toda ewe evening had finished milking all the buffaloes and put the calves in the calf-shed. When he had put them there and had shut up the shed, he said: "My friend! (This appears to be his companion, but no explanation was given.) May no tiger carry off a calf!" (Here the echo-word [pyɔ̃ xɔ̃j] is used.) And he came to the houses. A certain tiger was behind the calf-shed and heard what this man said. That tiger thought: "When I am the tiger ([pyɔ̃j]), what is that other thing, the [kɔ̃j]?" and it entered the calf-shed to seize a calf. Then on the back of one of those calves a rat was sitting. The rat at once leaped onto the tiger's back. The tiger thought: "Oh! it is this that he calls the [kɔ̃j]. It may do me some harm," and it became afraid and at once, without seizing a calf, it ran away in its fright, they say. The tiger was frightened like this by a rat. Understand well, child!

The Toda word for "rat" is [ɔ̃j], and it is highly probable that a further verbal play is intended between [kɔ̃j] and [ɔ̃j]. It is perhaps this word-play that gives the story its aberrant form as compared with the three preceding versions.

The Tamil, Kota, and Coorg stories show two distinct story-types built up on the echo-word motif. In one a tiger is the stupid creature that fails to understand. It is found in the darkness of a room by a man who, like the tiger, is looking for a domestic animal with intent to carry it off, and, thinking him to be the unknown creature of the second part of the echo-word, it lets itself be led out from the building as if it were the domestic animal, and is taken to another place by the man, who does not realize what he has found. In the Kota version it allows itself to be ridden like a horse and the period of misunderstanding is brought to an end by the man at dawn recognizing that he is riding a tiger. He finds himself in the impossible position where "who rides on a tiger can never dismount," but by his cunning he disables the animal which is then killed. The Coorg does not say specifically that the man rode the tiger like a horse, but it is probable that he did so, since he was under the impression that it was a horse that he had found. The end is given a different twist from that of the Kota version. The tiger is tied up in a shed and the discovery is made by the man's wife in the morning. After a comic episode of the man's fainting from the shock of the discovery, the tiger is presumably killed.

In the other story-type built up on the same motif it is a demon that fails to understand. As in the first type, the demon and the man are both out to steal a domestic animal in the same place, and the man in the darkness stumbles upon the demon, which takes

him for the unknown fearsome creature. The two versions that display this type, the Tamil and the Kota, differ widely in detail, but there is an essential unity in that in both the deception is carried out knowingly by the men after they have discovered that the demons are deluded. To the end the demons do not discover that there is a deception and the stories end with the men delivered from the attentions of the demons. Comparison of the details of the two versions will serve no useful purpose at present; if other versions of the type are found, it may be that points of resemblance in detail to either the Tamil or the Kota version may appear.

The first and second types are closely related to one another. In both, the misunderstanding creature is found by the man when he is searching in the dark for a domestic animal. The Tamil version of the second type is very close to both versions of the first type, in that the demon has taken on the form of a domestic animal and is carried off by the man, and especially close to the Kota version in that the domestic animal is a goat. The Kota version of the second type is slightly more divergent from the first type, since the demon has kept its own form and its real nature is at once apparent to the man.

Of the three stories, Tamil, Kota, and Coorg, the Coorg is an example of the first story-type, that in which the tiger fails to understand the echo-word, the Tamil is an example of the second type, that in which a demon is the deluded creature, and the Kota version gives the two types in succession. Without more versions it is impossible to plot the occurrence of the two types geographically, but we may guess that the Kotas have acquired the two types from different sources and combined them because of their resemblance into one story, which is then in their usual fashion attributed to a Kota of former times. We may only hope that other versions of the type will be collected elsewhere in the Dravidian speech-area and throw light on the distribution.

There remains the Toda version, which is markedly aberrant as compared with the other three. It is clearly connected with the first type, since it is a tiger that is deluded by the words of a man and it is the darkness of a shed that contributes to the delusion. But otherwise there is no resemblance. The imaginary creature feared by the tiger is not impersonated by a man but by a rat; it has been suggested above that this is due to a desire to make a further word-

play between [kɪsɪ], the meaningless word extracted from the echo-word compound, and [ɪsɪ] "rat." Other details are quite lacking in the very sketchy story. Again it is permissible to hope that a closer parallel will be found elsewhere in South India.

This paper, while it presents four stories and analyzes out two main types of development and an unsatisfactory third (which may be *sui generis*), is in effect a plea for the collection in the Dravidian-speaking area of other versions of the same motif, by means of which the types can be established on a firm basis and the distribution mapped out with a view to the reconstruction of the historical spread of the motif in its several types.<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>4</sup> Variants of some of the motifs, stories, and echo-words appearing in this paper are mentioned in a paper by W. Norman Brown in *AJP* 42 (1921), pp. 137, 145-147. My paper was written in India where access to Prof. Brown's paper was impossible. On referring to it since my return to the United States of America I find that the Sinhalese tale analyzed by Prof. Brown (*loc. cit.* 147) is of my first type, a leopard being substituted for the tiger, which is not found in Ceylon. The denouement of the Sinhalese story is different from that of my stories and apparently based on the introduction of another motif. Brown's linguistic analysis of the echo-word in the Sinhalese version seems over-subtle and in the light of the stories that I have presented will not prove close connexion of the Sinhalese version with Natesa Sastri's Tamil version, which belongs to my second type. The Sinhalese echo-word is of a formation common in that language (oral information from Mr. S. Paranavitana of the Ceylon Dept. of Archaeology) and probably to be connected historically with the Gujarati type of which I have given one example at the beginning of this paper.

Brown's paper serves to place my collection of stories in the much broader perspective of the folk-tales of India. It does not however lessen the need for the collection of further examples of the echo-word motif in the Dravidian-speaking areas of India.

THE KASHMIRIAN ATHARVA VEDA, BOOK EIGHTEEN  
EDITED WITH CRITICAL NOTES

LEROY CARR BARRETT

TRINITY COLLEGE, HARTFORD, CONNECTICUT

*Introduction*

The eighteenth book of the Pāippalāda here presented is of moderate length: in arrangement of contents it differs somewhat from the other books and the implications of this difference are not wholly clear.

*Of the ms.*—This eighteenth book in the Kashmir ms begins f227b18 and ends f239b9, almost twelve folios. Most of the pages have 20 or 21 lines of script, a few have only 19. The birch-bark is in good condition throughout the book except for a break at the top of f236. There are, as heretofore, some marginal corrections.

*Punctuations, etc.*—The regular, almost unvaried, habit of the ms in this book is to use the colon (single bar) or virāma to indicate a pause, except at the end of hymns and to set off colophons: to set off colophons and numerals the period ("x") is used. After each hymn in this book, excepting three, a numeral is placed to indicate its order in the anuvāka: in two places the numerals are not correct, one of which, after hymn 7, seems surely to be a simple mistake, the other, after hymn 28, is a "6" instead of a "2"; in this latter case it is probable that a stanza numeral has taken the place of the kāṇḍa numeral. Stanzas are not numbered.

The book is divided into six anuvākas of unequal length: at the end of each of the first five anuvākas is the proper colophon, at the end of the last one stands only the general colophon marking the end of the book.

Accents are marked on several entire hymns and on a considerable number of stanzas in other hymns: accents are marked on 1. 1—3. 8 and 21. 1—23. 4, also on some stanzas in hymns 5, 7, 8, 12, 16, and 24.

*Extent of the book.*—This book as edited has 32 hymns divided into six anuvākas: again in this book the decad division of long hymns is made important and the arrangement of stanzas agrees

rather closely as between the Śāunikiya text and that of the Pāippalāda. Hymn 27 is prose. As in previous books a table is given here to present succinctly some statistics. Only nine stanzas are new.

1 hymn has	3 stanzas	—	3
2 hymns have	4 stanzas each	—	8
1 hymn has	6 "	—	6
1 " "	7 "	—	7
1 " "	8 "	—	8
3 hymns have	9 stanzas each	—	27
19 " "	10 " "	—	190
2 " "	11 " "	—	22
1 hymn has	12 "	—	12
1 " "	14 "	—	14
<hr/>			
32			297

*Contents of the book.*—All of § Book 14 is here except a few stanzas; about half of § Book 13; § Book 15. 1 and 15. 2. 1; some stanzas from the beginning and from the end of Book 16; Book 17, but with omission of six stanzas; and as the last stanza of the book here stands § 18. 4. 89 which is the last stanza in § Book 18. In WT p. 1014ff Lanman gives a conspectus of the contents of Pāipp Book 18 and a discussion of the significance of the arrangement. He interprets the inclusion of parts, but not all, of § Books 15 and 16 as an acknowledgment by Pāipp that all the material of those books is regarded as belonging to its own text, and he interprets the inclusion of § 18. 4. 89 as an acknowledgment that all of § Book 18 is regarded as part of the Pāipp text. The manner in which the Kashmirian manuscript presents the material here may be vaguely comparable to quotation by *pratīka*: but the method is not used in any previous book nor in Book 19; nor, I suspect, in Book 20; and quoting the last stanza of a book is not a common mode of indicating the use of the entire book. It must however be remembered that Books 12—18 of § are of different character from the rest of that collection. With some reservations I can think that the Kashmir manuscript means to intimate that it accepts more of § Books 15 and 16 than the parts actually written down.

The question concerning the funeral stanzas (§ Book 18) is somewhat different: the last stanza of § Book 18 has little or no

connection with the funeral stanzas but there it stands with them, whereas in Pāipp it stands as the last stanza of the anuvāka which is Book 17 in Ś. To some scholars it may seem more fittingly joined to the hymn to the sun (Indra as sun) than associated with the funeral stanzas. It occurs as the first stanza of RV 1. 105, a hymn which some ancient and modern commentators have thought alludes to an adventure of Trita in a well: the associations of Trita with Indra and the sun are fairly clear and perhaps sufficient to justify the position of the stanza with the material which is Book 17 of Ś. But there is still the question as to why the funeral stanzas are not in the Pāippalāda.

# ATHARVA VEDA PĀIPPALĀDĀ ŚĀKHĀ BOOK EIGHTEEN

## 1

(Ś 14. 1)

[f227b18] athāstādaśam likhyate ॥ [19] oṃ namo gaṇeśāya |  
oṃ namo jvalābhagavatyai | oṃ namas tilottamāyai ॥ [20] oṃ  
satyenottabhita bhūmis sūryenottabhita dyāuḥ ptenādityas tiṣṭha-  
[f228a]nti divi soma adhiśritaḥ somenādityā balinas somena pṛthivi  
maḥi [2] atho nakṣattrāṇām eṣām upasthe soma āhita | somam  
manyate pāpīd- [3] n yaḥ saṃpīṣanty aśadhīm. | somam yaṃ vrah-  
maṇo vidur na tasyānāpīdārlhivā [4] aśhadvidhānāir gupito  
bārhatās soma rakṣitaḥ grāvām iśchṛṇvaṃ tiṣṭhasi [5] a te naś-  
nāti pāṛthivaḥ cittir vā vopabarhaṇā cākṣur ā vadaty añjanam |  
dyāu- [6] r bhūmis koṣa āsit yad ayāt sūryā palim. | rāibhy āsit  
anudeṣṭi nārāśā- [7] si nyocani | sūryāyā dhadranim id vāso gātha-  
yeṣu pariṣṭaḥ | [8] stomā āsan paridhayaḥ kucīram iśchanda  
upaiṣaḥ sūryāyā aśvinā varā a- [9] gaur āsit puragavaḥ samo  
radhūyir ābhavad aśvinā sām ubhā varā | sūryām yat pa- [10] tye  
jānsantīm manasā savitādadhat | manas aśvā ana āit dyāuḥ āsit uta  
iścha- [11] dāḥ śubrav anagvādhāv aśtām yad ayāt sūryā palim. |  
ṛksāmābhyām upahi- [12] tāu gāvāu te sāmānu dītām. śrotram ti  
cakre āsthām divi pañcā carācaraḥ [13] ॥ 1 ॥

In the right margin of f228a opposite line 10 is dhat.; the ms marks the accents in this hymn and in the next two.

For the invocation read: athāstādaśam likhyate ॥ १ ॥ oṃ namo gaṇeśāya ॥ oṃ namo jvalābhagavatyai ॥ oṃ namas tilottamāyai ॥ १ ॥



Read: satyenottabbhitā bhūmis sūryenottabbhitā dyāuḥ | ptenādityās tiṣṭhantī divi somo adhi éritāḥ z 1 z somenādityā balinas somena pṛthivī muhi | atho nakṣatrāṇām eṣām upasthe soma āhitaḥ z 2 z somam manyate papivān yat saṁpiṇśanty ośadhīm | somam yam vrahmāṇo vidur na tasyāśnāti pāṛthivaḥ z 3 z āchadvidhānair gupito bārhatais soma rakṣitaḥ | grāvāṁ te cāpvan tiṣṭhasi ʔa te nāśnāti pāṛthivaḥ z 4 z cittir vāvopabarhaṇam cakṣur vāvābhyañjanam | dyāur bhūmiḥ kośa āśīd yad ayāt sūryā patim z 5 z rāibhy āśīd anudeyī nārāśaṁsi nyocanī | sūryāyā bhadrām id vāso gāthayāitu pariṣkṛtam z 6 z stomā āsan paridhayaḥ kurīraṁ chanda opaśaḥ | sūryāyā āśvinā varāgnir āśīt purogavaḥ z 7 z somo vadhūyur abhavad āśvināstām ubhā varā | sūryām yat paitye śaṁsantiṁ manasā savitādadāt z 8 z mano aśyā ana āśīd dyāur āśīd uta chadiḥ | śukrāv anadivāhāv āstām yad ayāt sūryā patim z 9 z ṛksāmābhyām upahitāu gāvāu te sāmanāv āitām | érotam te cakre āstām divi panthās carācarāḥ z 10 z 1 z

The first two anuvākas here [14 hymns] agree fairly closely in general with the wedding stanzas as given in Ś Book 14; the same number of stanzas appear in each version, but Ppp omits four which Ś gives and gives four which are new.

St 4. In pāda d Ś and RV have na te sá\* and we might well read so here, assuming an error such as appears in the ms at the end of st 3.

St 6. In pāda d the correction follows RV.

## 2

## (Ś 14.1)

[f228a13] *śuci te cakre gāyā vyāno aha dhataḥ ano manasamayam sū-*[14]*ryārohat pruyati patim. sūryāyā vahatus pragāt savitā gam avasrajat. |* [15] *aghāsu haṅgante gāvaḥ pālguṁṣu vi haṅgate | yad āśvinā pṛichamednāv a-*[16]*gītām trīcakreṇa vahatūm sūryāyāḥ tvāṁ cakram vām āśī keva deṣṭrāya tassva-*[17]*ituh yad ayātām śubhas pati vadṣyam sūryām upa | vīśve devā anu tad vām a-*[18]*śānam putras pitarāḥ avṛṣṭa pāṣā | dve te cakre sūrye vrahmaṇa ṛtuṣā vi-*[19]*duḥ athāikam cakram yad gūhā tad ardhatayaḥ id viduḥ pra tad muñcāmī varu-*[20]*nasya pāśācyena tvāda-dhāt savitā sudenāḥ urum lokam sugam itra panthām* [f228b] *kṛṇomi tvāhyam sahapatnī vadhūḥ arimnam yajāmahe sugandhim*

pativedanam. urvā-[2]rukam iva bandhanād yato muñca māmutaḥ  
 preto muñcata māmutas subaddhām a-[3]mūtas karat. | yatheyam  
 indra mīdhvas suputrā subhagāsati | bhagas tveto na-[4]yatu  
 gr̥dyaśvina tvā pra vahatām ratheṇa gr̥hān gaścha gr̥hapatni yathāso  
 [5] vaśini tvam vidatham ā vadāsi | iha priyam prajāyā te samr̥d-  
 dhyatā-[6]m asmin gr̥he gr̥hapatyāya jāgrvi | enā patyā tanvām  
 sam apr̥sasvāthā athā [7] cīrvi vidatham ā vadāsi z 2 z

In the right-hand margin, opposite line 15 is pā°, and opposite line 16 is kvāikam.

Read: śuci te cakre yātyā vyāno akṣa śhataḥ | ano manasamayaṁ  
 sūryārohat prayati patim z 1 z sūryāyā vahatuḥ prāgāt savitā yam  
 avāsrjat | aghāsu hanyante gāvaḥ phalguniṣu vy uhyate z 2 z yad  
 sēvinā p̥rochamānāv ayātām tricakreṇa vahatuḥ sūryāyāḥ | kvāikam  
 cakram vām āsīt kva deśtrāya tasthathuḥ z 3 z yad ayātām śubhas  
 patī vareyaṁ sūryām upa | viśve devā anu tad vām ajānan putraḥ  
 pitarāv avr̥jita pūṣā z 4 z dve te cakre sūrye vrahmāṇa ṛtutā  
 viduḥ | athāikam cakram yad guhā tad addhātaya id viduḥ z 5 z  
 pra tvā muñcāmi tarupasya pāśād yena tvābadhnāt savitā suśevāḥ |  
 uruṁ lokam sugam atra pauthām kṛpomi tubhyaṁ sahapatnyāi  
 vadhu z 6 z aryamaṇam yajāmahe sugandhim pativedanam | urvā-  
 rukam iva bandhanād ito muñcāmi māmutaḥ z 7 z preto muñcati  
 māmutas subaddhām amūtas karat | yatheyam indra mīdhvas  
 suputrā subhagāsati z 8 z bhagas tveto nayatu <hasta>gr̥hyāśvina  
 tvā pra vahatām ratheṇa | gr̥hān gaścha gr̥hapatni yathāso vaśini  
 tvam vidatham ā vadāsi z 9 z iha priyam prajāyā te sam r̥dhyatām  
 asmin gr̥he gr̥hapatyāya jāgrvi | enā patyā tanvām sam apr̥sasvāthā  
 jirvir vidatham ā vadāsi z 10 z 2 z

St. 2. In pāda b aghāsu agrees with RV; Ś has maghāsu. In d the ms reading hanyate may have arisen under some sort of influence from the late caus. pass. vāhyate.

St. 6. This is Ś 14. 1. 58; pādas ab — Ś 19 ab.

St. 7. For pāda d cf. especially VS 3. 60.

St. 10. In pāda b other texts have jāgrhi; but Ppp reading is possible.

## 3

## (Ś 14. 1)

[f228b7] iśāva itam mā vi yāusām dīrgha-[8]m āyur vy ākṣu-  
 tam. | kṛtāntāu putrān naptirbhīr modanāu sve gr̥he | pūrvāparam

[9] ā carato māyayāitāu kīṣu kṛīṇtāu pari jāto adhvaram, viśvany anyo bhū-[10]vanā vicasta ṛtūr anyo vidadhaj jāyate punaḥ navo navo bhavati jāyamāno [11] hūm ketur uṣasām ety agram. | bhāgam devebhyo vi dadhāty āyan pra candramās tñi-[12]rate dīrgham āyuh parā dehi sāmulyam vrahmabhyo vi bhajā vasu | kṛtyāiṣā pa-[13]dvati bhūtvā jāyā viśate patim. nīlalohitam bhavati kṛtyāśakti-[14]r vy ajyate | edhante asyājñātayaḥ patir bandheṣu baddhyate | āśrīrā tanūr bhava-[15]ti ruśati pāpayāmuyā | patir yā śīcha vadhuo vāsasaḥ svam aṅgam abhy u-[16]vute | āśasanam vyāśasanam atho adhivikartanam. | sūryāyāḥ paśya [17] rūpāṇi tāni vrahmota śumbhati | tṛṣṭam etat kaṣukam etad apūṣhavad vi-[18]ṣavan nāitad attave | sūryām yo vrahmā veda sa id vadhūyam arhati | sa vāi ta syono [19] harati vrahma vīsas suman-galāu | prāyāścittam yo dhyeti yena jāyā na ri-[229a]ṣyati | yuvam bhagam sambharantes samaddham ṛtam vadantām ṛtyodyena | vrahmanas pate pati-[2]m asyāi rocayāmum cāru śumbhalo vadatu vācam etām. z 8 z

Read: ihāiva staṁ mā vi yāuṣṭam dīrgham āyor vy ānutam | kṛīṇtāu putrāir naptṛbhīr modamānāu sve grhe x 1 x pūrvāparam carato māyayāitāu kīṣu kṛīṇtāu pari yāto adhvaram | viśvāny anyo bhuvanā vicasta ṛtūr anyo vidadhaj jāyate punaḥ x 2 x navo-navo bhavati jāyamāno 'hūm ketur uṣasām ety agram | bhāgam devebhyo vi dadhāty āyan pra candramās tirate dīrgham āyuh x 3 x parā dehi sāmulyam vrahmabhyo vi bhajā vasu | kṛtyāiṣā padvati bhūtvā jāyā viśate patim x 4 x nīlalohitam bhavati kṛtyāśaktir vy ajyate | edhante asyā jñātayaḥ patir bandheṣu baddhyate x 5 x āśrīrā tanūr bhavati ruśati pāpayāmuyā | patir yad vadhuo vāsasaḥ svam aṅgam abhyūrpute x 6 x āśasanam viśasanam atho adhivikartanam | sūryāyāḥ paśya rūpāṇi tāni vrahmota śumbhati x 7 x tṛṣṭam etat kaṣukam etad apūṣhavad viṣavan nāitad attave | sūryām yo vrahmā veda sa id vadhūyam arhati x 8 x sa vāi tat syono harati vrahmā vīsas suman-galāu | prāyāścittam yo 'dhyeti yena jāyā na riṣyate x 9 x yuvam bhagam sam bharaṭhas samṛddham ṛtam vadantām ṛtyodyena | vrahmanas pate patim asyāi rocayāmum cāru sambhalo vadatu vācam etām x 10 x 3 z

St 1. In pāda b here and below in 13.3d dīrgham replaces viśvam or sarvam of other texts except PG. In d RV has sve grhe as here.

St 2. In pāda b only Ś has arṇavam; and in c only Ś has

viśvānyo, and vicaṣṭe appears only in MS and the two AV texts. In d Ś has jāyase navah, others as here. Further details in WT.

St. 3. Only Ś has the verbs in the second person.

St. 9. Pāda b is given here as in Ś; perhaps the reading of the ms could stand. In c Ś has °cittim.

St 10. In pāda c amum is otiose but need not be omitted.

## 4

(Ś 14. 1)

[f229a2] *eked a-[3]sāgha na paro gamāthe imam gāvaṣ prajāyā vardhayātha | śubham yatīdur-[4]yās somavarcaso viśve devās kīan iha tyāṁ manāsi | imam gāvaṣ prajāyā [5] sām viśadhvam imam devānām i manāti bhāgam. | asmāi vo pūṣā marutaś ca [6] sarve asmāi vo dātā savitā suvāti | anṛkṣarā rjavas santu nīdhāyeno ye-[7]bhīś sakṛāyo yanti no vareyam. sambhāgena sam aryamā sām dhātā srjatu vo-[8]rcasā naḥ yan mānagnā jaghnam aśvinā yena vā surā | yenākṣābbhyaśicyanta te-[2]namāni varcasāvatam. yada varco keṣu surdyām ca yaś āhitam. yada goṣv aśvi-[10]nā varcas tenemām varcasāvatam. | yo nidhmo didāgāpsv antār yaṁ viprāsa ita-[11]te adhvareshu | apān napīn madhumatir apo dā yābhīr indro vderdhe virydvām. [12] yadam aham ruśantam grābhām tanūrdūṣim athi nudāmi | yaś śivo bhādre rocanas te-[13]na tyām apī nudāmi | ā śrī harantu strapanam vrahmaṇātiragṇānir utajanti ā-[14]paḥ aryamno gñim pary eti kṣipram pradikṣante śvaśurā divarāś ca | śān te hiraṇyam [15] sām u santu āpaś śān te metir bhavati sām yuktaś ca tarutamaḥ śān tāpaś śatapavi-[16]trā bhavantu sām paṭyā tanvam sām sprīṣuva gathā nīndhun nadīnām śrāmṛājyam sv-[17]ṣuve ṣṛkāt. yānā tam suśrājīdhi paśyad aśvam paretya z 4 z*

At the end of line 13 "m." is out in the margin; three lines below, in the same margin, is śān te and below that is śān ta me.

Read: *ihed asātha na paro gamāthemam gāvaṣ prajāyā vardhayātha | śubham yatīr usriyās somavarcaso viśve devās krann iha tyāṁ manāsi z 1 z imam gāvaṣ prajāyā sām viśadhvam imam devānām na mināti bhāgam | asmāi vaḥ pūṣā marutaś ca sarve asmāi vo dātā savitā suvāti z 2 z anṛkṣarā rjavas santu panthāno yebhīś sakṛāyo yanti no vareyam | sām bhāgena sam aryamā sām dhātā srjatu varcasā naḥ z 3 z yan māhānagnā jaghanam aśvinā yena vā surā | yenākṣābbhyaśicyanta tenemām varcasāvatam z 4 z*

yac ca varas 'kṣeṣu surāyām ca yad āhitam | yad goṣṭr āśvinā varcas  
tenemān varcasāvatam z 5 z yo 'nūdhmo didāyāpsev antar yañ  
viprāsa itāte adhvaṛeṣu | apām napān madhumatīr apo dā yābhīr  
indro rāvrddhe vīryāvān z 6 z idam ahañ ruśantañ grābhañ tanū-  
dūṣim apa nudāmi | yas sico bhadro rocanas tena tyam apa nudāmi  
z 7 z āsyāi harantu snapanam vrāhmaṇā avīraghoīr ud acantv āpah |  
aryamno 'gnīr pary eti kṣipram pratikṣante śvaśurā devaras ca  
z 8 z śam te hiranyam śam u santv āpaś śam te methir bhayati  
śam yugasya tardma | śam ta āpaś śatapavitṛā bhavantu śam patyā  
tanvam sam sprāsava z 9 z yathā sindhur nadīnām samrājyam  
suṣuve vrā | evā tvam samrājyā edhi tpaśyad astam paretya  
z 10 z 4 z

St. 2. In pāda ab Ś has viśāthāyam; imam here disturbs the symmetry of meaning. Ś has dhātā in d.

St. 3. In pāda a RV and ApMB have the better panthā; the syllables ena in the ms might be a sort of dittography.

St. 5. In pāda a both Ś and RV 10, 30, 4 have dīdayad.

St. 8. In pāda b Lindenau's revision of Ś has acantu: in c kṣipram is read also in ApMB 1. 1. 8.

St. 10. In pāda d Ś has patyur which is probably intended here.

## 5

## (Ś 14. 1)

[f229a17] samīrāñ e-[18]dhi śvaśureṣu samrājñataś śvaśruvām.  
janāntu samrājñedhi samīrāgy uda tevr-[19]śā | yākrantañ navañ  
gaś ca tatnīre yā devīr antāñ abhīto dadantaś tāś tvā ja-[20]rasa  
sam vyayanty dyuṣmatīdam pari dhatsva vāsaś jīvo rudantī vi  
nayanaty adhva-[21]rañ dīrghām anu prasiśīm diddhiyūn naraś  
vāmam pītṛbhyo ya idam samerire [229b] mayas patibhyo janayas  
parisvaje | āhrutam syonam prajāya te dhārayām asmā-[2]na  
devyāś patibhyām upasthe | tam ā rokṣnumādyaś suvirā dīrgham  
tvāyu-[3]s savitā kṛnotu | devas te savitā hastam grhṇātu somo  
rājā supraja-[4]sañ kṛnotu | agnis subhagām jālaveḍāś patyāś  
patnīm jaradaśīm kṛ-[5]notu | grhṇāmi te subhagatvāya hastam  
mayā patyā jaradaśīr yathā-[6]saś bhago aryamā savitā purandhīr  
mahyan teḍdur gṛha-[7]patyāya devāś yendāgnīr amyaś bhūmyā  
hastam jagṛha rakṣayam, | tena [8] grhṇāmi te hastam mā vya-  
dhiyā mayā saha | dhātā te hastam agrañ savi-[9]tā te hastam

agrahit. bhagas te hastam agraḥīd aryamā te hastam agraḥīl.  
 [10] patnī tvem asi dharmapāham grhapatis tava | somey astu  
 poṣyā mahyam tvā-[11]dād vṛhaspatih mayā patyā prajāvatī samā  
 jīra śaradaś śatam. [12] tvaṣṭā vāso vy adadhāc chubhāi kam  
 vṛhaspateḥ praśiṣā kavīnām. te-[13]nemām nāryam savitā bhagā  
 ca sūryām iva pari dhattām prajāyāi z 5 z

Read: samrājñy edhi śvaśureṣu samrājñy uta śvaśruvām |  
 nanānduḥ samrājñy edhi samrājñy uta devreṣu z 1 z yā akṛtann  
 avayan yāś ca tatnīre yā devīr antān abhito 'dadanta | tās tvā jarase  
 saṁ vasyanty āyusmatīdān pari dhatsva vāsaḥ z 2 z jīvaṁ rudanti  
 vi nayanty adhvarān dīrghām anu prasitīm dīdhiyur naraḥ |  
 vāmān pitṛbhyo ya idam samerire mayāś patibhyo janayaś pariṣvaje  
 z 3 z dhruvaṁ syonam prajāyāi te dhārayāmy sāmānam devyāś  
 pṛthivyām upasthe | tam ā rohānumādyā savitrā dīrghām ta āyus  
 savitā kṛnotu z 4 z devas te savitā hastam grhṇātu somo rājā  
 suprajasaṁ kṛnotu | agnis subhagām jātavedāś patyā patnīm jara-  
 daṣṭīm kṛnotu z 5 z grhṇāmi te sūbhagatvāya hastam mayā patyā  
 jaradaṣṭir yathāsaḥ | bhago aryamā savitā puramdhir mahyam  
 tvādur gārhapatyāya devāḥ z 6 z yenāgnir ayaḥ bhūmyā hastam  
 jagrāha dakṣiṇam | tena grhṇāmi te hastam mā vyathīṣṭhā mayā  
 saha z 7 z dhātā te hastam agraḥīt savitā te hastam agraḥīt |  
 bhagas te hastam agraḥīd aryamā te hastam agraḥīt | patnī tvem  
 asi dharmapāham grhapatis tava z 8 z mameyam astu poṣyā mahyam  
 tvādād vṛhaspatih | mayā patyā prajāvatī sam jīva śaradaś śatam  
 z 9 z tvaṣṭā vāso vy adadhāc chubhe kam vṛhaspateḥ praśiṣā kavīnām  
 | tenemām nārīm savitā bhagā ca sūryām iva pari dhattām prajāyāi  
 z 10 z 5 z

St 1. This is very like the Ś version but a much varied text is given in RV 10. 85. 46, ApMB 1. 6. 6, and SMB 1. 2. 20.

St 2. In pāda c Ś has vyayantv: for readings of other texts see WT, with remarks there.

St 3. Here our text agrees with RV 10. 40. 10 in dīdhiyur, samerire and janayaś.

St 4. In pāda b Ś has pṛthivyā upa°; see Vedic Variants, vol. 3, p. 328.

St 5. In pāda d Ś has patya.

St 7. In Ś (at 48) there is a fifth pāda prajeyā ca dhanena ca.

St 8. HG 1. 6. 9 has 12 pādas similar to the first four here, Ś has only two.

St 9. In pāda c prajāvati is read also by RVKh 10.85 and PG 1.18.19.

St 10. In pāda d Ś has prajāyā.

## 8

(Ś 14.1)

[f229b14] *dhrubhrstā prapuvantu varcasā bhagena jyotiṣmatīdam*  
*prati muñca prasū va-*[15]*puḥ uśāya vā sūryasya sandrśe indrāgni*  
*dyāvāprthivī yā pūṣā* [16] *mitrāvaruṇā bhagāu aśvinobhāḥ vṛhas-*  
*patir maruto vrahma somam i-*[17]*mān nāryam prajāyā vordha-*  
*yantu | vṛhaspatir sa prathamā sūryāyā ā-*[18]*rye keśān akalpayat.*  
*| tenemām aśvinā nāryam patyāśśe soryalā-*[19]*masi | imam tad*  
*rūpam yad avama yajā jādām jajñāse manasā cara-*[20]*nti | stām*  
*annantiyē sagabhi navigādīs ka imam vidvān vi cacanta* [21] *pākam.*  
*| aharā vi śyāmi mayi rūpam aśyā vedud akapaśyām mana-*[f230a]  
*siā kulāyam. ana steyam agnīm manasod amucye svayam sraṣṭhāno*  
*varunasya pāśam* [2] *imām vi śyāmi varunasya pāśam tena tvāba-*  
*dhnāt savitā sumenā | rīasya* [3] *gonāu sukrīasya loka syonam te*  
*stu sahapatni vadhā | udyatayadhvam apa rakṣam ha-*[4]*pāthe*  
*imām nāryam sukrte tadāpāḥ | dhātā vipaśyat patim aye viveda*  
*[5] bhago rājā pura stu prajān. bhagas lalaksā caturāḥ pado bhagas*  
*lalaksā catā-*[6]*ry āpadāni | tvāṣṭā pibea madhyato varadhrām*  
*ā no stu sumanḡalī | yenā-*[7]*jyena haviṣa prajāyāi ca vareṇyam. |*  
*paśubhyaś cakṣuse ca kaṁ sam agnyam sam i-*[8]*dhīmahi | śukim-*  
*śukam vahatum viśvarūpam hiraṇyacarnam svrīam sucakram. |*  
*[9] ā roha sūrye sukrīasya lokam syonam patibhṛyo vahatum kṛṇu*  
*tvam. | māmrisiśhām* [10] *kumāryām sthūpe devakṣate pathi śālāyā*  
*devyā dādram syonam kṛṇvo vadhā-*[11]*patham. | vrahmāparam*  
*yujyantiām vrahma pūrvam vrahmāntato madhyato vrahma sarvatāḥ*  
*[12] anāsyādhām devapurām prapadya śivā syonāḥ patiloke vi rāja*  
*z z* [13] *z 7 z ity aśvādāśakāṇḍe prathamā nuvākaḥ z z*

In the top margin of f230b is *mraṣṭhā*; at the end of line 1, in the margin, is *m.* (indicating end of a pāda); and in the right margin opposite line 12 is *vacāḥ*, seeming to correct the end of the line.

Read: *druhas tvā prapuvantu varcasā bhagena jyotiṣmatīdam | prati muñca prasū +vapuh uśāyā vā sūryasya sandrśe z 1 z indrāgni dyāvāprthivī pūṣā mitrāvaruṇā bhago aśvinobhā | vṛhaspatir maruto*



vrahma soma imām nārīm prajāyā vardhayantu z 2 z vṛhaspatis sa  
 prathamā sūryāyāś śirṣe kośān akalpayat | tenemām āsvinā nārīm  
 patyā śśe śobhayāmasi z 3 z idam tad rūpam yad avasta yogā jāyām  
 jījñāse manasā carantīm | tām anv arisye sakhibhīr navagvāis ka  
 imām vidvān vi cecarta pāsān z 4 z aham vi ayāmi mayi rūpam asyā  
 vedad avapasyan manasi kulāyam | na steyam admi manasod amucye  
 svayam śrathbāno varuṇasya pāsām z 5 z imam vi ayāmi varuṇasya  
 pāsām tena tvābadhāt savitā suśevah | ṛtasya yonau suktasya  
 loke syonam te 'stu sahapatni vadhu z 6 z ud yaschadhvam apa  
 rakṣo hanāthemām nārīm sukte tādāpah | dhātā vipaścit patim  
 asyāi viveda bhago rājā pura etu prajānam z 7 z bhagas tatakṣa  
 caturṣṣ pado bhagas tatakṣa catvāry uśyalāni | tvaśṭā pipeṣa ma  
 dhyato vardhrān sā no 'stu sumāṅgalī z 8 z yenājyena haviśā prajāyāi  
 ca vareṇyam | paśubhyaś cakṣuṣe kam sam agnīm sam idhīmahi  
 z 9 z aukiṇśukam vahatuṃ viśvarūpam hiranyavarṇam suvṛtam  
 sucakram | ā roha sūrye suktasya lokam syonam patibhyo vahatuṃ  
 kṛṇu tvam z 10 z mā hīṣisṭhām kumāryam sthāne devakṛte pathi |  
 śālāyā devyā dvāram syonam kṛṇmo vadhūpatham z 11 z vrahmā-  
 param yujyatām vrahma pūrvam vrahmāntato madhyato vrahma  
 sarvataḥ | anāryādbhām devapurām prapaḍya śivā syonā patiloke vi  
 rāja z 12 z 6 z

ity aṣṭāśakāpde prathamā 'nuvākā z z

St 1. This has no parallel; perhaps it is not metrical.

St 3. Ś does not have sa in a: in d it has patye sam śobh° which might well be restored here.

St 6. This stanza corresponds to Ś st 19, and it agrees in one or another detail with RV 10. 85. 24, TS 1. 1. 10. 2 and 3. 5. 6. 1, and ApMB 1. 5. 16: this last text has two slightly differing versions.

St 7. In pāda b Ś has dadhāta, which we should probably restore.

St 9. The repetition of sam in d is a little strange. This stanza has no parallel.

## 7

(Ś 14. 2)

[1230a13] om tuḥyam agne [14] pary avahat sūryām vahatunā  
 sāha | punaḥ patibhyo jāyan dā agne prajāyā [15] sāha | punaḥ  
 patnīm agnir adad ayaś sāha varcasā | dīrghāyur a-[16]syā ya  
 patir jivāntu śaradaś śatam. | somasya jāyā prathamam gandha-

[17] *ruḥs te apa naṣ patih trītyo agniṣ te patis turiyas te manuṣyaṣaḥ*  
 [18] *somo dadad gandharvāya gandharvo dad agnaye | rayīm ca*  
*putrāñś cādād agnir ma-*[19] *hyam atho imām. | ā vām agan sumatir*  
*vājinoivasū ny āvinaḥ hr̥tsu ki-*[20] *māñ ayañśata | subhūtam gopā*  
*mithunā śubhaspati priyā aryamno duryāñ* [f230b] *āśimahi | sā*  
*mandasānā manasā śivena rahiñ dhehī sarvavīram vacasyam.*  
 [2] *sugam tīrtham suprapānam śubhaspati sthānum pathiṣṭhām apa*  
*durmatim hatam. [3] apa rakṣāṇy apa durmatim hatam śubhas-*  
*pati vāto aryāto asmāt. [4] purogavo ajayam rakṣāṇy agne*  
*kṣetravit pūrvo vimṣḍho nudasva | yā oṣa-*[5] *dhayo yā nādyo yāni*  
*kṣetrāṇi yā vanā | te tvā madhu prajā-*[6] *vatiṁ pratyē rakṣantu*  
*rakṣasaḥ ya imām panthām agat svagam svasti-vāhanam. [7] yatra*  
*vīro na riṣyaty anyeṣām virdate vindate vasu | idam su te nara*  
*ṣruta [8] yāśiṣā dānpati vāsam ānutaḥ ye gandharvāpsarasas ca*  
*devīr e-*[9] *ṣa vānaspatyeṣṭhābhyādi tasthuh syonās tñi aśyāi vadhvī*  
*bhavantu mā hiñ-*[10] *śisundhahatum uhyamānam. z 1 z*

The first four stanzas are accented in the ms: in the left margin of f230b opposite line 11 is *nva*, correcting "sundha".

Read: *tubhyam agre pary avahant sūryāñ vahatunā saha | punaṣ*  
*patibhyo jāyāñ dā agne prajeyā saha z 1 z punaṣ patnīm agnir adād*  
*āyuṣā saha varcaśā | dīrghāyur aśyā yaṣ patir jīvātu śaradaś śatam*  
*z 2 z somasya jāyā prathamam gandharvas te aparāṣ patih | trītyo*  
*agniṣ te patis turiyas te manuṣyaṣaḥ z 3 z somo dadad gandharvāya*  
*gandharvo dadad agnaye | rayīm ca putrāñś cādād agnir mahyam*  
*atho imām z 4 z ā vām agan sumatir vājinoivasū ny āvinā hr̥tsu*  
*kāmāñ ayañśata | abhūtam gopā mithunā śubhaspati priyā aryamno*  
*duryāñ āśimahi z 5 z sā mandasānā manasā śivena rayīm dhehī*  
*sarvavīram vacasyam | sugam tīrtham suprapānam śubhaspati*  
*sthānum pathiṣṭhām apa durmatim hatam z 6 z apa rakṣāṇy apa*  
*durmatim hatam śubhaspati vahatho aryāto asmāt | purogavo aja*  
*yā rakṣāṇy agne kṣetravit pūrvo vimṣḍho nudasva z 7 z yā oṣadhayo*  
*yā nādyo yāni kṣetrāṇi yā vanā | te tvā vadhu prajāvatiṁ patye*  
*rakṣantu rakṣasaḥ z 8 z emām panthām aganma sugam svasti-*  
*vāhanam | yatra vīro na riṣyaty anyeṣām virdate vasu z 9 z idam*  
*su me naraś ṣruta yayāśiṣā dānpati vāsam ānutaḥ | ye gandharvā*  
*apsarasas ca devīr eṣu vānaspatyeṣu ye 'dhi tasthuh | syonās te aśyāi*  
*vadvhvāi bhavantu mā hiñśisur vahatum uhyamānam z 10 z 1 z*

St 1. This is RV 10.85.28; PG 1.7.8; ApMB 1.5.3; MG 1.1.12; only MG has *agne* in a, probably an error; see Vedic Variants, vol. 2, p. 402. In c only S begins *sa naḥ*.

St 5. This is RV 10. 40. 12 and ApMB 1. 7. 11, both of which have *ayāṣata* in b; and I have kept *kāmān* in b because it is in ApMB.

St 6. It seems almost certain that our text agrees with the text of Ś; but we might consider *muñcamānā* in a. This is RV 10. 40. 13.

St 7. This stanza has no parallel.

St 8. In pāda c Ś has *tās tvā*; but ApMB 1. 7. 9 has *te*, as here.

St 9. In pāda a Ś has *arukṣāma*, and *ab* as in Ś appear as Pāipp 2. 31. 3cd; see also ApMB 1. 6. 11. It seems probable that in our ms the mistake *ya* *inam* first arose and then *aganma* was changed.

# 8

## (Ś 14. 2)

[f230b10] *ye vadhvaś candra vahatūm ya-[11]kṣma yantu janān anu | puras tām yajñiṣā devā nayantu yata āgatāḥ [12] mā vidan paryāyāṇo ya āśidanti dāmpatī sugena durgapātahi-[13]tām apa drāntv arātsayāḥ saḥ kāsāyāmi vahatūm vrahmanā grhāir aghore-[14]ṇa cakṣuṣā maitreṇa | paryāpaddham viśvarūpaṇi yasmin myonam pa-[15]tibhṣas savitā kṛnotu tat. śivā nāryam astum āgam imam dhātā loka-[16]m asyāi viveda | tām aryamā bhago āśvino-bhāṣ prajāpatiḥ prajāyā [17] vardhayanantu | at\*an\*aty arvarā nāryam āgam yasyān nara vapanta bhja-[18]m asyāḥ śchā vaṣ prajān janayād vakṣanābhyo bibhrati dudram rṣadūrdheve-[19]ndras pra jayātām bhagasya mumatāḥ asat. | ud vā tīdūrmṣyām me ha-[20]ntv āpo yoprāṇi muñcatu | muduṣvatāu vyenasāghnyāku śūnam āratām. [f231a] aghoracakṣur apatighny edhi syonā śagmā saśevā mugamā grheṣu | prajācāt vi-[2]rasūr devrkāmamam agnīm gārhapatyān saparya | adavraghni patiraghny edhi syona-[3]s paśubhyas sumanas suviraḥ viraśūr devakāmā syonā ntvedhiṣimahi [4] sumanasyamānā | ut tiṣṭhādas kim iśchant-vedanīm agāhan tveds abhiḥbhās tvā-[5]d grhā | aśūnyeṣi nīryti gājagandhot tiṣṭhārāte pra pata mānāvi rāśiḥā z [6] z 2 z*

Accents are marked on stt 1-3ab and 8-10ab.

Read: *ye vadhvaś candraṁ vahatūm yakṣmā yanti janān anu | puras tām yajñiṣā devā nayantu yata āgatāḥ z 1 z mā vidan paryāyāṇo ya āśidanti dāmpatī | sugena durgam attitām apa drāntv arātsayāḥ z 2 z saḥ kāsāyāmi vahatūm vrahmanā grhāir aghoreṇa cakṣuṣā maitreṇa | paryāpaddham viśvarūpaṇi yad asmin syonam*

patibhyas savitā kṛṇotu tat z 3 z śivā nāriyam astam āgann imam  
 dhātā lokam asyāi viveda | tām aryamā bhago sēvinobhā prajāpatiḥ  
 prajāyā vardhayanu z 4 z ātmanvaty urvarā nāriyam āgan yasyām  
 naro vapanta bijam asyām | sā vaḥ prajān janayād vaksanābhyo  
 bibhrati †dudram ṛṣadūrdhe vendraḥ z 5 z <sinivālī> pra jāyatām  
 bhagasya sumatāv asat z 6 z ud va †tid ūrmis śamyā hantv āpo  
 yoktrāni muñcata | māduṣkṛtāu vyenasāghnyāu sūnam āratām z 7 z  
 aghoracakṣur apatighny edhi syonā śagmā suśevā suyamā grheṣu |  
 prajāvatī vīrasūr devakāmam agnīn gārhapatyam saparya z 8 z  
 adevrghny apatighny edhi syonā paśubhyas sumanās suvirā |  
 vīrasūr devakāmā syonā saṁ tvayāidhiṣimahi sumanasyamānāḥ  
 z 9 z ut tiṣṭhādaḥ kim icchantīdam āgā aham tveḍe abhibhūḥ svād  
 grhāt | asūnyāḥ nirṛte yājagantho tiṣṭhārāte pra pata †manasi  
 rañsthāḥ z 10 z 2 z

St 1. This and the next are RV 10.85.31.32; cd here have appeared as Ppp 7. 3. 6cd.

St 2. Pāda a has appeared as Ppp 5. 6. 6a, where vidhan was allowed to stand; vidan should be read. Ś has paripanthino.

St 3. See ApMB 1. 7. 10 which differs from our reading only by having asyām at the end of c; Ś and Ppp 3. 26. 1c have mitriyepa.

St 5. In pāda b we might better read 'vapanta'; Ś has vapata.

St 6. See at 2cd in the next hymn.

St 7. See RV 3. 33. 13.

St 8. With this and the next cf RV 10. 85. 44; ApMB 1. 1. 4; and HG 1. 20. 2: these confirm devakāmā.

## 9

## (Ś 14. 2)

[f231a6] yadā gārhapatyām asiparyāyāḥ pūream agnīn vadhūr  
 iyam | adhā [7] sarasvatyāi nāri pitubhyaś ca namas kuru | carma  
 varmānta ā harāyāi nāryā [8] upasthīre | sinivālī pra jāyatām  
 bhagasya sumatāv asat. upa str-[9]nīha balhajam adhi carmanī  
 rohate | tatropaviśya suprajā imagnyam sapā-[10]ryatu balha-  
 janyasya carmajopastṛnīthinaḥ tad ā rohate suprajā yā ka-[11]nyā  
 vīndate patim. | ā roha camopa sidāgnim āpo devam hantu  
 rakṣān-[12]si | sarad sumadgaly upa sidemam agnīm saṁpatni  
 prati bhāṣeḥa de-[13]nām. | pra jāyantām mātulasyād usthām  
 nānārūpāś paśavo ja-[14]yamānā | iha prajā saṁ jano patye smāi

*suṣyeṣṭho bhavatu te putra eṣaḥ* | [15] *sumāṅgalī pratarāṇī gṛhāṇām*  
*suśevā patye śvaśurāya sambhūm.* | [16] *syonā śvaśrūṣī prā gṛhān*  
*viśemām prajāvatī jaradaṣṭir yathāsat.* [17] *samāṅgalīr iyaṁ*  
*vadhūr imām sam eta paśyate* | *sāubhāgyam asyāi datvā dāurbhā-*  
*[18]gyena paretanā* | *yā dārhārdo yuvatayo yāś ceba caratir api* |  
*varco hy a-*[19] *syāi sandatvāyathāsta syaparetana* | *rukṣmaprasta-*  
*raṇam vahyaṁ viśvārūpā-*[20] *ni bibhratam.* | *ā roha sūryā sāvitrī*  
*vṛhatī sāubhagāya kam.* | [231b] z 3 z

Read: *yadā gārhapatyam asaparyāit pūrvam agniṁ vadhūr*  
*iyam* | *adhā śvasvatyāi nāri pītṛbhyas ca namas kuru* z 1 z *śarma*  
*varmāntā ā harāsyāi nāryā upastire* | *śinīvālī prā jāyatām bhagasya*  
*sumatāv asat* z 2 z *upa stṛṇṭhi balbajam adhi carmaṇi rohite* |  
*tatropaviśya suprajā imam agniṁ saparyatu* z 3 z *<yath>* *balbajam*  
*nyasyatha carma copastṛṇṭhāna* | *tad ā rohatu suprajā yā kanyā*  
*vindate patim* z 4 z *ā roha carmopa śidāgnim eṣa devo hantu*  
*rakṣāṁsi sarvā* | *sumāṅgaly upa śidemam agniṁ samapatnī prati*  
*bhūṣeḥa devān* z 5 z *prā jāyantām mātur asyā upasthān nānārūpāḥ*  
*paśavo jāyamānāḥ* | *iha prajāṁ janaya patye smāi suṣyeṣṭho*  
*bhavatu te putra eṣaḥ* z 6 z *sumāṅgalī pratarāṇī gṛhāṇām suśevā*  
*patye śvaśurāya sambhūḥ* | *syonā śvaśrūṣī prā gṛhān viśemām*  
*prajāvatī jaradaṣṭir yathāsat* z 7 z *sumāṅgalīr iyaṁ vadhūr imām*  
*sam eta paśyate* | *sāubhāgyam asyāi datvā dāurbhāgyena paretanā*  
*z 8 z yā dārhārdo yuvatayo yāś ceba jaratir api* | *varco hy asyāi*  
*sandattvāyathāstam vi paretana* z 9 z *rukṣmaprastaraṇam vahyaṁ*  
*viśvā rūpāni bibhratam* | *ā rohat sūryā sāvitrī vṛhate sāubhagāya*  
*kam* z 10 z 3 z

St 3. For this see ApMB 1.8.1.

St 5. This is 24ab and 25cd in Ś; the next here is 25ab and 24cd in Ś.

St 7. Pāda d has no exact parallel; but see above 5.6b (= 14.1.50b).

St 9. In pādas cd I have followed RV 10.85.33, which is a close parallel to our st 9.

St 10. While *vṛhatī* could stand in d it seems better to read with Ś.

## 10

(Ś 14.2)

[231b1] *ā roha tālpaṁ sumanasya māne iha prajāṁ jane patye*  
*asmāi* | *indrā-*[2] *ṇīna sūptā buddhyamānā jyotiṣ ugrā uśasas pati*

cākarah devāgre [3] ny apadyanta patnī samv asprānti tanvas  
tanūbhīh sūryeva nāri vī-[4]śvarūpā mahitvā prajāvatī patye sam-  
bhavāsira | udīrṣṇāta-[5]s patibhy eṣānī viśvāvasuṁ namasā gīrbhīr  
iṣe | \*\*\*\*mim iścha pi-[6]tṛsudhan vaktām sa te bhāgo janusā  
tasya viddhi | yāpsarasas sadhamādām padām-[7]ny antarā havir-  
dhānani sūryam ca | tās te janitram abhi tās parehi namas te  
ga-[8]ndharivartamanā kṛṇomi | namo gandharvasya manaso namo  
bhāsāya cakṣuṣe ca [9] kṛṇva | viśvāvaso namo vrahmadānte  
kṛṇomy abhicaryāpsarasas parehi [10] rāyā vayam sumanasas  
syāmodīto gandharvam ā yivratām. aghnan sa [11] devas paramam  
sadhastham aganma vayam pratiranta ayuḥ sam pitarāu ṛdvaḥ  
ṛ-[12]jethām pitāmātā ja retaso bhavātha | variva yoṣāmām adhi  
rohayenām [13]prajāṁ kṛṇvāyām iha rodamānāu ā vām prajāṁ  
janayatu prajāpatir a-[14]horātrābhyaṁ sam anaktu aryamā |  
adurmanūgalīḥ patilokam ā viśa śan no a-[15]stu dvipade śam  
catuṣpade | tām pūṣaṁchivatāmām ṛayasava yaayām bijām ma-  
[16]nuṣyā vapanti | yā na ūrū uṣatī viśrayāte yaayām uṣantas  
praharema [17] śepaḥ | ā rohorum upa datṣva hastam pari svajasva  
jāyām sumanasayāmā | [18] prajāṁ kṛṇvāthām iha puṣyatu no  
rayīm dirghan tv āyus saviś kṛṇuṣu z [19] z 4 z

Read: ā roha talpam sumansayamāneha prajāṁ janaya patye  
asmāi | indrāṇiva suptā buddhyamānā jyotiragrā uṣasas prati  
jāgarah z 1 z devā agre ny apadyanta patnīh sam v asprānta tanvas  
tanūbhīh | sūryeva nāri viśvarūpā mahitvā prajāvatī patye sam  
bhavāsi z 2 z ud īrṣṇātaḥ pativati hy eṣā viśvāvasuṁ namasā gīrbhīr  
iṣe | jānim iścha pitṛśadam vyaktām sa te bhāgo janusā tasya viddhi  
z 3 z yā apsarasas sadhamādām madanty antarā havirdhānam  
sūryam ca | tās te janitram abhi tās parehi namas te gandhar-  
vartunā kṛṇomi z 4 z namo gandharvasya manase namo bhāsāya  
cakṣuṣe ca kṛṇmah | viśvāvaso namo vrahmanā te kṛṇomy abhi  
cāryā apsarasas parehi z 5 z rāyā vayam sumanasas syāmod īto  
gandharvam āvivratāma | agan sa devas paramam sadhastham  
aganma vayam pratiranta āyuh z 6 z sam pitarā vṛddhaye ṛjethām  
pitā mātā ca retaso bhavāthah | varā iva yoṣām adhi rohayānām  
prajāṁ kṛṇvāthām iha modamānāu z 7 z ā vām prajāṁ janayatu  
prajāpatir ahorātrābhyaṁ sam anakte aryamā | adurmanūgalīḥ pati-  
lokam ā viśemaṁ śam no astu dvipade śam catuṣpade z 8 z tām  
pūṣaṁ chivatāmām ṛayasava yaayām bijām manuyā vapanti | yā na  
ūrū uṣatī viśrayāte yaayām uṣantas praharema śepaḥ z 9 z ā rohorum

upa dhatsva hastam pari yvajasa jāyām sumanasyamānah | prajān  
krpavāthām iha pūyataṁ rayiṁ dirgham ta āyus savitā kṛpota  
x 10 z 4 z

St 3. This is RV 10. 85. 21; in c RV has anyām for jānim.

St 4. Pādas ab — Ppp 4. 9. 5ab; Ś omits yā.

St 5. In pāda c Ś has jāyā, which is rather better.

St 7. Whitney calls vṛddhaye in c "a welcome emendation."  
In c Ś has marya iva.

St 8. This is RV 10. 85. 43; SMB 1. 2. 18; ApMB 1. 11. 5:  
variants are not significant.

St 9. RV 10. 85. 37 has viśrayāte; ApMB 1. 11. 6 and PG  
1. 4. 16 support this reading.

# 11

(Ś 14. 2)

[f231b19] gan no dūtī vrahmabhāgaṁ vadhūyor vāso vadhvas ca  
vastram. yu-[30]tām vrahmaṇa manyamāno vṛhaspate sākam  
indras ca dhātām. | devāir da-[f232a]ttām vanunā sākam etad  
vādhūyaṁ baddha vāso syāḥ ye vrahmaṇe cikituṣe [2] dadāti sa  
yad rukṣāṇi tṛpyāṇi hanti | syonād yoner adhi buddhyamānau  
[3] hasāru mahasā modamānau subhau suputrāu sukṛtāu carātāu  
ca-[4]rātāu jivā usaso vibhāti | navam vāsānaḥ surabhis avāso-  
dāgham [5] jīva usaso vibhāti | āṇḍat patatrivāṇukṣi viśvasma-  
cāinaso-[6]z pari | śumbhant dyāvāpṛthivī yantu sumne mahivrate |  
āpas sapta [7] sucantis tā no muñcantv aśhasaḥ sūryāyāi devebhyo  
mītrāya varuṇā-[8]ya ca | ye bhūtāṇya pracetasas tebhyo ham  
akaraṇa namaḥ | yad ite jad du-[9]rbhis sruṣaḥ purā jairuḥya  
ādadaḥ sadhotā sandhim maghavā purava-[10]sun iskartā vikṛtām  
punaḥ apāmad antamad uścham nīlam pīśāṅgam u-[11]ta lohitaṁ  
yat. | nirmakani tyāḥ praghātaker asmin tā sthānau adhy a [12]  
srjāmi | yāvatīḥ kṛtyā pāśādāne yāvantō rājāno varuṇasya pā-  
[13]śāt. vṛddhayo yas samvṛddhayaś cāvasmin tāś tā no muñcāmi  
sarvām. [14] ye nīd yāvatī sīdavo ye ca tantavaḥ vāso yat patnī-  
bhṛtām tanvā syona-[15]m upa sprīḥ z 5 z

Read: yaṁ tno ditiḥ vrahmabhāgaṁ vadhūyor (vādhūyaṁ)  
vāso vadhvas ca vastram | yuṁ vrahmaṇa idam manyamānau  
vṛhaspate sākam indras ca dattam z 1 z devāir dattām vanunā sākam  
etad vādhūyaṁ vadhvo vāso 'syāḥ | yo vrahmaṇe cikituṣe dadāti sa



id rakṣhāsi talpyāni hanti z 2 z syonād yoner adhi hudyamānāu  
 hasāmadāu mahasā modomānāu | śubhāu suputrāu sukṛtāu carātā  
 carāto jivā usaso vibhātīh z 3 z navañ vasānos surabhis suvāsā  
 udāgām jivā usaso vibhātīh | āṇḍāt patatrivānukṣī viśvasmād  
 enasas pari z 4 z śumbhāni dyāvāprthivī antisumne mahivṛate |  
 āpas sapta stravantī tā no muñcantv aśhasaḥ z 5 z sūryāyāi deve-  
 bhyo mitrāya varuṇāya ca | ye bhūtasya pracetasas tebhyo 'ham  
 akarañ namaḥ z 6 z yad ṛte cid abhīkṛiṣaḥ purā jatrubhya ātrdaḥ |  
 samdhātā samdhīm maghavā purovasur iṣkartā vihrtañ punaḥ z 7 z  
 apāsmad tantamad ucchan nīlāni piśāṅgam uta lohitañ yat |  
 nirdahani yā praghātaky asmin tām ethāṇāv adhy ā srjāmi z 8 z  
 yāvatī kṛtyā īpsēcāne yāvanto rājāno varuṇasya pāsāḥ | vyrd-  
 dhayo yā asamṛddhasyāś cāvāsmi tā ethāṇāu muñcāmi sarvāḥ z 9 z  
 ye 'ntā yāvatīh sico ya otavo ye ca tantavaḥ | vāso yat patnibhir  
 utam tanvā syonam upa sprśaḥ z 10 z 5 z

St 1. In pāda a Ś has me datte vz<sup>o</sup> which Ppp may have had.

St 2. In pāda a Ś has manuṇā.

St 3. In pāda d Ś does not have the verb; its c is sugū suputrāu  
 sugrāu tarūbhā.

St 8. This appears also as Ś 7. 112. 1 as well as 14. 2. 45.

St 7. Cf especially RV 8. 1. 18; TA 4. 20. 1; ApMB 1. 7. 1.

St 10. For pāda d Ś has tan naḥ syonam upa sprśāt; it might  
 be well to read so here.

## 12

## (Ś 14. 2)

[1232a] uśatiḥ kanyalā imāḥ pitṛlokāt patīm [16] yati | aca  
 dāksam asirakṣasas svāhā vrhaspatināvasṛṣtām viśve [17] devā  
 adhārayim. varco goṣu pravīṣtām yat tenemā sañ srjāmasi |  
 vr-[18]haspatināvasṛṣtām viśve devā adhārayim. tejo goṣu pravīṣtām  
 [19] yat tenemā sañ srjāmasi vrhaspatināvasṛṣtām viśve devā  
 adhāra-[20]yīm. go goṣu pravīṣto yat tenemā sañ srjāmasi vrha-  
 spatināvasṛṣtām [21] viśve devā adhārayim. yaśo goṣu pravīṣtām  
 yat tenemā sañ srjāma-[1232b]si | vrhaspatināvasṛṣtām viśve devā  
 adhārayim. bha-[2]go goṣu pravīṣto yas tenemā sañ srjāmasi |  
 yad asū duktā [3] tava vikṛesu arujat. bahu rodhena kṛṇaty  
 agham. | agniṣvāt tasmād a-[4]nasaḥ savitā ca pra muñcatām. |  
 yad asti keśino jamā grhe te [5] samanṛtyeṣu rodena kṛṇvatir agham.  
 yaj jāmano yad gunatayo grhe [6] te samanṛtyeṣu rodena kṛṇvato

*agham. yad amūm dāmpatī ubhā vivā-[7]he aghamāruto rodēna  
kṛvātān agham. x 6 x*

The first six stanzas here are accented in the ms; in the left margin of f232b about opposite line 5 is *ryo*.

Read: *nāstis kanyalā imāṣ pitṛlekāt patnīn yatīb | aya dākṣam  
asṛkṣata evāhā x 1 x vṛhaspatināvasrṣtārū viśve devā adhārayan |  
varco goṣu pravṛṣtān yat tenemām saṁ srjāmāsi x 2 x vṛhaspatinā-  
vasrṣtārū viśve devā adhārayan | tejo goṣu " " " x 3 x vṛha-  
spatināvasrṣtārū viśve devā adhārayan | payo goṣu " " " x 4 x  
vṛhaspatināvasrṣtārū viśve devā adhārayan | yaso goṣu " " " x 5 x  
vṛhaspatināvasrṣtārū viśve devā adhārayan | bhago goṣu pra-  
vṛṣto yas tenemām saṁ srjāmāsi x 6 x yad asūo duhitā tavā vikeśy  
arudād bahu rodēna kṛvaty agham | agniṣ tvā tasmād enasah  
savitā ca pra muñcatām x 7 x yad amī kośino janā grhe te sama-  
nartīṣū rodēna kṛvanto agham | agniṣ tvā " " " x 8 x yaj  
jāmāyo yad yuvatayo grhe te samanartīṣū rodēna kṛvātīr agham |  
agniṣ tvā " " " x 9 x yad amū dāmpatī ubhān vivāhe agham  
āruto rodēna kṛvantān agham | <agniṣ tvā tasmād enasah savitā  
ca pra muñcatām> x 10 x 6 x*

St 1. In *pāda* c *ś* has *dīkṣām*; *dākṣam* would probably be better than *dīkṣām*.

St 10. To have concord of gender it seems necessary to read *ubbāu*. This stanza has no exact parallel.

## 13

(§ 14.2)

[f232b7] *yat te prajāyām [8] paśuṣu yad vā grhe nisthītur  
aghaṁkṛdbhir agham kṛtam. agniṣ tvā ta-[9]smād enasah savitā ca  
pra muñcatām. | yān nārīr uparrāte pāpā-[10]ny avrpanṭikā  
dirghāgur astu me patir edhantā pīlāro mama | ehaṁvā i-[11]ndra  
saṁ nuda cakravākeṣu dāmpatī | prajāvantāu svastakāu dirgham  
ā-[12]yur vyasvūtām. yad āsandhyātadhāne yad vopavāsane kṛtam.  
vivāhe [13] kṛtyām yām cakrur ānāne taś ni dadhmāsi | yad  
duṣkṛtām yāś cāmālām vi-[14]vivāhe vakato ca yat. tat sam-  
bhārasya kambale mṛjmahe duritām vāyam. [15] sarabale malām  
mādayitvā kambale mṛjmahe duritām vāyam. samba-[16]le malām  
mādayitvā kambale duritām vāyam. abhāmi pajāneyā-[17]ś śud-*

*dhās prāṇām yoṣi tāriṣam. | yā me priyatamā tanū sā me vibhā-*  
 [18]*ya vāsasaḥ tasyāgre tvaṁ vanaspate nivam kṛṇuṣva mā vayasā*  
*ruṣāma | [19] kṛttrimaṣ kaṅkataś śatadanyeṣu apāśyāt keśam*  
*malam upaśṛṇyaṁ li-[20]khā | aṅgād aṅgād yoyam asyām upa*  
*yakṣmam nī dhātāna | tan mā prāpat pr-[1233a]thivīm mota*  
*devān imān mām pāpam urv antarikṣam. apo mā prāpaṁ balam*  
*odad agne [2] nimam mā prāpat pītṛś ca sarvān. | san tva bāhyāmi*  
*payasā prthivyās san tvā na-[3]hyāmi payasoṣadhīnām. san tvā*  
*nahyāmi prajāyā dhanena sā sannaddhā sū[4]nnahi vājanemam.*  
 z 7 z

In the left margin opposite line 8 is *śvā*, and opposite line 10 is *manti*.

Read: yat te prajāyāṁ paśaṣu yad vā gr̥he niṣṭhitam agha-  
 kṛdbhir aghaṁ kṛtam | agniḥ tvā tasmād enasaḥ savitā ca pra-  
 muñcatām z 1 z iyaṁ nāry upa brūte pūlpāny āvapantikā | dīrghāyur  
 astu me patir edhantām pitaro mama z 2 z ihemāv indra sātā nuda  
 cakravākeva dāmpatī | prajāvantāu svastakāu dīrgham āyur vy-  
 āśnutām z 3 z yad āsandyā upadhāne yad vopavāsane kṛtam |  
 vivāhe kṛtyāṁ cakrur āsnāne tām nī dadhmasi z 4 z yad duṣkṛtām  
 yac chamalaṁ vivāhe vahatāu ca yat | tat sambharasya kambale  
 mṛjmahe duritām vayam z 5 z sambhale malaṁ śādayitvā kambale  
 duritām vayam | abhūma yajñīyās śuddhās pra na āyūṁśi tāriṣam  
 z 6 z yā me priyatamā tanū sā me vibhāya vāsasaḥ | tasyāgre tvaṁ  
 vanaspate nivam kṛṇuṣva mā vayasā ruṣāma z 7 z kṛttrimaṣ kaṅkataś  
 śatadan ya eṣaḥ | apāśyās keśyaṁ malam apa śṛṇvaṁ likhāt  
 z 8 z aṅgād-aṅgād yūyam asyām apa yakṣmam nī dhātāna | tan  
 mā prāpat prthivīm mota devān divaṁ mām prāpad urv antarikṣam |  
 apo mā prāpaṁ malam etad agne yamaṁ mām prāpat pītṛś ca  
 sarvān z 9 z sām tvā nahyāmi payasā prthivyās sām tvā nahyāmi  
 payasoṣadhīnām | sām tvā nahyāmi prajāyā dhanena sā sannaddhā  
 sanuhi vājam emam z 10 z 7 z

St 2. For pāda d *ś* has *jīvati śaradaḥ śatam*; SMB, HG, and PG read for d almost as here, having *jūatayo* for *pitaro*.

St 6. Pāda d as here is given by the ms at 11.3.4d also, where *tāriṣat* seems necessary; here it would seem better.

St 9. In pāda b *asyām* is not as good as the genitive which *ś* has, but it is possible.

St 10. Cf. also TS 3.5.6.1.

## 14

(Ś 14.2)

[f233a4] amo ham asmi sâ tvam dyâur aham prthimano ma-  
 [5]nas si vâkyaṃ tāv iha mamabhavāva prajāṃ ā janayāvahāi |  
 jayanti nogruva\* pi-[6]vaṣ pitryantu sadānugāḥ | ariṣṭāṃ asyate-  
 mahi vṛhate vājasātaye | ye pi-[7]taro vadhūdarṣā nimam vahatum  
 āgaman. | tasyāi vadhvi sampatnī prajāvaś carma yaschaṭu |  
 [8] idam pūrvāgam raśanāyamānā prajāṃ asyāi draviṇam ccha  
 dhattām. | tām vaha-[9]ntv aktasyābhi panthām virāḍ iyaṃ supra-  
 jātvajīṣi pra budhyasva suvakṣa budhyamānā [10] dīrghāyutēya  
 śataśārādāya | grhān prthi sumanasayamāno dīrghaṃ tāyus sa-  
 [11]vitā kṛṇotu | vi te muñcāmi raśanām vi raśmīn yoktrāṇi pari-  
 carā-[12]nāni ca | ariṣṭāsmiṃ jyotiṣa śivā grhapatāu bhava |  
 syonā bhava śvaśu-[13]rebhya syonā patye grhebhyaḥ syonāsyāi  
 sarvasyāi viśe syonāpatyāyāśām bhava z 8 z [14] z z ity athar-  
 vaṇike pāippalādāyāś śākhāyām aṣṭādaśakāṇḍe [15] dvitīyo  
 nuvākaḥ z z

Read: amo 'ham asmi sâ tvam dyâur aham prthivī tvam mano  
 'ham asmi vâk tvam | tāv iha sam bhavāva prajāṃ ā janayāvahāi  
 z 1 z janayanti no agravaṣ putriyanti sadānugāḥ | ariṣṭāṣas sacce mahi  
 vṛhate vājasātaye z 2 z ye pitaro vadhūdarṣā imam vahatum āgaman  
 | te 'syāi vadhvāi sampatnyāi prajāvas carma yaschantu z 3 z  
 yedam pūrvāgam raśanāyamānā prajāṃ asyāi draviṇam ccha  
 dhattām | tām vahan tv aktasyābhi panthām virāḍ iyaṃ suprajā sty  
 ajāṣṭ z 4 z pra budhyasva suvakṣā budhyamānā dīrghāyutvāya  
 śataśārādāya | grhān prthi sumanasayamānā dīrgham tā āyus savitā  
 kṛṇotu z 5 z vi te muñcāmi raśanām vi raśmīn vi yoktrāṇi pari-  
 cartanāni ca | ariṣṭāsmiṃ jyotiṣi śivā grhapatāu bhava z 6 z syonā  
 bhava śvaśurebhyaḥ syonā patye grhebhyaḥ | syonāsyāi sarvasyāi  
 viśe syonāpatyāyāśām bhava z 7 z 8 z

Ity ātharvaṇike pāippalādāyām śākhāyām aṣṭādaśakāṇḍe dvitīyo  
 'nuvākaḥ z z

St 1. For pāda b Ś has sāmāham asmy ṛk tvam; our pāda c  
 appears elsewhere only in ApMB 1.3.14.

St 2. In pāda b Ś has sudānavah, and in c ariṣṭāsū sacce vahī.

St 4. In pāda c Ś has agatasyānu.

St 5. For pādas ab cf TS 1.6.4.3; MS 1.4.1; and KS 5.3:  
 for cd there seem to be no parallels.

St 7. This st 27 in Ś, which has in c syonā pustāyāi°.

## 15

## (§ 13.1)

[f233a15] ud ehi vājin yo psv antar idam rāṣṭram pra viśa  
 [16] sūnṛtāvat. yayo rohito viśvabhṛtām jajāna | sa trā rāṣṭrāya  
 subhṛtām pipartu [17] ud vājagan yo psv antar viśa roha tud  
 yonayo yā somam dadhānā | pośadhīr gās ca-[18]tuspādo dvipādā  
 veśa cha x om yūyam ugrā marutaḥ prānimātara indre ya-[20]jā  
 pra mṛṣṭa śātrūn. ā vo rohitaś śṛṇavat sudānavas triṣuptā marutas  
 svādu-[21]samnudaḥ | ruho ruroha rohito ruroha garbho janitām  
 janitām upastham. tā-[f233b] tābhīś samrabdhō anv avindat saḥ  
 urvīr gātum prapaśyann iha rāṣṭram āha | yā te rāṣṭram i-[2]ha  
 rohito hā śṛḍho vy āsthad abhayaḥ tebhāḥ tasmāi te dyāvāprthivī  
 revatī[3]bhīś kāmān duhātām iha śakvaribhīḥ rohito dyāvāprthivī  
 jajāna tam [4] tantum paramesṭhī tatāna | tatra śāśriye aja ekapā  
 drñhat tena sva stabhitām [5] tena nāhāḥ tenāntarikṣam vimatā  
 rakṣāṁsi tena devā mṛtam anv avindan. | vi [6] rohito mṛśad  
 viśvarūpam samābhṛvānas pararuho ruhaś ca | divam rādhuḥ  
 ma-[7]hāt mahimnā sam te rāṣṭram anaktu payasā ghṛtena | yas te  
 ruho yās tārko [8] yābhīr āpnasi divam antarikṣam. tūām  
 vrahmanā payasā nūr-[9]dānā viśa rāṣṭre jāgraha rohitasya |  
 yās te viśas tapasas sambabhūvur va-[10]tām gāyatrīm anu tā  
 yaguh tās teā viśantu manasā divena sammatā va-[11]tāo bhy sta  
 rohita x 1 x

In the right hand margin of f233b opposite line 10 is pā, with indication that it corrects sammatā.

Read: ud ehi vājin yo 'psv antar idam rāṣṭram pra viśa sūnṛtāvat  
 | yo rohito viśvabhṛtām jajāna sa trā rāṣṭrāya subhṛtām pipartu  
 x 1 x ud vāja āgan yo 'psv antar viśa ā roha tvadyonayo yāḥ |  
 somam dadhāno 'pa ośadhīr gās catuspādo dvipādā ā veśayecha x 2 x  
 yūyam ugrā marutaḥ prānimātara indreṇa yujā pra mṛṣṭa śātrūn |  
 ā vo rohitaś śṛṇavat sudānavas triṣaptā marutas svādusamnudaḥ  
 x 3 x ruho ruroha rohito ruroha garbho janitām janitām upastham  
 | tābhīś samrabdhō anv avindat saḥ urvīr gātum prapaśyann iha  
 rāṣṭram āhūḥ x 4 x ā te rāṣṭram iha rohito 'hār mṛdho vy āsthad  
 abhayaḥ te abhūt | tasmāi te dyāvāprthivī revatībhīś kāmān  
 duhātām iha śakvaribhīḥ x 5 x rohito dyāvāprthivī jajāna tasmin  
 tantum paramesṭhī tatāna | tatra śāśriye aja ekapād adṛñhat  
 <dyāvāprthivī balena x 6 x rohito dyāvāprthivī adṛñhat> tena sva

stabhitam tena nākaḥ | tenāntarikṣam vimitā rajāsi tena devā  
amṛtam anv avindan z 7 z vi rohiṭo 'mrśād viśvarūpam samā-  
kṛtvāṣaḥ prarūho ruhas ca | divam rūdhvā mahatā mahimā sam  
te rāstram anaktu pṛyasā gṛtēna z 8 z yās te <ruhas pra->ruho  
yās ta āruho yābhīr āpṛyāsi divam antarikṣam | tāsām vrahmaṇā  
payasā vāyvdhāno viśi rāstrā jāgrhi rohitasya z 9 z yās te viśas  
tapasas sambabhūvur vatsam gāyatrīm anu tā ihāguḥ | tās tvā  
viśantu manasā śivena saimātā vatso 'bhīy etu rohitah z 10 z 1 z

St 1. In pāda c ś has viśvam idam; in d bhīhartu, while TB has dūdhātu. Our variant in d is a frequent type and often is wrong.

St 4. In pāda c ś has saṁrabdhām anv avindan, TB has 'rabdhō avidat.

St 6. Pāipp as edited agrees with TB in having tasmin in b and ekapād in c.

St 7. Pāda d appears as Ppp 7. 6. 1b, in another connection.

## 16

## (ś 13.1)

[f233b11] ārdhvo rohiṭo dhī nāke asthād viśvā rū-[12]pāpi  
janayan yuṣā kaviḥ tigmenāgni jyotiṣā vi bhāsi tṛtiye [13] cakae  
rajasi priyāṇi | sahasrākṛāṇo vṛṣabho jālavadā gṛtā-[14]hutiḥ  
somaṣṛṣṭhas suvitrāḥ gāma hīnā nāhīto netvā jahāji [15] gopasam  
ca me vīrapoṣam ca dhehi | rohiṭo yajñasya janitā mukham ca  
ro-[16]hitayā veda śrotreṇa manasā juhomi | rohitan devā yantu  
[17] sumanasyamānā sa mā rohāis sāmitye rohayāti | rohiṭo yajñasā  
[18] vi dadhād viśvakarmāṇe tasmāt tejūṣas upa memāny āguḥ  
vocagat te nā-[19]bhīm bhuvanasyādhi majmani | ā tvā ruroka  
vṛhaty at pāṅktir āṅkakud varca-[20]mā viśvavedaḥ ā tvā ruroka  
rohitākṣam rohiṭo hito retasā [21] saha | ayaṁ vaste garbhāni  
pṛthivyā divam vaste yam antari-[f234a]kṣam. | ayaṁ vradhīnasya  
viślapas svar lokān sam ānāse | vācaspatē pṛthivi na syonā [2] yonis  
talpā suferā | ihāiva prāṇas sakhye no stu tan tvā parameśthi  
paryavaham [3] varcasā dadhāmi | vācaspatē rtaṣaḥ pāṇca vāiśva-  
karmāṇā parye babhūvuḥ pa-[4]ra rohiṭo varcasā dadhātu |  
vācaspatē somanasam manas ca goṣṭhe no gā ruma yo-[5]niṣu  
prajām. ihāiva prāṇas sakhye no stu tan tvā parameśthiṁ parya-  
vaham varcasā [6] dadhātu | pari tvā dhat savitā devo gñir varcasā

*mitrāvaruṇḍa abhi tvā | sarvā-[7]rūtīr apakrāman udahīdam  
gṛhā kṛnukī māṇṭhvat. x 2 x*

Read: ārdhvo rohito 'dhi nāke asthād viśvā rūpāṇi janayan  
yuvā kavīḥ | tigmenāgne jyotiṣā vi bhāsi tṛtiye cakṣe rajasi priyāṇi  
x 1 x sahasreṣṇāgo vṛṣabho jātavedā gṛtāhutis somapṛṣṭhas savīrah  
| mū mā hāsīn nāthito neṭ tvā jahāni goṇṣarī ca me vīrapoṣem  
ca dhehi x 2 x rohito yañāsya janitā mukham ca rohitāya vācā  
śrotreṇa manasā juhomi | rohitām devā yantu sumanasyamānās aa  
mā rohāis sāmityāi rohayāti x 3 x rohito yañān vy adadhād viśva-  
karmaṇe tasmāt tejūṣy upa memāny āguḥ | voceyam te nabhin  
bhuvanasyādhi majmani x 4 x ā tvā ruroha vṛhaty uta pañktir ā  
kakud varcasā viśvavedah | ā tvā ruroha rohitākṣara <ā tvā ruroha>  
rohito retasā saha x 5 x ayaṁ vaste garbham pṛthivya divaṁ vaste  
'yam antarikṣam | ayaṁ vradhnasya viṣṭapa svar lokān sam ānsāe  
x 6 x vācaspate pṛthivī naḥ syonā syonā yonis talpā naḥ suśevā |  
ihāiva prāṇas sakhye no 'stu tam tvā parameṣṭhīn pary aham var-  
casā dadhāmi x 7 x vācaspata ṣṭavaṣ pañca <ye no> vāiśvakarmaṇāḥ  
pari ye babhūvuh | <ihāiva prāṇas sakhye no 'stu tam tvā para-  
meṣṭhīn> pari rohito varcasā dadhātu x 8 x vācaspate sāumanasaṁ  
manas ca goṣṭhe no gā ramaya yoniṣu prajāṁ | ihāiva prāṇas sakhye  
no 'stu tam tvā parameṣṭhīn pary aham varcasā dadhāmi x 9 x pari  
tvā dhāt savitā devo 'gnir varcasā mitrāvaruṇāv abhi tvā | sarvā  
arātīr apakrāman chīdam rūṣṭrām kṛnukī sūṇṭhvat x 10 x 2 x

St 2. See also KS 35.18 and TB 3.7.2.7; the latter varies considerably.

St 5. Ś has kakub in pāda b; insertion of tvā before kakud would improve the pāda. In c Ś has rurohōṣṇihākṣaro vaṣatkāra°.

St 7. In pāda d Ś has agnir āyusā in st 17, rohita āyusā in st 18, and aham āyusā in st 19.

## 17

## (§ 13.1)

[1234a8] om̐ yan tvā pr̥ṣati ratho pr̥nir vahati rohitaḥ sabhā yāya  
ranim̐ namaḥ te-[9]nemaṁ vrahmanas pāte ruham̐ rohayottamam.  
anuvratā rohiṇī rohitasya sū-[10]ryas suvarṇa vṛṇhaspatī suvarcāḥ  
mayā vācām̐ viśvarūpām̐ jagema [11] tayaḥ viśvādam̐ pṛtanābhī  
syama | idam̐ sadō rohiṇī rohitasyāsū pa-[12]panihās pr̥ṣati yena  
yati | tamā gandharvāḥ kaśyapā vūn nayanu tuam̐ rahantu [13]



kavayo prapādam. sūryasyāśvā harayaḥ ketumantas sadā vahanty  
amṛtā-[14]s sukham ratham. | ghṛtapāvā rohiṭo vājamāno divam  
devās prā-[15]hīm ā viveśa | ayaṁ rohiṭo vṛṣabhas tigmaśṛṅgas  
pary agniḥ pari sū-[16]ryam babhūva | ayo viṣṭabhināt pṛthivī  
divam ca tasmād devā ti sṛṣṭ-[17]s sṛjante | rohiṭo divam āruham  
mahatas pary arnavā | sa-[18]rud ruroha rohiṭo ruhā vimimīdā  
payasvantīm ghṛtācīm devānām [19] dhevānām dhenur anapasprg  
eṣām. indras somo stv agnīprṇāṇīta vinṛdho [20] nudasva |  
samiddho gñis samidhāno ghṛtavṛddho ghṛtābutaḥ adhi-[21]ṣā  
asmi viśvāḥ agniḥ sapatnān. | hantu e mama hantu enān pra  
[f234b] dahantu agnir yo niḥ prṇanyatu kravyādagñinā vayan  
sapatnān pra dahāmasi | a-[2]gne sapatnam udharam pārayassād  
vyathayā sajātam uta pidānam vṛka-[3]spate | indrāgni mitrā-  
varuṇāv adhare padyantām apratimān yūryamānā | [4] z 3 z

Read: yaṁ tvā prṣṭi rathe prṇir vahati rohiṭa | śubhā yāsi  
rīpaṇ apah | tenemaṁ vrahmanas pate roham rohayottamam z 1 z  
anuvratā rohiṇī rohitasya sūris suvarṇā vyhati suvarṇāḥ | tayā  
vājān viśvarūpān jayema tayā †viśvādam pṛtanā abhi syāma z 2 z  
idaṁ sado rohiṇī rohitasyāśvā panthās prṣṭi yena yāti | tān  
gandharvās kaśyapā un nayanta tān rohantu kavayo 'pramādam  
z 3 z sūryasyāśvā harayaḥ ketumantas sadā vahanty amṛtās sukham  
ratham | ghṛtapāvā rohiṭo bhṛājamāno divam devās prṣṭim ā  
viveśa z 4 z ayaṁ rohiṭo vṛṣabhas tigmaśṛṅgas pary agniḥ pari  
sūryam babhūva | yo viṣṭabhināt pṛthivīm divam ca tasmād devā  
ati sṛṣṭis sṛjante z 5 z rohiṭo divam āruhan mahatas pary arnavāt |  
sarvā ruroha rohiṭo ruhāḥ z 6 z vi mīme tvā payasvantīm ghṛtācīm  
devānām dhenur anapasprg eṣā | indras so-⟨mam pibatu kṣe-⟩mo  
'stv agniḥ prṇāṇā vi mṛdho nudasva z 7 z samiddho 'gñis samid-  
dhāno ghṛtavṛddho ghṛtābutaḥ | abhiṣād viśvāḥ agniḥ sapatnān  
hantu ye mama z 8 z hantu enān pra dahatu agnir yo naḥ pṛtanayati  
| kravyādagñinā vayan sapatnān pra dahāmasi z 9 z agne sapatnam  
adharam pādayāmad vyathayā sajātam †utapidānam vṛhaspate |  
indrāgni mitrāvaruṇāv adhare padyantām apratimanyūyamānāḥ  
z 10 z 3 z

St 1. In pāda b both Ś and RV 8. 7. 28 have praṣṭir va°, but  
it does not seem necessary to restore it. Ś and RV have only three  
pādas. Our pāda d is Ś 19. 24. 1c.

St 2. In pāda d Ś has viśvāḥ pṛ°.

St 3. In pāda d Ś has rakeṇti; rohayantu would be a good  
reading.

St 6. In pāda a ś has yo, which we might well restore.

St 7. In pāda a TB 3. 7. 13 and ApŚ 11. 4. 14 read as here.

St 8. Pāda b = Ppp 6. 9. 11b.

## 18

(Ś 13. 1)

[f234b4] avācīnān ava jahindra vajreṇa bāhumā | adhā sapatnān  
[5]tān māmakān agnes tejobhir ā dadhe | udyan tām deva sūrya  
sapatnān eva ja-[6]hi | divīnān rāsmibhir jahi rūtrīśīnān tapasā  
vadhīs tām kantu amāhama-[7]n tamā | vāso virājo vṛśabho  
matinām ā ruroha śuklaprsthō antari-[8]kṣam. ghrtenārkaṁ abhy  
arcanti vātsaṁ vrahma santāṁ vrahmaṇā vardhayantu | divāṁ  
[9] ca roha prthivīm ca roha rāstraṁ ca roha draviṇāṁ ca roha |  
prajāṁ ca rohāmṛta- [10]tām ca roha rohitena tanvaṁ saṁ sprāsava  
| ye devā rāṣṭrabhṛto bhūto yanti sū- [11]ryasya tebhīḥ te rohitas  
sahvidānā | rāṣṭraṁ dadhātu sumanasyamānā | u [12] tvā yajñā  
vrahmapūtā vahanty abhyaktuṁ harayas tvā vahanti | tira- [13]s  
samudram atī rocase arṇavam rohito dyāvāprthivī adhi śrite |  
[14] vasujit gojī sandhanājīti sahasraṁ yasya draviṇāni sapta-  
[15]tir vocayan te nābhīm bhuvanasyādhī majmanī | yāś yāś  
pradi- [16]śo dīśo na yāśy paśūnām uta carṣapindam. paśuḥ prthi-  
[17]vyādityā upasthe asmi savilevu cāruḥ amitra sann iha vegathe  
[18] sannāna paśyati | gataḥ paśyanti rocanam diva sūryaṁ vipaś-  
yantam. | ā- [19]vo deva marcayaty antaś caraty arṇave | samānam  
agnisindhatetvaṁ viduḥ ka- [f235a]cayas pare z 4 z

Read: avācīnān ava jahindra vajreṇa bāhumān | adhā sapatnān  
māmakān agnes tejobhir ā dadhe z 1 z udyan tām deva sūrya  
sapatnān me 'va jahi | divīnān rāsmibhir jahi rūtrīśīnān tapasā  
vadhīs te yantu adhamam tamā z 2 z vāso virājo vṛśabho matinām  
ā ruroha śuklaprsthō antarīkṣam | ghrtenārkaṁ abhy arcanti  
vātsaṁ vrahma santāṁ vrahmaṇā vardhayantu z 3 z divāṁ ca roha  
prthivīm ca roha rāstraṁ ca roha draviṇāṁ ca roha | prajāṁ ca  
rohāmṛtaṁ ca roha rohitena tanvaṁ saṁ sprāsava z 4 z ye devā  
rāṣṭrabhṛto bhūto yanti sūryasya | tebhīḥ te rohitas sahvidāno  
rāṣṭraṁ dadhātu sumanasyamānā z 5 z ut tvā yajñā vrahmapūtā  
vahanty abhy aktuṁ harayas tvā vahanti | tiraś samudram atī  
rocase arṇavam z 6 z rohite dyāvāprthivī adhi śrite vasujiti gojiti  
sandhanājīti | sahasraṁ yasya draviṇāni saptatir vocyaṁ te nābhīm

bhuvanasyādhi majmani x 7 x yaśā yāsi pradiśo diśo 'nu yaśāḥ  
paśūnām uta carṣaṇīnām | yaśāḥ prthivyā adityā upasthe asmi  
saviteva cāroḥ x 8 x amutra sann iha vetaḥ saḥ tāni paśyati | itaḥ  
paśyanti rocanam divas sūryam vipaścitam x 9 x devo devān marca-  
yaty antaś curaty arpave | samānam agnim indhate tam viduḥ  
kavayaḥ pare x 10 x 4 x

St 2. This has appeared as Ppp 10.10.2, which should be corrected to read as here: see also Ppp 16.152.10.

St 6. In pāda h abhyaktam might be possible.

St 8. Pāda d in Ś begins aham bhūyāsam; our pāda probably needs correction.

St 9. In pādas ab Ś has vetthetah and paśyasi; if we should restore vettha then we ought to read paśyasi also.

## 19

## (Ś 13.1)

[f235a1] ayaḥ pareṇa para ity ekā x ekapadī dvīpadī [3] sā  
catuṣpady aṣṭāpadī navapadī babhūvuḥ sahasrākṣarā bhuvanasya  
pañktis ta-[3]syās samudrā adhi vi kṣaranti | ārohan dyām amṛtaḥ  
prā vapo badā | u taś ya-[4]jñam vrahmanāṣṭā vahanāḥ gṛhṣṇam  
pībantiṁ harayaḥ tvā vahanāḥ | vedat te gamanti ya-[5]t te bra-  
hmanam divi | yat te sadhastham parama vyoman. | sūryo dyām  
sūryaḥ prthivīm sū-[6]rya āpo ta paśyati | sūryo bhūtasyaḍikam  
cakṣur ā ruroha divam mahi | ārotr āsam [7] paridhāyo vedir  
bhūmir akalpata | tatṛāitāḥ aṣṭīry ādhanta himam ghrāṇsam ca  
rasihī-[8]tā | himam ghrāṇsam vādhāya yūpam kṛtyā parvatām. |  
varāṇjyāu agni jāte rohi-[9]tasya svarvidah svarvado rohitasya  
vrahmanāgnis samāhitah tasmād ghrāṇas ta-[10]smād yamas  
tasmād yajño ajāyuta | vrahmanāgnis samavidāno vrahmanavddho  
vā-[11]hmāhutaḥ vrahmeddhāu agnījāte rohitānāmya svarvidah  
apv anyas samāhi-[12]tah satye adbhīs samāhitah yat vātas pari-  
śumbhāti | iyam indro vrahmana-[12]s patiḥ vrahmeddhāu agnījāte  
rohitasya svarvidah x 5 x ity atharva-[13]nīkaḥ pīpalādaśākhāgām  
aṣṭadaśakāṇḍe tṛtīyo nūśakāḥ x

Read: ayaḥ pareṇa para <enāvareṇa padā vatsam bibhratī gaur  
ud asthāt | sā kadrīcī kam evid ardhām parīgāt kva evit sūte nahī  
yūthe asmin x 1> x ekapadī dvīpadī sā catuṣpady aṣṭāpadī navapadī  
babhūvuḥ | sahasrākṣarā bhuvanasya pañktis taśyās samudrā adhi

vi kṣaranti z 2 z ārohan dyām amṛtaḥ prāva me vacaḥ | ut tvā yajñā  
 vrahmapūtā vāhanti ghṛtaḥ pibantam harayas tvā vāhanti z 3 z  
 veda tat te amartya yat ta ākramanām divi | yat te sadhastham  
 parame vyoman z 4 z sūryo dyām sūryas prthivīm sūrya āpo 'ti  
 paśyati | sūryo bhūtasyaśikam cakṣur ā ruroha divam mahim z 5 z  
 urvīr āsan paridhayo vedir bhūmir akalpata | tatvātāy taṣṭiry  
 ādhatta himam ghraṇsam ca rohitāḥ z 6 z himam ghraṇsam cādhyā  
 yūpān kṛtvā parvatān | varṣājyāv agnī iḥate rohitasya svarvidah  
 z 7 z svarvido rohitasya vrahmañāgnis samāhitaḥ | tasmād ghraṇsas  
 tasmād dhimas tasmād yajño ajāyata z 8 z vrahmañāgni sainvidānau  
 vrahmayrddhāu vrahmahutāu | vrahmeddhāv agnī iḥate rohitasya  
 svarvidah z 9 z apsv anyas samāhitaḥ satye anyas samāhitaḥ |  
 vrahmeddhāv ° ° ° z 10 z yam vātas pariśumbhati yam indro  
 vrahmanas patih | vrahmeddhāv agnī iḥate rohitasya svarvidah  
 z 11 z 5 z

ity ātharvanike pāippalādsāsākhayām aṣṭādaśakāṇḍe tṛtīyo 'nuvākah  
 z 2

St 1. This previously appeared as 16. 67. 7 (— § 9. 9. 17)

St 3. Pādas be appeared in the preceding hymn as 6ab.

## 20

(§ 13. 1 and 2)

[f235a15] vedim bhūmim kalpayitvā divam kṛtvā dakṣiṇā |  
 ghraṇsān tad agnīm kṛtvā ca-[16]kāra viśvam ātmanvad varṣeṇā-  
 jyena rohitaḥ | varṣam ājyam ghraṇsā gñir ca-[17]dir bhūmir  
 akalpata | tatvātā sarvatān agnir girbhīr ārdhvān akalpayat.  
 gi-[18]bhīr ārdhvān kalpayitvā rohito bhūmim avarāt. | tad edam  
 sarvām jāyatām ya-[19]d bhūtam yat ca bhavayam. sa yajñas  
 prathamō bhūto bhavyo ajāyata | tasmādhyā ja-[20]yajñedam  
 sarvām yat kiā cedam vi rohite | rohiteṇa risanābhṛtam. ud  
 a-[f235b]sya ketavo divi śukrā bhṛājanta itate | ādityasya nṛcakṣaso  
 mahiterato-[2]sya mīḍhuyā | yajām prajāñānam svadayanā arciṣā  
 svapakṣam āsum palayanā-[3]m arṇave | svādama sūryam bhuvā-  
 nasya gopām yo raśmibhin diśūbhātī [4] sarvā | yat prām pratyam  
 svadhayā yādvi śīdhin nānārāpe ahanti ka-[5]rṣa māyā | tad āditya  
 me tat ta mayi svavodako vidvām pari bhūmi jā-[6]yase | vipā-  
 citam tarāṇīm bhṛājamānam vāhanti yam haritas sa-[7]ptā bahvūḥ  
 | śrutād divam atī divam anyanāya tam teḍ paśyema paryanti-[8]m

*ājim. mā tvā dadhām paryantam ājim sugena durgam ati yāhi śibham. [9] divaṁ ca sūryam prthivyaṁ ca devī ahorātre vimamāno yad eṣi | svasti te [10] sūrya carato rathāsi yenobbhāv anto paryāsi sadyaḥ | yan te vahanti [11] harito vahiṣṭhās tam ā roha sukhām āśyaśivam. 2 1 2*

Read: vedīm bhūmīm kalpayitvā divaṁ kṛtvā dakṣiṇām | ghraṇsam tad agnīm kṛtvā cakāra viśvam ātmanvad varṣepājyena rohitaḥ x 1 x varṣam ājyam ghraṇso 'gnir vedir bhūmir akalpata | tatratātān parvatān agnir gīrbhīr ūrdhvān akalpayat x 2 x gīrbhīr ūrdhvān kalpayitvā rohito bhūmim avravīt | tad idam sarvaṁ jāyatām yad bhūtām yac ca bhavyam x 3 x sa yajñas prathamō bhūto bhavyo ajāyata | tasmād dhā jajña idam sarvaṁ yat kiṁ cedam virocate rohiteṇa ṛṣiṇābhṛtam x 4 x ud asya ketavo divi śukrā bhrājanta irate | ādityasya ṛcaksaso mahivratasya mīdhugaḥ x 5 x tyāśān prajñānām svarayanto arciṣā supakṣam āsuṁ patayantam arṇave | stavāms sūryam bhuvanasya gopām yo raśmibhir diśa ābhāti sarvāḥ x 6 x yat prāṇ pratyau svadhayā tyādevī śibham nānārūpe ahañi karṣi māyayā | tad āditya mahi tat te mahi śravo yad eko viśvam pari bhūma jāyase x 7 x vipaścitam taraṇīm bhrājamānaṁ vahanti yaṁ haritas sapta bahvīḥ | śrutād yam atir divam unṇināya tam tvā paśyema pariyāntam ājim x 8 x mā tvā dadhām pariyāntam ājim sugena durgam ati yāhi śibham | divaṁ ca sūrya prthivīm ca devīm ahorātre vimamāno yad eṣi x 9 x svasti te sūrya carato rathasya yenobbhāv antau pariyāsi sadyaḥ | yaṁ te vahanti harito vahiṣṭhās tam ā roha sukhām ā svaśvyam x 10 x 1 x

This hymn is made up of stanzas which in Ś are 13. 1. 52-55 and 13. 2. 1-6. Whitney remarks that Ś 13. 1. 56-60 are well omitted.

St 6. In pāda a āśām might be acceptable: Ś has diśām prajñānām svarayantam.

St 7. In pāda a yāsi, as in Ś, would be the most acceptable emendation.

## 21

## (Ś 13. 2)

[f235b11] sukhām sūrya [12] ratham anśumanam syono sya vahniṁ adhi tiṣṭha vājinam. | yan te vahanti ha-[13]rito vahiṣṭhāś śatam aśvā yadī vās sapta bahniḥ sapta śūro hariṣṭhā-[14]ś śatam aśvā yadī vās sapta bahvīḥ | sapta śūro harito yālave ra-[15]ho hiranyatuvaco vṛhatir yuāktāḥ amoti śakro rajasiḥ parastā-[16]d

vadhūya devas tamo divasā ruhāt. uta ketunā vrhatā deva āgaṃ  
 [17] nupāyavantuṃ aṇḍha jyotir aśvāḥ divyas suparnas athavīro  
 vyakṣaṇa ādi-[18]tṛyaḥ putraṃ nāthagāṃ abhayaṃ atitā | udyan  
 raśmīn ā tanuḥ prajāḥ sa-[19]rgā vi paśyati | ubhā samudrāu  
 kratunā vi bhāsi sarvāṃ loka [f236a] \* \* \* \* \*  
 śiśūḥ kundanā paryāto adhivaram. | [2] viśvāny \*ng\* bhuv\*n\* \* \* \*  
 hiranyo \*\*\*ito vahanti z divi [3] tvā u dhārayat sūryā māsāya  
 kartavye | sa eka sudhṛtas tapan svar bhātā [4] vi cākaśat. z ubhāv  
 antāu sam ariṣati vatsas sammātaram iva | nanv e-[5]ti pīaras  
 purā vrahma devyā amī viduḥ yat samudram adhi śritam tat  
 śivyaṣu-[6]ta sūrya | madhvaś ca vīlato mahān pūrvas cāparaś ca  
 yaḥ tvaṃ sam āpnojyo jūtibhi-[7]s tasmātmāpa jigīṣati | tenā-  
 mptasya bhakṣaṇaṃ devānāṃ nāva rundhate |

One upper corner of the ms is completely gone taking half of the first line of f236a and some of the second line. This hymn is accented in the ms.

Read: sukhāṃ sūrya ratnaṃ anśumantaṃ syonaṃ suvahnīm adhi  
 tiṣṭha vājinam | yaṃ te vahanti harito vahisthāś śatam aśvā yadi  
 vā sapta bahvīḥ z 1 z sapta sūryo harito yātave rathe hiranyatva-  
 caṣo vrhatir ayuṣkta | amoci śukro rajasaś parastīd vidhūya devas  
 tamo divasā ā ruhāt z 2 z ut ketunā vrhatā deva āgaṃ apāyuvan  
 tamo abhi jyotir aśvāḥ | divyas suparnas athavīro vy akhyaḥ adityāś  
 putraṃ nāthagāmo 'bhi yāmi bhītāḥ z 3 z udyan raśmīn ā tanuḥ  
 prajāḥ sarvā vi paśyasi | ubhāṃ samudrāu kratunā vi bhāsi sarvāḥ  
 lokān paribhūr bhrājamānaḥ z 4 z pūrvāparam carato māyayātāu  
 āśāḥ {kundanā pari yāto adhivaram | viśvāny anyo bhuvanābhicagṣe  
 anyan hiranyā harito vahanti z 5 z divi tvā tu dhārayat sūrya  
 māsāya kartave | sa eka sudhṛtas tapan svar bhātāvacaśakat z 6 z  
 ubhāv antāu sam ariṣati vatsas sammātaram iva | nanv etad itaś  
 purā vrahma devā amī viduḥ z 7 z yat samudram adhi śritam tat  
 śivyaṣuta sūryaḥ | adhvāśya vīlato mahān pūrvas cāparaś ca yaḥ  
 z 8 z taṃ samāpnoti jūtibhis tasmān nāpa cikīṣati | tenāṃptasya  
 bhakṣaṇaṃ devāṇaṃ nāva rundhate z 9 z 2 z

This hymn is accented in the ms.

St 2. In pāda a sūro would give an acceptable meaning.

St 3. In pāda b if apāyuvan may be accepted as pres. ppl. the rest is probably good. In c we might consider retaining vyakṣaṇa as a pres. ppl. For d see 24. 4d.

St 4. Pāda a has occurred as Ppp 4. 16. 8a; b seems to be new. The lacunae are filled out from 8.

St 5. Pādas abc have appeared above as 3. 2abc, and they are also § 7. 81. 1abc. RV 10. 85. 18 has adhvaram as here, and so do MS and TB. The last pāda here is similar to pāda d of § 13. 2. 11; others are entirely different.

St 6. In pāda a § has tvātrir, in d viśvā bhūtā<sup>o</sup>: d has appeared as Ppp 5. 38. 4b.

St 8. In pāda b it may be that siṣṣati as in § is intended, or vivyāsati.

St 9. The ms gives no indication of the end of this hymn, but as the next stanza is RV 1. 50. 1 it seems proper to begin the next hymn with that stanza.

22

(§ 13. 2)

[f286a7] u-[8]d u tyam jātavedasam devam vahanti ketavaḥ dṛṣe  
viśvāya sūryam. | apa tye [9] tāyavo yathā nakṣatrā yanty  
aktubhīḥ sūrya viśvacaksase | adṛśann asya [10] ketavo vi  
raśmāyo janān anu | bhrājanto agnayo yathā | taranir viśvada-  
[11]rāto jyotiṣkṛd asi sūrya | viśvam ā bhāsi rocanā | pratyam  
devānām viśv-[12]s pratyam ud eṣi mānuṣi | pratyam viśvam svar  
dṛṣe | yenā pāvaka cakṣaḥ [13] bhuranyantam janān anu | tvam  
varuṇa paśyasi vi dyām eṣi rajas prthv a-[14]hā mimāno aktubhīḥ  
paśyaṇ janmāni sūrya | sapta tvā harito rathe rāha-[15]nti deva  
sūrya | sapta tvā harito rathe vahanti deva sūrya | śociṣkeśam  
vi-[16]cakṣana | ayukta sapta śundhyavas sūro rathasya naptyaḥ  
ābhīr yāti mayukti-[17]bhīḥ abhi a varcasā gīras siñcantir ā  
caranyataḥ abhi vatsan na dho-[18]navaḥ tā ṛsantu śubhṛigaḥ  
prācāḥ varcasā priyaḥ jāta jātir yathā hr-[19]dā z 5 z

The ms writes accents in this hymn also.

Read: ud u tyam jātavedasam devam vahanti ketavaḥ | dṛṣe  
viśvāya sūryam z 1 z apa tye tāyavo yathā nakṣatrā yanty aktubhīḥ  
| sūrya viśvacaksase z 2 z adṛśann asya ketavo vi raśmāyo janān  
anu | bhrājanto agnayo yathā z 3 z taranir viśvadarāto jyotiṣkṛd  
asi sūrya | viśvam ā bhāsi rocanam z 4 z pratyam devānām viśv  
pratyam ud eṣi mānuṣi | pratyam viśvam svar dṛṣe z 5 z yenā  
pāvaka cakṣaḥ bhuranyantam janān anu | tvam varuṇa paśyasi  
z 6 z vi dyām eṣi rajas prthv ahā mimāno aktubhīḥ | paśyaṇ  
janmāni sūrya z 7 z sapta tvā harito rathe vahanti deva sūrya |  
śociṣkeśam vicakṣana z 8 z ayukta sapta śundhyavas sūro rathasya



naptyaḥ | tābhir yāti svayuktibhīḥ z 9 z abhi mā varcasā giras  
śīcanti ā caratyatīḥ | abhi vatsam na dhenavaḥ z 10 z tū arṣantu  
śubhriyaḥ pñcatīr varcasā payaḥ | jātaḥ jātir yathā bṛdā z 11 z 3 z

The first nine stanzas here are RV 1. 50. 1-9; they appear in a number of other texts, but more notable perhaps is the fact that the eleven stanzas of this Pāipp hymn are Ś 20. 47. 13-21 plus 48. 1 and 2.

St 3. In pāda a RV, Ś 20. 47, and some others have adṛśam.

St 4. In pāda c rocanā as in the ms could stand, but it would be more awkward than rocanam which most texts have; but Ś has rocana in 13. 2. 19 and it may be that something of that sort is in the Atharvan tradition.

St 7. In pāda b only Ś in Bk 13 has ahar.

St 8. In pāda b I give °caksana with RV, SV, and TS, also Ś 20. 47. 23; here, however, as in st 4c it may be that the Atharvan tradition is °caksanam.

St 10. In pāda a Ś has tvā, and in b °yuvah.

## 23

## (Ś 13. 2)

[f236a19] vajra eva sādḥvyaḥ kintyaḥ śreyamānam ā vaham. ||  
[f236b] mahyam āru gṛhṭagṛha priyaḥ roḥito \* \* \* \* \*  
[2] nī gāyitasyo jāyate namas sa devānām adhipatīr babhūva | y\*  
viśvacaśaṇi-[3]r uta viśvatomukho viśvatoḥkur uta viśvataspatī. |  
sami bāhubyām dhāmātī [4] aspatatādir dyāvadbhūmī janayan deva  
ekah | ekapā devipado bhūya vi [5] cakrame ta ekapadas taneḥm sam  
āsate | atandro yāsyām harito yad āsthā-[6]d divi rūpaḥ kṛnūthe  
rocāmānaḥ ketumān rubhyaḥ sahamāno rajāsi viśvā-[7]dibhyaḥ  
pravato vi bhāvasi | haṇ mahān asi sūrya haḥ adītya mahān a-[8]si  
| mahas te mahato mahimās tvasādītya mahān asi | rocase divi  
ro-[9]casse rocasse rocasse pu anteḥ | ubhā samudro ruḥ vy āpita  
devo devāsi [10] mahiṣa svervī | arvāk parastād vaco viddhāśur  
vipaścit patayam patāṅgaḥ [11] viśnur vicittas śavame sādḥvīśṭham  
pra ketunā sahate viśvam ejaḥ. tigmo [12] pibhrajam tanvāś śśāno  
ruṣigamāsun āhravato varānāḥ jyotiṣmān pañkī [13] mahiṣo  
vayodhā viśvāśhās padīśas kalpamānaḥ | citras cikituḥ mahi-  
[14]ṣas suparnārocayan nodasim antarikṣam. | āhorātri parī sūryam  
vadaṇa [15] pra pya viśvās tirato vīryāni z 4 z

The break on this folio has destroyed the second half of line 1 of f236b. Accents are marked on the first four stanzas. In the left hand margin of f236b opposite line 6 is *sa* correcting *kr̥nute*.

Read: *ugrāya fvasā dhiyaḥ kīrtiṁ āremāṇam ā vahān | mahyam āyur ghṛtaṁ payaḥ x 1 x roḥito <divam āruhat tapasā tapasvī | sa yo>nīm āiti sa ū jūyate punas sa devānām adhipatir babbūva x 2 x yo viśvacarṣanir uta viśvatomukho viśvatobāhur uta viśvatespāt | saṁ bāhubhyām dhamati saṁ patatrāir dyāvābhūmī janayan deva ekaḥ x 3 x ekapād dvipado bhūyo vi cakrame <dvipāt tripādam abhy eti paścāt | dvipād dha śaṭpado bhūyo vi cakrame> ta ekapadaa tanvam saṁ āsate x 4 x atandro yāyan harito yad āsthāt divi rūpaḥ kṛṇuṣe rocāmāṇaḥ | ketumān udyan sahamāno rajāṁsi viśvā āditya pravato vi bhāsi x 5 x baṇ mahān asi sūrya baḍ āditya mahān asi | mahāne te mahato mahimā tvam āditya mahān asi x 6 x rocase divi rocase rocase rocse 'per antaḥ | ubhā samudrān rocā vy āpitha devo devāsi mahiṣaḥ svarjit x 7 x arvāk parastāt fvaso vyadhva āsur vipāścit patayan patamgaḥ | viṣṇur vicittas śavasādhitīṣṭhan pra ketunā sahate viśvam ejaḥ x 8 x tigmo vibhrājan tanvaś āśāno ftraṅgamāsun pravato rarāpaḥ | jyotiṣmān pakṣi mahiṣo vayodhā viśvā āsthāḥ pradīśaś kalpamāṇaḥ x 9 x citraś cikivān mahiṣas suparṣa ārcayan rodasi antarikṣam | ahorātre pari sūryam vaśāne prāśya viśvā tirato vīryāṇi x 10 x 4 x*

St 1. This is § 20. 48. 3, which has *yāsaso dhiyaḥ* ° *indriyam* ° in *ab*.

St 2. At the beginning of f236b2 the ms is slightly cracked and the letters may be *nimā* ° instead of *nigā* ° as given in transliteration. Whitney reports that Ppp reads *ākramīt* in *a*; the birchbark is broken and in my copy of Bm several pages are missing just here, so I cannot verify the report. This stanza is § 13. 2. 25.

St 3. This appears RV 10. 81. 3 and elsewhere; *pāda a* is given here as in §, but agree with RV.

St 5. In *pāda b* § has *dve rūpe kṛṇute*.

St 6. For this stanza we surely have the same text as in §; RV and others vary considerably.

St 7. In *ab* § has, between the second and third *rocase*, *antarikṣe patamga pythivyaṁ*.

St 8. In *pāda a* § has *arvān* ° *prayato*; at the end of *d* *svartit*.

St 9. In *pāda a* *tanvaś* is perhaps not as good as *tanvam* in §; in *d* § has *āsthāt*.

## 24

(§ 13.2)

[f236b15] citraṁ devānām ketur anikaṁ [16] jyotiṣmān pradiśas sūrya udyam. divākaro tu dyumnāś tamāṁśi viśvātārya [17] duritāni sukrā | citraṁ devānām ud agād anikaṁ cakṣur mītrasya varuṇa- [18] syāgneḥ āprā dyāvāprthivī antarikṣam sūrya ātmā jagatas tasthuś ca z [19] uccā patam aruṇam suparṇam madhye divas taruṇīm bhṛājām, paśyema tvā suri- [f237a] tāraṇi yam āhur ajasraṁ jyotir yad evaśad atri divas prṣṭhe dhāvamānam suparṇam [2] nādityas putram nāthagāma bha yāma bhītā | sa nā sūryas pratad dirgham āyur mā [3] viśāma sumatāu te syāma | ahorātrāṇi vi dadāthi kṛvāṇas pārthi- [4] vāḥ rajah navam navam sakhi bhavanam kṛvase deve sūrya | sahasrāṇyām yutāv asya [5] pakṣāu harer haṁsasya haritas svargam. | sa viśvāṁ devāṁ līnas saptaṭhus sampeśa- [6] n yāti bhuvanāni viśvā | rohito loko bhavubhū rohito gre prajāpatih rohi- [7] to yajñānā sukham rohito jyotir ucyase | rohito bhūto bhavat. | rohito rāśmi- [8] bhīḥ bhūmyam samudram anu saṁ cara | sarad diśas saṁ carati rohito adhi- [9] patir divaḥ diśāṁ samudram ād bhūmyam sarvān lokān vi rakati z 5 z

In the right hand margin of f237a, opposite line 3, is dathi. The ms marks accents on the first two stanzas.

Read: citraṁ devānām ketur anikaṁ jyotiṣmān pradiśas sūrya udyam | divākaro 'ti dyumnāś tamāṁśi viśvātārīd duritāni sukrāḥ z 1 z citraṁ devānām ud agād anikaṁ cakṣur mītrasya varuṇa- syāgneḥ | āprā dyāvāprthivī antarikṣam sūrya ātmā jagatas tasthuś ca z 2 z uccā patantam aruṇam suparṇam madhye divas taruṇīm bhṛājamānam | paśyema tvā savitāram yam āhur ajasraṁ jyotir yad evaśad atriḥ z 3 z divas prṣṭhe dhāvamānam suparṇam adityās putram nāthagāmo 'bhi yāmi bhītāḥ | sa nāḥ sūrya pra tira dirgham āyur mā viśāma sumatāu te syāma z 4 z ahorātrāṇi vidadhāt kṛvāṇas pārthivāḥ rajah | navam-navam sakhibhavanam kṛvase deva sūrya z 5 z sahasrāṇyām yutāv asya pakṣāu harer haṁsasya haratas svargam | sa viśvāṁ devāṁ tīras saptaṭhus sampeśyan yāti bhuvanāni viśvā z 6 z rohito loko 'bhavad rohito 'gre prajāpatih | rohito yajñānām mukham rohito jyotir ucyate z 7 z rohito bhūto 'bhavad <rohito 'ty atapaḥ divam> | rohito rāśmibhir bhūmīm samudram anu saṁ carat z 8 z sarvā diśas saṁ carati rohito adhipatir divaḥ | divaṁ samudram ād bhūmīm sarvān lokān vi rakati z 9 z 5 z

St 2. This is RV 1. 115. 1, appearing also in a number of other texts; only § 13. 2. 35 has āprūd in c.

St 5. This stanza is new except that a appears as RV 10. 190. 2c.

St 6. In pāda a § has viyatāu, in b patatah, and in c urasy upadadya.

St 7. Pāda a here is § st 40a; § 39a has kīlo; our d has no parallel.

St 8. Pāda a has no parallel.

## 25

## (§ 13. 2)

[f237a10] vitanyaṣṭam prati muñcate srja mubūrte raśmim  
aśśurā vrhanam. diu varas pa-[11]śyati yat parāt param parā  
hā prauṣṣmagād vīcam aprādhiraṇmagam haritas ke-[12]tar  
udyam. | ārohaṣ lakro vrhanār yuñktor amartyas kṛyusa vīryāni |  
di-[13]vyas suparno mahiṣam catarāśhā ya | sarvāṇ lokāṇ abhi yed  
vibhāti | abhy a-[14]nyad eti sadyo gam viśvām akorātrābhyām  
mahīṣāt kalpamānaḥ sūryam varyaṁ ra-[15]jasi kṣiyante gāturidam  
havāmahe nāthamānā | prithivipro mahiṣo [16] bādhamānāsu  
gāturadbhūtacakṣus pari sarnam balhāṣā | vīśvam sampatyam suvi-  
[17]datro yajatre śivāyā nas tanuā karna yaśchāt. | pary asya  
mahimā prihi-[18]ryām samudram jyotiṣā bibhṛtjam parya dyām  
antarikṣam. akorātrābhyām sāha [19] sarvasānā uṣā vīgya pra-  
tarād aviṣtam. abobhy agnis samidhā ja-[20]nām prati dhenum  
ivāgatīsuṣam. | gahvā iva pra vadyam ujji-[f237b]hānāḥ pra  
bhānavas asrje nāva|m atsva kumāram mātā yuvatir garbham  
anta-[2]r guhā dadāti na dadāti pitre | anekam asya na mīnaḥ  
jānāsaḥ puras pa-[3]śyanti nihilam aratū | tam etam tra yuvatīḥ  
kumāram peṣi bibharṣi mahiṣi jajā-[4]na pūrvaṁ di garbhak karad  
vavardhāpāṣyāṇ jātam yad asūta mātā | yasya tīro tanu-[5]na  
ekadhātmatō smāi balim devajānā haranti | yasyāśu dyāṁḥ prthivy  
antarikṣam [6] gukyaṁ pra tiṣṭhāt madhunāsaktā | nava divo  
devajanena guptā navāntarikṣāni [7] nava bhūmayemāni | yasmīn  
idam saream ota protam yasmād anyam aparaṁ kiṁ curāsti [8]  
z 6 z

In the left hand margin of f237a opposite line 10 is rya, and just above that is (?)vyāṇ.

Read: †vitanyaṣṭam prati muñcate †srja mubūrte raśmim

nāśam vṛhantam | divāvaras paśyati yat parāt param tparāhvā  
 pravṛṣṇapād† viśvam āprād dhiraṇmayam haritaḥ ketur udyan z 1 z  
 ūrohan śukro vṛhatir tyaṇkter amarityaḥ kṛṇṣe vīryāṇi | divyaa  
 suparṇo mahiṣo vātarañihā yah sarvān lokān abhi yad vibhāti z 2 z  
 abhy anyad eti sadyo tyaṇ tvasāvam ahorātrābhyām mahiṣaḥ kalpa-  
 mānaḥ | sūryam vayam rajasi kṣiyantaṁ gātuvidam havāmahe  
 nāthumānāḥ z 3 z pṛthivīpro mahiṣo bādhmānasya gātur adbhuta-  
 caksuḥ pari sarvaṁ babhūva | viśvam sahpaśyan suvidatro yajatraś  
 śivāyā na tanvā śarma yaschāt z 4 z pary aśya mahimā pṛthivīm  
 samudraṁ jyotiṣā vibhrajau pari dyām antarikṣam | ahorātrā-  
 bhyām saha saṁvasānā uśa nīyus pratarād āviṣtam z 5 z abodhy  
 agnis semidhā janānām prati dhenum ivāyatīm uśāsam | yāhvā iva  
 pra vayām ujjihānaḥ pra bhānavas sssjre nākam accha z 6 z  
 kumāraṁ mātā yuvatiḥ garbham antar guhā dadhāti na dadāti  
 pītre | anīkam aśya na minaj janāsaḥ puras paśyanti nibitam  
 aratāu z 7 z tam etaṁ tvaṁ yuvatiḥ kumāraṁ peśi bibharṣi mahiṣaḥ  
 jajāna | pūrvir hi garbhāś śarado vavardhāpaśyam jātum yad asūta  
 mātā z 8 z yasya tiso tvaṁna ekadhātmat† 'smāi balim devajanā  
 haranti | yasyāsān dyāus pṛthivy antarikṣam guhyam pra tiṣṭhanti  
 madhunaśaktā z 9 z nava divo devajanena guptā navāntarikṣāṇi  
 nava bhūmaya imāḥ | yasminn idam sarvaṁ otaṁ protam yasmād  
 anyan na param kiñ canāsti z 10 z 6 z

St 1. This has no parallel.

St 2. Pādas acd here are somewhat similar to st 42 in Ś.

St 4. Pāda d here is new; the rest is at 44 in Ś, which has nādh° in a and adabdhā° in b.

St 5. Pādas cd have no parallel.

St 6. This is the last stanza in Ś 13. 2, and it appears as RV 5. 1. 1 and elsewhere. RV and Ś have aśrate in d.

St 7. This and the next are RV 5. 2. 1 and 2. In ab RV has °tiḥ samubdham guhā bibharṣi.

St 8. In pāda a RV has kam ° ° yuvate.

St 9. This and the next stanza are new except that 10d is Vāit 25. 12b.

[f237b8] na tasmāt pūrvam na param nu asti na bhūtam noda  
 bhavyam yad aṣit. | sahasraṇā-[9]d v ekamūrdhā dvidyātmā sa  
 evaṁ avarivarti bhūtim. | ekākam ye patayas su-[10]parṇas

*sopam dipsanto hy ānibādhāt. | kas teṣām veda pitarām mātaraṁ ca ko [11] nidhām vyānam eṣām. | ebhir vāta itas pravāte ya dadante pañca daśa sadhri-[12]et yāhutim atimanyanti devā imām nētāraṣ katame ta ā-[13]san. | imām eṣām prthivīm vasta eṣo antarikṣam pary eko babhū-[14]va | divam eṣām dadhate yo vidhartās sarvā diśo rakṣaty eka eṣām. [15] zz 7 zz zz ity ātharvanika pāipalādayāś śākhayām aṣṭā-[16]daśakāṇḍe caturtho nuvākaḥ zz zz*

Read: na tasmāt pūrvam na param nv asti na bhūtaṁ na bhavyam yad āsit | sahasrapād v ekamūrdhā dvāyātmā sa evāikam ā varivartti bhūtam x 1 x ekāikam ye patayas suparjās {sopam dipsanto {hy ānibādhāt} | kas teṣām veda pitarām mātaraṁ ca ko nidhām vyānam eṣām x 2 x yebhir vāta itas pravāte ye dadante pañca daśas sadhricāḥ | ya āhutim atimanyanti devā imām nētāraṣ katame ta āsan x 3 x imām eṣām prthivīm vasta eko antarikṣam pary eko babhūva | divam eṣām dadate yo vidhartā sarvā diśo rakṣaty eka eṣām x 4 x 7 x

ity ātharvanike pāippalādayām śākhayām aṣṭādaśakāṇḍe caturtho 'nuvākaḥ zz zz

St 1. This and the next are new. In 2d it might be an improvement if prāpaṁ were inserted after nidhām.

St 3. This and the next are § 10.8.35 and 36, also in JUB 1.34. § has atyamanyanta in c, and apām in d of st 3. For 4d § has viśvā śāśāḥ prati rakṣanty eke and JUB agrees with it except in having anye for eke.

## 27

(§ 15.1)

[f237b16] vrādyāu vā ida āgra āsi-[17]t triryamāna eva sat prajāpatiṁ samirayat. | sa prajāpatir ātmanas supa-[18]rnam apaiyat tad ekam abhavat tat lalāmam abhavat tan mahad bhavaṁ ta jyeghho bhavat ta-[19]t tayābhavat tat satyam abhavad vrahmābhavat tena prajāyata | so varāhata sa macā-[20]n abhavat sa mahādevo bhavat sa tsāna bhavat sa devānām ekavratīyo bhava-[21]t sa dhanur āt tad indradhanur abhavat. | ullam asyodaram lokin asya prṣṭhi ut-[f238a]lenāpriyam loketi lokitena dvigantam viddhata itī vrahmanāddina vadanti | sa [2] prācīr diśam anu vy acalata x 7 x

In the left hand margin of f237b opposite line 17 is trya, correcting trirya.

Read: vrātyo vā id agra āsīt tīryamāṇa eva sa prajāpatiḥ sam  
 ārayat x 1 x sa prajāpatir ātmanas saparṇam apaśyat x 2 x tad  
 ekam abhavat tai lālāmam abhavat tan mahad abhavat taj jyeṣṭham  
 abhavat tat tapo 'bhavat tat satyam abhavat tad vrahmābhavat tena  
 prajāyata x 3 x so 'vardhata sa mahān abhavat sa mahādevo 'bhavat  
 x 4 x sa īśāno 'bhavat sa devānām x 5 x <sa> ekavrātyo 'bhavat sa  
 dhanur ādatta tad indradhanur abhavat x 6 x nīlam asyodaram  
 lohitaṁ asya prāṭham x 7 x nīlenāpriyaḥ lokoti lohiteṇa dvīśantaḥ  
 vidhyatīti vrahmavādīno vadanti x 8 x sa prācīn dīśam anu vy  
 acalat x 9 x 1 x

St 1. The form tīryamāṇaḥ is doubtful, and perhaps we should  
 read tīyamāṇaḥ with Ś.

St 5. Perhaps we should follow Ś here and read sa devānām  
 īśān paryāit.

St 9. This is the first clause of Ś 15, 2, 1, with omission of sa  
 ud atīṣṭhat at the beginning.

## 28

(Ś 16, 1)

[1238a2] atisrṣṭo apām vṛsabho atī-[3]atisrṣṭāgnayo divyā rujaḥ  
 parirujan sṛṇo apām vṛsabho atisrṣṭā-[4]gnayo divyā rujaḥ pari-  
 rujam sṛṇo paśuṇaḥ proko mānohā śano nirdahātsa-[5]dūṣi tanu-  
 dūṣi | idam tuān atī sṛjāmi tāt paśavo mitrāvaruṇā ma prāpā-  
 [6]pānā agnir me dakṣam dadhātu vidma te svapna janitram x 6 x

Read: atisrṣṭo apām vṛsabho atisrṣṭā agnayo divyā x 1 x rujaḥ  
 parirujan mṛṇan parimṛṇan x 2 x mroko mānohā śano nirdāha  
 ātmadūṣi tanūdūṣi x 3 x idam tam atī sṛjāmi tam <mābhy ava  
 nīkṣi x 4 x> paśavo <māpa atheṣur> mitrāvaruṇā me prāpāpānā  
 agnir me dakṣam dadhātu x 5 x vidma te svapna janitram x 6 x 2 x

St 2. Ś has pramṛṇan.

St 3. For this and st 4 cf Ppp 10. 9. 1, and SMB 1. 7. 1; also  
 Ś 10. 5. 21.

St 5. This is Ś 16. 4. 7 with omission of śakvaṛī stha at the  
 beginning. In Ś this stanza ends the first anuvāka of Book 16.

St 6. This is the first clause of Ś 16. 5. 1, and is the first clause  
 of all but two stanzas of Ppp 17. 24.



## 29

(§ 16.9)

[f238a6] jitam a-[7]smākam udbhinam asmākam abhiyāhām  
 viśāt prānā arāṣṭi svabhāyavartayā | [8] sūryasyā vralam annāvrta  
 dakṣiṇām anv āvṛta ma tad agnir āha tad u so-[9]mo āha loka  
 mādhāt sukrāsyā loka | agavda svar agavda sam sūryasya jyotiṣā-  
 [10]gavda | vasyobhūyāya vasumān yajño vasuṣiṣya vasumān  
 yajño vasuṣiṣya [11] vasumān bhūyāsam. z z ity atharvanike  
 pāipalādāyāś śākhā-[12]yām aṣṭādaśakāṇḍe pañcamo nūvākaḥ z z

Read: jitam asmākam udbhinam asmākam abhy aṣṭhām viśvāḥ  
 prānā arāṣṭi | svabhāyavartayā z 1 z sūryasyāvṛtam anvāvarte  
 dakṣiṇām anv āvṛtam | tad agnir āha tad u soma āha loka mā dhāt  
 sukrāsyā loka z 2 z aganma svāḥ svar aganma sam sūryasya  
 jyotiṣāganma z 3 z vasyobhūyāya vasumān yajño vasu vaṣiṣiṣya  
 vasumān bhūyāsam z 4 z 3 z

ity atharvanike pāipalādāyām śākhāyām aṣṭādaśakāṇḍe pañcamo  
 'nūvākaḥ zz zz

St 1. This is also § 10. 5. 36ab; I suspect that the last bit here  
 is commentary.

St 2. Pādas ab are § 10. 5. 37ab, and Ppp 10. 10. 3ab: pāda c  
 is of rather frequent occurrence, e.g. Ppp 2. 24. 5c and 15. 6. 5c.  
 § has pūṣā in d.

St 3. This and the next occur TS 1. 6. 6. 1 and 2. In § this  
 is the end of the second anuvāka and of the book.

## 30

(§ 17.1)

[f238a12] viśvamahyaṁ sahamā-[13]nam sahasānam sahyānam-  
 sam sahamānam sahojitam | viśvajitam svarjitam-[14]m abhijitam  
 vasujitam gojitam samhitam sandhanajitam. | ityam nāma [15]  
 bhūyā indram āyusmān priya bhūyāsam. | viśvasāhyam sahamānam  
 sa-[16]hasānam sahyānam sahasānam mahojitam. | viśvajitam  
 dhanajitam va-[17]rjitam abhijitam vasujitam gojitam samjitam  
 santunajitam. | [18] ityam nāma hūya indram devānam priya  
 bhūyāsam. | viśvasāhyam sa-[19]hamānam sahasānam sahyānam  
 sahamānam sahojitam viśvajitam va-[20]rjitam abhijitam vasu-

*jitaṁ gojitaṁ sañjitaṁ saṁdhanājitaṁ. |* [f238b] *īḍyaṁ nāma  
bhūya indram paśūnāṁ priyo bhūyāsam. x 1 z*

In f238a12 *viśāmahyaṁ* is corrected (interlinear) to *°sahyaṁ*: in the right hand margin of f238a about opposite line 15 is *saśāyaṁ* and there is a cross under the "b" of *sahamānam*.

Read: *viśāsaḥiṁ sahamānaṁ sāsaḥānaṁ sahyānsam | sahamā-  
naṁ sahojitaṁ viśvajitaṁ svarjitaṁ abhijitaṁ vasujitaṁ gojitaṁ  
sañjitaṁ saṁdhanājitaṁ | īḍyaṁ nāma †bhūya indram āyemān  
bhūyāsam x 1 z viśāsaḥiṁ sahamānaṁ sāsaḥānaṁ sahyānsam |  
sahamānaṁ sahojitaṁ viśvajitaṁ svarjitaṁ abhijitaṁ vasujitaṁ  
gojitaṁ sañjitaṁ saṁdhanājitaṁ | īḍyaṁ nāma †hūya indram  
devānāṁ priyo bhūyāsam x 2 z viśāsaḥiṁ sahamānaṁ sāsaḥānaṁ  
sahyānsam | sahamānaṁ sahojitaṁ viśvajitaṁ svarjitaṁ abhijitaṁ  
vasujitaṁ gojitaṁ sañjitaṁ saṁdhanājitaṁ | īḍyaṁ nāma †hūya  
indram paśūnāṁ priyo bhūyāsam x 3 z 1 z*

In the last sentence of each stanza *ś* has *hva indram*; we might read *huva indram* here with some assurance, or perhaps *hva indram* as in *ś*. The ms offers no excuse for restoring the stanzas which are 3 and 5 in *ś*.

## 31

(ś 17. 1)

[f238b1] *ud iḥya ud e-[2]hi sūrya varcasā mādhy ud ehi |  
dviḥyāś ca mahyaṁ ruddha mā cāham dviḥyate ratham. [3] ma  
taveda viṣṇo bahudhā vīryāni tan naḥ prṇthi paśubhir viśvarūpāiḥ  
eva-[4]dhāyan no dḥeki parame vyoman. ud iḥy ud ihi sūrya  
varcasā mādhy ud ihi | [5] yāś ca paścāmi yāś ca na te yuṣme |  
sumatiṁ gratha sumatāu te syāma staveda [6] viṣṇo bahudhā  
vīryāni taṁ naḥ prṇthi paśubhir viśvarūpāiḥ svadhāyan no dḥe-[7]hi  
parame vyoman. sa tvā dābhan salile pṣu antar ye pāśinam upa-  
tiṣṭhamity atra [8] kīlvidāstīṁ dīvam ā ruha etāṁ sa no mīḥ  
sumatāu syāma | staveda [9] viṣṇo bahudhā vīryāni tan naḥ prṇthi  
paśubhir viśvarūpāiḥ svadhāyan no [10] dhihi parame vyoman.  
taṁ na indra mahate sūbhagāyā adadhāis pari pāhy agu-  
[11]bhīś taveda viṣṇo bahudhā vīryāni taṁ naḥ prṇthi paśubhir  
viśvarūpāiḥ [12]s svadhāyan no dḥeki parame vyoman. taṁ na  
indro adbhīś divādbhīś śantamo śha-[13]va | ārohaṇ tridivam divo  
grṇānas somapitaye priyadhāmā svastaye | [14] taveda viṣṇo  
bahudhā vīryāni tan naḥ prṇthi paśubhir viśvarūpāiḥ svadhā-[15]yan*

no dhehi parame vyoman. | tvam indrāsi viśvavit sarvāt. puruḥūtas  
 tvam i-[16]ndru evaṁ svaha stomam ertayasva | śivābhis tanubhīr  
 abhi na svajamba taveda [17] viṣṇo bahudhā vīryāṇi | tan naṣ  
 prūhi paśu viśvarūpāis svadhāya-[18]n no dhehi parame  
 vyoman. adadhā divaṣ prthivyāntāya nu tāpun mahi-[19]mām  
 antarikṣe | adadhā vrahmaṇā vāyudhānas sa tvam na indra divi  
 [20] śarma yaśchat. | taveda viṣṇo bahudhā vīryāṇi tan naṣ prūhi  
 paśu-[f239a]bhīr viśvarūpāis svadhāyan no dhīhi parame vyoman.  
 | tvam rakṣase pradīśāś catasras tvam [2] śociṣā nabhasi vi bhāsi |  
 rtasya panthām anu neṣa vidvāns tam umā vi-[3]śvā bhuvanābhi  
 tiṣṭhāsi | taveda viṣṇo bahudhā vīryāṇi | tan naṣ prūhi-[4]ha  
 paśubhīr viśvarūpāis svadhāyan no dhehi parame vyoman z 2 z

In the left hand margin of f238b opposite the interspace between  
 lines 15 and 16 is *eevaṁ* and below that is *saṁ*: in the bottom  
 margin below *tan naṣ* is *taṁna*: in the right hand margin opposite  
 L. 7 is *ntya*.

Read: ud ihy ud ihi sūrya varcasā mābhy ud ihi | diviśāś ca  
 mahyaṁ radhyaṁ mā cāhaṁ diviśate radham | taved viṣṇo bahudhā  
 vīryāṇi | tvam naṣ prūhi paśubhīr viśvarūpāis svadhāyām no dhehi  
 parame vyoman z 1 z ud ihy ud ihi sūrya varcasā mābhy ud ihi |  
 yāś ca paśyāmi yāś ca na teṣu me sumatiṁ kydhi | taved viṣṇo  
 ° ° ° | tvam naṣ ° ° ° z 2 z mā tvā dabhan salile 'pev  
 antar ye pāśanam upatiṣṭhanty atra | hitvāśastiṁ divam ā ruha  
 etāṁ sa no mṛḍa sumatāu te syāma | taved viṣṇo ° ° ° | tvam  
 naṣ ° ° ° z 3 z tvam na indra mahate sūbhagāyādabdhāis  
 pari pāhy aktubhīḥ | taved viṣṇo ° ° ° | tvam naṣ ° ° °  
 z 4 z tvam na indrotibhīś śivābhis śāntamo bhava | ārohan tridivam  
 divo grūṇas somapitaye priyadhāmā svastaye | taved viṣṇo ° ° °  
 | tvam naṣ ° ° ° z 5 z tvam indrāsi viśvavit sarvāt puru-  
 hūtas tvam | indremam suhavam stomam ertayasva śivābhis tanubhīr  
 abhi naṣ sajasva | taved viṣṇo ° ° ° | tvam naṣ ° ° °  
 z 6 z adadhā divaṣ prthivyām utāsi na te āpur mahimānam  
 antarikṣe | adadhā vrahmaṇā vāyudhānas sa tvam na indra divi  
 śaṁ śarma yaścha | taved viṣṇo ° ° ° | tvam naṣ ° ° °  
 z 7 z tvam rakṣase pradīśāś catasras tvam śociṣā nabhasi vi bhāsi |  
 rtasya panthām anu neṣa vidvāns tvam imā viśvā bhuvanābhi  
 tiṣṭhāsi | taved viṣṇo bahudhā vīryāṇi | tvam naṣ prūhi paśubhīr  
 viśvarūpāis svadhāyām no dhehi parame vyoman z 8 z 2 z

Stanzas 13, 14, and 15 of Ś are omitted here, our last here being  
 at 16 in Ś: but Ś 15a is in the first stanza of our next hymn.

St 1. At the end of the refrain Ś has *sudhāyām mā*.

St 2. In *pāda d* Ś has *mā* for our me.

St 3. In *pāda b* Ś has *pāsina upa°*; which is rather better than ours.

St 6. Perhaps a better arrangement of bc would be °*hūtas tvam indra | imam °*. For its *d* Ś has its *8d* (= our *3d*).

St 7. In *pāda d* *diviṣā* is probably the correct emendation, but *diviṣas* might be considered.

## 32

(Ś 17.1)

[f239a4] *saptabhi-[5]ṣ prāk tapasy cyārvāṇ ya śastim eṣā sudhine*  
*bādhāmānā | tan trīṣaṇ tvam pary a-[6]ṣo iścham taveda viṣṇo*  
*bahudhā virgāṇi tan naṣ prāhi paśubhīr viśvarā-[7]pāis sva-*  
*dhāyan no dhehi paramo vyomān. tvam indras tvam mahendras*  
*tvam viṣṇus tvam [8] prajāpatiḥ tuṣam yaṇṇo yaṇṇate tubhyam*  
*ahvata juhvatas taveda viṣṇo bahudhā [9] virgāṇi tan naṣ prāhi*  
*paśubhīr viśvarāpāis svadhāyan no dhehi paramo vyo-[10]man.*  
*amatsva pratiṣṭhām mad bhūtaṁ pratilīṣṭhīlam. | bhūto ha bha-*  
*vyāhitam bhavyam bhūte [11] samāhitam, taveda viṣṇo bahu*  
*virgāṇi tan naṣ prāhi paśubhi-[12]r viśvarāpāis svadhāyan no*  
*dhehi paramo vyomān. | śukro mi dhārjā si | mdi-[13]vāham dhār-*  
*jate dhārjyāsam yeu asi loco si sūtvāham prajyā paśu-[14]bhīr*  
*nāhmanavarasena rociṣṭya | udyate namā udyate nama uditā-*  
*[15]ya namaḥ virāje namaḥ svarāje namaḥ samrāje namaḥ asta-*  
*niyade namo [16] śamīṣyate namo śamīḍya namaḥ virāje namaḥ*  
*svarāje namaḥ [17] samrāje namaḥ āditya ndvam āruham śatā-*  
*ritrām svastaye | aha-[18]rṇāudy apīparod aha mātṛātu pārāyā |*  
*sūrye ndvam ārikeam śatāritrām [19] svastaye | rātriṇody apīparadā*  
*ratrī satrūn pārāyā | prajāpa-[20]ter āvṛto vrahmanā varmanāham*  
*kātyapasya jyotiṣā varcasā cakāra [21] rṣiṣ kṛatuvīryo cikāyā*  
*sahasrāḥ subṛtaḥ careyam. | ṛtena gu-[f239b]pto ṛtubhiḥ ca sarvān*  
*bhūtena gupta na ca bhavyena cāham. s mā sā prathar ṛṣa-[2]yo*  
*dāityā yā mā mānuṣīr avarṣṣṭā vadhāyāḥ ṛtena gupta ṛtubhiḥ ca*  
*sa-[3]rve bhūtena gupta na ca bhavyena cāham. s mā prāpaḥ mā*  
*mā nola māṁṛtyur ania-[4]rdaḥ salilēnāca | agnir mā gopaḥ pari*  
*pātu viśvato viśchanīr u-[5]śasḥ parvatā dhruvā | udyamn sūryo*  
*nudatām mṛtyupāśām sahasram prāṇā mayu-[6]te ramanīām |*

candramā apsv antarā duparṇa dhāvate divi | na vo hiranyane-  
[7] mayas padam vindanti vidyuto vittam me asya rodasi z z oñ  
vittam [8] me asya rodasi z 3 z z ity atharvanike pāipalādāyās  
śa-[9] bhāyām aṣṭādaśas kāṇḍas samāptaḥ z z

Read: saptabhiḥ prāk tapasy ekayārvān āsastim eṣi sudine bādha-  
mānah | tvañ tritam tvañ pary eṣy utsem | taved viṣṇo bahudhā  
vīryāni | tvañ naḥ prjūhi paśubhir viśvarūpāis svadhāyām no dhehi  
parame vyoman z 1 z tvañ indras tvañ mahendras tvañ viṣṇus  
tvañ prajāpatiḥ | tubhyañ yajño vi jāyate tubhyañ juhvati  
juhvataḥ | taved viṣṇo ° ° ° | tvañ naḥ ° ° ° z 2 z asati  
sat pratiṣṭhitam sati bhūtam pratiṣṭhitam | bhūtam ha bhavya  
āhitam bhavyam bhūte samāhitam | taved viṣṇo bahudhā vīryāni |  
tvañ naḥ prjūhi paśubhir viśvarūpāis svadhāyām no dhehi parame  
vyoman z 3 z śukro 'si bhrajo 'si | sa evāham bhṛājate bhṛājyāsam  
z 4 z rucir asi roco 'si | sa evāham prajāyā paśubhir vrāhmaṇavar-  
casena rociṣya z 5 z udyate nama udāyate nama udītāya namaḥ |  
virāje namaḥ svarāje namaḥ samrāje namaḥ z 6 z astamīyate namo  
'stamīyate namo 'stamītāya namaḥ | virāje namaḥ svarāje namaḥ  
samrāje namaḥ z 7 z ādītya nāvam āruham śātāritrām svastaye | abar  
no 'tyapīparaś abas satrūti pārāyā z 8 z sūrye nāvam āruksam śātāri-  
trām svastaye | rātrir no 'tyapīparaś rātrīm satrūti pārāyā z 9 z  
prajāpater āvṛto vrāhmaṇā varmaṇāham kaṣyapasya jyotiṣā varcasā  
ca | jaradastiḥ kratuvīrye vihāyās sahasrāyas sukṛtāś Careyam z 10 z  
rtena gupta ṛtubhiḥ ca sarvāir bhūtena gupto bhavyena cāham |  
mā mā prāyañ iṣavo dhīryā yā mā mānuṣīr avasṛṣṭā vadhāya z 11 z  
ytena gupta ṛtubhiḥ ca sarvāir bhūtena gupto bhavyena cāham |  
mā mā prāpat pāpmā mota mṛtyur antardadhe salilena vācaḥ z 12 z  
agnir mā gopāḥ pari pātu viśvato vyucchantir usasas parvatā  
dhruvāḥ | udyan sūryo nudatām mṛtyupāśān sahasrañ prāṇā ma  
āyate ramantām z 13 z candramā apsv antar ā superṇo dhāvate  
divi | na vo hiranyanemayas padam vindanti vidyuto vittam me  
asya rodasi z 14 z 3 z

ity atharvanike pāippalādāyāñ śākhāyām aṣṭādaśas kāṇḍas  
samāptaḥ zz zz

St 1. In pāda a ś has parāñ and for our tritam has in its 15a  
ṛtām; our ms gives no indication that we have two stanzas here.

St 2. In pāda b ś has viṣṇus for lokas: in c Whitney reports  
a number of mss of ś as reading jāyate.

St 4. ś has in the second part sa yathā tvañ bhṛājo 'sy evāham

bhrajatā °; it does not seem necessary to supply words here from Ś; nor in the next stanza either.

St 8. For this cf also SMB 2. 15. 3 and MahānU 14. 5. In a Ś has arakṣah, in e mātṛyapīparō °. See comment in Vedic Variants, vol. 1, p. 199.

St 9. In pāda a Ś has sūrya, in e rātrīm mā °; cf preceding stanza.

St 11. Pādas ab here are 29ab in Ś and they are repeated as ab in the next stanza here.

St 13. In pāda b Ś has mayy ā yatantam.

St 14. This is RV 1. 105. 1 and Ś 18. 4. 89.



THE KITĀB AIMĀN AL-'ARAB WA-ṬALĀQIHA  
FI'L-JĀHILIYA OF AN-NAJĪRAMĪ

CHARLES D. MATTHEWS  
BIRMINGHAM-SOUTHERN COLLEGE

LITERATURE on the oaths, vows, etc., of the Pre-Islamic Arabs, and their formularies, is rather scarce. Welcome may therefore be given to a unique little work on the subject by a famous *kātib* of a noted family of literary men of the tenth century, Abū Ishāq Ibrāhīm ibn 'Abdullāh ibn Muḥammad ibn Ḥussein an-Najīramī, of Egypt.

The text is from MS. No. 279 of the Landberg Collection of Arabic MSS. at Yale.<sup>1</sup> The Yale *Abṣchrift*, according to notations by Count Landberg himself, was made by his *kātib* Samīr and completed Jan. 3, 1892, from what was then the only known, and still the best, copy of the work, in the Khedivial Library in Cairo. The recopy was carefully checked by Count Landberg—although not without some examples of oversight, and several unsettled points questioned in the margin.<sup>2</sup>

Goldziher, as is told by him in his article in *Mélanges Hartwig Derenbourg*,<sup>3</sup> obtained a recopy from the same source through the courtesy of Friedrich Kern in the winter of 1899. Although Goldziher, as is evidenced by his bibliography,<sup>4</sup> never realized his expressed purpose of editing the text, he gives in his article just

<sup>1</sup> See descriptive article by Prof. Charles C. Torrey, in *The Library Journal* (Yale), Feb. 1903. The collection, hitherto indexed only and briefly commented on in a temporary hand-written list by Count Landberg, is now being catalogued by Dr. Leon Nemoy of the Sterling Memorial Library, Yale, under direction of Prof. Torrey.

<sup>2</sup> The Yale re-copy puts Count Landberg's suggested correct readings into the text, the errors of the text in the margin. He calls it "höchst wichtig und unicum in Europa."

<sup>3</sup> Ernst Leroux, Paris, 1900, p. 221 ff.: "Notice sur la littérature des Aimān al-'Arab (serment des anciens Arabes)".

<sup>4</sup> Bernard Heller, *Bibliographie des Œuvres de Ignace Goldziher*, Publications de l'École Nationale des Langues Orientales Vivantes, Paris, 1927. G's. re-copy is probably with the remainder of his library in the National and University Library of the Hebrew University in Jerusalem.



cited the valuable assistance, on several points, of his preliminary studies. To this we shall shortly return.

The first form of the present edition of the *Kitāb Aīmān al-'Arab* of an-Najīrānī was made in the spring of 1932. The writer had completed dissertation and requirements for the doctorate at Yale, as holder of the Kohut Fellowship in Semitics, under Prof. Charles C. Torrey, during his last year of teaching. He chose it as an attractive little bone to develop the teeth of a novice. And, with the highly classical meanings of many words and phrases, and with the numerous illustrative citations of verse, it proved as tough as it was attractive. Without the kind assistance of Professor Torrey and the results of the monumental labors of Lane in his *Arabic Lexicon*, it would have been impossible!\*

And then, just as the text, with introduction and notes, was submitted to a journal for publication, an edition came out in brochure form by Mr. Muḥibb ud-Dīn al-Khatīb of Cairo, editor of the journal *az-Zahrā*. To an enthusiast for the now almost, and perhaps soon truly to be, renaissance culture and scholarship in Arabo-Muslim lands, it would be the least possible disappointment to find one's work forestalled by a Muslim Arab. And thus seemed the case, especially because the Cairo editor had access not only to the Khedivial MS. from which Count Landberg's copy was made, but also to another MS. since acquired by the Khedivial library from the collection of Aḥmad Timūr Pasha.

However, it soon became apparent that the brochure edition was not entirely satisfactory, especially for so important a work. In the first place, the editor's point of view is shown by the following quotation, based partly upon his also medieval author: . . .

الحلف بالله جلّ وعزّ كان رأس الايمان عند العرب لأنّ أكثرهم كان على ملّة الحبشيّة إذ إنّ ابراهيم صلّم وقد ورثه آل اسماعيل واخوانهم من جرحهم ومن هبط عليهم بطحاء مكة من بني خزاعة وغيرهم . . . . .  
Further, he had no opportunity to use the study by Goldziher. Also, he not only follows the extant MSS. in a number of erroneous transcriptions but also failed to check several lacunae in his printer's or printed text. And as to the second MS. source—that now in الخزائن النجارية, or ٣٦٣—it adds little of value and contains itself a lacuna of about two pages( ) besides many shorter

\* I gratefully acknowledge further kindly assistance from Professor Hitti.

ones. Also the editor appears several times to have mixed his sources, saying that so and so comes from the Timūriyah copy when its presence in the Yale recopy shows it is in the older Cairo copy as well,—or instead. In absence of date or copyist's name, the editor judges the MS. to be of the tenth century (H.).

But a sincere disclaimer to correct any impression from the above that the Cairo edition has no merit and the present has all! Mr. Muḥibb ud-Dīn has done a creditable piece of work. His preface of eight pages discusses the following: The author and citations of him in Arabic literature—with more references, indeed, than Goldziher;<sup>\*</sup> discussion of his literary work; citations of two brief poems by an-Naǧīramī, and of another wrongly ascribed to him; statement that the death year of the author is unknown, as-Ṣafādī being compelled in the *وفى بالوفيات* to leave this point of information blank, *يأش*; discussion of the author's family; the family home or place of origin (see below); MSS. sources for the edition, and difficulties of the work of editing.

Both Muḥibb ud-Dīn and Goldziher have the correct information about the older Cairo copy, which is *مجامع* ٢٢١ (see p. 282, Cat. of the Arabic MSS., Khedivial Library, Cairo, first edn., 1308 H.). Count Landberg's copyist, however, seems to have written 124—confusion between the two being easy when one remembers how the 1 and the 2 are ordinarily made. The title cited by the two former is always simply *كتاب إيمان العرب*, without the additional of the Yale copy: *وطاقتها*. Neither regards the text as old.

From Yāqūt, Ibn Khallikān, and other sources, Goldziher and Muḥibb ud-Dīn determine that our author was a *kātib* at the court of Kāfūr al-Ikshīdī who reigned in Egypt 336-356 H., and that the family included a number of men of letters several of whom are mentioned as being in Egypt. M. D. adds that he was also a teacher, and gives the names of some of his noted students.

<sup>\*</sup> Yāqūt, *Mu'jam al-Udabā'* and *Mu'jam al-Buldan*; as-Ṣafādī, *al-Wafā bi'l-Wafāyāt*; as-Suyūṭī, *Bughyat al-Wu'dā'*; az-Zabīdī, *Tāj al-'Arūs*, the last saying of him: "... (he was) an author, the writer of *Aīmān al-'Arab*, which I possess in an old MS." Cf. p. 4, intro., M. D.'s edition. References to an-Naǧīramī by Goldziher are: Yāqūt (Wustenfeld), IV, 764; Ibn Khallikān, *Wafāyāt*, Böhrig edn., I, 547, 3; 'Abd al-Qādir ibn 'Omar al-Bughdādī, *Kābirat al-Adab*, III, 219, 12; Abū Bekr ibn Khayr, *Bibliothèque arabico-islamique*, IX, 374, 11. Count Landberg notes in his hand-list that *Pihriest* mentions him.

Both derive from the great references above that the family migrated to Egypt from their home which was a village near al-Baṣra, M. D. not without questioning the origin of the village name from that of a quarter of al-Baṣra, *Nijāram* or in shortened form *Nīram*. This last comes from Yāqūt (ed. Wüstenfeld, IV, 764, on نجيرم, نجيرم, نجيرم), where the celebrated geographer mentions our author and his kinsman Abū Ya'qūb Yūsuf, etc., as members of قوم من اهل الادب (cf. also Ibn Khallikān). But to me it seems more likely the patronym comes from the fairly important town of Najīram<sup>6</sup> in Fars on the Persian Gulf, just northwest of the mouth of the River Sakkan (see LeStrange, *Lands of the Eastern Caliphate*, Cambridge U. Press, 1905, p. 259, with references to the history by Muqaddasi).

Goldziher goes to some length to clear up a confusion about an-Najīramī affecting several important books. In Ibn Khallikān (Wüstenfeld), No. 556, V, 58, under discussion of Kāfūr, the name is written الجيزي; and it entered, he says, in this corrupted form all editions of the *Wafāyāt*, including DeSlane's translation (II, 558). But, because a poem by the noted kاتب in honor of Kāfūr<sup>7</sup> is also referred to by 'Alī ibn Zafīr al-ʿAzī in his *Bada'ī al-Bada'ī* (printed on margin of the *Ma'āhid al-Tanāsī*, Cairo, 1316), with the name correctly النجيري, Goldziher could conclude the الجيزي of Ibn Khallikān was only a mistake for the name of the author of the *Kitāb Aīmān al-'Arab*.

But all this excellent endeavor by Goldziher, who therefrom concludes that an-Najīramī was a kاتب at the court of Kāfūr and that his work was composed about the middle of the fourth century, was apparently superfluous as regards some editions of Ibn Khallikān. For M. D. uses the same source without evidence of the slightest difficulty about our author's name.

The foremost praising notice of the *Kitāb Aīmān al-'Arab* cited by Goldziher is this: "Cet écrit jouissait d'une haute considération

<sup>6</sup> Other references to Najīram in Yāqūt (I, 503; III, 217) show plainly the renowned geographer had also taken note of this place, mentioning it in connection with such places as Sirāf and the home of the Zubeir and 'Umāra (see map facing p. 249, LeStrange, *Lands of the Eastern Caliphate*).

<sup>7</sup> Judging from the matter of the poem and M. D.'s comments upon it, these are the verses quoted on p. 6 of his edition, intro. DeSlane's Ibn Khallikān transliterates: "Bada'ī l-Bada'ya." (I. 669.)

auprès d'un connaisseur très érudit en matière philologique, à savoir 'Abdulqādir b. 'Omar al-Baghdādī (mort au Caire en 1093); ce traité n'a pas échappé à son attention. En s'occupant de l'idole 'And, il remarque qu'il n'a trouvé "aucun renseignement à ce sujet ni dans le *Kitāb al-Aṣṇām* d'Ibn al-Kelbī,<sup>8</sup> ni dans le livre de Najīramī, où cet auteur a réuni les formules par lesquelles les Arabes pretaient serment au nom de leurs idoles et d'autres objets. C'est, à cet égard, un bon livre, qui englobe aussi les phrases des Arabes appartenant à cet ordre d'idée." (Chikānat al-Adab, III, 210, 12.)

Goldziher describes the MS. and text thus: "Le *Kitāb al-Aīmān* embrasse (dans 5 abwāb) tant les formules de serment que la nomenclature des synonymes entrant en compte dans ce qui concerne l'essence du serment, ainsi que la construction grammaticale des verbes et des substantifs du serment." (Note: "Le fonds à cet effet a été fourni par Sibawaihi (édit. Derenbourg), I, 403-405.") In a note on p. 226 he says what may be taken into consideration with remarks above on the difficulties involved: "L'éditeur devra beaucoup corriger le texte."

After a brief indirect quotation from the work, Goldziher says this about its matter: "... Najīramī a réuni des matériaux considérables; mais il ne semble pas remarquer que parmi ces serments antéislamiques se trouvent des citations textuelles du Coran. Il lui arrive même une fois de se tromper de rôle, en ce qu'il accompagne naïvement un de ces serments antéislamiques, des mots من قوله عز وجل. De la sorte, il met en pratique la théorie de la vieille école qui attribue, pour l'époque antéislamique, des pensées

<sup>8</sup> See Wellhausen, *Reste Arabischen Heidenthums*, 2nd edn., Berlin, 1897, p. 10 f., for extensive quotations from the "remains" of *Kitāb al-Aṣṇām* as preserved by Yāqūt. Also, Goldziher, in *Mélanges* . . . Derenbourg. In a note on p. 23, M. D. says Prof. Aḥmad Zakī Pasha of Cairo was undertaking an edition of this work, to be published by the press of the Dār al-Kutub al-Miṣriyyah. From this I suspected M. D.'s study of an-Najīramī was made considerably before 1927. For in the *Discours de Tufail* and *at-Tirmidhī*, Krenkow, Gibb Mem. Series, London, 1927, I find on p. xvii reference to an edition of *Kitāb al-Aṣṇām* having appeared in Cairo. Prof. Hitti confirms this suspicion by kindly informing me Aḥmad Zakī's edn. of *Kitāb al-Aṣṇām* appeared in Cairo in 1914! In present conditions, some of this patience—or resignation—in getting things published is needed also in the West!

et des phrases coranique à des gens qui tenaient strictement à un reste de la religion d'Ismaël." (Cf. my quotation, p. 616 above, as well as with the opening lines of the work itself.)

Here it appears Goldziher has been precipitate in his criticism. For while it is true that a number of Qur'anic expressions occur in the "pagan" formulae of the work (!), the phrase *من قوله عز وجل* (present far more than *une fois*!) may here mean simply that so and so is similar to or connected with the sense of a like phrase in the Qur'an.

As Goldziher has prepared the way by his article on the literature of the oaths of the pagan Arabs, and as Muhibb ud-Dīn has aided on material points by his brochure edition, Pedersen\* has covered the wider field of oaths among the Semites in general. Pedersen gives all necessary bibliographical references. I need mention here: First, that there is a helpful review of Pedersen's monograph by Littmann, in *Der Islam*, VII, 1917, p. 136. Second, that al-Bukhārī's *كتاب الإيمان والنذور*, and his *كتاب كفارة الإيمان*, often cited by Pedersen, are in vol. IV of the French translation of the *Ṣaḥīḥ*. Third (from Goldziher's cited article), that in the chapter *باب إيمان العرب* in as-Suyūṭī's *Mushār*, adapted from the *كتاب المكتنى والمكتنى* of Ibn as-Sikkī (d. 243 H.), there is an "enumeration des anciens serments."

The word *y* at the beginning of so many of the oath formulae, about which there has been so much discussion (including examples in the Qur'an itself), I can best pass over by reference to the note by Littmann (p. 139 in his review) to p. 19 of Pedersen. The word is of course not to be rendered in translation. On omission of the second *y* in cases such as the work contains, see Wright, *Arabic Grammar*, II, p. 305.

In only a few cases are the formulae complete with conclusions. But it will be understood that in actual usage most oaths had as their complement such an expression as: "... I will (or will not) do thus and so!" Or: "... So and so is (or is not) true!" This was always the situation when the oath was simply to strengthen such assertions.

\* Johs. Pedersen, *Der Eid bei den Semiten*, Heft III of *Studien zur Geschichte und Kultur des islamischen Orients*, Zwanglose Beihefte zu der Zeitschrift "Der Islam," Strassburg, Trübner, 1914.

It would be interesting to have time and space for continuation of the study by comparison with oath formulae in use in Arab lands today. But this can be done much better by such masters of folklore as Dr. Canaan of Jerusalem who has often published material on this line, especially in *The Journal of the Palestine Oriental Society*.

Goldziher wrote (p. 226, *Mélanges* . . . *Derenbourg*): "Peut-être nous aurons bientôt l'occasion de publier le texte complet de l'œuvre, avec nos observations d'après le manuscrit du Caire." This renders vivid one of the ancient phrases here given: لا ولأني نفسي التصير ! يريد قصر العمر

## كتاب ايمان العرب وطلاقها في الجاهلية

منعة ابي اسحق ابراهيم بن عبدالله النجيري الكاتب رحمه الله تعالى نقل من مجموعة محفوظة بالكتبخانة الخديوية نمرة ٢٣٤ مجاميع (١٠)

بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم قال ابو اسحق ابراهيم بن عبدالله النجيري الكاتب كانت العرب في الجاهلية على مذاهب فكان معظمهم ممن (١١) يدين الله تعالى ذكره ويتمسك بآرث من ملته ابراهيم صلعم ويحج ويتأله ويعظم الحرم والاشهر الحرم ويضع فيها اوزار الحرب وان ظفر (١٢) يمدونه فيها لم يمسه بسوء وكانوا في ذلك اخفافا فكان منهم من يستحل في الحرم المحل والمحرم ومنهم من يحرم عن المحل والمحرم ومنهم محل عن المحرم ومحرم عن المحرم . قال ابو اسحق وكان عمرو بن كلثوم التغلبي من المحلّين قال وفي كل العرب خصائص تفعل هذا ما خلا طيننا وختمهم فانهم كانوا لا يحرمون عن محل ولا محرم ومنها طائفة تعبد الاصنام وتزعم انها تقر بهم الى الله عز وجل كما ذكر الله عز وجل في قوله ما نعبدكم الا بقرىونا (١٣)

الى الله زلقى وكما قال ايضا فيهم ويعبدون من دون الله ما لا يضرهم ولا ينفعهم ويقولون هؤلاء شفعاؤنا عند الله (١٤) ومنهم طائفة تعبد الاصنام وتقس بها ويزعمون انها هي الضارة النافعة كما ذكر الله (١٥) عز وجل في قصة ابراهيم عم وقومه فالطائفة الاولى تقسم بالله تعالى والقسم به عندهم اعظم الايمان ولذلك قال النابغة

حلقت قلم اترك لنفسك ربة  
وليس وراء الله للمرة مذنب

واخبر الله تعالى فيهم بذلك فقال واقسوا بالله جهد ايمانهم (١٦) ويقولون والله فانها تملا الفم وترقى الدم اى تبرى الظنين بالدم من الدم فبرقا اى يسكن محقونا في مسكه فلا يراق ومنه قولهم لا تسبوا (١٧) الابل فان فيها رقاء الدم اى انها تعقل في الديات فبرقا بها الدماء المحقونة بالاراقة ومنها قولهم لا رقات (١٨) اى لا هدات وبعضهم يقول وقطع الدم اى يبرا بها الرجل من الدم فبرقا دمه وقد قيل ان القوم اذا اصطلحوا بعد حرب وتحالفوا بالله الاجل رقات دعاومهم اى هدات

ومن ايمانهم لا والذي يراني من فوق سبعة اربعة اى من فوق سبع سوات خصوا السماء الدنيا بهذا الاسم والرقيع مذكر وقيل مسمى رقيعا لانه رقع بالنجوم وتقول العرب لا افعل ذاك ولو نزوت في الرقيع كقولهم ولو نزوت في السلوح \* ولو نزوت في السكاكة (١٩) وفي حديث النبي صلعم انه قال لسعد بن معاذ لما حكم في بنى قريظة لقد حكمت فيهم بحكم الله من فوق سبعة اربعة ومن ايمان هؤلاء لا والذي شق الرجال للخليل والجيال للليل والمعنى لا والذي خلق الرجال على هذه الخلقة هذا معنى شق وهنا وهو كسميتهم خروق البدن ثقوقا وعلى هذا المذهب انما



قولهم شقهنّ خمساً من واحدة يعنى اصابع يده اذا حلف فرفع يده وفرّق اصابعه (٢٠)

ومن ايمان هؤلاء ايضا لا والذي وجهى زعم بيته (٢١) اى نحو بيته ومواجه بيته ويقال مرّ بهنّ على زعم طريقك كأنه مزموم نحوه

ومنها ايضا لا والذي (٢٢) يوارينى منه خمر فالخمر ما وارك من شجر والمعنى (٢٢½) لا يوارينى منه شيء وانما ذكر الخمر لان من شأنهم التوارى في الخمر ومثله لا والذي لا يوارينى منه غيب والغيب كل ما وارك من شيء من شجر او جبل او حائط او غير ذلك

ومنها ايضا لا والذي لا يتقى بوجاح او لا يستر منه وجاح فبتى به والوجاح كل ما حال بينك وبين شيء من شر او ثوب او حائط او غير ذلك ومنه ثوب موجّح اى شقيق جدا (٢٣) ومنها ايضا لا والذي اتقىه الا بمقتله (٢٤) اى كيف رمت ان اتقىه فهناك المقتل

ومنها لا والذي اخرج العذق من الجريمة والنار من الوئمة العذق النخلة والجريمة الثمرة المجرومة اى المصرومة واراد النواة (٢٥) والوئمة فلقه اى قطعة من حجر \* تسه اى تكسره (٢٥½) من قولك وتم يشم وثما اى كسر ومنه قول عترة

فطس الاكام بوقع خفّ ميم (٢٦)

يصف خفّ ناته اى ملق مكسرها

ومنها ايضا لا والذي فلق الجبة (٢٧) وبرء النسمة فلق الجبة اى شقها في الارض حتى ثبت ثم اثمرت فكان منها حبّ كثير وكل شيء شققها باثنين فقد فلقته قال والنسمة كل نفس ذات نفس فهي نسمة وسيت نسمة لتسمها الهواء

ومنها ايضا لا والذي سلك السماء (٢٨)

ومنها ايضا لا والذي يرانى من حيث ما نظرت (٢٩)

ومنها ايضا لا وفالق الاصباح (٣٠) وباعت الارواح يريد جمع روح لا ومجرى الرياح لا ومجرى (٣١) الالهة وبعضهم يقول الاله يجعلها معرفة علما وهي اسم الشمس التي تعيدها ولذلك سموا عبد شمس وعبد الشارق كما سموا عبدالله وعبد الرحمن ومنها ايضا لا [والذي] (٣٣) يا تمر له جدولى قال الجدول الاعضاء وحدها جلد ومعنى هذا ان اعضائي كلها جند لله تعالى على

ومنها ايضا لا ومنزل القطر وبعضهم يقول لا ومقطع القطر لانه ينزل (٣٤) لا ومبيت الرياح لانهم يقولون بامانة الرياح لا ومجرى البحر • لا ومنشئ السحاب لا والذي دحى الارض اى مدها وبسطها لا ومبيت الرياح (٣٥) لانهم يقولون ماتت الرياح اذا سكنت قال الراجز

انى لارجو ان تموت الرياح

فاقعد اليوم واستريح

لا والذي سجد له النجوم والشجر النجم (٣٦) من النبات ما نجم منه وانفرش على وجه الارض ولم يرتفع عنها بساق لا والذي حجت (٣٧) له العمائر جمع عمارة وهي الحي الكبير لا والذي ذابت له السمور لا وقاطر الاشباح يريد جمع شبح وهو الشخص لا والذي يرعدني اني سلكت من قوله غر وجل ان ربك لبالمرصاد (٣٨)

لا ورب الشمس والقمر (٣٩) لا ورب البيت والحجر لا والذي اخرج الماء من الحجر والثار من الشجر • لا ورزاق الانام • لا ورب النور والظلام (٤٠) لا ورب الحل والحرام قال مهلهل

قتلوا كلبيا ثم قال ألا اربعوا  
كذبوا وربّ الحلّ والاحرام

لا والذي آمنه من كل اوب آمنه يعنى الابل اضمرها ولم  
يجر لها ذكر وهذا على عادتهم في مثله من كل اوب اي من كل  
مسلك ومن كل الطريق يوءوب منه الايون  
لا والراقصات بطن مرّ يعنى الراقصات بركبانهنّ لا والذي  
رقصنا ببطحائه يقال رقص وارقص لغتان والابطح والبطحاء ما  
انبطح واتسع من بطن الوادي وهو خير لا والراقصات بطن  
جمع (٤٣)

لا والذي نادى الحجيح له لا وقأتى نفسى اي الذى جعل  
نفسى قوتا لمدة حياتي قال ويقناته يذهب به شيئا بعد شيء كما قال  
طفيل

يقنات فضل سنامها الرجل (٤٣)

اي ينقصه الرجل شيئا بعد شيء فكأنه له بمنزلة القوت حتى  
يأتى عليه قال وبعضهم يقول لا ولائى (٤٤) نفسى القسير يريد  
قصر العمر

ومنها قولهم يمين الله لقد كان ذاك وايمين الله قال نصيب  
وايم وايم وم والله لقد كان ذلك • وقال فريق ايمين الله  
ما ندى (٤٥) وقال يونس النحوى اهل اليمامة يقولون أم الله  
وقال الآخرون ايمين الله وايمين الكعبة كأنه جمع يمين

ومنها عمرك الله هل ذاك والمعنى عمرك الله اي ما لت الله  
تعميرك (٤٦) وهو معنى قول العامة بالذي يعمرك وقال ابن  
الاعرابي عمرك الله بالرفع والنصب الوجه وعليه رواية اهل  
العريضة وقال آخرون عمر الله ومنها ايضا قعدك (٤٦/٢) الله

وقميدك الله وقالوا ايضا قمعدك لا افعل ذاك وقميدك قال متمم بن نويرة :

قميدك ان لا تسمعني ملامة  
فلا تنكأى قرح الفؤاد فينجا (٤٧)

ومعناه (٤٨) اخضب الله بلادك حتى تكون مقيما فيها قاعدا غير متجع

ومنها ورافعها بغير عمد لا ومامكها لا وباسطها يعنى الارض  
لا وماعدتها وداحيها (٤٩) يعنى الارض  
لا والذي امد اليه بيد قصيرة اى يسعى قصير ومنه اليد العليا  
خير من اليد السفلى

لا والذي نادى الحجيج [له] ٥٠ اى من اجله اى دعوه لا والذي  
كل الشعوب تدبى له ويقال ايضا تدبى . لا والذي يرانى ولا اراه  
ابو زيد قال المغليون حرام الله كقولهم يمين الله

## الباب الثاني (٥١)

واما عبدة الاوثان فانهم كانوا يقسمون بها كقولهم لا واللات  
والعزى لا ومناة وربما اقسموا بما يعتر لها وقد قرغ ابن الكلبي  
من اسماء الاصنام في كتاب الاصنام (٥٢) قاغنى ذكر ذلك عنها  
وقد اقسمت العرب بالماء والسماء والنجوم كقولهم لا والسماء  
لا والماء لا والآيات لا والطارقات (٥٤) لا والراكعات وكقولهم  
لا والسابحات (٥٥) والسابحات النجوم ومنه قول الله تعالى وكلّ  
في فلك يسبحون والآيات النجوم اذا تصوّبت للمقيب يقال منه  
آب النجم . والطارقات النجوم اذا طرقت اى طلعت والراكعات  
اذا زالت من كبد السماء

لا وتنفذ اللوح والماء المسفوح والفضاء (٥٦) المنسوح  
 والتور الموجوح (٥٧) أي المحجوب \* التنفث عنهما ما بين السماء  
 والأرض وكل هوا بين رأس جبل وبين أسفل فهو كذلك (٥٨)  
 واللوح الهواء بين السماء والأرض وإضاف التنفث إليه والمسح  
 المصوب وعنى به البحر والفضاء يعنى الأرض والمنسوح الموضع  
 وكانهم عظموا هذه الأشياء لأن بها قوام العالم

## الباب الثالث

يقولون فما لأفعلن ذاك ويمينا وألية ونجا (٥٩) وعهدا  
 وتذرا وموثقا وميثاقا وحلفا (٦٠) ولحقا ولقسما وقال آخرون  
 لحق لا أقبل يرفعون بغير تنوين مع اللام والنحب النذر وانشد  
 قضيت نجا وجعلت نجا (٦١)

والأمر العهد ومن أيمانهم باصر وأمر ليكون ذاك وانشد

باصر يتركني الحي يومـا

رهينة دراعم (٦٢) وهم سراع

ومعنى أمر حتم لازم (٦٣) كما قال يلزم العهد وكما يلزم  
 امرأة الرجم ومنه الأمر الثقل لأن اللازم الواجب يتقل كأنه قال  
 حقا ليركني الحي ومنه قوله

فإن أكبر فلا بأطير أمر

يفارق عاتقي ذكر خيب

أطير قبيل من أطره بأطره أطرا إذا عطفه والمعنى أن على  
 أمرا يعطني على أن لا أفارق هاذ السيف وهذا كقولك أقسمت  
 إنما وقع على الفراق قصار الفراق متفيا والآل (٦٤) العهد وهو

ايضا من اسماء الله تعالى وهو الرحم ايضا ويوثك ان يكون انما  
اشتمل على هذه المعنى الثلاثة لأن العهد سبب منوط بسبب الله  
عز وجل ولأن الرحم شجنة من الله عز وجل ومعنى شجنة من  
الله سبب منوط من الله عز وجل

## الباب الرابع

قال ابو عبيدة اؤذم فلان يمينا اذا اوجب على نفسه يمينا  
واؤذم (٦٥) فلان بالحج واؤذم بحجة كأنه ناط على نفسه  
بحجة كانياط اؤذام الدلو وكذلك ابدع يمينا وابدع بالحج  
وبحجة اوجبها على نفسه وقال ابن الاعرابي لا والذي اكع له  
اي احلف به ومعنى اكع اوكد (٦٦) لأنه وكده قوله باليمين  
من قولهم اجمعون اكعون

ابو عبيدة جبر في الایجاب • بمعنى • اجل وكسرت لالتقاء  
الساكنين وقال غيره هي بمعنى (٦٧) نعم واجل ويمين ايضا وقالوا  
لا جبر بمعنى جبر كما قالوا لا اقسم الكسائي : عوض  
وعوض الاموى : عوض ومن ذى عوض وقال ابو عمر عوض من  
اسماء النمر (٦٨) فكثرت في كلامهم حتى حلقوا به

ومن ايمانهم لا وجدك اقسم بحدته الذي هو حفظه كما  
اقسم (٦٩) بعمره اذا قال لعمرك وكما قول وعشك فاذا قال  
اُجدك بمعنى اُجدك (٧٠) انت كأنه (٧١) اتجد جدًا في  
هذا القول قاضف عليه الجد وخرج عن باب اليمين

وقالوا صبره يمينا يصبره صبرا والصبر الجس كأنه حبه  
عنها (٧٢) وقالوا ائنه يمينا يائنه التا ومنه قول الله تعالى لا  
يلتكم من اعمالكم (٧٣) شيئا اي لا يحبس ولا يؤخر  
وقالوا حلقوا بالفموس اي يمين تغمسه في الاتم وقالوا لا خير

في يمين لا مخارم لها أي لا مخارج لها والمخرم (٧٤) مقطع انف  
الجبل وهو الطريق فيه فنبهوا \* في التأويل (٧٥) المختص من  
اليمين به وبذلك أن يكون إنما خصوا المخرم لأنهم شبهوا اليمين  
بالجبل استقالا لها قسموا مجازها بمجاز الجبل وقالوا يمين جلواء  
وحلقة (٧٦) جلواء وبينة جلواء أي ينجلي بها الحق ويكتشف  
وانشد

لكل امر (٧٧) واقع اخاء  
شهادة او حلقة جلواء  
به تقوم الارض والسماء  
وكل شيء غير ذا عدا

واخفاء الامر اراد به اركانها اخذ من اخاء الرجل الواحد حنو  
والعداء الظلم والمعنى أن كل شيء متصب (٧٨) مرتفع فيه تنازع  
فهذه سبيله قال زهير

فإن الحق - مقطعه ثلاث

يمين او تقار او جلاء

فاليمين معروفة والنقار المنافرة إلى الحكام وهي المحاكمة  
اليهم ليفصلوا بالحق والجلاء البينة التي تجلو الشك والشبهة  
فتغني عن اليمين وعن التحاكم \* وإذا حلف الرجل قالوا له \*  
حلا أبا فلان وتحلل أبا فلان (٧٩) أي استسنى أي قل أن شاء الله  
وربما قالوا ذلك على سبيل الاستعطاف للمخالف والرفق به وربما  
قالوا على سبيل الهزم منه

ويقال حلف حلقا وحلقة واحدة وقالوا أقسم بالله وأصله أنه  
وصل بالله تعالى إلى قسم من الأقسام حلف به ثم كثر هذا واتسع  
والقسم مذكر (٨٠) يقولون أقسم بالله قما صادقا وقما برآ (٨١)  
وقالوا آلى يؤلى أيلاء



وامل اليمين انهم كانوا اذا تحالفوا وتعاقدوا تصافقوا  
 بايمانهم (٨٢) ولذلك قيل اعطاء صفقة يمينه على هذا الامر ثم  
 سبوا الحلف يميناً على ذلك المعنى وانثوا اليمين على تأييد  
 اليد فقالوا حلف يميناً برة ويميناً فاجرة

قال ابو عبيد كانوا في الجاهلية الاولى اذا تحالفوا وتعاهدوا  
 اوقدوا نارا (٨٣) ودنوا منها حتى تكاد تحرقهم وعددوا منافع  
 النار ودعوا على ناقض تلك اليمين والناكث لذلك بحرمان تلك  
 المنافع ويتصافحون عندها ويقولون الدم الدم والهدم الهدم  
 والمعنى دماؤنا دماؤكم وعدمنا هدمكم والهدم اسم البناء المهدم  
 اى قما هدم لكم من بناء او شئ فقد هدم لنا وما اريق لكم من دم  
 فقد اريق لنا يلزمنا من نصرتكم ما يلزمكم (٨٤) من نصرة انفسنا  
 وعبروا على استعمال ذلك يتوارثونه الى ان اتى الله تعالى  
 بالاسلام وكان الحليف بين رسول الله صلعم وبين الانصار فقال  
 صلوات الله وسلامه عليه لهم الدم الدم والهدم الهدم

وكانوا يقولون عندها (٨٥) لا يزيد طلوع الشمس الا شذاً  
 وطلوع (٦٨) الليالي الا مداً \* وما بل البحر صوفه (٧٨) وما  
 اقام رضوى وربما دنوا من النار حتى تكاد تمحشهم او تكاد  
 تحرقهم ويهولون (٨٨) بها على من يستخف بحقوقها ويتعدونه  
 بحرمان منافعها ومراقبها وفي ذلك نكد العيش وحرمان الحياة  
 ويسمون الرجل القيم بامر تلك النار المهيول وقد ذكرته الشعراء  
 قال الكميت

كهولة ما اوقد المحلفون

لدى الحالفين وما هولوا (٨٩)

وقال اوس (٩٠) وذكر غيرا قائما فوق نثر

إذا استقبلته الشمس صد بوجهه  
كما صد عن نار المهورل حالف

وكان من شأنهم إذا تحالفوا أن يغمسوا أيدهم في الدم وما  
زالوا على ذلك إلى أن كان الحلف الواقع مشهد (٩١) رسول الله  
صلعم وهو حلف المطيئين وحديثه معروف وكانوا ربما تعاقبوا  
وتعاهدوا على الملح \* والملح عندهم شيان ملح الآدم التي  
يتملح بها واللبن وذلك انه سواء عندهم ان يجتمعوا على طعام  
الملح (٩٢) أو على شرب لبن هذا عندهم مباحة ولذلك سمو  
اللبن ملحاً فقالوا من البابين جميعاً بينا ملح وعلى هذا قال أبو  
الطمحان القيني

واتى لأرجو ملحها في بطونكم  
وما بسطت من جلد اشعث اعبرا (٩٣)

أي سمّتهم هذه الأيوان بعد الهزال وقال شيم بن خويلد  
لا يبعد الله رب العباد والملح ما ولدت خالده  
وأما كهان العرب فانهم كانوا يقسمون بالسماء والماء والأرض  
والهواء والنور والضياء والظلمة وبغير ذلك مما هو موجود في  
أخبارهم كما أقسم سواد بن قارب الدوسي أقسم بالضياء والحلك  
والشروق والدلك وهي كثيرة موحودة في كتب أخبارهم

## الباب الخامس

يقال آلى فلان يؤلى ايلاء قال والاسم الالية فإذا قيل آلى  
يفعل وآليت أفعل فهو قسم على ترك الفعل لأنّ اليمين بمنزلة  
النفي للفعل حتى يأتي باللام التي هي آلة للقسم كقولك آليت

لا فعلن<sup>١٤</sup> وكذلك قولك والله افعل واقسمت افعل وهذا ما يقال  
به ويجوز على كثير من الناس وعلى هذا قال المتلصص

آل بيت حبة العراق اللعبر اطعمه  
والحب يا كلكه في القرية السوس  
آخر (٩٤) ايمان العرب والحمد لله وحده  
وصلواته (٩٥) على خيرته من خلقه  
محمد وآله وصحبه وسلم  
تسليما كثيرا  
آمين

٤

Published by permission of the Library Committee of Yale University.

<sup>14</sup> Only Y has the *وطلاقها* of the title. M. D. has *صناعة*. *Talāq* here must mean something like "assertions." See Lane, *طَلَقَ*, *طَلَقَ*, *طَلَقَ* (and *طَلَقَ اللسان*), eloquent, etc.

<sup>15</sup> M. D. *من Y ممن*.

<sup>16</sup> Y *ظفر*, with query in margin.

<sup>17</sup> Sura 39, 3; 17, 59. Y repeats the words indicated.

<sup>18</sup> Sura 10, 19; 21, 66; 26, 73; 5, 69, 71.

<sup>19</sup> Sura, 26, 73.

<sup>20</sup> Sura 3, 169; 16, 40; 24, 52; 35, 40.

<sup>21</sup> Lane and Freytag, under *رقا*. Y like *اتسبوا*, with query.

<sup>22</sup> M. D. adds *عَبْرُهُ* from the *Timār* MS.

<sup>23</sup> Y and M. D. *الشكالة*. See Lane, 1287. On *رقيق* see Lane, 1137, with his remarks on gender, and his authorities; also Ibn al-ʿAṭār, *as-Nihāyah*; cf. Hebrew *raqīqā*. Y and M. D. have *ولا*, here.

<sup>24</sup> Lane, 1576, from the *Muḥkam* of Ibn Sida: *عندى الله جعل الرجال* *والجبال جملة واحدة ثم حرقها فجعل الرجال لهذه والجبال لهذه*. Lane says:

"... By no means clear, but reconcilable with my rendering." The explanation here clarifies the matter and justifies Lane's translation.

<sup>12</sup> Lane, from the *Ṣiḥāh*, remarking, "As an Arab from the desert would say." He also concludes the oath, مَا كَانَ كَذَا وَكَذَا. M. D. gives four other references.

<sup>13</sup> M. D. inserts *Y*; see Wright, II, 303. It may of course be in the Cairo MSS. *فَالْخَيْرُ*, just below, is Landberg's chosen reading, *Y* having *فَالْخَيْرُ*, relegated to the margin.

<sup>14</sup> M. D. omits *و*.

<sup>15</sup> *Y* twice *وَجَّحَ*, correct root third occurrence and in *مَوْجَحَ*, queried. Cf. Ibn al-Athīr, *as-Nihāyah*: *تَوَجَّحَ مَوْجَحٌ غَلِظٌ جَدًّا*.

<sup>16</sup> M. D. notes Timūr MS. has *مَقْلَعٌ*.

<sup>17</sup> The Timūr MS. has beginning here a long lacuna. Lane says *عَنْقُ* in the Hejaz meant a kind of date, the word being used in many species names.

<sup>18</sup> In *Y*, both verbs, second person.

<sup>19</sup> On *مَدَقَ* see Lane. Prof. Torrey says *مَكْرَ* is merely formed on analogy of *مِثْمَ*. M. D. has *مَطَسَ*.

<sup>20</sup> Given by Lane as a frequent oath of 'All. *حَيَّةٌ* is here rather seeds of plants in general. Cf. closing lines of the text.

<sup>21</sup> Sura 79: 28; 55: 6; Cf. Lane. There are several similar expressions in the Bible, especially in the Second Isaiah (e.g. 42: 5).

<sup>22</sup> M. D. deletes *تَ* with two citations as authorities.

<sup>23</sup> Sura 6: 97.

<sup>24</sup> *Y* has the *و*, the copyist probably having inserted it, for M. D. adds it in brackets. M. D. omits it in *وَهَى* below.

<sup>25</sup> Lane gives *ush-Shāriq* as the name of an idol in the pagan era; but was this only another name for the sun and its idol representation? Both this word and *الشَّمْسُ* are masculine when referring to the idols.

<sup>26</sup> Added here because the sense requires either the rel. pro., or participle IV. *Y* twice the root *جَدَلَ* for *جَدَلٍ*.

<sup>27</sup> M. D. says he believes a word or more has fallen out here. But with verb IV the sense is complete.

<sup>38</sup> Occurs just above—from confusion in the MSS., or from its turning up twice in the author's notes for his work? Y has سكرت, just below.

<sup>39</sup> Sura 55.5. Cf. Lane.

<sup>40</sup> Y أحجت, queried.

<sup>41</sup> Sura 89.12; cf. Genesis 25.11.

<sup>42</sup> End of long lacuna in Timūr copy.

<sup>43</sup> Sura 55.9.

<sup>44</sup> Marr and Jam' are valleys in the vicinity of Mecca, the latter a night-station between 'Arafat and Minā on the Ḥajj. Cf. Sura 38.30; Lane 829. See Yāqūt.

<sup>45</sup> In Tufail, as given by F. Krenkow, note 32, in his *Diwan of Tufail and Tūmimah*, London, Luzac (Gibb Mem. Series, XXV), 1927, there occurs كَحَرَ instead of فَضَلَ. Lane, under قوت gives a fuller form of the oath: لَا وَقَاتِي بِمَيِّ الْبَصِيرِ مَا فَعَلْتَ ذَلِكَ. He appears to have made an awkward rendering, which should be: "By the All-seeing One who taketh my spirit, breath by breath, I did not do thus and so!" The verse from Tufail refers to the ill effects suffered by camels in the hard service of war, raids, or long caravan marches.

<sup>46</sup> M. D. follows the Timūr MS. and other citations here, in writing وَلَا تَنِي وَقَاتِي.

<sup>47</sup> On these forms, see Pedersen, p. 15, esp. notes 6-7. This paragraph is evidently confused in the Cairo texts, as M. D. has it the same awkward way as Y, with the words marked inserted immediately after قَالَ تَصِب.

<sup>48</sup> See Pedersen, pp. 16-18, where are discussed the different meanings of 'amr, as life, honor, religion, etc., with sources. Parallel explanations and sources are given by Lane.

<sup>49</sup> Y omits ك.

<sup>50</sup> M. D. فيجبها. On قعد see Lane; usually with accusative. Y has . . . ذَوْرٌ > قَالَ: دار متم

<sup>51</sup> M. D. ها . . .

<sup>52</sup> Cf. a prayer phrase of 'Alī, cited by Lane: اَللّٰهُمَّ دَاخِيَ الْمَدْحُوَاتِ

<sup>53</sup> Y omits, M. D. adds in brackets.

<sup>54</sup> Instead of numbering the chapters, the text has for the second and third باب آخر, and for the fourth and fifth باب .

<sup>89</sup> Cf. note 8, above. Quoting this paragraph, Goldziher (or his copyist) has الإیمان as well at the beginning, for الإیمان.

<sup>90</sup> Sura 86, 1-2.

<sup>91</sup> Sura 79, 3.

<sup>92</sup> Y here انقضاء but correct below.

<sup>93</sup> Y الموجه, queried.

<sup>94</sup> M. D. ... وكل هواء بين رأس جبل الى اسفله فهو كذلك .  
Y has الى for M. D.'s الى, and كذلك for كذلك. I have changed الى to بين for correlation with بين above.

<sup>95</sup> Y here نجبا, line queried. جعل قضي نجبا means "he died," but here in the citation it is parallel with جعل نجبا.

<sup>96</sup> The MSS. read وحقا, M. D. changes to وحقا. I prefer وحقا.

<sup>97</sup> M. D. ندرا.

<sup>98</sup> Y corrected in text, original ذراهم in margin. M. D. retains دارهم. Only reference to the context in the poem could determine whether the pledge refers to house or money.

<sup>99</sup> Or, a vow without possibility of expiation, Lane 63.

<sup>100</sup> Lane 75, a synonym for عهد, حلف, جوار; similar to Heb. 'et; Pedersen, 7, n. 6.

<sup>101</sup> Lane 880. Y has below كايضا.

<sup>102</sup> Y اوكد. Freytag gives only V of كنع as meaning (aravit) IV as prom(p)tus fuit, paratus in re paragenda. An-Nāḍiyah only cites some e.g.'s of اجمعون اجمعون.

<sup>103</sup> M. D. omits! jumping from one بمعنى to the second. His period after اآجل also wrong.

<sup>104</sup> On عوض see Pedersen, 163, n. 1; Wellhausen, *Reste*, 65; Lane 2197. Perhaps the meaning of دهر as fate is derived from its meaning of time. عوض in Heb. 'et.

<sup>105</sup> MSS. قسم.

<sup>106</sup> M. D. أمجد. Ant. Pedersen, 135-6, interprets "grandfather"! vs. the sense here; cf. Littmann, rev., *Der Islam*, VII, 142, "fortune, welfare."

<sup>107</sup> M. D. inserts قال.

<sup>108</sup> Hence comes to mean patience from restraint to one's desires, will. Cf. Pedersen, 181, n. 1; 192, n. 2; 202, n. 1; 222.

<sup>72</sup> Sura 49. 14; cf. 52. 21. MSS. have يا<sup>72</sup> انكم; M. D. من عن.

<sup>73</sup> MSS. والخرم; but والمخرم is more likely; cf. below.

<sup>74</sup> MSS. order wrongly reversed.

<sup>75</sup> Y حلف.

<sup>76</sup> Y has امر in text as corrected reading, \*مر in margin. If M. D. found the same he does not mention it.

<sup>77</sup> M. D. omits!

<sup>78</sup> All MSS. have جاز<sup>78</sup> for جاز<sup>78</sup>, the author or some copyist in the manuscript history having confused things from just above. Also, all have ابو in the first case, which should as well be ايا, as يا is in both cases understood. Y has the further confusion of تحلل for تحلل. See esp. as-Nihdyah for an illustrative use of the phrase; also Lane; and Pedersen 294 and notes, 175, and passim chap. XII.

<sup>79</sup> Y ذكر.

<sup>80</sup> M. D. بارا.

<sup>81</sup> Pedersen, 76; Littmann, *Der Islam*, VII, 38.

<sup>82</sup> Also cited by Wallhausen, *Reste*, 189 f.

<sup>83</sup> MSS. كم - نا.

<sup>84</sup> M. D. in using quotation marks wrongly begins with عهدا. Y has يزيد for يزيد.

<sup>85</sup> M. D. corrects(?) to طول from a ref. in الجوان 105.

<sup>86</sup> One of the اباديات. Y is written defectively and with a blot. M. D. reads ما بل بحر سوة, but البحر سوة in a citation in note.

<sup>87</sup> Y هوون.

<sup>88</sup> See Freytag and Lane, under قار المهور. Our text makes no mention of the crackling (قع) salt thrown upon the fire. Landberg jotted here a ref. to *Liisa of Arab*, XIII, 238.

<sup>89</sup> M. D. inserts بن حجر. *Liisa*, XIII, 238, to which Landberg refers, says instead of the following, this: يصف حمار وحش.

<sup>90</sup> Y مشهد. For المصلون see Lane 1902; as-Nihdyah, HLF.

<sup>91</sup> MSS. وملك. This passage is much confused in Y, the copyist having been misled by the second عندهم, evidently terminal and therefore a case of error from homoteleuton. M. D. has brackets from after the first عندهم to after the second, noting الزيادة من التيمورية. But this is a mistake;



otherwise the passage, even confused as it is, could not be in the Yale copy from the older Cairo MS.<sup>1</sup> رَضَعَ is parallel in many of its meanings with رَضِعَ, retaining in these its primary signification of to be *pleasant*, *goodly*, etc. The meaning *welt* is a derived one. It is through the deriv. مِرَاضَعَة - مِعالِجَة "the relationship of fosterbrothers," that *saḥ* and *saḥa* = *ḥurma*, *ḥimam*, *ḥūf*, etc.; Lane 2732.

<sup>22</sup> Cited Lane, 2732. Abū Ḥ-Tamhāz had suffered theft of his camels by a tribe whom he had given needed nourishment. Although Lane gives a different interp., the meaning seems to be the outraged owner is giving himself the satisfaction of saying they will have to remember their *now* prosperity and *later* comes from *his* good camels!

<sup>23</sup> M. D. هَذَا آخِر .

<sup>24</sup> M. D. وصلاته .



## SOME NOTES ON THE FAMILY OF MERERUKA<sup>1</sup>

CHARLES F. NIMS  
UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

IMMEDIATELY to the north of the pyramid of King Teti of Dynasty VI at Saqqārah is a group of contemporary mastabas. Among these one of the most noted is that of Mereruka. This structure contains the chapels of Mereruka, who bore the "good name" Meri (section A), of his wife Wa'tetkhetor, with the "good name" Sesheshet, who was "eldest king's daughter of his body" (section B), and of Meriteti, an "eldest king's son of his body" (section C), who is also shown on the walls both of the chambers of his mother, Wa'tetkhetor, and those of Mereruka. Section C is actually an addition to the original structure, and its entrance is cut through the wall of one of the rooms of section A.

\* From the time of Daressy's publication of the inscriptions from this tomb complex<sup>2</sup> there have been put forth various theories concerning the relationships of Wa'tetkhetor and her son Meriteti. Daressy called Meriteti the son of Mereruka and Wa'tetkhetor,<sup>3</sup> but noted that in section C the name Meri (the "good name" of Mereruka) was a later addition, and that the name of Meriteti was secondary.<sup>4</sup>

Sethé, writing in 1918,<sup>5</sup> concluded that since Meriteti was called "king's son of his body," but not the son of Mereruka in the latter's chambers (with one exception which Sethé was inclined to

---

<sup>1</sup> The substance of this paper was presented before the American Oriental Society in Cleveland, April 1, 1937.

<sup>2</sup> "Le Mastaba de Mera," *Mémoires de l'Institut Égyptien* III (1900) 521-574. The publication is not complete, nor is it always accurate.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* 521.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* 561. His words are, "Presque partout dans les légendes et sur le stèle le nom de Mera a été introduit après coup dans les inscriptions et le nom de Teti-meri gravé en surcharge. Des pièces auraient donc été faites pour un autre des fils de Mera qui s'appelaient [Mém] et [Teti]ankh." The second name is a misreading of Fep'y'ankh; the matter of the recutting is discussed below.

<sup>5</sup> *AZ* LIV, 55, note 1. Sethé also calls attention to the fact that Mereruka had an eldest son called Mém.

discredit),\* he was not the son of Mereruka, but the child of Wa'tetkhethor by a previous marriage to a king. Drawing on Erman's incomplete collation, he points out that in the inscription in Meriteti's tomb which reads "the hereditary noble Meri, his eldest son of his body,"<sup>7</sup> the words "Meri, his son" were inserted over an earlier "king's son."

Recently Walter Federn, in an article "Die Königin Sescheschet,"<sup>8</sup> has entered into this problem in some detail. Accepting Sethe's position that Meriteti was actually the son of a king, he reinforces this contention by pointing out that Meriteti was "worthy in the presence of his father" and "lector priest of his father,"<sup>9</sup> which designations were used in Dynasty IV only of actual sons of the king.<sup>10</sup> That Wa'tetkhethor does not call herself "queen" in her tomb he attributes to her royal husband's having divorced her. From the fact that in the tomb of Meriteti the pyramid of Pepy I is named in titles 18 times, while the pyramid of Teti occurs only twice,<sup>11</sup> he judges that Wa'tetkhethor was the daughter of Teti and the wife of Pepy I. He identifies her with a Seshseshet shown on a fragment from the pyramid temple of Teti, where this woman bears a title borne in Dynasty IV by queens only.<sup>12</sup> He believes this relief was carved after Teti's death. The marriage of Pepy I to Wa'tetkhethor seems, says the author, to have been for political reasons, and he connects the supposed divorce with the secret proceedings in the harem mentioned in the autobiography of Uni.<sup>13</sup> Quoting Sethe's observations on the

\* Sethe's words are, "Ausnahme vielleicht a. a. O. [Daremy, op. cit.] S. 541, falls es sich dort nicht um eine andere Person gleichen Namens handelt oder, was noch wahrscheinlicher ist, eine Verschreibung oder Verlesung für [Teti'ankh] vorliegt, vgl. a. a. O. S. 548; Erman hat die in Rede stehende Stelle leider nicht kollationiert." But the mistake is Daremy's reading Teti'ankh for Pepy'ankh.

<sup>7</sup> *ḥr-p't Meri s3.f sm3w n3 ḥt.f.*

<sup>8</sup> *Orientalia V* (1936) 379-384. This article was called to my attention by Professor Edgerton.

<sup>9</sup> *ḥm3bw ḥr ḥt.f* and *ḥm3w-ḥt n3 ḥt.f.*

<sup>10</sup> H. Junker, *Giza II*, 33; W. Federn, *WZKM XLII* (1935) 178.

<sup>11</sup> Actually the name of the Pepy I pyramid occurs 33 times and that of the Teti pyramid 3 times; Federn's count is based on Daremy's incomplete publication.

<sup>12</sup> The title is "bull on a standard" with *ḥm3(t) n3r*; cf. J. E. Quibell, *Excavations at Saqqara, 1907-08* pl. LIV. 4.

<sup>13</sup> Cf. K. Sethe, *Urk. I*, 100.

palimpsest of "Meri, his son" over "king's son" in Meriteti's chambers, Federn concludes that Meriteti was forced to renounce his claim of royal heir, and that since he appears as a youth with a sidelock in the chambers of his elders, but in his own tomb is shown as an adult invested with the highest titles of Mereruka, and has a wife and children, this renunciation took place at least twenty years after the marriage of Wa'tetkhetor to Mereruka, and probably soon before or shortly after the death of Pepy I.

None of the above treatments has had the advantage of a careful collation of the inscriptions; moreover, both Sethe and Federn have overlooked the statement of Daressy that in section C the name of Meriteti was secondary, and Federn has not dealt with the exception noted by Sethe. Before dealing with the above conclusions a precise statement of the evidence of the inscriptions is necessary.<sup>14</sup>

In the chambers of Wa'tetkhetor (section B) Meriteti appears six times, shown as a child with sidelock, with the inscription reading "her eldest son, her beloved, Meriteti, whose good name is Meri."<sup>15</sup>

In the chambers of Mereruka (section A) Meriteti appears six times. Five times he is shown as a youth with sidelock; with two of these figures the inscription is "eldest king's son of his body, his beloved, worthy in the presence of his father and in the presence of the great god, Meriteti,"<sup>16</sup> and once the "worthy" formula is missing.<sup>17</sup> Originally there followed in these three inscriptions "whose good name is Meri," but this has been erased in each case.<sup>18</sup> In each of these three reliefs the cutting, though of good quality, gives the distinct impression that the figure and the inscription were added after the original decoration of the walls. In the other two cases, in which the additional "whose good name

<sup>14</sup> This evidence was collected during my season with the Sakkarah Expedition of the Oriental Institute. The evidence from sections B and C is from my notes; that from section A appears in *The Mastaba of Mereruka*, 2 vols. (OIP XXXI, XXXIX). References to this publication will be cited as *Mereruka*, with plate numbers.

<sup>15</sup> *Bj. 4 kmw mry. 4 Mry-tt rn. f nfr Mri.*

<sup>16</sup> *Bj. nšwt nš ht. f kmw mry. f kmw hr it. f hr nfr 3 Mry-tt; cf. Mereruka 8, 23c.*

<sup>17</sup> *Ibid.* 46.

<sup>18</sup> I can give no explanation for this erasure.

is Meri" was never present, there can be no doubt that the figure and inscriptions were later additions.<sup>12</sup> In the sixth occurrence, Meriteti appears as an adult (though without beard) and with the accompanying inscription "his (i.e., Mereruka's) eldest son, Meriteti."<sup>13</sup> In this last case both the figure and the inscription are part of the original decoration of the wall.

Coming to Meriteti's own tomb (section C), we note that instead of there having been one name on the walls previous to that of Meriteti, there were actually two; i.e., the present and final version of the inscription is the third.

The person for whom the tomb was originally intended had 41 of the titles of Mereruka, and 8 others not held by the older man, including "eldest king's son of his body" and "lector priest of his father."<sup>14</sup> At the time of the original decoration the west wall and west portions of the north and south walls of chamber C 4 were left unfinished. The owner of the tomb is shown as an adult in all but one place, where he appears in a palanquin as a child with side-lock.<sup>15</sup> His name has been obliterated, but the cartouche of Teti as part of the name is still visible in places. Since the tomb connects with that of Mereruka, and the owner was "eldest king's son of his body," it seems impossible to escape the conclusion that these chambers were originally intended for Meriteti.

In the first recutting, the "king's son" of the inscriptions was erased and "Meri, his son" substituted. The name of the earlier owner was almost entirely obliterated in the majority of cases, and the name Pepy'ankh was inserted. The undecorated parts of chamber C 4 were finished in keeping with the new readings. The recutting of the name is crude, and the decoration of chamber C 4 belonging to this period consists of ragged gouges.

In the third version the "ankh" of the name Pepy'ankh was erased, and the Pepy cartouche was incorporated into the added name of the Pepy I pyramid and titles, so that the resulting inscription read "inspector of prophets of the pyramid (-town) of

<sup>12</sup> Ibid. 48c, 177.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid. 88. This is Sethe's exception, but there is no justification for his doubts (cf. above, note 6). In the same scene, in front of Meriteti, appears "his (i.e., Mereruka's) eldest son, lector priest, Memi," on which cf. below, p. 642.

<sup>14</sup> *S3* *stšwt imw nt pt.f* and *hwt-bbt w pt.f*.

<sup>15</sup> Chamber C 1, north wall, above doorway leading to chamber C 3.

Pepy I,"<sup>20</sup> following which was further added "king's son, count, sole companion, Meriteti."<sup>21</sup> Often it was necessary to erase part of the accompanying scene to add this inscription. The final work is quite good in execution. To this period belong both the entrance jambs and probably the majority, if not all, of the names of the servitors. It should be emphasized that all of the occurrences of the Pepy I pyramid belong to this final phase of the inscriptions.

The figure and the inscriptions of the son Ihimsaf and the wife were added subsequent to the original decoration of the walls.<sup>22</sup> Since these additions were allowed to remain, it is probable that they represent the son and wife of Meriteti. But the execution is much inferior to the third version of the inscriptions, and it is impossible to tell how long after the original decoration of the walls these figures and inscriptions were added. Over one of the figures of the son the inscription originally read, "his eldest son, worthy in the presence of his father, lector priest of his father, Ihimsaf."<sup>23</sup> Later this was changed, and the final version is merely "eldest lector priest, Ihimsaf."<sup>24</sup>

In seeking to identify Pepy'ankh we must consider the appearance in Mereruka's tomb of a person who is called "his (i. e., Mereruka's) eldest son, Memi." In five of the six places where this person is shown his name has been erased; once the name Pepy'ankh has been inserted in paint over the erasure, and in another case faint painted traces of the cartouche and the two P's of the name Pepy remain. In the instance where Memi's name has not been erased, he stands in the same scene with Meriteti, who is also here called Mereruka's eldest son.<sup>25</sup> In each case where the evidence is still extant, Memi is shown as a bearded adult.

<sup>20</sup> *Shd hm-nfr mn-nfr-Ppy*.

<sup>21</sup> *S3 nmt Aty' smr-w'ty Mry-ftt*. There are some slight variants to these forms.

<sup>22</sup> There may be an exception to this. W. Wreszinski, *Atlas III*, Taf. VIII, upper picture, shows a fragment from Meriteti's tomb giving the lower part of a scene of a man and a woman (whose figure is smaller) seated in a palanquin. This scene is from chamber C1, east wall, and is undoubtedly part of the original decoration, but it is not possible to say that the woman is the same as the one portrayed in the later additions.

<sup>23</sup> *S3.f smnw tmjhw hr it.f hrw-hdt nt ts.f 'Ihy-m-s3.f*.

<sup>24</sup> *Hrw-hdt smnw 'Ihy-m-s3.f*. In two other cases the *s3.f* of the inscription accompanying the figure was erased, and once an additional inscription was added.

<sup>25</sup> Memi appears in these places: (1) Mereruka 23a, name erased, with

As to the identity of Pepy'ankh, several alternatives should be considered. The first thought might be that he was Meriteti, but this seems highly improbable on several grounds. If Meriteti had changed his name, it seems hardly reasonable that he would have reverted later to the name he first held; moreover, in Mereruka's chambers the name and rank of Meriteti remain the same; Pepy'ankh was inserted only over the name of Memi. Since the changes in the C chambers are so thorough, and especially since the style of the parts of these chambers in which the decoration was completed by Pepy'ankh is in such contrast to the original, I believe these considerations point to Pepy'ankh's having been a person different from Meriteti.

Pepy'ankh could hardly have been unrelated to Mereruka, since he takes such pains to call himself "Meri's son" in the tomb in which his name has been introduced. Nor does it seem probable that he was a son originally unnamed in the tomb of Mereruka, as four other sons appear,<sup>20</sup> while only the name of Memi has been erased. It seems to me that the most probable solution is that Pepy'ankh was Memi, especially since the "eldest" of the original inscriptions was often retained in the recutting of the C chamber inscriptions, and in one case "Meri, his eldest son" is written in that part of the tomb which was finished in the second phase.

We can now return to a consideration of Federn's conclusions. Apart from the feeling that it would not have been politically expedient for any king, having married the eldest daughter of his predecessor for political reasons, and having had by her a son who would be heir to the throne, to divorce her and to allow her then to marry the chief functionary of the realm (Mereruka was vizier), at the same time letting the son retain his rank as heir, there are several concrete objections to Federn's position.

1. Junker has demonstrated that the rank of "king's son," with or without the additional "of his body," was borne not only by the king's actual child, but also by his grandchild and perhaps even

---

painted traces of *Pp[y]*; the traces are not shown on the plate. (2) Ibid. 63a, name erased, here a palimpsest over an earlier name. (3) Ibid. 88, name not erased. (4) Ibid. 128, name erased. (5) Ibid. 154, name erased, and *Ppy'ab* inserted in paint. (6) Ibid. 171, name erased.

<sup>20</sup> These sons are: (1) 'Apre, *ibid.* 154. (2) Nefer, *ibid.* 158. (3) Khenti, *ibid.* 88, 158. (4) Khenu, *ibid.* 7.



by his great-grandchild,<sup>30</sup> and Federn has come to similar conclusions.<sup>31</sup> Since Wa'tetkhetor was "eldest king's daughter of his body,"<sup>32</sup> perhaps the daughter of Teti,<sup>33</sup> Meriteti would be entitled to the rank of "king's son" through her.

2. Though in Dynasty IV only the actual son of a king seems to have been "worthy in the presence of his father" and "lector priest of his father," the fact that Ihimsaf originally bore these titles shows that here, at least, they did not carry the same significance.<sup>34</sup>

3. Meriteti is actually called Mereruka's eldest son in one instance.<sup>35</sup>

4. There is nothing to indicate that the original decoration of the entire group of chambers A, B, and C of Mereruka's mastaba was not done in Teti's reign; indeed, from the position of the mastaba near the pyramid of Teti it would naturally be assumed that Mereruka, as well as the others whose mastabas are nearby, lived and held office under Teti.

There is some evidence which lends support to this date. In the list of estates in Mereruka's chapel the extant portions give the names of kings Ikawhor, Unis, and Teti,<sup>36</sup> and while several names are lost, there is nothing to suggest that the name of Pepy I was among them. This would give further support to the dating of the mastaba to the reign of Teti.

Moreover, I believe that further evidence can be obtained from the mastaba of the vizier Khentika.<sup>37</sup> This mastaba, which is similar to that of Mereruka in that the whole interior is filled with rooms, appears, both from the style of its reliefs and from its posi-

<sup>30</sup> H. Junker, *Giza I*, 9 f., 152 f.; *Giza II*, 38-39.

<sup>31</sup> W. Federn, *WZKM XLII* (1935), 172-181.

<sup>32</sup> *S3*(1) *ntwt ntr hf f dwtw(t)*.

<sup>33</sup> G. Jéquier, in his article "Les femmes de Pepi II" *Studies Presented to F. Ll. Griffith* 11 ff., goes as far as to say that Wa'tetkhetor was the granddaughter of great-granddaughter of a king; I know of no evidence to support his conclusion.

<sup>34</sup> It seems highly improbable that Ihimsaf would have been so designated in anticipation of his father's accession to the throne.

<sup>35</sup> Cf. above, p. 641 and note 20. Sethe's suggestion that this may have been another person by the same name seems highly improbable.

<sup>36</sup> *Mereruka* 49.

<sup>37</sup> To be published shortly by R. Macramallah.

tion, to be the latest of the major group so far discovered about the pyramid of Teti. This official was connected with the pyramids of both Teti and Pepy I. Khentika had a son who six times is named Tetidjedi, while a youth who may well have been the same person is called Pepydjedi on the walls of the room containing the burial pit of Khentika (where Pepydjedi occupies the same relative position on the wall as does Tetidjedi in other rooms) and on his own stele erected independently in one of the rooms of his father's mastaba.<sup>18</sup> If this belief is correct, it seems that the occasion for changing the son's name would have been the death of Teti and the accession of Pepy I. I believe that this indicates that the decoration of the tomb of Khentika was begun before the death of Teti and was finished under his successor, giving an earlier date for Mereruka.<sup>19</sup>

5. We have seen that, in Meriteti's chapel, the palimpsest "Meri, his son" was inserted, in all probability, by another person, and, indeed, Meriteti is still "king's son" (though not "eldest, of his body") in the final inscriptions.

6. Since the figures of Meriteti in Mereruka's tomb, in those cases where he is called "king's son," seem to have been introduced subsequently to the original decoration of the walls, this may indicate that he was not yet born when the cutting of the reliefs was begun. However, W'ettkhetor always appears with Mereruka on the walls of his chambers as part of the original decoration, showing that their marriage had already taken place before the decoration of Mereruka's chapel was begun.

7. Finally, it should be pointed out that there are three other "king's daughters" named "Seshseshet" shown in the neighboring mastabas, and that one of these was also "eldest king's daughter of

<sup>18</sup> A block reused in the floor of the room with burial pit has the name "Teti'ankh the middle." This would probably indicate that the floor had been laid some time during the reign of Pepy I.

<sup>19</sup> Since there are approximately 100 minor functionaries named in Mereruka's own chambers, I have made careful comparison of them with the names appearing in the nearby mastabas of Kagemni, Shepsesptah, Nefereseshemré, 'Aukhmahor, Nefereseshemtah, and Khentika. Only 19 of the names, mostly common ones, are the same, and only in the case of two "ka-servants" from the mastaba of Shepsesptah are the titles identical. This gives negative results in the matter of relative dating.

his body," as was Wa'tetkhetor.<sup>40</sup> Moreover, any consideration of the royal family, and especially any theory as to the political importance of the king's eldest daughter, must take account of a woman named Inti, who was "eldest king's daughter of his body (attached to) the pyramid (-town) of Teti" and "eldest king's daughter of his body (attached to) the pyramid(-town) of Pepy I."<sup>41</sup> She had the title "companion of Horus," otherwise known only as belonging to the queens of Dynasties IV and VI. This raises some doubt as to whether the title accompanying the name Seshseshet on the Teti pyramid temple fragment<sup>42</sup> actually indicates a queen. And since there were three other women, approximately contemporary, who had the same Seshseshet, the person shown on this fragment cannot be identified with Wa'tetkhetor with any certainty, apart from the consideration that it may depict a fifth woman otherwise unknown.

I believe that the cumulative weight of these observations makes it unnecessary to accept Federn's conclusions, and that the evidence points to Meriteti's having been actually the son of Mereruka and Wa'tetkhetor, as Dareddy believed. The same considerations militate against the necessity of concluding that Wa'tetkhetor was a queen. Though it is somewhat difficult to form any theory concerning the history of Mereruka's tomb and the adjoining chapels,

<sup>40</sup> They are: (1)  $S_3(t)$   $nšwt nš \dot{h}t.f \dot{S}ššt$ , also called  $\dot{S}ššt$ , the wife of Shepseskaf, cf. J. E. Quibell and A. G. K. Hayter, *Teti Pyramid, North Side* 20-23. (2)  $S_3(t)$   $nšwt nš \dot{h}t.f Nš-\dot{h}t-nšty rn.š nfr \dot{S}ššt$ , the wife of Kagemni, cf. F. W. von Bissing, *Die Mastaba des Gem-ni-kat I*, pls. XX, XXI. (3)  $S_3t$   $nšwt nš \dot{h}t.f šmšwt \dot{S}ššt$ , the wife of Neferaschamptah, cf. J. Capart, *Un rue de tombes* XCVII.

<sup>41</sup>  $S_3(t)$   $nšwt šmšwt nš \dot{h}t.f (nš) \dot{g}d-šwt-Tš$  and  $a_3(t)$   $nšwt šmšwt nš \dot{h}t.f (nš) m-nfr-Ppy$ . Such a designation with the name of a pyramid is usually considered to show relationship to the king whose pyramid is named; I do not know how to interpret this case. Inti's mastaba, situated southwest of the mastaba of Khentika, has not been published; the quoted passages are from the stele, side pieces, and lintel above the stele still in position. The rest of the structure is of mud brick. In the spring of 1936 there was also a lintel from this tomb in the store room within the mastaba of Kagemni.

<sup>42</sup> Cf. above, p. 639 and note 12.

<sup>43</sup> Where two "eldest" sons appear, it is usually considered that one of them has died. But in this case, at least, may it not be possible that each was the "eldest" son of his own mother?

it seems to me that the following is the most probable conclusion in view of the evidence.

At the time Mereruka began the decoration of his chambers, in the reign of Teti, he was already married to the "king's daughter" Wa'tetkhetor, who is always shown with him on the walls of the chambers of his tomb, but he had one or more sons by a previous marriage, the eldest being Memi. That Memi was not Wa'tetkhetor's son seems certain from the fact that he is not shown in her tomb, nor does he have the rank of "king's son"; he is always shown as a person older than Meriteti. Perhaps before the completion of the reliefs of Mereruka's chambers and the beginning of those of Wa'tetkhetor, Meriteti was born. His figure was then introduced in several places, and if original in that part finished later.<sup>44</sup> Soon afterwards the additional tomb for Meriteti was built, and its decoration begun, but not finished. Meriteti bore the high titles of Mereruka as his hereditary right, and was shown as an adult, it may be even in anticipation of his attainment of manhood.<sup>45</sup> That Memi was passed over and Meriteti became the heir of Mereruka was probably due to the position of Meriteti as grandson of the king. About the time of the accession of Pepy I, Mereruka probably already having died,<sup>46</sup> Memi assumed the name of Pepy'ankh, doubtless for political purposes, and was able to usurp temporarily the tomb of his younger half-brother. Later, however, Meriteti regained his own property, and reintroduced his name into the inscriptions.

---

<sup>44</sup> The decoration of chamber A 10, where Meriteti is called Mereruka's eldest son, and where the figure is original, is decidedly inferior to that of the rest of the A section (with the exception of A 12, where the work is similar to that in A 10). In Wa'tetkhetor's chambers the relief is also of poor quality. This suggests that these were decorated by another artist and probably at another time than the other room of the A chambers.

<sup>45</sup> It is not necessary to assume that these titles required active participation in the office. For instance, Kagemni and Khentika were both "real viziers," which would seem to indicate that in some cases the title of vizier was honorific; cf. B. Gunn in *Teti Pyramid Cemeteries* 109, note 3. However, Professor Edgerton has pointed out to me that in Wb. II. 13. 22 "se?" used with a title is taken to mean, "ein Beamter wie er sein muss," which would weigh against this conclusion.

<sup>46</sup> Mereruka was a man of middle age at the time of his death; cf. the report of Dr. Douglas Derry in *Teti Pyramid Cemeteries* 26.

## EARLY PROHIBITIONS OF TOBACCO IN CHINA AND MANCHURIA

L. CARRINGTON GOODRICH  
COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY

TOBACCO began to appear in Eastern Asia about three-quarters of a century after the Columbian discovery of the Americas: in the Philippines before 1575, Japan about 1590, Macao around 1600, Java in 1601, India about 1605, Ceylon in 1610, and Korea about 1616. The earliest dates for the importation of tobacco into China (beyond the Portuguese colony on the island of Macao) and into Manchuria are not so certain. It was surely present in south-eastern China during the first quarter of the 17th century, and Manchuria probably adopted it from Korea not long after.

No sure references to tobacco occurs in Chinese literature before 1600.<sup>1</sup> The late Dr. Berthold Laufer, in *Tobacco and its use in Asia* (Field Museum of Natural History, Chicago, 1924, leaflet no. 18, 57-95), cites the writings of Chang Chieh-pin 張介賓 (T. Ching-yüeh 景岳), 1563-1640, a physician from Shan-yin, Chekiang,<sup>2</sup> and indeed he may well have been the first Chinese to write on tobacco.<sup>3</sup> A contemporary author, possibly even an earlier one, Yao Lü 姚旅, a poet and essayist of the Wan-li period (1573-1620)<sup>4</sup> and a native of P'ü-t'ien, Fukien, confirms Chang's state-

<sup>1</sup> Miss B. D. Edwards, "The miscellanea of I-shan: a little known work of Li Shang-yin 李商隱 (義山) 813-858," *BSOS*, 5 (1928-30), 757-85, translated one 9th century piece of writing as follows: 對大僚食咽 [it is bad form] "to eat or smoke in the presence of superiors." (See p. 772). Dr. Lionel Giles corrected this (*BSOS*, 6, 637): "食咽 is simply 'to smoke.'" What Dr. Giles should have written was that 咽 means "to swallow, gulp down," never "to smoke." Miss Edwards has accepted Dr. Giles' correction uncritically in her book *Chinese Prose Literature of the T'ang Period I* (London, 1937), 136.

<sup>2</sup> Correct Laufer, *idem* 59, who writes Shansi.

<sup>3</sup> See his *Ching-yüeh ch'üan shu* 景岳全書 48/24b-25b, entry no. 77a. Mr. Ts'ui Chung-hsin 崔鍾秀 has written the biography of Chang Chieh-pin for the *Dictionary of Chinese Biography*, which is shortly to be published.

<sup>4</sup> I have searched in vain for the exact dates of his birth and death, and for the date of publication of his book, the *Lu shu* 露書. The Fukien provincial gazetteer 福建通志 of 1869 (213/30a), Dr. Arthur W. Hummel tells me, simply puts him in the above mentioned reign. The book is briefly

ments. He declares: "There is a plant called *tan-pa-ku* 淡巴菰 produced in Luzon. Another name is *ksia* 醃. You take fire and light one end and put the other end in your mouth. The smoke goes down your throat through the pipe. It can make one tipsy, but it can [likewise] keep one clear of malaria. People have brought it to Chang-chou [Fukien] and planted it, and now there is more there than in Luzon, and it is exported and sold to that country. At present [my native district of] P'u has *tan-pa-ku*. It is commonly called gold-silk-smoke 金絲醃. Its leaves are like those of the lichee. After these are pounded, the juice [extracted therefrom] can kill off lice on the scalp. The leaves make the tobacco."<sup>2</sup>

Other slightly later writers are in general agreement. Pang I-chih 方以智 (chin-shih 1646, d. 1667), whom Dr. Hu Shih once called "the first phonologist of China," for example, writes in the *Wu li hsiao shih* 物理小識, completed 1664, 9/28b<sup>3</sup> that the *tan-pa-ku* smoke plant 淡把姑烟草 was brought to Chang-chou and Ch'uan-chou, Fukien province, at the end of the Wan-li period. He adds, "It was manufactured by a certain Ma 馬, and called *tan-ja-kuo* 淡肉果. It spread by degrees to the Nine borders and now everyone holds a long pipe in his mouth and lights and inhales and exhales. Some are intoxicated and fall to the ground." Père Louis le Comte (1655-1728), who arrived in China in 1687, and wrote to Paris shortly thereafter of the products of the country, asserted that tobacco was introduced through the ports of Fukien at the end of the 16th century or the beginning of the 17th.<sup>4</sup>

It was not long before prohibitions began to appear. The first recorded in China dates from 1637.<sup>5</sup> Unhappily the edict itself

described in the Imperial Catalogue 四庫全書總目, 128/Ta, but seems no longer to be extant.

<sup>2</sup> Reprinted in the *Chin saw lu* 金絲錄, preface dated 1737, 1a. See Wang Shih-han 汪師韓, b. 1707, chin-shih 1733; *T'ang wa Wang shih i shu* 叢睦汪氏遺書.

<sup>3</sup> The page reference is to the manuscript copy in the *San k'u ch'uan shu* preserved in the National Library of Peiping. See also W. F. Mayers, *Notes and Queries* I, 5 (May 31, 1907), 81.

<sup>4</sup> Letter to the Comte de Crécy included in the *Nouveaux Mémoires* I, Paris 1690. See Pfister, Louis, *Notices Biographiques et Bibliographiques sur les Jésuites de l'ancienne mission de Chine* I, 422.

<sup>5</sup> Dushill, *The Pipe Book*, 305, refers to an imperial edict of 1612, which I have not been able to track down.

seems not to have come down to us;<sup>9</sup> so we must depend upon a contemporary report. Shen Han-kuang 申涵光, 1619-1677, a native of Yung-nien, Chihli province, wrote as follows: "In the year *tiang-ch'ou* [1637], when I was at the capital, I saw an edict forbidding [the use of] tobacco 烟. I did not know what tobacco was. In the year *su-yin* [1638], after the defense of the city,<sup>10</sup> I gradually noticed a few people in my district using it, but they were attendants, people of the lower classes, and soldiers. After a while many people of the upper classes 士人 took it. Now I hear that even among the occupants of the women's quarters there are some who use it. This is remarkable. There is more than one variety of tobacco 烟. [Fu] *chien yen* 建烟 and *Man* 滿 [chou] *yen* 烟 are especially expensive. It also grows where I live. The leaves are of the same sort as palm leaves, but smaller. One must strip [each plant] of all but six or seven leaves. When they have been dried they have to be chopped up. When one drinks it, one becomes terribly confused to the point of collapse. I have not seen anything written on this plant. I do not know when it began; most probably not more than thirty years ago."<sup>11</sup>

The Japanese-Chinese Encyclopaedia, *Wakan Sansai Zue* 和漢三才圖會<sup>12</sup> 99/21a, records a second decree, issued 1638, which read: "Those who hawk clandestinely Tobacco, and sell it to foreigners, shall, no matter the quantity sold, be decapitated, and their heads exposed on a pike." A third is mentioned by Mayers

<sup>9</sup> The *Shih fu* 實錄, or Authentic Record, of the Ch'ung-chen period, 1628-1644, where such an edict would most probably have been preserved, is not extant, nor are the archives of these closing years of the Ming house. They were either accidentally destroyed in the fighting about Peking in 1644, or wilfully done away with by the conquering Manchus.

<sup>10</sup> The Manchus raided the two provinces of Chihli and Shantung in 1638, from T'ungchou to Taiman. See E. H. Parker, "The Manchus in China," *The China Review* XV, 5, 264.

<sup>11</sup> From the *Ch'ü-shan-t'ang fu shih* 蓮山堂集史, reprinted in the *Chin shu fu* 3a.

<sup>12</sup> This work is by Terashima, Ry'än 寺島瓦安, a physician and native of Osaka. The preface is dated 1713. The sources cited, *Pen ts'ao tung ch'üan* 本草綱目 by Shen Nu 沈祿 (fl. 1644-1692), the *P'eng-ch'ü* (Sze-) *lei chi* 蓬溪類記, and the gazetteer of Chang-chou (Fukien) 漳州府志, presumably the one of 1628, are not at my disposal. This particular passage has been translated by Gustave Schlegel in *Notes and Queries* I, 7 (July 31, 1867), 43.



(*op. cit.*), dated 1640.<sup>13</sup> Wang P'u (or Pu or Fu) 王浦, a native of Tsui-li, Chekiang, mentions another, three years later, as follows: "Tobacco leaves 烟葉 first appeared in Fukien. The people beyond the [northern] border are subject to diseases caused by extreme cold, and cannot be cured without tobacco. People in Manchuria reach the place where they will exchange a horse for a catty of tobacco. In Ch'ung-chen *kwei-wei* [1643] an edict was issued: 'A sentence of banishment will be passed on those people who secretly sow.' But the penalty was light and the gain great. The people paid no heed to the command. Whereupon an order was issued [changing the penalty to] execution. But not long after, because the soldiers on the northern border could not be cured of sickness due to cold, the edict was withdrawn. When I was a child, I did not know what tobacco was. At the end of the Ch'ung-chen period our country was planted everywhere with tobacco. So there are not even youngsters of two feet [high] who are not smoking it. How suddenly (disastrously fast?) customs change!"<sup>14</sup>

It was no wonder then that Fang I-chih, another contemporary (cited above), who was in Peking taking the palace examinations in 1640 and continued on for a short while at the Hanlin Academy, should have written: "If [tobacco] was severely prohibited in the period of Ch'ung-chen, but this did not stop [its use or production]."<sup>15</sup>

Meanwhile similar prohibitions were being enacted in nearby Mukden, then under Manchu control, one of which has fortunately been preserved in two copies in its original form, in Manchu and Chinese.<sup>16</sup> It is dated Ch'ung-teh 4/6/26 (July 26, 1639), and reads (in translation) as follows:

<sup>13</sup> Mayers makes it the 13th year of Tsung Cheng (= Ch'ung-chen) — A. D. 1641 — which is a slight miscalculation, or a misprint.

<sup>14</sup> See *Fu an ao yü* 蔚菴瑣語, 3b-4a, reprinted in the *Sau loig* 說鈴, 冊 10, compiled by Wu Chen-fang 吳震方, chin-shih 1679.

<sup>15</sup> *Wu li hiao shih* 9/28b. Cf. also the remarks of Li Shih-hung 黎士宏 (or 仕弘), 1618-1697, quoted by Kuo Po-ts'ang 郭柏蒼 in *Mia ch'en ts'i* 閩產錄異 1/24, publ. 1886. (For translation of them, see Swingle, *Orientalia* added, Library of Congress, 1932-1933, 12-13.)

<sup>16</sup> One is in the Palace Museum, Peking 內閣大庫, and the other is in the private collection of Mr. Lu Chen-yü 羅振玉, Hsinking, Manchoukuo. The first is reproduced in *Wen k'ien ts'ang pien* 文獻叢編, no. 12, and in Walter Fuchs, *Beiträge zur Mandjurischen Bibliographie und Literatur* (Tokyo, 1936).

## PROCLAMATION OF THE BOARD OF REVENUE

To officials and citizens 民人: be it known: Tobacco may not be eaten 吃 or sold. The board has prohibited it several times already. Recently the princes, *dei-te* [princes of the third order], and *bei-teu* [princes of the fourth order] have put a stop to it, but there are people who are recalcitrant or ignorant, who do not heed orders, and who still plant, consume, and sell it. Do they not consider this, that in former times when there was no tobacco,—what harm had we? From now on it must certainly be prohibited. If there are those who disobey regulations and are caught in the act, they shall be treated as though they were bandits, and shall be sentenced to the cage for eight days, and made to walk through the eight gates [i. e. Fengtien]. Besides being beaten by the whip and having their ears pierced, they shall also be fined nine ounces of silver, which shall be presented to the one who apprehends them. If someone sees [an offender] at an earlier time, but does not seize him, let another arrest him together with the first mentioned and both shall be treated according to the same law. If there are those who plant tobacco, the captain of a company and the lieutenants, even though they express ignorance of the same, are incriminated and must share in the penalty. A lieutenant in a village must suffer fifty strokes of the lash. In case a slave informs on his master, and his information is correct, he is a free man. The captains of every banner must copy this proclamation and post it in their areas, that every one may be informed. A special proclamation.<sup>11</sup>

Another edict, issued under the same Manchu emperor, dated 1641, is referred to by A. F. in *Notes and Queries*, no. 7 (July 31, 1867), 93, as follows: He "totally forbids tobacco smoking, and declares that the practice is a more heinous crime than even that of neglecting archery, attention to which was to the warlike Manchus the first of duties."

Intelligent people were confused in their minds about this new plant. Chang Chieh-pin, who was a doctor, records the very interesting observation: "When the Chinese army penetrated the region [of Yunnan] and suffered from malaria, all except one battalion became seriously ill. It turned out that those who seemed

<sup>11</sup> The words for tobacco used throughout this order are respectively

tau-pou-kwei 丹白桂 and *dambags* 烟. Dr. George A. Kennedy of Yale

University, who has given me some aid in the translation of this bi-lingual text, informs me that the Manchu and Chinese renderings are not exactly parallel.

to be immune from the disease had the habit of using tobacco."<sup>18</sup> He, therefore, says Laufer, recommended it highly "as a remedy in expelling colds, for malaria caused by mountain mists, for reducing the swellings brought about by dropsy, and for counter-acting cholera." Others were not so sure. Hsu Shih-chi 徐石麒 (1578-1646), president of the board of punishments in the closing months of 1642, remarked—perhaps because his was the official viewpoint—on the ancient treachery of wine, and the modern peril of tobacco.<sup>19</sup> Fang I-chih wrote: "It can drive away rheumatism, and break up a cold, but if one continually [smokes], one's lungs will be dried up and can be cured by no medicines; when there are signs of a patient suddenly coughing up yellow water he will die."<sup>20</sup>

These were some of the horrified comments of the first to meet with tobacco. A decade or two later the opinion of writers was beginning to veer in favor of the weed. Wrote the fine scholar Shih Jun-chang 施閏章, 1618-1683, "A certain Chang Hsün 張荀 (T. Chung-shu 仲淑) of Shan-yin, Chekiang, says, If one stops smoking while suffering from dysentery the disease will cease. But later your dysentery is all the worse. A countryman to the south [of my district], belonging to the clan of Meng 孟, is a cultivator of bees. Near his farm is land which grows tobacco. When the bees suck the tobacco blossoms they die immediately, and the honey is ruined. So we know that tobacco is poisonous. Hence we should not be in close companionship with it. Those who are interested in length of days say: If you keep on swallowing your saliva you will gain eternal life. Have you not noticed that the character *huo* 活 [live] is made up of *ch'ien* 千, *k'ou* 口, *shui* 水 [thousand, mouths, water]? But now if you burn your throat and fill your lungs with smoke, can you keep on living and use this poisonous fire? A friend of mine who is a tremendous smoker, and smokes over a hundred times a day, fell into a strange ailment. His head became as large as a peck basket, his gums developed sores producing a pint of pus, making neighboring rooms malodorous, and he nearly perished, but recovered. This tobacco

<sup>18</sup> Cf. Laufer, *op. cit.*, 59.

<sup>19</sup> Quoted by Ku Yen-wu 顧炎武 (1613-82) in his *Jih chik lu* 日知錄. (Reprinted in the *CMU ssu lu*, 2b-3a.)

<sup>20</sup> *Op. cit.*

originally came from abroad. But now it has been acclimated everywhere until it is a native product, and its poison has disappeared."<sup>25</sup>

A younger contemporary of note, Wang Shih-chen 王士禎, 1634-1711, included the following yarn in his *Pen kua yü kua* 分甘餘話:<sup>26</sup> "Han T'an 韓荃 (T. Mu-lu 慕盧 [1637-1704]) loved to smoke tobacco and drink wine. In K'ang-hsi mao-wu [1678], when the throne appointed him and me to go to the [chü-jen] military examination halls as examiners, he would not let his hand be separated for a moment from his wine cup and his tobacco pipe. I jokingly remarked: 'These two things are for you as bear and fish were to the ancients.<sup>27</sup> That I know. But if as a last resort you have to give up one, which will it be?' After long thought Han replied: 'I'll give up wine.' Everybody laughed. Later I looked into the *Lu shu* of Yao Lū which records that the tobacco plant was a product of Luzon. Its original name was *tan-pa-ku* 淡巴菰; so I informed Han. At this time Han was director of the Han-lin Academy<sup>28</sup> and was instructing the Han-lin bachelors. Whereupon he ordered his students to make a song about *tan-pa-ku*."<sup>29</sup>

It would appear from the above that there was no ban against smoking in the first decades of the Ch'ing. But hear these words, addressed to his sons, by the famous second emperor (K'ang-hsi era, 1662-1722): "I am superior to all men. I desire that my orders be heard everywhere; so I must first heed them myself, then others will follow. Take, for example, the smoking of tobacco 吃烟. Although it is not a matter of importance [in itself], conflagrations nevertheless spring most from this source. I have therefore constantly prohibited it. It is not because I do not know how to smoke. While a small boy, in the dwelling of my nurse 在養母家 I became well acquainted with smoking. Now with a prohibition against smoking, but wanting to do so myself, how can I make others wish to serve me. For this reason I never use [tobacco]."<sup>30</sup>

<sup>25</sup> *Chü chai ten cü* 矩齋雜記, reprinted in the *Yen p'ü* 烟譜 compiled by Ts'ui Chia-wan 蔡家琬 of Ho-fai, Anhui.

<sup>26</sup> See Yao Ying 姚登, 1785-1832, *Shia Ai-so fu* 猷小錄 5/28.

<sup>27</sup> Mencius said, "I like fish, and I also like bear's paws. If I cannot have the two together, I will let the fish go, and take the bear's paws." Translation by Legge, *Chinese Classics* II, 411.

<sup>28</sup> He became such in 1695.

<sup>29</sup> These remarks are taken from a collection made by his fourth son, who became the next emperor, 世宗憲皇帝御纂庭訓格言, and are reprinted in the *Ta'ung wen Wang shih i shu*, 9b-10a.

The only prohibition that I can find is contained in one of the first issues of the Statutes of the Ch'ing house, *Ta Ch'ing li ti* 大清律例, dated K'ang-hsi 15, or 1676.<sup>20</sup> It reads in part as follows: "Both civil and military officials will be discharged if they smoke in the forbidden city granaries, altars, and temples; banner attendants will be given two months of the cangue and one hundred strokes [of the bamboo]; Chinese forty strokes and exile to a distance of three thousand li." Even this emasculated ban was apparently allowed to lapse, for it was not repeated in succeeding issues of the Statutes. Within a very short while after the death of the second emperor a Chinese, Li É 麗鶚, 1692-1753, was to write an ode to the heavenly perfume 天香詞, which contained the following introduction: "The way to consume this fragrance is to cut it up as finely as shreds, put it in a pipe, light it, and then inhale. It makes a man seem drunken. It causes cold to disappear, and loneliness to evaporate. The bouquet [of tobacco] is superior to that of wine. Powerful men and young girls—there are no people who do not use it. I especially love it. I am angry because so few have sung of it, thus hiding the strange plant in obscurity. In my leisure, in a transport of delight, I have taken up my brush and dashed off an ode in praise thereof."<sup>21</sup> Tobacco had come to stay in China. Human perversity had broken the imperial will.

Only one prohibition remained to be enacted and enforced: a regulation against smoking in a library. It appears where one might expect it, in the greatest private collection in the empire, the T'ien I Ko 天一閣 of Ning-po. How far back this rule goes it is hard to say. The first notice appears in the *Tung chai ta'o yü* 東齋詩話, 2, of Wu I-feng 吳璽鳳, 1742-1819.<sup>22</sup> It is repeated in the preface to a catalogue of the collection, 天一閣見存書目, 1b, by Juan Wen-ta 阮文達, dated 1808.

The Chinese and Japanese were succumbing to tobacco at about the same time as occidentals were. The series of prohibitions around the Euro-Asiatic continent runs as follows: James I of England, 1604; the Bakufu, Japan, 1607, and the emperor in 1616;

<sup>20</sup> See *T'u shu chi ch'eng* 圖書集成 XXXI, 57/206.

<sup>21</sup> See *Fan hsieh shan fang chi* 樊榭山房集, reprinted in Yao Ying, *Saish Asiao* in 5/29n. Satow has translated the ode in his "Introduction of tobacco into Japan," *Tr. As. Soc. of Japan* 6 (1878), pt. 1, 73.

<sup>22</sup> In the *Chao tai ts'ung shu* 昭代叢書 81.

Sultan Ahmed I of Turkey, ca. 1611; Shah Abbas of Persia, sometime during the years 1587-1629; Jahanqir, Mughul emperor of India, 1617; Christian IV of Denmark, in 1632; Gustavus II of Sweden, about the same year; Czar Mikhail Fedorovitch, 1634; the Viceroy of Sicily, in 1640; Pope Urban VIII, 1642; the Elector of Cologne, in 1649; the Elector of Wurtemberg, 1651; town councils in Switzerland, from 1653 on; Austria, Hungary, parts of France, and Bhutan after 1650.<sup>40</sup> The prohibitions all date roughly in the half century following King James' *Counterblaste*. They were issued for a variety of reasons, and weak sinners were punished with varying degrees of severity, but the results were everywhere about the same. The Chinese and Manchu prohibitions of 1637 and later are all part of an almost world-wide animus on the part of certain members of the ruling class which in a few short decades wore itself out. Truly 四海之內皆兄弟 all within the four seas are brothers.

<sup>40</sup> See Brooks, Jerome E., *Tobacco, Its History Illustrated by the books, manuscripts and engravings in the library of George Arntz, Jr.*, I, 1507-1615 (New York, 1937), *passim*. For Japanese prohibitions, see Hiraike 平出 and Fujioka 藤岡, *Nihon Fuzoku-shi 日本風俗史*, III, 164, and *Jokushi-biyo, 國史補要* 364, compiled by the Bureau of Historiography of Tokyo Imperial University (Tokyo, 1933). For the prohibition in Bhutan, see Bell, Sir Charles, *The People of Tibet*, Oxford 1928, I, 242-3. The Secretary to Sir Charles, Mr. H. M. Lloyd Browne, has kindly informed me under date of October 4, 1938, that the *Lao-Ni Ch'ang-jung* (or History of Bhutan), in which the law prohibiting the importation, sale, and smoking of tobacco may be found, has never been printed. The first Dharma Raja, who enunciated this law, flourished in the latter half of the 17th century.

## SUPPLEMENT

Herewith are given the various expressions, used in Eastern Asia (the Philippines excluded), which approximate in sound the European word tobacco:

Source	Term	Pronunciation
Chinese:		
Yao Lû (Wan-li period)	淡巴菰	tan pa ku
Manchu edict, 1639	丹白桂	tan po kwei
Fang Ichih (d. 1607)	淡肉果	tan jo kuo
do.	淡把姑	tan pa ku
do.	擔不鋪	tan pu kwei
Wang Shih-chen (1634-1711)	磨巴菰	tan (t'an) pa ku
Wakus Sansai Zue (citing two Chinese sources of the 17th century)	淡斐姑	tan p'o ku
	淡芭菰	tan pa ku
Manchu		
edict, 1639	ᡳᡳᡳᡳᡳ	damhagu
Korean		
Yi Ik 李翼 (b. 1629) **	ᄃᄃᄃᄃᄃ	tan buk ko
do.		tan pai
Cho Kung-am 趙克善 (1598-1658)		tan buk kwai
Japanese		
Ko-jirui-en 古事類苑 (Tokyo, 1902) **	菸發粉	tan ba ko
do.	打破魂	da ba kon
do.	太婆古	ta ba ko
do.	太羽古	ta ba ko
do.	多波古	ta ba ko
do.	多更粉	to ba ko
do.	丹波粉	tan ba ko
do.	答跋菰	ta ba ko
Hayashi, Razan 林羅山 (1583-1657) **	佗波古	ti ba ko

\*\* J. S. Gale, "History of the Korean People," *The Korean Mission Field*, July 1924-Sept. 1927, especially Dec. 1926, p. 267; and E. T., "Tobacco in Korea," *The Korea Magazine*, I (1917), 248-54. (Dr. Esson M. Gale informs me that E. T. was the nom de plume of J. S. Gale, standing for Esson Third.) Characters unfortunately are not always supplied.

\*\* This *Encyclopaedia of Antiquities* was compiled by Hosokawa Shunshirô 細川潤次郎 and others. The reference is to 12/542.3. I owe this reference to Dr. Shio Sakamishi of the Library of Congress.

\*\* In his *Razan Bunko* 羅山文集, preface dated 1661 by his third son Hayashi, Shunsai 春齋 (1618-1680). Cited in *Wakus Sansai Zue* 90/20b.



## ARAB GEOGRAPHERS ON KOREA

KIM WON CHUNG AND GEORGE F. HOURANI

PRINCETON UNIVERSITY

ARABIA has long been known to the Koreans through the Chinese histories as "T'ai Sik Kuk" or "Ta-shih."<sup>1</sup> But so far as we know there is no description of that land or of the Arabian people recorded by ancient Korean scholars. On the other hand certain Arab geographers ranging in time from the ninth to the fifteenth centuries give brief accounts of Korea: these form our subject.

During the early centuries of the Christian era three rival kingdoms are to be found occupying Korea: Paikchei in the west, Shilla in the east, and Kokuryo in the north, extending beyond the peninsula into the Manchurian country. Shilla maintained an alliance with China which enabled her in the eighth century to become the dominant state in the peninsula and, in the latter half of the same century, to unite the whole of it. Subject to fluctuations this unity was maintained until the tenth century; during this period Shilla continued to cultivate close relations with the Tang dynasty of China, and freely absorbed Chinese cultural influences. The kingdom was finally overthrown in A. D. 935 by the resurgent Koryu power. From this dynasty, which lasted until 1392, the modern name "Korea" is derived: but the name "Shilla" persisted in general use as a designation for the whole country for several centuries after the end of the old kingdom of Shilla. It is this name which the Arab geographers always use, both before and after 935, under the form "al-Shilla" or "Al-Sila."

Their reports begin in the middle of the ninth century. The account of Sulayman the merchant of his travels in the Far East, written down in 851, ends as follows:<sup>2</sup>

On the sea side [of China] are the islands of al-Sila, whose inhabitants are white;<sup>3</sup> they send gifts to the lord of China and say that if they did not do so the heavens would not send them rain. None of our companions

<sup>1</sup> From Pahlawi "Tājik," modern Persian "Tāzi," meaning Arab—probably going back to Ar. "Tayyi," a North Arabian tribe.

<sup>2</sup> *Silsilet al-Tawerikh*; ed. Langlois and Pr. transl. J. T. Reinaud, both in *Relation des Voyages faits par les Arabes et des Persans dans l'Inde et à la Chine*, etc. (Paris 1845); Book I. p. 59 of text, 60 of transl.

<sup>3</sup> *بيض*—possibly in the sense of "pale."

has reached their country to bring back reports about them. They have white falcons.

Sulaymān's contemporary ibn-Khurdādhbih, a postal administrator of al-Jibāl in northern Iran, wrote as follows in the geographical work which he published in 846:<sup>4</sup>

At the furthest limit of China near Qāngt are many mountains and many kings, and this is the land of al-Sila in which there is much gold. He who enters it of the Muslims settles in it because of its excellence. No one knows what is beyond it.

This statement is copied by the early tenth century geographer Ibn-Rustah.<sup>5</sup> Al-Mas'ūdi writing in about 947 in *Murāj al-Dhahab*<sup>6</sup> evidently also follows ibn-Khurdādhbih in part:

Beyond China on the side of the sea there are no known kingdoms nor any country that has been described except the country of al-Sila and its islands. Foreigners from al-'Irāq or any other land who go there seldom depart, because of the health of its air, the softness of its water, the fertility of its soil, and the abundance of its resources. Its people are on good terms with the Chinese and their kings, to whom they send gifts almost crosslessly. It is said that they are a part of the descendants of 'Amūr who settled there in the same manner as we described the Chinese settling in their country.

Again in *al-Tanbih w-al-Ishraf*, not long before 956, al-Mas'ūdi writes:<sup>7</sup>

The last inhabited country in the east is the furthest boundary of China, and al-Sila to where that country ends at the wall of Gog and Magog which Alexander built.

And again:<sup>8</sup>

The seventh nation is China and al-Sila and the adjoining abode of the descendants of 'Amūr \* son of Japhet son of Noah; these have a single king and a single language.

<sup>4</sup> *Al-Masālik w-al-Mamālik*, ed. C. de Goeje (Leyden 1889), p. 70. Cf. p. 170.

<sup>5</sup> *Al-'Irāq al-Nafīsh*, ed. de Goeje (Leyden 1891-2), p. 83.

<sup>6</sup> Ed. with Fr. transl. C. de Meynard and P. de Courteille (Paris 1861), Vol. I, p. 340.

<sup>7</sup> Ed. de Goeje (Leyden 1893-4), p. 26.

<sup>8</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 84.

<sup>9</sup> This 'Amūr is presumably the biblical Gomer, first son of Japhet in Gen. x, 2.

No further description is found until the time of al-Qazwini in the thirteenth century. This geographer's account<sup>10</sup> evidently follows al-Mas'ûdi in part; no less evident are the embroideries which have accumulated in the course of the centuries. Remote and little known, al-Shîla lent itself easily to description as an Earthly Paradise:

Shîla is a country at the furthest limit of China and of the utmost excellence. Afflictions of the body are unknown there because of the health of its air, the sweetness of its water and the excellence of its soil; its people are unequalled in handsomeness and freedom from disease. It is said that when the water is sprinkled in their houses it exhalates the odour of ambergris. There are few plagues or diseases and few flies or lions; sick people from other countries are brought here and their sickness ceases. Muḥammad ibn-Zakariyâ' al-Râzi<sup>11</sup> said that whoever enters this land settles in it and does not depart, because of its excellence, its abundant resources, and its plentiful gold.

Lastly al-Maqrîzi (1364-1442) writes:<sup>12</sup>

At the side of this eastern sea beyond China there are six islands also, known as the islands of al-Shîla; some of the 'Alids who fled in fear for their lives in the early days of Islam came and settled here.

Such are the reports of Arab writers about al-Shîla or al-Sîla. The description of this place as "islands" in Sulaymân and al-Maqrîzi led Reinaud in the forties of the last century to identify it with Japan; but all the rest of the evidence points to Korea, as later scholars have generally recognized. In the first place, the Arabic name can hardly be anything but a transcription of the Korean "Shilla." Then the statements of ibn-Khurdādhbih, al-Mas'ûdi and al-Qazwini give the impression that the country is joined to China by land. Ibn-Khurdādhbih's description, "near Qānsu," is of little help because of its vagueness and because Qānsu itself is difficult to locate exactly; but at least it is plain from his account<sup>13</sup> that his "Qānsu" or "Qāntu" is on the Chinese coast to the north of the Yangtse river, possibly as far north as the southern coast of the Shantung peninsula. The only question is

<sup>10</sup> *Ajûb al-Makālât wa Ghariib al-Mawfudât*, ed. F. Wüstenfeld (Göttingen 1848), Pt. II, p. 32.

<sup>11</sup> The famous doctor al-Râzi.

<sup>12</sup> *Al-Maw'iz w-al-I'tihār f Dākik al-Khiṣṣ w-al-Iṣṣār*, ed. G. Wiet (Cairo 1911), p. 59.

<sup>13</sup> *Al-Masūdī*, p. 62.

how al-Shilla came to be described in some of our sources as "islands." The answer may lie in the journey from the Shantung peninsula by which travellers would naturally approach Korea across the sea.

Korea is certainly a land of "many mountains," and has a temperate and healthy climate. The soil is generally fertile and the land well-watered. The belief of ibn-Khurḍādhbih that there was much gold may be merely due to the fact that the country was remote and semi-legendary; but modern excavations have brought to light many gold crowns, gold trinkets, gold ear-rings and other objects in Kyungju, the ancient capital of Shilla.<sup>14</sup> The "many kings" of ibn-Khurḍādhbih appears to contradict both the known facts and the statement of al-Mas'ūdī, but may perhaps be understood in the context as referring loosely to all the lands beyond Qānsū, or to local chiefs. The close ties with China mentioned by Sulaymān and al-Mas'ūdī are characteristic of Shilla at this period; here we are on the most solid historical ground.

Of the Moslems in Korea several mentions are found in Korean histories. There are records<sup>15</sup> of Moslem merchants in the tenth century, Yaruza (al-Rāzi?), Ḥaseen Laza (Ḥasan al-Rāzi?), and Burakah (Barakah?) and their associates, who came to Korea on different occasions with presents for the king; when they left, the king presented them with golden gifts. In the early eleventh century a certain Moslem named Munabo (Munabbī'?) became mayor in Pyengyang.<sup>16</sup> Finally it is recorded that at some date unknown Moslems came from a part of China called Yuan to Korea, and settled in one town, there remaining until the time of the Yi dynasty (after 1392). They wore their own type of clothing and headgear; and maintained their religion unchanged, building a mosque and observing the Moslem festivals.<sup>17</sup>

<sup>14</sup> A. Eckardt, *History of Korean Art* (Leipzig 1929), Eng. transl. J. M. Kindersley (London 1929).

<sup>15</sup> *Chosen Yaksu* (Seoul 1932), No. 3, Vol. I, p. 222.

<sup>16</sup> *Idem.*, No. 3, Vol. V, p. 382.

<sup>17</sup> Yi Neung-wha, *History of Korean Buddhism* (Seoul 1917), Vol. II, p. 605.

## BRIEF COMMUNICATIONS

### *A Note on the Etymology of the Word Checkmate*

BOTH THE Webster and the Oxford dictionaries derive the word *checkmate* ultimately from the Arabic *al-shāh māt*, meaning "the king died." There are several objections to this etymology.

1. Every single word connected with the game of chess in Arabic is either borrowed from the Persian and Arabised or translated from the Persian into Arabic.<sup>1</sup> On the other hand, all chess terms in Persian are native and not a single one is borrowed from the Arabic. As the term *shāh-māt* is used in both Persian and Arabic (in the latter sometimes the def. art. *al-* prefixed to *shāh*), we would expect the term to be a borrowing on the part of the Arabic and not vice versa.<sup>2</sup>

2. Furthermore, the *shāh* in chess is *not* killed and *does not die*. The game is terminated when the *shāh* is *pressed to a position from which he cannot escape*. This is in line with all the good traditions of chess playing and back of it the tradition of capturing the king in war rather than slaying him whenever this could be accomplished. Thus in Webster: "Checkmate. An exclamation by a player when he makes a move that puts the opponent's king in check from which there is no escape." And the word is used in this connotation outside the game of chess.

On the other hand, the Persian word *māt*, literally meaning "left (without a way to escape)," or "at a loss," or "perplexed"; hence "pressed" and "defeated," fits in quite satisfactorily. This use of the word *māt* in Persian is not confined to the game of

<sup>1</sup> For example Ar. *baydāh* and *fil* are the Arabised forms of Persian *pidde* and *paī*; and *foras* the translation of Pers. *ovb*, and so forth.

<sup>2</sup> N. Bland in his *Persian Chess*, London 1890, p. 55, says: "It is hardly probable that the Persians would have borrowed a foreign word to express one of the most familiar points in the game, for which they must have had a corresponding symbol in their own language, or might have easily arranged a more simple and intelligible expression." If *shāh-māt* actually meant "the king died," we would expect the Persian expression to be *shāh mard* and not such an unfamiliar expression as the Ar. *māt*.

chess, but is used on all occasions and usually means "surprised" or "at a loss."<sup>2</sup>

That it has nothing to do with the Ar. *māta* is further proved by the evidence in the older Persian manuscripts about chess, where the word used for "being checkmated" (*māt shodan* or *shāh-māt shodan*) is given as *dar-māndan*, *māndan* being the root of the word *māt*.<sup>3</sup>

3. Moreover, if the word *māt* in Persian is a loan word from Arabic, it must preserve some trace of its original meaning, "died." But the word in Persian is never associated with death and we should therefore look elsewhere for its etymology.

The correct etymology of the word *māt* was pointed out as long as two and a half centuries ago by the learned Oxford scholar, Thomas Hyde. In his *Mandragorias*<sup>4</sup> he doubted the popular etymology (from Ar. *māta*) and derived *māt* from the verb *māndan*.

\* M. Kazem Beg in *Journal Asiatique*, 1831, II, 585, suggested that the word *māt* is of Turkish origin, basing his argument on the assumption that outside the game of chess the word *māt* is used with a Turkish auxiliary verb in the sense of "being surprised," while, he claimed, in Persian it is not used in this sense. He was of course mistaken and ignorant of the very frequent use of the term in Persian. Furthermore there is no Turkish element in the game of chess or its vocabulary.

\* See Bland, *Pers. Chess*, p. 58. In the Ms. belonging to the Royal Asiatic Soc. (Persian, no. 211), probably of the 16th century, containing a work on chess which probably goes to the 14th century (for the description of the Ms. consult H. J. R. Murray, *History of Chess*, Oxford 1913, p. 177, and Bland, pp. 2 seq.), the terms *shāh-mānd* and *wānd* are regularly used for *shāh-māt* and *māt*. Says Bland (p. 54) "The general tendency of authorities in Persian works is to confirm the opinion that *wānd* or *wāndān*, and not *māt*, was originally used. . . . It is remarkable that throughout the whole of the Persian treatise (referring to the above mentioned Ms.), the term *shāh-māt*, or *māt kardān*, is never once used, but that the expression for the King is that situation is, on every occasion, *shāh mānd*, and the same is also used in many other works." The verb *wāndan*, "to remain" (cf. Avestan *man*, in Barth. Altir. Wäet, [124] when prefixed with the prepositions *dar* or *ro*, and often without any prefix, means "to be perplexed," "to be at a loss," or "to be exhausted." *Shāh mānd* means "the king is at a loss" or "has exhausted his resources." *Māt* is the abbreviated form of *wānd*, and such abbreviated forms are not at all unusual. For other illustrations of such abbreviated forms consult the reference to Hyde's work in the following footnote.

\* *Mandragorias seu Historia Shakhmadrūi*, Oxford 1694, I, pp. 148-154. He also pointed out that the King in chess does not die.

This etymology was accepted by Gildemeister (in *ZDMG* 28. 696) and after him by Dozy in the *Supplément aux dictionnaires arabes* and by H. J. R. Murray. In his *History of Chess*<sup>4</sup> Murray says: "The old view of the pre-scientific philologists that *māt* was the Ar. verb *māta*, 'to die'—a view which began to be current at an early period in the life of Muslim chess—has been abandoned by modern scholars."

Undoubtedly what happened was this: the Arabs borrowed the game and its terminology from the Persians. The first element in the compound *shāh-māt* was already familiar to them, and to it they prefixed the def. art. *al-*; the second element was unfamiliar. They observed, however, that when the *shāh* was made *māt*, the game terminated. They naturally concluded that the *shāh* was dead, and by the familiar methods of popular etymology connected it with their own verb *māta*. Then through the Arabic the word was introduced into the European languages.

M. E. MUGHADAM.

Princeton University.

### *The History of the Tamil r*

In *JAOS* M. 411 f. Mr. Edwin H. Tuttle has expressed his reactions to my views on Tamil *r*. I do not wish to start a controversy regarding the merits or otherwise of my views on this subject; but I desire to point out here, for the benefit of those readers who may be interested in Dravidian, certain facts (known to all students of this language-family) which disprove or undermine some of the theories propounded by Mr. Tuttle in the course of the aforesaid paper.

In paragraph 11 of his paper, Mr. Tuttle reconstructs a basic \**asax* "he" on the strength of what he regards as the "correspondence" of Kurukh *asax* to Tamil *asay* (there). This correspondence is illusory. The element *sax* of Kurukh *a-sax* "that side or direction" is a borrowing from foreign Santali, and not native Dravidian at all. For Santali *sen* "direction, side," with a low-front-narrow (or wide) *e*, see Bodding, *Materials for a Santali*

<sup>4</sup> Page 169, footnote 1.



*Grammar*, II, p. 74; Bolding, *Santali Dictionary*, V, p. 253. Grignard too marks off *-san* in his *Orson-English Dictionary*, p. 36.

Mr. Tuttle's proposition of an ancient Dravidian \**asan* "he" thus crumbles to the ground.

Mr. Tuttle postulates a prehistoric "nominative ending" *uŋu* in para 10 and a "suffix" *uŋu* in para 13. *uŋu* or *uŋdu* does not exist as a "nominative ending" or as a "suffix" in the Dravidian Sprachgut available today. If he has in mind the comparatively modern colloquial constructions like Tamil *iṭṭaŋai-y-uŋdu taruŋiṭṭāṇ?*, the form *uŋdu* here is neither a "suffix" nor an "ending."

In para 13, Mr. Tuttle says that the origin of Tam. *aru* "becomes clear by comparison with the forms of 'two,'" That Mr. Tuttle himself is not sure of his position is abundantly clear from his former reconstructions *iraŋdu* < \**irunḍu* "two," \**mutrā* "three," and his present suggestions \**riṇṇu* "two" and \**mūruŋu* "three." This shows on what slippery ground Mr. Tuttle is working.

In para 9 Mr. Tuttle says, "To my mind this development ['Tamil *l* becomes *R* in contact with *p*, *c*, *k*'] proves clearly that voiceless *r* was the ancient value of *R*." He explains further in para 15: "Evidently *l* became voiceless in contact with the voiceless sound, and then changed to voiceless *r* because the latter sound already existed in the language, for example as the derivative of *rs*: cp. Brāhmi voiceless *L* derived from *rs* (*JAS* 56, 358)." Here are a number of unproved assumptions to justify a theory!

Mr. Tuttle admits that *l* becomes *ʃ* when in contact with *p*, *c*, *k* as in Tam. *kəpəŋ*; what is there unreasonable in postulating a parallel change of *l* to an alveolar occlusive in Tam. *kəppəŋ*?

In para 15 he says, "Tamil *val* or *valla* means 'strong'; *vallipam* is the class of strong sounds, that is, voiceless ones." Let me point out here that the Tam. division of sounds into *vallipam* (*k*, *c*, *p*, *t*, *ʃ*), *mellipam* (*ṅ*, *ṇ*, *ṇ*, *ṣ*, *ṣ*, *m*), and *iḍaiṇam* (*y*, *r*, *l*, *l*, *v*, *l*) is based according to the grammatical tradition (dating back to at least a thousand years ago), not on the distinction between voiced sounds and voiceless ones, but on the effort (*mayaṇai*) involved in the process of phonation, with particular reference to the passage of air: in the production of the members of the *vallipam*, air is expelled strongly through the oral chamber during the process of

the forcible release of contact in the mouth; when the mellinam sounds are produced, air escapes through the nose, and the release of contact in the mouth follows it and is "soft"; and in the phonation of the idaiyinam sounds, air is allowed to pass through the oral chamber even while a certain degree of consonantal friction is entailed in the speech-organs of the mouth.

Apart from these, there are a few other data furnished by Tamil grammatical tradition, which one cannot lightly dismiss in estimating the value of the "strong *r*" of Tamil. (1). The ancient Tamil grammar *Tolkāppiyam*, *Eṭuttu*, describes the sound as being produced through the contact of the tip of the tongue with the mouth-roof, while the trill *r* is described as arising from the "rubbing" of the tongue-tip. The distinction is clearly brought out by the use of *oṟra* "being in contact, forming a stoppage" (in the case of the so-called "strong *r*" in sūtra 94), and of *varuṇa* "rubbing, oscillating with a slight friction" (in the case of the trill *r*, in sūtra 95). 2. The "strong *r*" is never an absolute consonantal final in Tamil, while the post-dental trill is (sūtra 78 of *Eṭuttadigāram*).

I admit, as I have already in my *History of the Alveolar Plosive*, that a number of points regarding the "strong *r*" remain obscure; but Mr. Tuttle's suggestions are hardly helpful in dispelling the obscurity.

In para 12 of his paper, Mr. Tuttle propounds a theory. "The stem *avaRR-* represents \**awastr-* <\**awastl-* <\**awaskl-* <\**awaskal*, and is thus a doublet of its variant *avaiṭal* <\**awaskal*." I do not want to comment on the series of extraordinarily complicated phonetic stages postulated here; but I would like to draw attention to the fact that Mr. Tuttle's theory conflicts with what is revealed to us by the history of the evolution of the Tamil forms; the earliest Tamil known as *Saṅgam* Tamil shows only *avai* as the nominative and *avayr-* as the inflexional stem; *avaiṭal* is a double plural form occurring only in the Middle Tamil stage.

Mr. Tuttle's theory that the Tamil *aydam* (which, let me observe here, had in the ancient stages a voiceless spirantal value depending on the stop following, but which later assumed a voiced glottal fricative value) is derived from an \**s*, rests on Mr. Tuttle's unproved theory of an ancient Dravidian \**s*.

In para 3 Mr. Tuttle observes that my use of the symbols *l'* and

*d'* for the alveolars and of *ṣ* for the dental is a "criss-cross arrangement hard to keep in mind" and he makes a gratuitous guess that I have followed Chatterji in this respect. This standpoint arises from his ignorance of the fact that the spread-blade dental nasal has a phonemic individuality only in colloquial and literary Malayālam and in Old Tamil, while in most other Indian languages (both Dravidian and Indo-Aryan) what is described as a "dental *n*" is purely a point-nasal except when in contact with a dental plosive following. Hence arises the imperative necessity for a distinctive symbol to represent the phonemically different spread-blade dental of Malayālam, just as distinctive symbols are also necessary for the alveolar plosives. I admit that my improvisation of *t*, *ḍ*, and *ṣ* does offend symmetry; but I had to be content with these, as the symbols *t̤*, *ḍ̤* (for the alveolar stops) and *n̤* (for the homorganic alveolar nasal) are not available in Indian printing presses.

A propos of Mr. Tuttle's reference to Brugmann towards the end of para 1, I have to observe that no Indoeuropeanist worth the name would speculate on hypothetical forms, if the material available were only that supplied by a few spoken speeches like modern English and modern Armenian and by a classical language like Latin or Greek. To attempt, as Mr. Tuttle too often does, to dogmatise on prehistoric Dravidian bases through confrontations of sporadic modern forms of non-literary speeches like Kōi, Gōṇḍi, Kurukh, and Brāhūi with ancient forms of the south Indian literary speeches is, I venture to submit, the negation of all true linguistic methodology. The success that has attended the discussion of Indo-European linguistic origins is due to (i) the existence of a large amount of material, much of which has been historically worked out, and (ii) the availability of numerous and exact correspondences which yield regular rules of change, spontaneously as it were. These favourable circumstances do not obtain for Dravidian. The Dravidian speeches of central India and north India, which have presumably suffered considerable influence of foreign language-families, are non-literary and entirely lacking in any past speech-material that might enable us to trace the history of the widely divergent forms of these speeches. It would be most hazardous, therefore, to draw forcible conclusions from comparisons of isolated forms of these central Indian and north Indian speeches with

those of the south. Except where the equations are so numerous and obvious as to yield general rules, one cannot leap over a dark chronological gap of two millennia with impunity. Nothing better illustrates the hazardous nature of Mr. Tuttle's method than his dogmatism in regarding as native Dravidian a form like *Kurukh a-sap* "that side or direction," which owes its *san* to foreign Santali.

Again, no Indo-Europeanist of reputation would today lay down postulates of complicated prehistoric changes. The object of comparative grammar is nothing more than "l'examen méthodique des coïncidences entre les langues attestées"; and sounds and forms are "starred" only as convenient signs "par lequel on exprime en abrégé ces correspondances." Speculative reconstructions or restitutions have been discredited in Indo-European long ago.

Finally, let me point out here that the term *Kēlan* used by Mr. Tuttle in para 1 does *not* denote the Malayālam language. Caldwell, the authority invoked by him to justify his meaning, adverts (*Comp. Grammar*, third edition, p. 17) only to *Kēulam* "the land of Kerala," and to *Kēlan* and *Kēḷu*, which are personal names signifying "a native inhabitant of *Kērala*."

L. V. RAMASWAMI AYYAR

*Maharajah's College, Ernakulam*

### *Conversion of Vikrama Samvat Dates*

The conversion of dates from the Vikrama Samvat (V. S. or V. E.) into the Christian Era is really very simple, yet it seems to present difficulties not only to Europeans, but even to Indians who apparently do not know that there is a V. S. beginning in Kārttika, as well as one beginning in Caitra, though the Kārttikādi V. S. is used in Bombay, Gujarat, and Kathiawar.

Errors in current writings by Europeans that have come under my observation are in connection with Jain dates in western India, where the Kārttikādi is concerned. The new year begins with the first day of the bright half of Kārttika, Kārttika Śukla Pratipadā. As the year is lunar, the corresponding month and day of the Christian Era vary considerably. The usual equation of Kārttika with October-November is somewhat misleading. V. S. Kārttikādi

1993 began November 15, 1936 and Kārttika ended with December 13 inclusive. V. S. 1994 began November 4, 1937 and V. S. 1995 will begin October 24, 1938. (These dates are from Indian almanacs.) Therefore, to convert the date one subtracts 57 up to the time of the New Year A. D. and 56 for the rest of the time. If the month of the V. S. year is unknown, obviously one can not be sure whether to subtract 56 or 57; but considering the proportion of about 10 months to about 2 months, it is safer to subtract 56 in such a case.

Prof. Winternitz gives 1089 A. D. as the year of Hemacandra's birth.<sup>1</sup> Now, the exact date of Hemacandra's birth, the full moon-day of Kārttika, V. S. 1145, is undisputed. This would, of course, be 1088 A. D.

In discussing<sup>2</sup> a date in the colophon of a Ms. of the Kalpasūtra Prof. Brown converts Divālī V. S. 1125 (*vikramasamvat 1125 dipamālādine*) into 1068 A. D. Divālī comes at the end of the old year (e.g. on October 22, 1938), not on a new moon-day, as Monier-Williams says.<sup>3</sup> Hence, Divālī of V. S. 1125 would be in 1069.

Prof. Barnett speaks of the V. S. beginning with "the bright fortnight of the month Caitra according to the northern calendar; but it originally began with Kārttika."<sup>4</sup> He says nothing about the Kārttikādi calendar still being in widespread use. The V. S. Kārttikādi begins with the bright fortnight of Kārttika and each month begins with the bright fortnight. Hence it is śuklādi. The V. S. Caitrādi also begins with the bright fortnight (of Caitra), but the months begin with the dark fortnight. Hence it is kṛṣṇādi. V. S. 1995 Caitrādi began with the bright half of Caitra, which was April 1, 1938. But Caitra itself started with the kṛṣṇapakṣa, though this belonged to the end of the old year. The terms śuklādi and kṛṣṇādi are sometimes misinterpreted as applying to the year instead of the months.

HELEN M. JOHNSON.

Osceola, Missouri.

<sup>1</sup> History of Indian Literature, Vol. II, p. 482.

<sup>2</sup> JAOS 57, 118.

<sup>3</sup> In his Dictionary, s. v.

<sup>4</sup> Antiquities of India, p. 86.

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS

---

*The Haverford Symposium on Archaeology and the Bible.* Edited by ELIHU GRANT. New Haven: AMERICAN SCHOOLS OF ORIENTAL RESEARCH, 1938. Pp. 245. \$2.00.

The volume before us aims to give an up-to-date account of the present status of studies dealing with the Near East and the Bible. An incidental purpose is to commemorate the interest in biblical studies which generations of Haverfordians have attested; it is not mere coincidence that of the nine contributors to this volume, four have been connected, at one time or another, with Haverford College.

The scope of the volume is best indicated by the list of abridged chapter headings: I. Syro-Palestinian Archaeology (W. F. Albright). II. Old Testament Studies (G. A. Barton). III. New Testament Studies (H. J. Cadbury). IV. History of Writing in the Near East (J. W. Flight). V. Anatolian and Hittite Studies (A. Goetze). VI. Mesopotamian Studies (T. J. Meek). VII. Arabian Studies (J. A. Montgomery). VIII. Egyptian Studies (J. A. Wilson). The volume closes with (IX) A Supplement illustrating ancient Babylonian Business, about 2000 B. C. (the Editor).

It is obvious that a single reviewer cannot be in a position to comment with equal authority on all the subjects surveyed in this volume. It is equally clear that in a book to which nine scholars have contributed, the respective contributions cannot all be alike in approach, treatment, or the degree of emphasis given to individual topics, quite apart from external inequalities caused by inherent differences in subject matter. This reviewer might point out a number of passages which in his opinion could bear improvement. But there is little to be gained from such "picking." The fact remains that the present *Symposium* is exceedingly valuable on the whole. We hope that it will be repeated periodically and at not too long intervals.

---

*The Pottery of Palestine from the Earliest Times to the End of the Early Bronze Age.* By G. ERNEST WRIGHT. New Haven: AMERICAN SCHOOLS OF ORIENTAL RESEARCH, 1937. Pp. ix + 106, with two tables and four plates. \$1.00.

Perhaps the most notable composite achievement of Near East archaeology in recent years is the extension of our knowledge of early civilizations up to the end of Neolithic times, and the consequent establishment of relative chronology to cover the long Chalcolithic period. The bulk of the stratified material required has come from Mesopotamia, with Tepe Gawra in the north and Warka/Uruk in the south furnishing the longest series of archaic levels. Egypt has given us numerous proto-historic deposits, but no single sustained vertical accumulation of archaic occupations. For the present, therefore, important links in the relative chronology of proto-historic Egypt must be founded on outside synchronisms. Of late, Palestine has been proving unusually productive of remains antedating the Early Bronze Age. The material is very extensive in that it takes us back well into Neolithic times. It is also diffuse, however, so that a guide to bring us down to the end of Early Bronze has to draw its support from a number of Palestinian centers. To provide such a synthesized guide is the principal task which Dr. Wright has set himself in the study before us. That he has attained his objective with marked success is a tribute to his industry, ingenuity, training, and a sound appreciation of the potentialities as well as limitations of comparative archaeological method. In short, the book will be an indispensable source of information and reference for all students of the subject.

A pioneering work is exposed to criticism in proportion to the amount of territory which it covers. But criticism in that case is merely an indication of the scope and originality of such an effort. The few observations which follow are made in just this spirit; and they do not convey the full importance of the book any more than they exhaust the number of debatable items which Dr. Wright has brought up.

The ample, and exceedingly valuable, documentation will not mislead many to believe that Wright's work rests entirely on mechanical correlations. A lively enthusiasm for his subject can be detected easily on a number of pages. It is inevitable that such



enthusiasm should lead to occasional mild excesses. A second thought might have caused the author to question the claim of the excavators of Jericho that pottery was invented on that site (p. 8); to hesitate before disproportionate stress was laid on such features as the thickening of a rim (e.g., p. 26); or to utilize with greater precision some of the sources cited (e.g., Ghassûl-Gawra VI, pp. 32-3; the problematical nature of this correlation is indicated plainly in *Excavations at Tepe Gawra* I, 174-5).

The author's main concern is with pottery, as the title indicates. But his two Tables at the end of the book present an attempt to synchronize related deposits. Such a synchronization has to be based on remains other than pottery alone, and Dr. Wright has failed to consider a very important criterion relevant to this particular purpose. I am referring to the technological level of metal work. We know now that proto-historic civilizations were by no means isolated; otherwise, the present book could not have been written. It follows that vital technological innovations could not be long in spreading over areas known to have been in contact with one another on independent grounds. Now metal technique is perhaps the most important criterion of proto-historic and early historic progress. The main divisions of the author's Tables (Chalcolithic, Early Bronze, with their several respective subdivisions) are an eloquent, though tacit, endorsement of this criterion. Yet the obvious consequence of the resulting correlations is ignored.

To give a specific illustration, the Halâf period is now known from such well-stratified sites as Arpachiya, Gawra, and Chagar Bazar, not to mention Nineveh or Tell Halâf itself. Conclusions based on the evidence from so many sites are therefore well established. With regard to the use of metals in the Halâf age the evidence is very instructive. Definitely associated with this period are a copper bead from Chagar Bazar and a piece of lead from a late Halâf deposit at Arpachiya. That is all.<sup>1</sup> The most that this meagre evidence entitles us to construe is that Halâf witnessed the beginning of the Chalcolithic age.

Wright, influenced by a definitely ambiguous correlation of Ghassûl and Halâf, lists the latter culture after the Amratian, which in turn is post-Badarian. We know, however, that at Badari

<sup>1</sup> Cf. M. E. L. Mallowan, *Chagar Bazar* 27; *Arpachiya* 103-4. The other metal objects from Arpachiya are assigned to the 'Obelid period.

copper was worked and that the technological level of that work is superior to the available Halaf examples. It would follow that Halaf is, at the latest, contemporary with Badari; it cannot possibly be post-Amratian. A technological and typological study of the earliest metal objects is urgently needed at this stage. The results of such a study should add considerably to the value of many current discussions, and improve even such a careful and methodical contribution as the present work.

E. A. SPEISER

University of Pennsylvania

---

*The Excavations at Tall Chagar Bazar, and an Archaeological Survey of the Habur Region, 1934-6.* By M. E. L. MALLOWAN. London: OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS, 1936. Pp. 59 + 29 plates. \$4.00.

The new material which has come to light in the Habur region has completely altered our former estimate of conditions in Mesopotamia in the third millennium B. C., and has provided evidence for the existence in this region of peoples concerning whom there have heretofore been but the vaguest hints. It is now apparent that the Habur region was open to various influences which were felt to a lesser extent in Sumer; these influences emanated from the East Highland zone, both preceding and following an interim period which marked the extension of the power of the Third Dynasty of Ur. This interim period is represented at Chagar Bazar only by a few vase types derived from Sumer, and the sequel is characterized by the incursion of a Highland group whose pottery shows a definite relationship to that of Nineveh 5 and Giyan. The date of the arrival of this people has now been established by a cache of tablets from early Level 1; the relation of the tablets to other evidences for the chronology of Western Asia in the third millennium has been pointed out by Albright in *BASOR* 69, p. 20 and note 8. The bulk of the painted ware is later than the tablets, and has been divided by the excavator into three phases: early intermediate, intermediate, and late, with concentration of the objects in the intermediate phase. This would place the pottery in the twentieth to eighteenth centuries, contemporary with Billa IV B and C, with which it has many features in common. It is interesting

to note that bowls which bear a family resemblance to those of Chagar Bazar 1 have been found at Tarsus and Judeideh (VIII?), and Tarsus has also produced a jar of Habur shape but with Anatolian decoration. The lower limit of Level 1 is indicated by the complete absence of Hurrian ware; Albright (*AJA*, 1937, p. 500) has already noted that the shard described by Mallowan as Hurrian belongs in reality to the caliciform ware of North Syria, in the last phase of which painted bands and wavy lines supplanted string-cutting and burnishing.

Ninevite 5 or Billa ware is represented at Chagar Bazar by the monochrome incised variant, the painted ware being for the most part degenerate. The handmade bowls in fig. 19, 5-8, designated by Mallowan as degenerate Halaf ware, have now been satisfactorily explained by Speiser (*BASOR* 68, 7 ff.) in connection with similar pots from Gawra XII. This would indicate that the mound was not entirely deserted during the period represented by the gap between levels 5 and 6, during which the Habur region as a whole seems not to have been settled.

With level 6 begins the Halaf ware, mixed in levels 13-15 with Samarra as well as burnished sherds. As the position of Samarra ware at the end of Halaf and contemporary with 'Obeid ware has been demonstrated by Speiser (*Asia*, September 1938), while the burnished wares belong to the earliest in Mesopotamia and Syria, there seems to exist some inconsistency in recording the finds. Incidentally, on p. 52 Pl. III, 8-10 should read 15 (possibly 14)-17.

The catalogue method used in describing the finds is to be commended, as it eliminates verbosity and makes it a simple matter to locate in the text the objects in the illustrations. The comparisons, however, are often superficial: the tripod bowls, fig. 10: 12, 15, cannot be related to those from Ahmar and Hammam, which do, however, connect with a figurine found in a later campaign at Chagar Bazar. The Hammam ware as a whole cannot be considered a counterpart of Chagar Bazar 1 ware; for, like the solitary chalice fragment from Level 1, it belongs to the caliciform period, its latest phase, in which banded ware appears, probably overlapping the early level of Chagar Bazar 1, in which appear local survivors of the Third Dynasty of Ur, with which Hammam ware was contemporary.

MARIAN WELKER

University of Pennsylvania

*Relief und Inschrift des Königs Darius I am Felsen von Bagistan.*

Von FRIEDRICH WILHELM KÖNIG. Mit 2 Tafeln, 5 Skizzen und 1 Karte. Leiden: E. J. BRILL, 1938. xli + 97 pages.

König gives us an intensive study of the Darius sculptures and inscriptions on the Rock of Behistan. His first conclusion (p. 12) is that the sculptures are not cut from the rock itself, but are of a different material, carried up and inserted into the face of the cliff. Then, from the traces of frame-lines, from hints in the texts themselves, and from some other scattered arguments, he draws up (pp. 30-2) an elaborate schedule of the work, which he considers to have been begun about 519 a. c., and completed about 485. Thus this memorial was under construction through the entire reign of Darius.

If we did not have knowledge to the contrary, we should assume that a scholar who would undertake these tasks had examined the subject in situ; but no, König tells us frankly that he has worked from published accounts and descriptions, plates and photographs, examined under the microscope when this might be helpful. For my part, then, I feel distrustful of his results; notably as to the extreme duration of the construction. It has long been agreed that Column V of the OP text, and the relief of the Scythian Skunkha, were later additions; but how much later? A date ante quem non is given in V, lines 2-3, but unhappily the crucial characters have been destroyed. King and Thompson (*Sculptures and Insc. of Darius*, p. 79) give the text as

- (2) ima : t[ya : ada]m : aku[nam : . . .]t<sup>ai</sup>y<sup>a</sup> : a[++]  
 (3) m<sup>a</sup>c<sup>a</sup> : [+++++] : θardam : [... pasāra : ya]θā : xšāya-  
 (4) θiya : [abāram : ]

"This is what I did in the —th year after I became king." But what numeral is to be supplied? Or are there two numerals, since the c<sup>a</sup> at the start of line 3 looks as though a defectively written -cā "and" stood there? It is to be noted that there are several uncertainties in our data: KT do not tell us the length of the second gap in either line. I have therefore transcribed their dots faithfully in these two places, but in the other gaps have followed their statements of the probable number of characters, by using the same number of + signs. KT state also that the traces of the first lost character in 3 are possibly those of c<sup>a</sup> (c = θ; two hori-

izontals above two short verticals) or  $p^a$  (three horizontals above two short verticals); and that those of the first character in the second gap in 3 are the heads of three horizontals. Since this may begin  $p^a$ , possibly there is no gap between *šardam* and *pasāva*. Possibly also the second gap in 2 is to be filled with  $p^a$ , making  $pa]tiy$ . Now König (pp. 33-4) fills the remaining gaps  $a[šā]mca$  :  $[višā : ]$  "28th," and this is the main support for his extended dating. The difficulties in accepting this text are serious. Both Avestan and Mod. Persian lead us to assume, for the OP form here needed, *āstamām* "8th" and *višastamām* "20th," though Vedic Skt. has, as König states, *viṣṣa-* "20th." There is also the problem of  $-ca$ : this must be  $-cā$  "and" (defectively written), but I do not accept the use of  $-cā$  on the prior only of the two words which it connects. The instances cited by Bartholomae in the *AIW* are very few, and not free from suspicion. Thus, despite König's insistence on the correctness of his restoration, I cannot accept it, and with this goes his basis for the extended dating.

On the other hand, I am unable to make a satisfactory restoration of the passage myself. The restrictions laid down by KT's description make it impossible, short of the assumption that KT misread or the engravers erred in the work. The restoration which seems to me most likely is that given by Tolman (*Cuneiform Supplement, autographed*, p. 39), based on reinterpretation of two of KT's word-dividers as a horizontal hasta with a vertical hasta beneath its head: *duv]tiyām [ : šarda]mā [ : ] c[itiyām : ] šardamc[ā : pasāva*, "during both the second year and the third year after," without a preceding *patiy*.

The second part of the volume consists of a translation of the inscription into German (pp. 35-59), notes on words and passages (pp. 60-78), a brief chapter on the politico-religious background of the fourth column (pp. 79-83), another on the meter of the inscription (pp. 84-92), and indexes of topics and words (pp. 93-7). The translation is arranged in short lines of free verse, corresponding with the metrical units which König posits in the OP text. I therefore turn to these phenomena of meter.

In addition to certain alliterative formulas, notably in Col. IV (and none too frequent there, even including such dubious examples as 4. 38 *avām : ufrašlam : parsā*, where he counts  $v f p$  as an alliterative unit), he finds (pp. 87-9) that much of the text can be

arranged in groups of 8 syllables, a familiar unit in the Avesta, with an iambic rhythm. He finds another arrangement in the passages where a judicial sentence is pronounced: mixed trochaic and dactylic units, catalectic, with some explanatory material in prose. Thus he gives § 64 (4.67-9), the units being set off by vertical lines in my transcription: *tsām kā xsāyaθiya | hyā aparām āhiy |* [now prose] *martiya hya draujana ahatiy hyasā zarakara ahatiy |* [now verse] *āvaiz mā daušdā biyā | afraštādiy parsā.* In this there are some linguistic impossibilities. *Tuam* is dissyllabic, and not *team*, as he takes it, for *tv* became *θw* in Iranian, as, e.g., in OP acc. *θurām* = Skt. *tvām*. *Xsāyaθiya* has 3 syllables, being in pronunciation *xśāyāθya*, with Median *θy* = OP *šy* (written *šy*), and not 4 as König here (and elsewhere) assumes. While he here rightly takes *āhy* as dissyllabic *āhiy*, he in the next two §§ of the OP makes *āhy* a monosyllable and *vaināhy* a dissyllable, both being impossible measurements. The same is to be said of his *paribārāhdīs*, for *paribārāh+dīs* 4.74, which is a conventional writing for *paribārāhy + dīs* (-i is written -iy, but -i is omitted after *h* in OP orthography) and represents the pronunciation *paribārāhi-dīs*; and of his *afraštām* 4.38, of which he makes 4 syllables instead of the 3 belonging to *afraštām*.

Therefore, without denying the possibility of metrical units in the OP text, I am skeptical of König's interpretations, and pass to his notes on words and phrases (pp. 60-78). In numerous instances he finds Median terms; in others he seeks their primary meanings, which he uses as a basis for his translation. The question may be raised whether the primary meanings were still felt by the users of the words at the time of the inscription. Of such I take the phrase *avām : ubartam : parsā* "him well borne bear thou up," which König (p. 69) takes as from the idiom of house construction, where the wall or the column "bears" the crossbeam. *Vazra-ka* (p. 60) is he who holds the *vazra* or double ax. The name *Uvaja* is still three syllables for him (pp. 62-3, cf. p. 36, § 6), though the Susa inscription describing Darius's palace gives us *Ujaīy* "in Uja," that is, *Hāja*, whence modern *Huz*. For *agar*[++] 1.21 (Tolman's *agartā*), König (p. 65) proposes *agr*[*mata*] "treubesorgt," to correspond with Akk. *pīqudu*. He is right (p. 65) in taking *yōdā* not as "until," but as "so that" in 1.25 (§ 9), but he should do so also in 1.69 (§ 14). He derives

*hadugām* 3. 55, 57 "proclamation" (pp. 67-8) as borrowed from Hittite *haluga* "message," but Benveniste *BSLP* 30. 73 has a good IE etymology from (the cognates of) Skt. *sum* + root *duk-* "press, milk, express."

König makes a good point (pp. 70-1) on 1. 86 (§ 18), where we read "the army of Nidintu-Bel held the Tigris, there it halted; and *abūš nāviṣā āka*." The usual interpretation of the last words is "thereby was a flotilla," but the Akk. and Elam. versions have "the river was full." König takes the OP as "the river was navigable," i. e., to be crossed only by boats; *abūš* is then in his opinion a miswriting for *āpiš*, cf. 1. 95-6. While accepting his view in principle, I should prefer to normalize *ašūša* (abl. adv. like *avadaša*) "from opposite" and understand *Tigrā* from the preceding (or possibly an haplography for *a-bū-i-ša* : *a-pū-i-ša*?).

That the form *amānaya*, varying with *amāniya*, is from two roots *man-* "wait" and "think" (p. 72) seems to me very unlikely, as also that *citā* 2. 48, 63 means "thoughts." For *[ata]r* : *didām* : *frāhajam* 2. 78, König (p. 73) proposes *[upa]ra* : *didām* : *frāhajam* "up on the castle I flayed him," that is "flayed him and hung his skin (stuffed with straw) on the castle battlements." For *far-ka-j-* "flay" he cites NPers. *kānfidān* "to pull, flay." I accept the interpretation, but not the emendation, since a preposition is needed and *upara* can be only an adjective. In 4. 8-7 *adamšim* : *ajanam* : *utā* : *IX* : *adūyadigā* : *agarbāyam*, König (p. 76) regards the order of the clauses as reversed by error, and translates "I seized 9 kings and slew them"; but he does not explain the singular form *šim*—I refer to my remarks *JAOI* 35. 344-50. In 4. 44 he rejects (pp. 76-7) Tolman's *Auramazd[ām] : upāva]rtaiy(āiy)* "I turn to, appeal to Ahuramazda" (with dittography; or is the form perhaps *upāva]rtiya* with a *ya*-suffix?) and proposes, after the Elamite "Ahuramazda is my witness," *Auramazd[āmāiy] : v]rtiya*, connected with Skt. *vrata-* "vow," another evidence for which in Iranian he finds (p. 75) in the province-name *Harauvatiš*. But the latter is clearly the equivalent of Skt. *sarasvati*, the form *vtiya* is not explained, and I therefore reject both.

The normalized orthography used by König is very misleading; thus for *taumā*, *Darayavauš*, *Gaubruva*, *arika*, he uses *tōmā*, *Darejavauš*, *Gōbarwa*, *avrika*. For precision one must employ a strictly



uniform style, which can be at once turned back into the cuneiform. Even the word-dividers should be indicated, for clarity in connection with gaps. I have accordingly in this review changed all citations into the method which I employ, which agrees in all but minor details with the styles used by Schaefer, by Meillet and Benveniste, by Jackson, Tolman, and Gray.

Another unpleasant feature of the book is the excessive use of exclamation points to emphasize some statement of the author, which disagrees with the view of another scholar or points out another's (supposed) error. Thus pp. 8-16 have at least 15 such outbursts.

The volume is none the less an interesting study, and the points made in connection with Darius's political and ethico-religious views are worth serious consideration, as well as many of the comments on individual words and phrases.

ROLAND G. KENT.

University of Pennsylvania.

*What was the Original Gospel in Buddhism?* By Mrs. Rhys Davids. London: Erworth Press, 1938. Pp. 143.

This volume conveniently summarizes the conclusions Mrs. Rhys Davids has reached as to the nature of the "original" Buddhist teaching. The Buddhist scholar nowadays sees Buddhism in its setting, and no longer as though it were something entirely new and alien to the Indian Weltanschauung; it is largely the result of her work that Buddhism is now seen to have been far less heterodox than was once thought. And this is a great service. At the same time it provokes the curious reflection that the suspicious popularity of "Buddhism" in Europe has rested upon a very thorough misunderstanding of what Buddhism really was. The essential doctrines of Buddhism, like those of all orthodox traditions, are in radical opposition to our modern individualism.

Mrs. Rhys Davids now maintains, and I am in full agreement with her here, if not on many other points, that the Buddha never denied the *atta* (*ātman*), and that *atta* is primarily "spirit." It is because the spirit is Everyman's true being (*essence*) as distinguished from the accidents (*nāma-rūpa*, *saṃskāra-kāya*, psycho-physical operation) of this being, that *ātman* in reflexive usage

acquires the secondary meaning of "self," and when the "higher self" is meant has been rendered by Self with the capital. This "Self" is unsatisfactory for two reasons, first because it leaves out the basic concept of spīcātion, and second because our notion of a "self" in any form does not exclude the psycho-physical ego which the *pūṭhujāna* naturally and the *nāttika* deliberately identifies with "himself." Perhaps the only way to avoid these dilemmas is to retain "self" in reflexive usage, and to render by "spiritual essence" elsewhere, or simply by "spirit," assuming that it is understood that the spirit is our veritable being. It is hardly necessary, though sometimes convenient, to distinguish my spirit from the Spirit, since *jīvatman* = *paramātman*, just as "Whoever is joined unto the Lord, is one spirit" (1 Cor. VI. 17). It would be a mistake to render *ātman* by "soul" in any context.

Mrs. Rhys Davids, then, renders (as I have done) the Buddha's last words by "Be ye such as have the spirit for their lamp and refuge" (*atta-dīpa*, *atta-saraṇa*), cf. Dh. 236 *So karohi dīpam attano*, "Make a lamp of the spirit" (not as translated, "for the spirit"), and Sn. 501 *ye attadīpaṃ vicarante lokaṃ akimbanā*. It is when the "Eye in the world" has been quenched that the injunction *attadīpaṃ vicaratha* applies; the doctrine is indistinguishable from that of BU. IV. 3.6 where when all other lights have gone out and the fires are quenched (*śāntayām*), it is the spirit by which one sees, etc. The equation *dīpa* = *attā* emerges again if we collate Mahāvagga I. 23 *attānaṃ gavesseṭtha* with Dh. 146 *andhakāreṇa onaddhā<sup>1</sup> padīpam na gavesseṭtha*? Incidentally, Mrs. Rhys Davids' rendering of *gavesseṭtha* by "that you hunted for" is admirable; but "hunting for lost cattle," which she says "is a feature in Buddhist Suttas" is a "feature" throughout the Vedic tradition (e.g. RV. X. 46. 2: it is represented in Christianity by the doctrine of the *vestigium pedis*; Eckhart speaks of the soul as "following the spoor of her quarry, Christ"), and at this point it would have been helpful to point out that the very word for "Way" (*maggā*: Dhṭp. 298 has *gavesati* = *maggana*) derives from *mrg.* to "hunt," especially in the sense of "track." It is only from this point of view that the cult of the Buddha's footprints can be understood.

<sup>1</sup> *Andhakāreṇa onaddhā*, "ye in the bonds of darkness," makes it certain that *padīpam* is "lamp." *Dīpa* as "island" (Dh. 25 and Sn. 1145) is not equated with *attā*.

The Buddhist denial of *attā* is always exclusive and never inclusive; the error of the *pañhujana* consists in the delusion "that there is spiritual-essence in what-is-not-spirit" (*anattanti . . . attā*, A. II. 52). It is always at the close of passages analysing the psycho-physical self that the expression recurs, *na me so attā*, "That is not my spiritual-essence" or *n' eso 'ham asmi n' eham me*, "That's not me, they're none of mine." The method is that of the *via remotionis* or *negativa*, so well-known in Christian contexts, where too "there are certain things which our intellect cannot behold . . . we cannot understand what they are except by denying things of them" (Dante), and "What He is not is clearer to us than what He is" (St. Thomas Aquinas), "He cannot be reached except by negations" (Nicolas of Cusa). It would be impossible for us to understand the nature of our own being: "Thou couldst not think the thinker of thinking, or know the knower of knowing" (BU. III. 4. 2); that can only be *erlebt* in knowledge—as (*jñāna*, etymologically and semantically "gnosis"), it cannot be known-of (*viññāna*) except "as if" (*pañhā*). "God himself does not know what He is, because He is not any what" (Erigena).

Man has two "selves," which may be at war with one another (S. I. 91-92 — BG. VI. 5-7), of which we speak when we say "I acted in spite of 'myself'" or "against my better nature," and which are the *anima* to be lost and *anīma* to be saved of Luke XVII. 33, etc., which first *anīma* (ψυχή, "soul") a man must hate "if he would be My disciple," Luke XIV. 26. In this sense "All scripture cries aloud for freedom from self" (Eckhart); our "unselfishness" being, of course, merely a symptom of this freedom, and not the liberty itself. The Brāhmanas and Upaniṣads abound in references to the two "selves." Mrs. Rhys Davids says (p. 40) "Only once have I found the distinction patently drawn where in the same Sutta (A. I. 249) we have 'Great Self' (*mahattā* = *mahātmā*) and 'little self' (*app'āṭumo*)."<sup>1</sup> But the fundamental question of the Upaniṣads, "Which is most the self?" (*katama ātmā*, BU. IV. 3. 7), "Which one is it?" (*katama*, MU. II. 1) is certainly reflected in Sn. 508 "By which self (*ken'attā*) does one attain the Brahma-world?" (Buddhism does not disdain to speak of the *summum bonum* thus nor even to make Brahmanhood. The two selves are certainly clearly distinguished in Dh. 160 where a synonym of Buddhahood (S. III. 83-84 *brahma-bhāṭa . . . buddhā*; *Itivuttaka* 57, *bhāṇitattānāṭataram brahmabhūtaṃ paṭhagatam bud-*

*dharm*). The two selves are certainly clearly distinguished in Dh. 160 where "Self (spirit) is the Lord of self (ego)" (*attā hi attāna nātho*);<sup>2</sup> and in S. I. 71-72 where *attā* is opposed to *atta* in the same way that S. I. 57 speaks of the childish as having "self as foe to self" (*amitten-eva-attāna*), while in Dh. 103 the man who conquers self (*jeyya attānaṃ*) is certainly not the self that is conquered. The three last mentioned texts together are virtually identical with BG. VI. 5-6 where the spiritual-self (*ātman*) is the friend of one in whom the self-will (*ātman*) has been conquered (*jītaḥ*), but the enemy of-what-is-not-the-spirit (*anātmanah* — Pali *anattano*). In the same way S. I. 169 *nijjhataṃ* (= *adhyātmanikam*) *eva jalayāmi jotim* . . . *hadayaṃ jotipphānaṃ, joti attā sudanto*, "I kindle a flame within me, the heart the altar, the flame the dompted self" is nothing but the "internal Agnihotra" of ŚB. X. 5. 3. 3. and ŚAr. X.

The reinterpretation of Buddhist *attā* doctrine bears on the questions of "reincarnation" and *karma*. By "reincarnation" (a poor translation of Indian terms that mean "springing up again" or "continued becoming"), as distinguished from metempsychosis, transmigration, regeneration and resurrection, we mean always the belief in a rebirth on this earth, whether in a human or a lower form. The two doctrines are by no means inseparable. The doctrine of *karma* (essentially that everything done has an immediate or a delayed effect, and that nothing happens without a cause) is indistinguishable from the Christian doctrine of "mediate causes," without which, as St. Thomas Aquinas says, "the world would have been deprived of the perfection of causality," and in agreement with which are St. Augustine's words "the human body preexisted in the previous works in their causal virtues,"<sup>3</sup> identical with S. II. 65 "This body . . . should be regarded as the product of past works." The denial of essence to component things, which are not beings but operations, necessitates the view that

<sup>2</sup> The same relation is involved wherever we meet with the expression *attānaṃ dameti* in any form, since it is impossible for one and the same substance to function in one and the same connection both as ruler and as ruled. This is commonly overlooked in our use of the words "self-control" and "self-rule."

<sup>3</sup> *Gen. ad lit.* VII. 24 as interpreted by St. Thomas Aquinas, *Sum. Theol.* I. 91. 2 ad 4.

there is no *thing* that can pass over from one "habitation" (*niwāsa*) to another; nor does the repeated simile of the lighting of one lamp from another allow us to read into Buddhist doctrine any assertion of the transmission of an essence from one life to another: it is just as when one billiard ball strikes another, no thing, but only a directed motion is transmitted, the motion of the second ball is its "life," and this life has been transmitted, but it could not say "*I was the former ball*" (of which the "dead stop" corresponds to the *āhamaṃ* of Buddhist doctrine regarding the chain of births, and past which it is so difficult to go when one tries to follow back the sequence of former habitations). So far as I know, the only scholar who has pointed out that "Buddhists deny the transmigration (i. e. 'reincarnation') of a soul" is B. C. Law (see review of *Concepts of Buddhism* by Keith in *IHQ.* XIV. 182). Law in fact writes (p. 45) "the Buddhist freely entertains the popular belief in rebirth . . . (But) it goes without saying that the Buddhist thinker repudiates the notion of the passing of the ego from an embodiment to an embodiment."<sup>4</sup>

In other words, "we" both are and reap the consequences of what-has-been-done, but not as a consequence of what "we" have done. Mrs. Rhys Davids cites (p. 89) the question asked in S. II. 75 etc., "If deeds are done without a doer, that is, a self, who is it that experiences the results of them?" (John IX. 2, "Who did sin, this man or his parents, that he is born blind?")<sup>5</sup> and thinks it a very reasonable one. And so in a certain common sense it is. But the doctrine of causal origination (*paṭiccasamuppāda*) is "deep" (*gamāhīra*, S. II, 92): deeper than the range of "common

<sup>4</sup> But he is not correct in implying that the simile of the land-leech in BU. IV. 4. 3 refers to the passage of a soul from one body to another. The "land-leech" is the "deathless, bodiless Spirit" that "takes up its stand" in one body after another (CU. VIII. 12. 1). In the same way the *dehā* of BG. II. 22 is by no means a psychic substance but the Unborn Spirit "not come from anywhere nor become anyone" of the parallel text KU. II. 18, the *ātman* of BU. IV. 4. 13 *asmiṃ samādhaye gahane pravasiṣṭhā*.

<sup>5</sup> The remarkable answer attributed to the Christ, "Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him" is in complete accord with JUB. I. 5. 2 and all traditional teaching. It is the Buddha's answer in S. II. 18-23, 75 and III. 103, etc., where it is neither true that one sows and himself reaps nor that one sows and another reaps.

sense." The Brahmanical doctrine of recurrent becoming is self-consistent and invariable from the *Ṛg Veda* to Śaṅkarācārya (whatever the contemporary or modern *pathujana* may or may not have believed). It is a part of the transcendental Person (i. e. that part of infinite possibility that is a possibility of manifestation) that "becomes again here" (*īha punar abhavat*, RV. X. 90. 4): there is no other round-about-goer but the Lord (*neśvarād anyah samāśrī*, Śaṅkara on Br. Sūtra I. 1. 5).<sup>a</sup> The reincarnation of the psycho-physical self, "myself" in the common sense, is progenitive (RV. VI. 70. 3 *pra prajābhīr jāyate*; JUB. III. 27. 17 *prajā me paṇas sambhātīr me*; CE. III. 17. 5 *asoteti, punar utpādanam vidhya*).<sup>7</sup> It is also Brahmanical doctrine that this man So-and-So is not the doer of anything (JUB. I. 5. 2; BG. V. 8), nor is his being in a given way (Pali *itthata*) his veritable essence (SB. I. 9. 3. 23, where the return to "oneself" when the rite is relinquished is to return "from the truth to the lie," *satyam to anṛtam*). It is the Spirit alone, the Inner Man that sees, hears and acts within and through us (*ātma . . . ato hi sarvāni karvāṇi atīṣṭhanti*, BU. I. 6. 3): and this Spirit does not suffer the consequences of its acts, but only surveys them *gāhābhūtam* as they are adventitiously, the product of mediate causes (*karma*): the spirit is impassible. The *arhat*, being "in the spirit," accordingly sees events, not as affects, but as effects. And if this were impossible, if the command to be

<sup>a</sup> Among other texts might be cited also AV. X. 8. 13 *prajāpatiś carati garbhe* and Mund. Up. II. 2. 5-6 *chaṁ ātmānam . . . so ego 'ciat carati bahudhā jāyemānaḥ*.

<sup>7</sup> Among other pertinent texts may be cited AA. II. 5 where it is "himself" (*ātmasam eva*) that the father "makes become" (*adhibhūyati*) in the mother, and this is called his "second birth" (*śod asya dehitṛyaḥ jaṁma*). At the same time "that other self of his" (*so 'pyāgam itara ātmā*) having done his work (*kṛtakṛyaḥ* = Pali *katakeṇa, kartaṁ karvāṇam*) enters into the Gale and departs (*prati*) when its time comes, to be born again (*punar jāyate*), which is his "third birth": and Manu IX. 8, where the husband, entering into his wife, becomes an embryo, and is "thereupon born" (*īha jāyate*), the wife (*jāyā*) being so-called "because he is born again of her" (*śod asyaḥ jāyate punaḥ*). What should be noted here is that that *punar jaṁma* in which there is a reconstitution of psycho-physical character is not post mortem, but takes place while the man is still living. The "third birth" is not in this world, nor indeed, if he be really *kṛtakṛyaḥ* (as is taken for granted), in any world; implying, not the rebirth of a "character," but a release from individuality.

"perfect even as your Father in heaven is perfect" could not be obeyed, there could be no escape from pain and mortality\* (as I would render *panar mrtu*). If for Mrs. Rhys Davids this is not even "remotely possible" (*Uddāṇa: Verses of Uplift*, p. xiii) this amounts to a denial of the goal to which the Buddhist and all traditional doctrine unwaveringly points, and deprives the text of any but a "literary" value. If the Buddha had not in fact "overcome death" (*mārābhikkhā*) how could he have opened the "Doors of the Deathless" (*amaṭṣa dvārā*)?

And if all these doctrines (except, of course, the last in its specific application to "Gotama") are not only ancient Brahmanical doctrine, but have also been universally taught (as could easily be shown), how can we attribute their presence in the Pali canon to a "late monastic" perversion of "original gospel"? They are the inevitable corollaries of the *ātman* doctrine itself of which all the ramifications are implicit in RV. I. 115. 1. The Buddha in fact does not merely refrain from any denial of the *ātman*, but is himself the *ātman*; as is explicitly affirmed in UdA. 67 (*tathāgata = attā*), surely a "late" and "monastic" text. Incidentally, is it not perhaps high time to abandon the anti-monastic prejudice by which our reading of religious history is so often discolored? In any case, it must be admitted that the Buddhist, like the Christian scriptures, pierce "even unto the dividing asunder of soul and spirit" (Heb. IV. 12).

A consequence of our better understanding of the Buddhist doctrine of the Spirit will be the recognition of a much closer correspondence between Buddhism and Christianity than has hitherto been thought of. It must, however, also be realised (1) that almost all that Buddhism has in common with Christianity is of pre-Buddhist derivation, and that it is accordingly rather with the Vedic than the Buddhist tradition that Christianity should be compared by those who are interested in the historical problem, and (2) that the correspondence of Indian and Christian doctrine, however close, affords no proof of borrowing or influence on either side; as Sir

\* "If there were not this Unborn, Unbecome (*ajātam abhūtam*, cf. KU. II. 18 *na bhūṭena kaścit, ajatā*), Not-effected (*akata*, cf. Mupl. I. 2. 12 *saṅgā ākṛtā kṛtasa*), Incomposite (*asamūhātām*), there would be no way out of this world of birth, coming into being, effecting and composition" (Ud. 80).



Arthur Evans once remarked in another context, "The coincidences of tradition are beyond the scope of accident." It will also appear that those who are concerned for the survival of religion or of the *philosophia perennis* are defeating their own ends when they identify "religion" with this or that religion, or the *philosophia perennis* with a particular philosophy. It is perfectly true that there cannot be more than one true or (in the proper sense of the word) catholic religious philosophy. It does not follow that any one religious philosophy must be branded as heretical from the standpoint of another; heresy, properly speaking, will be an opinion (*diḥhi*)<sup>20</sup> contrary to the basic truth in which all are founded (as examples of such heresies might be cited pantheism, monophysitism, patripassianism, and the "asura doctrine" of CU. VIII. 8 that one's very self is seen in the flesh). At the same time there must be stylistic distinctions of one religion from another, for the simple reason that nothing can be known except in accordance with the mode of the knower, i. e. in a given way. And if all roads lead to the same goal, it is also true that we can hardly follow any one that does not start from somewhere in our own neighbourhood. In other words, a thorough knowledge of the Vedānta, Islam, or Buddhism may enable a man to better understand the Christian dogma, but need not by any means (or only with very rare exceptions) persuade the man who is already a Christian in some sense to become a Hindu, Muhammadan, or Buddhist, or vice-versa. Tolerance must not be confused with indifferentism; tolerance should be a consequence of the recognition of common truths expressed in various ways, indifferentism or latitudinarianism implies an indifference to error and puts the *philosophia perennis* on a level with any man's "opinions"

ANANDA K. COOMARASWAMY.

Museum of Fine Arts, Boston.

\* "*Perennis*" cannot be thought apart from "*universalis*," i. e. "*catholic*."

<sup>20</sup> *Diḥhi* (*dṛṣṭi*) as "*private view*" should be distinguished from *darśana*, "*point of view*" in the sense of "*angle or level of reference*." Thus chemistry and physics would not be two *diḥhis* but two *darśanas*, both equally "*scientific*." *Diḥhis* may be incompatible; *darśanas* are complementary.

*Chinese Prose Literature of the T'ang Period.* By E. D. EDWARDS.  
London: PROBSTHEIN, 1937, 236 pages.

This is the first of two volumes devoted to a study of the T'ang *ts'ung shu*, consisting in Chinese of 144 *ch'uan*, an anthology of short prose works believed to have been produced during the T'ang period. There are introductory chapters dealing with the anthology, with prose composition, history, the arts, science, religion, and drama. The main body of the work consists of "Bibliographical and Biographical notes on, and Translations from, Books 1-85 of *The T'ang ts'ung shu*." There are European and Chinese bibliographies, a general index, a bibliographical index, and an index of proper names. Generous footnotes are provided, with Chinese characters. Dr. Edwards does not seem to know of the Harvard-Yenching series of indexes to the *ts'ung shu*.

The author's primary interest is in fiction, and it will probably be as a study of pre-Sung fiction that these volumes will have their greatest value. She acknowledges her indebtedness to the late Lu Hsün and other modern Chinese critics. Apparently she does not know that Lu Hsün was the pen name of Chou Shu-jen, whose correspondence was recently published in Shanghai, as well as a volume devoted to his memory. Although Vol. II will be devoted to fiction, a good deal of the translation in Vol. I might be classified under that head. Like the late Professor Giles, Dr. Edwards has a flair for interesting stories and anecdotes, and this makes the book fascinating reading—so much so, that one forgets the great amount of careful scholarship that has gone into the notes and biographies.

The chapter on the drama, based on Wang Kuo-wei, and to some extent on Arlington, is excellent. The other introductory chapters are not so good, and contain some imperfect generalizations. While the science of the *tsung shu* may be limited to medicine and agriculture, the T'ang period saw work done in other scientific fields, and Dr. Edwards' knowledge of the medical literature of the time is not exhaustive. The chapter on religion might better be entitled magic, and here the author might have known Feng and Shryock, "Black Magic in China" (*JAOS* 55, 1-30). In referring to the *fu*, or prose-poetry, she should have referred to Clark's *The Prose-Poetry of Su Tung-p'o* (Shanghai, 1935), which has a good historical section. While she commences her historical accounts very properly

with the Han or earlier, she does not seem to know the literature of the Six Dynasties period well, and this has led her into a few misstatements. For example, she says that from the Han to the Tang period, literature followed Han models; but the authors of the Three Kingdoms and Chin periods reacted against Han precedents. She does not mention the peculiar Six Dynasties style, and she does not realize that the rhythm and balance of prose sentences is not merely for elegance, but is also a great aid in punctuation and in understanding the meaning. The two bibliographies might be much fuller.

But even without the second volume, Dr. Edwards has produced a valuable work. Perhaps there might be less attention to amusing anecdotes, and more to serious compositions, although the reader would be sorry to miss any of the stories. The book will be essential to any course given in English on Chinese literature, and particularly Chinese fiction.

*Studies in Early Chinese Culture, First Series.* By H. G. CREEL.  
Baltimore: WAVERLY PRESS, 1937. 266 pages, 1 plate.

This volume is No. 3 of the *Studies in Chinese and Related Civilizations*, published by the American Council of Learned Societies. The series is a memorial to the late C. J. Morse through Margaret W. Parker, who desired that the gift remain anonymous until after her own death.

The manuscript of this volume was prepared before Dr. Creel's more popular book, *The Birth of China* (New York, 1937), but delays in publication resulted in its later appearance. The present volume is more scholarly, and contains the basis for many of the generalizations in the popular work.

This book deals with broader generalizations resting upon detailed researches in pre-Chou culture, and while there is a wealth of detail given in the text and notes, such detail is taken from the intensive work of Black, Andersson, etc., as well as from a host of Chinese scholars. The author is particularly to be praised for his familiarity with the results of Chinese scholarship in his field, and for his use of it. There are also many references to European works, but here the author might have been a little fuller; the most noticeable absence is the lack of any reference to Maspero. While Dr. Creel

shows familiarity with the research in his field, his own contribution is primarily the correlation of the work of others and making of hypotheses based upon this correlation. These hypotheses are often original and brilliant, and in general show good commonsense. In particular, the reviewer agrees with the author's criticism of chronologies based on the *Bamboo Books*, of Karlgren's theories of phallic symbols and of the relation between the spoken and written language, and of the literature attributed to the Shang period.

In treating the Shang Sung section of the *Shih*, Dr. Creel might have mentioned that the Shang sacrifices, as well as the ancestral line, were continued in the state of Sung during the Chou period, so that it was natural to consider Sung as the representative of the Shang. He might have mentioned the bibliography of works on the oracle bones by Bounakoff (Leningrad, 1935). Sometimes Dr. Creel states hypotheses as if they were facts, as when (p. 41) he says, speaking of the Shang bones, "A literature of quite another sort existed alongside of them; it was written on perishable materials and has vanished." This is quite reasonable, but since such literature admittedly no longer exists, it ought not to be stated as a fact. While the author's critical methods are usually sound, it might be noticed that to assume, even on fairly good evidence, that certain terms—for example, *T'ien* and *un Asing*—are late, and that their appearance proves a late origin, is a dangerous principle.

Dr. Creel wisely avoids a discussion of social organization, and says little about the origins of specific cultural traits. His general conclusions concerning the *Hsia* are sound, and his location of the *Hsia* and *Shang* cultures toward the east would support the position of Maspero, but he does not go so far as the latter in assigning the characteristic Chinese culture a southern origin. As a matter of fact, some of the Chinese cultural traits point to the north, some to the south, and Dr. Creel is to be commended for avoiding too sweeping generalizations. From the point of view of the ethnologists, there are many questions the author does not discuss, such as the non-use of milk and the relations of Chinese with other languages.

As a whole, the book may be described as a criticism of the theories of pre-Chou culture on the basis of recent archeology. It will be of great value, and will form a stepping-stone to the final reconstruction of early Chinese civilization. But necessarily the

book will be temporary, for Chinese archeology is only beginning, and when conditions permit of such work being resumed, much new light may be shed upon the past, which may require a reshaping of hypotheses. It might be wise, in future work, to look more carefully for analogies and relations both with the cultures of south-eastern Asia, and with those of north-eastern Siberia.

---

*Seven Hundred Chinese Proverbs.* By HENRY H. HART. Stanford University: STANFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS, 1937. 83 pages.

This is admittedly a popular book, "not written for Sinologists, nor for advanced students of the comparative proverb." Since Chinese characters are not given, no criticism is possible. The proverbs are classified, there is a good bibliography and an index, a foreword by the deputy consul of China in San Francisco, and an interesting essay on the proverb in Chinese life. The author has endeavored to avoid quotations from literature in his selection. The proverbs make interesting reading, and the book should be popular. Scholars should at least know that the book exists, for it could be used advantageously in courses on China of a general nature.

---

*China at Work.* By RUDOLF P. HOMMEL. New York: DAY, 1937. 368 pages; profusely illustrated by photographs.

There is a growing, and a very healthy tendency, to discount works on the Far East by men who have not mastered the appropriate languages. But it is also true that the mastery of a language is not in itself enough for the investigation of a technical subject, and a man who has mastered such a technique, if he is willing to accept and acknowledge help, can sometimes produce fine work that would be impossible to the mere language student. This is well illustrated by Mr. Hommel's volume.

The late Dr. Henry C. Mercer founded a museum in Doylestown, Pa., which houses a collection of 25,000 tools. Mr. Hommel went to China under the direction of Dr. Mercer, for the purpose of investigating Chinese tools, handicrafts, and industrial processes.

He remained there for some time, and in all, spent eight years in the east. He does not pretend to have mastered the language, but consulted those who had. This volume is the result of his investigations, which were mainly in the Yangtse Valley as far as Hankow, and in Hunan, Shantung and Chihli provinces.

It is difficult to avoid speaking of this book without becoming too enthusiastic. There are five chapters, on tools for making tools, for procuring food, for making clothing, for providing shelter, and for enabling transport. Under the fourth are fifty sections. Each section is illustrated by Mr. Hommel's photographs. It is impossible to go into detail concerning the wealth of information that is offered, or the insight into Chinese material culture. But it will be enough to say that no library containing works on the Far East should be without this volume, while it will be invaluable to anyone who lectures upon Chinese culture.

It might be noticed that there are many western works on his subjects of which Mr. Hommel apparently has not heard, including Wittfogel's *Wirtschaft und Gesellschaft Chinas* (Leipzig, Vol. I, 1931), which seems to list them all. And where Mr. Hommel gives an historical sketch, he is naturally in the hands of his friends, and should not be relied on too implicitly. For example, he credits the tradition of the invention of gunpowder during the Three Kingdoms Period. However, artifacts offer an excellent opportunity for an investigation without language training, and this volume will be of great value to all who are interested in the development of civilization.

---

*Chinese Women Yesterday and To-day.* By FLORENCE AYSCOUGH.  
Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1937. 324 pages; many illustrations.

This book is easily the best account of Chinese women in English. It is charmingly written, profusely illustrated with Chinese drawings, and contains many translations both of prose and poetry. While it is a popular book, it is founded on a scholarly background and a familiarity with Chinese custom. Mrs. MacNair has made a very effective contrast between the lives of modern Chinese women, such as the Sung sisters and Ch'iu Chin, and the Chinese women of older times. Among the latter she gives accounts of Pan Chao,

Pan Chieh-yü, Hua Mu-lan, Li Ch'ing-chao, and Kuan Fu-jen. The women Mrs. MacNair selects have received attention from western scholars, but no one has worked the material into one volume which compares and illustrates the old and the new cultures. The author is also to be thanked for her generous translations.

---

*Vocabularies to the Intermediate Chinese Texts used at Harvard University.* By JAMES R. WARE. Cambridge: HARVARD-YENCHING INSTITUTE, 1937. 160 pages.

Dr. Ware has done a very careful and painstaking piece of work with this second volume of vocabularies. There is an excellent preface, including accounts of the texts to which the vocabularies refer, a good article on dictionaries, and a table of Chinese Rimes. The texts include passages from the *T'ung-chien chi shih pen-mo*, the *Tzu chih lung-chien*, the *Shih chi*, the *Tao chuan*, the *Kung-yang chuan*, and from Liang Ch'i-ch'ao and Hu Shih. There is a glossary, an index and a table of the 314 classifiers. There would be no point in trying to find minute flaws in such a work, and Dr. Ware will eventually find all such mistakes himself. The notes appear to have been made with great care and detail, and the whole volume is a very creditable piece of work.

---

*Grammaire Laotienne.* By J.-J. HOSPITALIER. Paris: GEUTHNER, 1937. 270 pages.

M. Hospitalier is in charge of the instruction in the Laotian language in the *École Nationale des Langues Orientales Vivantes*, and is the author of an earlier work on Laotian writing, published in 1931. This grammar is divided into three parts. The first is concerned mainly with phonetic transcription and the analysis of sounds—vowels, consonants, and diphthongs. The second part is concerned with tones. These two sections appear to be very well done. The third part deals with words and phrases, and whether this is to be regarded as satisfactory will depend upon the point of view. M. Hospitalier simply fits Laotian into French grammar. There are sections on articles, nouns, adjectives, pronouns, verbs,



adverbs, prepositions, conjunctions, and interjections; there are passages on active and passive verbs, on transitive and intransitive verbs, on moods, on participles and auxiliaries. Without knowing anything of the language of Laos, one suspects that it can hardly fit so exactly into the categories of French grammar, and that what M. Hospitalier is really doing is showing how Laotian should be translated into French, rather than writing a grammar of that language.

It may be noticed that Laotian writing is alphabetic, and that there are words of two and more syllables. The linguistic connections appear to be with Siamese rather than with Annamese and Chinese. The author says nothing about infixes.

---

*Beiträge zur mandjurischen Bibliographie und Literatur.* By WALTER FUCHS. Tokyo: DEUTSCHE GESELLSCHAFT FÜR NATUR- UND VÖLKERKUNDE OSTASIENS, 1936. 146 pages, 17 illustrations, 8 tables.

This is supplementary volume No. XIV to the "Mitteilungen" of this society. Herr Fuchs is a well-known scholar who has previously published work in this field (*Asia Major*, vol. vii, pp. 469-82). The earlier work of such scholars as Laufer, von Zach, Watanabe, Haenisch, Goodrich, Hauer, Naito, Giles, and Chinese authors like T'ao Hsiang and Hsieh Kuo-chen is considered. The reviewer was unable to find any reference to Tagoutchi's *Catalogue des livres de la Mandchourie et de la Mongolie qui existent à Dairen bibliothèque de Chemin de Fer Sud-Mandchourien*, Dairen, 1934. There are chapters on Manchu printing and translators before 1661, on old Manchurian documents, on catalogues of the Ch'ing dynasty, on Manchu-Chinese collections of special phrases, dictionaries, etc., on Manchu seal writing, and on Manchu biographies in Peking and Tokyo collections. The volume, although not large, contains a great mass of information which will be valuable to scholars working in Manchu.

---

*A Dictionary of Chinese Buddhist Terms.* By W. E. SOOTHILL and L. HODGINS. London: KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRUBNER, 1937. 510 pages.

A work of this kind is always a collaboration, and in addition to the two scholars who appear as authors, Dr. Lionel Giles, Dr. F. W. Thomas, Dr. Leroy C. Barret, and other scholars, are to be felicitated upon the publication of this volume. The only book in English remotely resembling it has been Eitel's old *Handbook of Chinese Buddhism*, which was out of print and hopelessly inadequate. The scholar has had *Hōbōgiri*. In addition to the actual dictionary, there are prefaces, lists of radicals, and of difficult characters, and indexes of Sanskrit and Pali with reference to the Chinese, and of non-Sanskrit (Tibetan etc.) terms.

The authors recognize that their work is not final, and publish in order to encourage the study of Chinese Buddhism. The Chinese words are given, then the Sanskrit where necessary, and the meaning in English. There do not appear to be any romanizations of the Chinese words. It would have been a great help if the Chinese could have been romanized both in its modern pronunciation, and in Karlgren's reconstruction of the ancient pronunciation. For instance, there is nothing in this dictionary to indicate why a word now pronounced *fo* or *fu* should have been used to transliterate the Sanskrit *buddh*. Since many transliterations occur, this is a serious omission. An even worse one is the omission of exact references to sources, and it is not possible to tell in what passages a phrase occurs, or what the authority for a given definition is. How difficult this makes the work of a careful scholar may be shown by one or two instances.

*Shik* 識 is given as the equivalent of the Sanskrit *vijñāna*, and a long and confusing definition is quoted from Monier Williams. There is then a discussion of its use in the *Laṅkāvatāra sūtra*. Nothing is said to indicate that there are other uses. Now Hamilton and La Vallée Poussin have shown that *shik* was used by Hsuan Tsang both for the Sanskrit *vijñāna* and for *vijñapti*. In the former case it would be translated "consciousness," and in the latter "representation." The usage of the *Laṅkāvatāra sūtra* would be very misleading if applied to the idealism of Vasubandhu.

*Hein* 心 is defined as "mind, soul, the heart as the seat of thought." Six kinds of mind are given. But in the *Wei Shik*

philosophy, the word is also translated "general consciousness," including the five senses, and three other forms of consciousness.

*Shen* 身 is given as the equivalent of the Sanskrit *kāya*; *tanu*; *deha*. It is not said that Hsüan Tsung uses *shea* to translate *sambhāna*.

In general the definitions in the dictionary appear to follow the *Laṅkāvatāra* and the Lotus sūtras. This would not be so bad if we could tell exactly what the authority for a given usage was. A western authority like Monier Williams is certainly not enough. As it is, this dictionary must be used with great care by any scholar desiring to be exact, and must be checked with *Hôhōgiri* and other sources.<sup>4</sup>

---

*Two Lamaistic Pantheons.* Edited with introduction and indexes by WALTER EUGENE CLARK. Two volumes. Cambridge: HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS, 1937. Vol. I, xxiv + 169 pages; Vol. II, 314 pages, consisting entirely of illustrations.

These two beautifully prepared volumes are devoted to two Lamaistic Pantheons. Materials for the study of four such collections were presented to the Harvard College Library in 1923 by Baron A. von Staël-Holstein. One has been already fully described by Eugen Pander, and another has been used considerably by Grünwedel. The present volumes contain the material of the two remaining collections, one in a manuscript called the *Chu Fo P'u-sa Sheng Hsiang Tsau*, and the other a pantheon found in a Lama temple, the Pao-hsiang Lou, located in the Forbidden City.

The second of these volumes is devoted entirely to photographs; the first contains an introduction by Professor Clark, and Sanskrit, Tibetan, and Chinese indexes. In most cases the Chinese and Tibetan names were given, but the Sanskrit names are reconstructions, based chiefly on the Tibetan. The reviewer suggests that as Professor Clark is doubtful about some of these reconstructions, it might be possible to check them by giving the Chinese words the ancient phonetic values listed by Karlgren in his *Analytic Dictionary*. With regard to the Pao-hsiang Lou, it would probably be

<sup>4</sup> The reviewer acknowledges his indebtedness to Prof. C. H. Hamilton for the use of his manuscript on the *Wei shih erh shih lun*.

found that the Peiping gazetteer would give a full account, and might shed light on the history of the statues.

Professor Clark has done a great amount of painstaking work, much of which must have been drudgery. The volumes are a credit to everyone concerned with them, and the illustrations are excellent.

---

*Apostle of China: Samuel Isaac Joseph Schereschewsky.* By J. A. MULLER. New York and Milwaukee: MOMENTHOUSE, 1937. 279 pages, 8 illustrations.

A word of explanation is needed for reviewing a popular biography of a missionary in a learned journal. The world of scholarship looks askance at missionaries and missionary literature, and the reviewer confesses that he shares this prejudice. There seems little place for real learning in the missionary world today, while missionary literature is nearly always propaganda which bears about the same relation to the real situation as an advertisement of an automobile does to the actual car. But it is well for both scholars and missionaries to realize that this has not always been so, and this excellent book by Dr. Muller is a good illustration.

Schereschewsky was born in Tauraggen, Lithuania, in 1831, a Jew, and died in Tokyo in 1906, a bishop of the Episcopal Church. Between these two dates lay a life full of interesting vicissitudes and amazing labors, the greater part of which were philological. In 1881 he was stricken with sunstroke while at Wuchang, China, and for the last twenty-five years of his life he was a hopeless cripple. During those years when he could not even walk alone he worked day after day at his typewriter, which he was obliged to operate with only one finger. Nine of those years he spent in America, in poverty, without assistance, and without a library, working on his translation of the Bible into Chinese.

Western orientalisks are interested almost exclusively in making available to the west the cultural achievements of the east. But the development of cultural unity demands that the achievements of the west should be made available to the east, and to this task the missionaries have dedicated themselves. That modern missionaries do not recognize their need of philological discipline and training does not alter the fact that both scholars and missionaries

are engaged upon different aspects of the same task. Schereschewsky was a great missionary, and had he done nothing but found St. John's University, Shanghai, he would deserve a place in the history of the diffusion of culture. But he was also a great philologist, a master of many languages, and his greatest work was in translation from western sources into Chinese. Sinologists who speak of the ease with which Chinese may be acquired should consider his receipt for learning that language—nine hours a day for five years. Perhaps no westerner, not even Legge, ever acquired so complete a mastery of Chinese. Schereschewsky was a hero, not merely of the missionary enterprise, but of the world of scholarship.

While Dr. Muller's work is popular in the sense of being easily read, it is scholarly in the sense of being accurate, properly critical, and founded upon research. The story of his difficulties in securing material is a sad commentary both on the lack of historical sense of the modern Church, and on the neglect by scholarship of what is after all a great chapter in the history of culture, the modern expansion of Christianity. The book includes an index, and a list of Schereschewsky's publications.

Philadelphia.

J. K. SHRYOCK.

## NOTES OF THE SOCIETY

Since the last issue of the Journal went to press, the following have been elected to membership in the Society:

Rev. A. B. Bodtkian	Mr. Daniel H. H. Ingalls
Prof. Floyd V. Filson	Mr. Owen Lattimore
Mr. Richard N. Frye	Miss Elizabeth Lindmeyer
Major Fletcher Gardner	Mr. Edwin O. Reischauer
Dr. Bernhard Geiger	Dr. Gustav von Grunbaum
Rev. Prof. W. E. Griffiths	

Not all of those elected have as yet qualified for membership.

We have learned that Professor Jacob Wackernagel, honorary member of the Society since 1931, has died at Basle.

A membership committee consisting of Professor O. R. Sellars, chairman, and Professors C. C. McCown, H. Louis Ginsberg, James R. Ware, Z. S. Harris, C. H. Hamilton, and W. H. Dubberstein, has been appointed by the Executive Committee. Please bring to the attention of the chairman the names of any persons in your acquaintance who should be invited to join the Society.

The Program Committee, which is preparing the general framework of the sessions to be held in Baltimore, April 11-13, held a meeting recently at Philadelphia and is preparing a program with interesting features, including an address by Owen Lattimore, editor of *Pacific Affairs*, at the subscription dinner, and a symposium on The Beginnings of Civilization in the Ancient World.

The attention of members is called to the fact that four new monographs are being added to the American Oriental Series. For their titles, consult the rear cover of this issue. These volumes are available to members of the Society at special prices for one year from date of publication as follows: Volumes XII, XIV, \$1.50; Volumes XIII, XV, \$1.00.

---

## NOTES OF OTHER SOCIETIES

---

### FONDATION DE GOETE

Depuis sa dernière communication le Conseil n'a pas subi de modifications; il est donc composé comme suit: MM. A. J. Wesslock, président; Tj. de Buer; J. L. Palache; Paul Scholten et C. C. Berg, secrétaire-trésorier.

La fondation vient de publier le texte arabe du *Rawd al-Mi'târ*, ouvrage traitant la géographie de l'Espagne au Moyen-âge, avec une introduction et une traduction française par M. E. Lévi-Provençal, de l'université d'Alger. Les exemplaires de ce beau livre sont en vente au prix de 15 florins. Le Conseil a accordé une subvention à la nouvelle édition de l'ouvrage géographique d'Ibn Hawqal par M. J. H. Kramers.

Des onze publications antérieures de la fondation il reste un certain nombre d'exemplaires, qui sont mis en vente au profit de la fondation chez l'éditeur Brill, Leyde.

Leyde, November, 1938.

### INDIC STUDIES AT THE LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

A department of Indic Studies was opened at the Library of Congress on November 16, 1938, with Dr. Horace L. Poleman as Director. The development of the department is being financed for an initial period by the Carnegie Corporation of New York. The first function will be to explore the existing Indic materials in the Library of Congress, and to cooperate with the several Divisions of the Library in filling the gaps. The range of interests covered by Indic Studies will be literature, language, history, philosophy, art, anthropology, economics, and in short all phases of human activity in ancient and modern India. The term "Indic" indicates not only India proper, but also all the outlying regions noticeably affected by Indian civilization, such as Tibet, Ceylon, Burma, Siam, Cambodia, Java, and others. The researches of the department will be available to other government bureaus and agencies, to libraries, scholars, journalists, and other duly interested institutions and individuals.

## LIST OF MEMBERS

The number placed after the address indicates the year of election.

List corrected to November 1, 1938.

### HONORARY MEMBERS

- SIR GEORGE A. GRIESSION, K.C.I.E., Rathfarnham, Camberley, Surrey, England. Corporate Member, 1889; Honorary, 1905.
- M. FRANÇOIS THUREAU-DANGIN, Membre de l'Institut de France, 11 Rue Garancière, Paris VI, France. 1918.
- SIR ARTHUR EVANS, Ashmolean Museum, Oxford, England. 1919.
- Prof. V. SCHREI, Membre de l'Institut de France, 4 bis Rue du Cherche-Midi, Paris, France. 1920.
- Prof. FREDERICK W. THOMAS, University of Oxford, Oxford, England. 1920.
- Prof. PAUL PELLJOY, 38 Rue de Varenne, Paris VII<sup>e</sup>, France. 1924.
- SIR JOHN MARSHALL, Kt., C.I.E., Litt.D., Avondale, Sydney Road, Guildford, Surrey, England. 1928.
- SIR FLINDERS PETRIE, Kt., D.C.L., University College, London, England. 1928.
- SIR AUBREY STEIN, Litt.D., c/o Indian Institute, Oxford, England. 1928.
- Prof. WILHELM GREGER, München-Neubiberg, Germany. 1929.
- Prof. CARL BROCKELMANN, Wettinerstrasse 15, Halle a/d Saale, Germany. 1931.
- Prof. HEINRICH LÜDERS, Sybelstrasse 19, Berlin-Charlottenburg, Germany. 1931.
- Prof. HENRI MASPERO, Collège de France, Paris, France. 1931.
- Prof. MASAHARU ANEBART, 117 Hakusangoten, Tokyo, Japan. 1934.
- Prof. GEORG STEINDORFF, Prendelstrasse 2, Leipzig, Germany. 1934.
- Prof. D. GUSTAV DALMAN, Universität Greifswald, Greifswald, Germany. 1936.
- Prof. REYNOLD A. NICHOLSON, 12 Harvey Road, Cambridge, England. 1936.
- Prof. STEN KONOV, Ph.D., Kirkeveien 114 C, Oslo, Norway. 1937.
- Prof. DAVID SAMUEL MARGOLIOU, D.Litt., F.B.A., Romney, Boar's Hill, Oxford, England. 1937.
- Prof. HANNS OERTEL, Pienzenauerstrasse, München, Germany. Corporate member, 1880; Honorary, 1937.
- Prof. ALAN HENDERSON GARDINER, M.A., D.Litt., 9 Lansdowne Road, Holland Park, London W. 11, England. 1938.
- Prof. ARTHUR BRERIDALE KEITH, D.C.L., D.Litt., LL.D., 4 Crawford Road, Craigmillar Park, Edinburgh, Scotland. 1938.
- Dr. VISHNU SITARAM SURTHANKAR, M.A., Ph.D., Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute, Poona 4, India. 1938. Corporate member, 1921; Honorary, 1938.
- R. P. LOUIS HOGUES VINCENT, D.D., P. O. Box 178, Jerusalem, Palestine. 1938.



## HONORARY ASSOCIATES

- Hon. CHARLES R. CRANE, 655 Park Ave., New York, N. Y. 1921.  
 Pres. EMBERTUS FRANK J. GOUDNOW, Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, Md. 1921.  
 Hon. CHARLES EVANS HUGHES, Chief Justice, Supreme Court of the United States, Washington, D. C. 1922.  
 Hon. HENRY MORGENTHAU, 417 Park Ave., New York, N. Y. 1921.  
 Hon. SAO-KE ALFRED SZK, Chinese Legation, Washington, D. C. 1922.

## CORPORATE MEMBERS

*Names marked with \* are those of life members.*

- Mr. MARCUS AARON, 5564 Aylesboro Ave., Pittsburgh, Pa. 1921.  
 SHAIKH YASSIN AL BAHAYAN AL AMARSI, Basrah, Iraq. 1937.  
 Prof. NABIA ABBOTT, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1936.  
 Miss ADELAIDE A. ADAMS, 715 Forest Ave., Ann Arbor, Mich. 1927.  
 Prof. J. McKEE ADAMS, Ph.D., Southern Baptist Theological Seminary, Louisville, Ky. 1932.  
 \*Pres. CYRUS ADLER (Dropsie College), 2041 North Broad St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1894.  
 Dr. ALLEN D. ALBERT, JR., Seabury-Western Theological Seminary, Sheridan Road at Haven St., Evanston, Ill. 1932.  
 Prof. WILLIAM FOXWELL ALBRIGHT, Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, Md. 1915.  
 Prof. BASIL M. ALEXEEV, Ul. Blzhina, 17/1, log. 5, Leningrad, USSR. 1937.  
 Prof. EDWIN BROWN ALLEN, Ph.D. (Rensselaer Polytechnic Inst.), 4 Sheldon Ave., Troy, N. Y. 1932.  
 Dr. HENRY E. ALLEN, 159 Shawnee Ave., Easton, Pa. 1937.  
 Prof. T. GEORGE ALLEN, 8460 Ridgewood Court, Chicago, Ill. 1917.  
 Prof. OSWALD T. ALLIS, Westminster Theological Seminary, 1528 Pine St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1916.  
 Mrs. ROSE ANDREWS, 87 Elwood St., New York, N. Y. 1938.  
 Prof. JOHN C. ARCHER, Yale Divinity School, 409 Prospect St., New Haven, Conn. 1916.  
 Mrs. LOUIS E. ASHEN, 5008 Greenwood Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1932.  
 Dr. S. D. ATKINS, 28 Edwards Place, Princeton, N. J. 1936.  
 Mr. WILLIAM T. AVERY, 1826 Gramere St., Cleveland, Ohio. 1936.  
 Dr. LUDWIG BACHSOFER, 1201 E. 60th St., Chicago, Ill. 1936.  
 Rev. FREDERICK A. BAEPLES, 3709 Texas Ave., St. Louis, Mo. 1937.  
 Dr. ARNOLD A. BAKE, D.Litt., 38 Lansdowne Crescent, London W. 11, England. 1936.  
 Mr. LOUIS BAMBERGER, c/o L. Bamberger & Co., Newark, N. J. 1928.  
 Dr. MORRIS BAR-AM, 29 Citrus St., New Haven, Conn. 1936.

- Mrs. EARL H. BARBER, 110 Haven St., Reading, Mass. 1925.  
 \*Mr. PHILIP LEMONT BARBOUR, Silvermine, Norwalk, Conn. 1917.  
 Mr. ROBERT W. BARNETT, 225 Bishop St., New Haven, Conn. 1937.  
 Rev. JOSEPH L. BARON, Ph.D., 2419 East Kenwood Blvd., Milwaukee, Wis. 1937.  
 Prof. SAUL BARON, Fayerweather Hall, Columbia Univ., New York, N. Y. 1933.  
 \*Prof. LEROY CLARR BARRETT, Ph.D., Trinity College, Hartford, Conn. 1903.  
 \*Prof. GEORGE A. BARTON, 141 Newton St., Weston, Mass. 1898.  
 Prof. V. I. BARANOFF, LL.D., C.L.D., Hist.D., 90 Rue Boileau, Paris XVI<sup>e</sup>, France, 1937.  
 Mrs. DANIEL M. BATES, 30 Edgmont Ave., Summit, N. J. 1912.  
 Prof. MINER SEABLE BATES, University of Nanking, Nanking, China. 1926.  
 \*Prof. LORING W. BATTEN, 560 Riverview Road, Swarthmore, Pa. 1904.  
 Rev. R. PIERCE BEAVER, Ph.D., College of Chinese Studies, Peiping, China. 1938.  
 Dr. GEORGE BECHTEL, Hall of Graduate Studies, Yale Univ., New Haven, Conn. 1933.  
 Rev. ANTRANIG A. BEDKIAN, 201 Crescent Ave., Lenox, N. J. 1939.  
 Prof. ALFRED R. BELMINGER (Yale Univ.), 234 Fountain St., New Haven, Conn. 1929.  
 \*Prof. SHRIPAD K. BELVALKAR (Deccan College), Poona, via Bombay, India. 1914.  
 Prof. HAROLD H. BENDER, Princeton University, Princeton, N. J. 1905.  
 Rev. W. THEODORE BENZER, U.S.C.A. Mission, Peddapuram, East Godavari District, India. 1933.  
 Dr. ABRAHAM BERGMAN, District Offices, Affula, Palestine, 1933.  
 Rabbi MORTON M. BERMAN, 5217 Greenwood Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1929.  
 Mr. OSCAR BERMAN, Third, Plum and McFarland Sts., Cincinnati, Ohio. 1920.  
 Mr. THEOS C. BERNARD, 140 West 57th St., New York, N. Y. 1936.  
 Mrs. THEOS C. BERNARD, 280 W. 4th St., New York, N. Y. 1928.  
 Rev. J. BUCHANAN BERNARDIN, Th.D., 42 Janssen Place, Kansas City, Mo. 1937.  
 Prof. GEORGE R. BERRY, Ph.D., D.D., Hamilton, N. Y. 1907.  
 Prof. WOODBRIDGE BINGHAM, Univ. of California, Berkeley, Calif. 1931.  
 Rev. JOHN KINGSLEY BIRGE, Ph.D., Box 142, Istanbul, Turkey, 1934.  
 Mr. CARL W. BISHOP, Freer Gallery of Art, Washington, D. C. 1917.  
 Miss JOYCE BLACK, Lock Box 46, Monroe Blvd. Station, Dearborn, Mich. 1935.  
 Mr. CHAUNCEY J. BLAIR, 8 E. 96th St., New York, N. Y. 1938.  
 Miss DOROTHY BLAIR, Assistant Curator, Toledo Museum of Art, Toledo, Ohio. 1931.  
 Prof. FRANK HINGGOLD BLAKE, Ph.D. (Johns Hopkins Univ.), 817 E. Belvedere Ave., Baltimore, Md. 1900.  
 Prof. SHELDON H. BLANK, Ph.D., Hebrew Union College, Cincinnati, Ohio. 1927.

- Prof. LEONARD BLOOMFIELD, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1927.  
 Prof. PAUL F. BLOOMHART, Ph.D., Wittenberg College, Springfield, Ohio. 1918.  
 Dr. GEORGE V. BOBBINGHOTT, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1925.  
 Mr. STANLEY H. BOGGS, 11 Everett St., Cambridge, Mass. 1937.  
 Prof. FRANK M. T. BÖHL, Ph.D., Rapenburg 53, Leyden, Holland. 1928.  
 \*Prof. GEORGE M. BOLLING (Ohio State Univ.), 777 Franklin Ave., Columbus, Ohio. 1898.  
 Prof. CAMPBELL BONNER, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich. 1920.  
 Dr. PETER A. BOONBERG, 1830 Sonoma Ave., Berkeley, Calif. 1933.  
 Dr. HUGH BORTON, 446 Park Ave., Leonia, N. J. 1932.  
 Miss MARYELLEN BOUCHARD, Library of Congress, Washington, D. C. 1937.  
 Dr. RAYMOND A. BOWMAN, 5464 S. Ridgewood Court, Chicago, Ill. 1931.  
 Rev. A. M. BOYER, 114 Rue du Bac, Paris VII<sup>e</sup>, France. 1928.  
 Dr. WATSON BOYES, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1928.  
 Prof. CHARLES S. BRADEN, Northwestern University, Evanston, Ill. 1928.  
 Prof. GEORGE WESTON BRIGGS, M.Sc., Drew University, Madison, N. J. 1923.  
 Dr. ROSWELL S. BRITTON, 99 Claremont Ave., New York, N. Y. 1933.  
 Rev. Prof. CHARLES D. BROKENSHIRE, Lock Box 56, Alma, Mich. 1917.  
 Rev. MITCHELL BRONK, D.D., 1703 Chestnut St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1933.  
 \*Mrs. NORRIS L. BROOKENS (née Schurman), Oriental Institute, Univ. of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1934.  
 Prof. BEATRICE ALLARD BROOKS, Western College, Oxford, Ohio. 1919.  
 Dr. FRANK E. BROWN, 245 Willow St., New Haven, Conn. 1938.  
 Prof. W. NORMAN BROWN, University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa. 1916.  
 Mr. BURE C. BRUNDAGE, 910 E. 57th St., Chicago, Ill. 1938.  
 Dr. ABOLAH A. BRUX, 5432 Ingleside Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1936.  
 \*Prof. CARL DARLING BUCK, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1892.  
 Prof. FRANCIS W. BUCKLER, Oberlin Graduate School of Theology, Oberlin, Ohio. 1928.  
 Dr. LUDLOW S. BULL, Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York, N. Y. 1917.  
 Mr. ALEXANDER H. BULLOCK, State Mutual Building, Worcester, Mass. 1910.  
 Mr. EUGENE I. BURDOCK, 2770 Kingsbridge Terrace, Bronx, New York, N. Y. 1928.  
 Prof. MILLAN BURROWS, Ph.D., 409 Prospect St., New Haven, Conn. 1925.  
 Dr. ROBERT T. BURTON, 913 N. Limestone St., Springfield, Ohio. 1920.  
 Prof. MORRIS BUTTENWIEHER, Hebrew Union College, Cincinnati, Ohio. 1917.  
 Prof. HENRY J. CADBURY, 7 Buckingham Place, Cambridge, Mass. 1914.  
 Prof. EDWIN E. CALVERLEY, Ph.D., Hartford Seminary Foundation, Hartford, Conn. 1932.  
 Dr. GEORGE G. CAMERON, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1931.

- Prof. MURIEL E. CAMERON, Ph.D., Mather College, Western Reserve University, Cleveland, Ohio. 1935.
- Prof. LILLIAN C. CANFIELD, Florida State College for Women, Tallahassee, Fla. 1938.
- Rev. DAVID A. JESSURUN CARBOSO, 90 Central Park West, New York, N. Y. 1938.
- Prof. DENZEL CARR, Ph.D., Oriental Institute, University of Hawaii, Honolulu, Hawaii. 1937.
- Mrs. DAGNY CARTER, 7 Hou Chao Chia Lou, Peiping, China. 1933.
- Prof. ROBERT PIERCE CASEY, Brown University, Providence, R. I. 1936.
- Dr. MAYNARD L. CASSADY, 195 Summit Drive, Rochester, N. Y. 1937.
- Mr. RALPH M. CHAIT, 600 Madison Ave., New York, N. Y. 1929.
- Prof. W. T. CHAN, Ph.D., Oriental Institute, University of Hawaii, Honolulu, Hawaii. 1937.
- Dr. Y. Z. CHANG, Dept. of Oriental Languages, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich. 1938.
- Prof. HELEN B. CHAPIN, Mills College, Calif. 1929.
- Dr. WILLIAM J. CHAPMAN, "Fallowfield," New Boston, Mass. 1922.
- Prof. KSHETRESCHANDRA CHATTOPADHYAYA, Sanskrit Dept., The University, Allahabad, U. P., India. 1925.
- Dr. A. KAIMING CHIU, Chinese-Japanese Library, Harvard University, Cambridge, Mass. 1934.
- Mr. JOHN LEROY CHRISTIAN, Rock Creek Camp, Hansen, Idaho. 1936.
- Prof. WALTER R. CLARK, Kirkland House, Cambridge, Mass. 1906.
- Mr. B. ARMSTRONG CLAYTON, 1515 S. St., N. W., Washington, D. C. 1934.
- Rabbi HENRY COHEN, D.H.L., 1920 Broadway, Galveston, Texas. 1920.
- Mr. LAWRENCE B. COHEN, 20 W. 16th St., New York, N. Y. 1937.
- Miss CATHERINE COOK, 522 17th St., N. W., Washington, D. C. 1935.
- Dr. ANANDA K. COOMARASWAMY, D.Sc. (Lond.), Museum of Fine Arts, Boston, Mass. 1917.
- \*Prof. DOUGLAS HILARY CORLEY (Univ. of Louisville), 2304 Wetatein Ave., Louisville, Ky. 1922.
- Mrs. ISAAC M. COX, 2762 Lanika Rd., Honolulu, Hawaii. 1937.
- Sir J. C. COXAJEE (Presidency College), c/o Park St. Branch, Imperial Bank of India, Calcutta, India. 1929.
- Mr. DOUGLAS D. CRAWY, 8 Gerry's Landing Rd., Cambridge, Mass. 1935.
- Prof. HERBIE GLESSNER CREEL, 226 Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1932.
- President JOHN WALLIS CRIGHTON, Ph.D., LL.D., Hastings College, Hastings, Neb. 1937.
- Prof. GEORGE B. CRESSETY, Ph.D., Syracuse University, Syracuse, N. Y. 1937.
- Prof. EARLE H. CROSS, Colgate-Rochester Divinity School, Rochester, N. Y. 1927.
- Prof. EPHRAIM CROSS, Ph.D., J.D., 1840 Andrews Ave., Bronx, New York, N. Y. 1938.

- Prof. CHARLES GORDON CUMMING (Bangor Theol. Seminary), 353 Hammond St., Bangor, Maine, 1928.
- Miss CECILIA CUTTS (Univ. of Washington), 8011 31st Ave. N. E., Seattle, Wash. 1925.
- Prof. ELMER H. CUTTS, Dept. of Oriental Studies, University of Washington, Seattle, Wash. 1937.
- Mr. D. DAHLIAN, 808 S. Lincoln Ave., Urbana, Ill. 1938.
- Rev. Prof. GEORGE DAHL, Ph.D., 209 Livingston St., New Haven, Conn. 1936.
- \*Mr. RUSTON D. DALAL, c/o Swiss Bank Corporation, 11 Regent St., London S.W. 1, England. 1935.
- Dr. D. S. DAVINSON, Dept. of Anthropology, University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa. 1935.
- Prof. ISRAEL DAVIDSON (Jewish Theol. Seminary), 92 Morningside Ave., New York, N. Y. 1921.
- Rev. H. COPLEY DAVIS, First Methodist Episcopal Church, Fort Benton, Mont. 1938.
- Mr. RUFUS S. DAY, JR., 1503 Midland Bldg., Cleveland, Ohio. 1938.
- Dr. NELSON C. DEMEVOISE, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1927.
- Dean IRWIN HOCH DELOSO, Ph.D., D.D. (Theol. Seminary of the Reformed Church), 523 West James St., Lancaster, Pa. 1916.
- Prof. ROBERT E. DESGLER, Ph.D. (Pennsylvania State College), 210 South Gill St., State College, Pa. 1920.
- Dr. A. SANDERS DEWITT, M.D., 4854 Third Ave., Detroit, Mich. 1939.
- Mrs. A. SANDERS DEWITT, 4854 Third Ave., Detroit, Mich. 1929.
- Dr. MAURICK S. DIMAND, Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York, N. Y. 1938.
- Prof. ALOYS HERMAN DIRKSEN, St. Charles Seminary, Carthage, Ohio, 1933.
- Pres. BAYARD DODGE, American University of Beirut, Beirut, Syria. 1926.
- Prof. GEORGES DORRIN (Univ. of Liège), 20 Rue des Écoles, Wandre-lez-Liège, Belgium. 1926.
- Principal DARLEY DOWNS, School of Japanese Language and Culture, 3 of 9 Shiba Park, Shiba-Ku, Tokyo, Japan. 1937.
- Prof. LUCY DUNSCOLL (Univ. of Chicago), 2464 E. 72d Place, Chicago, Ill. 1932.
- Dr. WALDO H. DUNNENSTEIN, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1932.
- Prof. HOMER H. DUNS, Ph.D., Duke University, Durham, N. C. 1934.
- Prof. PAUL-EMILE DUMONT, Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, Md. 1930.
- Prof. GEORGE S. DUNCAN, Ph.D., 2900 Seventh St., N.E., Washington, D. C. 1917.
- Prof. J. J. L. DUYVENDAK, Sinologisch Instituut, 1 Binnenvestgracht, Leyden, Holland. 1937.
- Prof. DANIEL S. DYER, Union University, Chengtu, West China. 1937.

- Mr. ISIDORE DYEN, 3025 W. Berks St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1936.
- Mr. HAMILTON EAMES, 2472 Kenilworth Road, Cleveland Heights, Ohio. 1934.
- Miss ELIZABETH S. EATON, Museum of Fine Arts, Boston, Mass. 1936.
- Prof. FRANKLIN EDGERTON (Yale Univ.), 1504A Yale Station, New Haven, Conn. 1910.
- Prof. WILLIAM F. EDGERTON, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1917.
- Prof. SERGE ELIESEFF, Boylston Hall, Cambridge, Mass. 1934.
- Miss ETHEL C. ELKINS, 40 W. 53rd St., New York, N. Y. 1937.
- Mr. ABRAHAM I. ELKUS, 46 Wall St., New York, N. Y. 1921.
- Dr. JOHN FEE EMMER, University of Hawaii, Honolulu, Hawaii. 1937.
- Dr. MURRAY B. EMMENAU, Yale Station, New Haven, Conn. 1929.
- Dr. ROBERT M. ENGBERG, 409 Prospect St., New Haven, Conn. 1935.
- Prof. THOMAS E. ENNIS, Ph.D., West Virginia University, Morgantown, W. Va. 1932.
- Prof. MORTON SCOTT ENSLIN (Crozer Theol. Seminary), 4 Seminary Ave., Chester, Pa. 1925.
- Prof. KENNETH CHARLES EVANS, Ph.D., Trinity College, Toronto, Ont., Canada. 1936.
- Mrs. EDWARD WARREN EVERETT, Sweet House, Hinsdale, Ill. 1930.
- Dr. CHARLES B. FAHS, Pomona College, Claremont, Calif. 1937.
- Dr. JOHN KING FAIRBANK, D.Phil. (Oxon.), 41 Winthrop St., Cambridge, Mass. 1938.
- Mrs. MARGARET FAIRBANKS, 2528 Mayfield Road, Cleveland Heights, Cleveland, Ohio. 1937.
- Dr. NABIN A. FARIN, Research Associate, Princeton University, 58 Mercer St., Princeton, N. J. 1935.
- Prof. MALCOLM F. FARLEY, Fukien Christian University, Foochow, China. 1937.
- Dr. SAMUEL FEIGIN, c/o Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1924.
- Dr. S. FELDMAN, Dept. of Psychology, Cornell University, Ithaca, N. Y. 1926.
- Miss HELEN E. FERNALD, 1128 Oxford Road, Winter Park, Fla. 1927.
- Mr. JAMES FERRILL, 421 W. 57th St., New York, N. Y. 1938.
- Dr. FREDERICK V. FIELD, 129 E. 52d St., New York, N. Y. 1937.
- Dr. HENRY FIELD, LL.D., Field Museum of Natural History, Chicago, Ill. 1920.
- Prof. FLOYD V. FILSON, Th.D., D.D., 857 Chalmers Place, Chicago, Ill. 1938.
- Dr. SOLOMON B. FINESINGER, Hebrew Union College, Cincinnati, Ohio. 1922.
- Dr. JOSHUA FINKEL, 3505 Avenue I, Brooklyn, N. Y. 1929.
- Prof. LOUIS FINKELSTEIN, Jewish Theological Seminary, 531 W. 123rd St., New York, N. Y. 1921.
- Dr. SYDNEY N. FISHER, 74 Prospect St., Warsaw, N. Y. 1938.

- Mr. C. P. FITZGERALD, Savile Club, 69 Brook St., London W., England. 1933.
- Mr. CHARLES M. FLEISCHNER, Yale University Press, 143 Elm St., New Haven, Conn. 1937.
- Mrs. JULIE MICHELET FOGELBERG, Glen St. Mary, Fla. 1931.
- Rabbi JEROME D. FOLKMAN, 811 Giddings Ave., S. E., Grand Rapids, Mich. 1935.
- \*Mr. MAYNARD DAUGHTY FOLLEN, 462 Hammond Bldg., Detroit, Mich. 1922.
- Rev. WILLIAM M. FOUTS, Th.D., 3040 W. Washington Blvd., Station D, Chicago, Ill. 1929.
- Mr. GEORGE BINGHAM FOWLER, 315 Allaire Ave., Leonia, N. J. 1937.
- Prof. HENRY T. FOWLER, Ph.D., Brown University, Providence, R. I. 1926.
- Miss GRACE FOX, 1709 S Street, N. W., Washington, D. C. 1938.
- Rabbi GRESHAM GEORGE FOX, Ph.D., 7524 Essex Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1924.
- \*Prof. JAMES EVERETT FRANK, 7 Edgehill St., Princeton, N. J. 1892.
- Prof. HENRI FRANKFORT, Ph.D., Kinneridge, near Corfe Castle, Dorset, England. 1936.
- Rabbi SOLOMON B. FREEMAN, D.D., Hotel Ruskin, Pittsburgh, Pa. 1918.
- Prof. WILLIAM W. FREEMAN, Th. D., Commerce, Texas. 1937.
- Prof. MERTON FRENCH, Ph.D., Box 235, Elon College, N. C. 1937.
- Prof. ALEXANDER FREYMANN, Ph.D., Zverinskaya 40, Leningrad, Russia. 1928.
- Mr. CHARLES T. FRITZCH, 53 Graduate College, Princeton, N. J. 1937.
- Dr. ALLAN HARRISON FRAY, 192 Clermont Place, Garrett Park, Md. 1935.
- Mr. RICHARD NELSON FRAY, 1423 N. Gilbert St., Danville, Ill. 1939.
- Dr. RICHARD E. FULLER, 1642 Federal Ave., Seattle, Wash. 1937.
- Prof. KEMPER FULLERTON, Oberlin Graduate School of Theology, Oberlin, Ohio. 1916.
- Prof. PAUL HANLY FURFLEY, Ph.D., Catholic University of America, Washington, D. C. 1937.
- \*Prof. A. B. GAJENDRAGADKAR, Elphinstone College, Bombay, India. 1921.
- Dr. ESSON M. GALE, LL.D., 517 N. Van Buren St., Bay City, Mich. 1929.
- Mr. ALBERT GALLATIN, 7 East 67th St., New York, N. Y. 1937.
- Dr. SIDNEY D. GAMBLE, LL.D., 4730 Fieldston Road, New York, N. Y. 1937.
- Mr. CHARLES S. GARDNER, 148 Highland Ave., Newtonville, Mass. 1930.
- Miss GUSSIE E. GASKILL, Cornell University Library, Ithaca, N. Y. 1933.
- Miss M. JEAN GATES, Library of Congress, Washington, D. C. 1934.
- Mr. PAUL H. GERHARD, 1727 Cambridge St., Cambridge, Mass. 1938.
- Prof. F. W. GIBBS, Ph.D., Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1928.
- Prof. HENRY S. GELMAN, Ph.D., S.T.D., 66 Stockton St., Princeton, N. J. 1916.
- Dr. I. J. GELB, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1933.
- Mr. EUGENE A. GELLOT, 149-46 117th St., Aqueduct, L. I., N. Y. 1911.
- Prof. KATT BOYD GEORGE, Wellesley College, Wellesley, Mass. 1936.



- Miss ELIZABETH GERRANT, 2 Highland Ave., Madison, N. C. 1934.
- Dr. H. L. GINSBERG, 310 W. 99th St., New York, N. Y. 1937.
- Dr. HAROLD W. GLIDGEN, Member Inst. for Advanced Study, 142 Mercer St., Princeton, N. J. 1938.
- Rabbi NELSON GLUECK, Ph.D., 162 Glenmary Ave., Clifton, Cincinnati, Ohio. 1929.
- Dr. P. S. GOBITZ, Bethel College, Kans. 1937.
- Prof. ALBRECHT GOETZE, Ph.D., 306 Hall of Graduate Studies, Yale Station, New Haven, Conn. 1935.
- Prof. HEITY GOLDMAN, Ph.D., Inst. for Advanced Study, 20 Nassau St., Princeton, N. J. 1937.
- Rabbi SOLOMON GOLDMAN, c/o Anshe Emes Congregation, 3762 Pine Grove Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1929.
- Mr. HOWARD L. GOODHART, 2 East 55th St., New York, N. Y. 1938.
- Prof. L. CARRINGTON GOODRICH, Ph.D., Dept. of Chinese, Columbia University, New York, N. Y. 1929.
- Rev. Dr. FRED FIELD GOODSELL, 14 Beacon St., Boston, Mass. 1931.
- Dr. GODEFRET GOOSSENS, Musée Royal d'Art et d'Histoire, Parc du Cinquantenaire, Bruxelles, Belgium. 1937.
- Dr. CYRUS H. GORDON, Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, Md. 1928.
- Prof. H. H. GOWEN, 5005 2nd Ave., N. E., Seattle, Wash. 1936.
- Rev. DAVID C. GRAHAM, Ph.D., West China Union University, Chengtu, Szechuan Prov., China. 1931.
- Dean THOMAS W. GRAHAM (Oberlin Graduate School of Theology), Bosworth Hall, Oberlin, Ohio. 1937.
- Prof. WILLIAM CRESHTON GRAHAM, United College, Univ. of Manitoba, Manitoba, Canada. 1921.
- Prof. ELIHU GRANT, 111 W. North St., Stamford, Conn. 1907.
- Prof. FREDERICK C. GRANT, Union Theological Seminary, Broadway & 130th St., New York, N. Y. 1929.
- Mr. MONTIMER GRAVES, Assistant Secretary, American Council of Learned Societies, 907 Fifteenth St. N. W., Washington, D. C. 1929.
- Mr. ROGER S. GREENE, 548 Lincoln St., Worcester, Mass. 1926.
- Rev. E. E. GRICE, Mulberry, Ind. 1938.
- \*Dr. LUCIA C. G. GRIEVE, 50 Heck Ave., Ocean Grove, N. J. 1894.
- Prof. ROSS J. GRIFFITH, Butler University, Indianapolis, Ind. 1937.
- Rev. Prof. W. E. GRIFFITHS, 112 Crestmont Terrace, Collingswood, N. J. 1939.
- Mr. MICHAEL J. GRUNTHAMER, St. Mary's College, St. Mary's, Kans. 1929.
- Prof. Dr. LÉON GRY (Université libre d'Angers), 10 Rue La Fontaine, Angers, M-et-L., France. 1921.
- \*Dr. GEORGE C. O. HAAS (Inst. of Hyperphysical Research), 45-60 215th Place, Bayside, N. Y. 1903.
- Rabbi RALPH A. HABAS, Ph.D., N. Y. Ethical Society, 2 W. 64th St., New York, N. Y. 1935.
- Miss LOUISE W. HACKNEY, c/o National City Bank of N. Y., Gramercy Park Branch, 23d St. near Lexington Ave., New York, N. Y. 1932.

- Prof. E. ADELAIDE HAIN, Ph.D. (Hunter College), 340 Riverside Drive, New York, N. Y. 1934.
- Dr. ABRAHAM S. HALKIN, Ph.D., 949 West End Ave., New York, N. Y. 1927.
- Miss ARABELLA REPLEY HALL, Museum of Fine Arts, Boston, Mass. 1924.
- Miss HELEN BENEDICT HALL, 715 S. Forest Ave., Ann Arbor, Mich. 1935.
- Prof. ROBERT A. HALL, Jr., Litt.D., University of Puerto Rico, Rio Piedras, P. R. 1937.
- Prof. ROBERT B. HALL, Ph.D., 11 Angell Hall, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich. 1934.
- Rev. Prof. FRANK H. HALLOCK, Nashotah House, Nashotah, Wis. 1926.
- Dr. RICHARD T. HALLOCK, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1932.
- Prof. CLARENCE HERBERT HAMILTON, Ph.D., 290 Elm St., Oberlin, Ohio. 1926.
- Dr. E. S. CRAIGHILL HANDY, Ph.D., Fairfax, Va. 1924.
- \*Rev. EDWARD ROCHIE HARDY, Jr., Ph.D., General Theological Seminary, 175 Ninth Ave., New York, N. Y. 1924.
- Dr. ROBERT S. HARDY, Grangeville, Idaho. 1934.
- Prof. DOUGLAS G. HARING, 117 Euclid Terrace, Syracuse, N. Y. 1937.
- Pres. FRANKLIN STEWART HARRIS, Brigham Young University, Provo, Utah. 1929.
- Dr. ZEHLIG S. HARRIS, University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa. 1931.
- Rev. MAX H. HARRISON, Ph.D., United Theological College, Bangalore, S. India. 1927.
- Mr. HENRY H. HART, J.D., 210 Post St., San Francisco, Calif. 1926.
- Rev. LOUIS HARTMAN, C.Ss.R., Mount St. Alphonsus, Esopus, N. Y. 1937.
- Miss GEMMA HARTMANN, Ph.D., 47 West 69th St., New York, N. Y. 1938.
- Mr. JOHN D. HATCH, JR., 40 E. 40th St., New York, N. Y. 1933.
- Prof. WILLIAM H. P. HATCH, D.D., Th.D. (Episcopal Theol. School), 6 St. John's Road, Cambridge, Mass. 1930.
- Prof. RAYMOND S. HAUPERT, Ph.D. (Moravian Coll. and Theol. Seminary), 1310 Main St., Bethlehem, Pa. 1926.
- Prof. Charles A. HAWLEY, Ph.D., College of the Ozarks, Clarksville, Ark. 1937.
- Dr. A. EONTACK HAYDON, Faculty Exchange, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1937.
- Dr. WILLIAM C. HAYES, Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York, N. Y. 1936.
- Mrs. JOHN B. HAYWARD, 8 E. 96th St., New York, N. Y. 1938.
- Mr. WYNHAM HAYWARD, Lakemont Gardens, Route 1, Winter Park, Fla. 1926.
- Mr. N. M. HEERAMANECK, 724 Fifth Ave., New York, N. Y. 1931.
- Dr. ALEXANDER HEIDEL, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1938.
- Rev. HENRY HERAS, Indian Historical Research Institute, St. Xavier's College, Bombay, India. 1934.

- Dr. A. JAY HERTZ, D.D.S., 160 W. 82nd St., New York, N. Y. 1932.  
HIGH COMMISSIONER FOR INDIA, India House, Aldwych, London, W. C. 2, England. 1928.
- Prof. WILLIAM BANCROFT HILL, Vassar College, Poughkeepsie, N. Y. 1921.
- Dr. HERBERT W. HINES, 1112 S. Sixth St., Springfield, Ill. 1938.
- Prof. PHILIP K. HITS (Princeton University), 100 FitzRandolph Road, Princeton, N. J. 1915.
- Prof. LEWIS HOGGINS (Hartford Seminary Foundation), 92 Sherman St., Hartford, Conn. 1919.
- Dr. FORREST R. HOLDCAMPER, 1630 R St., N. W., Washington, D. C. 1937.
- Mr. HOWARD C. HOLLIS, Museum of Art, Cleveland, Ohio. 1936.
- Prof. CLARE HOPKINS, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich. 1931.
- Mrs. LYNN HAROLD HOUGH, Drew Forest, Madison, N. J. 1932.
- Prof. HARRY N. HOWARD, Ph.D., Dept. of History, Miami University, Oxford, Ohio. 1938.
- Rev. QUENTIN K. Y. HUANG, American Church Mission, Nanchang, Kiangsi, China. 1927.
- Mr. PAUL E. HUFFMAN, 1948 W. North Ave., Baltimore, Md. 1936.
- Mr. GEORGE R. HUGHES, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1932.
- Pres. EDWARD H. HUME, 464 Riverside Drive, New York, N. Y. 1909.
- Prof. ROBERT ERNEST HUME (Union Theol. Seminary), 606 West 122nd St., New York, N. Y. 1914.
- Dr. WILSON M. HUME, Y. M. C. A., Lahore, India. 1935.
- Dr. ARTHUR W. HUMMEL, Chinese Collection, Library of Congress, Washington, D. C. 1928.
- Dr. WILLIAM F. HUMMEL, 802 North Edgemont St., Los Angeles, Calif. 1932.
- \*Dr. ARCHER M. HUNTINGTON, 3 East 89th St., New York, N. Y. 1912.
- The Rt. Rev. D. T. HUNTINGTON, D.D., 281 Fourth Ave., New York, N. Y. 1933.
- Dr. H. PAGE HURD, 43 Hecker St., Newark, N. J. 1937.
- Prof. MARY INDA HUSSEY, Mt. Holyoke College, South Hadley, Mass. 1901.
- Prof. J. PHILIP HYATT, Ph.D., Wellesley College, Wellesley, Mass. 1926.
- \*Mr. JAMES HAZEN HYDE, 67 Boulevard Lannes, Paris, France. 1909.
- \*Prof. HENRY HYVERNAT (Catholic Univ. of America), 3405 Twelfth St., N. E. (Brookland), Washington, D. C. 1899.
- Prof. YAMATO ICHIHASHI, Ph.D., 523 Salvatierra, Stanford University, Calif. 1937.
- Mr. DANIEL H. H. INGALLS, 19 Longfellow Road, Cambridge, Mass. 1939.
- Prof. W. A. IRWIN, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1927.
- Dr. WITOLD JABLONSKI, Warszawa, Kazimierzowska 85, Poland. 1937.
- \*Mrs. A. V. WILLIAMS JACKSON, 600 West 116th St., New York, N. Y. 1912.
- Mr. MAURICE JACOBS, 225 S. 15th St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1937.
- Miss VIVIAN JACOBS, 295 Tremont Ave., Orange, N. J. 1938.

- Dr. THORILD JACOBSEN, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1939.
- Dr. HAROLD W. JACOBSON, 5243 N. Christiana Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1935.
- Mr. HORACE H. P. JAYNE (Univ. of Pennsylvania Museum), Memorial Hall, Fairmount Park, Philadelphia, Pa. 1930.
- Rev. Prof. ARTHUR JEWKEY, Union Theological Seminary, Broadway at 120th St., New York, N. Y. 1923.
- Dr. DOROTHY CROSS JENSEN, Hunter College, Box 121, 2 Park Ave., New York, N. Y. 1935.
- \*Prof. JAMES RICHARD JEWETT, Harvard University, Cambridge, Mass. 1887.
- \*Dr. HELEN M. JOHNSON, Osceola, Missouri. 1921.
- Dr. JOTHAM JOHNSON, University of Pittsburgh, Pittsburgh, Pa. 1935.
- Dr. OREN S. JOHNSON, 105 Vernon Court, Crawfordsville, Ind. 1930.
- Mrs. JEANNETTE HENKIL JOHNSON, Nashotah House, Nashotah, Wis. 1928.
- Rev. SHERMAN E. JOHNSON, Ph.D., Nashotah House, Nashotah, Wis. (1935). 1938.
- Dr. WILLIAM C. JOHNSTONE, JR., George Washington University, Washington, D. C. 1937.
- Prof. S. L. JOSHI, Carleton College, Northfield, Minn. 1927.
- Mr. J. STILLSON JUDAH, JR., 1631 Walnut St., Berkeley, Calif. 1937.
- Dr. EDWARD J. JUMI, 60 Murray Place, Princeton, N. J. 1936.
- Dr. ALBERT E. KANE, LL.B., 630 Fifth Ave., New York, N. Y. 1934.
- KESAV M. F. KANGA, F.C.I., F.R.E.S.N., Cusroo Bang, D-10, Colaba Causeway, Fort Bombay, India. 1933.
- Rev. Dr. CLARENCE E. KESNER, Lyon Station, Pa. 1913.
- Dr. CHARLES PENROSE KEITH, Litt.D., 3219 Germantown Ave., Philadelphia, Pa. 1929.
- Mr. CARL T. KELLER, 80 Federal St., Boston, Mass. 1928.
- Mr. ROBERT J. KELLOGG, 415 South Cedar St., Ottawa, Kans. 1926.
- Prof. FREDERICK T. KELLY (Univ. of Wisconsin), 2019 Monroe St., Madison, Wis. 1917.
- Mr. EASTON T. KELSEY, Department of State, Washington, D. C. 1930.
- Pres. JAMES A. KELSO, Western Theological Seminary, 731 Ridge Ave., Pittsburgh, Pa. 1915.
- Prof. JAMES L. KELSO, D.D. (Pittsburgh-Kenia Theol. Seminary), 616 W. North Ave., Pittsburgh, Pa. 1921.
- Rev. JOHN M. KELSO, Methodist Episcopal Church, Marshallton, Del. 1938.
- \*Prof. ELIZA H. KENNEDY, Wellesley College, Wellesley, Mass. 1890.
- Mr. GEORGE A. KENNEDY, 318 Hall of Graduate Studies, Yale University, New Haven, Conn. 1935.
- \*Prof. ROLAND G. KENT, Ph.D., University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa. 1910.
- Mr. J. A. KERNS, New York University, Washington Square, New York, N. Y. 1936.
- Mr. H. KERYORIAN, 24 East 81st St., New York, N. Y. 1927.
- Mr. EUGENE KLEIN, 200 S. 13th St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1920.

- Rev. WALTER C. KLEIN, Th.D., 1206 Green St., Norristown, Pa. 1932.
- Prof. CARL S. KNOPP (Univ. of Southern California), Box 33, 3551 University Ave., Los Angeles, Calif. 1929.
- Rev. Dr. RAYMOND C. KNOX, Columbia University, New York, N. Y. 1928.
- Mr. E. A. KRACKER, JR., 10 Quincy St., Cambridge, Mass. 1937.
- Prof. CARL H. KRAELING (Yale Univ.), 67 Ridgewood Ave., New Haven, Conn. 1925.
- Prof. EMIL G. H. KRAELING (Union Theol. Seminary), 531 East 18th St., Brooklyn, N. Y. 1920.
- Prof. CHARLES F. KRAFT, Ph.D., McKendree College, Lebanon, Ill. 1934.
- Rabbi MARCUS KRAMER, LL.B., M.H.L., 343 High St., Pottstown, Pa. 1937.
- Dr. S. N. KRAMER, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1935.
- Mr. BERTRAM S. KRAUS, 1707 Preyer Road, Cleveland Heights, Cleveland, Ohio. 1937.
- Rev. Prof. T. W. KRETSCHMANN, Ph.D., Selinsgrove, Pa. 1937.
- Mr. HABOTTUN KURDIAN, 1308 E. Douglas Ave., Wichita, Kans. 1934.
- Mr. H. M. G. LAHATT-SIMON, Columbia University, New York, N. Y. 1938.
- Dr. ERNEST R. LACHEMAN, 131 Grove St., Torrington, Conn. 1937.
- Mr. THOMAS E. LA FARGUE, 97 Howe St., New Haven, Conn. 1937.
- Mrs. SILVA LAKE, 522 Oakley Road, Haverford, Pa. 1937.
- Prof. JOHN L. LAMONTE, Ph.D., 2712 Digby Ave., Cincinnati, Ohio. 1939.
- Mr. KENNETH PERRY LONDON, Trang, Siam. 1932.
- \*Prof. CHARLES ROCKWELL LANMAN (Harvard Univ.), 9 Farrar St., Cambridge, Mass. 1876.
- Mr. AMBROSE LANSING, Associate Curator, Egyptian Dept., Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York, N. Y. 1921.
- Mr. EMMANUEL S. LANSSEN, Room 2722, Navy Dept., Washington, D. C. 1935.
- Prof. KENNETH S. LATOURETTE, Yale Divinity School, 409 Prospect St., New Haven, Conn. 1917.
- Dr. BIMALA C. LAW, Ph.D., 43 Kailas Bose St., Calcutta, India. 1927.
- Mr. SIMON LAZARUS, c/o Prof. J. Morgenstern, Hebrew Union College, Cincinnati, Ohio. 1921.
- Prof. SHAO CHANG LEE, University of Hawaii, Honolulu, Hawaii. 1928.
- Mr. WILLIAM ROCKWELL LEETE, 383 Winthrop Ave., New Haven, Conn. 1937.
- Dr. SAMUEL H. LESSER, American Board Mission, Fen Yang Hsien, Shansi, China, 1937.
- Dr. KURT F. LEIBERICH, Reusselner Polytechnic Institute, Troy, N. Y. 1928.
- Dr. FREDERICK LENT, D.D., LL.D., 64 Munn Ave., East Orange, N. J. 1935.
- Prof. FERDINAND D. LESSING, Ph.D., 417 University Library, Berkeley, Calif. 1937.
- Miss IRVINE LEWISOHN, 133 W. 11th St., New York, N. Y. 1936.
- Prof. JULIUS LEWY, 420 Kasota St., Cincinnati, Ohio. 1935.
- Prof. FANG-KUEI LI, Ph.D., Dept. of Oriental Studies, Yale University, New Haven, Conn. 1937.

- Dr. ILSE LICHTENSTÄTER, D.Phil. (Oxon.), 2153 78th St., Brooklyn, N. Y. 1938.
- Miss ROA W. LINQUIST, Hotel Moody, Claremont, N. H. 1936.
- Dr. PAUL A. LINCHARD, Dept. Political Science, Duke University, Durham, N. C. 1937.
- Prof. ERNO LITTMAN, Ph.D., D.D. (Univ. of Tübingen), 50 Waldhäuserstr., Tübingen, Germany. 1927 (1902).
- Capt. MORRIS U. LIVELY, 1035 Bewick St., Fort Worth, Texas. 1931.
- Mrs. C. F. LO (*sic* EYNSHAW), Hua Chung University, Kwefin, Kwangsi Province, China. 1937.
- Rev. EDWIN CARLEY LORENTINE, D.D., Room 5413, 49 West 49th St., New York, N. Y. 1937.
- Mr. JOHN ELLERSON LODGE, Freer Gallery of Art, Smithsonian Institution, Washington, D. C. 1922.
- Dr. FERN LONG, 1939 East 10th St., Cleveland, Ohio. 1938.
- Prof. LINDSAY B. LONGACHE, 2273 S. Fillmore St., Denver, Colo. 1937.
- Dr. ALBERT P. LUDWIG, 1939 Hecyeman St., Berkeley St., Berkeley, Calif. 1937.
- Prof. HENRY LUDWIG FR. LUTZ, Ph.D., D.D. (Univ. of California), 1147 Spruce St., Berkeley, Calif. 1916.
- Prof. ALBERT HOWE LYSTER, Ph.D. (Univ. of Illinois), 808 S. Lincoln Ave., Urbana, Ill. 1917 (1909).
- Dr. D. WILLIAM LYON, D.D., 220 W. 12th St., Claremont, Calif. 1937.
- Prof. WILLIAM H. MCCLELLAN, S.J., Woodstock College, Woodstock, Md. 1922.
- Mr. HARDIN T. MCCLELLAND (School of Chinese Studies), 6202 Carleton Ave., Seattle, Wash. 1937.
- Prof. CHESTER CHARLTON MCCOWN, Ph.D., Pacific School of Religion, Berkeley, Calif. 1920.
- Mr. DONALD E. MCCOWN, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1934.
- Mr. WILLIAM S. MCCULLOUGH, University College, University of Toronto, Toronto, Ont., Canada. 1935.
- \*Prof. DUNCAN B. MACDONALD, Hartford Theological Seminary, Hartford, Conn. 1903.
- Prof. W. M. MCGOVERN, Ph.D., Northwestern University, Evanston, Ill. 1928.
- Rev. WALLACE H. McLAUGHLIN, Concordia Seminary, Hankow, China. 1936.
- Dr. HUGH BAILIE MACLEAN, Th.D., Strathyre, 10 Coniston Springs Ave., Edinburgh, Scotland. 1937.
- Mr. J. ARTHUR MACLEAN, 2310 Glenwood Ave., Toledo, Ohio. 1922.
- Prof. HARLEY F. MACNAIR, Ph.D., Litt.D., University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1929.
- Rev. ALLAN A. MACRAE, 1205 Delaware Ave., Wilmington, Del. 1931.
- Dr. DAVID I. MACINT, M.D., 3420 Auchentoroly Terrace, Baltimore, Md. 1937.

- Mrs. RUTH S. (Mrs. W. M.) MAUCKENBER, B.D., 3753 Drexel Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1938.
- \*Prof. HERBERT W. MAGOUN, 89 Hillcrest Road, Belmont, Mass. 1887.
- Prof. WALTER ARTHUR MAIER, Ph.D., Litt.D. (Lutheran Theol. Seminary), 801 DeMun Ave., St. Louis, Mo. 1917.
- Mr. WALTER H. MAILLORY, Executive Director, Council on Foreign Relations, 45 East 65th St., New York, N. Y. 1937.
- Dr. DAVID G. MANDLBAUM, 2007 Gunnison St., Chicago, Ill. 1938.
- \*Rev. Prof. JAMES CAMPBELL MANAY, Forman College, Lahore, India. 1921.
- Prof. A. V. MARAKUEFF, 23 Kikaiskaya St., Vladivostok, USSR. 1934.
- Prof. RALPH MARCUS, Ph.D., 533 W. 112th St., New York, N. Y. 1920.
- Rabbi ELLAS MARGOLIS, Ph.D., 16 Glen Ave., Mount Vernon, N. Y. 1924.
- Dr. JAMES P. MARSH, M.D., 12 Whitman Court, Troy, N. Y. 1919.
- Mr. THOMAS F. MARSTON, Etterby Farm, Cornwall, Conn. 1931.
- Mr. RICHARD A. MARTIN, Field Museum, Chicago, Ill. 1936.
- Prof. ALEXANDER MARY, Jewish Theological Seminary, Broadway and 122nd St., New York, N. Y. 1920.
- Rev. WILLIAM ARNOT MATTHEW, D.D., Presbyterian Mission, Pootung, Hopei, China. 1938.
- Prof. CHARLES D. MATTHEWS, Ph.D., Birmingham-Southern College, Birmingham, Ala. 1934 (1928).
- Prof. ISAAC G. MATTHEWS, Crozer Theological Seminary, Chester, Pa. 1921 (1900).
- Dr. LEWIS ADAMS MAVERICK, Univ. of California at Los Angeles, 405 Hilgard Ave., Los Angeles, Calif. 1937.
- Prof. HERBERT GORDON MAY, Ph.D., Graduate School of Theology, Oberlin, Ohio. 1935.
- Rabbi HARRY H. MAYER, 3512 Kenwood Ave., Kansas City, Mo. 1921.
- Prof. L. A. MAYER, Ph.D., Hebrew University, P. O. Box 613, Jerusalem, Palestine. 1935.
- Prof. THEOPHILE J. MEER, Ph.D., F.R.S.A., University of Toronto, Toronto, Ont., Canada. 1917.
- Mrs. W. S. MEER, 2424 N. Marshall St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1937.
- Dr. L. MENDELSON, Columbia University Library, Box 1, New York, N. Y. 1935.
- Rev. JAMES M. MENZIES, Cheefoo University, Tsinan, Shantung, China. 1930.
- Prof. SAMUEL A. B. MERCER, Grafton, Mass. 1912.
- Mr. CARL A. MERKY, Denver Art Museum, 479 City and County Bldg., Denver, Colo. 1937.
- Mrs. BESSIE C. MERRILL, 4 Bryant St., Cambridge, Mass. 1932.
- Mrs. EUGENE MEYER, 1624 Crescent Place, N. W., Washington, D. C. 1916.
- Miss LESLIE MICHEL, 1521 Spruce St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1936.
- Mr. JOSEPH LUDWIG MIHELIC, 5800 Maryland Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1936.
- Dr. GEORGE C. MILES, American Numismatic Society, 156th St. and Broadway, New York, N. Y. 1938.



- Mr. GANTY W. MILLER, JR., 42 Horatio St., New York, N. Y. 1938.  
 Mr. MERTON L. MILLER, 440 Toyopa Drive, Pacific Palisades, Calif. 1921.  
 Mrs. PHILIP MILLER (néé LOWDEN), 5801 Dorchester Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1931.  
 Mr. YUTAKA MINAKUCHI, Peacham, Vt. 1937.  
 Prof. JAMES A. MONTGOMERY, Ph.D., S.T.D. (Univ. of Pennsylvania), 6806 Greene St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1903.  
 Dr. ROBERT N. MONTGOMERY, D.D., Muskingum College, New Concord, Ohio. 1936.  
 Prof. CHARLES A. MOORE, Ph.D., University of Hawaii, Honolulu, Hawaii. 1937.  
 Mrs. WILLIAM H. MOORE, 4 E. 54th St., New York, N. Y. 1933.  
 Prof. WILLIAM J. MOORE, 5775 North Tacoma Ave., Indianapolis, Ind. 1938.  
 Dr. HUGH ANDERSON MORAN, Barnes Hall, Cornell University, Ithaca, N. Y. 1937.  
 Pres. JULIAN MORGENSTERN (Hebrew Union College), 8 Barton Woods Lane, Cincinnati, Ohio. 1915.  
 Mr. EDGAR M. MORSEMAN, JR., 518 S. 38th St., Omaha, Nebr. 1937.  
 Rev. RALPH MORTENSEN, Ph.D., Lutheran Board of Publication, 23 Liang Yi St., Hankow, China. 1928.  
 Prof. JAMES MUELENBURG, Ph.D., Pacific School of Religion, 1788 Scenic Ave., Berkeley, Calif. 1938.  
 Prof. VALENTIN K. MÜLLER, Ph.D., Bryn Mawr College, Bryn Mawr, Pa. 1931.  
 Mr. JOHN KNOX MURBRAY, JR., 350 Parkway Drive, Pittsburgh 16, Pa. 1937.  
 Prof. EDWARD DELOS MYERS, Ph.D., Trinity College, Hartford, Conn. 1938.  
 Prof. TOYOZO W. NAKANE, Ph.D., Butler University, Indianapolis, Ind. 1926.  
 Dr. MENDEL K. NAKOSTEEN, University of Denver, Denver, Colo. 1936.  
 Mr. EDWARD I. NATHAN, American Consulate, Roma y Bruselas, Monterrey, Mexico. 1928.  
 Prof. HAMMIL H. NELSON (Univ. of Chicago), Chicago House, Luxor, Egypt. 1928.  
 Mr. EDWARD THEODORE NEWELL, American Numismatic Society, 1501th St. and Broadway, New York, N. Y. 1914.  
 Prof. ABRAHAM A. NEWMAN, D.H.L., 2319 N. Park Ave., Philadelphia, Pa. 1937.  
 Dr. WILLIAM L. NEWTON, S.S.D., 1227 Ansel Road, Cleveland, Ohio. 1937.  
 Mr. HORACE J. NICKELS, 5315 Drexel Ave. S., Chicago, Ill. 1932.  
 Dr. CHARLES F. NIMS, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1931.  
 Mr. HALVOR LAMAR NORRIS, c/o Dept. of State, Washington, D. C. 1935.  
 Prof. JULIAN J. OBERMANN, Ph.D., 322 Hall of Graduate Studies, Yale University, New Haven, Conn. 1933.  
 \*Dr. CHARLES J. OGDEN, 435 Riverside Drive, New York, N. Y. 1906.

- Prof. ALBERT TEN EYCK OLMSTEAD, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1909.
- Miss CLYDE M. OLMSTEAD, Bryn Mawr College, Bryn Mawr, Pa. 1936.
- Rev. RAYMOND M. O'PRAY, S.J., Woodstock College, Woodstock, Md. 1936.
- Prof. JOHN E. ORCHARD, Ph.D., School of Business, Columbia University, New York, N. Y. 1936.
- Dr. HARRY M. OBLINSKY, Ph.D., c/o 1261 Eutaw Place, Baltimore, Md. 1934.
- Miss SUSAN W. ORVIS, Theological Quadrangle, Oberlin, Ohio. 1936.
- Prof. CHARLES A. OWEN, 330 N. 5th St., Monmouth, Ill. 1921.
- Mr. ROBERT TRENT PAINE, JR., 16 Ash St., Cambridge, Mass. 1935.
- Dr. RICHARD A. PARKER, 7308 S. Park Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1937.
- Dr. ELEANOR PARRY, M.D., Peabody House, 357 Charles St., Boston, Mass. 1931.
- Mr. ROBERT LEEY PATTERSON, 1703 Oliver Bldg., Pittsburgh, Pa. 1929.
- Pres. CHARLES T. PAUL, 108 Kenyon St., Hartford, Conn. 1929.
- Mr. WALLACE CRAWFORD PAUL, 46 Grove Place, East Orange, N. J. 1937.
- Mr. ANTHONY F. PAURA, 392 W. 46th St., New York, N. Y. 1929.
- Prof. CYRUS H. PEAKE, Ph.D., Dept. of Chinese, Columbia University, New York, N. Y. 1930.
- Rabbi MAURICE B. PEKARSKY, Northwestern University, Evanston, Ill. 1937.
- Mr. FREDLAND F. PENNEY, c/o Rabenold, Scribner, and Miller, 29 Exchange Place, New York, N. Y. 1931.
- Miss ANN LOUISE PERKINS, 195 Akenside Road, Riverside, Ill. 1936.
- Mr. P. D. PERKINS, Sanka Kansha, Kyoto, Japan. 1934.
- Dr. ARNOLD PERKINS, 2409 East 55th St., Cleveland, Ohio. 1929.
- Rev. THEODORE C. PETERSEN, 415 W. 59th St., New York, N. Y. 1924.
- Prof. WALTER PETERSEN, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1909.
- Pres. WILLIAM B. PETTUS, D.Ped., College of Chinese Studies, Peiping, China. 1937.
- Prof. ROBERT HENRY PFEIFFER (Harvard Univ.), 57 Francis Ave., Cambridge, Mass. 1929.
- Prof. DRYDEN L. PHELPS, Union University, Chengtu, Szechuan Prov., W. China. 1929.
- Mr. SOUTHWICK PHELPS, 311 E. 72nd St., New York, N. Y. 1937.
- \*Rev. Prof. DAVID PHILIPSON, 276 McGregor Ave., Cincinnati, Ohio. 1889.
- Hon. WILLIAM PHILLIPS, North Beverly, Mass. 1917.
- Rev. Dr. Z. B. T. PHILLIPS, Church of the Epiphany, Washington, D. C. 1923.
- Prof. MALCOLM PITT, 85 Sherman St., Hartford, Conn. 1937.
- \*Mr. JAMES MARSHALL PLUMER, Institute of Fine Arts, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich. 1937.
- Prof. ARNO POCHTEL, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1931.
- Dr. HORACE I. FOLEMAN, Library of Congress, Washington, D. C. 1931.
- Mr. JOHN A. POPE, 1818 Ford Bldg., Detroit, Mich. 1936.

- Prof. WILLIAM POPPER (Univ. of California), 529 The Alameda, Berkeley, Calif. 1897.
- Prof. LUCHU C. PORTER, L.H.D., D.D., Yenching University, Peking, China. 1923.
- Pres. F. L. HAWES POTT, D.D., St. John's University, Shanghai, China. 1937.
- Dr. ERNEST BATSON PRICE, International House, 1414 E. 59th St., Chicago, Ill. 1937.
- \*Prof. ISA M. PRICE, Ph.D., LL.D., University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1887.
- Mr. ALAN PRIEST, Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York, N. Y. 1934.
- \*Hon. JOHN DYNLEY PRINCE, Columbia University, New York, N. Y. 1888.
- Prof. EARL H. PRITCHARD, D.Phil. (Oxon.), c/o Dept. of Chinese, Columbia University, New York, N. Y. 1937.
- Rev. JAMES B. PRITCHARD, D.D., 22 West Chelton Road, Parkside, Chester, Pa. 1938.
- Dr. J. PRUSSEK, Oriental Institute, Prague III, 347, Czechoslovakia. 1937.
- Rev. Dr. A. H. PRUSSEK, c/o Methodist Mission, Medan, Sumatra. 1920.
- Dr. PIERRE M. PURVES, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1935.
- Prof. CHARLES LYNN PYATT, College of the Bible, Lexington, Ky. 1921 (1917).
- Dr. ISAAC RABINOWITZ, 220 South Thayer St., Ann Arbor, Mich. 1937.
- Prof. HERMANN RANKE, Ph.D., University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa. 1938.
- Mr. CARL R. RASWAN, 1831 La Solana Drive, Altadena, Calif. 1937.
- Prof. JOHN H. RAYEN (New Brunswick Theol. Seminary), Bishop Place, New Brunswick, N. J. 1920.
- Prof. HARRY B. REID (Northwestern Lutheran Theol. Seminary), 960 19th Ave., N. E., Minneapolis, Minn. 1921.
- Prof. NATHANIEL JULIUS REICH, Ph.D., P. O. Box 337, Philadelphia, Pa. 1923.
- Dr. JOHN GILBERT REID, Washington Hotel, Pullman, Wash. 1938.
- Mr. RALPH W. E. REID, Office of the President, Northwestern University, Evanston, Ill. 1937.
- Prof. JOSEPH REIDER, Ph.D., Dropsie College, Philadelphia, Pa. 1913.
- Prof. AUGUST KARL REISCHAUER, Tokyo Joshi Daigaku, Inojimachi, Tokyo-fu, Japan. 1920.
- Mr. EDWIN O. REISCHAUER, 17 Boylston Hall, Cambridge, Mass. 1938.
- Mrs. JEAN REISCHAUER, 801 W. 115th St., New York, N. Y. 1938.
- Mrs. DIANA J. REISMAN, Ph.D., 3423 Powelton Ave., Philadelphia, Pa. 1935.
- Dr. KARL REUNING, 47 Amherst Ave., Swarthmore, Pa. 1937.
- Prof. V. A. RIABANOVSKY, 6 Falkland Villas, Bruce Road, British Concession, Tientsin, N. China. 1938.
- Rev. HILARY G. RICHARDSON, 147 North Broadway, Yonkers, N. Y. 1926.

- Prof. HORACE ABRAM RIGG, JR., Ph.D., Western Reserve University, Cleveland, Ohio. 1937.
- Prof. CORWIN C. ROACH, Gambier, Ohio. 1935.
- Mr. LAURANCE P. ROBERTS, 2 Beekman Place, New York, N. Y. 1936.
- Prof. EDWARD ROBERTSON, The University, Manchester, England. 1921.
- Prof. DAVID M. ROBINSON, Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, Md. 1921.
- \*Prof. GEORGE LIVINGSTON ROBINSON (Presbyterian Theol. Seminary), 2312 N. Halsted St., Chicago, Ill. 1892.
- Rev. Dr. THOMAS H. ROBINSON, University College, Cardiff, Wales. 1922.
- Mr. GEORGE N. ROEBICH, Urusvati Himalayan Research Institute, Naggar, Kulu, Punjab, India. 1922.
- Mr. HARVEY V. ROEHM, 4006 Cathedral Ave., N. W., Washington, D. C. 1935.
- Prof. WILLIAM ROSENBAU, Esplanade Apartments, Lake Drive, Baltimore, Md. 1897.
- Mr. LESSING J. ROSENWALD, c/o Sears, Roebuck and Co., Philadelphia, Pa. 1924.
- Dr. THUDS WEISS ROSMARIN, 609 W. 114th St., New York, N. Y. 1933.
- Prof. MICHAEL L. ROSTOVITZ (Yale Univ.), 1916 Yale Station, New Haven, Conn. 1926.
- Rev. JOHN P. ROWAN, D.D., St. Charles' Seminary, Overbrook, Philadelphia, Pa. 1938.
- Mr. DAVID NELSON ROWE, 17 Dunster St., Cambridge, Mass. 1936.
- Dr. BENJAMIN ROWLAND, JR., 123 Lowell House, Cambridge, Mass. 1937.
- Prof. GEORGE ROWLEY, McCormick Hall, Princeton University, Princeton, N. J. 1926.
- Mrs. GEORGE ROWLEY, c/o Prof. George Rowley, Princeton University, Princeton, N. J. 1931.
- Rev. Prof. H. H. ROWLEY, D.D., Dol Menai, Bangor, North Wales. 1935.
- \*Miss ADELAIDE RUDOLPH, c/o White Collection, Public Library, Cleveland, Ohio. 1894.
- Mr. RICHARD C. RUDOLPH, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1937.
- Dr. OTTO B. RUFF, LL.D., 660 Colman Bldg., Seattle, Wash. 1931.
- Prof. ELLIOTT RUSSELL, Duke University, Durham, N. C. 1916.
- Mr. PETER RUTHVEN, 815 S. University Ave., Ann Arbor, Mich. 1933.
- Mr. A. SACHS, 102 Alapith St., Baltimore, Md. 1936.
- Mr. FUAD SAFAR, c/o Director General of Education and Instruction, Ministry of Education, Bagdad, Iraq. 1936.
- Mr. ROBERT L. SAGE, 247 Lothrop St., Pittsburgh, Pa. 1934.
- Mr. SHUNZO SAKAMAKI, Box 951, Honolulu, Hawaii. 1937.
- Dr. SHIG SAKANISHI, Library of Congress, Washington, D. C. 1933.
- Dr. ALFRED SALMONY, Fine Arts Graduate Center, New York University, 981 Madison Ave., New York, N. Y. 1934.
- Prof. HENRY A. SANDERS, Ph.D., University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich. 1924.

- MR. HANS STEFAN SANTESSON, Secretary, India Political Council, 333 E. 11th St., New York, N. Y. 1936.
- Prof. EDWARD SAPIR, Ph.D., 170 Armory St., Hamden, Conn. 1933.
- MR. CLYDE B. SARGENT, 3756 McKinley St., Chevy Chase, Washington, D. C. 1938.
- Dr. A. O. SARKISIAN, 546 Palisade Ave., West New York, N. J. 1938.
- Dr. GEORGE SARTON, S.D., LL.D., LL.D., Library 185, Cambridge, Mass. 1934.
- Prof. LAKSHMAN SARUP, D.Phil. (Oxon.), University of the Punjab, Lahore, India. 1937.
- Dr. ALFRED VON ROHR SAUER, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1937.
- MR. LAURENCE L. SCAIFE, 1 West 53rd St., New York, N. Y. 1936.
- Dr. ISRAEL SCHAPIRO, Library of Congress, Washington, D. C. 1914.
- Prof. A. ARTHUR SCHILLER, Columbia University, New York, N. Y. 1927.
- Dr. ERICH F. SCHMIDT, American Legation, Teheran, Persia. 1930.
- \*Prof. EMERITUS NATHANIEL SCHMIDT, D.H.L., Cornell University, Ithaca, N. Y. 1894.
- Prof. HERBERT W. SCHNEIDER, Ph.D., Philosophy Hall, Columbia University, New York, N. Y. 1936.
- MR. HENRY K. SCHUCH, 10th Floor, Union Guardian Bldg., Detroit, Mich. 1934.
- MR. ERIC SCHROEDER, 14 Ash St., Cambridge, Mass. 1937.
- Rev. Dr. SAMUEL SCHULMAN, 1 East 65th St., New York, N. Y. 1928.
- MR. BENJAMIN SCHWARTZ, Oriental Division, New York Public Library, New York, N. Y. 1937.
- MR. MAURICE D. SCHWARTZ, P. O. Box 278, Seattle, Wash. 1936.
- Prof. GILBERT CAMPBELL SCODGIN, 11 Story St., Cambridge, Mass. 1906.
- \*Mrs. SAMUEL BRYAN SCOTT (*née MORRIS*), 1 Norman Lane, Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia, Pa. 1903.
- MR. KEITH C. SIEZLE, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1926.
- Rev. Dr. WILLIAM G. SEIPLE, 3 Ichihaya Dainanchi, Ushigome Ku, Tokyo, Japan. 1902.
- Prof. O. R. SELLERS (Presbyterian Theol. Seminary), 836 Chalmers Place, Chicago, Ill. 1917.
- Prof. W. T. SEMPLER (Univ. of Cincinnati), 315 Pike St., Cincinnati, Ohio. 1928.
- Rev. E. W. SKRAPIW, Holy Name College, Washington, D. C. 1935.
- Prof. SRI RAM SHARMA, Dayanand Anglo-Vedic College, Lahore, India. 1926.
- Dr. ANNIE LYON SHARMAN, Pebble Beach, Calif. 1937.
- MR. G. HOWLAND SHAW, Department of State, Washington, D. C. 1921.
- \*Prof. T. LESLIE SHEAR, Princeton University, Princeton, N. J. 1923.
- MR. EPHRAIM C. SHEDD, 6642 Dorchester Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1936.
- Prof. CHARLES N. SHEPARD (General Theol. Seminary), 8 Chelsea Square, New York, N. Y. 1907.

- Miss LOUISE A. SHERN, 1320 Olivia Ave., Ann Arbor, Mich. 1936.
- Dr. JOHN KNIGHT SHRYOCK, 4509 Regent St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1922.
- Mr. LAURENCE C. S. SICKMAN, Curator of Oriental Art, William Hookhill Nelson Gallery of Art, Kansas City, Mo. 1937.
- Mr. ARTHUR ROBERT SIEMENS, 135 S. Church St., Bowling Green, Ohio. 1937.
- Rabbi ABRA HILLEL SILVER, D.D., The Temple, East 165th St. at Ansel Road, Cleveland, Ohio. 1929.
- Rev. CARROLL E. SIMON, Seshury-Western Theological Seminary, Evanston, Ill. 1935.
- Dr. MUHAMMED A. SIMSAR, D.C.S., 2242 North 17th St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1934.
- Mr. GREGG M. SINCLAIR, Oriental Institute, University of Hawaii, Honolulu, Hawaii, 1936.
- Prof. SOLOMON L. SKORS, Ph.D., Dropsie College, Broad and York Sts., Philadelphia, Pa. 1926.
- Miss WINIFRED SKEATON, 1941 Geddes Ave., Ann Arbor, Mich. 1931.
- Mr. HENRY LEE SMITH, 4313 St. Paul St., Baltimore, Md. 1937.
- Prof. LOUISE PETERBONZ SMITH, Ph.D., Wellesley College, Wellesley, Mass. 1918.
- Mr. MYRON BEMENT SMITH, 59 Vanderbilt Ave., New York, N. Y. 1939.
- Rabbi ELIAS L. SOLOMON, D.H.L., 302 W. 87th St., New York, N. Y. 1921.
- Mr. F. E. SOMMER, c/o Cleveland Public Library, Cleveland, Ohio. 1937.
- Prof. E. A. SPENNER, Ph.D., University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa. 1925.
- Prof. ALEXANDER SPERNER, Ph.D., Jewish Theological Seminary of America, Broadway at 122d St., New York, N. Y. 1935.
- Prof. SHALOM SPIEGEL, Ph.D., Jewish Institute of Religion, 40 W. 68th St., New York, N. Y. 1936.
- Miss HORTENSE SPOERLE, 464 Coleridge Ave., Palo Alto, Calif. 1937.
- Rev. H. HENRY STOKES, Ph.D., 21 E. 14th St., New York, N. Y. 1929 (1899).
- Prof. MARTIN SPRINGLING, Ph.D., Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1929 (1912).
- Mr. JOHN W. STANTON, History Department, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich. 1934.
- Mrs. FRANCES STANWOOD (*née* HUMPHREY), 8328 S. Morgan St., Chicago, Ill. 1932.
- Dr. W. E. STAPLES, Victoria University, Toronto, Ont., Canada. 1927.
- Mr. FRANCIS E. STEELE, 8812 St. Martin's Lane, Chestnut Hill, Philadelphia, Pa. 1938.
- Miss ELIZABETH STEFANSKI, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1932.
- Miss DOROTHY STEINLE, 226½ Delancy St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1938.
- Prof. G. NYE STEIGER, 9 Washington Ave., Cambridge, Mass. 1939.

- Rev. JOHN E. STEINMUELLER, D.D., S.S.L., Seminary of the Immaculate Conception, Huntington, L. I., N. Y. 1937.
- Mr. CHARLES C. STELLE, 203A Holden Green, Cambridge, Mass. 1938.
- Prof. FERRIS J. STEPHENS, Babylonian Collection, Yale University, New Haven, Conn. 1925.
- Mrs. W. W. STIFLER, Ph.D., 121 S. Pleasant St., Amherst, Mass. 1937.
- Mr. J. FRANK STIMSON (Bernice P. Bishop Museum), Papeete, Tahiti, French Oceania. 1928.
- Prof. WILLIAM F. STINESPRING, Ph.D., Duke University, Durham, N. C. 1937.
- Rev. Dr. ANSON PHELPS STOKES, 2408 Massachusetts Ave., N. W., Washington, D. C. 1900.
- \*Prof. E. H. STUNTEVANT, Yale Graduate School, York St. and Tower Parkway, New Haven, Conn. 1924.
- Dr. RUFUS ORLANDO SUTER, JR., 304 E. Capitol St., Washington, D. C. 1937.
- Prof. JOSEPH WARD SWAIN, Ph.D., 309 Lincoln Hall, Urbana, Ill. 1937.
- Dr. NANCY LEE SWANN, Curator, Gest Oriental Library, Institute for Advanced Study, Princeton, N. J. 1932.
- Prof. MARY HAMILTON SWINDLER, Bryn Mawr College, Bryn Mawr, Pa. 1929.
- Prof. EARL SWISHER, University of Colorado, Boulder, Colo. 1935.
- Dr. VICTOR H. SWOSOD, Th.D., Gauhati, Assam, India. 1935.
- Mr. HENRY S. TATSUMI, Oriental Studies Dept., University of Washington, Seattle, Wash. 1937.
- Rev. GORDON R. TAYLOR, Carleton Place, Ont., Canada. 1935.
- Prof. WILLIAM R. TAYLOR, Ph.D., D.D., University of Toronto, Toronto, Ont., Canada. 1925.
- Mr. ZACHEARY TAYLOR, Dept. of Anthropology, Columbia University, New York, N. Y. 1932.
- Prof. CHAIM TCHERNOWITZ, 620 Riverside Drive, New York, N. Y. 1925.
- Mr. ELMER J. TEMPLETON, 600 Haven St., Evanston, Ill. 1938.
- Rev. JOSEPH J. TENNANT, S.Th.D., L.R.B., Seminary of the Immaculate Conception, Huntington, L. I., N. Y. 1937.
- Hon. ELMER D. THOMAS, Ph.D., LL.D., Litt.D., 341 Senate Office Bldg., Washington, D. C. 1938.
- Mr. LEWIS V. THOMAS, 918 Morgan Ave., Rushville, Ind. 1937.
- Prof. WILLIAM THOMSON, Room 546, Widener Library, Harvard University, Cambridge, Mass. 1925.
- Dr. MISCHA TITIKV, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich. 1938.
- Mr. KOJINO TOMITA, Museum of Fine Arts, Boston, Mass. 1934.
- \*Prof. CHARLES C. TORSEY, 191 Bishop St., New Haven, Conn. 1891.
- Miss VIVIAN TOTTEN, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1937.
- Prof. HAROLD H. TRAYN, Union Theological Seminary, 3041 Broadway, New York, N. Y. 1921.



- Mr. RYUBAKU TSUNODA, Institute of Japanese Studies, Columbia University, New York, N. Y. 1937.
- Prof. RUSSELL C. TUCK, 17 Glenwood Ave., Newton Centre, Mass. 1937.
- Rt. Rev. H. ST. GEORGE TUCKER, D.D., 281 Fourth Ave., New York, N. Y. 1937.
- Mr. PAUL A. TURNER, 355 W. Duval St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1937.
- Mr. REUBEN S. TURNER, Theological Quadrangle, Oberlin, O. 1937.
- Mr. EDWIN H. TUTTLE, c/o C. G. Morris, Box 875, New Haven, Conn. 1925.
- \*Rev. Dr. LEMON LEANDER UHL, 1138 Boylston St., Boston, Mass. 1921.
- Mr. JOSEPH M. UPTON, Assistant Curator, Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York, N. Y. 1931.
- Rev. SYDNEY N. USSNER, 824 6th St., Santa Monica, Calif. 1939.
- Miss WILHELMINA VAN INGEN, Wheaton College, Norton, Mass. 1923.
- Rev. Dr. N. D. VAN LEEUWEN, Holysloot 43, Amsterdam Noord, Holland. 1928.
- Dr. J. DYKE VAN PUTTEN (Blackburn College), 405 E. Main St., Carlinville, Ill. 1938.
- Prof. ARTHUR A. VASCHALDS, Catholic University of America, Washington, D. C. 1915.
- Prof. GEORGE VEINADSKY, M.R.H. (Yale Univ.), 1984 Yale Station, New Haven, Conn. 1932.
- Dr. GUSTAV VON GRUNERBAUM, 420 W. 121st St., New York, N. Y. 1939.
- Prof. HANS NORDKWIN VON KOEHLER, Ph.D., Dept. of Asiatic Studies, University of Southern California, Los Angeles, Calif. 1931.
- Prof. JOACHIM WACH, Ph.D., Th.D., Brown University, Providence, R. I. 1937.
- \*Mrs. SOPHIE CAMACHO WADIA, c/o The Aryan Path, 51 Esplanade Road, Bombay, India. 1927.
- Miss FLORENCE WALNE, 415 Library Bldg., University of California, Berkeley, Calif. 1937.
- Mr. JOHN V. WALSH, 61 Locust Hill Ave., Yonkers, N. Y. 1938.
- Prof. JAMES R. WARE, Ph.D., 18 Bates St., Cambridge, Mass. 1923.
- Mr. JOHN W. WARRINGTON, 79 Martin St., Cambridge, Mass. 1926.
- Prof. LEROY WATERMAN, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich. 1912.
- Mrs. RICHARD N. WENNER, 429 Lake Shore Road, Gross Pointe Farms, Mich. 1935.
- \*Prof. HUTTON WENSTER, R. F. D. 2 (Box 226A), Menlo Park, Calif. 1921.
- Prof. A. G. WENZEL, 114 Park Road, Webster Groves, Mo. 1937.
- Miss ELSIE WEIL, Associate Editor, Asia Magazine, 40 E. 49th St., New York, N. Y. 1935.
- Prof. FRIEDRICH WELLER, Dr.Phil., Stephanstr. 12/II rechts, Leipzig C 1, Germany. 1937.
- Prof. GORDON B. WELLMAN, 17 Midland Road, Wellesley, Mass. 1928.
- Mr. TU-CHEN WENG, 1 Cleveland St., Cambridge, Mass. 1937.
- Mr. ARCHIBALD GIBSON WENLEY, Freer Gallery of Art, Washington, D. C. 1925.

- Mr. W. E. WHEELER, c/o Wheeler Timber Co., Russ Bldg., San Francisco, Calif. 1937.
- The Rt. Rev. WILLIAM C. WHITE, Royal Ontario Museum, Toronto, Ontario, Canada. 1935.
- \*Miss MARGARET DWIGHT WHITNEY, 186 Edwards St., New Haven, Conn. 1908.
- \*Miss CAROLYN M. WICKER, c/o Ransom Library Art Institute, Chicago, Ill. 1921.
- DEAN ROCKWELL WICKES, Ph.D., 112 Chestnut Ave., Takoma Park, Md. 1937.
- Prof. ALBAN G. WIDGERY, Box 4738, Duke University, Durham, N. C. 1929.
- Mr. C. MARTIN WILBUR, Field Museum of Natural History, Chicago, Ill. 1937.
- Mr. MOSE WILBURNHEWICH, Maahadat Moshe, Hebrew University, Jerusalem, Palestine. 1928.
- Miss RUTH C. WILKINS, 4436 Berkeley Ave., Chicago, Ill. 1931.
- Prof. HERBERT L. WILLETT (Univ. of Chicago), 319 Richmond Road, Kenilworth, Ill. 1917.
- \*Hon. EDWARD T. WILLIAMS, 1412 Scenic Ave., Berkeley, Calif. 1901.
- Mrs. FREDERICK WELLS WILLIAMS, 155 Whitney Ave., New Haven, Conn. 1918.
- Rev. WALTER G. WILLIAMS, 1516 E. 86th St., Cleveland, Ohio. 1932.
- Rev. H. R. WILLIAMSON, D.Litt., Cheeloo University, Tainan, Shantung, N. China. 1937.
- Mr. FRANK G. WILLISTON, College of Puget Sound, Tacoma, Wash. 1938.
- Prof. JOHN A. WILSON, Oriental Institute, University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill. 1934.
- Rev. SAMUEL T. WILSON, Th.M., 3919 N. 8th St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1937.
- Mr. HERBERT E. WINLOCK, Director, Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York, N. Y. 1910.
- Prof. FREDERICK V. WINNETT, Ph.D., The University College, Toronto, Ont., Canada. 1935.
- \*Rev. Dr. STEPHEN S. WISE, 40 West 68th St., New York, N. Y. 1904.
- Dr. KARL AUGUST WITFOGEL, International Institute of Social Research, Columbia University, 414 W. 121st St., New York, N. Y. 1938.
- Prof. ROLLAND E. WOLFE, Ph.D., Miner Hall, Tufts College, Mass. 1932.
- Mr. STUART N. WOLFENDEK, Security First National Bank of Los Angeles, Beverly Hills Branch, 409 Canyon Drive, Beverly Hills, Calif. 1935.
- Prof. HARRY A. WOLPSON, 15 Widener Library, Cambridge, Mass. 1917.
- Rabbi LOUIS WOLSEY, 615 N. Broad St., Philadelphia, Pa. 1937.
- Prof. W. H. WORSWELL, Ph.D., Angell Hall, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich. 1928 (1910).
- Dr. G. ERNEST WRIGHT, 234 80th St., Brooklyn, N. Y. 1934.
- Prof. WALTER L. WRIGHT, JR., Robert Kolec, Galata P. K. Istanbul, Turkey. 1931.
- Mr. JOSEPH K. YAMAGIWA, Angell Hall, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mich. 1937.

- Dr. CHITOSHI YANAGA, University of California, Berkeley, Calif. 1937.  
Mrs. EDITH MOTTIE YOUNG, 238 N. Pleasant St., Oberlin, Ohio. 1938.  
Prof. HENRIK B. YOUNG, c/o Board of Foreign Missions, 150 Fifth Ave.,  
New York, N. Y. 1928.  
Mr. T. CUYLER YOUNG, Victoria College, Toronto 5, Canada. 1936.  
Mr. T. L. YUAN, Acting Director, National Library of Peiping, Changsha  
Office, 1 Kiu Tsai Yuan, Changsha, China. 1937.  
Miss HELEN ZIMMERMAN, 61 Garden St., Cambridge, Mass. 1937.  
Rev. Dr. SAMUEL M. ZWEMER (Princeton Theol. Seminary), 80 Mercer St.,  
Princeton, N. J. 1921.

[Total: 739]



# JOURNAL

OF THE

## AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY

EDITOR

W. NORMAN BROWN

University of Pennsylvania

ASSOCIATE EDITORS

JOHN K. SHRYOCK

Philadelphia, Pa.

E. A. SPEISER

University of Pennsylvania

VOLUME 58

NUMBER 4 · DECEMBER, 1936

Published December 30, 1936

### CONTENTS

EMENEAU, M. R.: An Echo-Word Motif in Dravidian Folk-Tales . . . . .	563	NIMM, C. F.: Some Notes on the Family of Mierisaka . . . . .	638
BARRETT, L. C.: The Kashmirian Atharva Veda, Book Eighteen edited with Critical Notes . . . . .	571	GEORGE, L. C.: Early Prohibi- tions of Tobacco in China and Manchuria . . . . .	648
MARTINEAU, C. D.: The Kitāb Aimān al-'Arab wa-Talāqihā ʿl- Jahiliyya of an-Najjār . . . . .	615	KIM WŏN CHUNG and F. HOG- KANI: Arab Geographers on Korea . . . . .	658
BRIEF COMMUNICATIONS: M. E. Moghadam, L. V. Rama- swami Aiyar, H. M. Johnson . . . . . 662			
REVIEWS OF BOOKS: Grant (ed.), <i>The Haverford Symposium on Archaeology and the Bible</i> ; Wright, <i>The Pottery of Palestine from the Earliest Times to the End of the Early Bronze Age</i> (Speiser); Mallowan, <i>The Excava- tions at Tell Chagar Bazar, and an Archaeological Sur- vey of the Habur Region, 1934-35</i> (Walker); König, <i>Relief und Inschrift des Königs Darius I am Felsen von Babilon</i> (Kent); Mrs. Rhys Davids, <i>What was the Original Gospel in Buddhism?</i> (Cosmaraswamy); Edwards, <i>Chinese Prose Literature of the T'ang period</i> ; Cree, <i>Studies in Early Chinese Culture</i> ; Hart, <i>Seven Hundred Chinese Proverbs</i> ; Hummel, <i>China at Work</i> ; Ayscough, <i>Chinese Women Yesterday and Today</i> ; Ware, <i>Vocabularies to the Intermediate Chinese Texts used at Harvard University</i> ; Hospitalier, <i>Grammaire Latino-chinoise</i> ; Fuchs, <i>Beiträge zur mandjurischen Bih- ographie und Literatur</i> ; Southill and Hodous, <i>A Dictionary of Chinese Buddhist Terms</i> ; Clark, <i>Two Lamaistic Pantheons</i> ; Müller, <i>Apostle of China</i> ; Samuel Isaac Joseph Scherzschewsky (Shryock) . . . . . 670			
NOTES OF THE SOCIETY . . . . .		697	
NOTES OF OTHER SOCIETIES . . . . .		698	
LIST OF MEMBERS . . . . .		699	

PUBLISHED BY THE AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY

20 Hopkins Place, Baltimore, Maryland

Annual subscriptions and orders should be sent to the American Oriental Society, 20 Hopkins Place,  
Baltimore, Md., or Yale University Press, New Haven Conn., U. S. A. (See last page of cover.)  
Books for review should be sent to one of the Editors (addresses on the inside of this cover).

Entered as second-class matter March 1, 1937, at the post office at Baltimore, Maryland,

# American Oriental Society

FOUNDED 1842

## OFFICERS FOR 1938-39

- President*—Professor LEROY C. BAGLEY  
(Address: Trinity College, Hartford, Conn.)
- Vice-President*—Dr. EUGENE S. BOGGS  
(Address: Metropolitan Museum, New York, N. Y.)
- Secretary-Treasurer*—Professor CARL H. KRAVJINSKY  
(Address: 400 Prospect St., New Haven, Conn.)
- Editor*—Professor W. NORMAN BROWN  
(Address: Box 17, Bennett Hall, University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa.)
- Associate Editors*—Dr. JOHN K. SNEYDEC  
(Address: 4709 Regent St., Philadelphia, Pa.)  
Professor EPHRAIM A. SCHWARTZ  
(Address: Bennett Hall, University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa.)
- Librarian*—Professor BERNHARD KNOLLERMAN  
(Address: Sterling Memorial Library, Yale University, New Haven, Conn.)
- Executive Committee*—Professors L. C. BARRETT, L. S. BULL, C. H. KRAVJINSKY, and W. C. GRAHAM (ex officio), Professor A. H. LYNNEN (term expires 1939), Dr. C. J. QUINN (term expires 1940), Professor A. T. GILMSTRADE (term expires 1941).
- Committee for Promotion of Oriental Research*—Professor H. H. BESSEN, chairman (term expires 1939), Dr. A. W. HUMMER (term expires 1940), Professor E. A. SWANSON (term expires 1941); Address of the chairman: Princeton University, Princeton, N. J.
- Delegates to the American Council of Learned Societies*—Professor P. ECKERTON (term expires 1940), Professor J. R. WONG (term expires 1942).
- Representative on Corporation of American Schools of Oriental Research*—Professor N. SCHWARTZ.
- Committee on Nominations for 1939*—Professors E. H. STEURMANT, Chairman (term expires 1939), H. J. CADBURY (term expires 1939), C. H. PEASE (term expires 1939), W. P. ALBANY (term expires 1940), L. C. GOUGHAN (term expires 1940), Dr. C. J. QUINN (term expires 1940).

The next meeting of the Society will be held on April 11-13, 1939 at Baltimore, Md.

## MIDDLE WEST BRANCH

Established 1917

### OFFICERS FOR 1938-39

- President*—Professor W. C. GARDNER  
(Address: University of Chicago, Chicago, Ill.)
- Vice President*—Professor J. W. SWAIN  
(Address: University of Illinois, Champaign, Ill.)
- Secretary-Treasurer*—Dr. ALLEN D. AYERST, JR.  
(Address: Seabury-Western Theological Seminary, Evanston, Ill.)
- Executive Committee*—Professor S. H. BLANK and Dr. S. E. JOHNSON.

Books for review should be sent to the Editor, *Journal of the American Oriental Society*, Box 17, Bennett Hall, University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa., U. S. A.

The Editors cannot guarantee to publish reviews in the case of books sent unsolicited, or to return those books to the publishers.

## American Oriental Society

---

THE AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY was founded in 1842 for the promotion of Oriental studies, the encouragement of research in Eastern languages and literatures, and the publication of books and papers dealing with these subjects. It is not necessary for any one to be a professed Orientalist in order to become a member. All persons—men or women—who are in sympathy with the objects of the Society are invited to give it their help in the furthering of its work. Persons desiring to become members are requested to apply to the Secretary-Treasurer, Prof. Carl H. Kraeling, 409 Prospect St., New Haven, Conn. Members receive the JOURNAL without charge. The annual assessment is \$5. Life Membership may be obtained at any time by a donation of \$100 less one half the amount already paid in annual assessments.

### CAPITALIZED FUNDS

Charles W. Bradley Fund	\$3000	William Dwight Whitney Fund	\$1000
Alexander I. Cothrel Fund	1500	Life Membership Fund	4175
J. M. Casanowicz Fund	150	Justin E. Abbott Fund	\$454.56
James B. Niles Fund (capital held in trust)			

The attention of the members of the Society is especially called to these Funds, the interest of which is used towards defraying the Society's expenses of publication. Gifts or legacies for this purpose will mean much for Oriental research in America. The corporate title of the Society is THE AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY (incorporated under the laws of Massachusetts).

### LIBRARY

The Society's Library is deposited with the Library of Yale University, where its volumes may be consulted by members and by other persons receiving the permission of the Librarian. A catalog has been prepared, and is now available in printed form for distribution to the members of the Society; it may be had for one dollar, plus postage, from the Librarian (Professor Bernhard Knollenberg, The Library, Yale University, New Haven, Conn.). The facilities of the Library are available to members wherever they may be located, and the Librarian is ready to lend such books as are needed. He will be pleased to receive documents relating to the history of the Society, particularly letters of distinguished former members. (See vol. 55, p. 234 of the JOURNAL for By-laws relating to the Library; vol. 55, p. 351 ff. for the last Report of the Librarian.)

---

## Journal of the American Oriental Society

Now issued quarterly. Subscription price, \$6.00; for Libraries ordering direct from the Publishers, \$5.00. Single numbers, \$1.50. Prices of back volumes and parts, so far as not out of print, will be sent on application. Members of the Society and Libraries are allowed 20% discount from list prices on back numbers.

